

A
HISTORY OF THE BAPTISTS:
TRACED BY THEIR
VITAL PRINCIPLES AND PRACTICES,
FROM
THE TIME OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST
TO THE YEAR 1886.

– VOLUMES 1 and 2–

BY THOMAS ARMITAGE, D.D., LL.D.K
Pastor of the Fifth Avenue Baptist Church, New York.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION
BY J.L.M. CURRY, D.D., LL.D.,
American Minister of Court of Spain

CHICAGO:
MORNINGSIDE PUBLISHING CO.
1887

REPRINT
BAYONNE, NEW JERSEY
SMALL CHURCH SOS
2021

Table of Contents

Publisher's Preface	I
A Remarkable Incident	I
Thomas Armitage.....	ii
Preface.....	iv
Introduction.....	vii
Introductory Chapter	1
Have we a visible succession of Baptist churches down from the apostles?	1
The New Testament Period	11
Chapter 1 - John the Baptist.....	11
Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus	21
Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ	31
Chapter 4 - Christ's Witness to the Baptist	41
Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom	49
Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul	61
Chapter 7 - Saul and Gentile Missions	73
Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John	81
Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches	93
Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church.....	105
Chapter 11 - The Baptist Copy of the Apostolic Churches.....	121
Post-Apostolic Times.....	127
Chapter 1 - Second Century	127
Chapter 2 - The Third Century.....	141
Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued	151
Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century	161
Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century.....	175
Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries	187
Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages.....	201
Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures.....	211
Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century	225
Chapter 10 - The Waldensians	239
Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards	255
The Era of the Reformation	267
Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists	267
Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued	277
Chapter 3 - The Reformation – Zwickau and Luther	289
Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster	297

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists	311
Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued	325
Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands	335
Baptists of Great Britain	349
Chapter 1 - Immersion in England	349
Chapter 2 - Immersion in England, Continued – Persecution.....	359
Chapter 3 - Baptists of Great Britain – John Smyth – Commonwealth.....	373
Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan.....	389
Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued	403
Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists	417
Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles	431
Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration	441
Chapter 9 - British Baptists – Liberty of Conscience – Associations – The Stennetts – Irish Baptists.....	453
Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note.....	465
Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists	483
The American Baptists.....	499
Chapter 1 - The Colonial Period – Pilgrims and Puritans.....	499
Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams.....	507
Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island.....	519
Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches.....	533
Chapter 5 - Chauncey – Knollys – Miles and the Swansea Church.....	547
Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists	557
Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey.....	573
Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia	591
Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York.....	603
Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia	619
Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War	635
Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty.....	651
Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe	667
Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home.....	685
Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors	699
Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals	713
Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies.....	731
Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia.....	753

PUBLISHER'S PREFACE

This edition of Armitage's *History of the Baptists* has been carefully reformatted and corrected to produce a print copy of the book. The original woodcut images have not been included because they do not appreciably add to the information provided in the book. The files used to prepare this book are available as WordPerfect and Adobe Acrobat files and are available upon request by email to pastor@smallchurchsos.com.

A REMARKABLE INCIDENT

(The following is from an updated clipping of the *Watchman* paper, probably about 1885.)

A remarkable episode in a public religious service once occurred while a minister was preaching from the brief text, "Is it well with thee?" (2 Kings 4:26) which refers to Elisha and the Shunamite woman, at a little church in Yorkshire, England, in the year 1831. The minister was a good man with no little gospel power in his heart and manner, and he made it solemnly plain to the auditory that the Saviour was present, looking into their thoughts with kind inquiry, and testing the spirit of every one. "Is it well with thee? Is it well with thee?"

Suddenly an exclamation was heard from one of the pews, and a boy twelve years old, who had been intently listening, fell on his knees and began to weep and pray. A strange thrill ran through the congregation, and many rose to their feet. The minister paused in his sermon, and all attention was riveted on the kneeling boy. Everybody knew little Tommy, for he belonged to one of the Yorkshire families, and his ancestors of Barnsley had worn the arms of a baronet. He was a bright, gifted boy, now six years motherless, but carrying in his heart the indelible impression of his mother's early religious teachings.

The honest Yorkshire people felt too deeply themselves the effect of the sermon to misunderstand Tommy's emotion. They did not think he was crazy. The minister did not. "Let us pray," he said for he saw more need of prayer than preaching at a moment when before men and angels a young soul first spoke its want. The whole congregation at once assumed the attitude of devotion. Many strong and loving petitions went up to God for the little boy whom, like Samuel, he had called in his own tabernacle.

The scene was a strange one—that sudden prayer meeting in the middle of sermon time. The prayers were answered, too. Tommy rose from his knees with a radiant face. Thenceforth the seal of a divine anointing was on him. For the next eight years he continued to give increasing proofs of a Christian spirit and Christian zeal, and rare and happy fitness for winning souls. When very young, he was licensed to preach. At the age of twenty he left his native land and came to the United States. Since then he has not neglected the gift that is in him. The voice that so long ago said to him, on the other side of the sea, "Is it well with thee?" has ever been gladly recognized, and he has "followed Jesus all the way." It led him to Long Island; it led him to Albany; it led him down the Hudson again — and very many whom his words first taught the heavenly lesson now know "It is well" with them. Today few stand higher among the American ministry or more honored of the Great Master, than Tommy, the Yorkshire boy—now Dr. Thomas Armitage of New York.

THOMAS ARMITAGE

Thomas Armitage was born in Yorkshire, England, in 1819. He is descended from the old and honored family of the Armitages of that section of Yorkshire, one of whom, Sir John Armitage of Barnsley, was created a baronet by Charles I in 1640. He lost his father at a tender age, and his mother when he was five years old. She was the grand-daughter of the Rev. Thomas Barrat, a Methodist minister. She had great faith in Jesus, and prayed often and confidently for the salvation of her oldest son, Thomas. At her death she gave him her Bible, her chief treasure, which she received as a reward from her teacher in the Sunday School. Her last prayer for him was that he might be converted and become a good minister of the Saviour.

The religious influence of his godly mother never forsook him. While listening to a sermon on the text, "Is it well with thee?" his sins and danger filled him with grief and alarm, and before he left the sanctuary his heart was filled with the love of Christ.

In his sixteenth year he preached his first sermon. His text was, "Come unto me all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." The truth was blessed to the conversion of three persons. He declined pressing calls to enter the regular ministry of the English Methodist Church, but used his gifts as a local preacher for several years.

Like many Englishmen he imbibed republican doctrines, and these brought him in 1838 to New York. He received deacons orders from Bishop Waugh, and those of an elder from Bishop Morris. He filled many important appointments in the M. E. Church in New York, and when he united with the Baptists he was pastor of the Washington Street church in Albany, one of its most important churches, where the Lord had given him a precious revival and eighty converts. At this period his influence in the M. E. Church was great, and its highest honors were before him. When he was first examined for Methodist ordination, he expressed doubts about the church government of the Methodist body, and about sinless perfection, falling from grace, and their views of the ordinances; but he was the great-grandson of a Methodist minister, his mother was of that communion and he himself had been a preacher in it for years, and his misgivings were regarded as of no moment. In 1839 he witnessed a baptism in Brooklyn by the Rev. S. Usley, which made him almost a Baptist, and what remained to be done to effect that end was accomplished by another baptism in Albany, administered by the Rev. Jabez Swan of Connecticut. An extensive examination of the baptismal question confirmed his faith, and placed him without misgiving upon the Baptist platform in everything. Dr. Welsh baptized him into the fellowship of the Pearl Street church, Albany. Soon after a council was called to give him scriptural ordination. Dr. Welsh was moderator: Friend Humphrey, mayor of Albany, and Judge Ira Harris were among its members. A letter of honorable dismissal from the M. E. Church, bearing flattering testimony to his talents and usefulness, was read before the council, and after the usual examination he was set apart to the Christian ministry in the winter of 1848. He was requested to preach in the Norfolk Street church, New York, in the following June. The people were charmed with the stranger, and so was the sickly pastor, the Rev. George Benedict. He was called to succeed their honored minister, who said to Mr. Armitage, "If you refuse this call it will be the most painful act of your life." Mr. Benedict never was in the earthly sanctuary again. Mr. Armitage accepted the invitation in his twenty-ninth year, July 1, 1848. In 1853-54, 140 persons were baptized, and in 1857, 152 while other years had great blessings.

The first year of his ministry in Norfolk Street the meetinghouse was burned, and another erected. Since that time the church reared a house for God in a more attractive part of the city, which

they named the "Fifth Avenue Baptist Church." The property is worth at least \$150,000 and it is free from debt. The membership of the church is over 700. In 1853, Mr. Armitage was made a Doctor of Divinity by Georgetown College, Ky. He was then in his thirty-fourth year.

At a meeting held in New York, May 27, 1850, by friends of the Bible, Dr. Armitage offered resolutions which were adopted, and upon which the Bible Union was organized two weeks later, with Dr. S. H. Cone as its president and W. H. Wyckoff, LL.D. as its secretary. In May, 1856, Dr. Armitage became the president of the society. In this extremely difficult position he earned the reputation of being one of the ablest presiding officers in our country. The Bible Union reached its greatest prosperity while he presided over its affairs.

Dr. Armitage is a scholarly man, full of information, with a powerful intellect; one of the greatest preachers in the United States; regarded by many as the foremost man in the American pulpit. We do not wonder that he is so frequently invited to deliver sermons at ordinations, dedications, installations, missionary anniversaries, and to college students. As a great teacher in Israel, the people love to hear him, and their teachers are delighted with the themes and with the herald.

Seventeen years ago a gentleman wrote of Dr. Armitage, "The expression of his face is one of mingled intelligence and kindness. As he converses it is with animation, and his eyes sparkle. His manners are easy, graceful, and cordial. He fascinates strangers and delights friends. He appears before you a polished gentleman, who wins his way to your esteem and affection by his exalted worth." The description has been confirmed by time.

(Taken from *The Baptist Encyclopaedia*, edited by William Cathcar, 1883, Lous H. Everts, Philadelphia.)

PREFACE

Early in the summer of A.D. 1882 the publishers of this work called upon the author to confer on the desirableness of issuing a Baptist history. He laid before them the histories extant by our writers, commending their merits. They said that, after examination of these, whilst each filled a peculiar niche in Baptist history, they were satisfied that a larger and more comprehensive work was demanded by the present public want, and requested him to undertake the task of preparing one.

This request was declined on account of its inherent difficulty and the pressure of a large New York pastorate. He submitted two or three weighty names of those who, in his judgment, were in every way better qualified for the work, among them the late Dr. William R. Williams, and wrote letters of introduction to these several gentlemen. In a few weeks they returned, stating that they had consulted not only those referred to, but other well-known Baptist writers, each of whom suggested that, as the author had devoted years to the examination of the subject, he owed it to his denomination to write and publish thereon.

After fuller consideration he consented to make the attempt, with the distinct understanding that he should be entirely unfettered in regard to the principle on which the work should be written. He saw at a glance that as Baptists are in no way the authors or offspring of an ecclesiastical system, that, therefore, their history cannot be written on the current methods of ecclesiastical history. The attempt to show that any religious body has come down from the Apostles an unchanged people is of itself an assumption of infallibility, and contradicts the facts of history.

Truth only is changeless, and only as any people have held to the truth in its purity and primitive simplicity has the world had an unchanging religion. The truth has been held by individual men and scattered companies but never in an unbroken continuity by any sect as such. Sect after sect has appeared and held it for a time, then has destroyed itself by mixing error with the truth; again, the truth has evinced its divinity by rising afresh in the hands of a newly organized people, to perpetuate its diffusion in the earth.

It is enough to show that what Christ's churches were in the days of the Apostles, that the Baptist churches of today find themselves. The truths held by them have never died since Christ gave them, and in the exact proportion that any people have maintained these truths they have been the true Baptists of the world. The writer therefore, refused to be bound in his investigations by an iron obligation to show a succession of people who have held all the principles, great and small, of any sect now existing—no more and no less.

When Roger Williams left his followers they were in great trepidation lest they had not received baptism in regular succession from the Apostles, as if any body else had. They heard, however, that the Queen of Hungary had a list of regularly baptized descendants from the Apostles, and were half persuaded to send their brother, Thomas Olney, to obtain it at her hands. Still, on the second sober thought, they could not swallow this dose of the essence of popery, and concluded not to make themselves ridiculous. Whereupon Backus solemnly says, that at length they 'concluded such a course was not expedient, but believing that now they were got into the right way, determined to persevere therein.' Thus, once more, wisdom was justified in her children, under the application of the radical anti-Romish principle that the New Testament is the only touch-stone of Christian history. The men who obey it in all things today, the men who have obeyed it since it was written, and the men who wrote it, are of one flock, under the one Shepherd, whose holy body John buried beneath the waters of the Jordan.

The author has aimed, so far as in him lay, to command accuracy of statement with a style adapted to the common reader in our churches, thus especially reaching and interesting the young and making the work a reliable reference for all.

A lamentable lack of intelligence exists amongst us in regard to our origin and principles as Baptists. This book is written for the purpose of putting within the reach of all such facts as shall inform them of their religions history and what it cost the fathers of our faith to defend the same.

While cumbrous notes have been dispensed with, yet, for the benefit of those who honestly desire to inform themselves, references upon important points to authorities, mostly Pedobaptists, are given at the close of the volume. For the same reason the work is a defense and an exposition of our distinctive principles, as well as a history. Biography is here combined with history proper, and numerous portraits are given, chiefly of those not now living.

The engravings of the volume, with the exception of the steel-plate of the author, have been executed by the experienced hand of John D. Felter, Esq., whose ability and artistic skill are widely recognized. The letter-press and mechanical finish of the book are all that can be desired, even in this age of elegant printing, and bespeak the public favor for the gentlemanly publishers, who, by their enlarged business generosity, have secured to the reading public this volume in the best style of the printing art.

Whilst the author has noticed at length the rise and progress of the Baptists in the several States of the Union, he has not been able to present, with but few exceptions, the history of local churches and associations. To have attempted this would have extended the work far beyond the prescribed limit, and, owing to the great number of Baptist churches, the result must necessarily, have been meager and unsatisfactory.

The author has done his work in all candor, with a sincere regard to the purpose of history and the maintenance of truth. He sends it forth with the prayer that it may fulfil its mission and afford profit to all who peruse its pages. Despite the utmost care to avoid mistakes, it is very likely that some have crept into the text, but on discovery they will be promptly corrected hereafter.

It was desirable to seek the aid of several young scholars, specialists in their departments, who have rendered valuable service by the examination of scarce books and documents, and submitted their own suggestions for consideration. Of these it is specially pleasant to mention: Rev. W.W. Everts, Jr. of Philadelphia, who has devoted a large portion of his life to the study of ecclesiastical history, and has had rare opportunities, as a student in Germany, to make himself acquainted with the records of the Continental Baptists. He has made his investigations with great care and enthusiasm: Henry C. Vedder, Esq., a junior editor of the 'Examiner,' and an editor of the 'Baptist Quarterly.' He is especially at home in all that relates to the Baptists in the time of the English Commonwealth, and has shown superior ability in examining that period: Rev. George E. Horr, Jr., of Charlestown, Mass., who is thoroughly acquainted with the American period of our history, and in his researches has made free use of the libraries at Cambridge and Boston, turning them to most profitable account.

The first two of these gentlemen have also read the proofs of the respective departments to which they have thus contributed.

Rev. J. Spinther James, of Wales, was recommended by Rev. Hugh Jones, late president of the Llangollen College, as quite competent to make investigations in the history of the Welsh Baptists. These he has made and submitted, having had special facilities for information in the library of that institution.

Hon. Horatio Gates Jones, of Philadelphia, consented to prepare a full Baptist bibliography, but

a press of legal business has prevented the accomplishment of his work, after devoting much time to the subject.

The portraits of these gentlemen are grouped, and preface the American department. It is but honorable to add, that none of these scholars are to be held responsible for any statement of fact or for any sentiment found in the book; that is entirely assumed by the author.

Hearty and sincere thanks are hereby rendered to Frederick Saunders, Esq., librarian of the Astor Library, for many attentions, especially for the use of Garruci, in photographing ten of the illustrations found in the chapter on Baptismal Pictures; to Dr. George H. Moore, of the Lenox Library, for the use of the great Bunyan collection there; and to Henry E. Lincoln, Esq., of Philadelphia, and Rev. Daniel C. Potter, D.D., of New York, for photographs used.

The author owes a debt of gratitude also to T.J. Conant, D.D, LL.D., for his kindness in reading the proof-sheets of the chapters on the Baptism of Jesus and the Apostolic Churches as Models ; to Heman Lincoln, D.D., Professor of Ecclesiastical History at the Newton Theological Seminary, who examined the proofs on the Second and Third Centuries; to Albert H. Newman, D.D., LL.D., Professor of Church History in the Toronto Theological Seminary, who read all the chapters on the Continental Baptists from that on the Waldensians to that on the Netherlands; to Rev. D. McLane Reeves, D.D., of Johnstown, N. Y.. who read the chapter on the Waldensians; to Rev. Owen Griffith, editor of the 'Y Wawr,' Utica, N. Y., who read the proof of the chapter on the Welsh Baptists; to Henry S. Burrage, D.D., editor of *Zion's Advocate*, who examined the two chapters on the Swiss Baptists; to S. F. Smith, D.D., of Mass., who has aided largely in the chapter on Missions; to Reuben A. Guild, LL.D., Librarian of Brown University, who read most of the proofs of the chapters on the American Baptists; to J. E. Wells. M.A., of Toronto, who furnished much material for the chapter on the Baptists in British America; and to Rev. J. Wolfenden, of Chicago, III, for many facts concerning the Australian Baptists.

Each of these scholars made invaluable suggestions, laying both the author and the reader under great obligations.

Acknowledgments of debt are also made to Rev. William Norton, A.M., of Chulmleigh, England, and to Rev. Joseph Angus, D.D., LL.D., Principal of Regents Park College, London, for the examination of works not easily found in this country. Also to William Cathcart, D.D., of Philadelphia; Henry G. Weston, D.D., of Crozer Theological Seminary; to Howard Osgood, D.D., of the Rochester Theological Seminary ; to Ebenezer Dodge; D.D., LL.D., president of Madison University; to Rev. Frederic Denison, of Providence, R. 1.; to Hon. William H. Potter, to Hon. L.M. Lawson, Roger H. Lyon, Esq., and Dr. S. Ayers, of New York; and to D. Henry Miller, D.D., of Connecticut. The General Index has been prepared by Mr. Henry F. Reddall, of New York. Many other friends have kindly assisted the author in various ways in the preparation of the work, who will please accept his devout thanks; and last, but not least, those members of the press who have voluntarily spoken so kindly of the work on the inspection of portions of the manuscript personally or by their correspondents.

Thomas Armitage,
Parsonage, No. 2, West 46th St., New York January 1, 1887

INTRODUCTION

A history of the Baptists should be understood in its objects and aims; and cleared, in the beginning, of misapprehension and perversion. It is not the history of a nationality, a race, an organization, but of a people, traced by their vital principles and gospel practices. The unity to be exhibited and demonstrated was not brought about by force, by coercion of pains and penalties, by regressive and punitive Acts of Conformity; but by the recognition and adoption of a common authoritative and completed divine standard.

The error of many previous attempts has consisted in the assumption that a Church and Christianity were identical. We have had numerous and voluminous histories of Churches and creeds; and untold abuses have resulted from confounding them with Christ's people, with New Testament doctrines and practices. This *petitio principii* has been the source of much evil. Its hurtful influence has been seen and felt in the arrogant pretensions of these Churches, their alliance with and use of evil authority, the abuses which have come from unrestrained and irresponsible power; and in the revulsion and extreme rebound of persons and communities, when reason and conscience and science and patriotism have exposed the deceptiveness of claims, and the hungering soul has had no satisfying response to its clamors for the bread of life,. Many infidels have taken refuge in deism, atheism, agnosticism, because they in their ignorance supposed the "Church, as they saw it, to be the embodiment of Christianity, the authorised exponent of Jesus Christ. Much of the ridicule of priestcraft and denial of the inspiration of the Scriptures is directly traceable to the corruption of the clergy, to *autos-da-fe* to the churchly opposition to science and support of political tyranny and kingly wrongs. The genesis of the painful skepticism, so abundant in France, Spain and Italy, one need not search far to find. '*Le Clericalisme, voila l'ennemi*' is the belief of many. Bossuet advised Catholics, in their controversies with Protestants, to begin with the Church. A Church, in its idea, attributes, organization, membership, officers, ordinances, has been the battle-ground of ecclesiastical and religious dispute: and literature, thought, public opinion, government, manners, worship, have been so much affected and controlled by these disputes, that it is not easy now to bring back a discussion, or confine it, to the real, primal, essential question. The idea of a New Testament Church is more subjective than objective. A Church is not an *a priori* organization, as innate ideas are *a priori*.

It is not an antecedent agency or instrumentality for the conversion of men. Men are not members by natural birth, by inheritance, by legislative act, by priestly right. Believers are not made such by the *opus operatum* of Church ordinances. The dwell in Christ and Christ dwells in them by the consciousness of grace imparted. They came together into the primitive churches by an elective affinity, and inwrought spiritual aptitude and capacity; and constituted a brotherhood of the baptized, the holy fellowship of the redeemed, a community of regenerated men and women, united to one another by the same animating spirit. A New Testament Church, the apostolic model, was a result, a product, and evolution from antecedent facts and principles. The Christ did not constitute the church in advance of preaching and salvation and baptism, and endow it with powers and functions to execute the great commission. As the apostles and disciples preached, men and women heard, believed, and were baptized. The believers coming together in local assemblies, were empowered to perform certain acts for edification and usefulness. These simple organizations were in the early days of Christianity the divinely approved churches. A church is no more a preordained agency, an exterior antecedent instrumentality for saving men and women than the fruit is a preexisting agency

for propagating its kind. Both are evolutions and necessities and the wisdom and providence of God. From certain elemental principles—the logical and spiritual consequences of regeneration, faith, love and obedience—Churches, with their membership, organizations, officers and ordinances, are involved.

The evolution is none the less such because scriptural precepts can be produced; for in the sense in which the word is used, these commands are evolutions of the wisdom and grace of God. It is readily seen how too much importance can be attached to forms and organizations and officers. Christ taught truth, promulgated ideas, sowed seed. Character, life, organism, union, followed. Philosophy, politics, science, religion, are valuable not as the outcome of a pre-ordained scheme, but as the product and growth of correlated thought, ideas actualized, principles, abstractions, put into concrete, vitalized forms. Moral and spiritual should precede and dominate the physical as ideas precede form and organism. Whatever is durable, immortal; whatever conduces to man's well-being, to the development of humanity which had its genesis in divine thought, must in its ultimate analysis be traceable to fundamental principles, to eternal verities. Civilization, government, religion, must be imperfect, ephemeral, and fail of their noblest end if not based on an intelligent and cordial adoption of the right, the true, the imperishable. Just in so far as mere expediency controls there will be superficiality, imperfectness, failure. A Christian Church must come from the divine thought and seek the divine end. A Church in the true New Testament idea, so originated and wrought out presents a perfect ideal, ever stimulating, beckoning onward and upward, never perfectly attained. It exalts God's word, magnifies Christ's work, relies on the Spirit's presence and power, individualizes and honors man, teaches his personal responsibility and privileges, and necessitates its completest moral and mental individualism runs through New Testament development. Christianity. Right of private judgment in religious matters, the requirement of personal faith and obedience, leads inevitably to civil freedom. Individuality. in relation to God and Christ and salvation, the Scriptures and judgment and eternity, conducts by an irresistible sequence to freedom of thought and speech and press to popular government, to unfettered scientific investigation, to universal education. Soul liberty cannot be dissevered from civil freedom. All modern reforms in government, broadening from the few to the many, can be traced to the recognition more or less complete of man's personal relations to God, and to the refection of sponsors, priests and mediators, in faith and obedience and study. Intense religious activity quickens enterprise in all proper directions, Free thought on grand religious problems awakens thought on other topics. Communion with the King of kings, free and constant and invited access to him, makes one feel that the artificial distinctions of earth are transitory, and that a joint heir with the Christ is superior in freedom and nobleness and possibilities to any sovereign on the throne of the Caesars

New Testament Churches in their idea and ends have been perverted. From various causes they have degenerated into human organizations, and have been so assimilated to States and Nations as to be scarcely distinguishable from the kingdoms of this world. The tests or marks of a State would not be inapplicable to 'The Church' as it has acted, or claimed to act. It has been bound into a body politic, has exercised through the medium of a common government independent sovereignty and control over all persons and things within its boundaries, has entered into international relations with other political communities, has represented itself by ambassadors and legates, has partitioned continents and oceans, has interfered in successions, has acquired territory, has been known by all the indicia of temporal authority. Becoming a secular power, it has claimed equal authority over many distinct kingdoms, exacted from their citizens an allegiance upon oath above that which the municipal law of their own country could impose, claimed Empires as fiefs, exacted oaths of

vassalage and collected feudal revenues, absolved sovereigns and subjects from their oaths claimed for the persons and the property of the officers it employed and the law by which they were to be governed a status wholly distant from that of the subjects of the country where such officers were; stirred up crusades against refractory kings and republics, against schismatical princes, against pagans, against heretics; through the Inquisition 'secured to the ecclesiastical authority the arm of the secular power without any right of inquiry or intervention as a condition of its use' and put infidelity to the Church on the same footing as rebellion against the throne, All along through twelve centuries Churches have claimed the right to enter into alliances with civil governments, to direct executive, legislative and judicial action, and to use the power of the State for the execution of their decrees.

The claim of a Church to universal dominion is, like the claim of Spain and Portugal, based on papal grants, to the exclusive navigation, commerce and fisheries of the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. It is, however, Just as reasonable as the pretense that a parish can be set out by metes and bounds, or that a territorial area can be assigned to a particular minister to exercise therein exclusive ecclesiastical and spiritual functions. The assertion of a Church, or of a man, to supremacy over human conscience and judgments, is less defensible than a claim to special occupancy of land and water. Some nations have been driven to renounce, as against another, a right to parts of the ocean; but a man, in the image of the Creator, cannot surrender his inalienable liberty of worship or right of free thought.

The continuity of a Church is not like that of a State. There is little analogy between the two. One cannot by natural birth, by inheritance, by purchase, by the will of the flesh, become a member of the kingdom of Christ. A State may change its form of civil constitution from a monarchy, an aristocracy, to a republic, to any imaginable shape; but it does not lose its personality, nor forfeit its rights, nor become discharged from its obligations. France under President Grevy is the France of Napoleon or Louis Fourteenth. It retains its identity through all mutations. The corporate body succeeds to the rights and obligations of its predecessor. *Idem enim est populus Romanus, sub regibus, consalibus, imperatoribus.*' It would require a vast stretch of credulity or ignorance to imagine the hierarchies of the present day to be the same as the Churches to which Paul wrote his letters. Conditions of citizenship, descent or alienation of property, distribution of estates, may be changed by human governments ; but the conditions of membership in a New Testament Church are unalterable because they are spiritual and God prescribed.

Our books contain treaties in reference to intervention by one nation in the internal affairs of another upon the ground of religion, and learned discussions as to the right of law-making departments of government to prescribe, modify, or interpret articles of religious faith. It seems that in England even there is one and the same identical law-giver for Church and State. The Parliament, in the Act of Uniformity of Elizabeth, instituted the Thirty-nine Articles of Religion and put together a Book of Common Prayer. The atrocious cruelties of the religious persecutions, the execrable violations of the rights of mankind,' to use the strong denunciation of Sir James Macintosh, have grown out of the claims of government and Churches to control and punish men's opinions. An Establishment is necessarily and always a usurpation and a wrong. A New Testament Church cannot, by possibility, be in alliance with a State and retain its scripturalness, its conformity with apostolical precept. Capability of such a union is the demonstration a departure from a primitive model.

A tree is known by its fruits. An Establishment, *ex vi termini* implies irregularity, injustice, an arrogant claim to make Caesar determine what belongs to God. Things will follow tendencies. Those

permanently supported by the government sustain the government and resist concessions of popular liberty. In the time of Henry VIII. marriages in England were regulated by the canon law of Rome, grounded often on no higher principle than that of papal caprice and when the king's conscience and conduct demanded it, the Church found a semblance of excuse for his lust and tyranny. When Elizabeth was on the throne the Archbishop of Canterbury, to quiet some doubts as to her legitimacy, was ordered to draw up a Table of Degrees which would place her succession on scriptural grounds The disingenuous adulation of the dedication to King James in the 'Authorised Version' of the Bible is disgraceful to those who signed it.

The ecclesiastical Peers in the House of Lords uniformly and almost as a unit have, to quote from Joseph Hume, "been the aiders and abettors of every tyranny and oppression which the people have been compelled to endure Bills for removing Roman Catholic disabilities, Jewish disabilities, University tests, and to open Church-yards to Non-conformist burial services, etc., etc., have found in them steadfast opponents.

Joseph Chamberlain, in 1885, in a public address, put this pertinent inquiry: 'Is it not a singular thing that of all the great movements which have abated the claims of privileges or destroyed the power of tyrants, which have freed the nation or classes from servitude and oppression, or raised the condition of the great mass of the people, there is scarcely one which has owed any thing to the initiative or encouragement of the great ecclesiastical organization which lays claim to exclusive national authority and support?'

This hostility to popular rights and the removal of abuses is the natural consequence of the system of union of Church and State. Since the Reformation there has been much progress in securing the free exercise and enjoyment of religious profession and worship without discrimination or preference. Our Federal and State Constitutions, following the lustrous precedent of Rhode Island, have embodied religious liberty in American organic law; and our example and the undisputed success of voluntary ism are teaching lessons of freedom to the crushed millions of earth. In all civilized countries toleration is practiced. Wearily and painfully the work goes on. Privileges are wrested from reluctant hands, always after stubborn resistance, never once through gracious concession. Even when laws are repealed the social stigma is vigorously applied. Have any of the Pharisees believed on Him?' is constantly rung in our ears. Truth will prevail. Sire bequeaths to son freedom's flag, and establishments and endowments must yield to religions equality before the law. It is a delusion to imagine that tho final victory has been won. Prerogative and privilege, sanctioned by antiquity and buttressed by wealth and power, will contest every inch. The demands of the pope for the restoration of his temporalities, and his lamentations over his voluntary imprisonment in the Vatican, show that Cardinal Manning spoke *ex cathedra* when he affirmed that the *Unam Sanctam* Decretal and the Syllabus contain the doctrines of Ultramontanism and Christianity. Pius IX., in a letter, August 7, 1873, to William, King of Prussia, claimed that every one who had been baptized belonged in some way or other to the pope. In July, 1884, a Cuban archbishop declared in the Spanish Cortes that The rights of the Roman pontiff, including the rights of temporal power over the States, were inalienable and cannot be restricted; and were before and superior to the so-called new rights of cosmopolitan revolution and the barbarous law of force

The tenacity with which the Establishment in England and Scotland holds on to its power and perquisites, and the success up to this time in foiling the Liberationists, are proofs that the battle of a thousand years is still to be prolonged.

The History of the Baptists' shows the victorias of the past and the true principles of the contest if permanent success is to be attained. Justification by personal faith in the Lord Jesus Christ lays

the axe at the root of all sacramentalism, sacerdotalism, alliance of church with State and interference with soul liberty. The entire sufficiency and authority of the inspired word of God, the right of private judgment, the individuality of all religious duties, a converted church membership and the absolute headship of the Christ, will give success to efforts for a pure Christianity.

Dr. Armitage has exceptional qualifications for writing a history of the Baptists. His birth, education, religious experience, connection with England and the United States, habits of investigation, scholarly tastes and attainments and mental independence, fit him peculiarly for ascertaining hidden facts and pushing principles to their logical conclusion.

J.L.M. Curry.

INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER

Have we a visible succession of Baptist churches down from the apostles?

On the western coast of India, near Goa, and also in the Mediterranean, springs of fresh water, which do not rise to the surface but are run off by the undercurrent, rush out of the strata at the bottom of the sea. But in the Gulf of Xagu, on the southern coast of Cuba, a wonderful fountain of fresh water gurgles up in the open sea; forcing aside its salt waters, it passes off in the surface-current and is lost in the ocean. From this spring navigators often draw their supplies of pure water in the midst of the briny waste. Here nature lends us a forceful type of the fact that there may be a flow of visible succession without purity, and that there maybe a continuous purity without a flow of visible succession.

Is an unbroken, visible, and historical succession of independent Gospel Churches down from the apostles, essential to the valid existence of Baptist Churches today, as apostolic in every sense of the word? This question suggests another, namely, Of what value could any lineal succession be as compared with present adherence to apostolic truth? From these two questions a third arises: Whether true, lineage from the Apostolic Churches does not rest in present conformity to the apostolic pattern, even though the local church of today be self-organized, from material that never came out of any church, provided that it stands on the apostolicity of the New Testament alone. The simple truth is, that the unity of Christ's kingdom on earth is not found in its visibility, any more than the unity of the solar system is found in that direction, for its largest domain never falls under the inspection of any being but God. So, likewise, the unity of Christianity is not found by any visible tracing through one set of people. It has been enwrapped in all who have followed purely apostolic principles through the ages; and thus the purity of Baptist life is found in the essence of their doctrines and practices by whomsoever enforced.

Little perception is required to discover the fallacy of a visible apostolical succession in the ministry, but visible Church succession is precisely as fallacious, and for exactly the same reasons. The Catholic is right in his theory that these two must stand or fall together; hence he assumes, *ipso facto*, that all who are not in this double succession are excluded from the true apostolic line. And many who are not Catholics think that if they fail to unroll a continuous succession of regularly organized churches, they lose their genealogy by a break in the chain, and so fail to prove that they are legitimate Apostolic Churches. Such evidence cannot be traced by any Church on earth, and would be utterly worthless if it could, because the real legitimacy of Christianity must be found in the New Testament, and nowhere else.

The very attempt to trace an unbroken line of persons duly baptized upon their personal trust in Christ, or of ministers ordained by lineal descent from the apostles, or of churches organized upon these principles, and adhering to the New Testament in all things, is in itself an attempt to erect a bulwark of error. Only God can make a new creature; and the effort to trace Christian history from regenerate man to regenerate man, implies that man can impart some power to keep up a succession of individual Christians. Apply the same thought to groups of churches running down through sixty generations, and we have precisely the same result. The idea is the very life of Catholicism. Our only reliable ground in opposition to this system is: That if no trace of conformity to the New Testament could be found in any Church since the end of the first century, a Church established today upon the New Testament life and order, would be as truly a historical Church from Christ, as the Church

Introductory Chapter

planted by Paul at Ephesus. Robert Robinson has well said:

'Uninterrupted succession is a specious lure, a snare set by sophistry, into which all parties have fallen. And it has happened to spiritual genealogists as it has to others who have traced natural descents, both have woven together twigs of every kind to fill up remote chasms. The doctrine is necessary only to such Churches as regulate their faith and practice by tradition, and for their use it was first invented...Protestants, by the most substantial arguments, have blasted the doctrine of papal succession, and these very Protestants have undertaken to make proof of an unbroken series of persons, of their own sentiments, following one another in due order from the apostles to themselves.' [Robinson, *Ecclesiastical Researches*, pp. 475,476]

Sanctity is the highest title to legitimacy in the kingdom of God, because holiness, meekness, and self-consecration to Christ are the soul of real Church life; and without this pedigree, antiquity cannot make Church existence even reverent. This sanctity is evinced by the rejection of error and the choice of truth, in all matters which the New Testament has enjoined, either by precept or example. In things of light import, demanding a robust common sense, the noble and courteous spirit of Jesus must be maintained, for personal holiness is the highest test of Christianity in all its historical relations. But this matter of visible Church succession is organically connected with the idea of Church infallibility, rather than of likeness to Christ. The twin doctrines were born of the same parentage, and the one implies the other, for a visible succession must be pure in all its parts, that is, infallible; if it is corrupt in some things, no logical showing can make it perfect. Truth calls us back to the radical view, that any Church which bears the real apostolic stamp is in direct historical descent from the apostles, without relation to any other Church past or present. In defense of this position the following considerations are submitted to all candid minds:

I. THAT CHRIST NEVER ESTABLISHED A LAW OF CHRISTIAN PRIMOGENITURE BY WHICH HE ENDOWED LOCAL CHURCHES WITH THE EXCLUSIVE POWER OF MORAL REGENERATION, MAKING IT NECESSARY FOR ONE CHURCH TO BE THE MOTHER OF ANOTHER, IN REGULAR SUCCESSION, AND WITHOUT WHICH THEY COULD NOT BE LEGITIMATE CHURCHES.

Those who organized the churches in apostolic times went forth simply with the lines of doctrine and order in their hands, and formed new churches without the authority or even the knowledge of other churches. Some of these men were neither apostles nor pastors, but private Christians. Men are born of God in regeneration and not of the Church. They have no ancestry in regeneration, much less are they the offspring of an organic ancestry. The men who composed the true Churches at Antioch and Rome were 'born from above,' making the Gospel and not the Church the agency by which men are 'begotten of God.' This Church succession figment shifts the primary question of Christian life from the apostolic ground of truth, faith and obedience, to the Romanistic doctrine of persons. and renders an historic series of such persons necessary to administer the ordinances and impart valid Church life. How does inspiration govern this matter? 'Whoso abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God; he that abideth in the teaching, the same hath both the Father and the Son. If any man cometh to you and bringeth not this teaching receive him not.' Pure doctrine, as, it is found uncorrupted in the word of God, is the only unbroken line of succession which can be traced in Christianity. God never confided his truth to the personal succession of any body of

Have we a visible succession

men: man was not to be trusted with the Custody of this precious charge, but the King of the truth has kept the keys of the truth in his Own hand. The true Church of Christ has ever been that which has stood upon his person and work.

Whitaker, treating of this blunder of the hierarchy, says, '*Faith*, therefore, is, as it were, the soul of the succession; which, being wanting, a naked succession of persons is a dead body.' [I, 506] Tertullian says, 'If any of the heretics dare to connect themselves with the Apostolic Age, that they may seem to be derived from the Apostles as existing under them, we may say: Let them, therefore, declare the origin of their Churches, let them exhibit the series of their bishops, as coming down by a continued succession from the beginning, as to show their first bishop to have been some apostle or apostolic man as his predecessor or ordainer, and who continued in the same faith with the Apostles. For this is the way in which the Apostolical Churches calculate the series of their bishops.' [De Præscript, C. 32] Ambrose takes the same ground, thus: 'They have not the inheritance, are not the successors of Peter who have not the *faith* of Peter.' Gregory (Nazianzen), in defending the right of Athanasius, to the chair of Alexandria, against his opponent, uses these words: 'This succession of piety ought to be esteemed the true succession, for he who maintains the same *doctrine of faith* is partner in the same chair; but he who defends the contrary doctrine, ought, though in the chair of St. Mark, to be esteemed an adversary to it. This man, indeed, may have a nominal succession, but the other has the very thing itself, the succession in deed and in truth.'

Calvin's view is in harmony with this testimony; he says: 'I deny the succession scheme as a thing entirely without foundation. This question of being successors of the Apostles must be decided by an examination of the doctrines maintained.' Zanchius gives the same view: 'When personal succession, alone, is boasted of, the purity of true Christian *doctrine* having departed, there is no legitimate ministry, seeing that both the Church and the ministry of the Church are bound not to persons, but to the *word of God*.' Bradford, the martyr, truly said of the Church, that she is 'Not tied to succession, but to the word of God.' And Stillingfleet says, with spirit: 'Let succession know its place, and learn to vaile bonnet to the Scriptures. The succession so much pleaded by the writers of the primitive Church was not a succession of persons in apostolic power, but a succession of *apostolic doctrine*.'

On this ground it follows, that those who hold to a tangible succession of Baptist Churches down from the Apostolic Age, must prove from the Scriptures that something besides holiness and truth is an essential sign of the Church of God. The whole pseudo- apostolic scheme, from its foundation, was a creation of the hierarchy for the purposes of tyranny. The question of veracity is of vastly more moment in Baptist history than that of antiquity. Veracity accepts all truth without regard to time; gathering it up, and putting it on record exactly as it has been known through the centuries. Historic truth has many parts in harmony with each other, but the hard and fast lines of visible succession are those of a mere system and not those of true history. The Bible is the deep in which the ocean of Gospel truth lies, and all its streams must harmonize with their source, and not with a dreamy, sentimental origin. As it is not a Gospel truth that Christ has lodged the power of spiritual procreation in his Churches, so it is not true that all who come not of any given line of Church stock are alien and illegitimate.

II. OUR LORD NEVER PROMISED AN ORGANIC VISIBILITY TO HIS CHURCH IN PERPETUITY, AMONGST ANY PEOPLE OR IN ANY AGE.

Introductory Chapter

He endowed his Church with immortal life when he said: 'The gates of hell (Hades) shall not prevail against it.' But this has nothing to do with the question of a traceable or hidden existence. He gives his pledge that his Church shall not perish, and he has secured to her this stability. The forces of death have proudly dashed themselves against her a thousand times, but despite their rage, she stands firmly built on a 'Rock.' She has been driven into the wilderness again and again, as a helpless woman, to find a home as best she could. Its fastnesses, wastes, dens and caves, have invited her to their secrecy and shelter; but though her members have been driven like chaff before the wind, she has never been destroyed. An army is not overthrown when withdrawn from the field, it is retired only to make it indestructible. A grain of wheat enswathed and hidden in a pyramid for thousands of years grows as fresh as ever when brought back to light and moisture. So Christ signally evinces his watch-care over his Church when he brings her into a secret retreat for safety, or as John expresses it, into 'her place prepared by God,' that she may be 'nourished for a time,' to come forth stronger than ever. Men have often thought the Church dead, first amongst this people and then that, when she was more alive than ever for her occasional invisibility. At such times her organization has been broken, her ordinances suspended, her officers slain, her members ground to powder; but she has come forth again, not in a new array of the same persons, but in the revival of old truths amongst a new people, to reproduce new and illustrious examples of faithful men. Christianity has been one web through which the golden band of truth has been visible from edge to edge at times, then a mere thread has been seen, then it has been fully covered by the warp. But anon, it has re-appeared as bright as ever, from its long invisibility.

III. CHRIST NEVER PROMISED TO HIS CHURCHES THEIR ABSOLUTE PRESERVATION FROM ERROR.

He promised his Spirit to lead his Apostles into all truth, and kept his word faithfully when they wrote and spoke as the Spirit moved them. But when he had finished the inspired rule for their guidance, he did not vouchsafe to keep them pure, *nolens volens*. They might mix error and false doctrine with his truth, and disgrace themselves by corrupting admixtures; but the loss and responsibility were theirs. To have pledged them unmixed purity for all time despite their own self-will was to endow them with infallibility, which is precisely the doctrine of Rome and a contradiction of all reliable history. Even in the first century there was great defection from the truth, as the Epistles show. Some of them were written, indeed, for the express purposes of correcting error, especially the latter writings of Paul and John. From the second to the fourth century, we find a rapid departure from inspired truth, with many sects, and no churches exactly after the Apostolic order. Some few men, original thinkers who followed no man's teachings, broke loose from the leadership of all. They went independently to the text of Scripture, but stood single-handed, and took with them some error from which they could not free themselves, so that they fell below their own ideal; and the original model was not restored for some length of time. Nay, more than this even is true. Those organic bodies of men who were drawn together into reformed churches, were moved by mixed motives, and in attempting a new order of things few of them came up to the New Testament standard in all respects. And the failure to reach that standard in all churches has been so marked as to render it vain to look for a visible line of succession, which constitutes the only true Church descent from Apostolic times to ours. Some churches have been faithful to one divine truth

Have we a visible succession

and some to another, but none have embodied all the truth and few individual men now known to us have kept all the requisitions of the gospel.

This principle of infallibility and Church succession is the central corruption of Rome, and has so polluted her faith that she scarcely holds any truth purely, both in the abstract and the concrete. She believes in the proper Deity of Jesus Christ and of the Holy Spirit, – in the Unity and Trinity of the Godhead, – in the authenticity and inspiration of the Scriptures, – in the doctrines of incarnation and atonement, – and in eternal glory and retribution. But which of these has she not modified and perverted, under the pretense that she is endowed with Catholicity and perpetual visibility, as the rightful church Apostolic, all her defilement to the contrary? and now she makes her errors her real life. What is true of the hierarchy is equally true of most of the bodies which have protested against and shaken off her heresies. They clung to some truths which she trod underfoot, but they hugged some of her errors as closely as she hugged them, defended them as stoutly, and often persecuted unto death those who differed with them, even in minor matters.

IV. THE WORLD IS VASTLY MORE INDEBTED TO A LINE OF INDIVIDUAL MEN WHO HAVE CONTENDED FOR THE TRUTH, EACH BY HIMSELF, THAN TO ANY ORGANIC CHURCHES, WHICH CAN BE TRACED BY VISIBLE SUCCESSION FROM THE APOSTLES, UNDER ANY NAME WHATEVER.

In religion, as in other departments of life, great movements have almost always centered in one or two isolated individuals, who have become immensely influential, by first turning their eyes upon the needs of their own souls, without human aid, and generally in opposition to all organizations. External influences had little to do in shaping their powers. They were molded above and in advance of their age, and created a new life for all about them, often far outside of their native sphere. First of all they were obliged to escape from and master themselves, then they led their times into a higher and purer godliness. God wrought some grand consummation by them without the aid of any local church, under those uniform laws of truth by which Christ's kingdom has ever been governed. These powerful examples, scattered through the centuries, show that not organization but regenerated manhood makes true history, as we might expect from the fact, that the foundation of Gospel obedience is laid in the deep soul-convictions of individual men.

The most marked discoveries and advancements of history have been made, not on the plans of concerted bodies, but by individual minds. Galileo seized the idea of the telescope from a casual glance at a boy holding a tube to his eye; and Newton found the law that binds the universe in a falling apple. So, the few who have been impregnated with holy purposes, saturated through and through with fidelity to Christ, have arisen in imperial strength to vindicate his truth; these are the Alpine peaks that mark the centuries. Their love to Christ held their action responsible to him, and made its final results safe. Religious systems arose out of their personal exertions, but when did a religions system create a new life, after the first century? Baptists are greater debtors to such a train of men than to any train of churches that can be named. This great law of individuality has not escaped the notice of skeptics. Matthew Arnold says, in his *Introduction to Literature and Dogma*: 'Jesus Christ, as he appears in the Gospels, and for the very reason that he is manifestly above the heads of his reporters there, is, in the jargon of modern philosophy, an absolute; we cannot explain him, cannot get behind him, and above him, cannot command him. He is, therefore, the perfection

Introductory Chapter

of our ideal, and it is as an ideal that the divine has its best worth and reality. The unerring and consummate felicity of Jesus, his prepossessingness, his grace and truth, are moreover at the same time the law for right performance on all great men's lines of endeavor, although the Bible deals with the line of conduct only.' Goethe speaks of the person of Christ in the same strain: 'The life of that divine man, whom you allude to, stands in no connection with the general history of the world in his time. It was a private life; his teaching was for individuals. What has publicly befallen vast masses of people, and the minor parts which compose them, belongs to the general history of the world, the religion we have named the first. What inwardly befalls individuals, belongs to the second religion, the philosophical: such a religion was it that Christ taught and practiced so long as he went about on earth.'

This tribute to Christ from such sources may be applied largely to those who have pre-eminently imbibed his spirit, were made what they were by closely following him, and who lived singly to his glory. The distinctive religious life which they introduced into their times was in advance of their day, as his life was in advance of his day. Their progress was slow, like his, because they set up a high mark and suffered for it; their patience and growth drew men to their side. and when they retired, perhaps as martyrs, their aim was reached by the world, so that that which others first scouted became necessary at last to their bliss. Some few such men drew the historic boundary lines, as a few headlands mark the entire 'sweep of a dim sea-coast. The truths which they insisted upon were changeless, though they were neglected under the reign of ignorance, or the sway of violence. But the king-men were not to blame for the dwarfishness of others. They gave unity to the centuries by keeping the struggle alive for the purity of eternal principles, the idea for which they suffered has interpreted its priceless value by their sufferings. Because the masses of the people were ignorant they were ferocious, for in the Middle Ages men did not seek high principle in troops; as great souls only can prefer a pure religion to one that is corrupt, one that is simple to one that is complicated, one from heaven and unstamped by earthly and grotesque intermixtures. The natural creed of the masses lodges in ceremony, mummery and external sanctity, and simple purity is too great to enlist admiration, when men prefer sophistication. Of course, where such religion is preferred there can be few men of gigantic stature.

Then, it often happens that men of high excellence rise in character far above their creed, for in historic religion creed and character do not always harmonize. When a few men rise above the character of a whole people they rise above the level of their age, and in that case they must pay a large price in suffering for the purpose of blessing their race; a price that but few are able to pay. A great mind of our day avows, 'That in the whole period from the sixth to the tenth century, there were not in all Europe more than three or four men who dared to think for themselves;' and even they were not classed with the creators of their age. They were neither rulers nor statesmen, but quiet and unobserved suggesters, who discovered abuses and pointed out remedies which future times were proud to apply. Chiefly through this order of mind we are to trace the record of Baptist sentiments, but the name 'Baptist' must not mislead us to enlist into our ranks men who would be unworthy of that name today, simply because they held some things in common with ourselves. Rather, we must embrace only those who cherished in full, the conception which both the New Testament Baptists and those of the nineteenth century set forth as underlying the entire kingdom of Christ. It is in the embodiment of these principles, whether in individuals or churches, that we are to look for true Baptist history. Because they are imbedded in the Bible we bow to their holy

Have we a visible succession

teachings, the antiquity of principles being quite another thing from the antiquity of organizations. As doctrines and practices originated in after times are late and new, we must reverence that antiquity alone which God uttered in the beginning. A system running through ages is an empty boast unless it reproduces the vital, spiritual copy of the first age.

For seventy years the Jews lost the line of the Passover, when Jerusalem lay in heaps and Israel was enslaved in Babylon, but when Hezekiah brought them back and restored the feast, the seventy missing links of festivity came with them. Two generations of their people had died and certain of their tribes were never heard of again, yet their true history as Jews was not broken nor the significance of the Passover impaired, 'although they had not done it of a long time in such sort as it is written.' The moment that the Temple was rebuilt, its doors opened, and its lamps relit, the old authority of the institution revived. No Jewish household now living can trace its descent to any given tribe which existed at the fall of Jerusalem, A.D. 70. All have been so scattered and intermixed amongst themselves and the Gentiles, that tribal lines are entirely obliterated; yet none will deny that they are the direct descendants of Abraham. The principles above set forth are not those which have been generally adopted in Baptist history. But the writer is persuaded that they are the only true channel through which it can be traced, and by which Baptists can be made a unit with Apostolic Churches, while visible descent and the unbroken succession of churches are not and cannot be a proper test in the matter. We enjoy the right of self-government in the United States by a regular descent of democracy from the Roman Republic, but it is impossible to trace its course by a line of democracies to which our own is the successor. But the two, separated so widely in point of time, are essentially the same in their liberties. Individuals have asserted the rights of man in every country, and bands have struggled to embody them in every government, but who will say that these have not been the true patriots of the world, because a perpetual and visible line of organized republics has not come down to us, side by side with a similar line of despotic governments?

Historical truth applies the same processes to the several streams of natural science. Certain families and tribes are found in vegetable and animal life; that is to say, a given type multiplies itself into groups, sequence being our guide; yet no scientist discards faith in the existence of a type, because he cannot trace its visible sequence, while again and again he finds its outward course strangely resumed. So we speak of a people known as 'Baptists,' who have been substantially of one order of religious faith and practice, and have been made so by one order of religious principle. If crushed at one time, or entirely driven out of sight, others bearing the same Apostolic stamp and force have come forth to fill their places, under other names. A sunbeam is a sunbeam, no matter upon what putrescence it may fall, or with what pollution it may mingle; and by a ray of this character we thread our way from Christ down in ecclesiastical life. But the pretense that any one communion now on earth can trace it all the way down from the Apostles, in one line of fidelity and purity to New Testament teachings, is to contradict all reliable history. Dr. Abel Stevens says: 'Obscure communities, as the Cathari of the Novatians, the Paulicians, the Albigenses, and the Waldenses, maintained the ancient faith in comparative purity from the beginning of the fourth century down to the Reformation.' These and other sects held one or more distinctive Baptist principles, but none of them were thorough Baptists, through and through. A Baptist church is a congregation, and not a denomination of congregations, and find if in what nook we may if it can trace its doctrines to the Apostles it is an Apostolic Church.

Introductory Chapter

'A church,' says Dr. Ripley, 'that came into existence yesterday, in strict conformity to the New Testament principles of membership, far away from any long-existing church or company of churches and therefore unable to trace an outward lineal descent, is a true Church of Christ. While a church so-called, not standing on the Apostolic principles of faith and practice, and yet able to look back through a long line up to time immemorial, may have never belonged to that body of which Christ is the Head.'

The reader of religious history must be as honest as its writer, for the one is as much exposed to bias as the other. Yet, the exact facts which are found by the truthful historian are often condemned unweighed, because they are unpalatable; and true chronicles are often buried under the abuse which they heap upon the subject. For some reason much of this unfairness crops out, with many, whenever the truths of the New Testament are under consideration. Hence a man only honors himself and the vital teachings of the Holy Spirit when he separates himself from all that is superficial in his own methods of examination. Above all people, Baptists should be content to separate their history from all questionable material, and to write and read it in the form in which facts have cast it, its complete touchstone being conformity to the Gospel. Those only have been Baptists who have conformed to this rule, from age to age, without addition or subtraction. Error must eternally remain error, and no antiquity can sanctify it into truth. For all the ends of truth merely venerable custom is weak; yet, if a supreme love of truth does not force it back, it will dominate the mind through the senses, which are captivated by the hoary. As the dykes of Holland repel the approaches of the sea, so Baptists can only reserve the fairest provinces of truth by resisting ancient custom, simply because it is ancient. Ecclesiastical custom is as mutable as its maker, and yet, when an old practice conflicts with the New Testament, many make that practice the true interpretation of God's word without questioning its authority. Although not one jot has been added to the truth since the death of the Apostle John, the bare antiquity of a tradition enshrines it in the faith of many, especially if it came down from one of the so-called 'Fathers.' A late able scholar of Dr. Wayland's illustrated the feeling of many on this subject. He asked whether, if the doctor had lived near the time of Paul, his word would not have been weightier than that of other men. The great tutor replied, 'Yes, provided Paul had said in his writings, "I leave Francis Wayland my interpreter."' And if not, how could he have interpreted an apostle better than any one else, without special inspiration from God? The noblest minds are often crippled by this straining after uninspired antiquity, under the notion that it must touch the divine, without reaching after Christ's infallible ideal, when it stands openly before their eyes.

Baptist historians have always written against great odds. Commonly those who rejected our principles in past ages were filled with bitterness, and destroyed the best sources of exact data in the shape of treatise narrative and record. The hated party was weak, and the dominant bought its destruction. Often these helpless victims of tyranny were obliged to destroy their own documents, lest discovery should overwhelm them in calamity. We shall see also that while many of the old sects were more or less imbued with Baptist principles, each had its own class of deductions, convictions and practices. In consequence, what was a cherished faith with one was held in contempt by another, and these states of mind became a part of the men themselves. Their different stages of faith were different stages of consciousness; and it came to pass, that to oppose each other fiercely was to attain high fidelity. In the dreary weakness of human nature each man held his own sect virtuous and the other vicious, all the time forgetting that as relative bodies they modified each other, and were largely responsible for each other's conduct. Then, as the Baptists had control of no

Have we a visible succession

national government, they could not preserve their records as did others. They managed no legislation or system of civil jurisprudence, and could keep no archives, having no legal officers whose special business it was to store up and keep facts. Necessarily, therefore, what few records they have left are fragmentary, without due continuity of register, and almost barren of vital events. The hand which carried the sword to smite this people, carried also the torch to burn up their books, and their authors were reduced to ashes by the flames of their own literature. The material for building up their chronicles is both crude and scanty. The governing life of a people, and not circumstances alone, gives value to their claim, and so we are thrown back on principle and hard generalization.

If Baptist history be peculiar, it is only because they have been a peculiar people. Their enemies have always accounted them as 'heretics,' whose prime value was to keep a cold world warm by their use as fuel for the stake. Men have never been willing to understand them, because they never would accept them on their own showing, but have insisted on measuring them by other standards than their own. With a great price they obtained their freedom, and their radical individualism made them appear to other men as disturbing and even violent. In turn, almost every man's hand has been against them, and as a people of but one book, they have taken a fixed and sturdy character, which has made them look as if their hand was against every man. What Burke said of Americans, in another line, is true of them in their devotion to the Bible, namely: 'In no country, perhaps, in the world, is the law so general a study.'

We see, then, that Robinson, Crosby, Irving, Orchard, Jones, Backus, Benedict, Cramp, and other Baptist historians, have written under every possible disadvantage. Still, their work shows an instinctive love of the truth for the truth's sake, worthy of such veterans. Their spirituality is elevated, their piety without guile, their devotion to the Gospel ardent, and their historical acumen quite equal to that of other Church historians. In the main, their leading facts and findings have not been proven untrustworthy, and no one has attempted to show that their general conclusions are untenable. Possibly, their chief mistake has lodged in the attempt to find the stray and casual links of a certain order of churches which may, by accommodation be called Baptist. The design of this work will be, to follow certain truths through the ages, on that radical Protestant principle which professes to discard the Romish claim of catholicity and succession, and so to follow certain truths down to their chief conservators of this time, the Baptists. By this method we can best understand their battles with error and power, their defeats and victories. In general history no writer will be content to seek a succession of kings and courts, of warriors and bloody fields, but he will find truth in the social and civil life of a people, in the march of constitutional freedom, and the phenomena of human elevation.

The best service that can be rendered to the Baptists is, to trace the noiseless energy and native immortality of the doctrines which they hold, after all their conflicts, to the glory of Christ, for it is exactly here that we see their excellency as a people. If it can be shown that their churches are the most like the Apostolic that now exist, and that the elements which make them so have passed successfully through the long struggle, succession from the times of their blessed Lord gives them the noblest history that any people can crave. To procure a servile imitation of merely primitive things has never been the mission of Baptists. Their work has been to promote the living reproduction of New Testament Christians, and so to make the Christlike old, the ever delightfully, new. Their perpetually fresh appeal to the Scriptures as the only warrant for their existence at all

Introductory Chapter

must not be out off, in a foolish attempt to turn the weapons of the hierarchy against itself. The sword of the Spirit must still be their only arm of service, offensive and defensive. An appeal to false credentials now would not only cut them off from their old roll of honor, but it would sever them from the use of all that now remains undiscovered and unapplied in the word of God. The distinctive attribute in the kingdom of Christ is life; not an historic life, but a life supernatural, flowing eternally from Christ alone by his living truth.

Such existence does not claim the right of long possession in this soil or that, or through this or that course of time; nor is this the best title by which Baptists can prove their heirship to their fair inheritance. So far from their right to live inhering in organic ancestry by ancient descent, their right to be, in the nineteenth century, comes by their oneness with the truth given by Christ in the first century. Their present possession of that truth, is the testimony to their unity with an endless life, is their only authority for existence at any time, with or without human records, and shuts out all other considerations. The life of all Gospel churches must center in the truth which has come down unscathed from Jesus Christ; we must find it here or nowhere, and there can be no course, extreme or *via media*, which applies the true test of Church life but this. A human figment may serve the ends of Catholicism, but as Baptists are not Romanists, only Christ and Apostolicity as they are found in the Divine Writings can suffice for them. The spirit and outcome of these in their normal form afford the staple for genuine Baptist History.

THE NEW TESTAMENT PERIOD

Chapter 1 - John the Baptist

When Malachi finished the promissory books, BC 397, his vision shot the great gulf between the Old and New Revelations. He had just stated that on the other side 'The Sun of Righteousness should arise with healing in his wings,' and looking 400 years in advance he saw Christ's messenger, his own successor, in a young Judean prophet, and heard him uplift the cry 'Behold your God.' Nearly 4,000 years before Malachi, a four-headed river had flowed from Eden 'to water all the ends of the earth,' and His faith now descried on the banks of the antitypical Jordan, the Master with the messenger, two Godlike forms, each first-born, and cousins' sons. Whom Malachi saw in vision, Matthew met in real flesh and blood, the Baptist 'herald' and the Lord from heaven. The voice, 'Make straight his paths,' is the first sentence in Baptist history. No moral night had been so dark as that athwart which this prophet cast his eye to see the coming 'Day- star.' Only remnants of the old Jewish faith were left, and the national life was fast going forever, with that public patriotism, free thought and outspoken manliness, which had already perished.

At first God gave the Jews the most popular government of all the nations; it treated the personal man with honor and dignity. Though they had no human king or hereditary ruler from time to time, he gave them such a political head as war or peace required, with prerogatives which met present necessity. In time the theocracy gave witness to the unity of God, and its liberties were linked to this vital truth. This theistic doctrine made Jehovah their common Father, they were uncrippled by doubtful negations, untainted with atheism, and the ideal in each man's soul clothed his fellow with the rights of a brother. The radical teaching from which all abiding liberty flows is this: 'Love God with all thy heart, and thy neighbor as thyself.'

During the period between the last prophet and the first evangelist the Assyrian, Persian, and Macedonian empires, with their endless divisions and subdivisions, had culminated in the Roman Empire. This power absorbed into itself the sentiment, humanity, political economics, and religious philosophies of thousands of years, covering the histories of all the great races, Semitic and Indo-European, having welded the whole into a homogeneous mass. It had sprung from an obscure city more than seven centuries B.C. and now embraced the civilized world. The great republic had waged its renowned conflict between plebeians and patricians for constitutional government. The democratic spirit had passed away with its staunchest defender, the regal and republican forms of government having been swallowed up in the imperial under Augustus.

Palestine was but a hundred and eighty miles long, by about half that width. Yet, when John and Jesus came the officers of Rome were everywhere, with no jurisprudence left; only appeal to a heathen emperor, under privilege. Three native kings, indeed, divided the old Hebrew patrimony: Antipas, in Galilee; Philip, in Ituria; and Lysanius, in Abilene.

Still, over these was Pilate, the sixth procurator in twenty-three years, with the Governor of Syria over him, with Tiberius above all, and each ready to enforce his mandate by the arms of the empire. These tyrants quarreled alternately with each other, in turn issued conflicting commands, fleeced each other in particular, and the Jews universally. One Jewish party flattered and copied the native rulers, another the foreigners, and all were proud to serve as minor officers, if they might wring a crust out of official rapacity. A third party hated and defied the intruders, plotting revolt and sedition, which kept the nation in a seething excitement and its blood ever flowing. Yet, a few men

The New Testament Period

of God never yielded heart or hope. However dark the hour of adversity their lamp was always burning. They waited for the Deliverer to break every yoke. Their fellows, worn-out, grounded arms and died, their eyes glazed with despair. But the love of Jehovah and liberty never forsook these. No matter if the red-handed family of the age held Jacob by the throat, the holy few felt the shadow of the King at the gate. If the iron had entered their soul it was not rusted by heart-tears. The time had come for a new manhood; a new revelation of truth and holiness was needed, fresh in righteousness and true holiness. An age of moral suasion was dawning to work a new character in the personal man. Then, from renewed individuals should come 'the kingdom of heaven,' in a regenerate society. Zacharias and Elisabeth, Simeon and Anna, felt their old hearts revive, because another Elijah was at the portal to open the golden age. Groans and strife, tears and blood, had tracked the horrid length of 400 years. At length there came a 'little child' to lead them, with a 'voice' to prepare his way; and when their withered arms pressed the reforming Baptist and his redeeming Lord to their bosoms, the 'first chapter in Baptist History was' begun.

Edward Irving truly says, 'John was the beginning of a new race.' But the words of Jesus better fix his proper place in history: 'Amen, I say unto you, among them that are born of women there has not risen a greater than John the Baptist.' These words alone make him the most remarkable character on the sacred page, save only he who spoke them. Zacharias his father, was a priest in Israel, Elisabeth, his mother, was a daughter of Aaron. Not only had their priestly ancestry stretched down fifteen centuries, but they were 'filled with the Holy Spirit.' This is said of no other father and mother of our race. They feared that their honorable lineage would soon be blotted out, for they were old and childless. The words, 'Thy prayer is heard,' imply that their empty home had been the subject of petition at God's throne. He had promised them a son, and when he would fulfill his word, it fell to the lot of John's father to pass through the golden gate into the holy place to burn incense: a high and holy privilege which never was repeated by the same priest, as it brought him so near to Jehovah. Already the live coals had been carried in a fire-pan from the burnt offering, the sweet spices sprinkled thereon, and the floating perfume was on its way to the clouds, when lo! a mysterious form glided into the hallowed place. Gabriel stood by the altar, bright in native benignity. In a moment the temple heard the new revelation, that a son should be born in the home of the man of God.

Gabriel and Michael are the only angels called by name in the Bible. Michael is the judicial messenger, the destroyer, valiant for the Lord of Hosts in terrible warfare. The mission of Gabriel is peace, especially Messianic peace. At the 'evening oblation,' the same hour of incense, he told Daniel that the Prince, Messiah, should come. He brought the same news to Mary, and to the father of John; the three cases ascribe to him the office of Messianic angel. *No* person but the priest could stand by the altar and live, and fear fell upon Zacharias when he saw that the celestial visitant did not fall dead. Then Gabriel broke the silence of four centuries, and opened the Baptist Age, saying: 'Fear not, thy wife shall bear a son, and his name shall be called John.' The venerable priest staggered through unbelief, and asked for a sign. Gabriel gave it in the very dumbness of the tongue that asked it until the child should be born. He then went forth to the people mute, beckoning, perhaps in an excited manner, but he could not pronounce the usual blessing, and they perceived that some strange thing had happened. He retired to his home at Hebron, or Juttah, near to Hebron, and remained, speechless for three fourths of a year.'

The 'city Juda,' the Levitical city of Juttah, as shown by Beland and Robinson, is about six miles

Chapter 1 - John the Baptist

south of Hebron, in the hill country, seventeen miles south of Jerusalem. Jerusalem stood 2,400 feet above the sea, and Hebron was 200 feet above that. Hebron was the ancient home of Abraham, where his pool still exists, the oldest now known in the world. This city had been given to the children of Aaron, 'with the suburbs thereof round about it,' and was a fitting birthplace of the Baptist, the greatest descendant of Aaron's house. Here David received his crown, and here were the sepulchers of Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Rebecca, Jacob and Leah. Rabbinical tradition says of this spot, that the morning sacrifice was never offered at the temple till the watchman on its tower saw these uplands ablaze with the newly-breaking morning sun. Zacharias saw this glory despite His speechless state, meanwhile Gabriel's words rang through his son concerning the coming child. The pledge: 'He shall be great before the Lord,' did not refer to his native wisdom, fidelity or influence, but royally set forth his great office; the great era which he should usher in, the great truths which he should proclaim – and, above all, the new stamp of manhood to be brought in his own person, as a specimen of those whom the new era was to produce. Without rank, or wealth, or power, he was to loom up above the old classes of good men, mighty before God. Consecrated to a greater work than any other man, and opening a greater future than any had foreseen, he was to take a higher type of moral character than any had yet borne. Of a priestly house, he was to offer no sacrifice, but was to preach the first Sacrifice from a princely house. Priesthood needed not the fullness of the Spirit, and seldom possessed it, but in order to establish the new office of preacher, to lead men to salvation, he needed the indwelling Spirit. Nor was the first prophet in four centuries to work a miracle, but simply to proclaim the Christ.

When the cry of the new-born babe had brought music to the quiet home, a dispute arose among the neighbors about his name, some calling him Zacharias. This could not be. No one was named after his own father in the Old Testament. 'Nay,' said his mother; 'he shall be called John,' meaning: 'Bestowed of the Lord.' The neighbors remonstrated, none of his family were known by that name, and they made signs to his father to decide the question, who wrote upon a tablet: 'His name is John!' The child was to begin the world's new sermon, and as it was meet that the Gospel theme which had been pent in his father's soul so long should break forth, the tongue of the dumb was unloosed. With his first gust of voice he cried: 'O, child! thou shalt be called prophet of the Highest, for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, in order to give knowledge of salvation to his people, in the remission of their sins.' It were worth the dead silence of a lifetime to speak these words. Their meaning was so broad, and their music so sweet, that the old priest repeated the word 'salvation' three times before he could stop. 'A horn of salvation,' – 'salvation for our enemies,' – 'salvation in the remission of sins,' was the astonishing threefold theme on which he practiced his new-found tongue, in the new-found language of truth. Gabriel put a key into his hand to open this mystery, saying: 'Fear not, Zacharias, many of the sons of Israel shall be turned to the Lord their God; in the converts whom John should make. Nay, he said, that 'the mouth of the holy prophets of old' had spoken of this 'redemption' as if the mystic fingers of dead Malachi were sweeping his old heart that day, till its chords vibrated as those of a harp. That child had brought the missing link between the two dispensations, had become the veritable bridge-builder, the true Christian pontiff, who spanned the arch from the last outskirts of Judaism to the frontier line of the Gospel. What manner of child was this first Baptist?

The Gospels are silent on John's youth and early manhood, saying: 'That the hand of the Lord was with him, that he grew and became strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of His

The New Testament Period

manifestation to Israel.' God marked him by special tokens for his great task. While his body grew his soul became mentally and morally mighty till he was ready for his public work. The inspired limner gives simply this bold outline which makes 'the hand of the Lord,' the power of God, the emblem of his force. Gabriel throws light upon his discipline when he imposes the Nazarite's vow, to 'drink neither wine nor strong drink.' Nothing inflaming was to pass his lips or affect his brain. The vow also exempted him from attendance at the feasts, and kept him separate until his 'showing unto Israel.' Samson, Samuel, and John were all Nazarites from birth, severe consecration and denial of luxury being specially needful in the forerunner of him who was separate from sinners. His father's priestly house furnished him with Hebrew Biblical knowledge, and held there under the holy influence of Elisabeth, like Moses in Midian and Elijah in the desert, no rabbi could pervert him, till he was ready to stir the life of Judea to its center, by the Gospel. Samson and Samuel were 'sanctified,' set apart to the Lord from their birth, but neither of them was filled with the Holy Spirit, as was the Baptist; one of the train of wonders in his character and mission.

It seems most likely that he left his home and plunged into the wilderness of Judea when he had passed his twentieth year, the time at which young priests were inspected by the Sanhedrin for their office. The 'deserts' which he entered are supposed to be that weary region that stretches over Western Judea, bordering on the Dead Sea, including its desolate basin. It includes Engedi, extending from the Kedron twelve miles south of Jerusalem to the south-western end of the Sea of Death, and in width, from thence to the mountains of Judea. It is not called a 'wilderness' for barrenness of vegetation, like the African sand-wastes. On the contrary, it is a perfect tangle of growth. Lonely and wild, the broom-brush, the stunted cedar, the osher, the rush and the Apple of Sodom, all flourish there, and nomads pasture their cattle with great profit. It is watered by the Kedron and other streams, their course lying dark and deep, in ravines and chasms, where all is grim and ribbed with rock, sometimes to the depth of 1,000 feet below the brow of the cliff.

This region abounds in gorges, crevices and caverns. It is torn by sharp precipices from the heaving of earthquakes, leaving the flint, chalk and limestone rents in every weird aspect. Rills of water gush forth, twisting their way here and there, or falling in cascades over crags and shelves, in haste to sweeten the acrid plain and sullen Sea of Salt. There, the jackal, the wolf, the fox, the panther, the boar, find their lairs and dens. From ridge to ridge, the hoarse scream of the vulture, the raven and eagle, echoes mingled with the pensive song of the thrush, and the drone of the bee, wandering from wild flower to wild flower, yellow and blue, crimson and white. In all its grandeur, this howling wilderness was the chosen home of the first Baptist. Its solemn desolation and wild elements preached to him of God, inured his body to hardship, and turned his soul inward upon itself. The parchment which warmed in his hand stirred him to communion with the Inspiring Spirit, who had invested its sentences with immortality, and proved its truths divine by their appeal to his heart. Life had coursed through the skin on which, the text glowed before the knife of slaughter flayed it; and now, the holy *afflatus*, which the sacred penman had infused into its texture, warmed his soul with the beatings of an immortal life. There, he listened to the still, small voice, as did Elijah in sacred Horeb, away from noise and contention, till his spirit waxed strong in God and in the power of His might.

In his austerity, this holy recluse wore the coarsest of raiment. The rough camel's hair-cloth, bound to his loins by a band of undressed leather, covered his limbs. Young and full of fire, he stood, the living image of courage, in the garb of the elder prophets. His Nazarite vow had kept his

Chapter 1 - John the Baptist

hair unclipped from birth, his diet was locusts, dried, ground, and eaten with wild honey which dripped from the rock, and he cooled his thirst at the spring wherever he roamed in the freedom of the desert. His removal from the uplands of Hebron into this somber desolation was not a mere incident. He must be equipped for his iron mission, as far as hardship could fit him to cope with moral evil. For years, he had been wrestling with the slow openings of his fore-felt work. Self-recognition had come glimpse by glimpse, till new insight had brought him into new sympathy with the Holy One who had sent him. Struggle after struggle had wrought in him an ardent spirituality, which rebukes sin with the quietest authority. Pleading with God day and night, the depravity of his brethren, and the hollowness of their ritual were echoed to his soul from the hollow rocks by his own foot-falls.

Did he pass his time amongst these grotts and caverns without studying the word of God? Without the Sacred Parchments brought from his father's house, the gold had become dim and the fine gold changed, he had not been a true Baptist if ignorant of these, to win his countrymen back to Jehovah. We can scarcely doubt, that in the desert these treasures showed him how the rod of Aaron, his great ancestor, should bloom again and his empty pot of manna be refilled. How the Nazarene, then sweating at the carpenter's bench should suddenly come to his Temple, to rekindle the Shekinah in new glory over the mercy-seat. The Law, the Prophets and the Psalms in his retreat, made his heart burn with prophetic fire, for he heard the voices of old Prophets quivering in the air. As night gives brilliancy to the gem, so did his desert gloom bring out lustrous truth from the inspired lore of ages, every line that he unrolled telling a divine story; for everywhere he found his Redeeming kinsman of the tribe of Judah, of whose 'Salvation' his father had sung. God would not entrust the education of his greatest prophet to the skill of mortals. In visions of the night when deep sleep fell upon his father's house, fear came upon him and trembling, which made all his bones shake. An image stood before his eyes, spirits passed before his face and he heard a voice. When the breathing Parchment crackled in His hand, the pulsations of a deathless life stirred him, and the Holy Oracle was alive with living images. The flaming sword of Eden waved before him, and the ascending fire of Abel. Enoch, the seventh from Adam, told him that Jesus opened the gate of heaven, when he rose to his home without tasting death. Noah told the Baptist that the ark, wherein eight souls 'were saved through water,' was a type of his coming Captain. That when it rocked over an immersed world in the darkness of its grave, Jesus was the lamp which hung in its window above the gloomy deep. Nay, it was he who gave hues to the first rainbow that spanned the new world, when the eight elect antediluvians pitched their tents again on dry ground, and offered sacrifice under its radiant arch.

John also saw Abraham's day in the desert and was glad, when the great forefather assured him that he had seen the coming King, as he looked out from the steeps of Hebron. Isaac avouched to him that he had seen his Star, when he went into the fields at eventide to meditate; and Jacob declared, that at Bethel he saw Jesus standing at the top of the mystic ladder, and on his pillow of stone dreamed in the night watches about the glory of the latter day. David, the son of Jesse, showed the Baptist that his great Son guided his fingers over the Messianic harp, when his throne trembled in raptures, and living anthems flew like angels from the strings. Moses told him of the Rock that followed Israel, which 'Rock was Christ'; and Isaiah, that Jesus was the 'Stem' that blossomed by the house of Jesse, on the hill-side of Bethlehem. In a word, from the days of Eve, the mother of all living, to those of Mary, the mother of Jesus, the history of the Promised Seed was traced in the

The New Testament Period

desert by the son of Elizabeth. And, yet, a few miles from his dingy retreat, the incarnate God had already been wrapped in swaddling bands and laid in a manger.

All this fitted him for the office to which he was born, armed him with a fidelity which nothing could daunt to grapple with his adulterous generation. Without this strength defeat only awaited him. Being fully clad in celestial panoply, the word of the Lord said to him: 'Go,' and he arose to begin his true Baptist work. He emerged from the desert of the North, and came first upon the well-watered plain of the Jordan. His sandals then pressed the soil of Lot, on which the eye of Moses rested, when he died on Nebo. There the name of John became eternally united with the name of Jesus, the Christ. Whenever an Oriental monarch passed through his realms, a herald went before him, proclaimed his coming, and required his subjects to make the neglected roads passable for their sovereign, by removing all hinderances to his progress. When Semiramis, the Queen of Babylon, marched into Persia, she crossed the Zarcean mountain, but not till its precipices were digged down and its hollows filled to make her way smooth. We have similar records of Xerxes, Caligula, and Titus, and when Jesus entered upon his kingly course, John, his herald, demanded that all obstructions be removed before him in his march. He cried, 'Prepare the way of the Lord, that all flesh may see his glory; His progress was not to be that of pomp and pageantry, but that of a nation's repentance. Rugged and wretched as were the moral wastes, he was to make the desolation ring with the demand for 'repentance,' summoning all to surrender to the coming Prince. The valleys must be filled. All debasing affections must be elevated, the downtrodden and the despairing must be lifted up. Mountains must be brought low. The proud and haughty were to be leveled, abased in the dust. The crooked should be made straight. All tortuous policies, winding deceits, and lying frauds of the self-righteous, should be exchanged for simplicity and transparency. The rugged ways must be made smooth. Coarse severity, rough tempers, bitter asperity, hot fanaticism, and stoical hardness must be cast aside, for gentleness and child-like affections... Then all flesh should see the salvation of God. No lofty shadow was to fling its length before the face of God's Anointed, The 'Voice' cried: 'Prepare the way of the Lord.'

When John left the howling of beasts in the desert, it was to electrify the land by the startling cry 'Repent,' and thenceforth, he frowned on all brutal passion. The whole nation started to its feet and flocked to him, as its center of hope. City, village, and hamlet poured forth their hardened multitudes to see and hear the new Baptist preacher. The Prophecy of Malachi had said: 'Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord; and, as the universal expectation of the Messiah was cherished by the Jews at this time, they looked for the literal accomplishment of this prediction in the return of the Tishbite, as his precursor. The news, therefore, flew through the land that this faithful servant of God who ascended to heaven in the reign of Jehoram, had been borne back to the earth, to break the Roman Scepter, and hurl himself like a thunderbolt against all tyrants, that he might restore the glory to Israel by enthroning her new king. Every eye longed to see this somber old giant of Carmel and Horeb, and every ear listened for his strange voice; hence, all flocked to the banks of the Jordan whence he ascended, for, said they, the chariots of Israel and the horsemen thereof, had landed him on the very spot where he laid down his mantle and burden 900 years before.

But instead of launching forth denunciation against Roman strangers, John opened an accusative ministry upon his own people. He made not his voice soft and smooth in his 'cry.' He presented a new and striking figure to them, enthusiastic, yet self-poised. Filled with deep conviction of the

Chapter 1 - John the Baptist

truth, inspired of God and consecrated to the truth, he had evidently come on no dubious errand, and his aim was worthy of his great work. Under the pressure of a divine-influence, he set his face like flint, in downright fearlessness. The scorn of every form of cunning filled his voice, holy indignation at sin flew in every syllable from his lips. His body was free from sanctimonious vestments, and His soul inflamed with zeal; he lifted up the truth, a lambent torch, for his word made dread exposures, and searched men to the core of their being. Without the tears of Jeremiah, the sublimity of Isaiah, or the mystery of Ezekiel, he bravely struck home by rebuke and exhortation and heart-piercing censure. He dealt in no arts of insinuation, no apologies, no indulgence; but upbraided the hollow and pretentious, and shivered their pious self-conceit to atoms, while they gnashed their teeth at him. He was a living man, just sent from the living God, dealing with cardinal verities, in an original and emphatic vigor that stung the cold-hearted, and held the malignant conscience by a remorseless grip. Wicked men saw the majestic flow of holiness in his eye, they felt its nervous vibrations in his abrupt anatomy of character, and were borne down before his impassioned demands for self-loathing. The slothful were startled in their dreams; beheld up the self-blinded for their own inspection, in their true colors; he rudely tore off the mask of the false. The hard-hearted saw their guilt staring them in the face, and the reckless were haunted by the ghosts of their murdered mercies from the God of Abraham. Yet, he wielded no weapons of earthly chastisement; he mingled not the blood of sinners with the waters of the Jordan, but he pointed to the uplifted ax, as it gleamed in the terrors of the Lord, about to strike a blow-and fell the withered tree.

Strangely enough, instead of repelling the multitude, his fidelity fascinated them. The Spirit of God gave power to his proclamation. This, of itself, made his holy serenity soft and saving. Consciences were aroused, hearts were broken, and the sorrows of the people for sin, re-awakened the ancient sobbings, when their fathers wept, on the death of Moses. Arude and arrogant mind, having so difficult a work to do, would have been harsh in its rebukes, only exciting anger and resentment. But John's words cut to the quick because his affectionate holiness, gravity, sincerity; and good-will made them sharp. He had been so much in retirement with God that he was imbued with his love and compassion. He carried not the mien of an ill-mannered, bold, and self-appointed censor of sin.

True, the great Baptist had brought a fire-brand out of the wilderness which set all the dry stubble in the land ablaze. But with this came confession of sin in lowly simplicity, and sincere reformation of life, which sought expression in the new faith and baptism. Instead of meeting Elijah, descending in the regal state of flame to smite the waters of their great national river and divide them, the young representative of Elijah's God stood there demanding that their buried bodies, and not his rod, should divide the waters in token of death to sin. The alarming cry 'Repent ye' rang up and down the valley of the Jordan. This demand laid bare God's extreme holiness, and their personal guilt against him. The word itself (*metanoia*) means a change 'of mind or purpose'; so that he not only required deep sorrow, or contrition for their wickedness, but such an inward moral disposition as should thereafter obey the will of God. Then they were to bring forth fruits worthy of repentance, so that the outward expression of that disposition should prove the inward change to be radical. He made their immersion in water the exterior method of 'confessing' the reality of an honest, heart-felt reform. Here, then, he required a spiritual revolution, a baptism for the 'remission' or forgiveness of sins, and the implanting of a new principle of life in keeping with the kingdom of heaven at hand.

These requirements, urged with the courteous fidelity of holy conviction and the sacred

The New Testament Period

simplicity of an overawing holiness, led a multitude of wounded and stricken hearts to fly from all legal rites and ceremonial performances, for purification of heart and life, after the evangelical order of Isaiah:

'Wash you, make you clean;
Put away the evil of your doings
From before mine eyes.'

At a stroke of the pen Matthew draws another vivid picture. Priests, Levites, and doctors in the holy city had donned their robes and bound on their phylacteries and other ecclesiastical trappings for a visit to the great river, that they might pass upon John's commission. Sweeping with pomp and dignity through the gates, they mix with the throng on the slopes of the Jordan, first with a conceited curiosity, and then with a bigoted scowl. But John's keen eye read their character, and he began to ply them with solemn invective. In the desert he had seen the slimy viper gliding through the moss; crafty, malicious, with a powerful spring and a hollow tooth through which it ejected deadly poison. He had seen the brawny forester swing the ax to cut the tap-root of a tree and fell it for burning. And converting these into blunt figures of speech, he allied his visitors with false teachers from the 'old serpent' who could not be trusted for a moment. Like the flat-headed, ash-colored reptile, they had stung the sons of God; and with bitter irony he compares them to the twisting young, ejected from their dam, to hiss, and fight her venomous battles. Scathing them with cold sarcasm, he demands, 'Brood of vipers! have ye come to my baptism? What sent you? The ribbon on your robes is beautifully blue, the phylacteries on your brow are ostentatiously pious, but they cloak corruption. Delude not yourselves with the thought that ye are Abraham's sons. His blood may warm your veins, but ye deny his God, for your souls are dead to his faith. Behold the stones at your feet, and know that from them God is able to raise up sons to Abraham. One word from his mouth will bring from the adamant, truer Jewish hearts and softer than those that beat in you.' He then demanded that if they were sincere they should prove this by bringing forth fruits worthy of repentance. Nor did he change his tone with his simile; for when he dropped the lash of scorpions, he took the edge of the woodman's ax. He could not away with their sanctimonious hair-splittings and religious tamperings, but would hew them down to be cast into the fire.

But other and better classes of the people hailed his ministry with awe, as from God. So powerfully did divine truth move them, that they actually reasoned in their hearts concerning John, whether he himself were not the Christ. How beautifully our Lord Jesus speaks of these, when he would know of the rulers whether John's baptism were from heaven or of men. 'Verily, I say unto you, that the publicans and harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and ye did not believe him; and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.' These Rabbis were in the habit of saying 'That if the nation would repent but one day, the Messiah would come,' yet, when he came, they themselves were obdurate. And, when publicans, soldiers and others, who were openly sunk in sin, came to the Baptist, convicted of their iniquity, it was with the saving inquiry upon their lips, 'Teacher, what shall we do?' They seemed to look upon their own case as hopeless, but he fortified every man with encouragement at his weak point. He told the publicans, to 'Exact no more than that which is appointed you.' The tax-gatherers, to whom the Romans farmed out the taxation, were extortionate and cruel, for they paid so much to the government and then levied their own rates. He did not blame

Chapter 1 - John the Baptist

them for filling the political office, but he charged them to stop all rapacity, so that a new miracle would be found, when men should see an honest publican. His reply was of great breadth, forbidding them to confiscate property by unjust exaction. To the soldiers he replied: 'Do violence to no one, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages.' Josephus shows, that at this very time, Herod Antipas was sending an army against his father-in-law, Aretas, King of Arabia Petraea, who had declared war in consequence of Herod's bad treatment of his daughter. This being true, their route would lie directly through the region where John was preaching and immersing. This historian's full description of John is in perfect accord with the spirit of the above statement. These hearers of the Baptist were men of the bow, the arrow, the sword and the shield; their trade was war. He stood before them the living image of discipline and self-denial, and demanded of them, that they keep the insolent licentiousness and brutality of war in check, and disregard the lying doctrine that might makes right. In prosecuting their hard craft, godless pillage must cease. What lessons of love were these, enforced upon rough, heathen legions by which an unarmed young Baptist preacher tamed the fierceness of military tigers, and remanded desperate warriors back to the camp and field, made by their new faith as harmless as doves. Last of all, he threw the bridle over their license of riot and plunder, to curb them with a double bit. They must commit no robbery upon the conquered, indulge no selfishness, raise no mutiny against their officers to get more pay, but take their three *oboloi* a day; and be content.

Such a scene had never been witnessed on earth, and the most remarkable thing about it was, that so sweeping a ministry provoked no physical resistance. Jewish priests had shed streams of sacrificial blood at the altar for hundreds of years, whenever the nation groaned beneath the heel of its foes. They sighed for the tender mercy of God to rescue them from the hand of their enemy, and guide their feet anew into the way of peace. But now, while they felt the rankling humiliation of a hated race, and their hearts sank as they looked at the broken scepter of their nation, a stern preacher of their own race stings them with rebuke, and demands not sacrifice but repentance. The Ark of the Covenant was no longer there with its Tables of Stone. Urim and Thummim were gone. The glory of Bright Presence had departed forever from the most Holy place. The Golden Candlestick gave no light. Their ensigns were torn, their minstrelsy hushed, their royalty beggared, and their covenant with God broken. Was not this enough? Their hearts sank within them when they remembered the past, in which they were never again to take lot or part, and the hatred of their hearts toward their foes filled them to the brim. Yet, without one word of sympathy for all this, they were warned to flee from coming wrath, to humble themselves under the mighty hand of God, to bury all their old sins with their bodies under the waves of Jordan, and to rise into the New Kingdom; and without a murmur it was done.

The New Testament Period

Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus

The Evangelist says that Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be immersed by him, 'But John sought to hinder him, saying: I have need to be immersed of thee, and dost thou come to me? And Jesus answering said to him: Suffer it now; for thus it becomes us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.' In approaching this August event, the forcible words of Godet attract our attention. He says:

'John and Jesus resemble two stars following each other at a short distance, and both passing through a series of similar circumstances. The announcement of the appearing of the one follows close upon that of the appearing of the other. It is the same with their twin births. This relation repeats itself in the commencement of their respective ministries, and lastly in the catastrophes which terminate their lives. And yet, in the whole course of the career of these two men, there was but one personal meeting – at the baptism of Jesus. After this moment, when one of these stars rapidly crossed the orbit of the other, they separated, each to follow the path that was marked out for him. It is this moment of their actual contact that the Evangelist is about to describe.'

The meeting was worthy of both, but pre-eminently worthy of the Father who directed their steps. The star of the morning was herald to the rising Sun, and then faded away in the fullness of his beams. For thirty years Jesus was secluded in Nazareth, calmly awaiting the ripe day for his public work. Eagerly he watched the shade on the dial, to indicate that his hour had come for release from that holy restraint which held back his consuming zeal. Often he knelt in prayer on the mountain-tops which overlook the plain of Esdraelon, till the sentinel stars took their stations in the sky; and then returned home, silent and pensive, to wait for the dawn of his ministry. When slumber fell upon the carpenter's household, Mary often rehearsed to him the ponderings of her own heart, the mysterious secrets of his birth, and the dealings of God with her cousin in Hebron. The story fell upon the soul of mother and Son as a radiance from heaven, full of sad beauty and divine love; for the dim foreshadings of separation moved their pure hearts to the parental embrace and the goodnight kiss, as in other sweet human homes. At last, the moment came when a sacred attraction drew him from the little upland town and dwelling forever; save on one brief visit to the plain old sanctuary, where his young heart had been warmed by the words of the Law. His journey from Galilee to the Jordan, after the touch of parting with his loved ones, stirred heaven with a deeper interest than the footsteps of man had ever excited, for then he recorded the hallowed resolution: 'Lo, I come to do thy will, O God.' Many a hard-fought battle had soaked the plain which he crossed, with blood; but that day he went forth single-handed to the hardest war that had ever been waged upon this globe. After he had swept the foot of Tabor, at every step he trod on holy ground. And when he reached the western slope of the Jordan, like Jacob, his great ancestor, he crossed the ford that he might lead many pilgrim bands over a darker stream 'to glory.' 'All the people had been baptized,' and he presented himself as the last arrival of that day, because he was not one of the common repenting throng. He had done no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth; hence, remorse never broke his heart. Yet, he numbered himself with the transgressors. At the close of his ministry he was to sleep in a sepulcher wherein never man had laid; and it was meet that in opening his ministry he should be buried in the liquid grave alone, and separate from sinners. Baptism was the door by which he entered upon his work of saving mediation. The Baptist says, that up to this time he 'knew him not,' as if he had not met him before, and yet, he also says, 'I have need to be baptized of thee,' as if he knew him well. This apparent discrepancy has led to large discussion, with this general result; that while John knew him in person as Jesus, he did not know him in Messiahship

The New Testament Period

until Jehovah who sent him to baptize in water said to him; before the baptism of Jesus: 'Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and abiding on him, the same is he who baptizes in the Holy Spirit.' But do John's words necessarily imply that he was ignorant, either of the person or Messiahship of Jesus, before his baptism? One great prerogative of the Christ was, that he should baptize men in the Holy Spirit. This fact had not come to John's knowledge till Jehovah gave him the special revelation that One should come to him for baptism, on whom he should see the Spirit 'descending and abiding,' and that he should be the pre- eminent Baptizer, who should baptize in the Holy Spirit. This thought seems to have struck John with deep awe, for he carefully draws a contrast between his own baptism which was 'in water' only, and that of Christ which should be 'in the Holy Spirit' himself. If John did not know him, in the sense of the Baptizer in the Holy Spirit till Jehovah had announced to him the impending token and its signification, then we can well understand why he said: 'I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?' The revelation that Jesus should be the Baptizer in the Spirit was special to John: 'He who sent me to baptize in water said this to me.' And, it was said before the Baptism of Jesus, for the visible sign of the descending Spirit crowned the act of his baptism. If this be the sense of John's words, the Fourth Gospel, written A.D. 97 or 98, throws a strong light upon the First, written about A.D. 60.

It would harmonize exactly with the known methods of Divine Providence to suppose that the hand of God had kept them apart till that moment. Jesus had lived in the north and John in the south of the land, and we know of no high purpose which demanded a meeting previously, whilst their separation must silence all suspicion of combination or collusion between the servant and his Lord. Gabriel had put John under the Nazarite's vow from his birth, which exempted him from attendance at the triple annual feasts, so that they had not met in the metropolis. Nor had John gone abroad in search of him. This was not his work. He must wait till God brought them lovingly together. That time of 'manifestation to Israel would come' of itself. John went to the Jordan when he was sent, saying: 'That he might be made manifest to Israel, for this I came baptizing in water.' Like a man 'sent of God,' he was waiting for his Master to show himself fully and promptly, and Jehovah honored his faith by the foretoken agreed upon in the visible descent of the Spirit. Hence, when the solitary stranger joined the throng on the approach of evening, the eagle-eyed Baptist kenned him, and the vision made his whole being quiver with expectation. When David came to the throne in the garb of a young shepherd, the Lord said to Samuel: 'Arise, anoint him, this is he!' And, why should not the Holy Spirit, who had 'prepared' the body of Jesus, and filled the soul of John, say this of David's Son?

With godlike serenity and dignity the Prince of Peace presented himself for baptism. The words of his mouth, the repose of his body, the purity of his face, the soul of his eye, overpowered John with a sense of reverend princeliness. When the stern herald stood face to face with the Son of the Highest his soul was submerged under a rare humility, which extorted the cry: 'I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? Captivated by the dignity of the Candidate, and abashed by his own inferiority, he was helpless as a child before this incarnate God – this shrine of the Holy Spirit. He who had walked rough- shod over all pride, and had leveled all distinctions of human glory, was seized with the conviction of a worthless menial, and as a holy man, was thoroughly daunted when the Lord sought a favor of his own servant. The reasons are apparent. He found the Promised of all promises, the Antitype of all types, the Expected of all ages, standing before him in flesh and blood, and he was startled at the thought of inducting him into the new faith by the new

Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus

ordinance; for his baptism was administered to the penitent, but the Nazarene was guiltless. 'Suffer it now, for thus it becomes us to fulfill all righteousness.' He defers to John's scruple, and asks for the new baptism, not of right, but on sufferance. What did Jesus mean by these words?

Viewed in any light it seems strange that Christ should have sought baptism as a high privilege which he could not forego, for what could it confer upon him?

He clearly intended to render obedience to *some* law of his Father. What law? He had honored every requisition of the Old Covenant by circumcision, obedience to parents, hallowing the Sabbath, temple worship, observance of the feasts, all except in bringing the sin-offerings. For a full generation he had submitted to every claim of Jehovah's law upon him, in every institution and ordinance. But now his Father had established the last test of obedience in the baptism of John, and Jesus, born under God's law, must honor the new divine precept. Jesus himself gave this reason when he accused the Pharisees and lawyers with rejecting 'The counsel of God toward themselves' in not having been baptized by John. The will of God was his only reason for obeying any law; he held it an act of obedience to keep all the Divine appointments. Although not a sinner himself, he impleaded to be treated as a sinner; therefore he humbled himself to receive a sinner's baptism, as well as to submit to a sinner's death. This deep mark of mediatorial sympathy and mystery must have entered largely into his plea, 'Suffer it now.' With great clearness Geikie puts this point: 'Baptism was an ordinance of God required by his prophet as the introduction of the new dispensation. It was a part of "righteousness," that is, it was a part of God's commandments which Jesus came into the world to show us the example of fulfilling, both in the letter and in the spirit.' His baptism was the channel through which the Divine attestation could best be given to his Messianic dignity; and when we consider that he had reached the full maturity of all his human powers of mind and body, this manner of entering upon his public work gave a mutual and public sanction to the mission both of John and Jesus.

Yet, with our Lord's interpretation of his own words before their eyes, men will insist upon it that he was initiated into his sacrificial work by baptism, in imitation of the mere ceremonial ablutions of the Aaronical priesthood. Jesus was not even of Aaron's line as was John, much less of his office, but sprang of the tribe of Judah, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood. Did Jesus receive the vestments, the consecrating oil, or any other priestly insignia? Even when he made his sin-offering, and assumed the Christian High-priesthood, three years after his baptism, he neither assumed the vesture nor breastplate, the censer nor miter of Aaron. Because he was not made a High-priest after the order of Aaron, but after the order of Melchizedec, who knew nothing of sacred oils, ablutions, or vestments. How much better is it than a solemn caricature to set forth the baptism of Jesus as an idle, empty, ritualistic pageant? He came to abolish and cast aside forever the Aaronical priesthood with the economy that it served, and how could he do this by submission to any ceremonial act which they observed? John felt the binding force of Christ's words, when he appealed to the obligations of spotless holiness, and he threw aside his objections in a moment.

With gratitude and grace he yielded and obeyed. He found that His Master was under the same law of obedience as himself, and with holy promptitude he honored the sacred trust which God had put into his own hands, but which no other man had ever yet held. 'Then he suffered him.' O! sublime grandeur – awful honor! And when the great Baptist bowed the immaculate soul and body of Jesus beneath the parting wave, all the useless ceremonies of past ages sank together like lead,

The New Testament Period

to find a grave in the opening waters of the Jordan, and no place has since been found for them.

This traditional spot is fixed in human memory as are points on the Tiber, the Thames, and the Delaware, where great armies have crossed. It is a little east of Jericho, near by the conquest of Joshua, also where David crossed in his flight. Christian pilgrims and scholars have visited it for centuries, Origen in the third, Eusebius in the fourth, Jerome in the fifth, and millions of others down to our day. Its thick willow groves are used as robing rooms, whence Copts and Syrians, Armenians and Greeks, go down into the Jordan and immerse themselves three times in the name of the Trinity. The place so fascinates and subdues the spirit that the visitors of every land and creed, reverently descend into the stream once a year. 'Having been baptized, Jesus went up immediately out of the water; and lo; the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending, as a dove, and coming upon him. And lo, a voice out of heaven, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.' To this account taken from Matthew, Luke adds: That the heavens were opened while Jesus was praying that the Spirit took the *bodily* shape of a dove, and the Baptist says, that he saw the Spirit '*abiding* on him.'

The time of our Lord's baptism may here be examined with profit. Luke says: 'That in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, the word of God came to John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness; at which time he entered on his public ministry. And, again, that Jesus began his ministry when he was about thirty years of age. This last statement has the value of a date in a letter. The fifteenth year of Tiberius dates from the time that he commenced His joint reign with Augustus. 'Reckoning thus, the year 765, from January to January, as the first of Tiberius, the fifteenth is the year 779, from the founding of Rome. Some time, then, in 779, is the beginning of John's ministry to be placed. Allowing that his labor had continued six months before the Lord was baptized, we reach in this way, also, the month of January, 780. There is good reason to believe that in December or January, Jesus was baptized, yet the day of the month is very uncertain.' As John and Jesus were born within six months of each other, in the year 749, Christ's baptism must have occurred somewhere near the above date, as he was then 'about thirty years of age.'

What act performed by John is called baptism? John was his proper name, and the term 'Baptist' added by the inspired writers, is a title of office, as Bloomfield thinks, 'To distinguish him from John the Evangelist.' By this name he was known pre-eminently as the administrator of the religious rite called baptism. That is, according to Liddell and Scott, 'one that dips;' or Donegan, 'one who immerses or submerges.' Dean Stanley says: 'On philological grounds, it is quite correct to translate John the Baptist, by John the Immerser.'*(Nineteenth Century.)* Baptism is a fundamental practice in Christianity, which has run through all its ages. Of baptism, in association with John, Edward Irving says: 'This is the first baptismal service upon record. The new rite of baptism, unknown under the Mosaic dispensation." Much has been said on the subject of Proselyte Baptism, whereby heathen converts were inducted into the Jewish faith, and so, many have depreciated John's baptism as a mere imitation of an existing rite.

But modern scholarship has shown conclusively that the reverse of this is true, and that Proselyte Baptism in fact, an imitation of the Christian rite, incorporated into Judaism after the destruction of Jerusalem, A.D. 70. It is true, that the Jews from early times used various symbolical illustrations as well as the Gentiles, but these were always purely ceremonial, and were never used as a rite by which others were inducted into their faith. Josephus says, that many of these washings amongst the Jews were purely of their own will, without direction from the Lord, and VonKohden denies that

Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus

they were 'performed by immersion.' He also points out these fundamental differences:

The washings enjoined by the Law had for their object purification from ceremonial defilement; but the baptism of John did not: the one rite was performed by the candidates themselves upon their own persons: the other was administered to its recipient by the Baptist himself, or by one of his disciples properly authorized: the former was repeated upon every occasion of renewed defilement; the latter was performed upon the candidate only once for all. The two ceremonies, therefore, were essentially different in their nature and object. The first witness in favor of Proselyte Baptism is found in the Commentary of the Talmud, which was composed in the fifth century after Christ, and it represents the rite as existing in the first century.'

But this Commentary is not valid history, it is mere tradition at the most, and does not carry the ceremony back so far as John; nor could it have been known at that time, for had it been, the Jews would have scouted John's baptism instead of submitting to it, because it would have placed them on a level with the heathen as converts to the new faith. Proselytes to Judaism were divided into *proselytes of the gate*, and *proselytes of righteousness*. The first class had renounced idolatry, and bound themselves to keep the seven Noachic precepts, against idolatry, profanity, incest, murder, theft, eating blood and things strangled, and permitting a murderer to live. The second class not only renounced heathenism, but became Israelites in every respect excepting birth. Males were admitted into Judaism by circumcision, females by a free-will offering: after Christ, the Jews added baptism for both sexes admitted into their faith.

Dr. Lightfoot thus describes this baptism, as the Jews practiced it in after Christian times: 'As soon as he grew whole of the wound of circumcision, they bring him to baptism, and being placed in the water, they again instruct him in some weightier and in some lighter commands of the law' – then, 'he plunges himself, and crimes up, and behold, he is an Israelite in all things. The women place a woman in the waters up to the neck, and two disciples of the wise men standing without, instruct her about some lighter precepts of the law, and some weightier, while she, in the meantime, stands in the waters. And then she plungeth, and they, turning away their faces, go out while she comes up out of the water.' Maimonides gives this circumstantial account also: 'Every person baptized;(or dipped. whether he were washed from pollution, or baptized into proselytism) must dip his whole body, now stripped and made naked, at one dipping. And wheresoever in the Law, washing of the body or garments is mentioned, it means nothing else than the washing of the whole body. For if any wash himself all over except the very tip of his little finger, he is still in his uncleanness.' On the 'same subject, Geikie well says: 'Bathing in Jordan had been a sacred symbol, at least, since the days of Naaman, but immersion by one, like John, with strict and humbling confession of sin, sacred vows of amendment, and hope of forgiveness, if they proved lasting, and all this in preparation for the Messiah, was something wholly new in Israel.' In this case, circumcision availed nothing, nor did uncircumcision, but a new creature. Jew and heathen must alike be immersed into the new faith, or they could not be numbered amongst its votaries. This view is presented also by Godet. He says:

'The rite of baptism, which consisted in the plunging of the body more or less completely into water, was not at this period in use among the Jews, neither for the Jews themselves, for whom the law only prescribed lustrations, nor for proselytes from paganism, to whom, according to the testimony of history, baptism was not applied until after the fall of Jerusalem. The very title, *Baptist*, given to John, sufficiently proves that it was he who introduced this rite. This follows, also, from John 1:25, where the deputation from the Sanhedrin

The New Testament Period

asks him by what right he baptizes, if he is neither the Messiah nor one of the prophets, which implies that this rite was introduced by him; and further, from John 3:26, where the disciples of John make it a charge against Jesus, that he adopted a ceremony of which the institution, and consequently, according to them, the monopoly, belonged to their master.'

It is clear enough, that John did not pick up and use an old, effete institution, and adopt it as the door into the New Age of the great salvation, but that his 'baptism was from heaven,' as directly from God as his commission to preach. The preaching, the baptism, and the man, were all newly sent from God to usher in the Gospel Day.

Prof. Lindsay, of Glasgow, says: 'The connection between the baptism of John and the Jewish baptism of proselytes, of which a great deal has been made, is also founded on assumptions which cannot be proved. This very plausible theory first assumes that proselytes were baptized from the early time of the Jewish Church, although the Old Testament tells us nothing about it, and then supposes that John simply made use of this ordinary rite for the purpose of declaring symbolically that the whole Jewish nation were disfranchised, and had to be readmitted into the spiritual Israel, by means of the same ceremony which gave entrance to members of heathen nations. But the subject of the baptism of proselytes is one of the most hopelessly obscure in the whole round of Jewish antiquities, and can never be safely assumed in any argument, and the general results of investigation seem to prove that the baptism of proselytes was not one of the Jewish ceremonies until long after the coming of Christ, while there is much to suggest that this Jewish rite owes its origin to Christian baptism.' And Herzog writes 'The later origin of proselyte baptism is to be accepted.'

The place where he administered the ordinance demands our attention, namely: the great river of Palestine, the Jordan. Some of the most interesting associations of sacred story cluster around this stream. Israel first knew it when they crossed its channel dry-shod, in their flight from bondage. From that moment it was the silver thread on which the historic memories of the nation were strung, as pearls on a necklace; John and Jesus being the brightest gems that ever shone in the line. It takes its source in about 33°25' of north latitude in a fountain near Hasbeiya, west of Mount Hermon, although Josephus locates its rise in the larger fountains near Caesarea-Philippi; and then it passes through the lake, or what is called in Josh. 11:5-7, 'the waters of Merom.' Emerging thence, it flows rapidly through a narrow and rocky ravine, till it empties into the lake of Galilee, and from the southern end thereof it flows through the valley down to the Dead Sea, into which it empties, in lat. 31°46'. The distance from the lake of Galilee to the Dead Sea is about 86 geographical miles, but the many windings of the channel make about 150 miles between these points. Its width will average, according to Schaff, 'from 60 to 100 feet, and its depth from 5 to 12 feet.' The valley of the Jordan runs from five to six miles in width, and is inclosed by mountains; in many places it is remarkable for its luxuriant fertility. The exact spot where John first used this Divine baptistry cannot now be positively identified. Anciently, it was known as 'Bethabara,' supposed to be about three miles from Jericho, and His second baptismal scene was farther north, being known as 'Enon, near Salim.' Each eminent writer and traveler now fixes upon some picturesque locality, often selected largely on poetical taste; but all conjecture fails to point it out definitely. Some pitch on a line between Gilgal and Jericho, and some still farther north, at the ford where Gideon threw up fortifications against His foes. But as the whole valley was filled with crowds of candidates, from the Salt Sea to the head-waters, it is most likely that he used various places, especially as John,

Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus

10:49, speaks of the place where he *'first baptized.'* Frequently, reckless writers rush into random statements, and assert that its depth would not allow of immersion, utterly regardless of all topographical exploration, such as that made by Lieutenant Lynch, of the United States Navy. Yet, Jehovah found it necessary to divide the waters for Israel and Elijah, while Pococke and other explorers estimate its daily discharges into the Dead Sea, to be about 6,000,000 tons of water.

Dr. Schaff (*Through Bible Lands*, 1878) speaks thus: 'At the bathing place of the Pilgrims, the traditional site of Christ's baptism, the river is 80 feet broad and 9 feet deep. After the salt bath in the lake of death it was like a bath of regeneration. I immersed myself *ten* times, and felt so comfortable, that I almost imagined I was miraculously delivered from rheumatism. I have plunged into many a river and many a lake, and into the waters of the ocean, but of all the baths, that in the Jordan will linger longest in my memory.'

Was John's baptism a burial in water or not? Candid minds can scarcely doubt what this action was, when they weigh the meaning of the Greek word *baptiso*, the places where he administered it, and all its attendant circumstances. John, as well as all other sacred speakers used words in their commonly accepted sense of their times, and this is as true of this word as of any other. Its sense is *easily* found. Conant, the great philologist and translator, gives a complete monograph of the root word, in his *'Baptizein'* taken from the best known Greek authors, running from B.C. 500 to the eleventh century A.D.; and, in 168 examples from the Greek literature, covers both the literal or physical, and the tropical or figurative sense of the word. Their whole scope shows that the ground meaning of the word is: 'To immerse, immerge, submerge, to dip, to plunge, to imbathe, to whelm.' A few of these examples, taken from objects already in water, will clearly illustrate its sense:

Pindar, born B.C. 522 years, in likening himself to a cork floating on the top of a net, says: 'When the rest of the tackle is foiling deep in the sea, I, as a cork-above the net, am unbaptized (undipped) in the brine.' Aristotle, born B.C. 384, speaking of discoveries made beyond the Pillars of Hercules, says, that the Phenician colonists of Gadira, 'came to certain desert places full of rashes and sen-weed, which, when it is ebb-tide, are not *baptised* (overflowed), but when it is flood-tide are overflowed.' Polybius, born B.C. 205, speaking of the sea-battle between Philip' and Attalus, tells of one vessel as 'pierced, and being baptized (immersed) by a hostile ship. Again, in his account of the naval engagement between the Romans and Carthaginians, he accords the greater skill to the latter. 'Now sailing round and now attacking in flank the more advanced of the pursuers, while turning and. embarrassed on account of the weight of the ships and the unskillfulness of the crews, they made continued assaults and "*baptised*" (sunk) many of the ships.' Strabo, born B.C. 60, says that about Agrigentum, in Sicily, there are 'Marsh-lakes,. having the taste indeed of seawater, but of a different nature; for even those who cannot swim are not *baptised* (immersed), floating like pieces of wood.' In the same work he speaks of Alexander's army marching on a narrow, flooded beach of the Pamphilian Sea, in these words: 'Alexander happening to be there at the stormy season, and, accustomed to trust for the most part to fortune, set forward before the swell subsided; and they marched the whole day in water; *baptized* (immersed) as far as to the waist.'" Diodorns, who wrote about B.C. 60-30, reports. the Carthaginian army defeated on the bank of the river Crimissus; and that many of them perished because the stream was swollen: 'The river rushing down with the current increased in violence, *baptised* (submerged) many, and destroyed them attempting to swim through with their armor.' He also describes the annual overflow of the Nile thus: 'Most of the wild land animals are surrounded by the stream and perish, being *baptised* (submerged); but some,

The New Testament Period

escaping to the high grounds, are saved.'

These examples bring us down to John's day and fully sustain the learned Deylingius, when he says of him: 'He received the name *ton Baptiston*, from the office of solemn ablution and immersion, in which he officiated by a divine command. For the word *baptizesthai* the usage of Greek authors, signifies immersion and demersion.' Josephus, born A.D. 37, frequently uses this word, and always in the same sense. The following are noteworthy examples: Aristobnius was drowned by his companions in a swimming bath, and in relating the murder he says: 'Continually pressing down and *baptising* (immersing) him while swimming, as if in sport, they did not desist till they had entirely suffocated him.' He also describes the contest, in his 'Jewish War,' between the Romans and the Jews, on the Sea of Galilee, and says of the Jews: 'They suffered harm before they could inflict any, and were *baptised* (submerged) along with their vessels...And those of the baptized who raised their heads, either a missile reached, or a vessel overtook.' Again, in describing his own shipwreck, he says: 'Our vessel having been *baptised* (sunk) in the midst of the Adriatic, being about six hundred in number, we swam through the whole night.' Lucian, born about A. D. 135, in a satire on the love of the marvelous, tells of men that he saw running on the sea. They were like himself except that they had cork-feet. He says: 'We wondered, therefore, when we saw them not *baptised*, (immersed) but standing above the waves and traveling on without fear.' Dion Cassius, born 155 A. D., says of the defeated forces at Utica who rushed to their ships and overloaded them, that some of them were 'thrown down by the jostling, in getting on board the vessels, and others *baptised* (submerged) in the vessels themselves, by their own weight.' In the same work he gives an account of the sea-fight between Marc Antony and Augustus, at Actium, when, near the close of the battle, men escaped from the burning ships. He says: 'others leaping into the sea were drowned, or struck by the enemy were *baptised*, (submerged).'

These citations from classic Greek writers, covering about 700 years, including the Apostolic Age, unite in describing things on which water was poured, or which were partially immersed, as *unbaptised*; while others, which were dipped or plunged in water and overwhelmed, they declare to have been baptized; showing, that when the sacred penmen use the same word to describe the act of John in the Jordan, they use it in the same sense as other Greek authors, namely: to express the act of dipping or immersion.

This cumulative evidence fully justifies Calvin in saying: 'Baptism was administered by John and Christ, by the submersion of the whole body.' Tertullian, the great Latin father, A.D. 200, also says: 'Nor is there any material difference between those whom John dipped in the Jordan, and those whom Peter dipped in the Tiber.' So Lightfoot: 'That the baptism of John was by the immersion of the body, seems evident from those things which are related concerning it; namely, that he baptized in the Jordan, and in Enon, because there was much water, and that Christ being baptized went up out of the water.' MacKnight says the same thing: 'Christ submitted to be baptized, that is, to be buried under the water by John, and to be raised out of it again.' Olshausen agrees with these interpreters, for he says: 'John, also, was baptizing in the neighborhood, because the water there being deep, afforded conveniences for submersion.' DeWette bears the same testimony: 'They were baptized, immersed, submerged. This is the proper meaning of the frequentative form of *bapto*, to immerse.' And Alford, on Matt.3:6, says: 'The baptism was administered in the day-time by immersion of the whole person.'

These authorities abundantly show that our Lord, in requiring the first act of obedience on the

Chapter 2 - The Baptism of Jesus

part of his new disciple, employed a Greek word in common use for expressing the most familiar acts of everyday life. And the testimony of the Septuagint, the Greek version of the Old Testament, completed B.C. 285, harmonizes exactly with this use. When quoting the Hebrew Scriptures, Jesus and his apostles generally used this version. Here the Greek word '*ebaptisato*' is used to translate the Hebrew word '*taval*' (2 Kings 5:14), where the English version also renders it by the word 'dipped,' to express the act of Naaman in the river Jordan. The word '*taval*' is used fifteen times in the Old Testament, and is rendered in our common English version fourteen times by 'dip,' and once (Job 9:31) by 'plunge.' In Gen. 37:31, the Jewish scholars who made the Septuagint version rendered '*moluno*' to stain, the effect of dipping, as in dyeing, this being the chief thought which the translator would express. It is also worthy of note that the preposition '*en*' is rendered '*in*' before Jordan in all the commonly received versions of the English New Testament (Matt. 3:6), namely: in that of Wiclif, 1380; Tyndal, 1534; Cranmer, 1539; Geneva, 1557; Rheims, 1582; and King James, 1611. In the last named '*with*' was afterward substituted for '*in*,' but it is restored, by the late Anglo-American revisers, in various passages of the Gospels.

The New Testament Period

Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ

John gave a threefold testimony to Christ. As a prophet, he proclaimed the kingdom of God, through the Messiah; as a preacher, he led the people to preparation for the Messiah; and as a witness, he pointed out Christ in person as the Messiah. The people believed that the Baptist was the veritable Elijah. The Sanhedrin was bound to prevent any false prophet from misleading the people, and in order to subject John to a rigid examination, they sent a deputation of officials from Jerusalem to question him. They asked him: 'Who art thou? The Christ? Elijah? The Prophet?' He answered: 'No.' But his ministry so stirred the people that they found a pledge therein of deliverance from Roman rule, and 'reasoned in their hearts whether he were not the Christ.' The deputation was of the Pharisees, who, stinging under his rebukes, sought to pay him back by entangling him in political difficulties, craftily supposing that they could bring him to account if they could throw his fiery ministry into a false position. Their cunning only succeeded in bringing out the humility and modesty of his character. Bold as a lion before men, he was a timid lamb in the shadow of his Lord; and nonplussed them by saying: 'I am not the Christ, nor Elijah, but simply the voice of a crier.' Unable and unwilling to lead the eager throngs to a contest with their oppressors, he lifted up his voice and proclaimed: 'There stands one in the midst of you, whom ye know not, the latchet of whose sandal I am not worthy to loose.'

Beautiful message-bearer of our God and Saviour. Pure truth, gentle modesty, blushing humility, marked few of his contemporaries; but, while he would not play the role of a false Messiah, he longed for the honor of stooping, with suppressed breath and tremulous hands, to do the work of a slave for the true Christ. His glory was to throw himself into the background, to tie the sandals of Jesus when he went abroad, and loose the dusty leathern thong when he returned. His reply rebuked the pride and scorned the vanity of the whole viper-brood. Their haughtiness is censured, and their fawning repelled by the servant of the Son of the Highest prostrate in the dust at his feet. This holy chivalry makes a true man a broken reed in the presence of Jesus, while it tempers his sinews with steel in dealing with men. 'I am not your Messiah – I go before him – he stands among you – he is mightier than I – I am a stranger to his prerogatives – I immerse your bodies in water to symbolize your soul's purification, but he shall overwhelm your souls in the Holy Spirit.' This sharp distinction brought out for the first time the fullness of Christ's Gospel, or as Mark expresses it, here was 'The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.' This said, and the Baptist delivered from the snare of the fowler, he reasserts himself in new strength. The rulers flattered themselves that they would be the golden grain of Messiah's husbandry, the *elite* wheat that should fill his garner. John mocks that expectation, casts it to the winds, and tells them that Jesus will treat them as the Palestine farmer treats his harvest, when it is cut down, trampled under the hoofs of oxen, torn 'by instruments with teeth,' till the kernel is severed from the 'chaff' and then winnowed that it may be burned. They could never be gathered as the pure grain of the kingdom. Another baptism awaited them, that of repentance in the Jordan, when the Messiah should toss wheat and chaff into the empty air, that the grain might fall back free of refuse, while the wind would take the chaff into quenchless fire. These terrible words express John's cardinal idea of Christ's nature and prerogatives. They attribute to him the scrutiny of motives, the purification of character, and the condemnation of the impenitent; in a word, the prerogatives of God. But this was not all.

The 'next day,' the Baptist saw Jesus and cried: 'Behold the Lamb of God, that takes away the sin of the world! This is he of whom. I said: After me comes one who is preferred before me;

The New Testament Period

because he was before me.' 'I have seen and have borne witness that this is the Son of God.' 'I saw the Spirit descending as a dove 'put of heaven, and it abode upon him.' Here he affirms Christ's pre-existence. John, was born six months before Jesus, yet he says 'He was before me.' The Greek terms here, both translated 'before,' express not only pre-eminence in rank and dignity, but priority of time. This enigma was to the startled Jews the first hint given by any New Testament speaker of Christ's personal pre-existence, and unveils him in the Bosom of the Father, before he became flesh. Then follow Christ's attestation by the Holy Spirit, – his mediatorial character and his divine Sonship. And he gave grandeur to his testimony in that he '*cried,*' with vehemence in their avowal. He tells us that the Holy Spirit justified these claims as he set them forth. Indeed, the most remarkable thing in the Baptist's ministry is the prominence which he gives to the doctrine of the Spirit, in its new form.

He introduced the second Person in the Trinity to the world, and held relations to the Third which no man before him had filled. Next to the coming of Christ, his ministry held a place and formed an epoch of the highest possible importance in the history of redemption. It was, in the Gospel sense, the beginning of the Spirit's administration in the personal salvation of men, as it first brings out his separate personality with great clearness. The Dove came from the Father, and on the banks of the Jordan remained upon the Son, making him thenceforth the sole Baptizer in the Holy Spirit, the one source through whom he has since acted in administering salvation to men. All this was directly opposite to the history and tendencies of Judaism, but it identifies John with the very soul of the Gospel as nothing else could. It was not the baptism of Jesus in the Jordan which anointed him for his work, for, says Peter: 'God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power.' This prodigy of the descending Dove and Christ's inscrutable unction enabled John to say: 'I saw, and bear record that this is the Son of God.' The Spirit made him a witness to the Messiah, when the Lord's anointed was solemnly invested with his divine office. Through the Spirit, the Father dwelt in the Son and the Son in him. Luke gives the splendid piece of information, that when Jesus was 'praying' at his baptism, the heavens were opened. Through the cleft vault his eyes were fixed upon his Father's throne. He penetrated into the fullness of divine light and life, and uttered the first sigh of humanity for that perfect indwelling of God which accomplished redemption. This pledge of his final triumph was given when his body was dripping with the waters of baptism. When he was setting aside all empty institutions his hand knocked at heaven's gate, and by the will of the Father it was opened; for he was well pleased with the obedience of his beloved Son.

How sweetly inspiring is the thought, that the first breath which passed his newly baptized lips asked for the Holy Spirit; who at once was given to him. And not in measure, but without degree; in him 'dwelt the fullness of the Godhead bodily.' To him the Spirit was not given as to the Apostles, through the emblem of unconscious flame in divided sheets, but through the organic and sensitive symbol of life in a hovering dove. From the blue vault, from infinite leagues of ethereal space, came forth a delicate, timorous nature and lit upon the only pure spot on this earth, the Sacred Head, while his locks were yet wet from the tremulous wave. When the guilty earth was baptized in the deluge, a dove flew over the waste of waters and brought the hope of a new world to Noah, in a frail olive-branch rescued from the flood. But the New Testament Dove winged his way to the New Testament Ark, the type of a life-giving energy, which said: 'Behold, I make all things new,' when Jesus came up out of the stream and stood upon the dry land. Here is the seven-fold symbol of chaste purity, peace and hope, for the gentle emblem seems invested with the infinite powers of new birth. The

Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ

expression: 'The Spirit lighted and abode upon him,' conveys that idea of a hovering motion implied in the Hebrew word by which Moses describes the mode of creation: 'The Spirit was *brooding* over the face of the waters,' as a bird over her young in incubation, imparting vivifying warmth in each shudder passing from the pulse of one animated being to another. The white-winged messenger in corporeal form, from the bosom of the Father, came not on his celestial mission to make Jesus holy, nor to invest him with grace and beauty, but with infinite energy as the Head of an endless race: 'He shall see his seed.'

Prediction had said: 'The Spirit of the Lord shall rest: upon him; the Spirit of wisdom and might, and shall make him of quick understanding.' The body of Jesus was his offspring, and his soul-powers were developed by the same Spirit; then, from the moment of his baptism, the Holy Spirit directed his life, his words, and his work. He himself declared: 'The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.' Nor is this all. From the moment of his baptism, 'he began to preach the good news of the kingdom;' to 'heal the sick;' to 'cast out demons by the Spirit of God.' He also warned men against 'the blasphemy of the Spirit;' promised that the Spirit should teach them what to say in persecution, and breathed upon his disciples, saying: 'Receive ye the Holy Spirit,' and 'they received him. But, above all, at Pentecost he sent the Spirit to fill his own place on earth. Nor may we suppose that either John or Jesus were not filled with the Spirit in the largest sense simply because John(7:39) says: 'The Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified.' The word 'given' is not in the Greek text, which simply reads 'was not yet,' the word 'given' is supplied to complete the sense. Luther says on the passage: 'One must not fall into such senseless thoughts, as to suppose that the Holy Spirit was only created after Christ's resurrection from the dead; what is written is, "The Holy Spirit was not yet," that is, was not in his office.' Stillingfleet says the Spirit was not yet found in the extraordinary gift of tongues and other miracles. But Jesus tells his disciples that they 'knew him,' that 'he abides with you,' and that his Father would 'give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him.' The Spirit had qualified Old Testament men for extraordinary work, but he was to be poured out on '*all flesh*' in Gospel times. The sovereignty, therefore, of the Spirit dwelt in Jesus, by which he raised all men to a high level in the Gospel. This doctrine the Baptist preached.

Hence, with the sight of the descending Spirit he heard the attesting voice of divine Fatherhood and Sonship: 'This is my Son.' That august voice which rent the empty heavens above the Jordan told John of God's complacency in his Son: 'In him I am well pleased.' This voice sank into the inner being of the Baptist, and thrills the hearts of his brethren to-day in all the dialects of the earth. Jehovah has honored no other great institute as he has Christ's baptism, when he used the new rite to mark Jesus' inauguration as Head of the Gospel Church. The anointing of his Only Begotten Son by his Holy Spirit, sanctified the new-born ordinance. Therein the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit were revealed, and from that day to this, whenever true Christians visit Christ's baptism, they sing: 'God, even thy God, has anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.' There we have the first distinct revelation of the Godhead. There the whole Trinity united in laying the foundation of the Gospel Church, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. All true Baptists may point to Christ's Baptism, and say with Augustine to Marcion: 'Go to Jordan and thou shalt see the Trinity.'

The next great cognate truth which John was the first to publish, was Christ's vicarious sacrifice. This he comprehended from the first, although his own Apostles never understood it till after his

The New Testament Period

resurrection. From the beginning, the Baptist proclaimed him as the Sin bearer. He cried: 'Behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world!' These sacrificial words have been descanted upon, probably more than any found in the New Testament, and they seem to have moved all John's being. He had previously given testimony to the abiding of the Spirit with the Son, and now that great truth gave birth to this. The more he saw of Jesus, the more the deep spring of truth welled up within him. His theologic eye was opened at the Jordan, and he soon saw wonderful things in his Master. At first, the Dove, symbolical among birds for the purposes of thank-offering and ceremonial purification, was the extent of his discovery. Now, he proclaims him as the Lamb, of God's choosing, from his own flock, the image of spotlessness and cleansing merit. The Dove spoke of the heavens whence he came, the Lamb spoke of the altar where he takes away the sin of the world. This sublime picture revealed Isaiah's Lamb on his way to slaughter. His language neither expresses an act of the past, nor one of the future, but one which forever continues. The mediatorial work had begun, the morning sacrifice had been offered. In his baptism God had inspected him, had pronounced him well pleasing, had accepted him as his own Sin-victim, and now the sacrificial work was in process: '*Taketh away the sin,*' abstractly and concretely, 'of the world.' The Apostles have since elaborated the saving doctrine, with exquisite clearness and power, but they caught their keynote from John, who first announced the astounding revelation. The Evangelist John placed his throbbing temples on the bosom of the Lamb, but not till the Baptist John had told him twice, how pure, and soft, and warm it was. This doctrine won the Evangelist in a moment. When the Baptist told him this he was one of John's disciples, but the moment that John told him of God's Lamb to expiate his sin, he became a follower of Jesus. Since that day the son of Zebedee has been crying with one breath: 'I love him because he first loved me!' and with the next: 'Behold the Lamb! Behold the Lamb!'

If possible, the Baptist's next testimony to Christ, brought him into greater Gospel fullness still, for he gave it under the severest trial. Two years had passed since he opened his ministry, when his disciples were thrown into a controversy 'with a Jew about purifying.' Then, his disciples said to him: 'Rabbi, he who was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold he baptizes, and all come to him.' This dispute was neither amongst his disciples themselves, nor between the disciples of John and Jesus, about the merits of their baptisms, as some pretend, nor did it concern baptism at all. 'A Jew,' who belonged to neither set of disciples, tried to draw John's disciples into a debate on the question of legal ablutions, for the traditionists were bewitched to torture everybody with their petty quibbles, and so this 'Jew' halted John's disciples to set them at variance with the elders, as the Pharisees attacked Christ's disciples for not washing their hands before eating, after the tradition of the elders. Irving forcibly covers this case thus:

'It was not a dispute concerning their relative baptisms I judge from this, that the word is "purifying," not baptism. The word for purifying is never applied either to the baptism of John or of Christ's disciples, or of the Holy Ghost, or any other baptism. The word "baptism" is in one place applied to purifying, as the baptism of cups, pots and tables; and once in the Hebrews, where it is rendered "the doctrine of baptisms," I think it much better to translate the baptism of doctrine, or the purifying influences of doctrine. But the word "purifying" is never, on the one hand, used for baptism, and on that account cannot be so taken in this place, without violence to every rule of interpretation.'

Although this artful attempt failed, John's disciples allowed a spirit of rivalry- o enter their

Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ

bosoms, because Christ's disciples baptized more persons than John. This drew from him new and clearer testimony for Christ. 'Rabbi,' they said, 'he who was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold he immerses, and all come to him.' This clause, 'borne witness,' carries the thought, that John's testimony to Jesus had given dignity to him, and made him John's debtor. The words, 'he was with thee,' imply that they considered Jesus a follower of John, like themselves, and 'he baptizeth' suggests, that they thought he was usurping John's work and high calling. What appeared worse than all to them, he was using the distinction which John had given him to draw John's following to his own standard, and so building up his own name on John's decaying cause; 'all men come to him.' That is, they charge Jesus with building up a rival Baptist sect. It was a keen trial to John to see this distrust and envy of Christ in his own family. His soul was stirred when he saw that his own testimony to the Redeemer's character and work was misunderstood, and with a minute, verbal clearness which he had not used before, he proceeded to silence forever this misleading suspicion in his followers. To this end he gave this noblest reply which ever fell from the lips of mortal; and with these words turned both. them and his own work over into the hands of Jesus forever, as his divinely appointed superior.

'John answered and said: A man can receive nothing, except it be given him, from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but. I am sent before him. He that has the bride is the bridegroom. But the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice. This my joy therefore is made full. He must increase, but I must decrease. He that comes from above is above all; he that is from the earth is of the earth, and speaks of the earth; he that comes from heaven is above all. And what he has seen and heard, that he testifies; and his testimony no one receives. He that received his testimony has set his seal, That God is true. For he whom God sent speaks forth the words of God; for he gives not the Spirit by measure. The Father loves the Son, and has GIVEN ALL THINGS INTO HIS HAND. He that believes on the Son has everlasting life, and he that believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.'

Here John not only points his disciples and all subsequent believers to Christ for 'everlasting life,' but he shows his own exact relation to 'the Son,' as being that of the groomsman to the Bridegroom. As the 'friend of the Bridegroom' he had prepared for the marriage of God's Son, and as his work was now finished, his 'joy was full,' and he retired, leaving the Bride in the care of the Bridegroom. 'He must increase, but I must decrease,' is his prophetic forecast. 'God loves him; and has given all things into his hand.' Then and there, dropping his special commission as a herald, he became the first New Testament preacher of a present trust in Christ for salvation, or of salvation, by faith, declaring that he who 'believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.' We have seen, that not only was John the first to preach the pre-existence and divinity of Christ as one who had come 'from above,' and was now 'above all;' to preach Jesus as God's sacrificial victim for sin, his 'Lamb' bearing away the 'sin of the world;' – but on the banks of the same Jordan where he had baptized him, he declares him the Saviour, to whom his own disciples and all other men must now look for salvation from 'the wrath of God.'

No passage in the New Testament more clearly points out the glorious truth that men are saved only by trust in Christ than John's words: 'He that believes on the Son has everlasting life.' And none more powerfully shows that the destiny of man is left in the hand of Christ, than the fearful words: 'He that believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.' There is no possibility of misconstruing John's doctrine of eternal retribution here. Human ingenuity arid gloss

The New Testament Period

have tried to explain away all Christ's words on this subject, but the terrible decision of the Baptist's words defy all the attempts of sophistry. From the first, he held that the obdurate rejector of Christ must endure a baptism in 'unquenchable fire.' John spoke of a baptism in the Spirit for the good, but Christ's fire-baptism is always spoken of as destructive, as 'chaff' is consumed by fire. Neander says: 'The Messiah will immerse the souls of believers in the Holy Spirit,' but 'those who refused to be penetrated by the Spirit of the divine life should be destroyed by the fire of the divine judgments.' VonRohden so understands John's preaching: 'The baptism of fire, then, refers to the destruction of those, who, under the Messianic government, should refuse to receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit, those who should oppose themselves to the reign, of the Messiah.' When Luke speaks of the 'promise of the Father' (Acts 1:5), he omits John's words, 'and with fire,' for they couched a threat, not a promise. Even the symbolical tongues which rested upon the Apostles at Pentecost, were not of fire, but only *'like as of fire.'* Hence, in John's last testimony to Christ, he presents not simply the 'Lamb' in his saving aspects, but also in his Leonine administration, and vindicates his honor against the sin of rejecting him.

Throughout, John's testimony to Christ presents his character in a glorious light, by showing, that he is thankful to be distanced in the race, if the glory of Christ be advanced. Bright as a star himself, he is content that his own light should be lost in the noontide glory of the firmament. The prospect of extinction awakened triumph in his breast, that he might be nothing and Jesus all things. His only grief was, that men received not his testimony. What a wonderful summary of Christian doctrine and consecration he gives. What are the struggles of a patriot for his country, compared with his eager devotion to lay down his life for his Friend, and to see his own glory die in the splendor of his Master? His meridian was past, and his sun was setting, and now when the shadows of night fell upon him, his ecstasy was this: 'He that cometh from heaven is above all.' Beautiful Baptist! The first great New Testament theologian. For thousands of years all study amongst Jews and Gentiles had failed to unveil the doctrines which he brought to light, and all after study has failed to exhaust them. 'More than a prophet,' none have discoursed so grandly on his Redeemer's person, office and love: and what new doctrine has any inspired writer revealed since?

The imprisonment and martyrdom of the Baptist must now be noticed. The faithful son of Zacharias was hated for his fidelity. Herod Antipas, the tetrarch of Galilee, was a son of Herod the Great, and had married a daughter of Aretas, King of Arabia-Petrea, who was to him a faithful wife. Antipas had a half-brother, Herod Philip, not by the same mother, who had married Herodias, the daughter of Aristobulus, still another brother. Herodias, therefore, was granddaughter to Herod the Great and niece to Antipas. But Antipas fell in love with her, persuaded her to abandon her husband, divorced his own wife, and then married her. This woman took her young daughter, Salome, Philip's child, with her; and as the adulterous queen of Antipas, came to the Galileantetrarchy and shared with him his vice-regal palace, where she reveled in guilty splendor. When the Baptist heard of this disgusting crime it stirred his indignation, and he bluntly rebuked the incestuous paramour in terms as stern as his upbraidings of the scornful Pharisees. As God's messenger he thundered in the ears of Antipas: 'It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife!' Luke adds that he reproved him: 'For all the evils which Herod did;' a long and black list of crimes. For this cause he seized John and threw him into the dismal fortress of Machaerus, the 'Black Castle,' east of the Dead Sea, an outrage instigated by Herodias; for she was angry with him, and fastened on him like some ferocious animal clinging to its prey. She desired, says Mark, to put him to death but could not, for Herod feared John,

Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ

knowing that he was a just and holy man. The imperiousness of truth, which lifted John above the fear of rank and of death, made his person so sacred, that the stony heart of the adulterer was overawed. One glance of purity made the adulterous tyrant writhe in dread fetters. John was unarmed and alone. Herod was compassed, by royal guards. Yet John hurled subtle arrows from an invisible quiver, which, piercing the armor of steel, made the king's heart faint.

'It is not *lawful* for thee to have her,' was the metal-point which made John's barb so keen. The Jewish laws had thrown a colossal rampart around the sanctity of marriage, a holiness which the whole Herodian family had set at naught, in one way or another. In the person of Antipas, the Baptist brought that whole household up to the scrutiny of the Bible standard. His terrible appeals were made to the Scriptural law. He threw the whole question back, not on public scandal or the shock of public feeling, but on the supremacy of God's word. There he planted himself firmly in the eloquence of lamentation, protest, and demand. Unwilling to fawn, unable to varnish, he put one finger on the ulcer, and with the other resting on Lev. 18:16, he demanded obedience to Divine authority. Whatever the enactments of men might say in the case, the Law of God was the first and last source of his appeal. The craven Sanhedrin knew as well as John that Herod was trampling the law of God underfoot and defying Jehovah's mandate, but all its members sealed their lips to the barefaced disgrace. John frowned upon the triple crime through a 'thus saith the Lord,' and his daring fidelity to Revelation, as the only rule of life, wrote his name at the head of a long roll of Baptist martyrs, who have sealed the Truth with their blood.

At length Herod's birthday dawned, that day in the calendar around which he should have summoned all the years of his life for a sweet song, that Jehovah had sent him into the world an innocent babe. But instead, its celebration wrote this dark entry on his record: 'It were better for him that he had never been born!' Well might he have prayed with Job: 'That day, let not God from above seek for it. Let it not rejoice among the days of the year, nor come into the number of the months, neither let it behold the eyelids of the morning!' But with his birthday came the revelry of a court festival. Instead of sackcloth and ashes for his sins, and the turning over of a new leaf with the merciful anniversary, he gathered his generals and peers around him, took upon him his most hilarious mood, gave reins to his vanity and ostentation, spread his feast and lavished his wine, drowned his fear in the fumes of the cup and the strains of music, and when his brain began to reel under the adulation of nobles and the wassail-bowl, then a revengeful woman turned the day of birth into the night of death.

Wild abandon, wanton voluptuousness, and hot carousal; now ruled the royal banquet, and the call was issued for the pantomimic dance. Herod winced under John's rebuke, yet could bear them. Herodias could not. Her pride would not brook them, and revenge rankled in her heart. Her crafty soul knew that the *ballet dancers* would be asked for when the guests were well flushed with madness, and her dainty foresight had prepared for them a special treat. Vengeance had drawn its bow to the double strain and set its fiery arrow to a true wing, its blistering eye had spied the vulnerable point in the harness and laid its hand to launch the bolt. And, in icy hatred she sent her beautiful young daughter, the future mother of kings, to dance for the company; her rage reminding us of science freezing water in a red-hot capsule. The grace and condescension of Great Herod's granddaughter so charmed the high-bred revelers of Galilee, that the drunken king swore to give her aught she asked, to 'the half of his kingdom.' The courtly throng were all ear for her request. One thought that she would ask for gems to further adorn her handsome person, another knew that she

The New Testament Period

would demand the finest estate in the realm, and a third was sure that she would covet a marriage dower worthy of a princess. Delight intoxicated her, and she rushed to her mother's chamber for instructions. The royal dancer returned with the irony of fate upon her pale lips. Guilty plot and vengeful blood-thirst threw tragedy into the feast, the delicate girl craved the head of John the Baptist on a dish! But she proved her true Herodian blood, when she betrayed haste to stain the escutcheon of her forefathers with a new blot, by the imperative behest that the boon should be delivered then and there. 'I will, that immediately thou give me on a plate, the head of John!' She would carry the ghastly gift to her mother in her own hands, lest the head of a slave be palmed off upon her for John's, and so, her maternal soul should shudder and faint for the shedding of innocent blood.

The thought that John's pulse should cease to beat on the day that his own caught the throb of life from the heart of his mother, sobered the drunken sovereign and brought him to his senses. But for his oath's sake he ended the struggle in his own breast, consented to the horrible demand; the executioner was commissioned. A shrill cry made the dismal dungeon ring, and the gory head of the great preacher lay gasping in the hall of the festal carouse, silenced forever. The sacred pen has left a veil over John's last feeling, his last word, his last act. Was he excited or serene? Did he pray for his murderers or depart in silence? Only this we know, the sword left his trunk bleeding in the prison, and sent his head to the feast. The celestial dreamer would have written: 'I saw a chariot and a couple of horses waiting for Faithful; who, as soon as his adversaries had dispatched him, was taken up into it, and straightway was carried up through the clouds, with sound of trumpet, the nearest way to the Celestial Gate.' Whether the viper uncoiled and stung the bosom of the murderess we have no record. Tradition says, that when the head of the martyr was brought to her and its glazed eyes pierced her, she transfixed the tongue with a bodkin in revenge for its rebukes.

Her shameful deeds, and those of her husband, drove them into obscurity and exile. Not, however, is the veil of revelation entirely drawn over Herod at this point, for Mark tells us, that in beheading John he slew his own peace. When the news reached him that Jesus was working every sort of good and benevolent work amongst the people, the specter of the murdered man stalked through his conscience, and he exclaimed: 'John, whom I beheaded, is risen from the dead.' Go where he would; or do what he might, in slumber or revelry, the stain of the Baptist's blood would not out; and the startling eye-balls of his image haunted him; those eyes through which holy love had gleamed, and heaven's fire had shot. All that was sensitive in him had long been seared as with a hot iron, yet twinges of pain crept through the festering canker in every apparition of this heartless tragedy. This son of him who restored the Temple to beauty and strength, found the sanctuary of his own soul in ruins, and heard every where the echoes of a still small voice, mocking the criminal who had broken its pillars and piled up its ruins. His spirit was in mutiny with itself; it wandered in chill, and damp, and dark places, where the shriek of murder made his ears tingle at every turn. His sire had heard the shrill scream of the babes in Bethlehem, and thirsted for the blood of the redeeming Infant, when Rachel aroused from her slumbers in her sepulcher, groaned and wept, and refused to be comforted, because the unrelenting butcher soaked the turf above her in the gore of her offspring. Nor did she resume her sleep of death till the echo of their piercing cry died away in her tomb, and instead thereof, her cold ear caught the songs of her little ones, who had soared from Bethlehem to the skies, singing hosannas to the new-born King; a chant from the first infant martyrs to the child born and the Son given. Then was she quiet; for Jehovah soothed her to rest, saying: 'Refrain thy

Chapter 3 - The Baptist's Witness to Christ

voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears: for thy work shall be rewarded, and thy children shall come again from the land of the enemy.' Ah! but there was no such soothing for godless Antipas. The blighted monarch saw nothing but the open door in the world of spirits, through which the headless Baptist had come back to torment him before his time.

This was the sole reward for his heartlessness, his indulgence of a woman more abandoned than himself. His caprice had made him a slave to his paramour's rage, and left him as helpless in her hands as the head of the Baptist on the cruel trencher. Herod's folly had entrapped him so completely, that while his conscience stickled in mock honor to-break a rash and forceless oath, he could deliberately perpetrate the blackest crime known to mortals. His example of false shame is the most contemptible in history. Rather than brook the implication that he really was capable of a moral scruple, he went the full length of crime. What a choice; rather than allow a set of drunken men to shoot the lip at an empty, broken word, he would carry the blood of holy innocence in his skirts through life. Did a minister of his court ever look in his face again, without reading his spectral fear of the slain prophet? Clearly enough, after tins, the ministry of Jesus himself was to him the 'savor of death unto death.' His heavenly words and Godlike acts were never reported, but Herod saw the dead man clothe himself afresh in all the sanctities of his being; he was 'John risen from the dead!' How could the fermented monarch know any interpreter of benevolence but the contortions of a trunkless head?

The New Testament Period

Chapter 4 - Christ's Witness to the Baptist

When John knew that his departure was at hand, he lovingly sent two of his disciples to ask whether Jesus were the Messiah, or should they look for another. This act touched the heart of Jesus tenderly. John was not angry with Herod for his imprisonment, nor did he distrust his own mission or that of Christ: but for the sake of his disciples he sent them, that his own testimony might be confirmed, that their convictions might be established, and that now they might cling to Jesus only. Our Lord re-assured them by an appeal to their sense of sight and hearing. Go tell John the things that ye see, – the blind, the lame, the deaf are restored, and the dead are raised. Tell him the things that you hear, to the poor the glad tidings are preached.' If he cannot believe the first he must accept this last evidence, for no teacher but one from heaven would begin with the poor. This testimony confirmed their faith, and their Master's witness. When they were gone, Jesus said to the multitude: 'What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? He wished them to know, that the rough prophet who dwelt amongst savage beasts, did not quail now that he was in the grasp of the tyrant. Though confined within a dungeon of solid masonry, he was no more like a lithe reed, tossed by every gust, than when he thundered against the sins of the nation. This errand of inquiry, so far from indicating that John quailed, confirmed his integrity, and showed him to be the same self-conscious athlete as ever, just as resolute and firm. 'Went ye out to see a man clothed in soft raiment? They that wear soft clothing are in king's houses.' John was decreasing, but Jesus testified that he was no self-indulgent, easy-going preacher at the court of Galilee, seeking luxury, and fawning to pomp, because he was without that moral fiber, which men call steel. No, this son of the hoary desert was still hardy. Delicate living and gorgeous clothing were in the palace of Antipas, while the fortress of Machaerus was happy in the old austerities. Then Jesus gave his climax: 'Went ye out to see a prophet? Yea, and more than a prophet. Verily I say to you, Among those born of woman there has not risen a greater than John the Baptist. But he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.'

A greater than all the prophets is not easily terrified, and Jesus pronounced John greater. No one prophet had prophesied concerning another; but other prophets had foretold John, as 'the messenger who should prepare the way of the Lord,' His character and office had both been predicted. Nay, he had foretold the glory of Christ, – had seen him in his beauty, – had lived contemporary with him, – was his blood-relative, – and had inducted him into his Messianic office. Did Jesus exaggerate when he pronounced John greater than all those born of woman, and more than a prophet? Is this the panegyric of an unguarded enthusiast? Need we say that Jesus weighed his words; and enstamped John's character forever in sentences of embronzed truth? He made the Baptist a very gem of divine reality, sent from his Father's crown-jewel room. Jehovah had filled him with light in the mine, and Herod was bringing it out in the cutting. How reverentially the Evangelist tells us, that when John looked no longer through his prison bars, 'His disciples came, took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb;' but he adds significantly, that they 'went and told Jesus.' After their master's body was buried, they found no grave for their griefs but in the warm heart of his master; and from that moment they transferred their discipleship to his ranks. Then Jesus not only pronounced this holy eulogy: 'He has borne witness to the truth, he was a burning and a shining light;' but he prophesied that posterity should do him justice, 'wisdom must be justified on the part of her children.' Truly, John's character and claims have been justified in his posterity, as history has defended those of no other man. Yet says Jesus: 'He that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater

The New Testament Period

than he.' These words cannot have reference to John's moral and spiritual character; for none of our Lord's disciples have outstripped him in spirituality 'who was filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his birth.' Clearly, Jesus speaks of his official position, as John's prophetic character is the only point of which he is treating. As crying 'prophets' the lowliest fishermen amongst the disciples formed a great contrast with John. The Baptist's own followers, Andrew and John the Evangelist, outstripped their old master in all his proclaiming privileges. He preached a Saviour who had come to do his work, they preached him crucified, buried, and risen from the dead. Filled as he was with the Spirit, he wrought no mighty works; but the fishermen did the same works that were done by their Master. Stirring as was John's ministry, it was shut up to the narrow home of the Jews, while the Apostles were sent to the ends of the earth. In these respects the least of them was greater than he.

Jesus enlarged his witness to John, at this point, by settling the mooted question of his relation to Elijah: 'If ye are willing to receive it, he is the Elijah that should come.' Some think that John's imprisonment made him sad and impatient, and so, that he desired Jesus to come and liberate him by miracle. If this be correct, then the true magnanimity of Christ is seen in rising above John's waning popularity in the nation, to make his dungeon an eternal Temple of Fame. Like as the star of Bethlehem hung a witness to himself over his stable-cradle, so he hung this lamp over gloomy Machaerus in the darkest hour of John's life: 'This is the Elijah, that was to come!' Gabriel had said that John should come, 'In the spirit and power of Elijah.' The nation supposed, that when Messiah came the prophet of Carmel would descend in the awful manner of his ascent. But the heavens had not re-opened, nor the whirlwind regathered, nor the chariots flashed down ablaze, to theological Jericho. No retinue of angels had brought back the reverend prophet, to tell with bated breath that he could not remain in mansions above, while his brethren were crushed to the earth. They expected to see him wrap his old mantle about him once more, and with a double portion of his own royal spirit, proclaim the coming Lord God of Elijah. Here, they were sadly mistaken; God's true Elijah was in prison, not in Paradise.

John was not the venerable seer of Horeb, but was like him in spirit and power and character. He is named Elijah for the same reason that Jesus is called 'David,' not to point out that monarch personally, but to declare his kingship. There was a unity of purpose between Elijah and John, betokening the same commission in both. Each bent his energies to the same sacred work of reformation. Both walked with God in the desert, in abstinence and solitude, bound the same rough garment around their sturdy frames, and suddenly broke on the nation asleep in its sins, when its crimes were crying aloud for vengeance. They both reprov'd the incorrigible, rebuked kings, and warned the land of coming wrath. They silenced religious wranglings, tore men's delusive sophistries to shreds, and demanded new holiness of heart and life. Yet, Jesus pronounced John: 'More than a prophet,' among all that had been born. The Baptist was greater than Elijah. Elijah fled from persecution, John met it face to face. Jezebel terrified Elijah, and hiding in the desert under a clump of broom-sedge, he prayed God to take his life. John bearded power in a palace, and quailed not before brutal Herodias, though the queen demanded his head. And John was greater than Elijah in that he went to heaven, a martyr's wreath upon his brow flecked with his own blood, while Elijah rose to the skies in a chariot of ease.

Our Lord's witness to John was weighty in words, but if possible, his deeds were weightier still. He ratified John's baptism as divine, by submitting to it himself and never seeking any other; then, he adopted it as a part of the Gospel system, 'unaltered and unalterable' with his consent, to the end

Chapter 4 - Christ's Witness to the Baptist

of time. The Evangelist tells us the mind of Jesus in this matter when he says: 'There was a man sent from God whose name was John. The same came for witness, to bear witness of the light, that through him all might believe.' John says that God, 'Sent me to baptize, in water.' So marked was his authority from the Father to do this, that an inspired Evangelist found it needful to disavow that he was 'The Light' himself, lest men should be confused as to which of them was the Christ. Because John was so directly from God, Jesus not only took his own baptism from his hands, but received John's disciples into his own Apostleship, without administering any other baptism to them. [John 1:35,40] The identity and validity of their baptism he put side by side with his own, not only marking it as from heaven, but pronouncing it, 'The Counsel of God.' He charges guilt upon the Pharisees and lawyers in rejecting that counsel, by refusing baptism at John's hands. [Luke 7:29,30] The very purpose for which the Baptist was sent into the world was, 'That through him all might believe' on Christ. [John 1:7] Paul declares that John said to the people, 'That they should believe on Jesus.' In person, Jesus then, stood amongst them; in office, he was 'to come after him,' and accept his work. The phrase 'to come' cannot relate to Christ's birth, for he had already baptized him as a man of thirty, but must relate to his future Messianic reign. John lived, preached and baptized after Christ had entered on his Messianic work, just as much as any of Christ's Apostles did. The Baptist preached repentance in the presence of Jesus, and baptized converts to him for about two years after he had baptized him; for his martyrdom took place but a few months before Christ's crucifixion. John saw his glory, noted his miracles, 'rejoiced in his light,' proclaimed the atonement that he was about to make as God's 'Lamb,' and demanded, that all penitents should 'believe on him' who then stood amongst them. Saving that Gospel ministers now preach Christ's redeeming acts as finished, John preached all that we now preach or can preach, the agency of the Holy Spirit in the Gospel Church included.

With these facts on the very face of the four gospels, the question, whether John's baptism were Christian or not, is reduced to a dispute about words; which only casts discredit upon Christ's own baptism, as if it had no binding force upon his own churches. Those who reject Christ's personal baptism and that of his Apostles by John, as wanting in some vital Christian element, do so because it was administered before Pentecost. Of course, this not only implies that Christ's baptism and theirs were defective, but that all the baptisms administered by the Apostles before Pentecost were defective, as Christian baptisms! What was the inexplicable mishap in these baptisms, a deficiency which Christ himself did neither detect nor rectify? The Evangelist says, That Jesus 'made,' or disciplined the converts whom his disciples baptized. [John 4:1,3] Also he says, that they were baptized in Christ's presence: 'He tarried with them and baptized.' [John 3:22] Then what had Pentecost to do anyhow with the ratification of the baptisms which he had authorized, as Christian? Under credentials from God, the baptism practiced by John and Jesus was identical at any rate. But neither the Father, the Son, nor the Spirit, added one injunction on baptism after Pentecost. Christ administered both baptism and the Supper before his death, and his Apostles practiced baptism under his own eye. Was this a distinct institute from that which his Father had ordained for John? and from that which followed Pentecost too? In that case, we have three sorts of baptism in the New Testament, one for John, one for Jesus and his Apostles, and still another for all the ages after Pentecost! To say that either of these acts were not Christian in the fullest sense of the word, is to throw endless perplexity about the right obedience of the New Testament converts.

Clearly, there was no vital difference between the manner, the obligation, the object, or the value

The New Testament Period

of baptism, before Pentecost and after. The difference between the first and later baptisms by Christ's Apostles related only to their enlarged field. At first Christ sent them to 'the lost sheep of Israel,' but his post-resurrection commission enlarged their sphere to 'all nations.' Either his Apostles baptized none before his resurrection; which cannot be, for 'They baptized more disciples than John ;' or they baptized without his authority at that time; or else he gave them two separate commissions to baptize, one before his resurrection and one after, and so their first baptisms were defective as compared with their last. If any of their first baptisms were defective, which? and in what respect? The post-resurrection commission of Jesus gave them no indication that the rite was new, nor that it was a re-establishment of the old rite. Both its wording and spirit imply that it was the simple continuance of a rite with which they were familiar, already existing by divine appointment, and now, by the same appointment made outreaching to 'all the world.' He then gave permanent type to the formula, adding the name of the Spirit to his own and to that of the Father, for very obvious reasons. On the authority of the Father, the Christian age and institutions began with the baptism of the Son, its first and primary design being to manifest him to the world. It was adopted and sanctioned by the Son all through his ministry, and enforced on others through his Apostles. The Holy Spirit had ratified it by his descent upon the Son in his baptism, and when the Spirit should fill Christ's place on earth after his ascension, it was but meet that it should thenceforth be administered in the Triune Name.

Can absurdity be more absurd than that which supposes John to have stood in a nondescript dispensation of his own when he baptized Jesus; while Jesus, when he received his baptism, stood in still another dispensation. John's ministry had nothing in common with the economy of Moses, for Jesus himself says that the 'Law was *until* John' (Matt. 11:13), from which time the 'good news of the kingdom is preached, and every man presses into it;' the same kingdom that both John and Jesus preached. And what other kingdom is preached today? Christ was never baptized in water but once; and will men say that his baptism was not in the Christian dispensation, simply because he was baptized before he ascended to heaven? For the same reason they may read the Lord's Supper out of the Christian dispensation, for 'the Spirit had not come' on the night of its first celebration. John and Jesus both preached the same 'kingdom of heaven' at the same time, and to the same people, either in the Christian age or out of it, certainly; so that if John's preaching and baptism were neither Mosaic nor Christian, neither could those of Jesus be; as authorized by God to introduce the Gospel, they stand or fall together.

The cases of Apollos and the twelve Ephesians are directly in point here, although out of their chronological order. Apollos (Acts 18:24-28) 'knew only the baptism of John;' meaning that he had been baptized by John or one of his followers. The narrative shows that Apollos had found that repentance, faith in Christ, and personal holiness under John's teaching, which led him to speak and teach 'correctly the things concerning Jesus.' On these he had received baptism, as appears, without knowing everything concerning Christ historically, for Priscilla and Aquila 'taught him the way of the Lord more perfectly.' Among other things, however, they did not teach him to repudiate his baptism from John, on the ground that there were two sorts of baptism and two sorts of baptizers, and so, that his baptism would not admit him into a post-Pentecost Gospel Church, for before he could be received there, he must seek a new baptism. They simply gave him fuller light 'on the way of the Lord,' as the Apostles had received new light from time to time, and as do all devout souls. Dr. Brown, Professor of Theology at Aberdeen, treats this case happily, thus:

Chapter 4 - Christ's Witness to the Baptist

'He comes to Ephesus already instructed in the way of the Lord, fervent in the spirit, and mighty in the Scriptures, though yet only on the Joannean platform; and what Priscilla and Aquila did for him seems to have been simply to impart to him those facts of the new economy, with which he was unacquainted. And just as those disciples who passed from the ranks of the Baptist to those of Christ needed and received no new baptism, so this already distinguished Christian teacher, having merely received a riper view of those great evangelical truths which he already believed and taught, neither needed nor received rebaptization.'

On his faith and baptism he passed from John's discipleship into the Apostolic Church at Ephesus, was commended to them as a Christian teacher, and became a champion of the faith, 'watering' where Paul 'planted.' Instead of the Church setting aside his baptism from John as defective, in any respect, it was adopted as thoroughly satisfactory in every respect, and that without question. Here we find a full justification for the strong words of Calvin, when he says:

'It is very certain that the ministry of John was precisely the same as that which was afterward committed to the Apostles. For their baptism was not different, though it was administered by different hands; but the sameness of their doctrine shows their baptism to have been the same. John and the Apostles agreed in the same doctrine. Both baptized to repentance, both to remission of sins; both baptized in the name of Christ, from whom repentance and remission of sins proceed. John said of Christ: "Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world;" thus acknowledging and declaring him to be the sacrifice acceptable to the Father, the procurer of righteousness, and the author of salvation. What could the Apostles add to this confession? Wherefore, let no one be disturbed by the attempts of the ancient writers to distinguish and separate one baptism from the other; for their authority ought not to have weight enough to shake our confidence in the Scripture. But, if any difference be sought for in the Word of God, the only difference that will be found is, that John baptized in the name of him who was to come, the Apostles in the name of him who had already manifested himself.'

Touching the case of the twelve believers whom Paul found at Ephesus (Acts 19:1-7), we need to bring great candor and docility to its examination; for its interpretation is more difficult, and it has been the subject of much controversy. High sacramentarians have always disparaged John's baptism, in order to exalt their own as the only Christian 'Sacrament.' With this in view, the Council of Trent decreed: 'If any one shall say that the baptism of John had the same efficacy as the baptism of Christ, let him be anathema.' [Sess., vii, De Bapt., C. 1] On the other hand, Protestants generally, at the Reformation, held that they were essentially the same, for the Apostle does not raise the question concerning the baptism of these 'twelve' with reference to their admission into Christianity; like Apollos, they were Christians already. Paul addresses them as having 'believed,' and Luke calls them disciples; nor were they seeking fellowship with Christians when the Apostle met them; they were already numbered amongst Christians. Liddon says: 'They must have acknowledged a certain relation to Jesus Christ as their Master, or the name "disciple" would not have been given them. Jesus was in some sense their Master; they were his disciples.' Paul's question related to their reception of the miraculous gifts of the Spirit when they exercised faith on Christ, and they limited their answer accordingly: 'We did not so much as hear whether the Holy Spirit was.' Not that they were ignorant of the Spirit's existence. This cannot be the meaning, since the personality and office of the Holy Spirit, in connection with Christ, formed an essential subject of the Baptist's teachings. Literally: 'We did not even hear whether the Holy Spirit was' [given], that is, at the time of their baptism. Calvin says:

The New Testament Period

'It is not probable that Jews, though they had never been baptized at all, would have been destitute of all knowledge of the Holy Spirit, who is celebrated in so many testimonies of Scripture, I grant that the baptism they had received was the true baptism of John, and the very same with the baptism of Christ, but I deny that they were baptized again...If ignorance vitiate a first baptism, so that it requires to be corrected by a second, the first persons who ought to have been rebaptized were the Apostles themselves, who, for three years after their baptism, had scarcely any knowledge of the least particle of pure doctrine; and among us, what views would be sufficient for the repetition of ablutions as numerous as the errors which are daily corrected in us by the mercy of the Lord.' [Inst. B. IV, ch. xv, Sec. xviii]

This great divine presses his point more strongly still in his Commentary on Acts 19: 'Paul doth not speak in this place of the Spirit of regeneration, but of the special gifts which God gave to others at the beginning of the Gospel...Because the men of old had conceived an opinion that the baptism of John and of Christ were diverse, it was no inconvenient thing for them to be baptized again, who were only prepared with the 'baptism of John. But that diversity was falsely and wickedly believed, it appeareth by this, in that it was a pledge and token of the same adoption, and of the same newness of life which we have at this day in our baptism, and therefore we do not read that Christ did baptize those again who came from John unto him. Moreover, Christ received baptism in his own flesh, that he might couple himself with us, by that visible sign (Matt.3:5). But if that feigned diversity be admitted, this singular benefit shall fall away and perish, that baptism is common to the Son of God and to us, or that we have all one baptism with him. But this opinion needeth no long confutation; because to the end they may parade that these two baptisms be diverse, they must needs show first wherein the one differeth from the other; but the most excellent likelihood answereth to both parts, and also the agreement and conformity of the parts, which causeth us to confess that it is all one baptism...Now the question is, whether it were lawful to repeat the same, and furious men in this our age trusting to this testimony, went about to bring in baptizing again. I deny that the baptism of water was repeated, because the words of Luke import no such thing, save only that they were baptized with the Spirit...And whereas it followeth immediately that when he had laid his hands upon them, the Spirit came, I take it to be added by way of interpretation.'

Then, as in all other cases where baptism in the Spirit occurred, 'they spoke with tongues,' a 'sign' which few believers received; it does not appear that even Apollos possessed this distinction. The same free Spirit which had converted and kept them now bestowed miraculous gifts upon them.

In this transaction Paul did not raise the question of the validity of John's baptism; why should he, more than with his fellow-Apostles themselves? With him the vital point covered only the endowment of the Ephesian believers with miraculous gifts. The question of conversion to Christ is not raised in the narrative; but as these gifts sometimes preceded baptism and sometimes followed it, Paul simply asked whether or not they received them when they 'believed.' Dr. Brown sums up the cases of Apollos and these twelve thus: 'There is no evidence to show that our Lord caused those disciples of John, who came over to him, to be rebaptized; and from John 4:1, 2, we naturally conclude that they were not. Indeed, had those who first followed Jesus from among the Baptist's disciples required to be rebaptized, the Saviour must have performed the ceremony himself, and such a thing could not fail to be recorded; whereas the reverse is intimated in the passage just quoted.' Hence, it follows that these Ephesians needed not a new water baptism any more than the twelve Apostles. And it is remarkable that in Peter's statement of qualifications needed in the candidate who should fill the place of Judas, was this, namely, that he should have companied with them from the time of John's baptism to Christ's ascension. His intimacy with John and Jesus from

Chapter 4 - Christ's Witness to the Baptist

the 'beginning' made him eligible. They then made prayer to Jesus the great Heart-Knower to determine who it should be, and he appointed Matthias. But not a word is said about his need of rebaptism either before or after Pentecost, in order to a valid filling of the Apostleship with the eleven. Matthias, Apollos, and the twelve at Ephesus, seem to have held much the same relation both to John and Christ. It seems impossible to determine whether these 'twelve' were rebaptized or not. Calvin best expresses the writer's idea, but such high Baptist authority as Drs. Hackett and Hovey take the opposite view. If they were rebaptized, the reason is not found in any defect in John's baptism as Christian, but in their personal want of the full qualifications for receiving baptism. Dr. Hackett puts this view of the case in these strong words: 'Their prompt reception of the truth would tend to show that the defect in their former baptism related not so much to their positive error as to their ignorance in regard to the proper object of faith.' Such ignorance, however, did not obtain in the cases of the Apostles chosen by Christ, of Matthias (Acts 1:22), nor of Apollos, who received baptism from the same source, and were not rebaptized, their examples showing that baptism before and after Pentecost differs only as noon differs from morning.

In this sketch of John, harbinger, preacher, theologian and martyr, next to his Master, we find the great typical Baptist of all ages. It is more than a blunder to place him on the banks of the Jordan, with his face toward Sinai and Egypt, as a perfect personification of the Mosaic age. His face was turned toward Tabor, Calvary, Olivet, and the New Jerusalem, as, next to his Master, the embodiment of the New Testament. John and Jesus looked only forward, eye to eye. His ministry glided into that of Christ, as a mountain tarn soon loses itself in the deep sea. Frederick Robertson, with his usual scope and beauty, says:

'He left behind him no sect to which he had given his name, but his disciples passed into the service of Christ, and were absorbed in the Christian Church. Words from John had made impressions, and men forgot in after years where the impression first came from; but the day of judgment will not forget. John laid the foundations of a temple and others built upon it. He laid it in a struggle, in martyrdom. It was covered up with the rough masonry below ground; but when we look round on the vast Christian Church, we are looking at the superstructure of John's toil.' [Sermons, iii, Series, pp. 344,5]

That is narrow and pitiable cant which makes him the mere incarnation of his age. Was he such an embodiment of surface life? The New Testament says that he resisted his age, reformed his age, and overturned its old things that all things might become new. Could the worst age of Judaism produce the holiest man in the Gospels? Yes, as much as the densest darkness can create a quenchless light. The later Judaism produced scribes, Pharisees, hypocrites, but John the Baptist never. He was sent of God to his age, and gave it much, but borrowed nothing. He interpreted it, and tried to save it, and it slaughtered him in recompense. No man in the Bible brought so many new truths from God, truths virgin to the soul of man, and which still stir the best spirits on earth with their freshness. The sure and certain sound which echoes through all lands today, as loudly as ever, was his first trumpet-call. His personal piety opens to us his inner life. Tertullian thinks that he brought in a new method of prayer, which led the Apostles to say: 'Lord, teach us to pray, as also John taught his disciples.' Whence came that model prayer: 'Our Father,' etc. Far from being the nondescript which narrow modern interpretation makes him, he was the leader in the great moral upheaval which first demanded personal loyalty to Christ. Pointing out salvation, not by hereditary institutions, or by birds and beasts, he demanded a radical revolution, by the establishment of a new

The New Testament Period

kingdom: 'Not of birth, nor of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.'

The Baptist was not a book, but a voice; not a functionary of the old age, nor yet a representative of the Law and the Prophets. They represented themselves.

As a voice, he was living, strong, clear; and 'Jesus' was the 'Word' that he spoke with all his might. So well did he preach Jesus, that his Lord's lips pronounced him 'A burning and shining lamp.' words which he uttered of none other. So luminously did he preach Christ, that, like a lamp, he threw light on his theme. So fervently did he preach him that his ministry burnt with the pungency of a flame. 'Repent, obey the living King,' he cried, and when God. gave his hearers repentance unto life, he immersed their bodies in the Jordan. He focused sin as it appears in the New Testament, in all its odiousness; and in this respect, Jesus had closer affinity with him than with any of his Apostles. And that ambassador of Christ in our times, who has the most of John's courage, love for Christ and zeal in pushing the great truths which he preached, does the best service in his Master's work. Such a man is a 'scribe, well instructed in the kingdom of God,' a true antitype of Christ's greatest witness.

Like John, Baptists have found through long centuries, that when they have dared to enforce the whole truth as it is in Jesus, they have commonly sealed their own death- warrants. The first Baptist of his race is not the only man of that race whose fidelity has invoked murder in cold blood. More heads of that household than his have gasped on a lordly dish, things of beauty for crowned heads and delicate princesses to gloat their eyes upon. Standing at the head of the noble army of Baptist martyrs, his tragic fidelity to God has been the standing sign of their own end. No story in history is so sad as his, and none so paints criminal splendor and sacred bravery in their true colors. John sets forth the sterling mission of true Baptists in sterling ideal. He was Jehovah's royal minister and man's hated culprit, deeded not the world a 'kind of first-fruits' in God's messengers for its ferocity, and who could meet the need so well as John? In ante-Gospel times the Lord enrolled a long array of brilliant names in his book of remembrance, and these were his jewels. But in the Lamb's book of life, John heads his list of martyr names. Did the Lamb himself refer to this record, and couple these names with his own slaughter, when he said of John: 'They knew him not, but did to him whatever they would. So also is the Son of Man about to suffer.' John's sun has long since set in Palestine, but his glory lays upon the world from its Dan to its Beersheba. The people could not forget him when his frame moldered under the turf, Jesus could not forget him, his Apostles could not forget him; he lived in their thoughts, a palpable entity. Jesus asked the twelve: 'Whom do men say that I am?' They answered: 'John the Baptist.' No apostle of Christ ever met with a eulogy like that. So Christlike was he as to be taken for the Son of God himself, by the very people who knew them both. And all this was when the God-man addressed them daily, and the headless body of the Baptist rested in the soil which they trod. 'Such honor have not all his saints.'

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

Geneva, like Jerusalem, is encircled with mountains, Alp rising on Alp. There is the stretch of the mighty Jura, and towering above all, solemn Mont Blanc. He looks down from azure heights in a purity of awe which breathes the spirit of eternity on all below. Yet his summits and battlements of alabaster are so dwarfed by distance, that several princes of his court are easily mistaken for the king himself. Still the practiced eye cannot be misled. When once the sail kisses his brow and steals down his visage, a pink tint warms him into the radiance of life; then, like an archangel asleep, a smile plays on his face, and each courtier around his chair of state catches the glow of his beatitude. So, when we look back to the blue sky on which the Rock of Ages outlined himself, encompassed with Evangelists and Apostles, we may readily rob Jesus of his majesty and put the Baptist, or Peter, or Paul on the monarch's throne. But when the sunlight of God's glory floods the Sacred Head, at once the man of Tabor looms up, the Sovereign of the group. Then, once more, Joseph's 'eleven' sheaves and 'thirteen' celestial orbs arise and bow to him who is King of kings.

The Baptist put the diadem on the rightful brow, for when the people saw Christ's glory they said: 'All things that John spake of this man were true.' His career glided into the public ministry of Jesus, not making the one the fortuitous after-execution of the other, but as a part of one grand design – a far-sighted method of God's eternal love, for a strange unity covers their history. Their ministries are two voices attuned to one strain, and their key-note is 'the kingdom of God.' Jesus took up the theme where John dropped it, and in a more joyful key. He gave the exact burden of John to his Apostles in their Judean mission: 'As ye go preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.' Here is a progressive and Godlike unfolding of the same doctrine, the good news of Christ's reign upon the earth. Kingship here is not a celestial institution, but a moral sovereignty over all earthly institutions, the establishment of a spiritual empire on the earth. Bengel forcibly groups the events from Christ's Baptism to his Ascension, in his treatment of the favorite word Gospel in Mark: 'The *beginning* of the Gospel is in the Baptist, the Gospel in the whole book,' to the Great Commission. The Apostles passed the mutilated body of John stretched on the threshold of Christianity, when sent on their errand of struggle and victory; and they were inspired to endurance by the fall of the strong, pure, young martyr. Jesus lifted up the standard of Jehovah when it fell from John's hands, and it has never fallen since. He took up the very words of John and gave them eternal meaning, by becoming his own herald at the head of the new kingdom. The unity of the New Testament in all its truths and principles shows but one mind; its forecasting and fullness are all of a piece. Hence, what John preached and practiced has never been superseded, or even suspended, to this day. Because it included the substance of Christian truth, it is still moving on in its progressive completeness. There was no rent in John's garment, and our Lord put into it no new piece of cloth, but only enlarged the same divine web.

Pilate asked Jesus: 'Art thou a king then?' and he honestly told the politic Roman that he was the King of the Truth. 'Thou sayest it because I am a King. To this end I came into the world, that I may bear witness to the truth.' Yet he disavowed that his kingdom was of this world: 'If my kingdom were of this world then would my servants fight. But my kingdom is not of this world.' His countrymen looked for a king in pomp and circumstance, who should come literally in the clouds of heaven. But the kingship of Jesus was to sway its power over the souls of men. Look at his answer to the political question, on the lawfulness of paying the poll-tax to the Romans. He took the coin in which it was paid, bearing the image and inscription of Caesar Augustus, in such a year, after

The New Testament Period

the conquest of Judea. This proving their subjection, he said: 'Give Caesar that which belongs to him, and render unto God that which is his.' He made a part of their duty lie in loyalty to their protecting government, and having done this, they must obey God in all things. Here he laid down the great law of his own kingdom, duty to God above all human policy, and a sacred regard for all wholesome human law.

He would form a community for other purposes than those of national existence, but would not interfere with human governments. He would select its subjects, make its officers, enact and enforce its laws, and govern it under the will of God. With the founding of such an empire in view, he needed no assistance from human sources, as other men. His servants would neither fight for supremacy nor ask political Powers to fight for them. His kingdom should conquer by choice and not by force – it should be taken from every stock and race, and held together by love. It should grant no special privileges to any class, or blood, or nation ; but, on the contrary, races hostile to each other, speaking different tongues and following different interests, should be compacted into a harmonious whole. No man's courage had dared to take principles as deep and broad as human nature itself, for the corner-stone of human conduct. Self-will, defiance, war and blood-ties had been built upon, but disinterested love never. This was to take men out of one world into another, while they remained in the same. It was to create in man a new feeling, interest and pursuit, a new spirit, principle and end. Here sight was to give place to faith, the visible to the unseen, the selfish to the benevolent, and the circumstantial to the rightful. Citizens in his Commonwealth were to be elevated above the animal; they were to move in a new moral universe, because they loved with a pure heart fervently. They were to make each other strong and good, and were to stimulate all about them to the bravery of blessing. The weak were to be borne up, as the oak bears the ivy that it may become stronger; and the stout were to stand firmly alone with the stout, as the fir and elm stand alone, but keep company with each other.

Jesus distinctly renounced all temporal power. Legal coercion is powerless to command the assent of a soul to his doctrines, or the obedience of a life to his laws. He was the King of souls, to reign over intellect, affection, conscience; and his conquests were to be moral, not physical. His throne must be set up in the willing soul, for here is his palace. The question of tribute was intended to place him between two fires. Either he must declare for Caesar against the turbulent Jews, or against Caesar, and so meet the charge of sedition, he refused to be made a king, or to touch civil authority. In the modern sense of the word, there was no Church or State in the Jewish Theocracy. They were one and the same institution, and, therefore, there was no such alliance as we are acquainted with.

It knew no distinction between the religious and the political, for Jehovah was its only Deity and Magistrate. Jesus prohibited all civil penalties in his Gospel kingdom, as at variance with its first principles. No man can persecute another on religious questions from a sense of duty to Christ, but only on his own arrogant inclinations. When Peter drew his sword in defense of his persecuted Master, Jesus deprecated his act, and commanded him to put it back into its sheath. Duty to God cannot be an offense against society; therefore, to persecute men for the discharge of that duty, under the directions of moral conviction, is to violate the law of natural morality. And, if under the guise of religion men violate secular authority, they must be punished, not as religionists, but as abettors of civil crime. Offenses against God which are not offenses against man cannot be noticed by a secular tribunal, without trenching on those prerogatives of God which lie has delegated to no power

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

on earth. Nor can the kingdom of Christ, by his authority, coerce any temporal power, or interfere in its jurisdiction. The State is the natural channel for reaching all ends contemplated by the State. The very idea of alliance between the Church and the State implies their distinct character primarily, and their native independence of each other. They may form a compact for each other's moral support, but Christ has prohibited the interchange of their original rights as unlawful. Consent or dissent, as before the civil power, are not to be named nor thought of, much less the establishment of religion, or even its toleration. The power to tolerate is the essence of intolerance. It implies disapproval tempered with charitable restraint, to punish independent thought and practice, as if these were wrong in themselves; and that then tolerance were an act of very gracious kindness. But if independence be wrong, then not to punish it is to declare it no offense, and to declare it right is to recognize Christ as the only King in the Gospel kingdom. All this shows that Jesus did what no man's originality had thought of projecting, namely, the founding of a kingdom on character: on the mental and moral, and not on the material; on inward life, and not on exterior organization. That is to say, he gave man power over himself, so that hisself-control should bring all his passions and powers under the law of a sanctified manhood. Until this, men did not know that they were sons of God, or that they were brothers; much less did they know that they could all be kings amongst men. Differing from other legislators he made not the letter of the law his standard of obedience, but his own person, which covered both its letter and spirit. A Christian is to be a representative of Christ in character. He loved all men and nations, and in proportion as they should become true copies of himself, should they become nobler men. He laid his law of citizenship on the plane of selection. Men of high character, judged by this standard, were to be winnowed out from men of low character. He would organize them into communities, having made them worthy of the kingdom of God. Then, under this new code, right character was to be created by new exactions enforced upon the individual man. Truth should be applied under their individual search for truth, without regard to old levels. His law was not traced by the finger of a child on the sand of the sea, but was graven deep on the tablets of his own inner life. Every element in his followers must be substance, as in himself, justice, mercy, purity, self-sacrifice. They must be real men and not images; and the higher their spiritual tone the nearer would they approach to the reality of God's Son. He had come to unveil true character by revealing God to man, full orbed. He came to show the Father in the express likeness of his person, and to recover man to his paternal government.

Also, he spoke with authority and certainty, because he found these profound laws embodied in himself. The genuine pearl in his hand had been brought up from the depths of his own nature. The fruit was good because the tree was good. Men read the one by the other. The inner recesses of his soul, its secret motives and genuine life, are photographed in his Sermon on the Mount. His sphere of government being the soul, he governs the outer life through its thinking and willing, and through the truth which molds the motives and controls the entire existence. This method of ruling clothes his word with power. When he laid bare a depth of life to which men were strangers, they found it impossible to resist the hidden majesty with which he spoke. His plain forms of expression were the more mysterious in their force, from the fact, that he used no means to captivate men but the invitation, 'Come unto me,' words which sprang from the deepest fountain of his tenderness. His subject matter is truth from above; but he uses human words to tell of heavenly things, and they sink into the soul. As the great Master of thought and language, he brought Divine volitions from the hush of His Father's guest-chamber, that he might enshrine them first in the temple of his own

The New Testament Period

manhood, and then in the life of his disciples. The signet-ring of God had set his seal to the fact that Jesus was true; for he embodied all that he required in other men, and as their perfect pattern, demanded., that each man should seek a close conformity to himself. He would reconstruct in each a new humanity, and so, man by man, the whole race should become new. This moral and spiritual renewal must amount to a new creation.

Christ differed from Moses, the great lawgiver, in that he penned no law. The law of life was in himself. This makes all his exactions weighty and imperious upon the citizens of the new kingdom. The King himself leads his subjects in the thick of the contest, making himself the text-book of service, and his infectious leadership in danger, the word of command to the front. Character and deeds form the body of laws for the new commonwealth; for his life exposes all dark snares – silences all lurking passions – quickens all health – adorns all beauty – reconciles all contradiction. To each faint disciple his character is a rock of strength; he is the Brother in adversity, the torch of truth, and the incarnation of nobility. He is the ideal God and yet, in his march, he draws men after him as in the foot-steps of an ideal man. To be like him is to be a Christian. This is the profound philosophy which led him to brush aside all theories of life, to live, which threw him into the midst of moral chaos, in order to commit the new life, not to writing, but to the law of actual guardianship. When other men asked, 'What is truth,' he answered: 'I am the Truth.' Any theory that he might have written) even as the King in Zion, could and would have been misrepresented. But when he made his own character, example, and obedience the standard of his law for others, his authority was simply beyond mistake, and living beyond doubt. The law of Moses made no man perfect, because it gave no perfect model of its teachings; but that of Jesus did, because in the true God-philosophy he said: 'Learn of me.'

Yet, he did not destroy the old law, or even set it aside, as if it were a failure, but he proved its success for its own purposes, by fulfilling its demands. Had men chosen to keep it, it had brought them to God. But when Jesus kept it, he showed it to be holy, and just, and good, and then gave himself to be the new law of conformity, and so was made the end of the law by bringing in his own joyful life. By perfect obedience he could calmly, confidently, and perpetually say: 'Thus, and thus it is written,' in a sense far beyond the ordinary ken. It is not a little remarkable that he so often refers to the Law, the Prophets and the Psalms, as illustrated by his acts, his person and spirit, until the Written Word of the Old Testament is enshrined in the Living Word of the New. The Jews honored the letter of their holy books when they counted their words, and so invested them with sacredness. But, how infinitely more he honored them, when he translated their spirit into the oracle of his Living Self, to become the vital Epistle of Moses and David, Isaiah and the Prophets.

Never was the Old Testament understood till the Lamb took the roll and broke its seals. Since then, it is an open book which the wayfaring man may read while he runs. His whole life was pre-written in the volume of the Book, and was then transcribed into him so clearly, that his first biographer caught the picture perfectly, and made his Gospel literally the Gospel of fulfilled prophecy. He traces these predictions in the virgin mother, the place and time of his birth, and in his name, 'Immanuel.' He even listened to Rachel's sobs around the manger, when they gave new anguish to the sad dirge of Jeremiah. And, when the Magi returned to the East, they left a brighter dawn than had ever flushed on the Syrian sky, in the vision of Israel.

What fullness dwells in the words: 'I came down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of him that sent me.' In this sense, as well as in a higher sense, he lived out of himself in the Father,

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

and the Father lived in him. The law of Jehovah which had been revealed from the beginning in deathless principle and written statute, he reproduced in flesh and blood, and made eternally binding in all its integrity. His soul was radiant with its simple clearness and glowing warmth, and it dominated the whole sweep of his legislation and teachings. Hence, his inflexible reverence for the mind of God, and his august loathing of the nullifying traditions of man. He threw every type of men's antique dictation to the four winds, with a deliberate contempt which brought rank and culture, assumption and pride of lording to a dead stand-still, before the inexorable bar of him who says: 'Thus it is written.' Quietly, he tore up by the roots that conceit of autocrats who deem themselves the licensed law-mongers of humanity, with full power to hawk their venal wares in the market-place against the enstamped commands of God, and to push his Word aside.

Then, Jesus followed that holy veneration which never questioned one jot of inspired truth, with a sacrificial submission which would not gloss a line or haggle with a principle thereof in disobedience. His all-pervading spirituality led him with cheerfulness into death itself, if moral obligation issued the mandate. When his steadfast eye laid bare the path, his willing feet trod therein. His obedience wound its way through type and shadow, the longings of hope and the penetrations of promise, and ended in the Valley of Death. But with mental self-possession and divine calmness, he paid the cost of obedience in pain and hardship. True, in the presence of death itself he became weak as a smitten lamb, and great drops of blood stained his brow, so that, an immaculate angel who had never broken a precept of heaven's law, or felt the faintness of death, appeared to strengthen him. But, when the palm of his soft hand wiped our Lord's temples, the holy touch but changed each clot into a passion-flower of Paradise, and each fleck of gore into a ruby. Then, under the dark olives of Gethsemane, the first Son of man who had ever kept Jehovah's law, wore his own diadem of obedience, which all the cursed thorns of the next day failed to blacken or disgrace.

Having kept the law himself as the Holy of God, his gentleness imposed the same dutiful yoke upon all his fellows, that they might share the satisfactions of his own life and love. Love had drawn him from his Father's throne for them, and now it would lift them up to God, for oneness, and fellowship, and friendship. This pure purpose drew him, at times, into those rhythmic bursts of joy which celebrated the return of prodigals, and the adoption of babes into his Father's house. The refrain of this anthem sounded up and down his entire life: 'It is meet that we should be merry and glad, for this our brother was dead and is alive again, was lost and is found.' And, this love he extended to all men, Gentiles as well as Jews. The sweep of his net drew fish of every kind, and the sheep of his flock were housed from every fold. Here again, God's Viceroy is instinct with Jehovah's high benevolence. All power was given into his hands, without the display of thunders and lightnings, and the voice of trumpets, but in the conscious conviction that he represented all that dwelt in the bosom whence he came. With him eternal principles were not only axioms of the Divine mind, but practical ideas. Because they were vitalized with the immortality of God, his invitations were Jehovah's decrees. Purity and love made his whole spiritual code sternly absolute. It is this which makes his influence so visibly distinct, so definitely potent. He never opens his lips but fresh truth distills from them, in apt, keen, loving words. Fichte, who argued that character is simple self-development, thinks, that by the mere purity and elevation of Christ's character, he was carried into that region of eternal morality which men seldom reach. Carlyle, who doubted the Divine in Christ, calls his life a 'perfect ideal Poem,' and says: 'The greatest of all heroes is One whom we do not name here. Let sacred silence meditate that sacred matter.' Renan, who colors the facts of Gospel

The New Testament Period

history by fancy, calls him: 'The incomparable being to whom the universal conscience has decreed the title of The Son of God.' But Bayne, true to the manhood of Christ, with greater boldness still, asks of his miracles: 'Whether from the moral character of Christ, it would, or would not, have been a greater miracle than these, that in asserting himself to wield creative power, he lied.'

And, why not? he himself demands: 'Which of you. convicts me of sin?' A challenge which is spirit and life. But no man charges home the miracle of falsehood on Jesus Christ – no man throws the name of one vice into his face. The thought that he could lie freezes the blood in all men's veins, as, in itself, a greater miracle than to grind the stars into diamond-dust between two millstones. Serenely, without excitement, and apparently without preparation, he lays his truths before men, in secluded places or public walks, and the more men look at them the more they wonder at their native depth. When mankind first heard them, the haughty became humble, the grasping benevolent, the crafty honest, and the narrow large-hearted. Like himself, his laws were cosmopolitan, lifting the truth indifferently above all national distinctions, and drawing followers to his great soul simply as men, in the free garb of all their social habits. The tones of his call were holy, demanding separation from all unholy society, social and civil; and yet, men's only isolation the one from the other, was to be by a line of holiness. His was to be a Church without blood-relationship, held together by love, common aims and common hopes; the only two qualities necessary for admission being, humanity of birth and divinity of renovation. The two great pillars in his Palace of Truth are love to God and love to man. These he hewed out and polished after a heavenly similitude, for no man had seen them before. They were foundation doctrines, not dogmas. Dogmas are fallible interpretations of infallible truths, and his infallibility excluded dogma alike from his utterances and acts. But while inflexibly absolute, he was the life of all forbearance. He persecuted no man, and allowed not his disciples to persecute. Even when they would resent affronts by force, he rebuked them as ignorant of their own spirit; for that, the Son of Man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them. He made selfishness, malignity and revenge out of place amongst his devotees.

Persecution runs in the blood of nature. Not only do the wolf and tiger persecute, but all living things, small and great. The sweetest lark that sings in the sky will dive down upon his brother songster and tear him, and the least minnow in the brook will torment his fellow. But Jesus strengthened the last fiber that held the reed together, and revived the last spark in the smoking wick. Yea, and his purpose was to give this gentle pre-eminence to all his redeemed people. True men of God cannot persecute until their heavenly tempers are subdued by their carnal passions. Jesus never raved, but often wept over the erring, for only the Good Shepherd would lay down his life for the sheep, while the hireling steals and kills. Reared amongst bigots his triumph was: 'Whom the Son makes free he is free indeed;' and his Gospel Republic is the first government from Adam which could accord entire independence of thought and act, even in morals. Jesus appeals directly to the convictions of men and allows no man to interfere with those convictions. He rebukes prejudice in his followers, and proposes to draw all men to himself by the exercise of conscience and reason; an exercise as free as the breath of the winds around the Alpine flowers, or as the rays of the morning sun which fly to kiss them in mid- heaven.

When Jesus put the leaven into three measures of meal, the fourth quarter of the globe was undiscovered, and of Asia, Africa, and Europe, he chose Asia, the largest division of the earth then known, as the spot where it was to begin its assimilating process. Palestine lay on the extreme western edge of that huge continent, closely adjacent to Europe and Africa, and almost in the center

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

of the world as it was to be and is now. Asia contains a greater variety of climates than either of the other divisions of the Eastern Hemisphere, united with great advantages, especially in its countless littoral islands, its vast rivers, and endless kinds of products, from its temperate and tropical zones. Its majestic mountain chains and tablelands, the wealth of its soil and its streams emptying into the sea, open it to agriculture, arts, trade and commerce in every direction; and its easy division into large empires fitted it pre-eminently for the spread of dominion by the Great King. Africa lies almost entirely in the torrid zone, has two great rivers, the Niger and the Nile, with a desert of sand stretching from the Red Sea to the Atlantic, and covering one fifth of the continent. Only its northern part was known to the ancients, and figures in their history. But the Roman Empire, which at that time ruled Europe, civilized and barbarian, had also conquered the greater part of civilized Asia and Africa, holding sway over the world west of the Euphrates. The Jews, whose civilization was most in harmony with Christianity, were scattered almost everywhere through the empire, and were very powerful. Egypt was full of them, as well as Rome itself, while in Antioch they formed more than a third of the population. Our Lord intended to take each individual man, however rude or polished, to change his character and habits, to lift him out of vice into purity; and by spiritual forces to bring him under his royal law, until his perfection was marked by a translation out of moral degradation, into the full, free and pure citizenship of his kingdom. All his parables show the smallness of his beginnings; and the secret growth of his reign. A blade of wheat, out of which an endless harvest shall spring, – a grain of mustard-seed, from which outspreading trees shall grow, and five other parables, were employed by him to show the noiseless, gradual, but resistless advance of his Empire. It was to be broad and many-sided, severe in its power and calm in its elevation. Tiny in its beginning, it was to outgrow all rivals, until out of the hidden, its visibility was to be world-wide, because it enclosed the germs of all true life; and its aim was to be a practical universality.

He, himself, was a veritable man, born of a woman. A babe is the weakest thing in nature, yet it is endowed with all the potentialities that man can know. And, contrary to all received religious philosophy, woman's gentle nature and voice were brought under the mysteries of revelation, and her spirit was knit into incomprehensible converse with God to accomplish his holy purpose. Christ appealed to her strongest interests, enforced her noblest duties, and led her by enchanting promises into the great moral revolution, through the surpassing marvel of an incarnate God. By a select imagery, which none but God could invoke, immensity was contracted to a span, and eternity enclosed in an hour; divine power was enwrapped in the softest weakness, and deathless love was hidden in the new-born Babe of an honored woman. This made it meet that man should be intrusted with the spread of his kingdom. Six couples of plain, honest, receptive men were sent forth. They were of various habits and affinities of temperament, called from the lowest strata of society, where the strongest foundations of humanity are laid. He threw them in all the dependence of their lowly origin upon the sympathy and justice of their fellow-men for their daily bread, in return for their toils, and made their only protection the spoken truth.

They were Galilean fishermen too, taken from the only region of Palestine which had not been corrupted by the Rabbis, for these held Galilee accursed and let it alone. Hence they were unsophisticated, simple, and spiritual, but positive and firm, confronting the world in the strength of conviction. This commended them to their brother men. They were the select band of students to whom Jesus, had minutely expounded his doctrines, and now, their life-work was to expound them on the house-tops. The radical truths which had pervaded his own mind, were to be saving in

The New Testament Period

their results on others to whom they were sent. The perceptions, constitutional peculiarities, and personal dependence of these choice minds fitted them to influence others, and to reproduce in them what they were themselves. The same laws of condensation which clothe steam, frost and electricity with power, obtain more distinctly in mind. and so, he compressed the mightiest elements of spiritual effectiveness in these few, instead of broad-casting his truths at once before the incohesive multitude. Judged by human standards, they were unfit for their work. But, he saw more than human fitness in sending a handful of rustics from an inland lake, who were willing to die for the truth. Any learned man of that age, priest or layman, if chosen as an Apostle, would have mixed up current notions with the Gospel, in spite of himself, and would have thwarted its design, by corrupting its simplicity. Christ's sensitive nature was often brought into painful contact with the brusqueness of his Apostles, and their coarse janglings jarred upon his lofty fellowships; yet, he could trust their blunt and unfaltering fidelity, unmixed as it was with the vagaries of the times. "Firmness of honor was what he-wanted, and not polish of manners, in a small, compact band of eye-witnesses. As professionals, their testimony on any point of law, art, or tradition would have been trivial, but as provincials, it was full of plainness and mother-sense; qualities which were helps instead of drawbacks, in declaring matters of fact.

Yet, Jesus appears to have pushed aside all calculating precautions in their choice. There were amongst them three pairs of brothers, two relatives of his own family; and half of them were taken from one town. Men would call this a narrow selection, and an insidious designer would have taken another course. Conscious imposition would have made a great show of candor, by choosing men out of all districts in Palestine, representing all social ranks, that their witness might appear enlarged and impartial; but the sober honesty of the King in Zion rose infinitely above all such covert for fraud. Having trained their judgment, proved their consciences, and formed their character, he confidently sent them forth. In temperament, the Gospels generally group them in this order: Peter for his hardness, and Andrew his brother for shy and childlike simplicity; then James and John, the-sons of Zebedee, for their choleric disposition, being known as 'Sons of Thunder.' The second group is headed by Philip, for his earnest teachableness; Bartholomew, called Kathanael, for his utter want of guile; Thomas for his phlegmatic deliberation, and Matthew for his practical perception and gravity. The third class comprises James, the son of Alpheus, who was marked for his modesty; Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddeus, for his hearty boldness; Simon Zelotes for his fiery impulse, and Judas the traitor for his frozen heart. They soon showed their peculiarities toned up to their highest plane, for all their powers were consecrated to their work. Their virtues, weaknesses, and gifts fitted them to cope with human nature in each phase, for they represented every possible combination of temper in mankind. Their characters exhibit the bias and bent which mark off all the individualities and relations of life, while in purity, Jesus required them to be every thing that he was.

Happily, when the great Lawgiver laid down the vital principles of his government, he proceeded carefully to specify the terms on which men should be admitted into the new kingdom. Nicodemus was a teacher well versed in all that Judaism demanded, but Jesus showed him that each subject under the Messiah's reign must be thoroughly renovated in the inner man. No one could be eligible till spiritually born again, created anew after the image of Christ himself. As was his wont when he gave great energy to his words, he opens this momentous subject with the double asseveration: 'Verily, verily I say to thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.' The

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

venerable Hebrew understood him to speak of a second physical birth, but Jesus brought him back to the fundamental thought of a birth from above. Its source was to be the Spirit; its nature a transformation of the whole spiritual being. A person born of the flesh is flesh, and will follow all fleshly necessities; but one born of the Spirit is spirit, and is filled with the principles and dispositions which the Holy Spirit only can generate. When Jesus has pressed this truth home to the conviction of Nicodemus, he reiterates: 'Except a man be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.'

Many think that our Lord couches baptism under the term '*water*' here, and in proportion as they lay stress upon baptism, as an efficacious ordinance in salvation, they press this point. It is questionable, however, whether he refers to baptism at all, or simply to a concomitant element in natural birth, to show that he intended to enforce a thorough renewal, equivalent to a veritable 'new birth,' which must be of God. This would put 'water' to a purely figurative use as a material element, adding new force to his twofold insistence on an entirely spiritual renovation. He certainly does not speak of two births, one of water and one of the Spirit, but only of one: that of water and the Spirit in conjunction. Campbell says: 'Though our Lord in this account of regeneration, joins water and spirit together, he does not, in contrasting it with natural generation (John 3:6), mention the water at all, but opposes the Spirit to the flesh.' Nicodemus had full knowledge of John's baptism, for he was a member of the Sanhedrin that questioned John, and but for the special emphasis laid by Jesus upon the birth of the Spirit, he might have fallen into the idea, that without baptism no man can be eternally saved. But Christ's demand for a work of renewal by the Spirit, excludes the fatal error which would save Simon Magus because he was baptized, and reject the repentant thief on the cross because he was not. Rather does Whitby express our Lord's thought: 'Except a man be renewed in his mind, will, and affections by the operations of the Holy Spirit, and so becomes a new creature...he cannot see that is, enjoy, the blessings of the kingdom of God.' Or, as another expresses himself: 'He cannot discern either the signs of the Messiah, or the nature of his government.' [Dr. Geo. Campbell, Notes John 3:3-8]

Our Redeemer was equally explicit in pointing out the several steps which a renewed man must take for full enrollment and induction into his kingdom. As preachers, his Apostles were to be 'witnesses' to his death and resurrection, and they were to 'Preach repentance and remission of sins unto all nations.' 'Preach the Gospel to every creature.' 'Disciple all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you.' Here he makes preaching, repentance, faith and baptism, of perpetual obligation. By preaching repentance and the remission of sins, they were to attempt the 'discipling' or conversion of every creature. Then, those who believed on the Saviour were to be baptized into his kingdom, and after that, they were to be instructed in all that related to the Christian life.

The Apostles were not instructed to baptize the nations *en masse*, simply because each person was an integral part of the whole; for, as it has been said with great force: 'It is one thing to make disciples *in* all nations, and another thing to make *all nations* disciples.' They were to baptize those, and those only, who had the above-named qualifications for baptism. Countless millions in the 'nations' would remain unbelievers, blasphemers, atheists, idolaters and debauchees, after every attempt had been made to save them. These were to 'be condemned.' Neither were babes to be baptized simply because they were a part of the nations, till they could be 'discipled.' The word 'disciple' carries with it the idea of instruction, and therefore, here, of gaining converts to Christ, by

The New Testament Period

bringing them over to certain fixed principles and practices. Babes are no more capable of obedience in baptism, than they are of repentance and the forgiveness of sins, or of exercising faith on Christ for salvation. And, what is more and better, they need none of these, so long as they are free from voluntary and personal transgression; for Jesus has procured their salvation without these. When once they reach responsibility and become actual sinners, then they may avail themselves of all these, if they will become believers in Jesus. Mark calls the subjects of baptism 'believers,' and Matthew, 'disciples,' plainly meaning the same persons. Our Lord here excluded infant baptism of design, and the commission cannot be tortured into the support of this injurious practice; thus, we cannot wonder that no case of such baptism is mentioned in the New Testament. On the contrary, such conditions are everywhere imposed on those who are baptized, as to unavoidably exclude all who either cannot or do not voluntarily obey Christ's commands. So Jerome interprets this commission: 'They first teach all the nations; then, when they are taught they baptize them in water; for it cannot be that the body should receive the sacrament of baptism, unless the soul have before received the true faith.' And again he adds, 'The order here observed is excellent; he commands the Apostles, first to teach all nations; and after that to dip them with the sacrament of faith; and then to show them how they must behave themselves after their faith and baptism.'

Then, did Jesus make no provision for children in his kingdom of grace and glory? Yes; and the amplest that infinite love could make. He is the only great Teacher who ever pressed them to his bosom, as the subjects of saving care. The Jewish religion protected and accounted them precious. Yet, it subjected its males to a severe and bloody rite, for the purposes of national identity and privilege, without vouchsafing any special revelation as to their future state, when dying in infancy. Roman grossness regarded children as a misfortune, and freely practiced infanticide. The Carthaginians offered them in sacrifice to Saturn. Diodorus Siculus mentions the sacrifice of two hundred of their noblest babes at a time. [xx, 14] Molech, the ferocious god of Ammon, did not stand alone, for all the Syrian and Arab tribes had their lire-gods, before whom their little ones were presented as burnt-offerings. But Jesus looked upon these helpless ones as the most fragrant flowers of earth – he longed to silence the wail of their sufferings in these cruel rites, and to perfect praise out of the mouths of babes and sucklings.

To this end, he vouchsafed salvation for all children, before he tasted death on their behalf, enwrapping them in a free redemption, without conditions of any sort. They could bear no yoke, and he put none upon their necks. Parents coveted his love for their offspring and brought their little ones for his 'blessing.' In keeping with the spirit of those times, his disciples would drive them away; a fact, which in itself, shows that they knew nothing about infant baptism. Their parents did not bring them to be baptized, but that he would 'lay his hands upon them and bless them,' as Jacob had blessed the sons of Joseph. As Jacob 'blessed' his grandsons without baptizing them, so these infants were brought to Jesus unbaptized, and were taken away unbaptized, but not for that reason unblest. He rebuked his disciples, wishing them to understand that he came from heaven to save the babes as well as the parents. Then, he took them in his arms and 'prayed for them' and gave them his blessing, declaring as his words import, that 'to such belongs the kingdom of heaven,' simply through his benediction and love, without conditions of any sort such as try the loyalty of willful and responsible sinners. As their Elder Brother, bone of their bone and flesh of their flesh, he then and there, hung a bright lamp over an infant's head, pledging him salvation while in infancy, without repentance, faith, baptism, the Supper, or any other observance. With this display of Christ's love

Chapter 5 - The King in Zion – Laws of the New Kingdom

to little children, it is simply heathenish and horrible to suppose that deceased babes miss heaven, under any circumstances. More than half of our race, especially in lands where infanticide is practiced, die in infancy; and every true man will rejoice in the Redeemer's plan of saving these precious ones unconditionally. Millions of them pass into the presence of the Great Shepherd whose parents are pagans or infidels, and spurn baptism or never heard of its existence: and it borders on the fiendish to say, that the Christ-loving parent jeopardes the salvation of his redeemed babe, because he leaves his salvation to the atoning death and sacrificial love of Jesus, refusing to submit him to a rite which the adorable Lamb of God never imposed upon the unconscious one. In the pre-existence of our Lord, from the death of the first child of Adam's race to the moment of his own birth in Bethlehem, he had been with ransomed children in heaven. When on earth he missed their society, and, to fill their places he drew our little ones to him, for they tenderly reminded him of the Father's house which he had left; hence, in his words and acts he treated them as of 'the kingdom of heaven.' Bishop Taylor beautifully says: 'Why should he be an infant but that infants should receive the crown of their age, the purification of their stained natures, the sanctification of their persons, and the saving of their souls by their infant Lord and Elder Brother.' The kingdom belongs to them by Christ's purchase and gift, without those tests of obedience which try the fidelity of responsible offenders. They had not sinned 'after the similitude of Adam's transgression,' and he gave them his full blessing without conditions, despite their original taint. Then, he warns willful offenders that if they receive not the kingdom of God as little children, they shall not enter therein. While the phrase 'of such' includes others besides those 'brought' to him, it also includes all who are clothed with the child-like spirit. With the love of Christ thus displayed to children, it is simply horrible to suppose that a deceased babe misses of heaven because he was not christened on earth, and because here no one had promised that if he had lived he would have repented and believed for himself. Can anything so rob our atoning Lord of his glory, in part or in whole, as to suppose that this act affects the child's salvation in the slightest degree? As in Adam he died unconditionally, so in Christ is he unconditionally made alive.

These are some of the great principles and practices laid down by the infallible Lawgiver, for the establishment and government of his kingdom in the earth. God gives us in John the Baptist, the specimen man of holiness. Then comes the King in Zion, revealing the Father in his own person, and making Divine provisions for the regeneration of such men to the end of time. After Jesus had cast this Gospel hope athwart the destinies of our race, he took his seat as Mediator at the right hand of God. There, he has proved the acceptance of his sacrifice and the efficacy of his intercession by sending the Holy Spirit to fill his place on the earth. The Spirit now administers his kingdom under these laws, and gathers pure Churches out of all nations, of men created anew by his energies, in Christ Jesus, and kept in his name, unto life eternal.

The New Testament Period

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

The ablest chronologists vary the date of our Lord's ascension from A.D. 29 to 36; possibly the year 33 may be taken as the most satisfactory. Before his death, our Lord had founded his Church, by selecting the Twelve, the Seventy, and many other disciples, by teaching them his doctrines, authorizing them to preach and baptize, and by establishing the Supper. This organic body known as 'the kingdom of God' he also called, 'My Church' – his infant Church truly, but no less his Church, as he was the Christ as much when a Babe in the stable, and a Youth in the Temple, as when a Man on Calvary. His Church was to be endowed with special and plenary powers to increase its constituency, extend its influence and establish new assemblies. Hence, the Church at Jerusalem kept its divine organization perfect by a popular election to fill the place of Judas in the Apostolate, and then waited for the promised reign of the Holy Spirit, to fill the Redeemer's place in the Gospel Church. Ten days after Christ's enthronement at God's right hand, he sent the Spirit to administer the earthly affairs of his Church, to vindicate the mission which he had finished, to sustain his claims against all foes, and in every way to compensate for his own absence. The Spirit manifested himself on the second Jewish feast, Pentecost, which celebrated the ingathering of the wheat harvest and the giving of the Law.

The first work in the ministry of the Spirit, as in that of the Son, was to attest his own mission by miraculous evidences. These, in keeping with his entirely im-material character, were to be wrought, not alone on the human frame or on sea and firmament, but on mind ; on the mental constitution of man and his powers of speech. At once, therefore, he honored himself and 'glorified' Christ, by qualifying his Apostles to obey his commission in preaching the Gospel to all nations. The babble of tongues was the most stubborn obstruction to the universal spread of the Gospel and Jesus seemed to have made no provision for the removal of this enormous difficulty, but had committed its preaching to the most unlearned of men. They knew their mother tongue so imperfectly that their uncouth provincialisms were betrayed in the accents of their chief orator as a 'Galilean.' With their scanty education they could not have mastered the cosmopolitan grammar of the Pentecostal throng in a lifetime. If, then, a linguistic miracle were not wrought by the Spirit, their attempt to preach had been a failure, for there was no visible method by which they could reach the world with the new religion. At that moment there were men in Jerusalem from the remotest regions of the civilized world; who, if they could be made to understand the truth, could take it to the ends of the earth. The wide, geographical circuit including the homes of these men, swept from northeast to southeast, and far north, covering seventeen different languages and dialects. Parthia lay northwest of Persia, a powerful kingdom about six hundred miles long. The Medes had come from an easterly point of the compass, and were of a harsh and rude race.

The Elamites had come from an ancient Shemite district, east of Persia Proper. Those from Mesopotamia represented the region between the Tigris and the Euphrates, Idumea, the rugged old territory of Edom, follows the geographical order of Luke, but he breaks from his circle to mention Judea and his own home language. Cappadocia was a stretch of high table-land in the eastern part of Asia Minor. Continuing north, he comes to Pontus, northeast of the Black Sea. Asia, Roman or Proconsular, was washed by the Aegean Sea, on its western shore. Phrygia was in the center of Asia Minor, and Pamphylia, farther south, was touched on the north by the Mediterranean. Egypt was in the northeast of Africa; and the parts of Libya, lay on the African coast, west of Egypt. Luke then ascends from these southern lands, to Rome, in Italy; and last of all mentions the Arabians from the

The New Testament Period

East, and the islanders from Crete, now called Candia.

A very limited unity of tongue had been wrought by the conquests of Alexander, in the free use of the Greek, which had been adopted as the language of traffic and of the Roman court; while in the basin of the Mediterranean it was universally spoken. Jews born in Syria, Egypt, Asia Minor, or Cyrene, spoke it fluently and read their Scriptures therein; and in the great cities of the empire their synagogue services were conducted in the Greek. The 'Twelve' appear, however, to have known little of Greek, and were qualified to preach only in Palestine. In this condition of things, while the young Church waited for miraculous endowment from the Spirit, Peter began to preach Jesus and the resurrection to the mixed throng of Jews and proselytes who had come to the feast.

His sermon was full of vigor and simplicity, of bold, directness and reasoning, and, as if by instinct, his concise and clear mind flew from facts within his own knowledge to the Sacred Oracles; where he grasped firmly the prophecies of Joel and David, concerning the Messiah. Finding these in exact accord with his own personal knowledge, he centered his appeal upon the reason and conscience of his hearers, and charged the Jewish rulers with the judicial murder of Jesus, as 'lawless ones.' Some of them had joined the motley crowd who had clamored for his blood, and as he proved the guilt of the nation alarm seized them. They saw that chief rulers had duped them into one of the worst crimes in their annals, and the echoes of their execrating prayer in Pilate's palace were re-awakened in their ears, 'His blood be on us and on our children.' When they cried in sorrow, 'What must we do?' Peter offered them salvation through the blood of Jesus for the sin of shedding it, and urged them to leave the wicked hierarchy, and enter the new kingdom by faith and baptism.

While Peter was preaching, an infinite energy overwhelmed him and his brethren, subduing every faculty and power of their being. Their imagination, their understanding, their conscience, their memory, their will and affections were all submerged in the Holy Spirit, as a pearl is buried in the sea. Or as Ellicott expresses it, 'The baptism with the Holy Spirit would imply that the souls thus baptized would be plunged, as it were, in that creative and informing Spirit which was the source of life and holiness and wisdom.' [Matt. 3:11] And immediately there sat upon the heads of these elder sons of Zion a coronation flame, pointed like the human tongue, but divided and forked likewise, not only to indicate vitality and fluency, but also as a fitting emblem of the varied languages which they should speak, as if they were natives of every country, instead of fishermen from an inland lake. This flaming appearance was not fire, as loose interpretation says, but 'like as of fire.' Its appearance was attended by a loud sound, not of wind, but 'like a rushing mighty wind,' indicating that the influences of the Spirit kept pace with the holy storm, which was sweeping away every linguistic obstruction to the triumph of the Gospel. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance, and every man heard the Gospel in his mother-tongue. The preachers spoke grammatically, for had they expressed themselves improperly, their hearers would have suspected fraud. Instead of this, when they heard their own living languages spoken accurately by unlettered Galileans, they were amazed and demanded what it meant. Those from Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia spoke Greek in various idioms. The Parthians, Medes, Elamites, and Persians used it in provincial forms. The native Jew heard the local dialects of Palestine, which were all Aramaic, though they differed from each other, and the foreign pilgrims the languages of their several nationalities. Many of these languages held affinity to each other, as from a common parent, but others were marked by those great diversities which come of a varied origin. None could account for the phenomenon, and the vulgar refusing to believe in the reign of

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

the Spirit, charged it to the use of new wine; a charge which Peter easily repelled, because it was unlawful for a Jew to break his fast before 'the third hour of the day.' What adds to the interest of the miracle is, that those who could only use the Galilean dialect before Pentecost, as Peter, John, James, and Jude, afterward wrote books of the New Testament in terse and even lucid Greek, as if a fork of the fire-like tongue followed every stroke of their pen.

It is worthy of note that as Jesus entered his office by baptism in water, so the Spirit commenced his administration by baptizing Christ's Apostles into himself. On the head of the inaugurated Lord he descended like a dove to indicate meekness and purity; but he sat as fire upon the heads of the Apostles. Jesus had foretold their intense sufferings by the tropic use of the word baptize, 'Ye shall undergo the baptism that I must undergo,' when he was plunged into deep sorrow. And now, in like manner he fills them with power for their ministry, as he had said, 'Ye shall be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many days hence;' in both cases using the rhetorical figure, according to the solid structure of language, by stating the literal truth in the trope. As Jesus was overwhelmed when he was 'filled with sorrow,' so were his Apostles overwhelmed when they were 'filled with the Spirit.' Every attribute of their nature sank into the Spirit, till his billows passed over them, as Jesus sank when the dark waters of sorrow passed over his soul. They were baptized in the Spirit. Thus the Holy Spirit attested his mission to them, and proved theirs to be from heaven, accrediting their Gospel to the nations. That day, in the midst of the stir, enthusiasm, and triumph of the vindicated fishermen, they so handled the keys of the kingdom, that three thousand men were added to the earlier believers, and the first abundant harvest was reaped in the great Jewish field.

These three thousand were immersed that day, as converts to the faith of Christ. Because the Sacred Record does not give the exact locality where this took place in Jerusalem, nor the number of administrators, some affect to doubt that immersion was administered. With characteristic candor Dean Plumptre says (Acts 2:41): 'The largeness of the number has been urged as rendering it probable that the baptism was by affusion, not immersion. On the other [hand] (1) immersion had clearly been practiced by John, and was involved in the original meaning of the word, and it is not likely that the rite should have been curtailed of its full proportions at the very outset; (2) the symbolic meaning of the act required immersion in order that it might be clearly manifested, and Rom. 4:4, and 1 Pet. 3:21, seem almost of necessity to imply the more complete mode. The pools of Bethesda and Siloam (see John 5:7;9:7), or the so-called Fountain of the Virgin, near the temple enclosure, or the bathing places within the Tower of Anthony (Jos., 'Wars,' v. 5, paragraph 8), may well have helped to make the process easy.'

Dr. Dollinger thinks that the baptisms did not take place the same day, but says that it was an 'Immersion of the whole person; which is the only meaning of the New Testament word, a mere pouring or sprinkling was never thought of.' All historians, in treating of Jerusalem, set forth the number and value of its public baths, and its immense storage of water for public use. In all its calamities by famine and siege, we have no account that it suffered for want of water. Like other cities of antiquity its natural water springs had much to do with the selection of its location. These abounded on the spot and in its vicinity, so that its water-wealth was great when gathered into wells, pools, and reservoirs. As the Jewish capital, it was visited yearly by hundreds of thousands of pilgrims, at the three feasts, so that its religious washings, purifications and ablutions rendered a large supply indispensable, for religious as well as domestic purposes. Josephus tells us that at the Passover alone two hundred head of beasts were sacrificed. All these must be watered and washed

The New Testament Period

as sacrificial victims. He also says, that the sect of the Essenes was numerous there, and that they immersed themselves daily. The Pools of Jerusalem, and those south of Bethlehem, which supplied the city, were numerous, large, and adapted to immersion, all being accessible for that use. The following were their names and dimensions:

Pool of Bethesda, north of the Temple – 360' in length, 130' in breadth, 75' in depth.

Pool of Hezekiah, north of Mt. Zion – 210' in length, 144' in breadth, 3-4' in depth.

Pool of Siloam, SE of Jerusalem – 56' in length, 18' in breadth, 19' in depth.

Upper Gihon, NW of Jerusalem – 316' in length, 200' in breadth, 18' in depth.

Lower Gihon, W. of Jerusalem – 592' in length, 245-275' in breadth, 35-42' in depth.

Solomon's Pools - Lower Pool – 582' in length, 148-207' in breadth, 50' in depth at the east end.

Solomon's Pools - Middle Pool – 423' in length, 160-250' in breadth, 39' in depth at the east end.

Solomon's Pools - Upper Pool – 380' in length, 229-236' in breadth, 25' in depth at the east end.

Some of these were excavated out of the earth or limestone rock, and supplied by hidden springs; to others water was conveyed by hewn subterranean passages, waters being brought from the mountains. Hezekiah built a conduit (2 Kings 20:20), and Solomon built the three enormous pools, five and a half miles from Jerusalem, which brought their waters to the city by an aqueduct, their springs near Bethlehem being enlarged and arched over. The Lower Gihon was formed by two dams (2 Chron. 32:30), and was intact even in the eleventh century. It was used by the Crusaders, and their Norman chronicler calls it a 'lake,' where 'the horses of the city are watered.' Besides these, the brook Nachal-Kidron held a different relation to the Holy City in ancient times to what it holds now. Then, it was a natural water-course (2 Chron. 32:3,4), and Hezekiah summoned the forces of Israel to seal its fountains, B.C. 713, as a defensive war measure. Sennacherib was besieging Jerusalem, and his army could not subsist without water. 'So they stopped all the fountains and the brook that ran through the midst of the land, saying: Why should the King of Assyria come and find much water?' This upper spring-head, which burst out in the wady north of the city, being closed, rendered the vicinity desolate and embarrassed the besiegers. The wonderful fertility which marked those suburbs in after times, indicates that these fountains were re-opened. Dr. Bonar (*Land of Promise*, p. 169) observes, that this running stream carried off the refuse of the city. The Kidron rises about half a mile from the northwest corner of the city, and its present bed winds round its north and east sides, half inclosing it, and receives the brook Gihon at the north east corner, after which it passes off by a precipitous ravine to the Dead Sea.

Much of the year it is entirely dry, a fact which Dr. Olin and Dean Stanley attribute to the entire absence of wooded lands and forests, but in the rainy season it still swells to a torrent of great impetuosity. This makes the well-known bridge necessary, for at those times the stream cannot be forded; which bridge is seventeen feet above the channel. Modern research renders it probable that the Kidron now flows beneath the ground, and Dr. Barclay thought that he had discovered its course by the noise of hidden running waters. Lieutenant Warren believes that he has discovered a flight of steps, which anciently connected with this current. Be this as it may, all modern exploration justifies Wilson, Tristram, Stanley, and others in the opinion, that Kidron was a large and more constant stream in the days of our Lord than now. Indeed, the officers of the Palestine Exploration

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

Fund say: 'The enormous mass of rubbish now lying in the' valley has displaced the old bed of the stream, shifting it ninety feet to the east, and lifting it forty feet higher than its former position.' [Our Work in Palestine, p. 148] These facts render it highly probable that the Kidron was available for the purposes of immersion in Apostolic times. Thompson says: 'And other city in this part of the world' had such profuse supplies of water. 'Jerusalem was so abundantly supplied with water, that no inconvenience from this source was experienced, even during the many and long sieges which the city sustained.' [Land and Book, pp. 654, 658] It is simply absurd to pretend that while a whole nation could find water enough to keep the Jewish feasts three times a year, a little band of three thousand converts could find no water for an act of obedience in following the example and command of Jesus but once in all the ages.

Herod had put all the water-works of Jerusalem in repair, and in our Lord's time they were in full use. The Pools were open to the free use of the public, some of them for public bathing purposes, as is evident from John 5:2-9 ;9:7; Christ's disciples having as free access, to them as others. The Jewish priests used to wash the sacrificial animals in Bethesda, and hence it was commonly known as the 'Sheep-pool.' Dr. Carpenter doubts whether the priests themselves washed them there, but says that they were washed there before being delivered for sacrifice. [Introduction to Geography of New Testament, p. 33] It covered more than an acre of ground, and 30,000 people could bathe in it at once. John speaks of a 'multitude' waiting to bathe there, none questioning their right.

The Lower Gihon was alike ample and accessible for the same purpose. Thompson speaks also of the Pool of Hezekiah as 'An immense reservoir, capable of holding water sufficient for half of the city. My guide called it Burket Hamman and said that the water was used chiefly for baths.' [Land and Book, p. 654, 658] The descent of steps and the shelving bottom of most of these Pools, adapted them for easy descent into the water at any desired depth. Antoninus, the martyr, who lived in the sixth century, says, that the people constantly bathed in Siloam, as we have seen that they did in Bethesda. Home, in his 'Introduction,' says: 'It was one of the laws of the Hebrews, that the bath should be used. Lev. 14:8, 9. We may, therefore, consider it as probable that public baths, soon after the enactment of this law, were erected in Palestine, of a construction similar to that of those which are so frequently seen at the present day in the East.' These are very numerous, especially in India. Butler, in his *Land of the Veda* (pp. 27, 28), gives a full account of the ablutions of the devotee in these pools, and tells us that after his ceremonies and prayers, 'He plunges *thrice* into the water, each time repeating the prescribed expiatory texts.' There were many of them, also at Rome, wonderful structures. Agrippa built about a hundred and sixty of them at Borne, and Oaracalla supplied marble seats in one bath for sixteen hundred persons, for eighteen hundred could bathe at one time. Diocletian kept 140,000 men for years in building his baths for the public. [Adam's *Rom. Antiq.*; Encyclopedias, Art. Baths] The constant influx of strangers at Jerusalem rendered similar arrangements necessary, even to ordinary health and cleanliness. Dean Stanley thus disposes of the question: 'In that age the scene of the transaction was either some deep way-side spring or well, as for the Ethiopian; or some rushing river, as the Jordan, or some vast reservoir, as at Jericho or Jerusalem; whither, as in the Baths of Caracalla at Rome, the whole population resorted for swimming or washing.'

As to the time and number of administrators, the case is quite as clear. The 'Twelve,' and the 'Seventy,' made eighty-two administrators of Christ's own selection, who were ready to administer the holy rite, out of the one hundred and twenty disciples present. In baptizing, two minutes for each

The New Testament Period

candidate allows the greatest deliberation in the immersion, and this slowness at Pentecost would have allowed the baptism of three thousand with great ease. In the triumphs of Christianity, this number of baptisms in a day is by no means exceptional. In Ireland, Patrick immersed seven kings and 11,000 of their subjects in a day, according to Farrell's *Life* of him; Austin immersed 10,000 in the Swale, April 20, A.D. 598; Remigius immersed Clovis I and 3,000 of his warriors in a day; and at Velumpilly, in the Madras Presidency, in July, A.D. 1878, 2,222 persons were immersed on the faith in Christ, in about six hours, the ordinance being administered with great solemnity by six administrators.

Luke tells us, that after the 3,000 had been added to the original body of believers they 'remained steadfast in the Apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and in prayers.' Here he defines every true element in the Apostolic Church, or that can be necessary to any Gospel Church to the end of time. Luke's definition is the best that has ever been given, and in every particular. They were 'added' when they had given proof of Repentance and Trust in Christ; then they received Baptism, followed by Fellowship, the Lord's Supper, and Public Worship. In treating of the Constitution of a Gospel Church, it will be necessary to speak of the election of deacons at Jerusalem and of other things.

Philip and Stephen, two of the 'Seven' chosen to serve the Church at Jerusalem, now loom up as men of great note and influence; Stephen, especially, being marked by great endowments, both natural and spiritual. At this time, the synagogue was found every where as a local institution, and was a greater educator of the Jews than the Temple itself; as the Scriptures were read there on the Sabbath and several other days of the week, expositions were given also, and free disputation had, – practices which kept the public mind awake in search of religious knowledge. The Rabbins mention the extravagant number of 480 synagogues in the holy city. To these, the inhabitants constantly resorted, and the foreign Jews had established their own there, for the use of their countrymen. Classed with the Asiatic synagogues we find the strangers from Cilicia, to which body it is most likely that Saul of Tarsus was attached. Acts 6:9. The natural supposition is, that Stephen and Saul first met there in warm dispute, for Stephen defended the Gospel against the frequenters of these synagogues, and being unable to answer him, false witnesses charged him with defaming the Temple and the law. On this plea he was dragged before the Sanhedrin, where he delivered his matchless defense, equaled only in grasp, eloquence, and logic by the after addresses of the young Cilician himself. But its effect was to enrage the council and the people; and against all forms of law he was dragged out of the city and stoned. While suffering without the gate he offered the very prayer presented by Jesus with his last breath: 'Lord, lay not this sin to their charge;' and there stood by a young man named Saul, who was consenting to His death. Heaven only knows the quiverings which this plea stirred in that young breast, quiverings which were never quieted till Jesus gave him rest. Two quenchless flames burst forth at that moment, a great persecution which scattered the Church at Jerusalem, and an intense missionary enthusiasm. 'Stubborn prejudice against the Gentiles had restrained the Jewish Christians from taking the Gospel to the ends of the earth, until Stephen saw Jesus standing at the right hand of God, his first revelation since he entered the heavens years ago, and the ecstatic vision inspired his people to obedience. Jesus looked down and saw Stephen suffering where he had suffered, for the same soil was drinking up the blood of his servant, and when he heard the cry: 'Lord Jesus, receive my spirit,' Jesus remembered the softness of his Father's bosom when he sent forth the same plea. Then he arose from his throne, for as the Head he felt

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

Stephen's pain, and eagerly sheltered him on his breast, safe from the stony shower. The martyr's pale cheek glowed with life and love, when his Master's arms welcomed the first Baptist Deacon safely across the Vale of Death. This is the only time that we read of Jesus 'standing' at the right hand of God, touched in immortal friendship, by the first horrors of martyrdom. But as Jesus welcomed Stephen's spirit through the heavenly gate, his eye fell upon the young Tarsian standing by the garments of his murderers, and from that hour Saul was made, as he expressed it himself, the 'slave of Jesus Christ.' On the soil which was dyed purple with the blood of the murdered officer of Christ's Church, there sprang up the first blade in the harvest of Christian missions. Saul became furious for a time, but Stephen's prayer had lodged in his bloodthirsty soul like a barbed arrow, and electing love in heaven had ordained him the Apostle to the Gentiles. Four-and-twenty years afterward, when a similar mob sought to kill him in this same Jerusalem, the old scene rose before him in all its freshness, and extorted from him the touching cry: 'When the blood of thy witness, Stephen, was shed, I myself was standing by, and consenting and keeping the garments of those who slew him.' [Acts 22:20]

The picture which Luke draws of the infuriated Saul is frightful: 'He made havoc of the Church, and breathed out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples.' Maddened first by the barbs in his heart, and more enraged with the blood which he had already tasted, his hot breath became slaughter, like that of the panting tiger. And yet, Stephen's triumphant fortitude and faith had recalled him to his better self. But this neither staggered nor softened his obstinate hatred of the Nazarene. He says that he was 'so exceeding mad' that he gave 'his voice,' or vote, against the saints and persecuted them unto death. Misgiving made his brutality more ferocious at the first, but the horrors of remorse came afterward. It were impossible for a man of his sensitive nature to remain unmoved by the manly reasonings and sublime love of young Stephen. They not only haunted him as a saintly specter, but so long as he resented them they goaded him. So long as he writhed in a hot frenzy, the blood from Stephen's temples only flecked the foam of his own mouth, so that he sought relief in new outrages. He hunted the harmless flock of Christ from city to city, staining his sword with their innocent blood. In reality, however, he had long been at school under a combination of such teachers as infinite wisdom only could command. In preparing for the new brotherhood, he was to be qualified for a work many-sided and greater than had yet fallen to the lot of any man, and it called for an education which none other had received. Why did Jesus need a thirteenth Apostle? or why had he not chosen that number at the first? The new emergency called for a new man. The Twelve had been faithful to the Jews, but they had neglected the Gentiles, so that when the new crisis arose there was no missionary ready to enter the great centers of Greek and Roman life for Christ.

Little is known of Saul's parents, except that they were Jews, of the tribe of Benjamin and of the Pharisaic sect. His father, however, was a Roman citizen, as his son was 'free-born,' a fact giving higher rank to the family than the Jews generally held. They evinced some decision in naming their son after the heroic king of their own tribe, whose pride and suicidal death had dishonored his fame for ages. Saul was born at Tarsus, the capital of Cilicia, in Asia Minor, probably about seven years after the birth of Christ. This was no mean city in population, influence, or history. It was founded, B.C. 820; was captured by the younger Cyrus, 401; again by Alexander the Great, 333, and stood loyal to Caesar against Pompey, B.C. 47. Its schools abounded in number and superiority, so that it was a seat of great learning. In rhetoric, philosophy, philology and science, it disputed pre-

The New Testament Period

eminence with Alexandria and Athens, and many of its scholars were famous. It was, also, a free city, situated on the navigable river Cydnus, which emptied into the Mediterranean, then the central sea of the world. It had large commercial dealings with Europe, especially Italy, which gave it considerable political strength. The forests of Tarsus made it a great timber market, and it manufactured large quantities of coarse, black hair-cloth, clipped from the countless goats of the forests. This was woven for the covering of tents and other rough uses. Saul was a maker of this fabric, a trade which called for little skill, and gave but a scant reward, leaving him free to think of the wandering races whom his cloth would cover. But Tarsus was a thoroughly pagan city, as bad, morally, as it well could be. Its population was chiefly of the Greek and Aramaic races, and its language a dialect of Phoenicia. In this seething mass of superstition, dishonesty and immorality, Saul spent his childhood and early youth, when his senses were the most quick, and his soul the most impressible; and his after life reveals the deep impression which his observations left upon him. So powerfully were his convictions moulded touching the abominations of a city given to idolatry, that the drift of his feeling differed from that of his compeers of Galilee. His native city showed him next to nothing of the landscape and the imagery of nature, but as he elbowed his way through throngs in its narrow streets, he studied pagan man as man. This early study ran in the lines of passion, law, self-discipline and self-degradation, as he saw them before his eyes. This gave him a widely different knowledge of the masses of humanity from that of the Twelve, and made him a profounder student of pagan philosophy and its practical results, than he could have been had he spent his life in studying its theory, though versed in its minutest axioms. It even affected his methods of speech, for as a rule, his metaphors and symbols were borrowed from metropolitan life; – architecture, military garrisons, movements of troops in fortified cities, and the games which drew excited crowds from their gates.

This was the school for the examination of idolatry, and in the lives of the gods, and their devotees. Saul read these lessons there. His knowledge of the tongue, customs, manners, spirit and practices of the pagans, qualified him to approach and understand the enormous majority of our race, as few Jews then living understood them. It is thought that he never mastered the Greek elementally, as his style is not after the classic models, his rhetoric being defective and his figures harsh and mixed. Possibly, any tutor of Tarsus would have ridiculed his Syriac peculiarities and Hebraisms, and Aristotle might have scouted his logic. But was it needful for an Apostle to be a finished Grecian in order to beard godless Greek wickedness? He had to handle its moral side rather than its metaphysics and mysteries. He must be able to unsheath the sword of the Spirit, and strike home in easy and natural strokes, without first mastering foreign tactics. His first necessity was a perfect freedom from prejudice against the Gentiles, and a tender love for them, with ability to address them fluently and forcefully. Perhaps it was impossible for a native Palestinian to overcome entirely the national antipathy against the Gentiles which imbued his whole people. Saving sympathy with the Gentile masses must come by feeling the power of their mental acuteness, as well as the foulness of their depravity. The Twelve knew little of this by actual contact, and Saul did not come to understand it in a day. He was allied to the heathen by first breathing life in their midst, by loving them as natives of his mother-land, and by tenderness for them as his own countrymen. Having met them first in the gates of death, he could throw open to them the gates of life, with a free and firm hand. Personal knowledge of the immunities and realities of Roman citizenship, of the charms of Greek intellect audits religious blight; and at the same time, an intimacy with the deepest tone of

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

Hebrew reverence and legalism were indispensable in an Apostle to the Gentiles. Natural affection under the compelling love of God, must bind him to the Roman, Greek and Jew, without a perpetual fight with his prejudices, in order to save them all. These met in Saul, as in no other man of whom we have knowledge. Even the feet of, Jesus had never trodden Greek soil, nor was he a Roman citizen, but the vassal of a captured province, under Roman law, or he could not have been the Man of Calvary.

Saul also needed a thorough Hebrew training, which should subject all his other knowledge to its religious convictions. For this purpose he went to Jerusalem, possibly when about thirteen years of age, to be educated by Gamaliel, the great Hebrew preceptor. Jewish custom kept him at home until he was five years old, where as a child-student he was taught only the Scriptures as a 'Son of the law,' until he was sent to school at six. At ten, he took up the study of the oral law, and if he was to be a Rabbi, he entered the school of some great master at thirteen, as a 'Son of the Commandment,' that is, a student of the traditions of the fathers. While Jesus, therefore, under less than a score of years was sweating at the carpenter's bench, without the privilege of 'letters;' Saul, a youth of thirteen, was in hard training for his service in a school of the highest order, and less than seventy-five English miles from him. Day by day the Carpenter bent to his work, and pensively read his sacrificial end in the very fiber of the wood which his edge-tools laid bare; but the young tent-cloth maker was in the lecture-room at Jerusalem, poring over the hero-Messiah in the Hebrew Parchments, certain that he was near at hand, not to build thrones as a mechanic, but to sit upon them as a monarch.

The Jews had but seven great educators, to whom they gave the title of Rabban. Saul's tutor was of the most liberal order, in broad contrast with Shammai, of the hard and harsh school. No Rabbi then living was so well qualified to form Saul's character; for Gamaliel was humane, tolerant, high-minded, and for a Pharisee broad, so large that he permitted the use of pagan literature to his pupils. In this great school all Hebrew scholarship was interwoven into Saul's life. His manhood tells us, that as a boy he was impetuous and unselfish, with a strong will, a vigorous intellect, and of deep emotion. From these would spring felicity of manners, lofty aspirations, rigid simplicity of habit and firmness of opinion; the very qualities which make the best and worst of men, according to the motives which control them. He was devoted to pure ethics and religious ideals, but the Rabbinical process of interpretation surfeited his spirit with an ultra scrupulosity for the letter of Scripture, in fact, made him a thorough Talmudist. No man could walk easily in the web which those teachings spread for his feet. They split up the commands and prohibitions of Moses into 613 separate enactments; putting casuistry for conscience, and a petty, hair-splitting piety for honest obedience to God. They made men do more than God required, by turning a short corner on the enactment, although they cheated it by failing to do half of what it demanded. In all acts of microscopic piety the sieve so fine that the tiniest gnat on the wing was caught and held firmly; but in graver matters, like mercy, justice and truth, its meshes passed, a camel without touching hump or hoof. Tables, plates, pots, cups and ceremonial vessels of all sorts, were rinsed, scoured and scrubbed to thinness. When a Sadducee saw a Pharisee in a heavy sweat while rubbing the golden lamp-stand in the Temple, he solemnly suggested that the sun might bear a scouring now and then. When a few widows' houses were to be devoured, pious greed filled its maw with serene composure; but if an unfortunate hen laid, an egg on the Sabbath, that raised the serious gastronomic question whether or not it could be eaten, on which, point Hillel and Shammai came to heavy Pickwickian blows.

The New Testament Period

Whether Partlet had broken the Sabbath was a dispute which could not so easily be settled; but the demand that a man let his light shine was easily met; for a serio-comic Pharisee would at once don his robes, carefully arrange its fringes and tassels' and make a long prayer at the street-corner, and so one street was all ablaze with piety at any rate, if the rest of the city were left in midnight gloom. It was needful that Saul should be thoroughly versed in all the trifling questions of this sort, that he might perfectly understand the Jewish piety of his day, and how to deal with its empty claims; his summary disposal of them afterward indicates his early training therein, and his power in enforcing their opposites. Hard study of this traditional literature exposed to him its whole inner life and legal hardness. Free from the sensual, for a time he was stubbornly wedded to a narrow formalism, which made him a daring zealot for every jot of Pharisaic precision, even to intolerance. After he left the school of Gamaliel, we first meet him, a 'young man' possibly of thirty, standing relentlessly over the mangled body of Stephen. His keen, far-reaching eye saw that unless the Nazarene heresy were crushed at once, it must be fatal to the ancient faith, and his zeal to crush it kept pace with his quick intellectual caliber. He determined to lead in this crusade, a fanatic as to the tradition of his fathers, and obtained letters of authority from Theophilus, the High-Priest, and chief of the Sanhedrin; search-warrants legalizing his frosty exasperation to leave no home safe against his sharp inquisition. Hearing that Christ's disciples had gathered a flock in Damascus, he caught new fire and flew to their slaughter. That city was 140 miles north-east of Jerusalem, a five-or-six-days' journey, but he determined to drag men and women that weary distance to punish them. Had his power equaled his hate, his hot breath had flashed like lightning to slay every Christian in the great Syrian city. But to reach this cage of unclean birds, he must speed his way across the Jordan, over the hills of Bashan, through the burning lands of Ituraea, and past the brow of Hermon. He seems never to have met Jesus in his Jerusalem ministry, yet he had often trodden in his foot-prints, in walking its streets, climbing the Temple hill, or passing its gates.

Now he swept the same road which Jesus had taken when he came from Nazareth, passing Bethel to Jericho, and on to Bethabara, where John baptized. Thence he forced his way up to blue Galilee, where Jesus trod the wave, opened the eyes of the blind, and unstopped deaf ears, as adder-like as Saul's.

Onward he pressed, league after league, over ground which the sandals of our Lord had made holy. On his right Gilead loomed up in majesty, on his left Tabor and Hermon, but he saw no glory of Transfiguration. He saw not a foot-mark of the Lamb of God in the way, and heard no lingering echoes of his voice amongst the cedars and spurs of Lebanon. As he crossed the limped Pharpar and reached those plains of Paradise watered by many fountains and the golden Abana, a world of beauty and bloom thirty miles long, olive-yards and vineyards, rich fields and fig-orchards stretched before him. Every hue of Syrian sunshine was reflected from their glossy foliage and fruit. The grape hung in festoons, the apricot bent the tree, the peach and pomegranate, the prune and walnut adorned every rod. They rose and fell in turn over plain and declivity, but neither to tempt His appetite nor to quench his thirst. He heard nothing but the mutterings of death in the leaves of the trees, and thirsted only for a stronger cup, the wine of which was red, drawn from the veins of saints, till its fumes should make him drunk and reel. And what was it to him that the distant domes and towers spoke of the ancient city and its founder, the grandson of Shem; what that it was a way-mark to Abraham on the road to Canaan, 1,900 years back; or that Elisha broke into tears before its walls for the woes brought upon Israel by Hazael, in slaying men and women in cold blood there, as Saul

Chapter 6 - Pentecost and Saul

himself would do t What cared he that David had captured Damascus for Judea 1,000 years ago? He was not seeking the, relics of antiquity, but the divine pulse that had just begun to beat in the new-born Syrian Church. The glaring sky quivered with molten heat; but his fiery spirit made it hotter. It was high-noon, just when his victims were at midday prayers, imploring mercy on their enemies; and the mad zealot had gone far enough. A word from Christ threw the gate of heaven open, and the sun in the firmament turned pale. The Friend of Stephen had patiently watched the splendid fanatic, and stepped from his throne to forbid his trampling one saint under foot in that Gentile city. Jerusalem had stained its hoary old ashes with the blood of the Man of Sorrows and his servant Stephen, and not one drop should stain the streets of Damascus that day, to rob the Holy City of its gory notoriety.

When the shower of stones fell upon Stephen, Jesus felt the pangs, and now the voice of double tenderness demanded: 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?' Stephen's Saviour told Saul that ho was 'apprehended,' made a prisoner of love, and that it was the part of an infuriated ox to resist and drive the goads deeper into his own flesh. Thus fettered and stricken blind, Saul fell to the ground, praying: 'Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?' For the first time the guilt of his old life burst upon him, and he saw himself the 'chief of sinners.' Blind to outside life, he looked within now, where an unseen world burst upon his consciousness. When the Risen One .stood before him in the path of vision, and called himself 'Jesus,' a holy fear crept over his flesh and spirit, a touch of new life changed the universe to him. He asked not what his companions in crime would say, – whether the authorities at Jerusalem would wreak their vengeance upon him for his breach of faith as an apostate, – but only what the hated Nazarene wished him to do! In a moment, his violence is softened into inquiry, his fanaticism into submission, his tyranny into manliness. In the twinkling of an eye he becomes a prodigy of saving grace; a brother of all mankind emerges from the ringleader of persecutors, a thirteenth Apostle comes to the birth: 'Born out of due time.'

The New Testament Period

Chapter 7 - Saul and Gentile Missions

Saul's cavalcade is dispersed and he is led stricken and helpless, that his head may weep in a dark place while his eye are sealed. Did ever man question his crest-fallen soul like this man, in the home of Ananias. The talk that he hears is all new, and the strange hymns which float under its roof awaken hidden thoughts in the secret chambers of his spirit. The disciples, who waited for his prisons and chains, hear that he is the blind subject of Christian hospitality. Yesterday he fell before the gate a ruined sinner, but rose a consecrated saint – fell a butcher of the saints, rose a champion Apostle. Yesterday morning he was a vulture sailing over the prey on which he gloated; today, he is a gentle dove covered with silver, and feathers of yellow gold. Outside the gate, he was a prowling wolf; in the home of Ananias, a trembling lamb; for the slayer of women came out of the baptismery with his heart breaking for all human woe.

After three days, news ran through the city that he was at the synagogue. Why was he there? Let us see. It is thronged and crowds gather at its doors. Floods of eloquent truth flow from a strange voice, and sound out a strange name in the Name of the holy oratory of the synagogue. This reasoning is not after the dialectics of Gamaliel, it is like Stephen's, as clear as warm, as conclusive. The old apology of that martyr haunts him; Saul is wielding Stephen's old logic with mighty power. He dares to say that the crucified is the Son of God! Perhaps his mind's eye sees the face of the martyr shining like the face of an angel in the heaven of heavens. Or does the ghost of the murdered man make his penitence eloquent? No matter. The synagogue rocks with excitement. In the first stupor of surprise, the Jews ask: 'Is not this he who destroyed the Galileans? This is not the fierce man of Tarsus. He could not frame such thoughts, would not talk so wildly.' Yet, he grows warmer, bolder, broader. He cites the Sacred Rolls from Genesis to Malachi to prove that Jesus is the Christ. Blank astonishment seizes the Jews; they gather in knots to consult, and are half-paralyzed. Their surprise gives place to indignation. Why do they not drag him forth, cast him out, put him to death? But he moves on and on like a torrent, clearer and stronger than ever; until he comes to tell of his own rescue from perdition. As he gives his story, new and holy fire makes him tremble from head to foot in the realities of one who is saved, when he cries to the surging crowd: 'I was a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and overbearing; but I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them who shall hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.'

The account which he writes of his early Christian life, in his Epistle to the Galatians, shows that he now spent three years in Arabia; which, by Jewish reckoning, might mean one whole year with a part of two others. A veil is thrown over this Arabian visit. Whether the name designates the peninsula of Sinai, bounded by Egypt and the upper part of the Red Sea, or the desert of this, or the desert of Petraea or all these together, is not known. Most likely the word 'Arabia' has a somewhat local meaning, which covers Sinai and the regions adjacent. Arabian Jews had heard the Gospel from Peter, at Pentecost, and, possibly, having been converted, had returned to their own country. The original inhabitants of these wild districts were descendants of Ishmael, whose religion degenerated into a sort of fetich idolatry, and amongst these Arabs, Saul was to outgrow his cold bigotry and narrow traditions into a broad messenger of grace to all orders, of Gentiles. He tells us, that in going there he neither consulted his own inclinations nor the wishes of others, but cheerfully, took the burden laid upon him by Christ. This was the great crisis of his life, and he must be severed from all controlling human influence until he passed it safely. At the birthplace of the Old Covenant, which burned with fire, he must study the ministry of death, that he might better preach

The New Testament Period

the life of the New Covenant. Up to this point in his history, his great strength lay in the fact that he owned himself without reserve for in his intense hate his imperious will had been the regnant center of his being. In Arabia, he must put himself entirely-under the will of another. As a strong man, he held the new truth without wavering, free from those petty suspicions which torment the weak. For him to take liberties with the truth would be disloyalty, but thorough exploration of all its parts would give its whole empire a unity which must correct his distortions of the moral law, and tutor him for the invincible preaching of the Gospel. In this way he could perfect his character, and prepare for action on a large scale being first a debtor to the Jew and the Greek, the polished and the barbarian. But in order to repay the whole race, he must go first to Arabia.

Had he gone back to Jerusalem to consult with the elder Apostles, their prejudices against taking the Gospel to the Gentiles might have chilled him, or it might appear that he had received authority from them. But Jesus kept him apart by sending him to those solitary granite mountains where Moses, the head of the law, and Elijah, the head of the prophets, were educated for their work, and where isolation brought him under the absolute dictation of his Lord. For three years Christ had instructed the Twelve personally, and Saul, the new Apostle, must go for the same length of time, to these crags, cliffs and wastes, for schooling around the frowning mount, under Christ's exclusive teaching. He had now rejected his former interpretation of Moses, and so at Sinai he must learn anew what the Lawgiver meant, as quoted by Stephen: 'A Prophet will God raise up to you, him shall ye hear.' He could better learn this on the holy ground which had quaked in blackness and tempest. Saul should study the Gospel where the Law was given, and obtain full knowledge of the blood of sprinkling where God had ordained that there can be no remission of sin without bloodshedding. When calmed, instructed, and strengthened under the shade of Sinai, he would be ready to ascend Calvary. The trumpet resounding around the legal mount, should teach him how to press another trumpet to his lips and proclaim the voice of other words, with a self-conscious joy which should exult in the cry: 'Thanks be to God who makes us to triumph in every place.'

At the end of his Arabian life he returned to Damascus, where he was assailed by his foes, who were maddened against him; and he fled for safety to Jerusalem. His preaching forced the Jews to re-examine their own faith, and they plotted his assassination at the opening of his Apostolic career. His Christian brethren kept him secret until night, and when the streets and walls of the city were under close guard, they let him down in a net, or rope-basket, from a window in the wall, opening into a house inside the city. Stealing from the eyes of men whom he fain would bless, for the first time the world's Apostle fled for his life. When lowered into the outer darkness, as into a well, he grasped the rope, but he could hear his own heart beat; and what thoughts trooped through his soul at that sad moment! He came to that city to lash by the wrists Christ's disciples in gangs, and now fled to a rope for his own deliverance, that he might preach that Christ to all. Then, he would cage all the saints in prison, to kill them; but now, how gladly he cramps himself into a basket to save his own life that he may make more disciples. Isaiah's figure presents him to us as 'a wild bull caught in a net' at last; and, possibly, the hands that drop him to the ground are those which he intended to enchain. He groped his way through the dark, with only a star here and there to shed a ray on his path, as if poetic justice reminded him by contrast of his noon-tide persecution. He trod upon his own dark plots at every step, and no chapter in his history would so stir our hearts as the record of his thoughts when he repassed the spot where Christ smote him to the earth. Did he look into the heavens now to see them re-open? O! what would he have given then for one more glimpse of the

Chapter 7 - Saul and Gentile Missions

Son of man! And how wakeful was the ear of his heart, to catch one whisper of his voice. He tells us himself (Gal. 1:18) that he desired to see Peter. For what? He has concealed his heart musings. But for once, he wanted to look the honest boatman in the face; to catch the wondrous story of redemption from a fresh memory and a full heart. His soul-musings must have been wonderful as he made his way back through Palestine. On reaching 'The Place of Stoning,' hard by the Damascus gate of Jerusalem, where he first breathed out threatening and slaughter, what were his thoughts? Did he pick up a stone there, to see if it still bore the stain of Stephen's blood? Did he bury his face in his 'cloak' and sob, where he had watched the clothes of those who stoned Stephen? That had been Paul-like. Saul came back to the Holy City another man. He longed to nestle in the warm love of those whom he had hated, and sought to join them. Three years had proved his conversion thorough, and he made not for the home of his old tutor, nor did he seek for Onkelos, the coming author of the Targum, who had sat at his side in the great school as Gamaliel's pupil. But he went directly to the disciples of Jesus. The Jews had once reposed confidence in him and promised him a brilliant future, now they had turned their backs upon him, and he met a cold reception amongst the Christians. They suspected him. Luke says: 'All were afraid of him, not believing that he was a disciple.' He had been so furious against them that his name was odious, and they feared to be entrapped in some horrible plot. In this atmosphere of distrust, the delicate love and heroic courage of that choice spirit, Barnabas, took him by the hand, led him to the Apostles, and told them all the particulars of his conversion. They saw that his vision was no creation of his brain, and that the words of Jesus to him were no note of his imagination, but that in truth he had become a follower of Jesus. Barnabas silenced the fears of the brethren, and Saul was welcomed by Peter and James, our Lord's brother, whom he now met for the first time. The new Apostle began at once to build up the faith where he had sought its destruction, until the Grecian Jews threatened his life. This latter fact shows how thoroughly his three years' study of Christian truth had subordinated his Jewish attainments to the service of Christ. Saul had never met the Son of Mary in the metropolis, but their eyes had looked upon the same men, and now their feet had passed the same streets on the same errand of love, and their hearts had become the treasury of the same truths.

Saul remained in Jerusalem only fifteen days (Gal. 1:19); and then his brethren saved his life a second time, by sending him to Tarsus, where, most likely, he established the churches in Cilicia. Meanwhile, persecution had driven certain disciples to Antioch, which was now to become a great center for the spread of the Gospel, to which work the Apostle should devote the best thirty years of his life. For this work Christ had educated this great workman. Eighty years were spent by Moses in his education, forty in the academies of Egypt, and forty in the desert of Horeb, for a third forty years' work, in making a nation from a mob of slaves. Jesus spent thirty years in preparing for the work of three, and it was meet that his greatest Apostle should spend the same length of time in preparing to lead the Gentile world to the foot of his cross. Some of the disciples who first visited Antioch were from the Island of Cyprus, the very hot-bed of worship offered to Venus; others were of Cyrene, a Greek city on the African coast between Carthage and Egypt. These first preached to the Jews in Antioch, then turned to the Gentiles and a great number believed. Acts 11:21. Here the first battle for Christ with unmingled paganism was waged, and the first purely Gentile Church was formed entirely outside of all Judaizing influences. This event shaped the future of Christianity, proving that 'The field is the world.' It is remarkable that this Church was founded without the aid of an Apostle, by converted Hellenist Jews, who had not heard the parable of the sower; for

The New Testament Period

Barnabas and another Cypriot convert had built up this first Gentile Church in the great Syrian capital. These very irregular and disorderly proceedings amongst the primitive Baptists have greatly shocked certain prelatial parties. But they must bear up under the affliction in some way, for at last it will certainly appear that a simple, immersed Evangelist, confirmed the first Church ever called 'Christian.' Nay, so great was the ingathering that Barnabas was compelled to go from Antioch to Tarsus, in search of Saul to help him in the great harvest-field. Antioch was all inquiry; and the broad nature of Barnabas saw that the issue must be met by a man of wide conceptions, earnest convictions, and liberal sympathies; a man with full knowledge of human nature, cool, courageous, cosmopolitan; dead, as far as possible, to crude and timid preferences for race and nationality; who, in earnest and without doubt, could clearly and sharply define the new faith. Hence, he passed by all the conservative Baptists at Jerusalem, and made no mistake in bringing the radical young Tarsian to be captain of the Lord's Gentile host.

Antioch had a population of about 500,000, being inferior only to Rome and Alexandria. But, as the third city in the empire it vied with these in magnificence, state, luxury, wealth, art and brilliant culture, being called the 'Queen of the East.' Yet, it was the home of every thing vile. Renan, the skeptic, names it, 'The capital of all lies, and the sink of every description of infamy.' It knew nothing of truth or purity, it was unbridled in its debaucheries, atheistic in its philosophy, and vulgar in its pleasures and worship. Its wit was sharp and its squibs scurrilous, which accounts for the derisive nickname coined there, 'Christians;' and the sights perpetrated at its shrines were ribald, nay, shocking beyond degree. This was the battle-field chosen by Jesus for the first real clash of arms between his Gospel and the Gentile gods, and Saul was his chosen missionary. However small the company of disciples within its walls at this time, with this Apostle as their leader. Antioch soon planted all the Asiatic churches, and became the world's pulpit for the cross. Even then it gave promise of the day when Ignatius was to pass its gates to seal the truth with his blood, in the Roman amphitheater. Chrysostom was to be born there, to tell the story of the risen King in Constantinople; and there 100,000 men were to bind the sacred name of derision to their hearts; and above all, there Bible theology and Gospel songs were to be framed for the inspiration of our race. From the day that Saul entered Antioch, the faith of Christ cut every leading-string which bound it to Mosaism, and this city became the birth-home of a pure Christian nobility, into which all bloods and races were fused, in the name of Jesus. That was a strange cry which this ambassador raised in Antioch, when he called her satirists and wits, her rhetoricians and military men, her quacks and necromancers, her buffoons and dancing girls, to 'Behold the Lamb.' But he continued in this toil for 'a whole year,' and a 'great multitude believed.' A famine occurred in Judea in the fourth year of Claudius, and collections were taken up in Antioch and other Gentile churches for the relief of the Jewish Christians at Jerusalem. These contributions were sent by the hands of Barnabas and Saul, A.D. 45; this was the Apostle's second visit after his conversion, and in the same year he returned to Antioch; from thence he, Barnabas, and John Mark, went forth on the Apostle's First great Missionary Expedition.

When Columbus left the harbor of Palos with two small caravels, no such moral results hung in the balance as those which impended when Barnabas and Saul left all that was dear to them in Antioch. They must first go to Seleucia, the sea-port of Antioch, fourteen miles west, and five miles north of the mouth of the river Orontes, to take ship for the Island of Cyprus, for from that black-sand beach the ark of the world must be launched. The Mediterranean had now become the highway

Chapter 7 - Saul and Gentile Missions

of civilization, ideas and empire, as well as of commerce; and they sailed about a hundred miles, when they landed at Salamis, on the island where Christ wrought signs and wonders by the Gospel. Here, the great Apostle dropped the name of Saul, and was known thereafter only as Paul or Paulus. Some think that the Roman name was assumed to conciliate Gentile prejudice, but more likely this had been his Roman name from childhood, while amongst the Hebrews he had been known as Saul. From that time the sacred story changes, Paul taking higher rank. He is no longer second to Barnabas, as at Antioch, but he takes precedence, and now we read of 'Paul and Barnabas,' not only the order of names being reversed, but Barnabas falls into the background and Paul becomes the great figure on the glowing canvas, by land and sea.

No story could be more enchanting or instructive than that of following Paul through his three great missionary tours, but this our limits forbid. Nothing in history is so enriched, excepting the life of Jesus. It is an inspired panorama. The account covers so many lands, tongues, climates and civilizations that it opens the ancient world to us. His various methods of travel, his many companions, the endless phases in which he met every possible development of Judaism and paganism, his devious styles of preaching, his orders of controversy, the unfoldings of old truths and the revelation of new, his nameless sufferings and successes, are themes pregnant with importance, and every temptation presses to their full treatment. But self-denial imposes silence here, as well as upon his numerous Church organizations, especially those to whom he addressed his wonderful Epistles, as the Galatians, the Philippians, the Thessalonians, the Corinthians, the Ephesians and others; together with their contents and the circumstances which called them into existence. All this, with much more, must be omitted, until we meet him on a cold, murky November morning, at the close of his great voyage and shipwreck. His wonderful life's work was substantially done when he stood shivering with that wretched group of two hundred and seventy-six souls, on that tongue of land now known as St. Paul's Bay, on Malta. Bruised, shelterless and haggard, they stood near the headland where 'two seas met,' in a more significant sense than is indicated by currents and shoals on a dangerous sea-coast. There, while huddled together in a pelting rain, and drenched in seawater, Paul and his party, hungry and benumbed with cold, gathered a heap of brush and made a fire. But a chilled viper had been unwittingly thrown with the sticks into the blaze. Blistered with heat, the reptile darted out in anger and fastened its poisonous fangs on Paul's hand. He coolly shook it off again into the fire and remained unhurt: a fit type of the victory which awaited him at Rome, where God would shortly beat down Satan under his feet. On reaching Puteoli, in Italy, the news of his arrival quickly flew to Rome, a distance of a hundred and forty miles which he must travel in chains over the immortal Appian Way. And yet, no conqueror in triumph, no Emperor in purple, had ever passed over this pavement, on whom such tremendous results hung in Roman destiny. When forty miles from Rome they came to Appii Forum, at the end of the canal which ran through the Pontine Marshes. There they were met and welcomed by a company of disciples from the Eternal City. A few miles farther on, a second group of Roman brethren met and greeted them, at the Three Taverns, where the road from Actium came into the main road, and where multitudes of travelers met.

When the Apostle saw that he had a home in the hearts of so many whom he had never before seen in the flesh, he 'thanked God and took courage.' The thought that he must enter Borne, a mass of two millions of people from all lands, a prisoner, unknown and nearly alone, may have dampened and even stifled his companionable soul with a sense of that unutterable loneliness which is never

The New Testament Period

so deeply felt as in a crowd. But when the great city burst upon his sight from the Alban Hills, and he found a band of faithful, redeemed souls; on his right and on his left, the old Jerusalem-Philippian-Ephesian fireglowed anew in his brave spirit, and in a moment he was strong to preach the Gospel at Rome also. Thus, in the month of March, in the seventh year of Nero's reign, and the sixty-second of that Christ, whose he was and whom he served, the immortal tent-maker passed through the Carpenian Gate, to save the Eternal City.

That day Julius delivered his precious charge to Burrus Afranius, the Prefect of the Praetorian Guard, a humane and honest officer, who made his report to the imperial court. The illustrious prisoner, however, was permitted to dwell by himself in his own hired house, within the limits of the Praetorian quarter, still linked to his guard by his humiliating chain. He had been in Rome but three days when he sought a conference with the principal officers of the seven synagogues there, before whom he desired to lay his case for consultation. They assured him that they had received no communication concerning him from Jerusalem, although they knew that his sect was in bad repute every where. Yet, they assembled on an appointed day to hear him expound its doctrines in his own lodgings: a practice which he continued for two whole years, for the benefit of all who wished to hear him. It is clear also, from his Epistles of the Imprisonment, that he met with much success in preaching the Gospel in Rome; some of his converts being found in Caesar's household. It is not now easy to determine the exact district to which his person was limited, as the Praetorian camp was outside the walls, at some distance short of the Fourth Mile-stone. The Praetorium was the head-quarters of the Roman military governor, and the camp so called at Rome, was created by Tiberius, before whose time the troops were lodged in different parts of the city.

The direct Scripture narrative concerning Paul's career closes with his arrival at Rome, and the statement that he remained there 'two years.' But the various allusions and references made in his Epistles of the Imprisonment indicate that he was released A.D. 63-64, and that after this he traveled through Asia Minor, Crete, Macedonia, Greece; and many think that he visited Spain, and some, that he planted Christianity in Britain. The fair inference is, that he returned to Rome voluntarily, as we have no hint of the time and place of his arrest, nor of any charge against him. That he finally endured martyrdom there is clear; some think as early as A.D. 64, while others put the date as late as A.D. 68. When a prisoner, he was comforted by the presence of Luke, Timothy, Aristarchus of Thessalonica, and Epaphras, a Colossian; also by Mark, the cousin of Barnabas, and Tychicus, of Asia. It is difficult to account for the long delay of his first hearing before the Emperor. But these two years were not lost; as he expresses it, they turned out 'for the furtherance of the Gospel.' The charges sent by Festus were, most likely, lost in the shipwreck; and if so, much time would be consumed in waiting for a duplicate copy from Caesarea. The slowness of his accusers to appear against him, because of the known weakness of their case, was disheartening to him, as well as the long delays in the course of Roman law at its fastest pace; meanwhile, false brethren were studiously adding affliction to his bonds, by persecuting his converts, and he was betrayed by some of his friends. We may as well dismiss the legend of horrors in the Mamertine Prison, as one of those fictions which will not bear the light of history. His sufferings sank deeper than the shudderings of the body in a dark and wet dungeon, whose walls were great blocks of tufa anchored together by clamps of iron and where every limb was chilled for want of his 'cloak.' We know that he was sick in person, and that he was ill-treated by Tigellinus, the wretch who followed Burrus, as Chief Praetorian Prefect. How many sighs he heaved in secret before God we never can know, till we read

Chapter 7 - Saul and Gentile Missions

the stains on the immortal page which Jehovah keeps. But no voice in history brings down to us such a touch of melancholy as we hear in the cry: 'At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me.' Some think that while a prisoner he had influenced such men as Linus, who was to be the pastor at Borne, Prudens, the son of a senator, and Claudia, a British senator. One almost wishes that this opinion may not be correct, as no citizen of Rome had the courage to stand by him. In his Roman captivity he looked back upon the past, and, at least, found himself Christ-like in this, that just as all the Apostles fled from Jesus in his peril, so his chief Apostle was left to provide for his own safety. They abandoned an old and grey-bearded man to captivity and martyrdom, in an ungenerous and dastardly manner, instead of defending him as eager and staunch friends. Still, we are scarcely surprised at their fear, when exile and sword threatened them, for the Roman Christians suffered ruthless persecution. Yet, Paul proved his largest liberty by his chains. The world had been riveted in breathless attention, while he crossed its mountains and seas, crying with the Baptist: 'Behold the Lamb of God!' Even in his captivity all was animation. His prison-home gives us glimpses of his fortitude, heroism, and true leadership as a champion of the truth. Fetters weigh him down, and the sword, half-drawn from its sheath, gleams before him, and with a rude soldier chained to his arm, he keeps his pen busy for Christ. In an important sense he did more for Christ when in bonds than when in full liberty. Luther was a prisoner at the Wartburg, till he could give Germany a popular Bible; Bunyan passed twelve years in his 'den' at Bedford, till he could set all ages dreaming of heaven; and it was meet that Paul should illuminate and confirm the faith of churches to be formed in all lands while time lasts. Unable to go from land to land, his pen gave the world the Epistles of the Imprisonment, the Letters to the Philippians and the Colossians, with his queen Epistle to the Ephesians; also, those to Philemon, to Timothy, and to Titus. It is scarcely too much to say, that while a prisoner he did more for the unborn centuries, than all the rest of his life did for that in which he lived; for under his Master, he erected a new world of moral thought, language and life for the human race.

These peerless letters have hourly instructed the ignorant, strengthened the weak, and consoled the comfortless for eighteen hundred years. They are so few in number, and so small in bulk, that a child can handle them, yet so simple in structure that a peasant can make them his own. They have created a world-wide literature, which puts the scholarship of the world under tribute for they still produce the profoundest thought ever known to man. For beauty and fragrance, they are so many 'beds of spices:' for fullness and wealth, so many exhaustless mines. Mankind stands a debtor at the door of Paul's prison-house, whence he gave out these holy sheets, and will never be able to pay its debt to their high culture and mighty inspiration.

The New Testament Period

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

The persecutions of the Primitive Christians did not spring from pure hatred or tyranny on the part of the Roman authorities. When we attribute them to mere blood-thirst we miss the real contest between Christ and Paganism, and his great conquest over its noblest forms. Contrary to the old Greek and Oriental faiths, Rome blended its religions with its political existence, as one of its institutions, for the rulers held, that the oath could not be binding, that there could be no public credit, and no administration of justice, without reverence for the deities. Hence, the laws were generally enforced in the coolest manner, and without passion, in defense of the national life. Plutarch made religion the necessary basis of civil government, and Polybius extolled Roman piety for the security that it gave to the State. Even the Greeks had held the rejector of all gods as a bad citizen, Plato made him a criminal, Draco punished him with death, and Aristotle would have but one established worship. Tully thought that the gods inspired Roman wisdom when it relegated religion to the control of the rulers, so that it became a science in civil jurisprudence, and a prop to the public safety. On this ground, Augustus required each senator to worship some god before he took his seat in the Senate. Hence, also, the rulers endowed the priesthood, and lavished gifts upon the gods, as on the accession of Caligula, which was celebrated by offering 100,000 sacrifices.

Still, religious tolerance was the steady policy of Rome from time immemorial. Niebuhr says, that 'the whole life of the constitution depended on it.' [*German Life*, ii, pp. 385,386] It was allowed, however, only on respect for some god, rejection of all of them being treason to the Empire. Universal conquest had allied it with the whole family of deities who had presided over its arms, and had consolidated its law and religion into a unit. Each city and country had its divinity, of whose honor it was jealous, and its devotees had hot controversies about their favorite gods. The capital invited all deities, and those of the provinces had been freely translated thither, which made Rome a huge pantheon for the idols of the world. War had destroyed many temples, which were rebuilt in great splendor, and every oracle of country and town. was crowded with worshipers. As Christians worshiped none of them, they were a disquieting element in the government, and were treated as atheists; therefore, Christianity was contrary to law. A man's conscience belonged to the State as much as his limbs, and the crime of the Christians was, that they would think for themselves. Celsus said: 'Knowledge is an evil; it causes men to lose their soundness of mind; they perish through wisdom.' Moreover, pagan influence was sustained by the military service, and as Christians would not enlist, their faith was not national, and they were accounted enemies of the State, rebellious, obstinate, for which Statecraft put them to the sword. They would not drink in honor of the Emperor's birthday, which proved them unsocial and haters of society, – they treated the gods with contempt, which proved their ignorance, – they publicly adored an invisible God, which proved them guilty of sedition, – and when adoration of Christ was forbidden they worshiped him privately, which proved them secret plotters against the government. Their reasoning could not be answered, but they could be hated. Whatever they did was legally wrong, the law demanded their condemnation, and the calmest officer was the most cruel in exacting absolute obedience. As guilds, clubs, or associations, they could select a patron divinity, but he must take some visible form, or they must be treated as godless.

Paganism was stronger under the Empire than ever before, and the number of gods was increased rather than diminished. No place was without its deity. The exchange, the home, the workshop, the palace, the wood and the wheatfield had its divinity, its humiliation and its festival. A woman in

The New Testament Period

social life was not respected who did not bring gifts to some sacred image, or fane, or fann. At her betrothal, her marriage, the birth of her children, the death of any in her household; she was equally devout. Ulhorn says: 'There was the goddess Lucina, who watched over the birth of a child; Candelifera, in whose honor at such a time candles are lighted; Rumina who attended its nursing; Nundina who was invoked on the ninth day when the name was given; Potina and Educa, who accustomed it to food and drink. The day when the child first stepped upon the ground was consecrated to Statina; Abeona taught it to walk; Farinus to lisp; Locutinusto talk; Cuninaaverted from it the evil enchantments lying in the cradle. Then there was the god of the soil, the door, the stable, the ship, the prison and even of the brothel. Every thing in turn had its sacred side. Hill and dale, day and night, seed-time and harvest, summer and winter, equally demanded a sacrifice from prince and peasant, so that in some places there were more gods than men.

This politico-religious trend accounts for the craze which frenzied the popular mind in the deification of the Emperors. At Athens, the philosophic spirit of the Greek still animated a subjugated people, but at Ephesus, the center of Asiatic Greek culture and Roman imperial rule, we see paganism in its true light as an adjunct, to the government. Thus, the sphere of divinity could be reached with ease from the Oriental cultus, where the deeds of the heroic and illustrious won the popular assent to deification. We condemn the thought that any man can rest a vital faith in his fellow, as God. But when the Senate decreed Caesar a divinity, and erected temples to his honor during his life-time, the wish of the people gave validity to the decree, because they looked upon him as the author of all their temporal power, political peace, and unbroken sway over the nations. The soldier worshiped the Emperor from motives of patriotism, the freedman because he had conferred liberty upon his class, the statesman as the source of his promotion, and the provincial as the guardian of his security. Caesar-worship took deep root in the soil of self-interest and gratitude, while the deified Emperor bestowed fresh privileges upon his adoring subjects, centralizing the public interests, and binding all closer to his person and prerogatives. He, therefore, gave general unity to the common faith, for the whole Empire found in him the center of its universal bliss, the Emperor God being its veritable PONTIFEX MAXIMUS. The necessary result was, that a crime against this deity was a crime against the State, which could not long be brooked, but put the life of each dissenter in peril. The essence of paganism was rite and not faith, so that the priest presided at the ceremony which the magistrate enforced. This made the struggle sharp between the princes of this world and the Lord of souls. The Gospel claimed divine origin, it branded paganism as human or infernal, to be cast aside, while it was enthroned in the heart; there could therefore, be no end to such a struggle until the stronger overthrew the weaker.

Still another thing. There was an awakening of new ideas, a strong under-current of skepticism mixed with all this pagan cult, for its traditions were derided as well as doubted. Amongst the intellectual classes, its legends were mocked 'its gods sneered at, and its fables ridiculed. Menauder sacrificed to the gods, but said that they did not 'care for him.' Others derided their pretensions, made sport of their prongless tridents, and either laughed at the whiz of their thunder-bolts, or defied them as myths, without existence *per se*. Yet those who treated them with contempt were made obedient by fanatical fear, superstition working in them slavish hypocrisy. In the Senate itself Caesar boldly proclaimed himself an unbeliever; but he never felt safe in his chariot without repeating a magical talismanic word. Augustus rejected the gods, yet all the day long he was afraid, if he put his shoe on the wrong foot in the morning; and Pliny, a practical atheist, pinned his faith to absurd charms.

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

Indeed, when general confidence in paganism failed, it was carefully fostered for State purposes. This consideration made its poets sing, its politicians plan, its priests minister, and its Emperors chant its liturgies on their knees. No goddess could find her vestals amongst virgins of high birth, but took these venerated persons from the freed women, chiefly of the lower ranks, and the Emperor increased their rights, to make their office the more attractive. Of course, the aristocracy clung to the old faith for State purposes. It was the law of the land, its ceremonies were easily complied with, and it was sternly enforced by imperial example and authority. The consequence was, that when this policy was adopted by the Julian line, it was made stronger than ever, as the Gospel begun its attacks upon the system; that the new faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

With these facts in view we easily understand the *animus* of persecution on the part of those Emperors, who sincerely and conscientiously served the gods themselves, and it is quite as clear, how the ambitious, the cruel, and the malignant sought every occasion to gratify their caprice under the show of patriotism, even when it was purely wanton. The first noted example of this sort meets us in Nero. Seneca, his tutor in philosophy, says: That he was a clement sovereign, when he ascended the throne; others regarded him as the best prince since Augustus; and Trajan speaks of his reign as dignified during his first five years, but bad during the last eight. He was the last of the Julian family, born A.D. 37, and the Caesars died in him, A.D. 68. His father, Domitius, was thoroughly evil, and his mother, Agrippina has no equal in history for plot and infamy. That language could scarcely be unmeasured which wrote her down a Jezebel, a Cleopatra, and a Lucrezia Borgia, all in one. First, she was the niece of the Emperor Claudius, then his fourth wife, then she poisoned him. He had adopted Nero, her own son and his step-son, into the imperial family, and immediately she began to plot against his own son, Britannicus, the rightful heir to the throne. By a series of bold and unscrupulous intrigues, she finally stole the purple for Nero, and then attempted to murder him, because she could not control his reign.

When young, he was extremely beautiful in person, early displaying a taste for art, in painting and sculpture, as well as for poetry, music, and the drama. At seventeen he became Emperor, and died at thirty. Monstrous as was his mother, he soon became his own masterpiece, and rose to be the prime monster of the world. He never developed the first attribute of a statesman, nor showed the slightest sign of humanity, nor blessed his empire by one noble deed; but lived only to display a frenzy of passion and guilty splendor. His ill-regulated mind was the slave of his selfish whims, and daily incubated brood after brood of groundless suspicions and jealousies. He married Octavia, the daughter of Claudius, then divorced and murdered her. After this he poisoned Britannicus, whom he had robbed off the purple and failing to drown his own mother, had her assassinated with a dagger. Having begun a career of blood, he killed his first two wives, and slew noble after noble, without end. A man must be polluted with crime through and through to become an adroit 'inventor of evil things,' yet this was his pre-eminence. When Poppea, a beautiful but worthless Jewess, became his wife, and was about to become a mother, he kicked her to death. In order to attract him by her fair appearance, she bathed daily in milk taken from five hundred she asses, and these beasts she shod with gold and silver shoes. With her husband, she paraded her vices in the most public and shameless manner.

This was the man to whom the holy Paul was obliged to appeal, from the fury of God's High priest, when he sought to worship Christ in peace. No record is left of the time or place of his trial before Nero, but as the Emperors never relinquished the power of life and death in such cases, it is

The New Testament Period

every way likely that he stood before him as a prisoner. Paul gives a mere hint of such a meeting when he notes his 'first answer;' and says, that Jesus 'stood at his side,' when all men abandoned him. He exults, also, that he 'was delivered out of the mouth of the lion,' as if he referred to Nero's ferocity, while he praises Christ for his freedom.

Behold the two men! They had not one thing in common, either in person, character, or relation. Paul was so advanced in years that he calls himself 'the aged;' diminutive in body, 'weak in presence,' defective in sight, 'contemptible in speech,' and prematurely worn-out by labors, hardships, and sufferings. The blood of a simple Jewish artisan ran in his veins; his hands were horny with honest work, and fettered in irons; his body disfigured with scars, his head loaded with curses, and his life hunted; penniless and friendless. Nero was a young man, not more than six-and-twenty. The blood of the last Caesar tingled in his veins, the adulation of the world lay at his feet, and the sovereignty of the globe stood behind him. Legion after legion, half a million of men in arms, waited to do his bidding. Six millions of people thronged his capital, and twenty-five millions formed his empire, ready to lavish upon him all that treasure and power could demand. His jeweled hand grasped such a scepter as the world had never seen before, and which had been held in the palm of Augustus and Tiberius, of Caligula and Claudius. But his young face, furrowed deep by the keenness of human passion, was unable to blush, for his heart took hue from a bottomless pit; of depravity, whose smoke ascended for ever and ever.

The chain which cut into Paul's wrist that day, has long since fretted itself into fine dust; but he held the truth in righteousness, and by its power he wielded that pen which still stirs the heart of the world, and makes the pulse-beat strongly in millions of unmanacled arms. But canker had seized Nero's heart like a honey-combed petrification, it was eaten through and through. His brow was wreathed in a diadem, or adorned in laurel; but his soul beneath was a dark vault, where demons had jostled out each relic of manhood, and then clenched the gate against its return, with steel bolts and bars which no charm could draw. He threw the saints to lions, tigers, and hyenas, till hoof and jaw were satiated; then, dripping red with the blood of God's elect, they haunted him while he slept. Paul's heart had broken, when the tears of elders fell upon his neck. But Nero's soul was a sea of ice, in which a spark of love could not live. Paul stood, a ripened and mellowed spirit ready to be borne home on angels' bosoms; Nero sat, a juvenile, nondescript compound of vulgarity and hate; who had not felt a new sensation of devilishness for years.

There they stood, Paul and Nero; the foulest and the purest of men. The one a deity of paganism, the other a disciple of the Good Shepherd; each represented his own universe; each embodied the elements of his own system, as if the struggle between them was reduced to a personal combat, and symbolized in the two men. A temple of the Holy Spirit without a spot of impurity from pavement to top-stone would image forth Paul, but Nero must throw Borne into flames to find the true image of himself. Miles of embers and ashes, more black and ill-shapen than the statues, temples, and palaces of his calcined capital might picture him, every arch broken, every pillar fallen, every altar crumbled. Rome was swept by its calamitous fire, July 19, A.D. 64. It began in the eastern part of the city, and burned on before an east wind for six days, then died out for want of fuel, when a second fire broke out in the western part, and a west wind took what the first had not reached. Six districts out of fourteen were entirely destroyed, and four were seriously damaged, leaving but four intact. The most memorable monuments of antiquity were swept away. The city was thrown into a panic, when the belief seized it that Nero was the incendiary, that ruffians had applied the torch at

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

his command, and that he had simply amused himself on the tower of his palace by enacting the 'Destruction of Troy,' in the light of the conflagration. Then, wild rage threatened not only his throne but his life. History has made it clear that he was at Actium, between thirty and forty miles from Borne, when the fire began, but suggests that absence was a cover for his plot, for the pagan writers, generally, lay the crime at his door. He hastened to the city, and distributed money in the smoking streets, to allay the excitement. The Christians interpreted the fire as a divine judgment on the city, and Tacitus accuses them of lighting the flame. But he also charged them with being so fanatical a sect, that they 'hated the human race,' and so must be suppressed at all risk. We can depend but little on his authority in this matter. Nero pretended to deal with them as incendiaries, to transfer the odium from himself; but the people believed him guilty of using them as a screen to hide his face from the fire. At times the Jews had been turbulent, and the government had suppressed them; and now he found in their fellow-sect a convenient scapegoat, on the charge that they sought the overthrow of the national faith and existence, by burning the capital.

He issued edicts against them, condemning them to death, but still the people held him guilty of the crime. Many were seized as victims, were enwrapped in oil or pitch; Rome was invited to the imperial gardens, and crowds gloated their eyes on the poor wretches who were burnt, while Nero played the clown as a charioteer in a horse-race. Others were crucified, possibly in contempt of Christ's death, were wrapped in the skins of beasts and torn to pieces by dogs, or impaled, death being let loose upon them in every form. The fury of the people was drawn from himself and allayed for a time, but reacting pity soon demanded that the brutal slaughter should stop. To replenish his coffers and rebuild Rome he confiscated the estates of many nobles, which led to a conspiracy against him; but he plunged deeper and deeper into depravity and buffoonery, till all classes became disgusted, especially the provincial armies and the Greeks. To appease them he rebuilt Rome in a new style of architecture, leaving the image of voluptuous Greece upon its face, by thousands of ornaments and statues stolen from that country. He built for himself his Golden House, covering a large part of the burnt district, appropriating enormous enclosures for gardens, galleries, baths, bridges, and fish-ponds; until he convinced Rome that he had burned the city to make room for this world of mansions. Gloom settled upon the popular temper and revolt followed. This made him desperate, and in his mad efforts to retain his grasp of power he swung from the flatteries of hope to the remorse of despair, exposing the nakedness of his character, until he drew upon him the contempt of the Empire. Like a lunatic he went to Greece to conciliate it by becoming a petty actor, in a cracked voice publicly rehearsing doggerel, accompanied by clownish contortions. This he repeated in the theater, circus, and games of Rome; at one time, before 200,000 of the rabble, in the Circus Maximus. Then he boasted that at last he was 'lodged as a man,' and not as a beast, in his new Golden House, until the mob surged against its gates: when rending his vestments and tearing his hair he cried: 'I have neither friend nor foe left.' After this he played the craven, and would have taken poison, had not the casket in which he kept it been stolen.

Pale with fear and rage, he took horse by night and fled four miles without the walls, hiding himself in the house of one of his freedmen. Here his spirit was shattered, he gratefully accepted a cup of water and a crust, and a few hours brought his death-warrant; for the Senate decreed him an enemy to the State, and sentenced him to death 'in the ancient way.' He asked what this phrase meant, and when told that he must be stripped bare, his neck fastened in the forked limb of a tree, and his body beaten with rods, a horrible terror seized him. He then took a pair of daggers from his

The New Testament Period

bosom, and finding that their edge was keen, he could not force himself to pierce his marble heart. Soon he heard the tramp of horses, but before the avenger clutched him, he bade his slave force the blade home. The Roman guard caught his eye, and another moment had put him in their power; but the imperial monster was dead. His body was burnt on the spot and his ashes left with his minions, as if to ratify the imprecating curse of his mother, who fell before her murderer crying: 'Strike the womb which bore a monster.'

The great Apostle had passed away before Nero, but how differently from this mass of royal leprosy. As his head was laid on the block, he saw a, glittering crown awaiting him. Nero pitied the world that could not prize him and wished to kill himself, yet dared not do the world that one act of justice; but Paul went singing, 'I am now ready to be offered.' Nero took his wreath of thorns, Paul bowed his head to receive his crown of glory from the 'Righteous Judge.' And while all that was left of the Emperor was a heap of smoldering ashes without a sepulcher, the monument of the great Apostle is found in the regenerated and baptized communities which he established for all lands and all time.

At this point it may be desirable to speak of the other Apostles, especially of Peter and John, and of the principles and practices which they laid down. At Chartres, a great artist has given his insignia of the Twelve Apostles, in a series of enamels found in the Church of St. Peter. He represents Andrew with a cross, shaped like the letter X, John with a cup, Peter with keys, and Paul with a sword, as an armed soldier of Christ. Whatever may be the merit of this artistic legend in other cases, it truly indicates Paul's bold calling, that he might please Him who had chosen him to be a soldier. Yet, his brethren also fulfilled their mission boldly and faithfully. According to the best authority at command. Peter, James, and John labored principally amongst the Jews, scattered abroad in all nations. From the first, these unwittingly became the protectors of the Christians, whom they persecuted. We have seen that Palestine stood in the center of the then known world. The highways which held Asia and Africa together touched the Holy Land, and commerce found its course flowing through Philistia and Phoenicia. On the south, Arabia led to the Gulf of Elath, the east opened to the Euphrates, the Persian Gulf, and all Southern Asia. For centuries the Jews had dispersed themselves over all these lands. In the time of Christ they numbered 80,000 in Rome, in Egypt they formed an eighth of the population, and they had penetrated west not only to Germany and Spain, but to Britain. They partook of the new life around them, but retained their individuality. Yet, they became somewhat weaned from their old Temple ritual, their synagogues infused a democratic spirit into their religion, and they came to depend less upon sacerdotalism, and more upon the study and interpretation of their Sacred Books. True, they still paid the Temple tax, sent sacrifices to its altars, and occasionally visited Jerusalem; but their synagogues and Scriptures were herald missionaries of the Gospel amongst all pagan peoples.

Besides this, they became the great money dealers and wheat factors of the world. In fiscal transactions they so far outwitted the Roman knights, the bankers of the day, that complaints were made to the Emperor that they drained Asia Minor of its money; and in Egypt they nearly held a monopoly in breadstuffs. Juvenal said, 'The Jews sell every thing;' and Strabo, 'It is not easy to find a place in the habitable world which has not received this race, and is not possessed by it.' Roman law specially exempted them from military duty and certain taxes, and left them free to enjoy their religion. They traveled without hindrance, were wealthy, and formed communities of great influence in universal society; although hated everywhere for their exclusive faith, they were everywhere felt

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

and feared. For purity of morals their lives were unique, and in great contrast with the pagans; for what was sacred to the one, the other detested. They looked upon the gentiles as 'dogs,' and the dogs held them in contempt. As a chosen race, they thought themselves superior, and because they looked for universal dominion by their Messiah, the Romans scouted them as ridiculous dreamers. In A.D. 19, public indignation compelled Tiberius to recruit his army from the Jews in Rome; yet, Seneca, who was then living, says, that 'The vanquished have given laws to the victors;' not an unusual thing. Of course, their synagogues were so many meeting places for inquiry amongst those who were weary of the gods, influential people in every city embraced Judaism, and many women of the highest Roman, families became proselytes. One step more led them to the Gospel.

For a long time the Romans looked upon the Christians as a mere sect of the Jews, and gave them the same privileges. Hence, Judaism, like a gnarled and sturdy oak, while it shaded the young sprout at its foot and refused it the sun, shielded it from storms until it could stand' defiantly alone. A well-known bird lays its eggs in the nest of another, and its offspring is raised with the strange brood,: and thus the Gospel was nourished under the wing of Judaism; which in this manner prepared the way of the Apostles. In their great missionary circuits they were much like the planets, making their course singly, with occasional conjunctions, but very infrequent. Peter, for example, is not mentioned in the Acts after the fifteenth chapter, leaving the impression that when he had used 'The Keys' at Pentecost, and in the house of Cornelius his special work was done. We know but little of his missionary life, excepting through his Epistles and an occasional reference to him in those of Paul; so that, when tradition undertakes to complete his biography we must take its statements with great caution. The Scripture outline of him is extremely Oriental, and no incident is more thoroughly so than that given by Luke in describing his visit to the house, of Mary, after his release from prison. In true Eastern style he knocks two or three times and then waits to listen, when one from within asks 'Who?' without opening the door. Standing outside he answers, 'I – open.' Then his name is demanded, which he gives, but continues knocking, according to usage, till the servant-maid, Rhoda, ran to her mistress and reported, leaving the door unopened still. She knew his voice, and told how Peter stood before the gate. This, and other peculiarities, marked him in his entire ministry. He had been specially fitted for an Apostle to the circumcision, for having lived on the Jewish side of the middle wall of partition he knew only that side of the world. He was warm, courageous, practical; but was not naturally endowed with that genius, reflective faculty, and profound sagacity, which of the twain made Paul a 'new man.' He was confined to a narrower sphere, and showed great reluctance to abandon Jewish ordinances, although he triumphed over this at last, and did a great work for Christ amongst the Twelve Tribes.

But his personal intimacy with Jesus is sweetly visible all through his life, for he speaks of him with great vividness as an 'eye-witness' of his ministry. His great Apostolic heart seems to throb in its full integrity when he says: 'We did eat and drink with him;' 'Whom having not seen ye love;' a 'Witness of the sufferings of Christ.' Then, his quenchless love for his nation is visible in his perpetual reference to her institutions and symbols, which he freely borrows to set forth the Christian Church. She is 'the chosen generation, the royal priesthood, the peculiar people.' With this feeling in his heart he long remained in Judea and about the western coast of Palestine; but love for them drew him farther East, to the 'scattered strangers' in Asia. 'The Church that is in Babylon salutes you,' which word we take in its literal sense, as we accept the names of other cities from which Epistles were sent. For centuries Babylon had been a great Eastern center for Jews, and under

The New Testament Period

Parthian tolerance Peter could labor therewith impunity. The Churches in that region date back to a very early period, which leaves little doubt that he was their founder. This accounts for the presence of Mark and Sylvanus with him in that capital. After Paul's Second Missionary Journey we hear no more of Sylvanus, but when Paul was first imprisoned in Borne, he tells the Colossians that Mark was about to visit them (Col. 4:10), and afterward he speaks of him as with Timothy at Ephesus (2 Tim. 4:2); this being the period when Peter wrote his first Epistle, and accounts for Mark's presence with him in Babylon.

At the best, Peter's closing years are lost in gloomy traditions and floating romance, created to endow him with a supremacy above his brethren, which he never claimed, which Christ never bestowed, and which never belonged to him. Probably Luke suddenly quenched his historical lamp, as a protection to him when State persecution arose, to leave his whereabouts and doings in darkness. For when Christian records and correspondence intended for Christian eyes, only came to public light under 'informers,' the most innocent matter compromised the best of men. Even the writers of the first three Gospels observe a marked reticence of Peter's name in recording that 'a disciple' cut off the ear of Malchus, in Gethsemane. Only John tells us that it was Peter, and not he till the impetuous Apostle was safe in heaven, and the High-priest's palace empty of the man who owned the ear as well as of his master. Had Luke put on record where each Apostle was, and what he was doing, he would only have discovered them to the malignity of their foes, when one unguarded word would have drawn more brutal cruelties upon their heads. Their lives, therefore, float on the wings of fiction, and we do injustice to ourselves and to them when we rely on this or that legend to set forth their labors and death; an imposition upon our credulity for an unworthy end.

All fables to the contrary, it is more than questionable whether Peter ever saw Rome. The claim that he introduced the Gospel there, labored for some time in company with Paul, and suffered martyrdom in that city with him, cannot be sustained by one word from the New Testament, or any thing like reliable history. At Pentecost, 'strangers of Borne, Jews and proselytes' heard Peter preach. These were native-born Jews, converts from the pagans to the Jewish .faith, and visitors at the feast; so that there is no. great stretch of probability in supposing that they took Christianity back with them to Rome, and won their families and friends to Christ on their return. Every religion of the East was found in the capital, and it is likely, in the nature of things, that Christianity made its way there earlier than to many of the provinces. It is not known who introduced the Gospel into Rome. As at Antioch, some simple disciple, not an Apostle, seems to have secured this honor. Probably it was there as early as A.D. 51, for a well-established Church is found by Paul at Puteoli, the port of Rome, A.D. 60-62. Paul addressed his Epistle to the Church in Rome A.D., 58, in which many passages show, that it had been constituted of both Jews and Gentiles, especially of Greeks, whose names are given in the salutations as persons well-known in that Church. In this .Epistle Paul makes no allusion to Peter, a negative which could scarcely have occurred if he had either established or fostered that Church. Even if Hippolytus had not shown, that long after Peter's death it retained the democratic character and simplicity, there is nothing in this Epistle which hints that Peter was ever the pastor of Rome, much less that his supremacy dignified it in any way. Eusebius states the tradition that he went there A.D. 42, and remained twenty-five years ; but this is in direct contradiction of Luke, who shows that he lived in Jerusalem A.D. 44 (Acts 12), and labored in Caesarea and Antioch A.D. 48-50. Acts 10. Peter himself punctured the bubble on which this figment of supremacy rests, when he gave express testimony to Christ as the corner-stone, saying: 'Other

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is CHRIST Jesus.' Too well did Peter remember that he was cursing, swearing, and falsifying his Lord on the day that Jesus gave himself for his Church, to convince himself that he was the fit material upon which to build a stable and spotless Church. Nor does the Council at Jerusalem yield this picture any support. Peter spoke in that assembly, but he neither called it together, nor presided over its deliberations, nor took its voice, nor gave its decision, nor assumed superiority over his brethren in any respect.

When Peter asked our Lord at the Supper Table, 'Whither goest thou?' Jesus answered, 'Whither I go thou canst not follow me *now*, but thou shalt follow me afterward;' evidently alluding to his own crucifixion and Peter's. Again Jesus prophesied Peter's crucifixion in the words: 'When thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and lead thee whither thou wouldest not. This he spoke signifying by what manner of death he should glorify God;' and it settles the mode of Peter's death, but the time and place are not alluded to in the New Testament. Fable fixes them at Rome, under Nero, and many great names have subscribed to it, as well as to the notion, that at his own request he was executed with his head downward, as a sign of his humiliation for denying Christ. This part of the story probably arises from the fact, that Roman soldiers nailed their victims to the cross in any attitude which derision inspired. The object of all these fictions is apparent; they are created to exalt the see of Rome above all other Churches.

The New Testament gives us but few facts concerning the Apostle John and his missionary toils, after the third chapter of the Acts. In the immediate morning of Christianity he stands forth with great prominence; and when all the other Apostles had finished their work his sun bursts forth anew, after an obscurity of about forty years, to gild the setting century with a peculiar splendor. While Peter was doing his great work in the beginning, and Paul his, in the middle of this period, God did strangely hide the venerable John, and only brought him to light again after the fall of Jerusalem. Jesus had foretold John's long life in the word.: 'If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?' Not alluding to his coming at the end of time, as the silly legend of the 'Wandering Jew' interprets his words, but to his visitation in the overthrow of the Jewish capital and nation, A.D. 70. Paul speaks of John as 'a pillar' in the Church at Jerusalem, when himself and Barnabas held their interview there with the Apostles. Tradition locates John's labors chiefly in Parthis and Ephesus, and his Epistles indicate that his mind was engrossed in the study of those Gnostic errors which began to infest the Churches on the foundation doctrines of the Gospel. His writings suggest many reasons why these years were spent in reverent thought and less activity than those of his brethren, a serenity which educated and mellowed him for a special calling when theirs was fulfilled. When our Lord hung upon the cross he confided his mother, as a special trust, to the keeping of John, and fidelity to this trust may have confined his early labors to Palestine and the Hebrews. John 19:26,27. Still, the Apocalypse clearly connects him with missionary toil in Asia Minor. His long experience, ripe age, and close walk with God, qualified him to gather up and more fully organize what the zeal of Peter and Paul had produced, and to give a calm solidity to the kingdom of Christ. He was compelled to combat errorists in the Churches after Paul's death, but although they treated him malignantly, he well filled Paul's place in defending the truth. The extraordinary gifts appear to have passed away, and we are left to infer what new light the Spirit threw upon the organization of the Churches through John.

Jesus breathed his personal life into the first movements of the Gospel; and, for his great resemblance to Christ, John was reserved as the last of the Apostles, to bring out perfectly Christ's

The New Testament Period

deepest teachings. In their first love, the Churches were not ripe for this calm result, and John was to close the August age as the other Apostles could not have done. The methods of each were necessary to the full establishment of the truth, but even John needed a new vision from God, in order to qualify it for its sublime destinies. Hence, he soars and sings of Christ's triumphs in the Apocalypse, of his perfect humanity in his Epistles, and of his glorious deity in the Fourth Gospel. John is called 'the divine,' however, not with the modern idea of a theologian, but as a true Theologian, who gives unclouded and sublime testimony to Christ as the 'Word of God.' His writings imply that persecution drove him from Ephesus to Patmos, some think under Domitian, but more likely under Nero. The place indicates his arrest in Asia, as Patmos is one of the group of scattered islands in the southeast part of the Aegean Sea. This prison of the illustrious exile was about thirty miles in circumference, and very sterile. It was rough, overhung with cliffs, full of fissures and caverns, and here and there dotted with a scrubby olive, cypress or palm; a fitting scene for the revelation which he received. When the ship which left 'him in this awful solitude had sunk below the horizon, the sad silence in his soul was broken by the cry of his perishing brethren who were being put to death, and he looked for every new billow to bring some brother Apostle safely to this dreary rook. Night and day, the splash of the waves, the scream of the eagle, the howl of the winds, were the only sounds which he heard, save the echo of his own foot-fall and the throb of his own heart, as he rested in some den which the sea had scooped out for his home. Did he dream of Jesus there? Did the hard rook remind him by contrast of Christ's soft bosom? Was he wakened in his ease by the blast of trumpets; alone, yet not alone? Possibly, the 'seven golden lamps' flamed in his prison, a Man in shining garments stood before him, girt not with a 'towel,' but with 'a golden girdle;' and his countenance 'as the sun shining in his strength.' John 'fell at his feet as dead.' He had seen that face before, when purple with blows and stained with blood, and when he bade him go and 'speak the words of this life.' He had also known Tabor; and so, when Jesus laid his right hand upon him, and bid him take the pen, he was endued with new power to, 'write' his glory.

That touch clothed the Apostle with new energy, a new literature flooded his mind, a new dialect moved his hand, and on the withered palm, or plaintain, his *stylus* traced a new story. Had the sea emptied its abyss and thrown all its gems on the shore, had the heavens, hung all their lights over the black isle, had all history thrown its allegory before him, these had formed one mass of dazzling poverty when likened to the wondrous things written in the prophecy of this Book. What new veracities swell his sentences, what new realities enlarge his soul. He introduces the era of martyrdom, and builds the stage for the drama of redemption, and Borne, the first figure that reels over it, drunk with the blood of the saints. Then come thunders, and lightnings, and wrath. Mad prophets follow, and corrupt sorcerers, and horrid blasphemers. A scroll of registered-woes is unrolled. Then a hallowed urn empties its fire, when whirlwinds roar through the orifice of heaven, and the bottomless pit is emptied. After this the rattling of chains is heard in his grot, and Satan is bound. Figures, dark and dreadful, fly before a volley of curses, for a cluster of falling stars lights them to their native-hell. The most solemn imagery flits in cavalcade before the eye of the holy seer. A black horse and a balance,— a red horse and a sword, — a pale horse and a specter, — a white horse.— 'and he who sat, on him had a bow, and a crown was given to him, and he went forth conquering and to conquer.' Above all, the black cloud of imperial persecution is spanned with a rainbow, on which light from the cross began to glow; for the Conqueror rode past a blood-besprinkled altar, and a procession of burning ones came forth, in white robes, with palms in their

Chapter 8 - Nero and Paul, Peter and John

hands. These were led by the 'faithful martyr Antipas,' and Patmos was enshrined in glory. Then there broke forth a chorus all around the ribbed island, like the sound of the Ægean lashing it in a storm, saying: 'The kingdom of this world is become our Lord's, and his Christ's ; and he shall reign for ever and ever!'

This revelation of Christ's glory to John was meet. When young, he was the only Apostle who clung to his Master's cross on Calvary, and because he was willing to lose his life he saved it. He was the only one of the Twelve who died a natural death, bathed in glory while putting many crowns on that Saviour's head on whose bosom he had rested his own, more than half a century before. It was meet that this disciple of the Baptist, who first met Jesus by the baptismal waters in the valley of the Jordan, should be the last Apostle of the Lamb to proclaim him on his throne in the New Jerusalem. He had no clearer perceptions at the first that Jesus was pre-existent, having come from the bosom of the Father, than had his brethren. But when error attacked Christ's person, both in his flesh and deity, the beautiful old saint came to his Master's defense, not as Peter, with a sword in dark Gethsemane, but with his more powerful pen, in his living Epistles and Gospel. The fullest revelation was given when the Church needed it the most. Probably he was 'the youngest of all the Apostles at the time of his conversion, and as he outlived them all by a quarter of a century, he had seen the Gospel in all its phases. Now his tremulous hands were the only ones left to 'handle, the Word of Life.' When young, he was a son of thunder, full of fire and narrow prejudices; but now he had become meek as his Master, and broad as his Gospel. Amongst the many traditions concerning him, this is in such harmony with his character as to seem probable. It is reported, that when extreme age and infirmity rendered him unable to preach or even to stand, he still retained all his powers of 'love. So, he was frequently brought to the Church at Ephesus, when he would spread out his hands in its gatherings and say: 'Little children, love one another. Keep yourselves from idols.' The time and circumstances of his death are unknown, but the date is conjectured at from A.D. 98 to 100. During his life the Gospel had extended over large portions of Europe, Asia, and Africa; but the missionary spirit was hindered, for Christianity was compelled to don its armor for & conflict with the errors which arose in its own bosom, for which the Apostles prepared many antidotes before they fell asleep.

John wrote his three Epistles after he had seen Christianity in all its struggles and stages of development. Through the first century the Churches had been reaping the great harvest of revealed truth. As the disciple of the Baptist, he was among the first to put in the sickle, and now he was spared to bind up its last sheaf. The winsome trait of his old age is seen in one of the last acts in life, when simple, gracious love prompted him to send an inspired Epistle to an Elect Lady; for now it was needful that the women who filled the baptized Churches should be recognized 'in the truth,' for 'the truth's sake.' Paul had sent four sacred books to individual men, but from Moses down no sacred writer had addressed one to a woman. In youth the natural vehemence of John had earned for him the appellation, Son of Thunder. The unlovely heat of his spirit had prompted him to ask his Master whether he should not call for fire from heaven to consume a Samaritan village which had rejected his message, when the rebuke of Jesus told him that he was ignorant of his own spirit. Possibly he inherited this fiery ambition from Salome, his honored mother, who wished her two sons to sit as prime ministers at the right and left of the Messiah, on a political throne. But John had learned more heavenly lessons on Jesus' bosom, at his cross and tomb. Then, he had sheltered Mary, the revered mother of Jesus, under his own roof, and had been as a 'nursing father' to the Ephesian Church. All

The New Testament Period

these, under the influence of the Holy Spirit, had mellowed him and qualified him to write in hallowed strains to an Elect Lady for her confirmation in the *New* Commandment, 'which we heard from the beginning.'

Tradition assigns the labors of Matthew (Levi) to Ethiopia, and different parts of Asia; Philip to Phrygia, in Asia Minor ; Thomas to Parthis; Andrew to Syria, Thrace, and Achaia; Thaddeus to Persia or Arabia; Bartholomew (Nathanael) is said to have labored in India; Simon (Zelotes) in Egypt and Lydia; and Matthias in Ethiopia. But of this there is not reliable evidence; the record of their life and death, aside from the New Testament account, numbers the band of glorious worthies with the hidden ones of our Lord.

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

We now come to the task of setting forth the great principles on which the Christian Churches stood at the close of the Apostolic Age; for these are to be copied as the exact model to the end of time. Our chief work is to find what this model was; as the inner and divine life of those Churches molded their entire organization. When we have determined this standard, we may easily see how far it has been followed or abandoned by succeeding Churches. Many misconceptions arise in Church history from the failure to stop at this point, and to thoroughly weigh the divine history of the Churches before proceeding to consider the human. It is lamentable to witness the haste and light treatment with which this age is passed over, as if the New Testament history were but the starting-point in the great story, to be disposed of as casually as possible; whereas, it is the end of all controversy in the matter of Church life.

In the way the course of Church history is inverted, and the human record is made to falsify and cover up the divine. The true historian must fix his eye steadfastly at the beginning of his work, upon the New Testament pattern, and never remove it; because it is the only guide to truth in every age and the only authority of ultimate appeal. An exact likeness, therefore, of the Apostolic Churches should be sought at the outset, as the test to which every position and fact in the whole investigation must be brought back and tried. We never can be wrong in following the pattern found in the Constitution of the Apostolic Churches; for here we find an impervious shield for the true ecclesiastical rights of all Christian men. If we make the Apostolic Churches the mere stepping-stone to the investigation, instead of finding in them the standard of all true fact, how can we measure our way through the centuries, or exhibit their wide differences, without confounding, all their real distinctions? Hatch goes to the root of this matter when he says:

'The virtue of a canonist is the vice of a historian. Historical science, like all science, is the making of distinctions; and its primary distinctions are those of time and space...The history of Christianity covers more than three fourths of the whole period of the recorded history of the Western World. It goes back, year by year, decade by decade, century by century, for more than fifty generations. If we compare what we are and what we believe, the institutions under which we live, the literature which we prize, the ideas for which we contend in this present year, with the beliefs, the institutions, the literature, the prevalent, ideas of a hundred years ago, we shall begin to realize the difference between one century and another of these eighteen centuries of Christian history. The special difficulty of studying any such period of history arises from the fact that the centuries which are remote from our own, seem, in the long perspective, to be almost indistinguishable...Between the third century and the fourth, for example, or between the fourth and the fifth, there seems to all but scholars who have trod the ground, to be a hardly appreciable difference. If a writer quotes in the same breath Eusebius and Sozomen, or St. Hilary of Poitiers and St. Leo the Great, he seems to many persons to be quoting coeval or nearly coeval authorities. And yet, in fact, between each of these authorities there is an interval of a hundred years of life and movement, of great religious controversies, of important ecclesiastical changes. The point is not merely one of accuracy of date; it is rather that usages and events have at one time as compared with another a widely varying significance. For different centuries have been marked in ecclesiastical as in social history by great differences in the drift and tendency of ideas.'

[*Organization of the Early Christian Churches*, pp. 9,10]

For these reasons, if for none other, we must bring every event in whatever century, every drift, tendency and change, of whatever character, back to the law and the testimony of the New Testament, and must measure it by the life and letter of the Apostolic Churches, or we shall run the risk of substituting the vile for the precious and the spurious for the genuine, in Christian history. The foundation principles then, that we find in these divine organizations, are these, namely:

The New Testament Period

I. THAT THE WORD OF GOD WAS THE ONLY RULE OF FAITH AND PRACTICE

During the last half of the first century, this rule was perfected by the completion of the New Testament. From A.D. 52 to the close of the century, each Epistle was received as authority by the Church or person to whom it was sent; and copies were used by interchange amongst the Churches, until their contents became generally known, and took rank with the Old Testament. Of necessity, the remoter Churches did not possess all the books, and some might not have reached them until they were collected in one canon. All their doctrine and practice were gained either from the Old Testament, from the direct influences of the Holy Spirit orally, or by these new books. The first century presents Christianity in its fullness and freshness, its variety and unity; and all its revelations Ceased with the death of the Apostle John. After the order of nature, the New Testament gave the Apostolic Churches no systematic formula of doctrine, but left a happy liberty in its expression which reached the truth in other ways. It was centuries afterward before any thing was known of scientific theology; so that millions of souls came to the full truth as it is in Jesus without this. A systematic theology has been helpful to many thinkers, while others have been hindered thereby in reaching Christ personally, because they could see only so much of him as was discernible through the system, which was largely a net-work of human propositions. Perhaps, this is unavoidable, as human interpretations constantly change; but the Apostolic Churches were founded on primary truth, as it is found, and ever will be found, in the Inspired Text.

Words without Bible knowledge have so often darkened New Testament counsels, that it is wonderful that men have discovered Christ at all as a living Saviour, by the teaching of many modern Churches. But often, a true heart takes men farther Christ-ward than even a true head; and so Bible truth is ever proving its divinity by doing this great saving work. But still, wherever a human standard is set up in place of the Scriptures, it is always more jealously preserved than the teachings of revelation. A fanatic who corrupts the word of God is more heartily fellowshipped by many modern Churches, than he who opposes human decrees and inventions against the Scripture; while he who insists upon obedience to their authority, excites the greatest possible odium, because, to do this wounds the pride of man. Men pay a great price for saying that the right to legislate for Christian Churches belongs to Christ alone. Yet, he has given his law in the Bible, and every form of church life that is not in accordance with that law directly sets it aside. So then, in a very important sense, it partakes of disloyalty to say that Christ has not made sufficient provision for his Churches in the Scriptures, in every thing that affects their well-being.

We have seen that the only appeal made to authority by the founders of the Apostolic Churches was, to the truth as it is found in the Old Testament, the teachings and acts of Christ, and the direct inspirations of the Holy Spirit. In the Epistle to the Hebrews alone, there are thirty-four quotations from the Old Testament, while in that to the Romans there are forty-eight. Christ and his Apostles always appeal directly to the Law, the Prophets, and the Psalms, and to their co-relative sentiments, facts and precedents, where they are applicable; and where they are not applicable, a new revelation was granted. They always cite the Old Testament as the direct word of God, or of the Holy Spirit, by such forms of speech as these: 'It is written,' 'God says,' or 'Isaiah,' or 'Moses saith.' The Apostolic Churches were never allowed to fall into the dangerous popular notions of modern times, namely: That all religious teaching is simply an opinion, which happens to be held differently by certain

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

bodies of men. Such an assumption makes mere Church doctrine a powerful weapon, and gives life to all that falls under the sacramental system; which itself is based upon human dogma and patristic belief. This makes the Church and not the Bible the standard of faith and obedience; and men come to be satisfied with the substitution after this form: ' We believe the whole revealed dogma as taught by the Apostles – as committed by them to the Church – and as declared by the Church to us.' And, it follows, of course, that the Scriptures were intended to prove doctrine, but not to teach it, for that the Church is to teach it through its creeds and formulas. This doctrine shifts the whole standard of authority from the Bible to antiquity, makes antiquity the true exponent of Christianity, and forbids all appeal from its traditions to divine authority. Thus, tradition nullifies the law of Christ, by making it a dream, a sentiment and finally a mockery.

The very reverse of this was the law in the Apostolic Churches. In the hands of this human, mystical and sacramental principle, sacraments become the expression of great truths in human language; and the doctrine is fostered that material phenomena become the instrument of communicating unseen things, to which the mind of man is unequal ; as if water could purge away the pollutions of sin, or bread and wine could give eternal life, and so nature becomes a parable, and revelation an allegory. The inevitable consequence is, a Church armed with awfully mysterious sacraments and rites as channels of saving grace, and with a narrow religious teaching founded on the will of the Church, as she chooses to define it from time to time. After that, of course, the Rule of Faith is found in the Catholic teaching of the early centuries – in the decrees of councils – and in sanctioned usages. At this point, the right of private judgment is entirely cut off, because a new power has been created on earth which is competent to push aside the individual right to reason and judge about the demands of Divine Truth, as its facts and exactions assert themselves. That right once yielded, the Church claims to judge infallibly for all men on all religious questions ; and it must be obeyed without a word. Independency of mind being thus destroyed, paralysis of the intellect follows, the courage of the soul dies with its liberty, discussion becomes dangerous ; and so, all must submit and be silent, as it is safe to yield to absolute authority where one dare not dissent. The final consequence is, that it becomes a crime to claim the personal right to obey that truth which rests on the sole authority of the Inspired Word.

Yet, this fact is perfectly clear, namely: That the New Testament contains all that entered into the faith and practice of the Apostolic Churches. Whether it contains little or much, it covers all that they had, and all that we have, which has any claim on the Churches of Christ. It is the only revealed record of Christian truth. It is stamped with the divine character, and it utterly excludes every species of authority from uninspired sources. Its authority stands out alone, and will allow of no parallel or supplementary authority whatever, however venerable. The most revered antiquity stands on purely human ground, without any thing in common with the New Testament, when that antiquity is not in the Holy Book. The age of custom is one thing, its nature is another. The question of time merely has nothing to do with authority. When the line is drawn between the close of inspiration and all after-time, what follows stands upon another and a lower level, and can be no authority whatever. Even the Roman Catholic body admits this, in the claim that inspiration is still needful and is continued in her deliberations and decisions; hence, that they are of equal value with the New Testament. The purest and best of the ancient fathers, being outside of the finality of Bible inspiration, are outside forever; and, for the purposes of authority are no nearer to the fountain of truth than are the investigators of our day. As witnesses to the facts which occurred in their own

The New Testament Period

times, they are to be prized, as truthful men who deposed to facts, but nothing more ; for then as now the demand was inexorable 'To the law and to the testimony.' Wherever the fathers deflect from this standard, their testimony is of no more nor less value than that of other uninspired men.

III. IN THE APOSTOLIC AGE, THE CHURCH WAS A LOCAL BODY; AND EACH CHURCH WAS ENTIRELY INDEPENDENT OF EVERY OTHER CHURCH.

The simple term '*Ecclesia*' designates one congregation, or organized assembly, and no more, this being its literal and primal meaning. Our Lord himself designated such a society by the Aramaic word *ghiedto*, meaning a congregation; answering to the Greek '*Ecclesia*,' which is translated by it in the Aramaic version of the Old and New Testaments. These words are exactly equivalent in meaning. [Matt. 16:18; 18:17] The Septuagint renders the Hebrew word for congregation by the word '*Ecclesia*' where it designates three specific bodies: 1. A whole people collectively. Ezra 2:64, 'The whole *congregation* together was forty-two thousand three hundred and three-score.' 2. A general assembly of the people. 'A very great congregation.' Neh. 5:7. 'In the day of the assembly.' Deut. 9:10. 3. A company of persons associated for religious purposes. 1 Sam. 19:20. 'Company of the prophets.' Psalms 48:26. 'In companies they bless God.' Joel 2:16. 'Sanctify the congregation.. 'Solemn assembly.' Lev. 23:86, and elsewhere, is the translation of a different word. This word '*Ecclesia*' was borrowed from the Greek translation and naturalized into Christianity. Jesus and his Apostles used it with the strictest regard to its etymology, and if we would catch their meaning in its use, we must interpret it by its primitive sense. Its contemporary use in common secular life answered exactly to its sacred use. When Jesus first used it to characterize an association of Christian believers, all sorts of voluntary societies were common throughout the Roman Empire, in the form of clubs and guilds, for trade, sports, finance, literature and mutual help; all of which were known as the '*Ecclesia*' of those times. Whether secular bodies existed in Palestine in our Lord's day, under this name is not known, but the synagogues were known by this title. Amongst the Greco-Romans, however, the large number and importance of secular bodies called '*ecclesia*' demanded special governmental legislation, defining their powers and limits, as a guard to the public weal. After a time the Roman authorities came so to understand the primary constitution of the Christian congregations, as to bring them under the general law which regulated all other voluntary associations. [Hatch, Bampton Lectures, 1880, Lec. ii]

When our Lord appropriated this secular word to a sacred body, he threw no sacred meaning into the term itself, but retained it in its common application. The popular '*Ecclesia*,' in a free Greek city, was formed of those who were selected or called out, under the laws of citizenship for the transaction of public business. These qualified voters were convoked by the common criers, and formed the legal assembly for deliberation and decision in civic affairs, and their solemn decisions were binding. Of all the Greek terms which designate a calm and deliberative convocation, this was the most appropriate to characterize a body of Christians, charged, by their Master with concerns of vast moment. Other words would have carried with them the idea of a crowd, of a show, or of a purely governmental assembly, such as the Senate; having other elements than that merely of a properly organized assembly. Certain passages of the New Testament have been wrested by the necessity of a hierarchy, to mean that all separate Christian congregations are grouped as an aggregate, under the sense of this word. Christ is said to have founded his '*Ecclesia*' upon a rock,

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

to be its Head, and to give it pastors and teachers; but this interpretation is foreign to the scope of the word, and loses sight entirely of the purely tropical sense couched in such passages. The trope must be expressed, in exact accord with the literal sense from which it is borrowed. When Stephen speaks of the '*ecclesia*' in the wilderness, the term evidently means the whole people assembled at the Tabernacle, as the commonwealth was not many assemblies, but only one gathered in the male population. So, when the New Testament speaks of the entire Christian community as one '*Ecclesia*,' it simply uses a common *synecdoche*, by which the whole is put for a part or a part for the whole, as the case may be; the *genus* is put here for many individuals.

Consequently, when Jesus is called the Founder, the Head, the 'Redeemer of his '*Ecclesia*,' it is clearly meant, that what he is to one Christian congregation he is to all such congregations, the same severally and collectively. Exactly the same collective figure is used of a single Christian assembly, which is made up of many individuals. It 'is one body,' putting the one for the many, because each congregation is 'the flock,' the 'family,' the 'household' of Christ, and what is true of each such assembly is equally true of all. It follows, then, that the New Testament nowhere speaks of the 'Universal' 'Catholic,' or 'Invisible Church,' as indicating a merely ideal existence, separate from a real and local body. There can be no distinction between the Church and the members who constitute the Church. Such a generalization is a mere ideality, incapable of organization, under laws, doctrines, ordinances, and discipline. No man can be a member of such a body, because it can assume no responsibility either to God. or man; it can have no representation, and no man can be a member of an assembly which it is impossible to represent. Everywhere the Scripture '*Ecclesia*' is a tangible body, numbering so many by count, properly local and organized, and each congregation is as absolutely a Church as if there were not another on earth. But as there are more than one, and each is his 'body,' his 'flock;' his 'Church' is made up of every congregation, because he is equally the 'Head' and 'Shepherd' in each. The same thought which impels Paul to say, that believers 'are members of each other,' leads him to say of himself, personally, the same thing that he says of every Christian congregation: 'He loved *me*, and gave himself for *me*.' So, he says to the several Hebrew Christian congregations: 'Ye are come to a full assembly, to the *Ecclesia* of the first-born whose names are enrolled in heaven.' It is difficult to digest the mind of the merely human and modern thought, that aggregated congregations only form the body of which Jesus is the Head; but when this is done successfully, immediately the primitive idea of one congregation attaches to the term Church. A local organization fully expresses the meaning of the word *Ecclesia*, wherever it is found in Holy Writ.

In harmony with this thought, as Jesus and his Apostles expressed it, the Apostolic congregations are always spoken of in the New Testament as so many separate Churches; and groups of such congregations are designated as, the Churches in Asia, Achaia, or Macedonia, in the plural number. Our English word Church is from the Saxon *kirik*, changing the *c* hard to *ch*; and this word, as the Scotch use it, is from the Greek *kurio oikos*, 'house of the Lord.' Even the word Church, then, uncorrupted, is not a term which expresses a sensibility or a figment, but a material substance; that is, an assembly of rational beings among whom God dwells.

As to government, no man can properly say that Christ laid down no definite laws for the government of his Churches, simply because he did not give those laws a prescriptive form. Oneness of faith and practice worked out the same results in all those Churches, and these are recorded in the New Testament as matters of fact. In conserving true Christian principles they needed no more than

The New Testament Period

this in attaining their status, and what more do we need in reaching ours? Christ's positive law was written in these facts, just as the law of redemption is written in the facts of his birth, life, death and resurrection. In both cases, the facts embody his law for every age. In their vital regeneration as believing souls, and in their uniform organization, he gave the law of their constitution, to be kept, as changeless in the united body as the saving life was to be preserved in the individual member. He established his doctrines on divine principles, without the formula of a creed, and in like manner, the Holy Spirit instituted the order and discipline of the Churches on divine principles, without a code of formal precepts. In the framing of doctrines, the converting of members and the constitution of Churches, he followed the same order. The model of the New Testament Church is found in what he made it, in every portion of the total. A skilled naturalist takes the separate limbs and joints of a fossil, and by these, will give us its entire structure and functions, until we have an outline of the perfect organism. So, by carefully following the unfoldings of the New Testament, any man may trace the entire order of the New Testament Churches, as they reached completion from the hand of their Author and Finisher. They were the work of Christ, wrought through the Apostles, and not the product of Apostolic plans. Thus, as disconnected stars hanging over a dark sea show the doubting mariner his course, so the books of the New Testament, by their conjoint rays, give us a unity of truth as our guide in the matter of Church government.

The right of the Churches in the Apostolic Age to manage all their internal affairs, arose primarily from the fact that each congregation was perfect in itself for all the purposes of its own Church life. Whatever fraternal sympathy and fellowship it might crave, it was in itself the visible Church of Christ, and complete for all the ends of a visible Church. Of course, this Apostolic idea is at variance with all the popular notions of Church life as it exists today; but it is no less Apostolic on that account. Well does Dr. Carson remark, 'As to a visible Universal Church, it exists nowhere but in the ideas of polemical writers and the absurd distinctions of scholastic divinity.' [*Answer to Ewing*, p. 204] An invisible Church is a purely indefinite and mythical idea. How can we 'hear' the voice of an impalpable body of men? The New Testament never speaks of all Christians in all localities, as if they belonged to one outward and visible Church, which forms one corporate body. This is a pure myth existing only in the imagination. But the Apostolic Churches were local bodies that could be found and known and governed; and the wording of the New Testament is very minute on this point. Hence, these local Churches are never designated as, the Church of God of this or that district, province or nation, but the Church 'in,' or 'at' such and such a place. Moreover, the Churches in all localities were organized after the same order; and there is no recorded instance of any one of them which was denied the right to regulate all its affairs.

Not only was *Ecclesia* a word in common use, as has been shown, to express a civil assembly, or association, as these were formed in all cities and circles, but it expressed a special cult, and often took a religious cast amongst the pagans. Ulhorn says: 'The burial clubs, the guilds of artisans, merchants, working men of various sorts, all of which gained increasing importance to society during the Empire, bore at the same time a religious tone. Each had some god or other as a patron, and was instituted in part for his worship. His image and altar stood in their place of assembly, and every meeting began with a sacrifice.' [*Conflict of Christianity*, p. 43] We clearly see, then, that when the divine Founder of the Apostolic Churches incorporated this word *Ecclesia* into Christianity, he intended the usual sense of the word to limit its application in its new sphere to a local body of men. The only invisible Church that exists is embodied in the visible, local, and self-

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

governing Church.

The Romish figment of an impersonal and invisible Church never existed until the fourth century, when it was created in order to bring the local Churches under the yoke of an irresponsible and arbitrary power, at the utter sacrifice of those divine rights, with which Christ, the rightful Head, had endowed the local Churches. The local Church was the only Church known to the Apostles themselves, the only body which they ever addressed, and which they knew collectively as the 'Churches scattered abroad.' The Church at Rome was made up of those who lived there, who were 'beloved of God, called to be saints' – that at Corinth of 'them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus' – and the Church at Ephesus 'of the faithful in Christ Jesus,' who lived there. Even those who attended worship with those Churches, but were not numbered with the believers, had nothing to do with their government. Only those who were born of God, and met in any one place for all the purposes of a Church under obedience to Christ's law, were the Christian Church in that place. There may have been more than one Church in a given city ; but there is nothing in the New Testament to show, that one central body in that city governed all its Churches, if there was more than one.

The power of discipline being lodged in the local Church, all its members took part in its enforcement. The Corinthian case of incest is markedly in point here. 1 Cor.5:4. requires the whole Church to meet and put the offender away, 'when ye are gathered together,' under the unseen headship of Jesus Christ. And when the offender repented and was readmitted to fellowship, the same sovereign tribunal which pronounced his sentence, pardoned and restored him. 2 Cor. 2:6. The words which express the rights of these Churches, harmonize with the principles on which they were formed. The Epistles are not addressed to their officers, but to the Churches themselves, and none of these letters either deny the right of self-government to the Churches, or instruct another class or body to regard itself as higher than the Churches; but every thing was to be done by their will. The Churches held the supreme place in all things, each being expected to rectify its own evils ; and no outside power is appealed to, to do this, nor is the local Church itself referred to others for their supervision. There was nothing that partook in the slightest degree of an Apostolic hierarchy, and no one Church ranked above another in control. Each Church was a society, a family, a republic in itself, forming a perfect sovereignty for the ends of self-government. Every foundation principle was laid down indeed by the precepts or example of Christ and the Holy Spirit, or by the Apostles, and nothing could be enforced without this sanction. So then, no legislative power was given to them, but only the power of administration. In minor and secondary matters, such judgment and prudence might be followed as were in harmony with the principles of Christ's law, but these were not to be enforced as obligatory, binding, or indispensable. They settled every question affecting their own welfare by an appeal to the truth, and without appeal to any other authority. It could not be that these powers were left anywhere but inviolably in the local Church, in which, by reason of its purely local character, no sacerdotal element could exist. There was no external bond of central unity between the Churches, which made them dependent in the slightest degree upon each other. They never met in a general association, synod, or assembly of any sort up to the close of the first century, though they might have consulted with each other if they had chosen to do so; exactly as the Church at Antioch consulted with the Church at Jerusalem, purely for fraternal purposes. But, on the contrary, they each followed the law of perfect liberty, holding one another in sisterly reverence, having a common faith, cherishing a common love, and knowing no other constraint than to keep the law of Christ, each amongst themselves.

The New Testament Period

III. EACH OF THE APOSTOLIC CHURCHES ELECTED THEIR OWN PASTORS DIRECTLY, IN THE EXERCISE OF THEIR FREE SUFFRAGE.

This they did by stretching forth their hands as the sign by which they cast their vote, as many deliberative bodies now cast their vote by the uplifted hand. This was the power of ordination, which was lodged in the local Church, which ordination consisted in their election. In the Apostolic Churches ordination did in no way consist in the laying on of hands; for the appointment of a man to the pastoral office was his ordination, with or without this. The laying on of hands was often connected with the setting of any one apart for office, or for a special service, but not always, in either of these cases. Our Lord 'ordained' his Apostles, but not by the laying on of hands. He observed this form when he healed the sick and blessed little children, because both these acts couched a special benediction. For the same reason it accompanied the bestowment of supernatural gifts, as when Peter and John laid their hands on the Samaritan believers, and they received the Holy Spirit (Acts 8:17), and as when Timothy received the same 'gift given through prophesy, with the laying on of the hands of the eldership.' 1 Tim. 4:14. So Paul, who had long been an Apostle, and had preached the Gospel abundantly, received the laying on of hands at Antioch, not to induct him into the Gospel ministry, but into a special missionary work on a special missionary journey. Acts 13:2, 3. Dr. Hackett says on this passage: 'Paul was already a minister and an Apostle (see Gal. 1:1, *seq.*), and by this service he and Barnabas were now merely set apart for the accomplishment of a specific work. They were summoned to a renewed and more systematic prosecution of the enterprise of converting the heathen.'

Again, sometimes the laying on of hands was attended by prayer, and sometimes it was not. But in time it became subject to abuses in common with other apostolic practices, some of which have continued unto this day. It became, in post-apostolic times, an efficacious accompaniment of baptism, of the Supper, of the restoration of the excommunicated, and of the ordained to the work of the ministry. In fact, it was perverted – made a superstitious and sacerdotal act; and Cyprian did not scruple to say of the baptized what the hierarchy now says of ordination: 'Receive the Holy Ghost through our prayer, and the laying on of our hands.' When hands were laid on deacons and elders, or on men set apart for any special work, it was the *sign* of their appointment only.

In the election of a pastor, the whole Church united in prayer for the blessing of God upon the man whom they had chosen to serve them; and the laying on of hands by the presbytery of the local Church publicly attested their suffrages. The elders or bishops of another local Church had no right to interfere in the matter. [Carson's Ans. to Ewing, p. 190] The man selected was a member of the Church in which he was to exercise oversight. But so far from the laying on of hands indicating that the work to which the Church had called him was perpetual and changeless, he might cease to be the pastor of that Church at any time, and his election and the act of the Church in his case left him where they found him.

The fullest, clearest and most reliable account known to the writer, setting forth this whole matter, is from the pen of the learned Dr. Gill, and may be profitably quoted here: 'Epaphras, a faithful minister of Christ for the Church at Colosse, is said to be one of you, a member of that Church, Col. 1:7, and 4:12; one that is not a member of a Church cannot be a pastor of it...As every civil society has a right to choose, appoint and ordain their own officers, as all cities and towns

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

corporate their mayors or provosts, aldermen, burgesses, etc., so Churches, which are religious societies, have a right to choose and ordain their own officers, and which are ordained, *for them*, and for them *only*; that is, for each particular Church, and not another. Acts 14:23. The election and call of them, with their acceptance, is ordination. The essence of ordination lies in the voluntary choice and call of the people, and in the voluntary acceptance of that call by the person chosen and called; for this affair must be by mutual consent and argument, which joins them together as pastor and people. And this is done among themselves; and public ordination, so called, is no other than a declaration of that. Election and ordination are spoken of as the same; the latter is expressed by the former...Paul and Barnabas are said to *ordain elders in every city* (Acts 14:23), or to choose them; that is, they gave orders and directions to every Church, as to the choice of elders over them; for persons sometimes are said to do that which they give orders and directions for doing, as Moses and Solomon with respect to building the tabernacle and temple, though done by others; and Moses particularly is said to choose the judges. Exod. 18:25. The choice being made under his direction and guidance.' [Gill's *Body of Divinity*, iii, pp. 246,247] Gill further says of elections in the Apostolic Churches:

'This choice and ordination in primitive times was made two ways: by casting lots and by giving votes, signified by stretching out of hands...Ordinary officers, as elders and pastors of Churches, were chosen and ordained by the votes of the people, expressed by stretching out their hands; thus it is said of the Apostles, Acts 14:23. *When they had ordained them elders in every Church*, by taking the suffrages and votes of the members of the Churches, shown by the stretching out of their hands, as the word signifies, and which they directed them to, and upon it declared the elders duly elected and ordained.' But he explicitly denies that there was any imposition of hands used at the ordination of elders or pastors in apostolic times, in these words:

'No instance can be given of hands being laid on any ordinary minister, pastor or elder at his ordination; nor, indeed, of hands being laid on any, upon whatsoever account, but by extraordinary persons; nor by them upon any ministers, but extraordinary ones; and even then not at and for the ordination of them.' [Gill's *Body of Divinity*, iii, pp. 248,249] He also claims that whatever 'gift' was bestowed upon Timothy, no 'office' was bestowed upon him either by the laying on of the hands of Paul or of the presbytery, but that the whole proceeding was extraordinary. He further deprecates the practice as 'needless' at the present day, and as a 'weakness.' This, however, he gives as a mere opinion, in view of the abuses to which the imposition of hands has been subjected, and not as an authoritative utterance based on the requirements of Scripture. In keeping with these views, however, the English Baptists have never held councils, nor, as a custom, used the imposition of hands for the ordination of men to the ministry, but have left the whole matter in the hands of the Church which calls a man to this work; a prerogative which Christ lodged in that Church, and which all the Churches on earth cannot remove. The ordinary Church may invite sister Churches to advise her, and assist her in the matter, or she may dispense with this as she pleases. But when once her sister Churches avow that there is something defective in the ordination if they and their elders or presbyters are not called in to assist, on the pretense that men are ordained for a 'denomination,' and not for an individual Church; they introduce a new element into the Gospel system, and deliberately rob a Gospel Church of her inalienable rights.

If hands must be laid upon a pastor when he is first chosen to serve a Church, it is infinitely better to repeat that act every time that he changes his pastorate, than that outside Churches should interfere with the Gospel rights of a sister Church under the pretense of fraternity. Once violate this principle in the genius of the Gospel, as neighboring pastors and Churches, and we depart therefrom, as much as any priest, primate, or pope whatever, and become partakers of their sin. According,

The New Testament Period

then, to the New Testament, the right to ordain pastors is given by Christ to the individual Church which calls them severally, with or without a council as she pleases; and to resist her right in this matter is to resist a divine ordinance; to arrogate a prerogative which would disgrace any honest pope, while it honored his disgraceful office. Leave Christ's Churches where he left them; to their own Master they stand or fall. It were better that we never hold another council while the world stands, than that such a body should tyrannize over a sister Church by pretending that it can set any man apart to the work of the Gospel ministry, even if a Church should pretend to delegate its power to such a body ; a thing which it cannot do by any permission or example of the New Testament.

IV. THE APOSTOLIC CHURCHES WERE ACTIVELY INDEPENDENT OF THE STATE.

We have seen that Jesus laid the cornerstone of religious freedom in liberty of conscience, so that in the voluntary service of God his followers should not be vassals to human dominion. That he alone should be obeyed in all matters of faith and practice, is the spring from which all their other liberties flow. In this law he set forth his great doctrine of the majesty of the soul, when left to the sway of intelligence and responsibility. He treated a man as a man, and all men stood before him on a common level; hence, he addressed each man personally, inviting him to voluntary discipleship, through his own reason and conscience, making himself the absolute King of willing subjects. Then, his inspired Apostles carefully guarded this holy principle of soul-liberty by requiring implicit obedience to him, and enforcing among his followers all the relations of brotherly democracy. All intrusion between these they condemned as foreign and oppressive. They, therefore, neither asked permission of human governments to preach and form Churches, nor would they desist from doing so at their command. Christ being their only religious Sovereign, they neither sought favor nor feared blame from the State; every man must be fully persuaded in his own mind, and give his account to God. M. Guizot clearly expresses the Apostolic idea when he says: 'We can conceive that a man can abandon to an external authority the direction of his material interests and his temporal destiny. But when it extends to the conscience, the thought, and the internal existence, to the abdication of self-government, to the delivering one's self to a foreign power, it is truly a moral suicide, a servitude, a hundred-fold worse than that of the body, or than that of the soil.' [*Hist. of Civilization in Europe*, Lec. vi]

Neander, in applying this principle laid down by the great civilian, lodges the right to soul-liberty in 'the peculiar nature of the higher life that belongs to all true Christians.' This is but Christ's doctrine: 'Ye must be born again,' words which demand that the whole mental and moral nature, with the passions, be consecrated to him. Here, our Lord lifts the religion of the individual soul above all organization, whether in Church or State; the existence of the Church itself being dependent upon the vital, spiritual life of the individual Christian. As Head of the Church, therefore, Jesus retained all judicial power in his hands and is its only Lawgiver, taking no account of the pains and penalties of civil law; for the civil power in religious matter ends where the law of conscience begins. As Jesus himself was all that he required his followers to be, both toward God and man, so he made duty to God throw light on duty toward man. With him, personal conviction said, 'Render to God the things that are God's,' and after that, 'Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's.' That is, obedience to his Father was the first obligation, and having perfectly met that, Rome, by her highest local authority, pronounced him spotless: 'I find no fault in this man.' His disciples were to

Chapter 9 - The Apostolic Churches the Only Model for All Churches

make duty to God their calm, staying power, without any civil or ex-cathedra utterances ; and then obedience to the State would cheerfully follow, for in the nature of things the most God-fearing man is the truest citizen.

We have already seen that in matters of faith, all forms of paganism led the State to trample upon the rights of conscience at will; so that at the coming of Christ the whole world was educated in this false theory of civil government. Such Statecraft cared nothing for the individual, but only for the State, in its arbitrary and conventional claims. Cicero maintained those claims when he said: 'No man has a right to have particular gods, not recognized by the law of the State.' But Christ threw himself into direct opposition to all such tyranny, by uplifting the natural rights of man God-ward; and the Apostles sustained this teaching when they introduced anew issue with the law, in the face of the current civilization. They demanded the right to worship without molestation, and if need be, contrary to the mandates of the law; nay, and to invite all men to do so. Somehow the State has always been troubled with what it had no concern. Free religious inquiry has always disturbed its equanimity, and on that subject it has far transcended its real functions. Jesus never invoked its aid to enforce his religion, and never hinted that it had the power to decree opinions, or to frame and propagate creeds. He left it to attend to its own material and political affairs, to keep its hands off his religion altogether; but on the other hand, he enjoined obedience to its rightful powers, and interfered in no way with its proper governmental rights. Both he and his Apostles recognized the Roman Empire, in all that related to the fundamental idea of civil government. They submitted to it, and supported it in all that concerned its civil well-being. All that they asked, was a free and open field for the proclamation of Christian doctrine in every civilization, and that it might adjust itself everywhere to its natural surroundings. But that the Churches should be put under its control, was not left an open question. Because the pagan faith had made itself an engine of the State to coerce men by State forces, and in its turn built up all sorts of State policy he said: 'My kingdom is not of this world.'

Why should kings, rulers, and magistrates hold in their hands the government of the Church of Christ? Are not they to obey the Gospel personally, and to be subject to its saving influences, the same as all other sinners? and when they are converted to him, are they not to stand on a parity with all other converted men? But as to having a voice in the control of Christ's Church when they are not holy men, or above other holy men when they become regenerate, the idea is preposterous in the extreme. Civil rulers have generally sought to obtain ascendancy in his Church as a tool in their secular aims; and where they could not so use it, they have commonly looked upon it with jealousy. The potentates of the earth, with few exceptions, have not recognized such a thing as a soul, a conscience, a man; but only a body and a sword, which placed society under abject domination. Hence, it never did matter what the civilization of the State might be, the moment it interfered with Christianity it became narrow and bigoted, and held in contempt all who dissented from its dictates. In the nature of things, every form of governmental religion is intolerant and persecuting, and disgraces itself when it prescribes any form of faith for its citizens. In Europe and Asia, both before Christ and since, State religions have always cursed all lands with mobs, and massacres, and wars of the most bloody character. Paganism knew the kingdoms of this world and none other. The fact that Christ gave birth to a perfect individuality in each man, and to a personal responsibility for its use, forever separated pagan oneness of religion and legislation. A man is born into the State without choice; but if he worships sincerely he worships voluntarily; to bind the Church to the State is to

The New Testament Period

destroy the true nature of both. The first act of Christian martyrdom drew a line beyond which despotism could not pass. It slew the enslaved body, but left the native freedom of the soul untouched.

Neander says of the Church: 'The form of a State cannot be thought of in connection with this kingdom. It is a community whose whole principle of life is love. Outward law, forms of judicature, administration of justice, all essential to the organization of a State, can have no place in the perfect kingdom of Christ.' Then, to unite 'the body of Christ,' as Paul calls the Church, to the State, as an integral part thereof, is to convert these communities into monstrosities, for each is a unit of itself, having its own generic character, and it cannot brook an arbitrary unity with a foreign body. Bellarmine may reckon temporal power, pomp and glory amongst the evidences of the true Church, but Christ and his Apostles did not; and wherever the Churches have been forced into alliance with the State, the union has been the cause of departure from the faith, in the Churches themselves. Always, the State has either dragged the Church down to its own level, or the Church has insisted on governing the State, as in the Middle Ages. This struggle for freedom between Christ's kingdom and the Civil power has gone on through eighteen centuries. Reason, endurance and truth require the contest to continue, till the ideal of Christ in government is wrought out, and the double usurpation is banished from the earth, namely: The interference of the Church in temporals, and of the State in spirituals. The State has introduced sacerdotalism into the Church as a political policy, and the Church has introduced ritualistic sacramentarianism into the State for the ends of temporal 'aggrandizement, in the place of saving grace and holy living. Thus, out of a Christian democracy this union evolves first an aristocracy; and then a hierarchy, for the enforcement of a sacramental salvation by the secular power. The true Gospel has always flourished the most where men have been the freest; where no artificial lines have been drawn between man and man, class and class; and where no fetter of party, State, or race has been applied, but where all have stood on a religious equality.

Now, Jesus left his simple-hearted Churches in that purely organic state which his Apostles had given them. Their faith was to center in him and his benevolent purposes, without reliance on national revenues or political weapons. Eloquence and art, philosophy and legislation, were in battle array against them; yet they must plant his banner in all lands by invading their cherished interests and destroying their established practices, their only weapon being Love. This was to make arid deserts blossom like the rose. No tear, thereafter, should fall unseen by the eye of love, and no sigh expire but on its ear. An ideal cross, borrowed from the sign of felony, was to be their insignia, a meritorious doctrinal cross, outlined against the blackness of darkness itself. By this sign they were to conquer obstinacy and unbelief, as it would supersede all old modes of thought, bring in a new morality, create new intellect and goodness, and revolutionize society. The cross was to be the new scepter over human spirits, and the Crucified should say: 'Behold, I make all things new!'

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

The first office to be considered is that of THE DEACON. This word is the English of the Greek *diaconos*, and means a servant; literally, to pursue after, to hasten by speed in service. The cardinals are regarded as the servants, or deacons of the Pope, a fact which accounts for their strange costume, worn in imitation of the ancient errand-man. His hat has a broad brim to shade the eyes from the sun, with long strings to tie under the chin in windy weather; and the end of his cloak is tucked under his girdle so that the limbs may be free for speed. The outside pressure of persecution at Jerusalem, and the burden of deep poverty, called for great sagacity and fidelity in the Christian leaders. Both Christ and his Apostles were poor, so that his servants had been trained to mutual dependence, and the use of a common treasury during his ministry had thrown a new light upon poverty, and given a new religion to the poor. Thus, when thousands of the same class came into the infant Church, their dependence seemed crippling. At this time the whole empire was poor, and the endurance of Christianity was thoroughly tried. The financial world had become exhausted, by disruption and war, luxury and waste, and society was demoralized by the neglect of agriculture in large tracts of country. A few were wealthy, but taxation was oppressive and the poor were very poor. All great cities were deeply in debt, having borrowed large sums of money to build those massive structures whose ruins are now the wonder of the world. On these loans they paid exorbitant interest, which left them bankrupt and filled the land with paupers. Borne itself had 44,000 wretched lodging-houses and other apartments where squalor abounded, to 1,780 decent habitations; and Cicero, who died B.C. 43, reports that city in his time as having only 2,000 proprietors out of 1,200,009 inhabitants. [Cic. De Off., ii, 21]

But no province of the Empire was so impoverished as Palestine. It had always been an agricultural country, without manufactures or commerce. Now, its most enterprising people were scattered over the world for the purposes of trade, it had passed through a long succession of wars and reverses, and the extortionate tribute which Rome had wrung out of its fibers had reduced it to abject poverty. The site of its capital was chosen for its strong natural fortifications, but when it proved vulnerable it was left as the central sanctuary and seat of theology, without wealth to give it attraction, for more than once it was helped by outside charity. Still, to all foreign Jews it was the monument of holy memories, and the object of lifelong hope. The visits of the wealthy at the feasts furnished it with some supplies, but all Jews returned to its holy places and privileges for the solace of their souls, when deep poverty overtook them, especially widows and orphans who had laid the bones of their dead in strange soil. The 'chief joy' of these was to gather together what little they had, and hasten to die within the shadow of its hallowed walls, even if they slept in 'the place to bury strangers in.' Yet these classes were not always welcome; even the doctors of the law, who treated all women lightly, refused religious teaching to women. This state of things accounts for the great poverty which Christianity found in Jerusalem, and gives new weight to Christ's saying: 'The poor ye have always with you.' Sometimes pagan rulers and corporations were moved with pity to the extremely poor; but here is a new thing in the earth, in the form of a new religion which made benevolence its ideal. Its Founder had been born in a stable, had spent his life in deep poverty, had been buried in another man's tomb; and now he had made men members one of another, had created a new virtue in the heart toward the weak, and had elevated men to thrift by sympathy. The poor, therefore, embraced the Gospel as a fresh source of strength; it made them rich in bread as well as in faith, and consumed the partition-walls between the poor and rich in the flames of brotherly love.

The New Testament Period

Instead of demanding hecatombs of beasts at the hands of widow and orphan, it tendered them 'one sacrifice for sin,' offered forever, and made the outcast and famishing its altar of sacrifice. Such love led those who had worldly goods to give to the poor, and bound the members of the new faith in a oneness which made all things common. Yet they neither abandoned the rights of ownership in private property, as Peter's questions to Ananias show, nor adopted a communist life, such as would pauperize the members of the Church.

A mere glance reveals the difficulty of the twelve in dealing with this state of affairs; they spread a free table daily for such as needed the bounty of the Church, for as yet they had no division of labor with others, and out of this common meal served to the multitude the deacon's office arose. The Church at Jerusalem was composed entirely of Jews and proselytes from paganism to the Jewish faith, some natives, some foreign born. Those born in Palestine spoke the Aramaic and read the Scriptures in the Hebrew; hence they were called Hebrews. Those born in other lands read and spoke the Greek or Hellenic (from Hellas, in Thessaly, the cradle of the Greeks), and were called Hellenists. These were held in disrepute by the native Jews, and were treated as inferiors because they mixed with the Gentiles. They had seen more of the world than the Hebrews, were less hampered by the rigid and official orthodoxy of Jerusalem, and were more cosmopolitan and less aristocratic in their feelings toward others. These phases of human nature brought jealousies into the fraternity, and as the Hellenist widows were the most numerous, they necessarily called for a larger share of the bounty. So the more strict brethren took it into their heads that their poor were 'overlooked,' and with the true instinct of modern Baptist grumblers, they began to fill the Church with complaints that the distribution of bread was not even and fair. The adjustment of this business so diverted the attention of the Apostles and consumed their time, that they asked the Church to select seven men from their own ranks, who should 'help,' 'wait' and 'serve,' at the provision-tables, and they would confirm the popular choice. They also laid down clearly the qualifications for the work. They must be 'of good report, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom;' discreet, having the confidence of the people; being marked for consecration, integrity, sound judgment, and impartiality; all this, although their duties were purely material, or, as Jerome expresses it, they were 'attendants on tables and widows.' 'The seven' were selected, but we are not to infer that they were all Hellenists because they bore Greek names, as the Jews commonly took such names, which renders it likely that impartiality ruled, and that they were taken equally from both factions, with one 'proselyte' to keep the balance even. Poor human nature always tells the same story.

Yet those chosen to this service are not called '*deacons*,' but simply the 'seven,' to distinguish them from the 'twelve.' We meet this word first in the New Testament in the Epistle to the Philippians, and some think that the office was borrowed from the almoners of the synagogue. Dr. Lightfoot, the present Bishop of Durham, pronounces it 'a baseless though a very common assumption, that the Christian diaconate was copied from the arrangements of the synagogue.' The duties of the Levite in the temple, and the office of the Chusan the synagogue, were of an entirely different character from those of the deacon. The Levite took care of the temple sacrifices, removed the blood, offal and ashes of the altar, served as door-keeper at the gates, and aided in the chorus of the psalmody. The duties of the Chusan were of the same order, so far as care for the synagogue went, and aid in the services allowed. But the only work of the deacon was to serve at the table in the daily meal and relieve the poor, a labor which called for another class of qualifications from those of these Jewish officers. In that dishonest and licentious age such a delicate trust as that held

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

by the deacon required rare spirituality and spotless character, keen insight of human nature, large patience and singular tact in dealing with the suffering, as well as a broad and intelligent sympathy. In a word, his sacred duties called for the 'Holy Spirit and wisdom,' special graces which neither Levite nor Chusan needed for their work.

The fact is most marked that those officers at a heathen feast, whose duty it was to serve the portions of food which were eaten, were called the '*deacons*.' One officer slew the victims; another offered them in sacrifice or cooked them; then this third officer served the flesh to the devotees. [Corpus Inscr. Græco. No. 1593, b add.] This fact is very suggestive, as showing the unpretentiousness of the office and title, and may account for the sacerdotal air which superstition has thrown around the diaconate in some communions. This election created a new office in the Church, but not a new order in the ministry, as that term is now technically used. Alford warns his readers (on Acts 6) 'Not to imagine that we have here the institution of an ecclesiastical order so named' – *deacons*. In modern parlance they were 'laymen' before their election, and they remained so after. The reason given for the creation of their office was, that the Apostles might be relieved from those duties which interfered with their full 'ministry of the Word.' One set of ministers was not created to help another to do the same work, but duties that were not ministerial or pastoral were separated from those that were, and given into other hands. So that the diaconship was not probationary to the eldership, nor have we any evidence that in the first century any deacon became an elder. Neither did their office prevent their doing other Christian work, for we find Philip the first witness for Christ in Samaria. But he did not publish the good news by virtue of his office as a deacon, any more than Stephen was martyred as a deacon. Bishop Taylor has abundantly shown, in his *Liberty of Prophesying*, that in the Apostolic Churches each believer of the brotherhood had the right to proclaim the Gospel as well as the pastors. The work of spreading it by preaching was left to each one as a question of capacity and not of office. Even the private worshipers amongst the Jews had the right of public speaking in the synagogue, as we see by the freedom of our Lord and his Apostles there, for they were not officers in that assembly. So it was in the Christian congregations; and, of course, the office of a deacon did not deprive him of the right to teach in common with his brethren. Luke tells us that the persecution at Jerusalem scattered the Church there 'except the Apostles,' and that the 'scattered,' the whole lay membership of that Church, preached the Word. So the diaconship did not shut up a deacon to the service of tables only; he might do missionary work, by right of his personal regeneration, and attend to his office, also. Did the Apostle Paul act improperly when he carried the collection of the Grecian Churches to Jerusalem, because he was not officially a deacon? Thus a deacon might engage in other religious labor besides that imposed by his office.

The instructions given to the deacon in the Epistles, show the functions of his office to have been the same in the latter period of the Apostolic Age that they were when the office was created; and it nowhere appears that they exercised the pastoral or ministerial office. Even in matters relating to the relief of the poor they were not supreme. When Paul and Barnabas brought relief to the poor saints at Jerusalem, they delivered the gift to the 'elders' and not to the deacons: and no deacons assisted in the call, deliberations, or decisions of the advisory Council at Jerusalem. Paul's associations there were all with the elders and not the deacons of the Church, showing that the deacons held no rank in the pastoral office. Thirty years after their office was formed, he instructs them, and enjoins precisely those qualifications for filling it, which were needed in one whose

The New Testament Period

business it was to go from house to house dispensing alms, and none other. In his Epistle to the Corinthians, A.D. 57, he calls them 'helps;' in that to the Romans, 'the ministration;' and in his letter to Timothy, he lays special stress upon their holding 'the faith in a good conscience,' as men free from vices, especially the sins of greed and gossiping, not even mentioning that they should be 'apt to teach;' which would be a strange omission if teaching were a special part of their office, as a subordinate order in the pastoral ministry. In his Epistle to Titus, about A.D. 66, he does not mention the deacons at all, although he says much to 'elders,' of their appointment, work and qualifications; showing again that he did not rank deacons in the pastoral office, nor were they so ranked in that age. In the third century, when there were forty six elders in the congregation at Rome, there were only seven deacons; and the Council of Neo-Caesarea, A.D. 314-325, decreed that no Church should have above seven. Origen says, that 'The deacons dispense the Church's money to the poor;' and in non-Episcopal Churches this office remains substantially uncorrupted to our times.

THE DEACONESS, in the Apostolic Churches did much the same work as the deacon. Grotius says: 'In Judea the deacons could administer freely to the females,' but amongst the Greeks and farther East, the enforced seclusion of women deprived them largely of the public administrations of men; this was the case, to a certain extent, amongst the Romans also. But all through the Oriental nations men were excluded from the apartments of females, contrary to that social freedom which marks western civilization. In all the spheres of life, woman suffered a degradation to which we are strangers, and Christianity purposing to lift her up, provided for her the deaconess, to bless her own sex in her own peculiar way, publicly and privately. Phoebe is the first known to us who filled that honorable office, and Paul passes a high encomium upon her, 'she succored many.' [Rom. 16:1] There was abundant room for these valuable helpers, as the Churches were then constituted, amongst the rich and poor, women of reputation and the debased slave-women. The deaconess possessed high qualifications, being 'grave, sober, faithful, and not slanderous.' Her sacred duties demanded devotion, approved character and ability, requiring her to be kind, intelligent, courteous, and to follow 'every good work.' Eight years after Paul had spoken so gratefully of Phoebe, he gives full instruction as to these qualifications. These honorable women were chosen from matrons or widows well advanced in life, and many of our best interpreters think that Paul describes them in 1 Tim. 5:9,10: 'Let not one be enrolled as a widow under threescore years old, having been the wife of one husband; well reported of for good works; if she brought up children, if she lodged strangers, if she washed the feet of the saints [in hospitality], if she relieved the afflicted, if she diligently followed every good work.' We have reason to believe that many of these 'elect' ladies brought great honor to the faith, for Pliny, in his famous letter to the Emperor Trajan, A.D. 110-111, says, that he had just examined 'two women- servants who are called ministers,' deaconesses; by which, he means that he had tortured them, as was common when Christian women suffered persecution for Christ.

The order of deaconess continued in the Latin Church down to about the sixth century, and in the Greek to the twelfth; and was discontinued, principally because the diaconate became a priestly office which women could not fill; nuns then took the place of deaconesses. Anciently they were ordained by form as well as by vote, and the work known as the 'Apostolic Constitutions,' written about A.D. 300, contains this beautiful prayer used at their ordination: 'Eternal God, Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Creator of man and of woman; thou who didst fill with thy Spirit, Miriam, Deborah, Hannah, and Hulda; thou who didst vouchsafe to a woman the birth of thy only begotten Son:...look down now upon this, thy handmaid, and bestow on her the Holy Spirit, that she may

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

worthily perform the work permitted to her to thy honor, and to the glory of Christ.' So long as the immersion of adult females remained in the Churches, the deaconess waited upon them in baptism; but, says Archbishop Kenrick: 'This class of females having ceased, from a variety of causes, it became expedient to abstain from the immersion of females;' and he adds the reason, 'it is certain that the applicant entered' the font in a state of entire nudity.' [*Treatise on Baptism*, p. 173] According to *Hanbury's Memorials*, the Congregationalists of England and Holland restored the office to some extent, in the seventeenth century, and the Moravians continue it to this time. Also the Broadmead Baptist Church, at Bristol, England, two centuries ago, adopted the full Apostolic model, by selecting a plurality of elders, with deacons and deaconesses, making the duties of the latter, the care of the sick, and the poor.

The shepherds or pastors of the Apostolic Churches were known as PRESBYTERS, OR ELDERS, from *presbuteroi*; and as Bishops, or overseers, from *episkopoi*. This fact should stand in its own order of New Testament time; for if we take it out of its historical surroundings and throw it backward or forward into another century, it will lose its distinctive value. Dean Alford says, with clear chronological truth: 'In those days titles sprung out of realities and were not merely hierarchical classifications.' In such a question as this, chronology is the stoutest logic. We must, therefore, consider and restrict these titles to their primitive sense, as best defining the office which they represent. They are entirely synonymous in the New Testament, and the nature of the office which they represent, is to be drawn from their acknowledged meaning.

Pastors appeared in all these Churches very early after their organization, and the Hebrew Christians called them presbyters (elders) while the Gentile Churches called them bishops (overseers), the terms being interchangeable. The leaders or rulers of the synagogue were called presbyters, but they were not prototypes of the Christian presbyters, for there was next to nothing in common between the two. The synagogue could in no sense become the pattern of the Christian congregation, which was constituted for a different purpose, and demanded that freer and more independent form, which was in harmony with the genius of Christ's more generous teaching.

Neander says:

'It may be disputed whether the Apostles designed from the first, that believers should form a society exactly on the model of the synagogue. The social element of both had something of similarity, enough to warrant the use of the current word presbyter in the ancient sense of leadership; this being the sense that in which both civil and sacred rulers had long been known in Israel, and by which the members of the Sanhedrin were then known.' [*First Planting*, i, p. 34]

So, then, every one knew what parties were referred to in the Christian congregation when its 'elders' were spoken of. But the Gentiles, who were not familiar with the peculiarity of Jewish titles and institutions, could not so well come to a knowledge of this spiritual office by the use of the word, when standing alone and unexplained. To them, the term elder expressed age, but little of fitness or rank. Another term was in use amongst the Greeks which exactly expressed the duties of the Christian presbyter, namely, the word *episkopoi*, overseer. With them, this was purely a civil and secular name, which was used in private associations, or in municipal and magisterial bodies.

The superintendents of finance, of workmen, the inspectors of bread and produce, and the overseers of public affairs generally, were designated by this term. In fact, all persons who had oversight of affairs, either public or private, were known as bishops. For this reason the same class

The New Testament Period

of men who were known as elders in the Jewish-Christian Churches, were called bishops, or overseers, in the Gentile Churches. Thus Bishop Lightfoot, after speaking of the presbyters, asks:

'What must be said of the term bishop? It has been shown that in the Apostolic writings the two are merely different designations of the same office. How and where was this second name originated? To the officers of Gentile Churches is the term applied, as a synonym for presbyter. At Philippi, in Asia Minor, in Crete, the presbyter is so called. In the next generation the title is employed, in a letter written by the Greek Church of Borne to the Greek Church at Corinth. Thus the word would seem to be especially Hellenic. Beyond this we are left to conjecture. But if we may assume that the directors of religious and social clubs amongst the heathen, are commonly so called, it would naturally occur, if not to the Gentile Christians themselves, at all events to their heathen associates, as a fit designation for the presiding members of the new society. The infant Church of Christ which appeared to the Jew as a synagogue, would be regarded by the heathen as a confraternity.' [*Christian Ministry*, pp. 27,28]

The duties of the bishop-elders were to feed and rule the flock of Christ as shepherds, by guidance, instruction, and watchcare. Paul first uses the word bishop at Miletus, when he charges the presbyters of the Church at Ephesus to take heed to the flock over which the Holy Spirit had made them bishops. Here the two names are used interchangeably as descriptive of the same thing. On this point Neander remarks:

'That the name also of *episcopus* was altogether synonymous with that of presbyter, is clearly collected from the passages of Scripture where both appellations are interchanged (Acts 20; compare verse 17 with verse 28 ; Titus 1:6-7), as well as from those where the mention of the office of deacon follows immediately after that of "*episcopi*," so that a third class of officers could not be between the two. Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:1-8. This *interchange* of the two appellations is a proof of their *entire coincidence*.' [*Hist. Christian Religion*, sec. ii, 1]

As to the kind of rule which these bishops exercised, it was executive only, and for the purpose of moral up-building, in submission to the truth which they taught, and not for the exercise of lordship. So far from its being an exercise of personal power, they were held responsible to the local Church which they served for their conduct as stewards. Neander says again: 'They were not destined to be unlimited monarchs, but rulers and guides in an ecclesiastical republic and to conduct every thing in conjunction with the Church assembled together, as the servants and not the masters of which they were to act.' [*Hist. Christian Religion*, i, p. 193] The congregation having first taken them from the common ranks by their own democratic action, as Athens invested its officers with governing powers in olden times, they were responsible to the body which created them for the exercise of their powers.

All sorts of false pretensions have been hung upon the word 'bishop,' as used by the writers of the New Testament. But Phil. 1:1; Acts 20:17; and James 5:14, set forth the fact that there were several bishops in the same congregation, an idea which will not harmonize with the assumption that a bishop ranks above an elder, or even a body of elders. Then, 1 Peter 5:1, 2, solemnly charges the 'elder' to use well his episcopal functions. Even as late as Jerome A.D. 331-370, this oneness of office was generally admitted, in the Churches, for he says: 'The elder is identical with the bishop, and before parties had so multiplied under diabolical influence, the Churches were governed (meaning each Church) by a council of elders.'

Nor were the so-called 'powers' of Timothy and Titus in any sense those of the modern prelate. They were merely the functions of missionary evangelists. These holy men were sent to establish

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

feeble Churches already planted, and to organize new ones, as the same class of men today who labor without prelatical authority. Neither did James assume authority at Jerusalem after the form of a modern diocesan. He simply attained greater influence than other pastors by his all-absorbing consecration to God, and to the feeding of his flock, as a holy pastor over that single congregation. In association with his fellow-elders in that body, he sacredly guarded its interests as a brotherhood. Persecution was perpetually breaking up this and other Churches and was one of the things which made this plurality of elders in the same congregation necessary. The first blow was generally aimed at the elders, as the official heads of these communities. Some of them were cut down, others were obliged to flee for their lives, and at the best the Churches were broken into groups, especially in large cities, so that they must be ministered to, when, where, and as they could. When the elders did meet together for consultation, either in time of peace or in persecution, some one must preside over their conferences; and he who did so, acted simply as the peer of his brethren, without authority over them; for while he was a bishop, each one of his brethren was the same. This, James did at Jerusalem, no more and no less.

Again, what was known as the presbytery in the Apostolic Churches was not made up of a body of elders, or pastors from the various local Churches, for 'Scripture presbytery,' as Dr. Carson says, 'is the eldership, or plurality of elders in a particular Congregation.' [*Answer to Ewing*, p. 382] There is absolutely nothing in the New Testament which gives those who rule in one Church any authority in another; and more, no Church is mentioned as having but one bishop or elder. These had no power out of their own congregation, and no such distinction, exists even there as pastoral elders and ruling elders.

Both Dr. Geo. Campbell and Neander have clearly shown that the elders in one Church were all rulers, for the liberty, edification, and usefulness of the body, and that no class or distinction existed amongst them. Had there been two classes, their qualifications had differed with their duties, and so they would have been designated by different names. No elders are spoken of who do not rule, who are not pastors, but all pastors are known as elders. We read of 'all the elders at Jerusalem,' of 'elders in each Church' (not an elder, singular); as at Derby, Lystra, Antioch, and other places. At Lystra Paul met with Timothy, and most likely it was there that 'The hands of the presbytery' were laid upon him. Not the hands of presbyters from various local Churches; but, in the language of Dr. Samuel Davidson: 'The elders set over a single Congregational Church.' [*Cong. Lec.* 1848]

The phrase, 'The presbytery,' as the phrase, 'the lawyer,' 'the statesman,' in the classification of men, means every presbytery, in the classification of the body of elders in the several Churches. Carson, says, that the word denotes: 'A certain kind of plurality of elders. It represents *stated association*. The accidental or occasional meeting of the elders of a number of Churches, would be a meeting of the elders, not of the presbytery. The word denotes both the plurality and the union. The senate is not even a plurality of senators...It is taken for granted in this kind of expression, that it is a definite, well-known body of men acting in association. As there is no such association among the elders of different Churches, it must be the elders of one Church.' [*Ans. to Ewing*,] Neander corroborates this view, thus: 'It is certain that every Church was governed by a union of the elders, or overseers, chosen from among themselves, and we find among them no individual distinguished above the rest, who presided as a *primus inter pares*, first among equals.'

But, above all absurd positions, is that which makes the bishop of modern times the successor of the Apostles. When they died they appointed none to fill their places, for their office was peculiar

The New Testament Period

and connected only with the planting of Christianity, by upholding Christ's teachings and requirements; their mission being confirmed by the special gifts of the Holy Spirit. All this was indispensable until the standard of faith and practice was settled in the inspired Books; they themselves, for the time being, filling the place of those writings, as the chosen organ of the Spirit. Then, they were the only authoritative guides for the Gospel Churches, by whom the will of Christ was communicated. Through their tongue and pen the Spirit gave his directions and decisions, and they are now exactly what the Churches of their age recognized them; the New Testament supplied their place as the channel through which the Spirit now speaks to the Churches.

Those who would foist diocesan episcopacy upon the New Testament Churches, think that they find their stronghold in the phrase 'angel of the Church' (*angelos*), which is simply a messenger. In Matt. 11:10, Jehovah himself calls John the Baptist, 'my angel' (messenger), and in turn, John calls his own messengers to Christ, 'angels' (Luke 7:18-24). But were these prototypes of modern prelates? Even Paul's thorn in the flesh is called by himself an 'angel,' 'a messenger of Satan.' 2 Cor. 12:7. So, the seven letters to the Churches, Rev. 2:3, imply that the angel of the Churches was some person sent from each of them on a temporary mission, and chosen by the Church itself for that mission. Each of the Churches had its separate messenger; there was not one angel only for the seven, after the order of modern episcopacy. A cause must be hard pressed, to lay violent hands upon this part of the Apocalypse in support of such an innovation. Patmos, where the Apostle John wrote this book, was not far from the seven Churches of Asia, and it was natural that the holy prisoner should request each one of them to send some faithful messenger who should receive from him, personally, what message he had from Christ to send to them severally. The Apostle Paul sent his Epistles to the Churches in the same way, for each messenger who carried them, was then capable of proving that they were not forgeries. And, now, this was the only means left at the command of John for sending Christ's revelations to the Churches, by trustworthy hands. Is it surprising, then, that Jesus should instruct his imprisoned servant, to write this and that message to this and that Church, and to entrust the message to these individual messengers? The trust which the Saviour himself confided to them, entitled them to be called 'seven stars,' each bearing new light to one of the seven Churches of which they themselves were the 'seven lamp stands' set for the illumination of all around them. These Churches were not to be deprived of necessary light because John was a prisoner; but Jesus would prove to them by these seven epistles, that he still held them as stars in his right hand, and had not turned Over their keeping to a sevenfold episcopacy, but maintained for each of them a separate message, to be brought to them by seven faithful messengers, as seven separate congregations, who, despite their faults, were still dear to their Sovereign Lord.

BAPTISM was the first ordinance of the apostolic churches. Our Lord stamped this institution with a marked and reverend dignity, putting higher honor upon it than on any act in Christianity, by making it the only institution to be enforced in the august names of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Neither the preaching of the Gospel, the administration of the Supper, nor any other transaction has this high sanction from his lips, because none of them hold the same solemn relation to the Trinity which this holds. He did more than merely command baptism to be administered by the authority of the Trinity; as Dr. Dwight puts the formula, 'Not *in* but *into* the name' of the Trinity. Of course, not into the essence of the Godhead, but the baptized are publicly introduced into the family of God, and are entitled in a special manner to the name of God; or, as Dr. Trollope better expresses the sense: 'By this solemn act we are devoted to the faith, worship, and obedience of these three, as

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

Creator, Redeemer, and Sanctifier.' The conception of divine dignity which Christ threw into baptism, led the Apostolic Churches to see the proper place which it holds in the Gospel system, and to shape their polity accordingly. Their conduct contrasts strikingly with that modern fanaticism which pushes it out of the place given to it by Christ, either by making it the source of moral regeneration, or by depreciating it as an optional rite or form. Our only safety is in brushing away the fog which this abuse has thrown about it, and in going boldly back to examine and practice it, as we find it in the New Testament.

Jesus declared it to be from heaven; he doubly honored its appointment by his Father, by obediently submitting to it on the opening of his own ministry, and by enjoining it on others to the end of time. It was the first institution in his mind when he himself began to preach; and the last that be pressed upon those whom he left to preach, when he charged them on the 'mountain in Galilee,' as he spoke his last command in his resurrection body. As John Henry Newman says: 'Friends do not ask for literal commands, but from their knowledge of the speaker they understand his half-words, and from love to him they anticipate his wishes.' Here is not even the reverend 'half-word,' it is his last command that all believing men should be baptized upon their faith. As the Captain of salvation he gave this military mandate, 'Follow me!' and made the law doubly positive by his own example. It was this simple, heart-felt sincerity in obeying him which led a noted saint to say: 'Wherever I have seen the print of his shoe on earth, there I have coveted to set my foot, too.' The Apostolic Churches associated those primal exercises of the heart – repentance, forgiveness of sin, and regeneration of soul – with baptism; these were the preparation for baptism, which exhibited the new religions state into which their members were brought. Hence, says Dr. Jacob: 'It was evident from the first that Christian baptism, though in its outward form one single act, represented no single, isolated state of feeling – but a spiritual transaction carried on in the spirit and conscience, and then declaring itself externally...Consequently, the fact that persons had been. baptized is in the New Testament often referred to, both as indicating their privileged position, and as reminding them of their serious obligation to live in a manner not unworthy of it.' [*Ecc. Polity*, pp. 247,251] This exactly accords with the inspired teaching. 'Through *grace* ye are all the children of God, for as many of you as were baptized into Christ, put on Christ.' Gal. 3:27. 'Buried with him in your baptism in which ye were also raised up with him, *through faith* in the operation of God.' Col. 2:12. Men who professed faith and were baptized were regarded by those Churches as true believers, until their conduct proved the contrary. Peter teaches the same doctrine when he says that 'baptism is not the putting away of the filth of the flesh,' the mere cleansing of the body; it goes deeper and signifies the inward state of the baptized, which must correspond with the outward appearance; by 'the answer of a good conscience toward God.' What a terrible rebuke is this to the ignorant notion that if your own conscience approves of your baptism, you have all the baptism that you need. No, the Apostle insists that the purity of your conscience as a saved man must correspond to the profession which you make when you are buried with Christ in baptism. Thus, Jerome understood the New Testament, and says: 'First they taught all nations, then. immerse those that are taught, in water; for it cannot be that the body should receive the sacrament of baptism unless the soul has before received the truth of faith.' [*Contr. Arian. Orat.*, iii, p. 209]

In the last edition of Herzog's 'Encyclopedia' (*Art. Taufe*) these words are used: 'Everywhere in the New Testament the presupposition is, that only those who believe are to be baptized. That in the New Testament no direct trace of infant baptism is found may be regarded as settled. Efforts to

The New Testament Period

prove its presence suffer from the lack of presupposing what is to be proved.'

Although Liddon makes baptism the instrument of regeneration, perhaps no modern writer so lucidly sets forth its relation to regeneration as he, and his forceful clearness will justify the following long quotation:

'Regeneration thus implies a double process, one destructive, the other constructive; by it the old life is killed and the new life forthwith bursts into existence. This double process is effected by the sacramental incorporation of the baptized, first with Christ crucified and dead, and then with Christ rising from the dead to life; although the language of the Apostle distinctly intimates that a continued share in the resurrection-life depends upon the co-operation of the will of the Christian. But the moral realities of the Christian life, to which the grace of baptism originally introduces the Christian, correspond with, and are effects of, Christ's death and resurrection. Regarded historically, these events belong to the irrevocable past. But for us Christians the crucifixion and the resurrection are not mere past events of history; they are energizing facts from which no lapse of centuries can sever us; they are perpetuated to the end of time within the Kingdom of the Redemption. The Christian is, to the end of time, crucified with Christ; he dies with Christ; he is buried with Christ; he rises with Christ; he lives with Christ. He is not merely made to sit together in heavenly places as being in Christ Jesus, he is a member of his Body, as out of his Flesh and out of his Bones. And of this profound incorporation baptism is the original instrument. The very form of the sacrament of regeneration, as it was administered to the adult multitudes who in the early days of the Church pressed for admittance into her communion, harmonizes with the spiritual results which it effects. As the neophyte is plunged beneath the waters, so the old nature is slain and buried with Christ. As Christ, crucified and entombed, rises with resistless might from the grave which can no longer hold him, so, to the eye of faith, the Christian is raised from the bath of regeneration radiant with a new and supernatural life. His gaze is to be fixed henceforth on Christ, who, being raised from the dead, dieth no more.' [Bampton Lectures, pp. 345,346]

This high doctrinal significance of baptism was constantly kept in mind in the Apostolic Churches, when they buried the bodies of believers in the waters of seas, rivers, and other convenient places, and it could not be set forth in any other way. It would be wearisome to quote critics, historians, theologians, and the, highest authorities in exposition to sustain this position, still a few may not be amiss.

Dr. Cave says of ancient immersion:

'By the persons being put into water was lively represented the putting off of the sins of the flesh, and being washed from the filth and pollution of them; by his abode under it, which was a kind of burial into water, his entering into a state of death and mortification, like as Christ remained for some time under the state or power of death...and then by his *emersion*, or rising up out of the water, was signified his entry upon a new course of life, differing from that which he lived before.' [*Prim. Christianity*, ch. x, pp. 320,21] Dean Goulburn voices the higher scholarship on this subject in these words:

'There can be no doubt that baptism, when administered in the pristine and most correct form, is a divinely constituted emblem of bodily resurrection...Animation having been for one instant suspended beneath the water, a type this of the interruption of man's energies by death, the body is lifted up again into the air by way of expressing emblematically, the new birth of resurrection.' [Bampton Lectures, p. 18]

The entire Greek Church, which at present numbers about 70,000,000 of communicants, and whose custom it has always been to immerse, thus strongly expresses itself in its great standard, the 'PEDALION,' a folio of 484 pages, and sent forth under the authority of the Patriarch and Holy Synod, on pp. 29-33:

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

'The distinctive character of the institution of baptism, then, is immersion (*baptisma*), which cannot be omitted without destroying the mysterious meaning of the sacrament, and without contradicting, at the same time, the etymological signification of the word which serves to designate it. The Western (Roman) Church, therefore has separated from the imitation of Jesus Christ: she has caused all the sublimity of the external sign to disappear; in short, she is guilty of an abuse of words, and of ideas in practicing baptism by aspersion, the mere announcement of which is a laughable contradiction.'

With equal decision, but in milder terms, the Dean of Norwich complains that the substitution of sprinkling for immersion has utterly obscured 'the emblematical significance of the rite, and renders unintelligible to all but the educated the Apostle's association of burial and resurrection, with the ordinance.' Those who are not Baptists find fault on this subject more bitterly than they do. A treatise authorized by the patriarchs of Jerusalem, Constantinople, and Alexandria, declares in Chapter vii, that the attempt to prove that the ancients sprinkled, is merely an attempt to palm off 'lies.' Chapter xix attempts to show 'that sprinkling being satanical, is opposed to Divine Baptism;' and Chapter xxxiv decides, 'That sprinkling is a Heretical Dogma.' Moses' Stuart, the great scholar of our own country, says: I cannot see how it is possible for any *candid* man who examines the subject to deny this, namely; that Apostolic Baptism was immersion. But Dr. Paine, Professor of Ecclesiastical History in the Theological Seminary at Bangor, when charged by some of his brethren with Baptist sentiments, because he teaches that immersion prevailed in all Churches from the Apostles down, replies with great spirit:

'As to the question of fact, the testimony is ample and decisive. No matter of Church history is clearer. The evidence is all one way, and all Church historians of any repute agree in accepting it. We cannot claim even originality in teaching it in a Congregational seminary; and we really feel guilty of a kind of anachronism in writing an article to insist upon it. It is a point on which ancient, mediaeval and modern historians alike, Catholics and Protestants, Lutherans and Calvinists, have no controversy; and the simple reason for this uniformity is that the statements of the early Fathers are so clear, and the light shed upon these statements from the early customs of the Church is so conclusive, that no historian who cares for his reputation would dare to deny it, and no historian who is worthy of the name would wish to. There are some historical questions concerning the early Church on which the most learned writers disagree...but on this one of the early practice of immersion, the most distinguished antiquarians, – such as Bingham, Augusti, Coleman, Smith, and historians such as Mosheim, Giesler, Hase, Neander, Millman, Schaff and Alzog (Catholic) hold a common language Any scholar who denies that immersion was the baptism of the Christian Church for thirteen centuries, betrays utter ignorance or sectarian blindness.' [Art. in *Christian Mirror*, Aug. 3, 1875]

Herzog says: 'Baptism was always performed by immersion in flowing water.' [New ed. *Herzog Ency.*, Art. Taufe]

So the learned Schaff, on Rom.6:3: 'The meaning of *baptiso* in this passage is undoubtedly *immerse*, and the whole force and beauty of the illustration lies in this very allusion to the act of immersion and emersion.' [Ms. Revision of Ep. to the Rom. made for the Bible Union]

The following extract from Coleman's 'Antiquities' very accurately expresses what all agree to:

'In the primitive Church, immersion was undeniably the common mode of baptism. The utmost that can be said of sprinkling at that early period is that it was in case of necessity, permitted as an exception to a general rule. This fact is so well established that it is needless to adduce authorities in proof of it.'

The subject of baptism in the Apostolic Churches, were those who repented of sin, and confessed

The New Testament Period

their faith in Christ for salvation, none else were admitted, hence, infant baptism was unknown amongst them, either by precept or example, nor have we any definition of the relation of infants to the Church, or any provision for their discipline. In itself baptism was the confession of reliance on Christ, having no reference to parental faith, or federal relationship. The infinite difference between the Theocracy and the Christian Church, measured the wide stretch between circumcision and baptism. Admission into the first was by birthright without choice, the subject being 'born of blood and of the will of man.' Men entered the second, by bowing the heart and will to Christ, by the personal abandonment of sin for his sake, and by personal choice of him as their Saviour. Christ was a member of the Jewish nation, but when he reached manhood, he was baptized on his own volition *as* an obedient Son. No question of federal holiness was involved here. Mary had taken him to the Temple to be circumcised, but she never brought him to John to be baptized. But why not, if infant baptism takes the place of circumcision? and why did he carefully avoid making infant baptism an institute in his kingdom, when one sentence from his lips would have established it forever?

Singularly enough the baptism of believers is practiced by all Christians, who practice baptism at all, because Jesus positively commanded that it should be; yet some who practice infant baptism do so because Christ did *not* command it, but was silent on the subject. One of our first scholars and historians says:

'True, the New Testament contains no express command to baptize infants; such a command would not agree with the *free spirit* of the Gospel. Nor was there any compulsory or general infant baptism before the union of Church and State. Constantine, the first Christian emperor, delayed his baptism till his death-bed (as many now delay their repentance); and even after Constantine there were examples of eminent teachers, as Gregory Nazianzen, Augustin, Chrysostom, who were not baptized in early manhood, although they had Christian mothers. But still less does the New Testament forbid infant baptism, as it might be expected to do in view of the universal custom of the Jews to admit their children by circumcision on the eighth day after birth, into the fellowship of the old covenant.' [Schaff, *Hist. Chn. Ch.*, I, p. 470]

A guileless investigator of historic truth will naturally ask here, 1. If 'the free spirit of the Gospel' would not have agreed with an express command from Christ to baptize infants, how does their baptism *without* his commands agree with that 'free spirit?' 2. Gospel baptism was for 'all nations,' 'all the world,' without regard to Jew or Gentile as such, what then, had natural 'birth' to do with the question, in any way? Jews and Gentiles were admitted to baptism on the same terms, and millions of Gentiles were baptized, but only a few thousand Jews. In fact, the baptized Churches refused to know men either as Jew or Gentile, because in Christ Jesus there is no race. The Gentiles had nothing to do with circumcision, as the ordinance of a covenant, in which they had never had and never were to have a part. Was baptism substituted for circumcision to accommodate them, when they had no natural interest in either? The Jews needed no such change. Any one of them, old or young, male or female, could accept the Redeemer on choice, by passing out of the Old Covenant into the New with him through baptism, by simply asking the privilege. Infant baptism could not be a substitute for circumcision with the Gentiles, and the Jews could have both if they wished, as in the cases of Paul and Timothy. Then what had circumcision to do with the, question anyway, when baptism affected only 'a new creature?' 3. As to New Testament silence on the subject of infant baptism: Did the Apostolic Christians understand that whatever Jesus did not forbid they were in duty bound to incorporate into the Christian system? Then, any rite, service or practice, superstition

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

or dogma whatever, might have been introduced, unless expressly forbidden. This casts all the bulwarks of purity to the four winds, and is the essence of Romanism. Where does the New Testament *'forbid'* infant communion, the elevation and adoration of the cup, the limit of its use to the clergy, the use of holy water, the priestly miter and dress, the sign of the cross, and the conduct of worship in Latin; the use of salt, oil, honey and saliva in baptism, the baptism of bells, a college of cardinals, archbishops, auricular confession, the pope's infallibility, nay, the pope himself, with a thousand other mummeries *ad nauseam*?

If it is a canon in Christianity that silence gives consent, and consent imposes duty, then it is not only our duty to baptize our children, whether the 'Christian mothers' of Chrysostom and Augustine baptized theirs or not, but to do many other things which 'his holiness' curses us for not doing. Luther honestly said: 'It cannot be proved by the Sacred Scriptures that infant baptism was instituted by Christ, or begun by the first Christians after the Apostles.' So, when Carlstadt asked him: 'Where has Christ commanded us to elevate the host?' he answered, 'Where has he *forbidden* it?' As if this absurd answer rendered his act a whit the less a trifling with Christ's will in either case. The Constitution of the United States contains no express command to establish a monarchy and elect a king, 'still less' does it *'forbid'* this; therefore any faction is at liberty to establish a kingdom and elect a sovereign! Such work would probably be deemed 'treason' under our positive political institutions, but somehow the same silence affecting an institution of Christ is used to impel to superserviceable loyalty.

Our Lord instructed his Apostles whom to baptize, and on what conditions, and they went no further. God commanded Abraham to circumcise 'his seed,' but he did not practice the rite upon other men's children, because he was not forbidden to do so. Baptism is met with in the New Testament, only in association with a certain set of persons, sentiments and virtues. The baptized are characterized as 'elect,' 'saints,' 'disciples,' 'believers,' and their state of mind as that of 'faith,' 'obedience,' 'remission of sin,' 'following after holiness,' and 'enduring hardness as good soldiers of Jesus Christ;' names which cannot be given to, and things which cannot be said of, infants.

Besides, the universal testimony of Church history says that they were not infants, but refers the whole question of infant baptism to empty inferential usage. Bunsen writes: 'It was utterly unknown in the early Church, not only down to the end of the second, but indeed to the middle of the third, century.' [Hyppolytus, iii, p. 180] Hahn of Breslau testifies, that 'Neither in the Scriptures, nor during the first hundred and fifty years, is a sure example of infant baptism to be found; and we must concede that the numerous opposers of it cannot be contradicted on Gospel ground.' [Theology, p. 557] Curcellaeus declares that, 'The baptism of infants, in the first centuries after Christ, was altogether unknown; but in the third and fourth was allowed by some few. In the fifth and following ages it was generally received. The custom of baptizing infants did not begin before the third age after Christ was born. In the former ages no traces of it appear, and it was introduced without the command of Christ.' [*Inst. Relig. Christ* L. i, c. xii] These testimonies might be multiplied at length, but only a few of great weight may be added. Dr. Jacob says:

'Notwithstanding all that has been written by learned men upon this subject, it remains indisputable that infant baptism is not mentioned in the New Testament. No instance of it is recorded there; no allusion is made to its effects; no directions are given for its administration. However reasonably we may be convinced that we find in the Christian Scriptures "the fundamental idea from which infant baptism was afterward developed," and by which it may now be justified, it ought to be distinctly acknowledged that it is not an

The New Testament Period

Apostolic ordinance. Like modern Episcopacy, it is an ecclesiastical institution legitimately deduced by *Church*, authority from Apostolic principles; but not Apostolic in its actual existence.' [*Ecc. Polity*, N.T., p. 270]

The Bishop of Salisbury, recently deceased, says:

'I most candidly and broadly state my conviction that there is not one passage nor one word in Scripture which directly proves it – not one word, the undeniable and logical power of which can be adduced to prove, in any way of fact, that in the Scripture age infants were baptized, or of the doctrine that they ought to be baptized. Nor, I believe, is there any such direct statement to be found in any writings of the Fathers of the Church before the latter end of the second century.'

Beck has well summed up the constituency of an Apostolic Church thus:

'They are baptized on the strength of personal faith, and pass from the old union with the world into the new associations. It is not baptism in itself, therefore, which makes the Church, it is faith which qualifies both for faith and for the Church. This faith through which a man, of his own free-will, unites himself with God's salvation in Christ leads to baptism; in which God unites himself to men for their salvation, for the forgiveness of their sins and the gift of the Spirit. And such baptized persons form the Church which is, therefore, styled "The multitude of them that believed.'" [Pastoral Theology, p. 272] Because, then, there is no authority for its practice from Christ or his Apostles, it falls to the ground. Of what weight is it that it be a tenet of 'deduction,' 'inference,' 'Church authority' or any other authority; no matter what the pretense may be? In that case it is of purely human origin, manufactured for some end which the oracles of God did not contemplate, and is an act of empty will-worship, for which a man can give no solid account to Christ. The late Archbishop Hughes saw this point clearly, and said, in his *Doctrinal Catechism*: 'It does not appear from Scripture that even one infant was ever baptized; therefore, Protestants should reject, on their own principle, infant baptism as an unscriptural usage.' But Professor Lange, of Jena, a weightier authority still, says: 'Would the Protestant Church fulfill and attain to its final destiny, the baptism of infants must of necessity be abolished. It has sunk down to a mere formality, without any religious meaning for the child; and stands in direct contradiction to the fundamental doctrines of the Reformers, on the advantage and use of the sacraments. It cannot from any point of view be justified by the Holy Scriptures.' [*Hist. Protestantism*, p. 34,35]

There are three cases of household baptism mentioned in the New Testament but the language of each record strongly sustains the above testimony. In the household of Lydia (Acts 16:40), those who were baptized with her are called 'brethren,' and are 'exhorted' by Paul. In the jailer's household (Acts 16:31-34), Paul 'spoke the word of the Lord to *all*, that were in his house,' and they all 'believed in God and rejoiced.' And of the household of Stephanas (1 Cor. 16:15), which Paul baptized, he says that they 'addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints.' These are things which no infant can do, and prove that in each case they first heard the Gospel, and then were baptized upon their personal faith in the Lord Jesus.

The second ordinance of the New Testament Churches was:

THE LORD'S SUPPER. Its design was purely commemorative of Christ's death. Our Lord instituted it on the night before he was offered, he gave broken bread to his disciples, to represent His body as it should be mangled the next day by crucifixion; then they each drank of the cup, which represented the shedding of his blood for the remission of sins. All his disciples present partook of these, and he made the commemoration perpetual, saying, 'This do in remembrance of me,' Here is the simple and beautiful ordinance about which his followers have wrangled for centuries in the most shameful manner. Human manipulations have made it an 'awful mystery,' a 'dreadful

Chapter 10 - The Officers and Ordinances of the Apostolic Church

sacrament,' or oath, and oven a base idolatry, put in the place of Christ himself. With many who reject the Romish teaching of the Supper, an accretion of ideas and applications are associated with it, which amount to bald superstitions. We hear devout and enlightened Protestants calling it 'the food of the soul,' a 'banquet of flesh and blood,' an 'eating of Christ's flesh and blood,' and the like nonsense. Some even pervert such passages as this by applying them to the Supper: 'If ye eat not my flesh and drink not my blood ye have not eternal life,' whereas Jesus spoke these words a year and a half before the Supper was established; and if they bear upon it at all, they imply that eternal life itself can be had by taking bread and wine at the table. Others, in some way, which nobody knows any thing about, find a real presence of Christ at the Table, as they find him in no other religions observance, and so they insist upon it that the saints have fellowship with him and with each other there, such as they can have nowhere else, and in no other way. Hence, without intending it, contempt is brought upon the Bible teaching that Christ himself and not bread is the food of the soul, that the atonement brings salvation and not the act which commemorates it, in the use of bread and wine. Christ is the only bond of vital union, and the only test of fellowship amongst saints, and not a material ordinance. If fellowship amongst Christians is purchased by sitting with each other at the same table, their love is bought at a very light cost. Oneness with Christ himself, the brotherhood of regeneration by the Holy Spirit, mutual burden-bearing and mutual watchcare, formed the visible bond of fellowship in the Apostolic Churches. This sort of unity cost them something, it was not a vaporent sentiment, and was worth all that it cost. There is not a case in ecclesiastical history where the Supper has held any single congregation together for a day. Churches of all names who celebrate it constantly, live in open contention year by year. The love of Judas for John was cramped into a close corner when they sat at the same table, and ate the sop from the same dish. If Christians are not one on a much higher plane than that of eating and drinking the Supper with each other, their true unity is a hopeless business. In fact, as if to prove the perfect emptiness of this pretension, in some Protestant communions, the Supper itself has been the subject of hot dispute, the chief bone of contention from century to century. The greatest bitterness has been indulged, and anathemas have been bandied about, *pro* and *con*, with a freedom which has marked no other form of discussion, and by men, too, who regularly meet at the same table.

About a quarter of a century after Christ's death, the Corinthian Church had corrupted the Supper by the introduction of startling abuses. 1 Cor. 11. They associated the love-feast therewith, and indulged in gluttony and drunkenness. Christ corrected these abuses by a new revelation through Paul, and gave a second definition of the design of the Supper, in exposition of the first. 'As often as ye eat this bread and drink this cup, ye *proclaim* the Lord's death till he come.' Paul 'received of the Lord,' that he intended the Supper as a memorial, preaching institution, whereby the redeemed Church, known as the 'Ye' meeting in 'one place,' preached Christ's death. The Primitive Churches, then, threw no superstitious mystery about it, ascribed to it no semi-saving efficacy, accompanied it with no popish mortification, self-humiliations, super-solemnities, distempered enchantments, or pious legerdemain. To them it was a 'feast' of artless thanksgiving, kept with the 'leaven of sincerity and truth,' for the preaching of a sacrificial Redeemer. The bread and wine were common, like any other bread and wine, and Christ Was present with them by his Spirit as in prayer, praise, and other acts of worship, no more sacredly and no less. The converts who had been baptized met together on 'the first day of the week,' and Justin Martyr, A.D. 150, says: 'It is not lawful for any to partake, but such as believe the things that are taught by us to be true, and have been baptized.' There were no

The New Testament Period

such things as 'different denominations' amongst them. Some congregations had factions amongst them, which are called 'sects,' but no sect of Churches was distinguished from other sects of Churches by a different order of faith and practice. In this respect they walked under the same rule, were all immersed believers, and were in perfect accord in their Gospel practice. When men are willing to return to the Gospel order of regeneration and baptism, their own obedience to Christ Jesus will remove all controversy on these subjects by restoring things to the Gospel *status*; and then there must of necessity be again: 'One Lord, one faith, one baptism,' and one Table. But until then there never can be; and what is more, there never ought to be, except on this Apostolic Church principle.

Chapter 11 - The Baptist Copy of the Apostolic Churches

From the fall of Jerusalem, A.D. 70, to the end of the century, great changes occurred in the Roman Empire, some of which seriously affected the Christian Churches. Domitian occupied the throne from 81 to 96, and like all tyrants, he was weak, cruel, despotic. He exhausted the finances of the empire by lavish expenditures, and laid a heavy tax upon the Jews. He also banished literary men and philosophers from Rome, and persecuted the Christians as 'Atheists,' because they worshiped an unseen God, without visible representation, figure, symbol, image or altar. Besides this, the emperor claimed divine worship for himself, as much as had Caligula before him. He everywhere polluted the temples with his statues, and we are told that endless sacrifices were offered at his altars. His decrees began with the words: '*Dominuset Deus noster*' (our Lord and God) commands this and that, and whoever spoke of him otherwise was subject to the charge of treason. Some Jews, to evade the tax, denied their nationality, and as the Christians were elated with Jews, strict examination was made of their persons and rites. Because they refused to pay him the profane worship, which he demanded, he was inflamed with rage. The doctrine of the second advent of Christ was confused with the Jewish belief in a coming Messiah, and this kept him on the alert with suspicion, lest a political rival should make him trouble. Hence, great numbers of Christians suffered the confiscation of their goods, others were put to death or exiled, and the 'gloomy atheists' who escaped, were treated by society as impious persons. Happily, his wrath was launched against them late in his reign, or the persecution would have reached a level of severity with that of Nero. His successor, Nerva, A.D. 96-98, was more just and humane, revoked the edict of Domitian, recalled the banished from the mines and the Islands of the Mediterranean, and in fact, forbade the further persecution of Jews or Christians. Then, Christianity came near to the Caesar's and even reached the royal family. Flavius Clement was cousin to Domitian, high in office and in the regard of the people; and there seems to be good evidence that he and his wife, Domatelli, became Christians, with others in the highest ranks of society.

At the close of the First Century, Christianity stands in its ideal beauty, fresh from Christ, full of new life given by the Holy Spirit, and in the pure mold which inspired Apostles had formed, without one defect from the touch of human governments. It looked like a frail craft tossed on a stormy sea, though freighted with all the wealth of heaven. It was the first beam from the Morning Star, making its way out of infinite solitudes as fleetly and softly as the Dove of Jordan. Jesus had come in the Augustan Age, had uttered every word which man needed to hear, and finished every deed needed for his salvation. Yet, his new scepter, swayed over the human spirit, was never to be broken. He came to make life higher, poetry broader, history brighter, and religion sublimer; an art, which should lift the vulgar into the ideal, and perfect praise out of low human passions. When the heavens closed on our ascended Lord, his Apostles went forth to the great uplifting movement amongst slaves, and the poorest of the common people. By a natural but sure process they laid its foundations in their confidence, toil and blood, and built from this basis to the top-stone of society. The century opened with the cries of the Bethlehem Babe, and closed with the Man of Sorrows on his throne, in the heaven of heavens. To the far East he had become the Day-spring, to the far West the Rising Sun. Warlike people and pastoral, polite and barbarian, had begun to feel his power, from Rome to the far-off shores of the Empire, which were washed by every sea. Those Apostles who had stood with him on the mountain in Galilee, had done their work, and were now enthroned with him. Their names, yet unrecorded in the annals of the Empire, were written in the Lamb's Book of Life

The New Testament Period

forever.

Having thus found the model of the New Testament Church, the question is forced upon us: Whether or not this pattern is retained in any of the Churches of the regent day? Without casting ungenerous reflections upon any Christian body whatever, it may be said that as to substance and form, the most accurate resemblance to this picture of the Apostolic Churches, is now found in the Baptist Churches of Europe and America. Dr. Duncan reports: 'That when Gesenius, the great German Hebraist and Biblical critic, first learned what Baptist Churches were, he exclaimed: 'How exactly like the Primitive Churches!' [*Hist. of Baptists*, p. 71] So Ypeig, late Professor of Theology in the University of Groningen, and Dermout, Chaplain to the King of Holland, who, together, prepared a History of the Netherland's Reformed Church for that government, have the same principles in view when they say:

'We have now seen that the Baptists who in former times were called Anabaptists, and at a later period Mennonites, were originally Waldenses, who, in the history of the Church, even from the most ancient times, have received such a well-deserved homage. On this account the Baptists may be considered, as of old, the only religious community which has continued from the times of the Apostles; as a Christian Society which has kept pure through all ages the evangelical doctrines of religion. The uncorrupted inward and outward condition of the Baptist community affords proof of the truth contested by the Romish Church, of the great necessity of a reformation of religion such as that which took place in the sixteenth century, and also a refutation of the erroneous notion of the Roman Catholics that their denomination is the most ancient.' [*Origin Dutch Baptists*, Breda, 1819]

The late Dr. Oncken assured the writer that in forming a new Church at Hamburg, A.D. 1834, the constituent members first resolved that they would shut themselves up entirely to the Apostolic model, as found in the New Testament. They, therefore, devoted themselves for some time to prayer and the exclusive study of that Book as an inspired Church Manual; and on comparing the result, to their surprise, they found themselves compelled to form a Church in accord with the Baptist Churches in England and America. Yet, there is nothing strange in this; the New Testament is ever the same, and it is but natural that when the devout mind is left free from all standards but this, with the determination to follow it in the most simple-hearted manner, it should produce the same stamp of New Testament Churches everywhere and always.

In what, then, do the Baptist Churches of today differ from other ecclesiastical bodies? Only in retaining certain peculiarities of the New Testament Churches which others have laid aside. And in what do Baptist peculiarities consist? The fundamental difference between them and others lies much deeper than the question of Baptism, either as regards the act itself or its subjects. The distinction is much broader, deeper and more radical. There was no need for serious protest against the Romish hierarchy, for example, on the subject of immersion, down to the thirteenth century, for that was her settled custom to that time; while it is still the custom of the Greek Church. The living and underlying principles of Baptist Churches, relate to the sovereign and absolute, headship of Christ in his Churches; to the exclusive authority of the Scriptures, as containing his law for their direction in all things; to the supernatural regeneration of each Christian forming the Churches; and to the liberty and responsibility to God, of each individual conscience. Here we find the great staple of Baptist life and history, and all other questions are subordinate, growing out of these. Aside from these peculiarities, Baptists stand side by side with many denominations of Christians in the present age, and heartily hail the present state of divinity, as set forth in the clear and vigorous teachings of

Chapter 11 - The Baptist Copy of the Apostolic Churches

the Reformed Churches. These are our precious treasure, in common with the holy inheritance of other God-fearing men, and we cling to them with gratitude, as in the main, the embodiment of New Testament truth.

It must ever be kept in mind, that the whole body of Baptists have never put forth an authorized expression of their principles and practices in the form of a creed. Some few of their Churches have never made a formal declaration of their faith aside from the Bible; while in the main, each separate Church expresses what it thinks the Scriptures require of it as a Church, in a 'Declaration of Faith.' There is a substantial agreement in the entire fraternity of our Churches, which it is not difficult to set forth. In common with other orthodox Christians, so called, we believe the doctrines of the Divine Unity and Trinity; of Christ's incarnation and proper Deity; of man's fall and helplessness, and his redemption by the vicarious sacrifice of our Lord Jesus Christ; of the Personality and Deity of the Holy Spirit, and his plenary inspiration of the Holy Scriptures; of free justification by Christ's mediatorial work; of sanctification by the inwrought agency of the Holy Spirit; of holy living on earth after God's commandments; of a future resurrection of the body, and the day of judgment; and of a state of eternal rewards and punishments in another world. Of course, as in all other bodies of Christians, controversies exist amongst ourselves touching the various modifications of these doctrines; enough, at least, to show that there is and must be diversify of view, where the divine right of interpretation is exercised amongst thoughtful men. The distinguishing principles of Baptists, then, may be stated thus:

I. THAT THE INSPIRED SCRIPTURES CONTAIN THE FULL AND SUPREME AUTHORITY OF CHRIST IN ALL THAT RELATES TO CHRISTIAN FAITH AND PRACTICE, WHETHER IN DOCTRINE, ORDINANCE, THE ORDERING OF A HOLY LIFE, OR IN THE ADMINISTERING OF CHURCH GOVERNMENT.

These alone must be followed; and all legislation, canon, creed or decree, springing from tradition, ecclesiastical authority, or usage of antiquity, not enjoined in the Scriptures, is to be resisted and rejected, from whatever source it may spring, either inside the local Church or outside, as intolerable in the faith and practice of the Churches. We find a wide difference between a simple confession or declaration of what the Bible teaches, and an authoritative creed. A creed is an imperative test which must be enforced in the interests of absolute uniformity; and this is the exact position of Rome. She reasons thus: 'Divine truth is one; therefore, true believers cannot differ in their subscription to the truth. But they do differ; therefore, in difference there is heresy. Now, heresy must be kept out of the Church; therefore, make a creed to keep it out. Who, then, has the sole right to make a creed? Of course, only the Church.' Thus, the Bible is interpreted by creed-making, and its teachings to the individual man are vetoed, because he is compelled to accept the interpretation in the creed. Creeds tell men what they shall find in the Bible if they consult it, and if they find not that, they shall find nothing. For the time being, what the majority condemns is heresy, and the heretical minority must be punished until they become the majority. Yet, no creed can be made a full and perfect unity; nothing can be that unity but the Divine Testimony, and that must be personally consulted, man by man. He must be bold, indeed, who tries to unify God's word by drawing up a creed, either to supplement it or push it aside. God crystallized his own Oracles as a perfect and changeless creed forever; and when man takes it into his head that he can improve its

The New Testament Period

formulation, he betrays his conceit by perpetually giving us new creeds, in which he appeals to the Bible for their support, provided, that we will read the Sacred Text through his colored glass. But because the Bible has never been outgrown as the one standard, and cannot be creedified in brief; the Baptist holds the substitution of any authoritative creed as the first step in apostasy. Another distinctive principle with Baptists is:

II. THAT A CHRISTIAN CHURCH MUST BE MADE UP ONLY OF PERSONS WHO ARE MORALLY REGENERATED; AND THAT IT IS NOT A SIMPLE VOLUNTARY ASSOCIATION, BUT A BODY OF MEN CALLED OUT OF THE WORLD ABOUT THEM, BY CHRIST'S SPECIAL AUTHORITY, TO BE A PEOPLE PECULIAR TO HIMSELF.

The regeneration of each man in Christ's Church must be wrought by the Holy Spirit; he must be baptized upon his own choice, and covenant to maintain the order of the Gospel in its purity. We hold that the fundamental decision from Apostolic teaching, which has created scandal, shame, and division amongst Christians, lodges in that ritualistic grace which has scorned a soul-renovation wrought by the Spirit of God, as a piece of fanaticism, and has put this fable in the place of the Spirit's saving work. This legerdemain has been foisted in under that shadowy figment called catholicity, and outward ordinances have been made the channel of saving efficacy in place of 'a new creature in Christ Jesus.' With us spiritual regeneration is the moot-point against all heresies, for on this all cognate points have turned in every century. Jorg says of Dr. Lange, that he declared publicly in 1854: 'It was not opposition to infant baptism, but Church order and fellowship that is the culminating essence of all Baptists, in the past and present.' [*History of Protestantism*, ii, p. 36] Sacramental salvation has been the seed from which every distortion of Apostolic Christianity has sprung. Baptists have stood, and still stand, in stout and holy protest against the abominable doctrine that baptism and the Lord's Supper are saving institutions; and they demand that before any man shall put his hand to either of these, he shall be renovated by the Spirit of God, through faith in his Son, and then he shall be entitled to them because he is regenerate, his regeneration having made this both his duty and privilege.

This radical principle compels them to reject infant baptism, because in the nature of the case the infant cannot be a witness to Christ, as the salt of the earth and the light of the world. Baptism puts the infant into a most questionable position. It cannot bring him into any covenanted relation to Christ which did not exist before. Unbaptized, he was not a member of Christ's Church at all, and his baptism does not so make him a member thereof, as to put him under its responsibilities, or call him to its duties, or make him answerable to its discipline, or require him to honor its brotherhood. Though baptized, he is not allowed to come to the Lord's Table, because he cannot 'discern the Lord's body;' but he was compelled to be baptized, whether he could discern the Lord's baptism or not. If he had died unbaptized, he would have been numbered amongst the saints in heaven without repentance, faith or any other religious act; but if he grows up to manhood after his baptism, he must be converted before he is fitted even for the Church on earth. What, then, has his baptism done for him either in this world or that which is to come? No satisfactory and logical answer can be given to this question but that given by the pope, namely: That his baptism is his regeneration *defacto*. It admits him into the Church on earth with all its privileges so long as he lives; and it delivers him from a horrible *limbus infantum*, if he dies in infancy, and secures salvation for him,

Chapter 11 - The Baptist Copy of the Apostolic Churches

die when he may.

The rejection of infant baptism by Baptists is not a mere whim or narrow prejudice, but in their judgment this institution vitiates the purity of Christ's Church, as is seen in all the State Churches of Europe, where the law makes the whole population members of the Church through this rite. It attaches an importance to baptism which does not belong to it, and so perverts the design of the Gospel ordinance, by exalting it entirely above its proper place; and it places the innocent child in a nondescript position to which he is a stranger in the Gospel; thus there can be no natural place for it in the Church of Christ. The very object of a Gospel Church is the promotion of mutual growth in truth, purity, and love; the advancement of Christ's cause on earth, and the salvation of the Christless; to none of which ends a babe can contribute. Then, as Baptist Churches are pure democracies, they cannot deprive a child of the right to choose Christ for himself, for in them all are equal; each member having his own vote in all that concerns their well-being, a responsibility which a child cannot assume. Thus we consider that a Church made up of unregenerate members takes the second step in apostasy. One more distinctive principle of Baptists is:

III. THAT THEY MAINTAIN BAPTISM AND THE LORD'S UPPER AFTER THE APOSTOLIC APPOINTMENT BOTH AS IT REGARDS THEIR RELATIONS TO THEMSELVES AS ORDINANCES, AND TO OTHER GREAT GOSPEL TEACHINGS.

We use neither of them as a charm, or spiritual amulet to serve the ends of superstition in the supposition that the first can wash away sin, or that the other exerts any moral efficacy on the soul. All the waters of the sea cannot wash away a moral stain from man, nor can all the bread and wine brought from the harvest-fields and vineyards of earth strengthen his immortal soul. We think that the supper should only be celebrated when and where the purpose of its celebration can be properly served. Hence, we take the elements only when the local Church is met 'in one place' as a body, and shun the popish custom of carrying them to the room of the sick, as if they contained salvation, or some magical influence. Christ personally is the healing medicine of the afflicted Christian, and not bread and wine. We, therefore, hold that every idea of sacramental grace is a piece of superstition, to be sacredly discarded. Sacramentarianism is the third step in apostasy. The last distinctive principle of Baptists is:

IV. THAT THEY EARNESTLY OPPOSE ALL CONNECTION OF THE CHURCH WITH THE STATE, AND ALL DISTINCTIONS MADE BY THE STATE AMONGST ITS CITIZENS, ON THE GROUND OF RELIGION.

They protest that the State has nothing to do with the control of religion; but that it must give unrestricted religious freedom to all, as their sacred and natural right in the exercise of a free conscience. All true soul-liberty arises in that purity of conscience, which, unbound itself, leaves all other consciences free. Our idea is, that as the untrammelled conscience is the inalienable right of man, he can be made accountable only to God for its exercise. Hence, when any human power proscribes or persecutes man, by putting him under pains or penalties for following his convictions of duty in obeying God, such interference is an usurpation. When a man follows these convictions, he is entitled to the honest respect and love of all; and he is bound to extend the same rights to others

The New Testament Period

which he claims for himself. Nay, fidelity to manhood and to God requires us to contend, and if need be to suffer, for this, as the right of others, and to treat those who differ from us in religions opinion and practice, with the respect and love which sacredly honors our own immunities. This holy principle lays the ax at the root of all legal proscription and persecution. The persecution of one Christian by another is the coolest wickedness that can be perpetrated, because it hides under the color of law; and when so-called Christian States inflict martyrdom, they simply inflict cold-blooded murder. Men who kill others against law, generally do so under the impulses of irregular passion. But those who legally put men to death because they cannot conform to their religion, lift up red hands as their only rightful claim to Christian discipleship; for they have methodized homicide under the pretense of a holy regularity. They make piety toward God preside with prayers at the blood-shedding of redeemed men. This State-murder has been steadily dealt out to Baptists by every dominant sect of religion, with scarcely an exception, after allying itself with the State; while our people have insisted on their right to the free exercise of their own faith, and to the freedom of all other men to serve God on their own volition, without dictation from any man.

According to the estimate of Sharon Turner there were at the close of the first century already about 500,000 Christians in the world, and the Scriptures show that they cherished the sacred principles here set forth. These doctrines are still as fresh as ever, and are as soundly reproduced in the Baptists of the nineteenth century as in those of the first. It will now be our business to show how and where they have lived in the intervening centuries, when not an Apostle was left to expound or defend them, but only the Word of God in which they abide, and must live forever. Yet, the question is constantly arising why all Christians do not earnestly strive to go back to the pattern of the Apostolic Churches? Beck forcefully answers this inquiry thus:

'It is quietly assumed that the original arrangements of the Church were only possible at that time, and that in later ages they have become impracticable and unsuitable. People have got into the habit of regarding this Scriptural pattern as an ideal that cannot be carried out in practice. But why can we not realize it? Is the cause to be found in the fanatical character of the first period of Christianity, or does it lie in the fact, that the latter progress has proved untrue to the ideal to which the First Age remained true? The latter is the case. The Scriptural Church constitution takes for granted, a society which grows and develops from within by the free faith of those who compose it, and which separates itself from the rest of the community. If doctrine and sacrament must be founded on the divine word, in order to represent and promote true Christianity, this is no less essential also for the constitution and discipline of the Church. The two things cannot be separated, as the history of the great Churches shows, without entailing increasing evil and injury on the Church. The union between doctrine and constitution must take place in accordance with what the divine word represents to have been the rule and the practice from the beginning. This is the only right way to improvement.' [*Pastoral Theology*, p. 313]

POST-APOSTOLIC TIMES

Chapter 1 - Second Century

It is estimated that at the opening of this century, from two to three hundred Churches had been gathered, some of them thousands of miles apart. When the Apostles died, their authority died with them and they lived only in their writings. Their office did not allow of perpetuation, for they were the chosen witnesses of Christ's life and work, and could not bequeath their oral testimony to others. When these orphaned flocks were left alone in all their humanness, their only directory was the Book by which the Apostles had transmitted their witness and revelations, under the infallible inspiration of the Holy Spirit. No miraculous agency was needed to supplement their writings, and the Awful Volume finished, their twelve thrones were left vacant. Woe to him who makes the Bible a footstool to climb into their empty seats. For the first time man was left on common ground, with the choice of making the unmixed authority of that book his guide to Christ, or of committing his soul to the lead of uninspired men. This fact alone put the Gospel to its severest test, and made the second century a most solemn period, as Christians had no alternative but to follow the New Book. How, then, did they bear themselves toward the Sacred Oracles?

Eusebius says, that they 'Vied with each other in the preaching of Christ, and in the distribution of the Scriptures.' The Epistle to the Thessalonians was written about twenty years after the crucifixion, and the last of the New Covenant books within fifty years thereafter. Probably Paul's Epistles were first collected into one volume; but within half a century after the death of John, the four Gospels were publicly read in the Churches of Syria, Asia Minor, Italy and Gaul, and all the New Testament books were collected about A.D. 150. The first translation appears to have been the Syriac, called Peshito (literal), for its fidelity, rendered most faithfully into the common language of the Holy Land. Some think that our Lord's exact language is better preserved in this version than in the Greek manuscripts themselves. J. Winchelaus, who devoted much research to its history, says that it preserves the letter of sacred Scripture truly, and Michaelis pronounces it 'The very best translation of the New Testament that I have ever read.'

The Peshito throws a strong light upon the act of baptism in that age. The word which expresses that act is *amad*, which the Syriac lexicons define by 'immerse.' Bernstein uses these words: 'He was dipped, immersed: he dipped or plunged himself into something.' Michaelis declares, that this is the Syriac word which Jesus would use for baptism, in the vernacular language which he spoke. This version was read in the Christian assemblies, with the originals, and where they could not be understood by the people, interpreters rendered them into their mother tongue on the spot. In this age a Latin version was also made, which came into general use immediately. Woide ascribes the translation of the *Sahidic*, the dialect of Upper Egypt, and the *Coptic*, that of Lower Egypt, to this period. In the Latin, the word *taptizn* was rendered by the word *tingo*, to dip, or immerse; in the Sahidic it was transferred, evidently, because as a Greek term it was well understood in Upper Egypt; and in the Coptic it was translated by the word *amas*, to immerse or plunge. Latin versions were soon multiplied. Augustine says: 'Those who have translated the Bible into Greek can be numbered, but not so the Latin versions; for in the first ages of the Church, whoever got hold of a Greek Codex, ventured to translate it into Latin.' He also decides that the ancient Italic is the most literal of the Latin versions. Irenaeus, too, speaks of many barbarous tribes who had 'salvation in their heart – without ink or paper;' alluding to the fact that the unlearned heard the Scripture read

Post-Apostolic Times

in their own tongue in the public assemblies.

These early Baptists decided all questions of doctrine by an appeal to their Sacred Books; being very jealous of forged books, which abounded very early. Tertullian tells us where some of the inspired autographs could be found at that time. 'The very images,' he says, 'of their voice and person are now recited and exhibited. Do you live in Achaia? There is Corinth. Are you not far from Macedonia? You have Philippi and Thessalonica. Are you nigh unto Asia? There is Ephesus. Or, if you border upon Italy, there is Rome.' And as late as the fourth century, Peter of Alexandria said that the Gospel of John, written with his own hand, was still preserved and venerated in the Church at Ephesus.

Before Christ, SPURIOUS JEWISH WRITINGS purporting to be genuine, appeared; and an attempt was made to incorporate some of these manufactures with certain apocryphal gospels, into the Christian Scriptures, in order to incorporate Jewish notions and pagan philosophy into Christianity. These false lights misled many of the primitive Christians, and have had a shameful influence in shaping current Christian history.

Then, a pernicious tradition began to inject itself into the teaching of the Churches. By tradition is meant, from *traditio*, that which is delivered orally, and is left unwritten, passing by word of mouth from one to another. Of these, Eusebius first, and Jortin in modern times, call PAPIAS 'the father.' He died A.D. 163. leaving a collection of random, hearsay discourses and sayings of Jesus and his Apostles, called 'Oracles of the Lord.' He tells us that this was made up of first-hand evidence only, and that he preferred oral testimony to written; hence, he details many ridiculous things, showing that he was fond of gathering up floating stories. He says that he made inquiry of the Elders, 'What did Andrew or Peter, Thomas or Philip, or James, say?' Yet, it is doubtful whether he had *seen* any of them. He had a great dislike for Paul, which Jortin excuses, on the ground that he was 'a simpleton,' and which reconciles us to the loss of his writings, beyond a few fragments. But this turbid stream of tradition widened and deepened, notwithstanding Irenaeus says that the Christians came to salvation: 'By the will of God delivered to us in writing, to be the foundation and pillar of our faith.'

These Churches were full of missionary energy. The iron republic had first given place to the pen of the lettered empire, and that in turn had opened the way for the conquering cross; for by A.D. 180 the Gospel had reached all its provinces from Britain to the Tigris, and from the Danube to the Libyan Desert, in many cases including the learned and rich. Justin Martyr wrote that there was no race, Greek or barbarian, that either wandered in wagons or dwelt in tents, which did not offer praise to the Crucified. And Tertullian said, in his Apology to the Emperor: 'We are but of yesterday, yet we have filled your empire, your cities, your islands, your castles, your corporate towns, your assemblies, your very camps, your tribes, your companies, your palace, your senate, your forum; your temples alone are left to you. So great are our numbers, that we might successfully contend with you in open warfare; but were we only to withdraw ourselves from you, and to remove by common consent to some remote corner of the globe, our mere secession would be sufficient to accomplish your destruction, and to avenge our cause. You would be left without subjects to govern, and would tremble at the solitude and silence around you, – at the awful stillness of a dead world.' When Pliny governed Bythnia under Trajan, in the beginning of this period, he complained that 'The sacrifices of the gods were neglected and the temples deserted,' so enthusiastic were the Christians. Their risen Saviour awakened, every power of their nature, and they caught his sublime benevolence

Chapter 1 - Second Century

and self-sacrificing spirit, each regenerated man toiling for him. Their individual names have almost all faded from the pages of history. Of all who lived contemporary with the Apostles and used the pen in the service of Christ we have but six, half the number of their noble chiefs. These are called the Apostolic Fathers, namely: Barnabas, Clement of Rome, Hermas, Ignatius, Polycarp and Papias, of whom the last is doubtful. It would be most interesting to trace the biography of this group of old Baptists, but space will not allow.

A word only may be indulged concerning several of them. CLEMENT was pastor at Rome A.D. 91-100. He was a man of great administrative ability, and his Epistle to the Corinthians has come down to us. For a long time this was read aloud in the Churches. The Church at Corinth, being divided and in trouble, sought advice of her sister Church at Rome, which answered through its pastor, without command, authority, or fatherly curse. The Church at Rome places herself on a perfect equality with the Church at Corinth, thus: 'The Church of God which sojourns at Rome, to the Church of God which sojourns at Corinth.' Even thus early the Corinthian Baptist Church had learned how to abuse its own chosen pastors, and this firm-handed old elder says: 'It is, beloved, exceedingly disgraceful that such a thing should be heard of, as that the most steadfast and ancient Church of the Corinthians should, on account of one or two persons, engage in sedition against its presbyters.' The letter exhorts them to 'do as it is written,' saying: 'Ye knew full well the Holy Scriptures, and have thoroughly searched the Oracle of God.' HERMAS wrote the 'Shepherd,' and Moberly ranks him with the laymen of his time. His book is disfigured with snatches of fantastic poetry and is full of visions, parables and commands. Being very popular in its day and full of similitudes, it has been called the 'Pilgrim's Progress of the second century,' not much to the honor of either of the Baptist dreamers. Jerome calls it 'childish,' and Tertullian 'apocryphal;' to say the least, it is a singular production. IGNATIUS was a brave and noble character, but his name has been shamefully abused, in the attempt to palm upon him a series of deliberately forged epistles, to make him the representative of an episcopal hierarchy. Trajan demanded that he should sacrifice to the gods, when the venerable pastor of Antioch replied, that he carried God with him, for he carried Christ within his breast. The emperor demanded: 'Dost thou not think *we* have the gods within us?' He replied, that there was but one *God*, Jesus Christ. Trajan asked if he meant the Crucified One, when he answered that he did. He was put in chains, sentenced to be devoured by beasts, and sent, under a guard of ten soldiers, to Rome, where he was torn to pieces in the Flavian amphitheater, amid the shouts of 80,000 spectators.

POLYCARP is supposed to have been the pastor at Smyrna in the days of the Apostle John, and was the veriest Christian patriarch. But in his Epistle to the Philippians, which was long read in the Churches of Asia, he draws a great distinction between himself and the Apostles, and apologizes for writing to a Church which had received an Epistle from Paul. A great plague ravaged the East in the reign of Marcus Aurelius, and popular clamor demanded Polycarp as an atoning victim to the gods; at the age of ninety years he suffered martyrdom, AD. 166, 167. He had retired to the country, but one of his servants betrayed him. When he approached the city the chief magistrate took him into his chariot, asking him: 'What harm is there in saying Lord Caesar, and sacrificing?' This, he said, he could not do, when he was cast violently from the chariot, and lamed one foot in the fall. He limped into the stadium, where the crowd cried for his blood; and he believed that he heard a voice commanding, 'Polycarp, play the man!' He was ordered to swear by the fortunes of Caesar, and cry, 'Away with the Atheists,' the proconsul offering him liberty if he would revile Christ. The answer

Post-Apostolic Times

of the simple-hearted old Baptist was: 'Eighty and six years have I served him, and he never did me any wrong ; how, then, can I blaspheme my King and Saviour?' The proconsul cried: 'I have wild beasts at hand, to them I will cast thee, except thou repent.' 'Call them,' answered the holy man. 'Thou despisest the wild beasts; I will have thee consumed by fire.' Again he replied, 'Why dost thou tarry? bring forth what thou wilt.' The herald was commanded to cry three times, 'Polycarp has confessed himself a Christian!' At once the multitude gave a shout of fury, and called for a lion to be let loose; but the magistrate said: 'Let him be burned!' A pile of fagots was brought, the elder loosed his girdle, laid aside his outer garments, and when about to be nailed to the stake begged: 'Leave me, I pray, unfastened. He who gives me strength to bear the fire, will hold me to the pile.' They simply tied him with cords; when looking up to heaven, he said: 'O, Lord God Almighty! I give thee thanks that thou hast counted me worthy, this day and this hour, to have a part in the number of thy martyrs, in the cup of thy Christ.' The flames were kindled, but they arched over him and would not touch him; seeing which an executioner plunged a dagger into his body, and he ascended to his Lord.

At this time, the whole body of laymen were as much alive to Christ as their pastors, and Bingham tells us of two young men who were taken captive into India, and established Churches there; also of a Christian young woman who brought the king and queen of the Iberians to Christ, and through them the nation. Christians gave their money for Christ as well as their toil. Marcion brought his whole fortune, between \$7,000 and \$8,000 in our currency, and gave it to the common fund, when he united with the congregation at Rome. Lucian, the cynic philosopher, says contemptuously: 'These poor creatures are firmly persuaded they shall one day enjoy eternal life...They despise, therefore, all earthly possessions, and look upon them as common.' The most lowly in the Churches took an active part in the post-Apostolic synods in Palestine, Pontius, Gaul, and Rome, of which Eusebius gives an account, and exerted great influence in these bodies. And all the churches maintained their independency, after the original model. Neander says, that every Church was governed by a union of elders, 'chosen from among themselves.' The Churches were so many loving families of spiritual disciples, maintaining their liberty against all ambitious pretensions from without. Mosheim shows, that they were not joined together by association, confederacy, or any other bonds but those of charity. Each Christian assembly was a little state governed by its own laws, which were either enacted, or at least approved, by the society.' Sometimes, when they sought advice of each other, they met for consultation, but these assemblies were simply advisory. Theophilus, pastor at Antioch, A.D. 180, compares the Churches to so many islands, as a strong figure of their independence. But toward the close of the century those of Greece and Asia began to meet in the capital of the province, in the spring and autumn, and to frame canons for general observance, till by degrees these ecclesiastical islands formed one confederated continent. Not intending to create a new governing power, they lost their equality and independency through their own fault. Tertullian held, that 'three persons' might compose a Church, and that if necessity arose any Christian might administer the ordinances; an opinion which Bishop Kaye excuses, because: 'All the Apostolic Churches were independent of each other, and equal in rank and authority.' No general council was held or known in this century.

After the first blaze of enthusiasm the love of many waxed cold, their religion became nominal, not a few relapsed into heathenism, and corruption began to creep into both doctrine and practice. With this change unnecessary and offensive practices were introduced, some being borrowed from

Chapter 1 - Second Century

the pagans, as the washing of hands and putting off the cloak before prayer. The practice of turning to the east in prayer was borrowed from the old sun-worship, and made emblematical of Christ. They also stretched their hands in prayer, in imitation of Christ's outstretched arms on the cross; and they came to abuse the Apostolic kiss after prayer, by ostentation. Clement of Alexandria rebuked this, thus: 'Love is not tested by a kiss, but by friendly feeling; there are those who make the Church re-echo with their kiss, but there is no love underneath.' Several useless ceremonies were added to baptism, amongst them the use of the sign of the cross, intended as a simple emblem of the Christian faith, but which, by A.D.200 had become an idle habit in general use. Tertullian says: 'On getting up or going to bed, or putting on their clothes or their shoes, or walking out or sitting down, at table or at the bath; in short, in every act or movement, they made the sign of the cross upon the forehead.' They also began to confine baptism to the festivals of Easter and Pentecost, – to anoint the candidate with oil after immersing him in water, – and to give him milk and honey after his baptism, to symbolize, that now he must live on the 'milk of the Word.'

But the most destructive error which crept in, was that of making baptism the channel of regeneration. Before this, it was generally spoken of as 'regeneration,' meaning, as the Scriptures teach, that the regenerated man, by baptism, put himself visibly under the new obligations which regeneration imposed. Now, they began to make it a 'seal,' which bound the man to Christ with the effect of an oath; and they called it an 'illumination,' confounding it with the light of the truth which it followed, and which sprang only from the Holy Spirit. This germ grew, and in time came to overshadow the work of the Spirit on the heart, and threw the doctrine of a superhuman regeneration of the soul into the background. As to the act of baptism itself, there was no change in this age. All ecclesiastical writers agree with Venema that: 'Without controversy baptism, in the primitive Church, was administered by immersion into water, and not by sprinkling...Concerning immersion, the words and phrases that are used sufficiently testify, and that it was performed in a river, a pool or a fountain.' The literature of that period compels this testimony. Barnabas, A.D. 119: 'Happy are they, who, trusting in the cross, go down, into the water full of sins and pollutions, but come up again bringing forth fruit, having in the Spirit hope in Jesus.' Justin Martyr, A.D. 139, describes the baptized as those 'who receive the bath in the water.' Hermas, about A.D. 150, says, that they go down into the water devoted to death, and come up assigned to life; and that the Apostles went down into the water with them, and came up again.'

Tertullian, A.D. 160-240, wrote the first work on baptism in the Christian era *De Baptismo*, and opens his treatise with this enthusiastic explanation: 'O! fortunate sacrament of our water.' He wrote in Latin, using the terms '*tingo*,' '*mergo*,' '*immergo*' and '*mergito*,' with their connecting words, about fifty times, making the sense 'to immerse,' in each case. He compares the baptized to the earth emerging from the flood of Noah, 'to one emerging from the bath after the old sins, the dove of the Holy Spirit bringing the peace of God, flies, sent from heaven, where the Church is a figurative ark.' Of Christ's commission he says: 'The law of dipping was imposed, and the form prescribed, "teach the nations, immersing their into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit...and so, after that, all believing were immersed."' Semler has proved that he quoted from a Latin version and not from the Greek. In his ardor he lectured those who denied the need of water baptism, thus: 'You act naturally, for you are serpents, and serpents love deserts and avoid water; but we, like fishes, are born in the water, and are safe in continuing in it, that is, in the practice of immersion.' In his work, *De Corona*(c.iii), he takes pains to describe a baptism as it was practiced in his day: 'A

Post-Apostolic Times

little before we enter the water, in the presence of the congregation, and under the hand of the president, we make a solemn profession that we renounce the devil, his pomp, and his angels. Upon this, we are thrice immersed, making a somewhat ampler pledge than the Lord has appointed in the Gospel. When we come up out of the water, there is given to us a mixture of milk and honey, and we refrain from the daily bath for a week. The 'ampler pledge,' refers to triune immersions instead of the one dipping; and abstinence from the common 'bath for a week,' arose from the superstition that they might wash off the baptismal water and oil.

After closely scanning all the evidence, Coleman concludes: 'In the second century it had become customary to immerse three times, at the mention of the several names of the Godhead.' [*Ancient Christianity*, pp. 366,368] Guericke, Neander, Reuss, Kurtz, Weisa, Schaff, Dollinger, Pressonse, Farrar, Carr, Conybeare and Howson, Stanley, and many other historians, not Baptists, unite in like testimony. Stanley sums up the evidence in these words:

'There can be no question that the original form of baptism – the very meaning of the word – was complete immersion in the deep baptismal waters; and that for the first four centuries, any other form was either unknown, or regarded, unless in the case of dangerous illness, as an exceptional, almost a monstrous, case. To this form the Eastern Church still rigidly adheres; and the most illustrious and venerable portion of it, that of the Byzantine Empire, absolutely repudiates and ignores any other mode of administration as essentially invalid. The Latin Church, on the other hand, doubtless in deference to the requirements of a northern climate, to the changes of manners, to the convenience of custom, has wholly altered the mode, preferring, as it would fairly say, mercy to sacrifice; and (with the two exceptions of the Cathedral of Milan, and the sect of the Baptists) a few drops of water are now the Western substitute for the three-fold plunge into the rushing rivers, or the wide baptisteries of the East.' [*History of the Eastern Church*, p. 117]

There was no baptism of babes in this century. Barlow, Bishop of Lincoln, quite startled the world when he said, in his letter to Tombes, that he believed there was not 'any just evidence for it, for about two hundred years after Christ.' Menzeil calls it 'an abuse, and a departure from the original form of the sacrament.' Lange, in his *History of Protestantism*, alleges that: 'The baptism of newborn infants was altogether unknown to primitive Christianity.' The writers of the second age imply the same thing when they speak of the baptized. Justin Martyr says they are 'convinced,' 'believe the Gospel to be true,' pray and 'fast for their former sins;' Hermas, that they 'trust in the cross;' Irenaeus, that they are 'cleansed of their old transgressions;' and Tertullian declares, 'We are not washed in order that we may cease from sinning, but because we have ceased, because we have already been washed in heart... The divine grace, that is, the forgiveness of sins, remains unimpaired for those who are to be baptized; but then they must perform their part, so as to become capable of receiving it.'

After Neander [a Lutheran historian] had gone over the whole ground, he says, that baptism was not admissible at that time:

'Without the conscious participation of the person baptized, and his own individual faith. We have every reason for holding infant baptism to be no Apostolic institution, and that it was something foreign at that first stage of Christian development. At first, baptism necessarily marked a distinct era in life, when a person passed over from a different religious stand-point, to Christianity; when the regeneration, sealed by baptism, presented itself as a principle of moral transformation, in opposition to the earlier development.' [*Anti-Gnosticus*, part ii] In meeting the pretense that infant baptism sprang from Apostolic tradition, he answers: 'That such a tradition should first be recognized in the third century is evidence rather against, than for, its Apostolic origin. For it was an age when a strong inclination prevailed to derive from the Apostles every ordinance which was considered of special importance, and when, moreover, so many walls had been

Chapter 1 - Second Century

thrown up between it and Apostolic times, hindering the freedom of prospect.' [*Plant of the Church*, I, p. 163]

But although Christians knew nothing of infant baptism, the compassion of Jesus for children had greatly ameliorated their condition amongst the heathen. Uhlhorn says:

'To children, also, the Gospel first gave their rights. They, too, in antiquity were beyond the pale of laws. A father could dispose of his children at will. If he did not wish to rear them, he could abandon or kill them. The law of the Twelve Tables expressly awarded to him this right. Plato and Aristotle approved of parents abandoning weak and sickly children, whom they were unable to support, or who could not be of use to the State. Whoever picked up a child that had been deserted could dispose of it, and treat it as a slave. The father's power over his children was limitless; life and death were at his disposal. Christianity, on the contrary, taught parents that their children were a gift from God, a pledge intrusted to them, for which they were responsible to him...The

exposition of children was looked upon by Christians as plainly unlawful, and was regarded and treated as murder.' [*Christianity and Heathenism*, p. 182]

The same learned author quotes from Caecilius, a Roman jurist, who flourished about A.D. 161, the horrid slander which charged them with eating children and drinking their blood. 'An infant covered over with meal, that it may deceive the unwary, is placed before the neophytes. This infant is slain by the young pupil, with dark and secret rounds, he being urged on as if to harmless blows on the surface of the meal. Thirstily, – O horror! – they lick up its blood; eagerly they divide its limbs; by this victim they are pledged together; with this consciousness of wickedness they are covenanted by mutual violence.'

This savage accusation of the Christians became universal amongst the pagans, and the Christian fathers earnestly repelled it in their Apologies. Justin Martyr sent his noble defense to the Senate, A.D. 140-150, and eloquently protests against this infamous falsehood. 'If we were to kill one another,' said he, 'we should be the causes, as far as in us lay, that no more persons should be brought into the world, and taught or instructed in the Christian religion and of putting an end to human kind.' Tertullian demands, with great spirit, that this terrible charge be made good. Biblias, a godly woman, was tortured by the authorities, to extort from her a confession that Christians ate their children, but exclaimed at the door of death: 'How can we eat infants? We, to whom it is not lawful to eat the blood of beasts!' Had infant baptism been known amongst the Christians, they would naturally have cited the fact in proof, that so far from slaughtering their children, they were baptized and stood on a level with themselves in their churches, and so, that they could not feed upon their fellow-members. Instead of this, they take the higher ground, that their Redeemer, whom they were bound to obey, loved their children most tenderly, and had provided for their salvation without reference to any conditions on their part.

Moved by this high conception of Christ's compassion, the gentle Irenaeus brings out their view in bold contrast with the brutality of the pagans about them, when he says of Christ:

'Being thirty years old when he came to be baptized, and then possessing the full age of a Master, he came to Jerusalem so that he might be properly acknowledged by all as a Master. For he did not seem one thing while he was another, as those affirm who describe him as being man only in appearance; but what he was, that he also appeared to be. Being a Master, therefore, he possessed the age of a Master, *not despising or evading any condition of humanity*, not setting aside as to himself that law which he had appointed for the human race; but sanctifying every age, by that period corresponding to it which belonged to himself. For he came to *save all* through means to himself – all I say who, through him, are born again to God – infants, and

Post-Apostolic Times

children, and boys, and youths, and old men. He, therefore, passed through every age, becoming an infant for infants, thus sanctifying infants; a child for children, thus sanctifying those who are of this age, being at the same time made to them an example of piety, righteousness and submission; a youth for youths, becoming an example to youths, and thus sanctifying them for the Lord. So likewise he was an old man for old men, that he might be a perfect Master for all, not merely as respects the setting forth of the truth, but also as regards age, sanctifying at the same time the aged also, and becoming an example to them likewise.' [Ire. b, ii, ch. xxii, paragraph 4,5]

This plea, that Jesus as a 'Master,' by authority, and by passing through all the stages of life himself, wrought out the salvation of 'the human race,' ranks Irenaeus side by side with Justin and Tertullian, in rebutting the slanders of the pagans, by showing, as Venema says on this passage: 'That Christ, passing through all the ages of man, intended to signify by his own example, that he came to save men of every age, and also to sanctify or save infants.' I conclude, therefore, that Pedobaptism cannot be certainly proved to have been practiced before the time of Tertullian. In the writings of Tertullian we have the first recorded thought on the subject of infant baptism, and that, in the form of resistance to a proposed innovation, he stood in a trying position. Those who were resisting the encroachment of ritualism upon the original spirit of baptism, had taken in substance the ground held by the 'Friends' of today, namely: that only the Spirit and not water was needed. Quintilla preached this doctrine at Carthage, and with her stood several small bodies, according to Backhouse and Tylor, the Aseodrutae, the Seleucians, and Hermians. Others began to insist that no person who had reached intelligence could be saved without baptism, die at what age he might. These demanded that minors be allowed baptism, on condition that they '*ask*' it, and produce *sponsors*, who will be responsible for their conduct while they remain minors. [*De Baptismo*, xviii] Tertullian resisted both these doctrines; and the last named, on the twofold consideration, that it would be a rash measure, because an innovation upon an established Christian ordinance; and because it would be contrary to Roman law in the province of Cartilage. On the scriptural ground of objection, he cites the cases of the eunuch and Paul, who were believers, and knew themselves to be vessels of mercy, and so knew what they asked for before they were baptized. He contends, therefore, that it is: 'Most expedient to defer baptism, and to regulate the administration of it according to the condition, the disposition and the age of the person to be baptized, and especially in the case of little ones,' whom he calls '*parvulos*.'

He also objects to sponsors, demanding: 'What necessity is there to expose sponsors to danger;' since they cannot guarantee that the little one is, or will be, spiritually minded. 'Let them come,' says he, 'while they are growing up, let them come and *learn*, and let them be instructed when they come, and when they understand Christianity, let them confess themselves Christians. Why should that innocent age hasten to the remission of sins.' This leads him, as an astute lawyer, to the legal question of suretyship. He says: 'People act more cautiously in secular affairs; they do not commit the care of divine things to such as are not intrusted with temporal things.' The empire knew of no such suretyship in the religion of the gods, the faith of the realm, although it did in secular affairs: and what right had Christians to add to their burdens by meddling with a question that might bring them into direct conflict with an established legal relation? The Roman law made the father the guardian of the child; but when the parent was dead, it permitted the child two guardians during his minority. A tutor cared for his person and education, which included his religion, and a curator managed his estate. But the Christian Churches, being prohibited in the empire, could not be known

Chapter 1 - Second Century

in law as corporate bodies; and so, the baptism into them of minors (*infantuli*), under sponsorship, would create an illegal guardian; which act would, of course, bring new and needless trouble upon the Churches. He says: 'Death may incapacitate them for fulfilling their engagements.' But if not, with two sets of guardians, one over the morals and the other over the person of the legal minor, the sponsor would be in perpetual danger, hence he asks: 'What necessity is there to expose sponsors to danger?'

Afterward, these minors became members of the Church at Carthage, for Victor states, that when Eugenius was pastor of that Church, A.D. 480, its *infant readers*, whom we should call choir-boys,' rejoiced in the Lord, and suffered persecution with the rest of their brethren.' That Tertullian uses the word *parvulus* 'a little one,' to mean a minor at law, is indisputable. If, then, the immersion of babes was the custom of his time, why did this able father raise all this objection and discussion? 'Such as understand the importance of baptism,' he urges, 'are more afraid of presumption than procrastination; and faith alone secures salvation.' A minor who asked for baptism must ask for it on his own responsibility, and so the Church would be as discreet in this matter as the State was in secular things.

The value of these facts, as evidence, is: 1. That about the end of the second century we find the first recorded instance of & proposition to admit legal infants, not babes, into the Christian Churches by baptism. 2. That such infants were to ask for baptism. 3. That the proposal was sternly resisted as an innovation on established Gospel custom, and on legal grounds. 4. That there is no assumption here, of a right to the ordinance, even by one who was able to 'ask' for it and also produce sponsors for his conduct; but that the request was pressed as such and opposed. 5. That such evidence is fatal to the presumption that babes were baptized in the Christian Churches at that time.

It is clear enough that Tertullian never abandoned this position, because afterward, he united with those falsely charged with being averse to baptism in water. The Christians of this century had not yet come to the horrible dogma, that unbaptized babes are damned after death. They were anxious to bring all mankind to Christ as soon as possible, but were not yet ready to force their Master upon irresponsible ones, who knew not who he was, nor what he taught. They are truly represented by Schleiermacher, who says: 'The Roman Apostolical practice thoroughly agrees in demanding beforehand a beginning of faith and repentance, as all traces of infant baptism that men have wished to find in the New Testament, must first be put into it; it is, in view of the lack of definite information, difficult to explain how this departure from the original institution, could have originated and established itself so widely.' [*Der Christliche Glaube*, ii, p. 383] This is in exact accord with Justin Martyr's account of baptism in his *Second Apology*, p. 93: 'We were born without our will, but we are not to remain children of necessity and ignorance, but in baptism are to have choice, knowledge, etc... This we learned from the Apostles.' The biographer of Justin well said, 'Of infant baptism he knows nothing.'

As to the Lord's Supper, the writers of this century use ambiguous language, invent new terms, and set forth new ideas concerning it, not found in the New Testament. They still call the elements bread and wine after consecration as well as before; and signs of Christ, 'representing his body and blood,' his 'image,' and 'figure.' Yet, they speak of the Supper as an 'offering,' a 'sacrifice,' of the Table as an 'altar,' and of the administrator as a 'priest.' They also use many other florid words, which have led to corrupt uses in sanctioning the figments of real presence, consubstantiation, and transubstantiation. As yet, they had not fallen into the doctrine that the elements were Christ's literal

Post-Apostolic Times

flesh and blood; but they did hold that these were mystically in the bread and wine. Great efforts have been made to explain away their words, which opened a streamlet of error that has deluged nearly all Christendom, with the notion that the supper is something more than what the new testament makes it, a simple memorial. Concerning this ordinance, they introduced a vain system of allegory, between which scheme and transubstantiation there was no logical stopping place, and, in consequence of which, various superstitions were introduced. Even Tertullian feared, lest a crumb of the bread or a drop of the wine should fall to the ground. The custom arose of sending a morsel of the consecrated bread to the absent, lest they lose the blessings which it might impart. It was also used as a protecting charm, and taken to sea in ships for their protection, as if it were no longer common bread; it must be eaten fasting, which, Neander thinks, gave rise finally to the taking of one element in the Supper. Justin Martyr speaks of the wine being mixed with water, partly because the Passover wine was so mixed, partly to symbolize the water and the blood which flowed from the side of Christ on the cross, and partly in token of their union with him. As at the Passover, any one might preside 'at the table,' although the presbyter generally presided. And Justin says, that it was not lawful for any one to partake: 'But such as believe the things that are taught by us to be true, and that have bathed in the bath for the remission of sins.' [*Second Apology*, p. 162]

A great crisis in the history of soul liberty was brought on in this century. As the purity of Christian life was more and more felt, paganism became more violent, fierce and fanatical. Gospel contrast with the gross and sensual soon made it evident, that the new religion must force its own way or die. The new issue which it had raised in the world was primary, relating to the rights of conscience in matters of faith. Most of the Christians were poor, and many were slaves who could not command their time, so they denied themselves of sleep, and met at each other's houses in the night. In using the pure but figurative language of their faith, they spoke of 'passing from death to life,' of being 'one in Christ,' of Christ being 'formed in them the hope of glory,' and of 'eating his flesh and drinking his blood' by faith; forms of speech which were seized upon and distorted in the most diabolical manner, exposing them to popular hate. They were pure, meek, loyal men; but all religions were tolerated except that of love, a religion best fitted for torture, wild beasts and flame. Nor could it be otherwise, when Rome herself was a goddess, with the Emperor for high-priest. Sometimes the most odious of the emperors in morals persecuted the Christians the least, as they cared little for the gods or religion. Mosheim pronounces Heliogabalus, 'The most infamous of all princes, and, perhaps, the most odious of all mortals,' yet, he says, 'he showed no marks of bitterness or aversion to the disciples of Christ.' Nero and Domitian were moved by caprice and cruelty largely, but as a rule, those most severe in their morals and devout in their spirit, were the sternest persecutors, because they were purely conscientious. Dean Milman ranks Marcus Aurelius as the rival of 'Christians, in his contempt of the follies of life;' Gibbon calls him a model Emperor, and Guizot couples him with Louis IX of France, for sincerity and violence. The opposite of the selfish, sensual and reckless emperors, he was ultra-conscientious, even to blood-thirst. Called the 'Philosopher,' he made blood flow freely throughout his bitter reign; but when Commodus, his son, took the purple, he staunched every Christian artery which his father had opened. To this purer class of emperors Christ was unknown and must, in the nature of things, overturn the old politico-religions government, if he should prevail, and they believed that they were best discharging their duty to the State by protecting the pagan faith.

Yet, the Christians did not intend to overthrow the empire, nor did they complain of their

Chapter 1 - Second Century

political condition. Some of the great jurists of the age held noble sentiments on the primal rights of man. Under the Antonines, the greatest of them all, Ulpian, said: 'According to natural law, all men are born free; in civil law, it is true, slaves are treated as having no rights; not so, however, by natural law, for by this all men are equal.' All that the Christians demanded was, the right to worship God under the laws of nature. When the Proconsul reasoned with Achatius, that he who lives under the Roman laws should love the princes, he answered, 'By whom is the Emperor more loved than by Christians?' 'Good,' rejoined the governor, 'prove your obedience by sacrificing to his honor.' 'Nay,' said the martyr, 'I pray for my Emperor. But a sacrifice, neither he should require nor me pay. Who can offer divine honor to a man?' For this he died, being unwilling to serve the gods by command of the State, the monarch ranking as its chief deity. The Christians never revolted; they obeyed all other laws, they paid for the support of government, and proved their political allegiance at every point; while the laws on religion were enforced against them by special imperial acts and under military power. The younger Pliny shows, that the Roman authorities suspected their love-feasts of being secret unions for political mischief, and they were denounced as such in the edicts. When he was Proconsul of Bithynia, under Trajan, A.D. 106, 107, he tells Caesar, that he put the question to each suspected person, 'Are you a Christian?' If they would cast a bit of incense on an altar they were discharged; if not, he executed them. This, Trajan approved, under the laws against 'illegal superstition,' and issued his edict against the guilds and clubs, which included the Christians, under the head of secret societies; but after a bloody persecution, an inquiry was made into the real conduct of Christians, and a broad distinction was discovered between their civil and religious conduct. Pliny reports that, though they worshiped Christ, 'they bound themselves by an oath against crime,' and he saw a clear line between their political reverence for the Emperor and their refusal to adore him as god. This ended the persecution, till it was renewed under Hadrian, A.D. 117-138.

It is not necessary to follow the course of the several persecutions, nor to detail the terrible barbarities which were inflicted upon the Christians in the many provinces of the empire; let it suffice to say, that no such bloodshed had ever been known. The homes of Christians in the east and west were plundered; they were driven from the baths and streets to the lists, – were dragged from dens and crypts: slaves were forced to charge their masters with cannibalism, incest and every kind of crime; and children were tortured to extort a criminating word against their Christian parents. Wherever a handful of them met for worship, brother after brother was taken from his home to death, and the few who escaped looked at the vacant places which were left. Then they drew a little nearer to each other, not knowing who would ascend in the fiery chariot before the little Church should meet again. They were burned with hot irons, tossed in nets by wild bulls, thrown to ravenous beasts in the arena, and their bones denied burial. Delicate and weak women passed through tortures unheard of, without complaint. An iron chair was devised, made red hot, and the martyrs fastened in it for the delight of the amphitheater. The public appetite was sharpened to all sorts of horrors, and yet these children of God met their fate with a holy heroism that was not only enthusiastic but ecstatic. The inspiring case of Justin, and many others, must be passed, that a few words may be indulged concerning the remarkable case of Blandina, who was martyred at Lyons, A.D. 177.

She was a poor slave-girl, fifteen years of age, who was put to every torture, that her Christian mistress might be implicated. She was kept in a loathsome dungeon, and brought into the amphitheater every day to see the agonies of her companions as they were roasted in the iron chair, or torn to pieces by lions. Her spirit was clothed with superhuman endurance, for although racked

Post-Apostolic Times

from morning till night, so that her tormentors were obliged to relieve each other for rest, her constancy vanquished their patience, her only answer being: 'I am a Christian, no wickedness is done by us.' Then they took her into the circus and suspended her on a cross, within reach of the wild beasts, to frighten her fellow-confessors. The multitude howled for her life and a lion was let loose upon the poor child, but not a quiver passed over her frame. She looked into its mouth and smiled like a queen, and the monster did not touch her. Only a century before this, the first slave-girl was converted to Christ, at Philippi, and now her ennobled sister cast holy defiance at the empire, and serenely looked Europe in the face. Her calm soul told His great Power, that at last the weak were endowed with the omnipotence of the Gospel. Her intrepid spirit showed, for the first time, how Jesus could lift a worm into the empire of a human conscience; and could rebuke cruelty in the mute eloquence of love. The brightest page in the history of Rome was written that day, in the beams of that child's hope. Taken down from the cross she was removed to her dungeon, but finally brought back into the arena for execution. Her slender frame was a rare victim for the savage populace, and they gloated on her. But she flinched not, more than the angel in Gethsemane before the swords and staves of the Passover mob. She stepped as lightly as if she were going to a banquet. She was first scourged, then scorched in the hot chair, and at last cast before a furious bull, which tossed her madly. Even then a sharp blade was needful to take the lingering throb of life; and when her body was burnt to ashes it was cast into the Rhone. From that day, this harmless child-slave has been with her redeeming Master in Paradise.'

It is clear that this new doctrine of soul-liberty now possessed the whole body of Christians. Before Christ, the only right of the governed was to obey authority backed by force; now His disciples not only comprehended the new right, but resolved to die for its maintenance, if needful. The religious institutions of the Jews were left to them undisturbed by the Romans; yet, they resented Roman intolerance on the question of national independence. Few of the Christians being of Jewish origin, their birth, as pagan citizens, had invested them with the civil rights of their fellows; their contests, therefore, were narrowed down to religious issues. Justin Martyr, who was educated a pagan philosopher, said, in his first Apology to the rulers: 'We worship God alone, but, with this exception, we joyfully obey you; we acknowledge you as our princes and governors, and we ask of you that to the sovereign power with which you are invested, may be added the wisdom to make a right use of it.' Here, was no unreason of fanaticism, nor claim of religious obstinacy, as the emperors supposed, but simply the recognition of a natural and inalienable right in humanity. Nor did Justin make this demand on the first Antonine without effect. Marcus admitted that Pius, his predecessor, had decreed that Christians: 'Should not be subject to any harm, unless they were found to have committed acts injurious to the welfare of the Roman Empire.' But for himself – he held this as the law governing religion, namely: 'The end of reasonable beings is to conform to whatever is imposed by the reason and law of the most ancient and honorable city and government.' [*Meditations*, ii, 16] Here he seemed to defer to 'reason' as well as law, but Athenagoras, in his Apology, openly charged him with partiality and inconsistency in applying law. He urges upon the Emperor's attention these considerations:

'The subjects of your vast empire, most noble sovereign, differ in customs and laws. No imperial decree, no menace held forth by you, prevents them from freely following the usages of their ancestors, even though those usages be ridiculous. The Egyptians may adore cats, crocodiles, serpents and dogs. You and the laws

Chapter 1 - Second Century

pronounce the man impious who acknowledges no god, and you admit that every man ought to worship the god of his choice, in order that he may be deterred from evil by the fear of the divinity. Why, then, make exception in the sole case of the Christians? Why are they excluded from that universal peace, which the world enjoys under your rule?' [Routh, *Sac. Relig.*, p. 117]

The Roman laws allowed all conquered nations to retain their own religion, but as the Christians had never been a nation, they felt themselves, at least, entitled to the sacred rights yielded to captives. If a pagan had the abstract right to dispose of his own soul in harmony with his own convictions, though not a citizen, how much more those who were free born? They, therefore, held persecution immoral, – treason against free souls. They refused to be stripped of their humanity, because to rob themselves of peace with God and with their honest convictions, was treason against God, – to which they would not yield for a moment. Under this solemn persuasion, the Christian Apologies warned the emperors, again and again, that God would punish them for their daring oppressions, which despised the life that God had given man, and rifled him of his grandest attribute. Justin boldly says to the Emperor:

'You, who are every where proclaimed the pious, – the guardian of justice, – the friend of truth, – your acts shall show whether you merit these titles. My design is neither to flatter you by this letter, nor to obtain any favor Your duty, as dictated by reason, is to investigate our cause, and to act as good judges. You will then be inexcusable before God, if you act not justly when you have once known the truth After all, princes who prefer an idle opinion to the truth, use a power only like that of robbers in lonely places...If this doctrine appears to you true, and founded on reason, pay heed to it. If contrariwise, treat it as a thing of no value; but do not treat as enemies, nor condemn to death, men who have done you no wrong; for we declare to you that you will not escape the judgment of God if you persist in injustice.'

He even goes the length of expressing the belief, that the moral triumphs of the Gospel may render the State itself unnecessary, and rates imperial intolerance as more worthy of the hangman than of virtuous princes. In a word, he demands religious liberty in the name of eternal justice, urging the Emperor to lay the matter before the people, saying: 'Is there need to appeal to any other judge than conscience?' And Tertullian was just as bold. 'Religion,' he affirms, 'forbids to constrain any to be religious; she would have consent and not constraint. Man has the natural right to worship what he thinks best...Let one worship God, another Jupiter; let one raise his suppliant hands to heaven, another to the altar of Fides. See to it whether this does not deserve the name of irreligion, to wish to take away the freedom of religion, and to forbid a choice of gods, so that I may not worship whom I will, but be compelled to worship whom I do not will. No one, not even a human being, will desire to be worshiped by one against his will.' [*Ad. Scapulam*] In citing Christ's words on duty to Caesar, he asks: 'What, then, is due to Caesar?...Caesar's image is on the money, therefore, the money may be fairly claimed by him; God's image is upon man, and he has an equal claim upon his own. Give, therefore, your money to Caesar, and yourselves to God. If all is Caesar's, what will remain for God?' [*De. Idolatria*, p. 15] Thus, the post-Apostolic Baptists stirred the second century with the strife for soul-liberty.

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 2 - The Third Century

In this period, the Emperors were more lenient toward the Christians, from various motives, sometimes because they paid a heavy tax for peace. Tertullian denounced this practice as a bribe. Alexander Severus, 222-235, was tolerant, perhaps through the influence of Julia, his mother, a friend of Origen. He put busts of Christ and Abraham in his private chapel, with the words engraved on the wall: 'As ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them.' He was the first Emperor who entertained Christian pastors at court and the first places of Christian worship were built in his reign; yet, down to this time no Christian bodies had been legalized, except as burial societies. He would have enrolled Christ amongst the gods and built him a temple, but the soothsayers prophesied, that all men would become Christians, and the other temples would be closed if he did this. Under his favor to the Christians, many pliable philosophers united with them, some pastors took civil office. The laws against Christians were unrepealed, and Ulpian collected them into a Digest, ready for use, in his book on the duties of a Proconsul. As Christianity relapsed into security, it began to mix with paganism and weakened.

Maximus, the Thracian, resented the leniency of his predecessor and burned the church buildings; but Philip, 238-244, favored Christianity so much, that he was denounced as a Christian.

Decius, however, 249-251, determined to restore the old faith, and began a general persecution of the sternest character. He aimed at the full, legal suppression of Christianity, and the government put forth its whole strength accordingly. The terror of this persecution had scarcely been equaled before. Limborch fully indorses the alarming picture drawn by Dr. Chandler in his *History of Persecutions*, when he says of those who would not blaspheme Christ and offer incense to the gods, that:

'They were publicly whipped, drawn by the heels through the streets of cities, racked till every bone of their body was disjoined, had their teeth beat out; their noses, hands and ears cut off; sharp-pointed spears run under their nails, were tortured with melted lead thrown on their naked bodies, had their eyes dug out, their limbs cut off, were condemned to the mines, ground between stones, stoned to death, burnt alive, thrown headlong from the high buildings, beheaded, smothered in burning lime-kilns, run through the body with sharp spears; destroyed with hunger, thirst and cold; thrown to the wild beasts, broiled on gridirons with slow fires, cast by heaps into the sea, crucified, scraped to death with sharp shells, torn to pieces by the boughs of trees, and, in a word, destroyed by all the various methods that the most diabolical subtlety and malice could devise.'

Pride, ease and ambition had entered the Churches, discipline was relapsed, and terror seized them when the sword awoke, and many apostatized. These were called *traditors*, meaning those who revealed hidden copies of Scripture to be collected and burnt. Decius threw the whole strength of the Empire into the persecution, which was terrible beyond description, and such immense numbers 'lapsed,' that fiery controversies rent the Churches when they returned on the question of their restoration.

Cyprian bewailed this state of things as a punishment 'for our sins,' saying: 'Our principal study is to get money and estates; we follow after pride; we are at leisure with nothing but emulation and quarreling, and have neglected the simplicity of faith. We have renounced this world in words only, and not in deed. Every one studies to please himself and to displease others.'

Ensebius draws a darker picture still, and writes:

'Through too much liberty, they grew negligent and slothful, envying and reproaching one another,

Post-Apostolic Times

waging, as it were, civil war among themselves, bishops quarreling with bishops, and the people divided into factions. Hypocrisy and deceit were grown to the highest pitch of wickedness. They were become so insensible as not so much as to think of appeasing the Divine anger; but like Atheists they thought the world destitute of any providential government and care, and thus added one crime to another. The bishops themselves had thrown off all concern about religion; were perpetually contending with one another; and did nothing but quarrel with and threaten and envy and hate one another; they were full of ambition, and tyrannically used their power.' [*Ecc. Hist.* b. 8, ch. 1]

Decius, as a reforming statesman, intended to turn this state of things to his interests, declaring, that he would rather have a second Emperor at his side than a priest at Rome, a remark which shows the trend of Christian feeling at that time.

But extremes meet here, as elsewhere. While so many abjured Christ, thousands presented themselves to the civil power, almost with fanaticism, demanding the martyr's crown. The persecution continued, under Gallus and Valerian, A.D. 251-260, until Gallienus proclaimed the first edicts of toleration in the Empire, recalled the exiles, and made Christianity an acknowledged religion in 261. This peace continued under Claudius; but his successor, Aurelian, hated the Christians and issued another edict against them. He was assassinated, however, before, it was executed; Tacitus, his successor, revoked it, and the Churches had rest, until the last general persecution under Diocletian, A.D. 303. Then Christianity revived, illustrating the words of Tertullian, uttered long before: 'Our number increases the more you destroy us. The blood of the Christians is their seed.'

Amongst the many illustrative cases which exhibit the fortitude of the martyrs is that of Laurentius, a deacon, of whom the magistrate demanded the money of the Church, for the poor. This iron nerved old Baptist said, most cheerfully, that the Church had valuable treasures, asking the court to send horses and wagons for them, and give him three days to produce them. His request was granted, and when the day arrived, he brought loads of widows and the poor, saying: 'These are the treasures of the Church.' For this they roasted him alive on a gridiron; but so resolutely did he bear his sufferings, that he told the executioner: 'This side of my body is roasted enough, now turn it and roast the other; and then, if thou wilt, devour it.' Persecution ceased in the West, A.D. 307.

A brief sketch of TERTULLIAN may aid in throwing light upon the Montanists, who held some peculiarities in common with modern Baptists. He was the greatest of the Latin fathers, except Augustine, being pre-eminently the father of his day and class, A.D. 160-240. He was born at Carthage, North Africa, where his father was a Roman Proconsul, and carefully educated his son to be a lawyer. Little is known of Tertullian's conversion, which is generally supposed to have dated about 190. He possessed a powerful mind, was an original but violent thinker, earnest in his convictions, intense in his enthusiasm, and destitute of fear; his fire and independence made him worthy of his Punic blood and Roman training. As forceful with the pen as Tacitus, he was too brief, warm and vigorous to be his equal, either in lucidity or elegance; but he was the most eloquent advocate of the early Churches. He was strong and acute, with a powerful imagination, a quick and vivacious mind; his style was learned but not rhetorical, nor was it always harmonious; yet, his severe, angular fruitfulness presented the truth in a new dress, and made him fascinating, because he was austere in his piety and spotless in his purity. Early in his Christian career, he became deeply moved at the indifference which had fallen on the Churches; and the fear that they were relapsing into paganism, stirred his sanctified genius to a keen and dexterous activity. When he became pastor

Chapter 2 - The Third Century

of the Church in his native City, he threw all his might into the battle with paganism, Judaism, and heretical Christianity. As he exceeded all his contemporaries in intelligence, vigor and sturdy character, his opponents soon looked upon him as stern and censorious. Believing that the Churches had drifted from their primitive state, his puritanical zeal dealt tremendous blows in every direction. His opponents feared him, for he exposed all the baseness of heathenism, and protested against all looseness in Christianity. In his Apology to the rulers, his stirring letter to Scapula, the Prefect of Africa, and his more popular appeal to the people, he heaped scorn and contempt on the ancient gods in a style peculiar to himself; and few did more to overthrow the godless system of Polytheism.

About A.D. 200, he became a Montanist, amongst which sect he ranked as the leader, and at Carthage first launched his famous work on Baptism against Quintilla, who held that faith saves without baptism. He insisted that Christ 'imposed the law of immersion,' and that Paul submitted to it as the only thing then wanting in him; and as a dispute had arisen in his day about the need of going to the Jordan for baptism, he gave this decision: 'There is no difference whether one is washed in the Sea or in a pool, in a river or in a fountain, in a lake or in a canal; nor is there any difference between those whom John dipped in the Jordan, and those whom Peter dipped in the Tiber.'

The MONTANISTS with whom he identified himself, sprang from MONTANUS, a native of Phrygia. He was orthodox in his views, except on the doctrine of the 'Holy Catholic Church,' as it began to be held at that time. Some, however, attribute to him a tinge of the doctrine of Sabellius, which affected his later followers. He taught a gradual unfolding of revelation, and looked for further communications of the Spirit than those given in the New Testament; yet, Cardinal Newman thinks that: 'The very foundation of Montanism is development, not in doctrine, but in discipline and conduct.' Certainly, he introduced no new doctrine, but held to the continued inspiration of the Spirit until the coming of Christ, which he thought near at hand.' He labored hard to rekindle the love of many who had waxed cold, and to restore the spirituality of the Churches; but was so extremely rigid in the matter of fasting and other acts of self-denial, that he caught the ascetic side of religion in its demands for a pure life. In his aim to restore Christians to their normal Gospel condition, he associated their decline with the lack of special revelations given to individuals, which should supplement the New Testament, and thought himself commissioned of God to bring them back to this high standard of perfection. This dangerous doctrine led him into ecstasies, which he mistook for new revelations, and which have been unjustly ascribed to deception. Hence, the Montanists called themselves 'spirituals,' to mark themselves from lax Christians, whom they denominated 'carnal ; ' not only because they demanded a pure life, but also because they sought a thoroughly spiritual religion, unmixed with the perversions of philosophy. Montanus taught that men should not flee from persecution, and insisted on the rebaptism of the 'lapsed;' not because they had been improperly baptized in the first place, but because they had denied Christ, and on re-professing him, ought to be baptized afresh.. For this cause only, were they called 'Anabaptists.'

The one prime-idea held by the Montanists in common with Baptists, and in distinction to the churches of the third century was, that membership in the churches should be confined to purely regenerate persons; and that a spiritual life and discipline should be maintained without any affiliation with the authority of the state. Exterior Church organization and the efficacy of ordinances did not meet their ideal of Gospel Church existence, without the indwelling Spirit of Christ, not in the bishops alone, but in all Christians. For this reason, Montanus was charged with assuming to be the Holy Spirit himself; which was simply a slander. His mistake lay in pushing the

Post-Apostolic Times

doctrine of the indwelling Spirit so far, as to claim that men and women are as directly under the special inspiration of the Spirit as were the Apostles themselves. For this reason, also, he claimed exact equality amongst them in all respects, and women as well as men were pastors in the Montanist Churches. Woman was held in light esteem both in Church and State in his time, and so, this doctrine was specially odious. History has not yet relieved the Montanists of the distortion and obloquy which *long* held them as enemies of Christ; while, in fact, they honestly, but in some respects erroneously, labored to restore that Christ likeness to the Churches which had 80 largely departed. Roman ideas of aggrandizement had corrupted their ideal, and now they greatly varied from the model which Christ had left.

Like many reformers, their aim at high spirituality soon led them to exalt routine observance in little things, into matters of the gravest importance, and to erect new standards of conduct. Seeking great consecration to God, they became thoroughly legal. They excluded themselves from society, were harsh in their treatment of weak and erring Christians, instead of cherishing the forgiving spirit of Christ toward the 'lapsed,' they were bitter against them, with that bitterness which is often the chief sin of high sanctity. Sin after baptism was regarded by them as almost unpardonable, second marriages were wicked in the extreme, matter itself was an unmixed evil; and the world, being as bad as it well could be, was ripe for destruction. In consequence, they were decided Pre-Millenarians. They believed in the literal reign of Christ upon the earth, and longed for his coming, that he might hold his people separate by the final overthrow of sin and sinners, and then his saints would reign with him here in his glory. They regarded every new persecutor on the imperial throne as the Antichrist of the Apocalypse; and made so much of that book, that the Alogians thought it a Montanist forgery. [Belck, *History of Montanism*, p. 7] They hoped by preaching these things to purify the Churches, without founding a new sect and for a time, things tended in that direction. Many returned, in part, to the Apostolic ideal, and in hopeful minds there was promise of recovering a purely spiritual membership.

Their doctrines took deep and wide root in Africa and Gaul, and even the Church at Rome was more than inclined to adopt them, but hesitated. The set of the tide toward worldly conformity and aggrandizement was too strong, however, for this reaction, and the reform largely failed; yet that Church was slow to condemn this honest attempt of the reformers. About A.D. 192, her pastor branded them, but the Council of Nicaea did not put them under the ban. The local Council of Laodicea did, however; and the General Council of Constantinople, A.D. 381, required converts from Montanism to be immersed anew, and treated in all respects as converts, from paganism, before their re-admission into the Catholic Church.

They had no controversy with the Catholics on the subject of trine immersion, for it was not in dispute, but was practiced by both parties. As to the immersion of unconscious babes, we have nothing which distinctly sets forth their views, because it was not yet practiced by any party. It was just beginning to appear in this century, as a necessary measure of salvation from original sin by sacramental grace. 'As a matter of history, it must be admitted by candid students, that a false conception of the Church and the sacraments was the direct cause of a change in the Apostolic order, and of the admission of infants to baptism and the Supper, designed only for adults. The same cause induced both changes, and for centuries infant communion co-existed with infant baptism.' [Dr. Heman Lincoln, Ms.] Both the opposition of Tertullian, and the open denial of the Montanists that baptism is the channel of grace, renders it unlikely that they adopted this practice. They insisted so

Chapter 2 - The Third Century

radically on the efficacy of the Holy Spirit in regeneration, that to have immersed unconscious babes would have nullified their basic doctrine of the direct agency of the Spirit, and have thwarted their attempts at reform, in the most practical manner.

As to the independency of their Churches, the facts that they maintained a separate Church life, and that women filled the pastorate in some of their congregations, under the direction, as they thought; of the Holy Spirit, indicate that they believed this direction was given through the local body when choosing pastors; and also, that their 'superintendents' were but the 'presidents' of Justin Martyr, and the 'elders' of the New Testament. .

With the other perversions of the faith, there came THE GNOSTIC HERESY, substituting knowledge for faith. The term Gnostic (*man of knowledge*) first denoted the initiated into a secret science unknown to the vulgar. It revolved around the origin of all things, and Tertullian denounced it vehemently. Montanism was looking for the end of all things, and he cried: Away with all attempts to produce a motley Christianity, compounded of Stoicism, Platonism, and dialectics.' Gnosticism produced two extreme classes of men, fantastical visionaries, noted for formal asceticism, and those who fell into indulgence and licentiousness. Montanism meant to protest against both, specially resisting pagan worldliness. Many Christians traded with the temples as workmen in constructing them, carving their statues, selling them frankincense and sacrifices. 'Nay,' says Tertullian, idolmakers are chosen into the ecclesiastical order.' Others served as officers or private soldiers under the heathen standard, all of which the Montanists resisted, so that Harnack calls them 'The old believers, the elder legitimate party, that demanded the preservation of the original Christianity, and the return to Apostolical simplicity and purity.'

About A.D. 281, the NOVATIANS arose. They differed with the Montanists concerning the Spirit's inspiration, while they held much in common. They were charged by the Catholics rather with schism than heresy, as rigid discipline separated them, not doctrine. The case of Novatian is the first recorded instance of departure from immersion in baptism, and the first instance of clinic baptism; that is, baptism of these who were believed to be dying. When a catechumen, he was supposed to lie at the point of death, and asked baptism in order to save his soul, but could not be three times immersed, as was the practice. Yet, something must be done, and that in a hurry; so, while stretched on his bed, water was poured all around his person, in an outline inclosing his whole body; then, it was poured all over him till he was drenched, making perfusion as near an immersion as possible. If he died, this was to stand for baptism, saving him by a narrow escape; but if he lived, his baptism was to be considered defective. Cornelius, the Bishop of Rome at that time, was an obstinate immersionist, and wrote to Fabius, the Bishop of Antioch, concerning Novatian, thus: 'Relieved by exorcists, he fell into an obstinate disease, and being supposed about to die, he having been poured around, on the bed where lie lay, received [saving grace]; if, indeed, it be proper to say [it].' Eusebius does not express the object of the verb, but Cruse translates the rest of the passage thus; 'If, indeed, it be proper to say that one like him did receive baptism.' [*Ecc. Hist.*, chap. xliii] Vales states, that clinics who recovered, were required by the rule to go to the bishop, 'to supply what was wanting in that baptism.' But failing to do this, Novatian insisted on entering the ministry, which persistence shook the nerves of Cornelius beyond endurance; yet, Novatian was a remarkably talented man, he was made a presbyter without trine immersion.

Cave excuses this in the kindest manner, calling Novatian's 'A less solemn and perfect kind of baptism, partly because it was done not by immersion...Persons are supposed at such a time to desire

Post-Apostolic Times

it chiefly out of a fear of death, and many times when not thoroughly masters of their understandings. For which reasons, persons so baptized (if they recovered) are by the fathers of the Neo-Caesarean Council rendered ordinarily incapable of being admitted to the degree of presbyters in the Church...They reckoned that no man could be saved without being baptized, and cared not much in cases of necessity, so they had it, how they came by it.' [*Prim. Christianity*, p. 300] His reference is to Canon xii, which decrees, that no person baptized in time of sickness should be ordained a presbyter, 'because his faith was not voluntary.' Cornelius would not let them pass muster, even if they 'were masters of their understandings;' but Chrysostom was a more notional immersionist still, and gave his reasons at length for doubting the salvation of such men at all! In general, the fathers sneered at these sick-bed baptisms, and named such professors, 'Clinics,' and not Christians, a levity which Cyprian solemnly rebuked, as implying their conversion in a fright. He says that it was a nickname which some have thought fit to fix upon those who have thus 'been perfused upon their beds.' [Ep 76, ad Magnum, pp. 121,122]

The Novatians demanded pure Churches which enforced strict discipline, and so were called Puritans. They refused to receive the lapsed back into the Churches, and because they held the Catholics corrupt in receiving them, they re-immersed all who came to them from the Catholics. For this reason alone they were called 'Anabaptists,' although they denied that this was rebaptism, holding the first immersion null and void because it had been received from corrupt Churches. Martyrs were held in such high honor at this time, that this dignity was sought with a furor. Merit was ascribed to them, in virtue of which they went so far as to give to other Christians, papers, in token of pardoned sin, a practice which it was necessary to prohibit, because it became so dangerous. The Novatians soon became a very powerful body, spread through the Empire, as Kurtz shows; and their Churches flourished for centuries, exerting a purifying and healthful influence.

Adam Clarke states that one grave charge against them was: 'That they did not pay due reverence to the martyrs, nor allow that there was any virtue in their relics;' which he pronounces a decisive mark of their 'good sense and genuine piety,' in keeping with their lives, which 'were in general simple and holy.' Lardner thinks: 'It is impossible to calculate the benefits of their services to mankind.'

We have no reliable data on which to state their views on the baptism of babes, beyond the fact, that as infant baptism had not become a general custom when they arose, there was no need to form a sect in opposition thereto. Then, these several facts indicate that they had no sympathy with the few who began to favor this innovation, namely: That Novatian, their founder, was an adult at the time of his illness and so-called baptism; that the difficulty of obtaining pardon of sin after baptism made men defer it as long as possible in this age; and further, that we have no record of one martyr, confessor, writer, or member, in any Church being baptized as a babe, for the first two hundred and fifty years of Christianity. On the contrary, it is recorded that the two Clements, Justin, Athanagoras, Theophilus, Tertullian, Cyprian and a nameless host were baptized after reaching full manhood, and on their faith in Christ. When Novatian was a presbyter at Rome, infant baptism had not found its way there. More than a century after his day, Boniface, the Bishop of that Church, is found addressing Augustine on the question, asking his counsel, and expressing grave doubts on the subject, inasmuch as a child could not believe in Christ, and no one could warrant that he would believe thereafter. [Opera, xxxix, 235,244]

Socrates says, that Novatian was martyred A.D. 253-260.

Chapter 2 - The Third Century

This century was marked by the introduction of a centralized Church government, largely to the destruction of Congregationalism; and by a crystallization of the ideas and pretensions of Episcopacy. As to the first of these, Neander clearly shows, how a crude notion arose concerning the inward unity of a universal but unseen Church, and the outward unity of a Church dependent on outward forms. Out of this speculative idea came the purpose to form one great organic body, which should take the place of the Church-family idea, as Christ founded it on the social nature of man. The first step was to depress the individuality of the Church in this or that home locality, supplanting it with the Church of the district; then, of course, would follow that of the nation and of the world. Cyprian carried this thought to its sound, logical conclusion, in his remarkable book on the 'Unity of the Church' (*De Unitate Ecclesiae*), written about the middle of this period, amid the confusion with which this innovation had to contend. The term 'Catholic Church' is first found in the Epistle of the Church at Smyrna, in which Polycarp prays for the godly throughout the world under that name, and Tertullian uses it for the same purpose. But the organic Catholic Church itself arose out of the ambitious scheme to sap the foundations of Congregational liberty, and to crush heretics. We read such folly as this from the pen of Cyprian: 'That man cannot have God for his Father, who has not the Church for his mother...Where there is no Church, sins cannot be put away.' He is also the father of that far-fetched and thread-bare 'coat' argument, in which so many complacently wrap themselves, till they split it between the shoulders. He says of our Lord's 'seamless vest,' 'This Coat possessed a unity which came down from the top, that is, from heaven, and which was not to be rent. He who parts and divides the Church cannot have Christ's garment.' As if Christ's Church is Christ's coat in any sense, and as if his woolen raiment, woven on some family loom in Palestine, and raffled for by soldiers at the foot of the cross, could be forced to do duty as the symbol of his ransomed body, the Church. There is not the slightest hint in the Bible that the bodily dress of Christ was the embodiment of any thing but its own threads, much less that it was made by him a holy symbol of his redeemed people. Yet, those who are shaking in their shoes all the time about some figment which they call the 'sin of schism,' but which they are careful never to define, are perpetually quoting Cyprian's nonsense, as if it were unanswerable Bible truth.

Again, Cyprian says: 'There is no salvation to any except in the Church;' which to him was true, by the dimensions of the Church as he measured it, which measurement, happily, differs several cubits from the enlarged fullness in which Jesus comprehends all who love and obey him, 'in sincerity and truth.' Cyprian also held that there was no true baptism outside of the Catholic ranks, and so, he rebaptized all heretics and schismatics who came to him, while Stephen contended that if the due forms had been observed in baptizing them, they should be re-admitted simply by the laying on of hands.

As to the prerogatives of Episcopacy, the hierarchy was not established at once. Like all other perversions of great principles and institutions, the decadence was gradual, almost imperceptible, until the change became thorough and radical. When the 'priest' had taken the place of the teacher, and the 'Church' the place of the diffused congregations, then the Church 'alone could confer salvation by its priesthood, ordinances and discipline; for the whole power of the 'Church' was merged into the clergy. New forms produced new laws and new offices. 'Division in the Churches had opened the way for one pagan practice after another in government, as well as doctrine, until the spirit of old Roman imperialism gradually formed a priestly hierarchy. What Westcott calls 'the local and dogmatic ideas of Catholicity' remained in germ, and were latent till new circumstances

Post-Apostolic Times

broke the force of public opinion. One emergency followed another in breaking up the system of separate Church action, and compelling the Churches to conform to one regime. Then the ecclesiastical form of the sin of schism was cautiously created as a bugbear, its seeds being planted in the restriction of free thought. Imperialism became the bulwark of Episcopacy, which, at first, operated gently; for after district prelacy was established, each district being independent for a time of all others, managed its own affairs by its provincial synod. The public mind had been educated to this form of government in civil affairs. This policy had failed in the Greek republic, and had been lost in her wider dominion; but when Rome conquered all States, its ideal of government was centered in one irresponsible will, and sought its golden age there. In like manner, these simple Christian communities passed step by step into the hands of their ambitious brethren, who sought to imperialize the Churches. The bent of the Roman Church was to adopt the policy of the Roman State, and to swallow up all these artless families into itself. The necessary result was, that the primitive sense of personal union with Christ was sunk into incorporation with the general Church, to be connected with which was salvation. After this, every thing savored of episcopal prerogative.

Nothing of this was known in the Apostolic Churches, for there no particular man was distinguished as a priest, much less as a high-priest of priests. Bishop Lightfoot says, in his 'Christian Ministry:' 'The sacerdotal title is never once conferred upon them. The only priests under the Gospel, designated as such in the New Testament, are the saints, the members of the Christian brotherhood. As individuals, all Christians are alike. The highest gift of the Spirit conveyed no sacerdotal right which was not enjoyed by the humblest member of the Christian community.' Yet, the men of the third century reasoned, that as paganism had found strength in a centralized government, Christianity could not cope with it without using the same forces. Hence, in substance, if not in form, the rule of the Galilean Peasant was thrown aside, and the image of the Emperor put in his place by an Episcopacy, first to charm and then to govern. After that, a technical sense was attached to the term 'bishop' which never fell from Apostolic lips, the corruption of the term springing from the corruption of the office. The first grade of departure is found in the mutual consultation of the elders, as equals, concerning the welfare of a few Churches in their vicinity. Then, one of them began to exercise lordship over the other, till, in the opening of this age, the city elders assumed rank and authority over their suburban brethren, who were but common country folk. Because Rome was the mighty capital and the Church there strong, this Church early betrayed that feeling. Besides, the smaller Churches were often quite dependent upon those out of which they came, cherishing great love for them, and so were led by their influence. Roman society daily familiarized men with all grades and successions of power, and it required constant resistance to keep the Churches in their Christ-like simplicity of government.

The credulity of Cyprian, as to the almost miraculous effects of the ordinances, and the divine authority of Episcopacy, strengthened these tendencies in Africa, where he acted in a childish manner. In a letter to Pupianus he says: 'The bishop is in the Church, and the Church in the bishop; and if any one be not with the bishop, he is not in the Church.' Neander thus expresses himself most freely: 'A candid consideration cannot fail to see in Cyprian, a man animated with true love to the Redeemer and to his Church. It is undeniable that he was honestly devoted as a faithful shepherd to his flock, and that it was his desire to use his episcopal authority for the maintenance of order and discipline. But it is also certain that . . . he was not watchful enough against self-will and pride. The very point he contended for, the supremacy of the episcopate, proved the rock whereon at times he

Chapter 2 - The Third Century

made shipwreck. [*Ch. History*, I, 311]

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued

The four men who figured most largely in this century were Tertullian, who labored for the purity of the Churches; Origen, who blended philosophy with revelation; Cyprian, who struggled for episcopal authority; and Hippolytus, who as stoutly resisted clerical wickedness. We may speak more fully of the last.

HIPPOLYTUS, A.D. 198-239, was Bishop, probably of the Church at Portus, at the mouth of the Tiber, and spent the most of his life in and about Rome. He was one of the greatest men of his age, 'a name,' says Cardinal Newman, 'which a breath of ecclesiastical censure has never even dimmed. A man without any slur upon his character or conduct, and who stands, in point of orthodoxy, range of subject and ability, in the very front rank of theologians, in the ante-Nicene times.' [*Ecc. Tracts*] Chrysostom calls him: 'A most holy doctor, and a man of sweetness and charity.' For twenty years he was active in the affairs of the Church at Rome, but was in no way under its authority, being elected bishop by his own flock, without episcopal consecration. He openly and boldly opposed the bishops of the capital in all their pretensions, exposing their gross iniquities. He refused all communion with the Church at Rome, calling it a 'school', not a church, and laid bare the immoralities and crimes of its pastors, in what had been a scurrilous manner, had it not been true. A.D. 199-218, Zephyrinus was its pastor, whom he denounces as ignorant, corrupt and bribed to connive at the error of Noetus, namely, that Christ was the Father, and so that the Father was crucified, denying the proper personality of the Son. When Hippolytus exposed his error, he confessed his sin.

Callixtus was pastor at Rome from 219 to 223. He was originally a slave, nurtured in cunning, falsehood and vice. Having stolen money, he was sentenced first to the treadmill, and then to the mines in Sardinia, on the following proceedings: His master, a devout Christian of Caesar's household, trusted him with large amounts of money for banking purposes. This business Callixtus followed in the Piscina, a public fish-market, one of the quarters of Rome, celebrated for its large financial transactions. His master's influence was so great that many Christians, widows and others, intrusted their deposits with the slave as with the master himself. But he soon made away with these, and fled for the sea. Being pursued and captured in the harbor of Portus, after an attempt at suicide by drowning, he was brought back to Rome and sent to the treadmill. He claimed that various persons held money to his credit; many kind-hearted Christians pleaded with his master to release him, and he yielded to their entreaties. The knave, knowing that he could not escape, invited death by disturbing a Jewish synagogue while at worship; but instead of killing him outright, they dragged him before the Prefect of the city. The Jews charged him with disturbing their worship, contrary to Roman law. Then his master appeared and charged him with theft and an attempt to provoke death, denying that he was a Christian. This led to his banishment to the pestilential mines, in Sardinia. By fraudulent means he obtained his release and returned to Rome. Then Zephyrinus procured him the appointment over the cemetery in the Via Appia. While filling this place he flattered his patron, by duplicity and artifice secured his influence for promotion after his own death, and at the death of Zephyrinus he actually became the Bishop of Rome! Even without the Sardicean decree, this act would justify Dollinger in saying of the papacy that it was 'a forgery in its very outset, and, based upon an audacious falsification of history.' [*Fables of the Popes*, p. 4]

Once seated in the episcopal chair, he began the prosecution of every evil work. Hippolytus states that, 'He was the first to invent the device of conniving at sensual indulgences, saying, 'That

Post-Apostolic Times

all had their sins forgiven by himself...This man promulgated as a dogma that if a bishop should commit any sin, even if it were a sin unto death, he ought not to be deposed.' He also admitted immoral persons to the Supper, quoting from the Parable of the Tares: "Let both grow together till the harvest; justifying himself from the fact that clean and unclean beasts were quietly housed together in Noah's ark. Of course, under his fostering care the most atrocious crime and iniquity grew rapidly, and profligacy ran riot in the Church at Rome. But when he came to sanction the union of any Christian maiden of good family with a pagan husband of rank, even without the form of marriage, Hippolytus, astounded at such licentiousness, exclaims, in disgust: 'Behold into how great iniquity that lawless wretch has proceeded! ... And yet, after all these enormities, these men are lost to all sense of shame, and presume to call themselves a Catholic Church!...These things the most admirable Callixtus contrived, not making any distinction, as to with whom it is fit to communicate, but offering communion indiscriminately to all.' He also adds that 'During the pontificate of this Callixtus, for the first time, second baptism was presumptuously attempted by them.' With all this profligacy Callixtus was very zealous to promote true orthodoxy. And in proof of this, he excommunicated the Sabellians as heterodox. But Hippolytus says: 'He acted thus from apprehension of men, and imagined that he could in this manner obliterate the charge against him among the Churches, as if he did not entertain strange opinions. He was then an impostor and knave, and in process of time hurried many away with him.' For elsewhere he charges that Callixtus was a 'fellow-champion of these wicked tenets' with Zephyrinus, and that the two made many converts; he tells us, too, that he had sternly confuted and opposed them, but that, after a time, they would 'wallow again in the same mire.' In this way he molded his predecessor, an 'illiterate,' 'uninformed and corrupt man,' and seduced him by illicit demands to do whatever he wished, then used him to create disturbance in the Churches; but was careful to keep the good-will of all factions himself, duping them into the belief that he held the same doctrines that they did.

Hippolytus says: 'And we, becoming aware of his sentiments, did not give place to him, and withstood him for the truth's sake.' The plural 'we' shows that he held himself to be an equal of Callixtus in the Churches, and was independent of his government, considering himself more a successor of the Apostles than the Roman bishop, who not only made a schism amongst the Churches about Rome, but established a heretical school of his own. Hippolytus despised the episcopal assumptions at Rome, not only denying the supremacy of that bishop, but exposing his heresy and scandalous life, and resisting him at every step. He looked upon priestly assumption as an innovation and a source of scandalous immorality, and plainly shows that an elder in the Church of God was not an autocrat, or a sacrificial mediator in the eyes of this great and good man, who had been 'elected' a bishop by his own congregation. The history of the third century never could have been read or written, if his *Philosophoumena* had not been discovered in the convent of Mount Athos in 1842. But by its light we come to understand how this courageous and uncompromising friend of moral purity and fervent piety came to possess the undying honor which he has won; and which made 'his name and person,' as Cardinal Newman says, 'so warmly cherished by popes of the fourth, fifth and sixth centuries.' It is supposed that he suffered martyrdom by drowning in the Tiber, A.D.235- 239.

One of the most remarkable things about this century is, that it originated the great baptismal controversy, which, in one form or another, has been kept alive in the great Christian bodies ever since, and is as rife today as ever. At that time it related to those who had 'lapsed' from the faith, and

Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued

there were three parties to this controversy. One, would not restore them on any condition; a second, would take them back without much restriction; and a third, led by Cyprian, would readmit them after due repentance. Then, about the middle of the century, the immersion of babes began to creep into the Churches, under the new sacerdotal order of things. Toward the close of the second century, Celsus had charged the Christians with initiating the 'mere child' into their Churches, while the pagans initiated only 'intelligent' persons. The qualifying word 'mere,' indicates that he wished to throw the reflection upon them, that children who were little more than babes were taken into their fellowship. This insinuation Origen repelled, in his *Contra Celsum*, as a false accusation and a calumny. His words are: 'In reply to these accusations, we say...We exhort sinners to come to the instruction that teaches them not to sin, and the unintelligent to come to that which produces in them understanding, and *the little children* to rise in elevation of thought to the man...When those of the exhorted that make progress show that they have been cleansed by the Word, and, as much as possible, have lived a better life, then we invite them to be initiated, amongst us.' However young, then, the 'mere child' might be, Origen says that they did not admit him until he had been 'exhorted,' 'cleansed by the Word,' had begun to live 'a better life,' and then he was initiated only on invitation – 'we invite them.' All, these conditions might be found in little children as in the case of Jonathan Edwards, who believed that he was converted at four years of age; but they could not refer to unconscious babes.

Origen seems but to have related his own experience here, as there is no evidence that his holy father, Leonides, had him immersed when a babe, more than that Monica, the consecrated mother of Augustine, had her babe immersed. But like an honest and God-fearing Baptist, Origen's father thoroughly educated his son in the Holy Scriptures, leading him to commit many passages to memory. The child's mind was deep, quiet and inquisitive. He often asked questions about the inner meaning of texts, and God greatly honored his training. His father loved him most tenderly, and constantly consecrated him to God in prayer, that the little one might be led to Jesus, a willing sacrifice. Prayer was answered; his boy early gave himself to Christ; and when the lad was asleep, his father would uncover his bosom 'and devoutly kiss' it as the temple of the Holy Spirit. In the persecution under Severus, when this beautiful youth was but seventeen, his father was thrown into prison for being a Christian, was stripped of his property and left penniless. Then his son honored his hallowed love. The father's head fell under the ax for Christ, and, Origen resolved that he would die with his father. But one martyr's crown for that home was enough for that day, and the father stooped to receive it alone. His godly mother found entreaty and remonstrance vain to keep her son back from the joint-sacrifice, and thwarted his purpose by hiding his clothes. Then, cleaving to her and her six other children, in abject poverty he sent this letter to his father at the point of martyrdom: 'See thou dost not change thy mind for our sake!' and the head of Leonides fell at the block with these grand words of his child ringing in his ears and thrilling his heart. Origen was well able to repel the falsehood of Celsus, by showing that only children who believed in Jesus and loved him with all their soul were baptized. And, it is more than probable, that he drew his inspiration from the memory of his early childhood,, when his father 'exhorted' him, brought him to the 'Word to be cleansed,' and 'invited him to be initiated amongst us.' Thus, when Leonides was with his Saviour, his son was answering his own description of a godly child rising 'in elevation of thought to the man,' in Christ Jesus.

This order of things accords exactly with the statement of Baron Bunsen, the translator of the

Post-Apostolic Times

manuscript of Hippolytus, found in 1842. He says: 'Pedo-baptism. in the modern sense, meaning thereby the baptism of new-born infants, with the vicarious promises of parents, or other sponsors, was utterly unknown to the early Church, not only down to the end of the second century, but, indeed, to the middle of the third.' This, he derives from Hippolytus himself, in these words: 'We, in our days, never defended the baptism of children, which in my day had not begun to be practiced in some regions, unless it were as an exception and innovation. The baptism of infants we do not know.' He was born in the last half of the second century, and died in about A.D. 240; this gives the period meant by 'my day.' The 'some regions' where infant baptism had not begun to be practiced except as an 'innovation,' must have included Rome and adjacent parts of Italy; for there he spent the greater part of his life, and it must be of that locality that he speaks, saying 'we never defended the baptism of children,' 'the baptism of infants we do not know.' His words imply, however, that in 'some' other 'regions' it had begun to be practiced. Its twin doctrine, that all who died unbaptized must be eternally lost, had, however, begun to take root quite generally, and from that time became more and more prevalent; until Gregory of Nazianzas, Ambrose and Augustine, came to contend stoutly that all infants who died unbaptized were eternally lost. This horrible libel on the Lamb of God was chosen, by these builders, as the chief stone in the corner for infant baptism.

We must now look at the other 'regions' where the baptism of babes began to be practiced, and mention some things in association with the incoming 'innovation.' In Africa, helpless infants were inhumanly sacrificed to the hideous gods, at this time. Fidus, a generous-hearted country pastor, who labored in this dark province, wrote to Cyprian, at Carthage, to know whether new-born babes might be baptized. If they could, of course, this would save them, whether they died or not, and would be an act of divine grace of special efficacy, where the cruel heathen stole them to offer in sacrifice. Cyprian's heart was as tender as that of his country brother, and he wanted all the children's souls saved, of course. But the proposition staggered him, and he dared not venture to trust his own judgment in so new and serious a case. It happened that a council of sixty-six pastors was in session at Carthage at the time, A.D. 252, called to consider various Church matters, but especially the subject of rebaptizing those who had received heretical baptism. In his perplexity he submitted the question of Fidus to these brethren; a thing which he need not have done, had it been customary to baptize babes from the Apostles down. Tertullian had been pastor of the Church of which Cyprian was now pastor, twenty years before this, and had baptized legal minors into its fellowship, but not babes. Cyprian's course and the decision of the council show that it was a new question to them all, for it decided that they *might* be baptized when eight days old, but was careful not to insist that they must be; further showing that this was a different sort of children's baptism from that which the Church had previously practiced under the pastorate of Tertullian.

It is to the transactions of this provincial synod in North Africa that Grotius refers, when he says of infant baptism: 'You will not find in any of the councils a more ancient mention of this custom than in the Council of Carthage.' So, Bunsen, also (iii, p. 204), says: 'In consequence of this alteration and complete subversion of its main features, brought about principally by the Africans of the third century, and completed by Augustine, these natural elements have been, in the course of nearly fifteen centuries, most tragically decomposed, and nothing is now remaining elsewhere but ruins. In the East, people adhere to immersion, although this symbol of man voluntarily and consciously making a vow of the sacrifice of self, lost all meaning in the immersion of a new-born babe.' The 'natural elements,' the abandonment of which he is deploring in this passage, he calls:

Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued

'Instruction, examination, the vow and initiation,' as the four great Christian elements in beginning the life of a disciple. Neander gives the same account of the matter: 'The error became more firmly established, that without external baptism no one could be delivered from inherent guilt, could be saved from the everlasting punishment that threatened him, or raised to eternal life; and as the notion of a magical influence, or charm, connected with the sacraments, continually gained ground, the theory was finally evolved in the unconditional necessity of infant baptism. About the middle of the third century this theory was already generally admitted in the North African Church. The only question that remained was whether the child ought to be baptized immediately after its birth, or not till eight days after, as in the case of the rite of circumcision.'(Ch. Hist., I, p. 813.)

This was not a learned body, for that part of the Christian Church was the least critical in its knowledge of the Scriptures; but it was much too wise to introduce this innovation on the silence of the New Testament. Therefore, as that said nothing on the question, they shrewdly passed over it to the Old, and introduced the new rite under the shield of circumcision. The pagans also had something in sympathy with this, though hardly borrowed from the same source. Plauti and other ancient writers state that in Greece babes were purified by lustral waters and sacrifices long before infant baptism was established. This occurred on the fifth day after birth, and on the seventh they were named. Amongst the Romans, for female babes, the eighth day was chosen for the same ceremony, and the ninth for males. When this had been done at their own homes, the babe was taken to the temple and initiated into paganism in the presence of the gods. [Plauti Truculent, Act ii, Scen. 4. Pompeii Testi. Et M. Verii Flacci, Macrobiani, Saturn, lib. I. Cap. 16; Plutarchi Quaest. Rom. Cii] Thus infant baptism made the door into the Church of Christ as wide as that of the Jewish and pagan faiths together. The African council could not comfortably introduce circumcision into Christianity, nor could they lustrate children by water and animal sacrifices; but they could conciliate the prejudices of Jews by making circumcision a precedent, and those of the heathen by lustrating babes by water without animal offerings. Their chief trouble was to keep those unreasonable Christians quiet who could find no authority from Christ for this superstitious innovation. For these they invented the doctrine of Apostolic tradition, which they lugged in through the 'holy kiss.' Even tender-hearted Fidus squirmed a trifle there. He could not give the usual brotherly kiss to the newborn infant, as it was unclean for some time after its birth. Cyprian, who, despite all his high-church air and strut, had as sisterly and soft a heart in his bosom as ever beat, easily settled that question for him by saying:

'Every thing that lies in our power must be done that no soul may be lost...As to what you say, that the child in its first days of its birth is not clean to the touch, and that each of us would shrink from kissing such an object, even this, in our opinion, ought to present no obstacles to the bestowment of heavenly grace; for it is written, "to the pure all things are pure," and none of us ought to revolt at that which God has condescended to create. Although the child is but just born, yet it is no such object that any one ought to demur at kissing it, to impart the divine grace and salutation of peace.'

Some think this letter of Cyprian's spurious, and possibly his reputation would not suffer if it were. Fidus disappears from the century, and all direct records of infant baptism with him, for the innovation made poor headway, and babes were not generally baptized until the fifth century. And when it was adopted, public opinion, formed on the practice of baptizing believers only, compelled it to take faith with it from some quarter; and so it borrowed that from the sponsor, making him

Post-Apostolic Times

believe for the babe by proxy, a direct tribute to the common sense of those who resisted the invention. Sponsors had long existed in law for civil purposes, in protecting youth during their legal minority. But now they were put to sacred uses, believing for the child when he could not believe for himself, and standing ready to help him to believe afterward. Taking this scheme throughout, for making Christians of dear little folks who knew nothing about it, it was quite an able achievement. But what it did for the Church in after centuries, must be told, to its shame and sorrow, thanks, not to the lands where Jesus and his Apostles had preached, but to Proconsular Africa; for with this came in a legion of other superstitions, not the least of which was the power on the part of the priesthood to consecrate holy oil, the 'mystic ointment' for the exorcism of the devil from the water, and from the candidate who was immersed therein. This brought regenerating efficacy to both, and the laying on of the priest's hands brought the Holy Spirit after baptism.

Once wrenched from its native bearings, the simple and unpretentious New Testament baptism was first made a saving institution, and then the stalking-horse for the whole pack of vain novelties. For example, the angels were supposed to exercise a special ministry in baptism, and so, to represent them, a 'Baptismal Angel' was appointed to preside at every baptism. [De Bapt. C. 6] He was known as *Angelus Baptismi Arbitrator*, was regarded as the harbinger of the Spirit – what the Baptist was to Christ – his office being to prepare the soul of the candidate for the spirit of baptism. [Do. C. xvii., Mosheim, I, p. 104] The idea was borrowed from the angel who troubled the waters of Bethesda. With this came in exorcism, by breathing in the face of the candidate, for the expelling of the evil spirit and the inbreathing of the good. Tertullian tells us that the consecrated oil, which was poured upon the water in the form of the cross, before it became the baptismal grave, drove the devil out of that element. At this time the Gnostic idea, that the material world was largely under the dominion of evil spirits, had mixed itself with the Christian faith. Demons ruled the flight of birds, presided over the winds and waves, and it was necessary to drive them out of the waters by some sort of charm or amulet, before the saints were immersed in them. They haunted these waters as sprites and nymphs, but they fled when the sacred oil was poured thereon in the shape of a cross. We shall meet this again when we come to look at the pictures of the Catacombs.

The simple and unwelcome fact is, that the pagans threw an air of great mystery and sacred grandeur around their rites, which filled the wondering spectators with awe, and the Christians were weak enough to catch the infection, until they became filled with the fatal delusion that the holy oil acted as a cabalistic talisman on the waters, for it wrought a change in the element as such. In his sermon on the 'Passione' (p. 62), Pope Leo (440- 461) gives this doctrine in full bloom, for he tells us: 'That baptism makes a change not only in the water, but in the man that receives it; thereby he receives Christ and Christ receives him; he is not the same after baptism as before, but the body of him that is regenerated is made the flesh of him that is crucified.' And why not, when Gregory of Nyssa contends that the oil thrown on the water not only changes its nature, but actually transmutes it into a divine and ineffable power, which Cyril of Alexandria calls 'traselementation.' But Cyprian follows with this stronger statement still: 'The water must be sanctified by the priest, that he may have power by baptism to wash away the sins of men.' Baptism was made a sacerdotal act, and unction was necessary before it could be performed at all, for this made it the organ of the Holy Spirit! The whole Council of Carthage followed Cyprian's declaration: 'The water is sanctified by the prayer of the priest to wash away sin.' This superstition spread with amazing rapidity, until men discovered the most marvelous lights and other visions on the baptismal water, as if, indeed, it had

Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued

become the crystal sea of the New Jerusalem itself.

It is not easy to determine when trine immersion was introduced, but at this time it appears to have been the universal custom. Baptism itself had become a 'mystery,' a name worthy of the semi-heathen institution which men had made it; and after baptism the candidate wore a white linen robe for eight days, as an emblem of the pure life which he was to live thereafter. Down to this time it had been the right of laymen to baptize, as Tertullian says: 'Even laymen have the right, for what is equally received can be equally given.' But now confirmation became necessary to perfect the act, and under the notion of the exclusive spirituality of the bishops, legislation confined it to the priesthood, so called.

Not only were the waters of baptism invested with this mystic air, but also the elements of the Supper. About this time the first thought appears that any change took place in the bread and wine by their consecration. They were common things and of little value before the priestly benediction worked the wonder of changing them into the very nature of God. This pretense stood on an exact level with paganism, in sacrificial importance. The heathen believed that the very substance of their deities was insinuated into the sacrificial victim, and became one with the person who ate thereof. Their idea was that this assimilated them to the gods; hence, the sacrifice was a great 'mystery.' Paganized Christianity adopted the same thought, and so they modified the original ordinances of Christ, until it was hard to find a vestige of his simple teachings in either of them. This new system of Eleusinianism wrapped up the plain truth in wild vagaries, which have perverted most of Christendom to this day. Many see the blot, but cannot efface it because of its antiquity. It insults man's senses, but his reverence for the hoary cares not to wipe it out; and yet, true antiquity goes back beyond the youth of the third century to the age of Jesus and his Apostles, at whose feet Cyprian and the fathers should fall, on a level with all other poor and uninspired sinners, instead of being allowed to send Christianity down the centuries on masquerade.

Hippolytus tells us of one Marcus, who played all sorts of tricks both with Baptism and the Supper, under this religious jugglery. He pretended to give the people a mixture of purple, or blood-red color, which bestowed ineffable grace from God; and taught that men who received this cup were beyond the reach of danger if they sinned, because it had made them perfect. To these he administered a second baptism, called redemption, attended by the laying on of hands and the whispering of some knavish gibberish into their ears, a process which admitted them into the higher mysteries. [Ref. of Her., book vi., Chs. xxxiv, v, vi] These fanatics ranked with Elxai, who taught his followers to set a high value on water as a divinity, and to swear by it, as well as by salt, and the wind. [Jevenne, Hist. Chn. Ch., p. 121] He laid great stress on baptism, to which he attributes, *ex opepe operate*. the forgiveness of sins; and it must be frequently repeated, as marked sins are committed. He not only exhorts such sinners to be baptized afresh, 'together with your garments;' but Hippolytus gives us one of his rubrics, in which he entreats a person bitten by a mad dog to cure hydrophobia by tins specific. He must 'Run with all his garments on into a river or running brook, where is a deep place, to call upon God and make vows as in baptism, and washing there, he will be delivered.'

However, to the honor of these third century Christians, they held fast to the logical consistency which would not allow Baptism to be severed from the Supper, Hence, when the babe had been immersed they administered to him the elements of bread and wine to render his salvation doubly sure. Bingham speaks of the known practice and custom in the ancient Church, of giving the

Post-Apostolic Times

eucharist to infants, which, he says, continued in the Church for several ages. It is frequently mentioned by Cyprian, Austin, Innocentius, and Gennadius, writers, from the third to the fifth century. Maldonat confesses it was in the Church for six hundred years. And some of the authorities just now alleged, prove it to have continued two or three ages more, and to have been the common practice beyond the time of diaries the Great. Again he says: 'It is evident, that the communion itself was given to infants, and that immediately from the time of their baptism.' [Antiq. Eastern Ch., pp. 118,119] Herzog fully corroborates these facts. In his account of 'dispensing the elements to actual babes,' he says: 'The first trace of this custom is found in Cyprian (third century), who, in his treatise *On the Lapsed*, represents infants as saying on the day of judgment, 'We have not forsaken the Lord's bread and cup' (*De lapsis*, c. ix.) And in the same book he tells a striking story, how an infant refused the cup, and, when the deacon forced some of the wine down her throat, she was seized with vomiting. The explanation was, that the child, unknown to her parents, had previously, while under the care of her nurse, eaten bread soaked in wine, which had been poured out at an idolatrous ceremony. (*De lapsis*, c. xxv.)

Bingham further testifies that: 'The Greek Church today, and also the Nestorians, Jacobites. Armenians and Maronites, persist in the practice, using, generally, only the wine, and giving it either by the spoon or by the finger.' [*Dic. Rel. Ency.* Art. Infant Communion, pp. 1078-79] This practice was born, and very properly, in the same North Africa which created the trine immersion of babes. Dean Stanley, also, says: 'The Oriental Churches, in conformity with ancient usage, still administer the eucharist to infants. In the Coptic Church it may even happen that an infant is the only recipient.' And he gives this reason for the practice: 'which, as far as antiquity is concerned, might insist on unconditional retention,' namely: 'A literal application to the eucharist of the text representing the bread of life, in the sixth chapter of St. John, naturally followed on a literal application to baptism of the text respecting the second birth in the third chapter; and the actual participation in the elements of both sacraments came to be regarded as equally necessary for the salvation of every human being.' [*Hist. Eastern Ch.*, pp. 118,119]

The literal interpretation of the third chapter calls for the literal interpretation of the sixth today, for the one is no more necessary to the salvation of the babe than the other. If baptism is to be forced upon him in order to save him, so also should the Supper be; but if it is a mockery of the design of the ordinances to give him the one, it is a greater mockery to withhold the other, and to deny him the rights of membership in the Church, after initiating him into its fellowship. If there is divine authority for one there is for the other, and both should be observed. But if there is not divine authority for either, both should be laid aside.

A stout contest began in the third century between tradition and the supreme authority of Scripture. Some bowed to the absolute mandates of the Bible, allowing no compromise; while others reduced it to a book of divination, by introducing bibliomancy, or the 'sacred lots.' They casually opened the book, and by the first passage that came to hand predicted the future. Tertullian refused to dispute with the heretics out of the Scriptures, because they rejected their authority in part. Yet, when they sustain his position, he quotes them; but when they do not serve him, he appeals to custom and tradition, as in his *Corona* (p. 337): 'If thou requirest a law in the Scripture for it, thou shalt find none. Tradition must be pleaded as originating it, custom as confirming it, and faith in observing it.' On the contrary, Hippolytus condemns all errors opposed to the Scriptures, and binds every article of his faith to their teaching. Speaking of Carpocrates and other heretics, he says, that

Chapter 3 - The Third Century – Continued

they brand their disciples 'in the posterior parts of the lobe of the right ear,' a practice at which he was rather apt himself, figuratively.

Early in the century Origen had procured a faithful edition of the Septuagint, Lucien a second, and Hesychius a third. Copies of all the Scriptures so abounded that, A.D. 294, Pamphilus had founded what may be called the first Bible Circulating Library, and made numerous copies with his own hands to give away. In their writings at this time, the fathers quote the Scriptures copiously; Origen, alone, making 5,765 quotations from the New Testament. Libraries were founded at Alexandria, Caesarea and other places, and the Sacred Books were put in the church edifices, for all who could to read in their own tongue; besides which there were readers and interpreters in all the congregations. [Townley, Bib. Lit., i, p. 106]

The Churches proved themselves less and less worthy of this heritage. They quarreled with each other like termagants [quarrelsome, scolding women], spent their energies in pious hair-splitting, and were reckless in the extreme. Things were fast setting into a hierarchy, and the Churches were soon brought under thrall to aspiring officers. But, for a long time, powerful voices were raised to arouse the people against this. Even at Rome there was a struggle for Church independency; as Hippolytus says, that when Noetus, the pastor there, was tried for blasphemous utterances, it was 'before the Church;' but where the spirit of independence went, its form soon followed, and blind submission or 'schism' was the only alternative. Origen wrote a letter to Philip and Severa, urging the freedom of religious opinion; the dominant 'Catholic' party began to tyrannize over others, in the interests of uniformity. The empire of Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra, which tolerated all religions, arose in 267; but Paul, the pastor of Antioch, who held civil office under this remarkable woman, put forth doctrines which other pastors condemned, and when Zenobia succumbed before the hosts of Aurelian, those pastors made a formal appeal to the conqueror to expel Paul from his pastorate. This is the first case on record, where Christians threw aside the dignity of their manhood to seek the aid of the civil power in settling their squabbles, in enforcing Christian doctrine. The emperor, with more regard to decency in the case, left it to the decision of an assembly of pastors at Rome.

Victor was the first bishop of Rome who carried all measures with a high hand, in behalf of the claims of that Church. He was a busy, hot-headed mischief-maker, who stirred up discord on every trivial matter to carry a point; and before long a strong government was developed in the politics of Christianity. The Clementine and Ignatian forgeries followed, to sustain prelatial authority, in which some scoundrel puts the following into the mouth of Ignatius: 'We ought to look unto the bishop as unto the Lord himself... Let all reverence the deacons as the command of Jesus Christ, and the bishop as Jesus Christ, being the Son of the Father; and the presbyters as the sanhedrin of God, and college of the Apostles. Without these it is not called a Church.' [Trall. Cap. 2,3] 'What the bishop approves of, that is also well-pleasing to God, that whatever is done may be infallible and sure.' 'The Spirit proclaimed, saying thus: Do nothing without the bishop.' 'He who honors the bishop is honored by God, he who does any thing without the privity of the bishop, worships the devil.' Cave attributes the Recognitions to Bardesanes, but Justin does not think that 'he could have been the author of so many shameless lies.' [Ecc. Hist., i, p. 351]

Thus, by the close of the third century we have the absurdity of Baptism regenerating the soul, and the Supper feeding it, an episcopacy with which is lodged, eternal life, a 'Catholic Church,' outside of which all are heretics, and no salvation out of the Church. For this, Cyprian, a converted pagan, rhetorician and bishop of Carthage, is more to blame than any other man. Pupianus, like a

Post-Apostolic Times

simpleton, took it into his head to 'inquire carefully into our character,' says Cyprian. But in his reply to that callow brother, the gentle bishop reads him this sweet lecture: 'What presumption! What arrogance! What pride it is, to call the prelates and priests to account! The bees have their queen; the armies have their generals; and they preserve their loyalty; the robbers obey their captains with humble obsequiousness! How much more upright, and how much better are the unreasonable and dumb animals, and the bloody robbers, and swords and weapons, than you are. There the ruler is acknowledged and feared, whom not a divine mandate has set up, but whom the reprobate rout have appointed of themselves.' He then warns him that as one who calls his brother 'Fool' is in danger of hell fire, he is in greater peril who inveighs against 'priests.' [Epis. lxxv]

Well may Isaac Taylor say in his *Primitive Christianity*: 'The first three (centuries) of the Christian history, comprise a sample of every form and variety of intellectual or moral observation of which human nature is at all susceptible, under the influence of religious excitement. No great ingenuity, therefore, can be needed in watching any modern form of error or extravagance, with its like, to be produced from the museum of antique specimens.' And he deprecates the abject slavery of so prostrating 'our understandings before the phantom, venerable antiquity, as to be inflamed with the desire of inducing the Christian world to imitate what really asks for apology and extenuation.' [Pp., 57,157]

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

Near Geneva the Rhone flows in swift but calm majesty at the foot of those Alps, which are more majestic than itself. There its waters are a dark blue and beautifully crystal, as they flow from a cool azure lake far up in the region of alternate snow and sunshine. The river Avre comes rushing down from those horrid valleys where the glaciers grow and grind, striking the Rhone at almost right angles. It is a little, furious, brawling, muddy stream worthy of its fountain; it scowls like the brow of a dark villain rushing from his den, and launches its dirty current into the sheet of light. The Rhone, as the daughter of purity, shrinks from its defilement and glides on in disdain, refusing all amalgamation. Long they move on side by side in the same channel, parted by a deep-drawn line between them, but without one spot on the mountain maiden. Thus repelled, the Avre sinks to quiet, softened into decency by the sun-lit side of the Rhone, which melts, first into pity then into compassion. And why? At every rock the impudent intruder breaks into foam and then lulls into murmurs, as if it were pleading for tolerance, till quietly the larger stream consents to absorb the less, eddy by eddy, and so at last it is overcome by importunity and embraces what it first spurned. From that hour the glory of the Rhone is gone, a few leagues below the two are one, and in their turbid dishonor they rush down together as one polluted stream. This is but a faint image of the River of Life, mingled with the tide of pagan philosophy, which have come down to us confluent from the opening of the fourth century.

It would require a volume to trace the corruption of Christianity with Platonism, for we have this heresy in germ in the Apostolic Churches long before the Gnostics injected it into the truth at Alexandria, as the exalters and defenders of knowledge against faith. Paul found it creeping in at Crete, Colosse and Ephesus. The ideas of Pythagorus had prepared its way in Crete, Ephesus was the center of all pretentious philosophy, and Colosse was full of Phrygian pantheism entwined with the mysteries of Pan, Cybele and Bacchus. All these were dexterously interwoven into Christianity by Simon Magus, the real father of Christianized Gnosticism; others fostered it, and Manes led it to full manhood by the end of the third century. Paul saw its drift and warned Timothy against the opposition of 'knowledge falsely so called.' At first it was simple, without system or great power, never arraying itself openly against the truth; hence, its danger lay not in the violence of its attacks, but in its secret aggressions. Hippolytus calls it a 'hydra,' which had been pushing its way in the dark for many years; but no error matched it in efficiency. In his time it had corrupted between thirty and forty sects and subsects, who differed amongst themselves, all holding principles contrary to the simple faith of Christ and putting it under the control of Oriental paganism. The Gnosis of Alexandria is not easily defined; for it was a compound of monotheism, materialism, pantheism and spiritualism, taken from the heart of Platonism and the reasoning of Aristotle, with an admixture of native Egyptian thought. It professed to be the essence of intelligence, and so won the learned by its liberal speculations, the rationalist by its mastery of all logic, the superstitious by its many mysteries and the ignorant by its pretense, that it explained every thing. The Greek philosophy was too narrow for its tastes, and the teachings of Jesus too practical for its uses, so it made sad havoc of Homer's pure literature and Christ's plain revelations. It refused to take any thing in the proper and natural meaning of its words, and its allegory distorted every thing by the attempt to transfigure its simplicity. Hippolytus says that the whole system reminded him of Thales, who, 'Looking toward heaven, alleging that he was carefully examining supernal objects, fell into a well; and a certain maid, Thratta, remarked of him derisively that while intent on beholding things in heaven, he did

Post-Apostolic Times

not know what was at his feet.'

At the opening of the fourth century none of the Churches were entirely free from this corrupt leaven. It affected their doctrine and practice, had created an aristocracy in their ministry, pushed aside the letter of Scripture in sublimating its interpretation in relation to the person of God, of Christ, good and evil, incarnation and atonement; and had left but little in the Gospel unchanged, either in theory or experience. Almost all the African fathers had gone after it, and it had produced swarms of monastic orders in Greece, Gaul and Italy. Worse than this, it had destroyed the common bond of brotherhood between the rich and poor; and because of its pomp, ceremony, symbol, mystery and liturgical worship, it had found that favor with the nobles which exalted Christ's religion into an awful sacredness, and well nigh made the Church a secret society, which now cared little to uplift the slave, the poor and the downtrodden. This explains why Christianity took the shape that it did in its final struggle with paganism. Having corrupted itself and become weak, the steps were easy to popular influence, and the unity of the temporal with the spiritual power.

For forty years the law of Gallienus had recognized the Christians as a legal community. They had become numerous and influential. In the great cities they had large and costly temples furnished with vessels of gold and silver; their faith was much the rising fashion; the army, the civil service, the court, were filled with Christians, and the old Christ- likeness had nearly gone. A century had passed since the Antonines; the Empire was fast breaking up of its own heterogeneous elements; and one more attempt was made to recast it on the old faith and a more absolute model, if possible, by two Emperors after the Oriental fashion. Now we have THE LAST BITTER PERSECUTION, for the modified Christian faith was supplanting heathenism faster than had the simple Gospel. This persecution burst forth Feb. 23, 303, at Nicomedia, where the Imperial Palace was then located. Because the Scriptures were regarded as the source of all Christian aggression, the aim of the persecutors was to destroy every copy and the cry passed up and down the empire: 'Burn their Testaments!' This Bible burning was firmly resisted, and at Carthage, Mensurins the bishop removed all copies from the sanctuary, putting worthless MSS. in their place. Afterward he was accused of betraying the Bible, a charge never sustained. Many gave up the sacred book willingly to be burnt in the market-places, and were expelled from the Churches, while others preferred death to this treachery. An African magistrate demanded that Felix should give up his Bible for burning, when he answered that he would rather be burnt himself. He was loaded with chains, sent to Italy and beheaded. In Sicily Euplius was seized with the Gospels in his hand and put on the rack. When asked, 'Why do you keep the Scriptures forbidden by the Emperor?' he answered: 'Because I am a Christian. Life eternal is in them; he that gives them up loses life eternal.' The Gospels were hung about his neck when led to execution and he was beheaded. At Aelia, in Palestine, Valens, an aged deacon, proved his love for the Scriptures by committing large portions of them to memory, and repeating them with accuracy. John, a blind Egyptian, did the same with such perfection that he could repeat the whole of the books of Moses, the Prophets and the Apostles. Hot irons were thrust into the sockets of his eyes.

This persecution lasted ten years, and was severer than all that had gone before. But it acted like fire on incense, in drawing out the finest and richest essences in Christian character. One day, when it was beginning to abate, the Emperor's bed-chamber was found in flames. DIOCLETIAN was stricken with terror, and suspecting his Christian servants, he put them to torture and stood by to extort their confessions. Two weeks later a second fire occurred in the same room. He was more

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

enraged than ever, and made closer inquisition for blood in the palace. Several servants were put to death, and the Empress and his daughter, who were Christians, were compelled to sacrifice to the gods. No language can describe the brutality of this persecution under Diocletian, Galerius and Maximian, whom Lactantius calls 'three ravenous wild beasts.' It is estimated that 17,000 suffered death in one month, that 144,000 were martyred in Egypt alone; and of the banished, and those condemned to the public works, no less than 700,000 died. In some provinces scarcely a Christian was left. So great was the triumph against Christianity that it was commemorated by striking off a gold coin. On one side was the head of Diocletian, crowned with laurel, and on the reverse, Jupiter, brandishing a thunder-bolt, and trampling upon the genius of Christianity – a human figure with feet of serpents.

This Dance of Death was revived, however, under one Emperor after another, until CONSTANTINE conquered Rome, A. D. 312. At that time he reigned over the Western Empire only, but in 323, after the battle of Chalcedon, he became sole Emperor of the Roman world. He published an edict concerning Christians in 312, at Rome, but this document is lost. In 313 another, issued at Milan, gave toleration to all religions, and restored the confiscated property of Christians; he also gave large sums of money to rebuild their places of worship. But in 324 he inflicted a blow upon the Christian system from which it has not yet recovered, by making it the religion of the State. Between 315 and 323 he had sent forth five edicts admitting Christians to offices of state, civil and military; had taken measures to emancipate Christian slaves; had exempted the clergy from municipal burdens, and had made Sunday a legal day of rest from public work. But in 325 he attempted to settle the disputes in the Church by presiding at the first General Council which ever was held, that of Nicaea, in which Arianism was condemned, the unity of the Catholic party proclaimed, and the last step taken to establish the union between Church and State.

This great historical character has been the subject of malignant depreciation or extravagant laudation, according to the point of view from which he has been seen. Like all other great men, he took type from the character of his times, and the truth will make him human, without magnifying his virtues or blackening his weaknesses. He was born of a Christian mother, who must have been troubled with Baptist notions, for she never had him christened. His disposition was naturally mild and tolerant; and his father, who was not a Christian, being moved by clemency toward Christians, had probably influenced him in the same direction, as well as the counsel and example of his mother. In his early manhood he worshiped at the shrine of the gods, but after the removal of the government to Constantinople he forbade pagan worship in that city, and leveled its temples throughout the Empire. Having renounced that religion himself, he persecuted the unconverted pagan for his constancy therein. He is said to have seen the cross in the sky, but possibly his Christianity had borne a higher character had he discovered love for the true cross of Christ in his soul; crosses in the firmament are of rather light moral worth. Unfortunately, it was years after this traditional vision that his nominal Christianity allowed him to kill his son, his second wife and others of his family. Full of ambition and passionate resentment, it would require considerably more today than a sky miracle, a sword in the hand, and a conquering army at the Malvian Bridge to give him membership 'in good standing' in the Baptist Church recently established at Rome. It is said that the cross in the heavens was attended with the inscription: 'By this sign conquer!' What, and whom? His own sin? His own soul? It seems not. But rather Maxentius and Rome and a throne. At the beginning Jesus had made himself king in Zion, to disallow all imperialism there; and did he now

Post-Apostolic Times

rise from his throne to hang his cross of peace an ensign of blood in the firmament, and to indicate that he turned over his universal lordship to an unregenerated heathen? This cross story needs thorough revision.

Common sense and the after life of Constantine rather say, that he kenned this cross in the clouds with the eye of a politician and statesman. The 'eagle' soared high that day, but he saw the beam of the cross soaring above the head of the Roman bird. Clear-headed and far-sighted, he read the meaning of that noiseless agency, which had quietly struggled for three hundred years to open a new history in the world. Other eyes besides his were turned in the same direction. The men clothed in purple had blindly sacrificed nameless thousands of their purest, wisest and most patriotic subjects to dumb idols. The gods had kept the Empire in a perpetual broil, and had often murdered his predecessors, before the crown had made a dint upon their brows. Constantine was not so blind to the real cross that he needed a miraculous phantom in the skies to interpret for him the signs of the times. He was cool, ambitious, practical ; and knew what the principles of patient integrity must do in a new government, which, through the cross, had well nigh overthrown all the powers of the old government. The new idea of Calvary had awakened a new enthusiasm in man, had created a new order of patriotism, and he saw that the Via Dolorosa had become the Roman highway to unity, elevation, solidity. Long after this he came to embrace Jesus in person ; for as age came and life was about to close, he sought and received baptism at the hands of Eusebius, the Bisilop of Nicomedia, in the baptistery of the church known as Martyrium Christi. He expressed the hope 'To have been made partaker of the salutary grace in the river Jordan;' but his violent illness cut off that hope, and left him unable to take the long journey to the sacred river. He died on the 23d of May, A. D. 337, in great peace, at the age of sixty-four, about one month after his immersion. He had delayed this act of obedience to Christ under the absurd notion of his times, that baptism would cleanse away the sins of a life-time at once. Before his immersion he laid aside his purple robes and never donned them again; but from that day wore the white garment of newly immersed believers, until he exchanged it for the shroud in death. [Vit. Constant., lib. Iv, cap. 62]

SPAIN, in the Western Empire, felt little of the Diocletian persecution which convulsed the eastern division, and how did the Spanish Christians use their exemption from suffering? Chiefly in the attempt to consolidate the new system of corporate unity, in place of the isolation of Apostolic Church independency. With this end in view, we find nineteen bishops, twenty-six presbyters and many deacons, holding the Council of Elvira (Eleberis) in the retired district of Baetica, under the lead of Hosins, the great Bishop of Cordova. He was a man of genius and power, born to rule. At Nicaea he took the second seat, Constantine filling the first, but at Elvira, A.D. 305-306, he was the guiding spirit. His prime idea was to put Christianity on a surer footing, by first consolidating it into a catholic body, and then uniting it closer to the national life. This synod was professedly called to restore order in the Churches of Spain, by deciding what to do with those who had 'lapsed' from the faith, and to settle other questions of morality and discipline. Its tone and temper were supposed to be in sympathy with Novatians; but Hosius adroitly turned it, not to reconcile the Churches one to another, but to unite the Church with the State. Afterward he was very influential in the private councils of Constantine, and served as his diplomatic agent on many occasions.

Under the frame-work of the new policy, this Spanish Convention of independent assemblies was to issue a general code of decrees which should bind them by concert of action, as if they were one congregation. In this way an organic union could reach the 'heretics' and 'rural' pastors, could

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

bring them under subjection to the bishops of large cities; and so at one stroke they could keep the Church pure and strong. This was Spanish Catholicity in its infancy. Then, if one nation might have a Church, why not each nation, and if each, why could not all nations form one general Church? This proposed purification of the Church suited the Novatians exactly, but they did not dream that they were weaving meshes for their own feet in this Synod. With all the simplicity of their hearts they united in the XXIVth decree, which demanded that a man who had been baptized in one province should not enter the ministry in another, a long step toward a diocesan system. Heresy was put also on the same basis with deadly sin, and wrong in the laity was to be condoned with a leniency which did not apply to pastors. This claimed preeminent sanctity for the clergy, and conciliated the people to the innovation. The special privileges to the people, however, were attended with larger distinctions of rank amongst the clergy, and the bishop began to assume new functions over his brethren. Others might baptize, but in every case the convert must be brought to the bishop to be confirmed. The XLIIId article enjoined two years of probation before a catechumen could be baptized. Non-communication at the Lord's Table became a retributive act, making exclusion therefrom penal, and men were excommunicated for a given time, from one to ten years.

Christ intended his ordinances as a trowel to build up the Churches, they used them as a sword to cut them down in arbitrary retribution. First they made baptism a magical rite to save from sin, then they withheld it as a penance for sins committed, as in the case of Constantine, who had long been a catechumen. The Supper had been the first festival of joy to the convert on entering the Church; now its refusal to him was to shut the gate of heaven in his face forever, even in some cases when he was penitent. This Synod decreed that any one who, after faith in the baptism of salvation, shall fall into idolatry, or falsely accuse a bishop, priest or deacon, 'shall not receive communion even to death.' This is what is meant by the Church 'arming itself with sacraments!' And so the Lord's ordinance of thanksgiving and commemoration of the sacrifice of Jesus, 'armed' the Church to punish any one who was absent from the Church for three Sundays with the penalty of denial to the Supper itself.

The whole trend of the Synod was to make the ministry an aristocracy, by building up sacerdotalism; and to this end it was considerate of the dead, while it was harsh toward the living. The XXXIVth article provided that, 'Tapers shall not be lighted in the cemetery during the day, for the spirits of the saints must not be disquieted.' Great homage was paid to the martyrs. One good thing was done, however. Baptism had been attended with gifts and offerings from the candidate, a practice which had grown into a regular tax exacted of all who were immersed. The XLVIIIth article forbade this tax, also the custom of washing his feet after the anointing with oil.

During the reign of Constantine the Empire was rocked by theological contest, his Christian subjects being divided by bitter animosity; the Arian division raged in the East, the Donatist in the West. He saw that this must be healed, for political reasons, if for no other. The Donatist agitation arose in North Africa, A.D. 311, in what are now known as the Barbary States; but it centered in Carthage, Numidia and the Mauritanias. Its field covered nearly seven degrees of north latitude, immense centers of commerce and influence, soils and climates; marking a stretch of land nearly 2,000 miles long by about 300 wide, reaching from Egypt to the Atlantic, and fringing the Atlas mountains, the Mediterranean and the desert. The Punic wars had raged there under Hannibal and Africanus, and the contestants inherited all that was brave and fiery in Phoenicia, Carthage and Utica. Still warm with this enterprising blood, such a people were not likely to surrender their

Post-Apostolic Times

Church independency, and take the yoke of the Councils of the Catholic Church without a struggle. Constantine's hands were full. Besides, a deep sigh had long filled the Christian atmosphere for a return to Gospel simplicity, and the late persecution opened the way for its free expression. In this region the inner independency of the Churches had been more firmly maintained than in many other places, and the late encroachments upon it had aroused the Churches to a determined defense. Merivale says of the Donatists: 'They represented the broad principle of the Montanists and the Novatians, that the true Church of Christ is the assembly of really pious persons only, and admits of no merely nominal membership.' They dreaded any form of un-Christian membership which eats out the spiritual fellowship of a Gospel Church.

This is more strictly true of their later history, after they had entirely shaken off the Catholic notion that unity is of more consequence than purity, and so that a spiritual regeneration was the prime qualification for membership in the Churches of Christ. They had come to charge the Catholic with being a fallen Church, because it had become lax in its morals, tolerating open and notorious sin, and retarding visible unity as a higher attribute of Church-life than personal purity. Yet notwithstanding this, Parmenian, one of their greatest writers, preached baptismal regeneration as strongly as any of the men of his times.

Jerome, Augustine and others class the Donatists with the Novatians, as to general aim and purpose, and Augustine sneers at them as 'spotless saints.' Kartz represents them as holding that Church and State should stand apart, and Walsh asserts that Constantine had condemned them in his decrees, before they appealed to him for the trial of their case. [*Hist. of Heresies*, p. 332] But still the fact stands, that in their controversy with the Catholics they sought his decision. There has been much dispute about their views of infant baptism, and many affirm that they were anti-pedobaptists, notably amongst these Guy de Bros, who said: 'That they demanded that baptized infants ought to be baptized again as adults.' [*Origin of Anab.*, p. 937] Although this controversy was not general at this time, yet as it was somewhat rife in Africa, it is quite likely that they took this position, as they took their rise there; and Augustine's letters against them imply the same. They certainly rebaptized those who came to them from other communions, but Dr. Owen thinks only because the impurity of other Churches rendered their baptism null; while Long says that they refused to baptize infants. It is commonly conceded that Augustine wrote a separate work against them on infant baptism, which has not come down to us. If he did, the fair inference would be that they rejected that doctrine.

Still, as is usual with all true reformers, they were reluctant to break up old ties, and a petty, party strife must needs bring on a collision between them and their opponents. Mensurius, Bishop of Carthage, manfully opposed the mania which led thousands to court martyrdom in order to take the martyr's crown; because he thought it savored more of suicide than of enforced sacrifice for Christ. But he died in 311, and Caecilianus, who was of the same opinion, was elected to fill his place, with which election a majority were dissatisfied. Others were displeased because he had been ordained by Felix, who was charged with giving up the Bible to be burnt, and a division took place in the Church. The retiring party first elected Majorinus their bishop, who soon died, and after him Donatus of CasaeNigrae (that is, of the Black Huts). This party increased greatly, and was read out of the Catholic body, Constantine taking sides against them. At this point they fell into the great and strange blunder of appealing to the Emperor to redress their grievances. Nothing could have been more stupid or inconsistent. They were struggling for a pure Church against the laxness of the Catholic party, the head of which party was himself unbaptized and a semi-heathen; asking him to

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

make the Church at Carthage and elsewhere pure by the exercise of his political power! The proposition itself put the knife to the throat of their own principles, by tendering an alliance of the Church with the State, in disregard of its Gospel constitution. Nor can this folly be extenuated; they knew enough to seek a pure Church for Christ, and should have sought that blessing according to his known will. Nominally they held to the entire separation of the Church from the State, and that persecution for religious opinion was an oppression of a free conscience; yet, when they fell into disputes with their opponents they were the first to appeal to the civil authority to settle them.

Here, then, with all the goodness, zeal and manliness of the Donatists, they had the folly to invoke the secular power to settle a purely religious dispute between Christians. Yet it is but just to say that, so far as is known, this is an isolated act in their history, and not one of a number in the same line. Bitterly they repented of their folly. Their 'appeal to Caesar' was sent in a sealed package of papers, in a leather bag, inscribed: 'Statement of the Catholic Church, presented by those in communion with Majorinus, in proof of the crimes of Caecilian.' Their petition closed, with the words:

'We address ourselves to you, most excellent Prince, because you are of a righteous parentage, and the son of a father who did not persecute us, as did his colleagues the other Emperors. Since, therefore, the regions of Gaul have not fallen into the sin of surrendering the Scriptures, and, since there are disputes between us and other prelates of Africa, we supplicate your Piety, that our cause may be submitted to judges chosen from Gaul.' [Opatatus. Lib., I, cap. 22]

Under the old faith, as Pontifex Maximus, the Emperor was the judge in all religious affairs, and so his 'Piety' was now ready to oblige them, and he called a Council at Rome, October, A.D. 313, of over thirty bishops, who decided against the Donatists. They asked him for a second hearing, and he called the Council of Arles, 314, composed of more than two hundred bishops from Gaul, Brittany, Germany, Spain and Africa. In his letter to this body he says that they should not have called on him to judge in such difficulties, and charged them with 'Acting like the heathen in calling upon him to settle their religious disputes.' When writing of the same Council to Celsus, Vicar of Africa, he says that he felt strictly bound to fulfill 'the duties of a prince, and extirpate all the errors which the rashness of man has introduced, and to establish union and concord amongst the faithful.' But in his letter to the Prefect Ablavius he puts his duty in a stronger light, thus: 'I do not believe that it is permitted us to tolerate these divisions and disputes, which may draw down the wrath of God, not only upon the Commonwealth, but also upon myself, whom his divine will has charged with the care and management of all things upon earth.'

The Council of Arles decided against the Donatists, when they suddenly awoke to their mistake in staining one of the cardinal truths in Church liberty; for the Emperor enforced the decision with the secular arm. Accounting the Donatists enemies of the State, he deprived them of their churches, confiscated their property, and banished their bishops or *paetore*, of whom Mosheim says that they had four hundred in North Africa, which number precludes the idea that they were either of the metropolitan or diocesan order. The Donatists defied his authority, but with ill consistency, and he sent an armed force to Africa to subdue them. This was the first Christian blood ever shed in a disgraceful contest amongst themselves; yet Constantine piously tells Celsus that he was laboring that 'the true religion may be embraced by all the world.' [Tillemont, paragraphs 16-25] Afterward he undertook to settle THE ARIAN CONTROVERSY, which Jortin describes, as 'the occasion of

Post-Apostolic Times

innumerable lies, slanders, forgeries, pretended miracles, banishments and murders,' and 'of many false and partial histories.' In order to end this contest, Constantine assembled THE COUNCIL OF NICEA, a city of Bithynia, near Constantinople, May 20, A.D. 325. The number of bishops present is put down at from 250 to 320 ; and Dean Stanley says that each bishop was allowed two presbyters and three slaves as his retinue. The Emperor, who was fond of prodigality and display, brought them together and maintained them in state at his own expense. Great interest was excited, from the fact that he was the first Roman prince who had publicly consorted with the Christians, and so scholars, philosophers, and men of rank flocked in from all directions. Christianity had but just emerged from the blood and wreck of persecution, and such a body of veteran confessors had never met together before. They came from all parts of Asia Minor, Syria, Palestine, Phoenicia and Arabia, one coming from Persia, and one even from Gothia. They presented a stirring appearance when assembled in the imperial palace, most of them bearing some mark of suffering for Christ. They had been tortured, maimed, scarified, and some of them were blind. Hot irons had plowed furrows upon some of them, some had an arm cut off; one of the Asian bishops had lost the use of both his hands by burning, and another from Upper Egypt had his right eye dug out. As Christian warriors they needed but the entry of the Captain of their salvation, with the wounds of the spines, the spikes and the spear, to make their sacramental congress perfect. Then had they cast themselves at his feet to kiss the sacred prints, each in holy love exclaiming: 'My Lord and my God!' and he had breathed upon them his holier salaam: 'Peace be unto you!'

Alas for them, with all their fortitude, the simplicity of the Upper Room, the 'piece of broiled fish and the honey-comb,' had given place to royal apparel, princely fare and 'king's houses; 'but there was no Son of Man returning fresh from Edom. They sat waiting in solemn silence; but a new Head of the Church came in, and they rose to do him reverence. He was of majestic height and bearing, wrapped in royal purple, with a golden fillet on his head and without a thorn-scar on his temples. He had not redeemed the Church with his blood, he had not stained his raiment in the sacrificial wine-press. His flushed face and downcast eyes were reflected back in the gems of his vesture; the sword of nations and the shepherd's crook lay at his side; but where was the Good Shepherd who laid down his life for the sheep? This is Caesar, and not 'another King,' one Jesus! When seated in the golden chair placed for him in their midst, he gave a sign, and each bishop, according to his rank, sat down in his presence. How are the mighty fallen! Their lawful sovereign and good friend was hailed as their Head, and they waited for his image and 'superscription' to attest their orthodoxy; for the first time the old Baptist Churches of the world are found crouching at a monarch's feet! Farewell, soul- liberty, flee thee to the wilderness for a time!

This body sat until the 25th of July; and the Emperor presided over its Councils most of the time, aided now and then by Hosius. Constantine addressed it graciously, listened to and took part in its debates, led it to its decisions, and confirmed its decrees. He closed the sessions with a great banquet on his birthday, and loaded its members with imperial gifts. He even embraced Paphnutius, kissing the empty socket from which his eye had been torn, and exhorted all the bishops to prayers for himself, his family and the Empire; then he bade them farewell!

After the Council, Constantine became bitter toward the Arians, although he finally became an Arian himself. He banished Arius and ordered his works to be burnt, threatening with death all who kept them, and all who rejected the findings of the Council came under its anathema, the civil power enforcing uniformity where it could not be commanded by reason. The Emperor issued an edict

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

against all dissenters, saying: 'Know ye, Moravians, Valentinians, Marcionites, Paulians and Cataphrygians (that is, various Gnostic and Montanist sects), that your doctrine is but vain and false. O ye enemies of truth, authors and counselors of death, ye spread abroad lies, oppress the innocent, and hide from the faithful 'the light of truth.' Then he forbids their meetings in private or public, orders their places of worship pulled down, and their property confiscated to the 'Catholic Church.' Eusebius, of Caesarea, was delighted with this edict, and berated the heretics as 'hypocrites, caterpillars and locusts.' The Arians and others suffered frightfully, and the pagans stood astonished; for while they had various sects amongst themselves, they never persecuted each other to enforce uniformity. After A.D. 330 Rome and Constantinople became the highest sacerdotal seats, with boundaries answering to those of the Empire, and the will of the court hold the scales of orthodoxy and heterodoxy; all who differed with the dictates of the Emperor and his party were guilty of 'heresy and schism.'

The condition of things at that moment is well set forth by Niebuhr in the following words: 'The religion which he had in his head must have been a strange compound indeed. The man who had on his coins the inscription, "Sol invictus," who worshiped pagan deities, consulted the auspices (diviners), and indulged in a number of pagan superstitions, and interfered in the Council of Nice, must have been a repulsive phenomenon, and was certainly not a Christian. He was a superstitions man, and mixed up his Christian religion with all kinds of absurd superstitions and opinions; when, therefore, certain Oriental writers call him equal to an Apostle, they know not what they are saying; and to speak of him as a saint is a profanation of the word.' [*Hist. of Rome*, Lec. lxxix] Thus that fantastic mixture of Judaism, heathenism and Christianity, then called the 'Catholic Church,' became one compact Roman system, held together by bonds within and pressure without, exalted into a tremendous mystery of rite and pomp – a very trampling tyranny. The Carpenter of Nazareth was to be no longer strong in his own weakness, but was to be made mighty by the paralysis inflicted through an imperial, half-pagan autocrat!

It is scarcely necessary here to state how soon every sort of superstition and heathen ceremony was mixed with this State Christianity. The bones of Stephen were found by a revelation from Gamaliel, Paul's teacher, after they had rested for three centuries. Many made pilgrimages to his shrine at Jerusalem and were wonderfully healed, while others made wonderful sums of money out of the exhibition of these relics. The bodies of Luke and Andrew were discovered, and removed to a great temple which the Emperor had built in Constantinople. The remains of Joseph of Arimathea were recovered, and large portions of stone and earth removed from his tomb for miraculous uses. Most wonderful of all, Helena, Constantine's mother, found the real cross of Christ, not that which her son saw in the sky, but that on which Jesus suffered; and although it had been buried for three centuries, the wood was as sound as the heart of oak! This proved an immense treasure. It not only wrought miracles, but although countless pieces were taken all over the world, it grew no less; at any rate that is what Tillemont says. It was a sad oversight that Constantine did not build a warship out of its wood for blowing heretics to atoms. Besides all this, it is estimated that by the end of the fourth century 27,000 monks and nuns were found in Egypt alone, most of whom were piously austere, ignorant and lazy.

These, and many other things are stated by numerous writers of the hierarchy, with pride and even with triumph, and we cannot but honor their frankness. So far from attempting to disguise these things by pious lying, it is their delight to make them known, with others just as disgraceful. Take,

Post-Apostolic Times

for example, Cardinal Baronius, who says with delicious openness: 'It is allowable for the Church to transfer to pious uses those ceremonies which the pagans employed impiously to superstitious worship, after they have been purified by consecration; for the devil is the more mortified to see those things turned to the service of Jesus Christ, which were instituted for his own.' Polidore Virgil says: 'The Church has borrowed several customs from the religion of the Romans and other heathens; but that they have improved them and put them to a better use.' Lib. iii, ch. 1] And Guillaume du Choul sums up the whole case in these words: 'If we examine narrowly we shall discover that several institutions of our religion have been transferred from the Egyptian and other Gentile ceremonies. Such as the tunics and surplices, the crowns or tonsures, of our priests, bowing round the altar; the sacrificial pomp, church music, adorations, prayers, supplications, processions, litanies and several other things which our priests use in their mysteries; offering up to our only God, Jesus Christ, what the ignorance of the Gentiles, with their false religion and foolish presumption, offered to their false deities and to mortal men of their own deifying.' [Mons. Drelingcourt, *Visage de L' Antiquite*] Even Eusebius, in the life-time of Constantine, reports that: 'This Emperor, to make the Christian religion more plausible to the Gentiles, adopted into it the exterior ornaments which they used in their religion.'

These corruptions were lamented and resisted by brave and earnest men. but with slight success; partly because they themselves held some palpable error, and because they were assailed with calumny and resentment. Amongst these was AERIUS, a presbyter, A. D. 355, who maintained that the New Testament makes a presbyter a bishop, condemned prayers for the dead, rejected all fasts ordained by the Church and attempted to restore Apostolic discipline. He had many followers. 'For some time his party, the Aerians,' says Herzog, 'assembled in the open fields, in forests and among the mountains; but, persecuted from all sides, it soon melted away.' [Cyclo. Art. Aerius] The bitterness of the writers of those times shows that these bare-faced perversions were met by formidable resistance; but ingenuity circumvented these struggles, cursed and branded the men and crushed out their measures.

A remarkable case of this sort is found in the manner in which JEROME trampled upon Jovillian and Vigilantus. His injustice comes to the face of his own reports, through exaggerated noise and vulgar abuse. JOVINIAN was one of the best-known heretics in the last half of this period. Ho was thoroughly versed in the Scriptures, and wrote stoutly against voluntary martyrdom, fasting and monkery. He also contended that all baptized believers have morally the same calling, dignity, grace and blessedness. So great was his influence, that a Synod was held at Rome, A.D. 390, at which he was condemned, and a second followed at Milan, 395. He held the vital principle of regeneration by the Spirit of God, the perseverance of the saints, and denied the perpetual virginity of Mary. It is believed that he was scourged at Rome, and banished for holding conventicles. So far as we can judge from his writings quoted by Jerome, he held, in substance, the same views as those of Luther.

VIGILANTUS was born in Gaul, and ordained a presbyter A.D. 395. He went to Palestine, thinking that he would find things there, in the cradle of Christianity, much after the Apostolic order. Instead of this he was disgusted, as Luther was afterward at Rome, and returned. Then, he and Jerome fell into controversy. He attacked the worship of the martyrs and of relics as a lapse into paganism; making an attack, also, upon the claim of superior sanctity in clergymen, monasteries, celibacy and the vows of poverty. To these two we may add a most noble advocate of liberty of conscience in Lactantius. He was the tutor of Crispus, the son of Constantine, as well as the historian

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

of the Diocletian persecution, and, according to Milman, the adviser of the Emperor in questions of legislation. From full conviction, he became a Christian in early life, and stoutly defended religious freedom. He says:

'To defend religion by bloodshed, torture and crime, is not to defend, but to pollute and profane it. for nothing is so much a matter of free-will as religion, in which if the mind of the worshiper is disinclined, religion is at once taken away and ceases to exist. The right way to defend religion is by patient endurance unto death, through which the keeping of the faith is pleasing to God, and adds nothing to the truth.' [Divine Inst., b. v, c. xx] Besides these, we have Helvidius, who lived at Rome in the latter part of the century. He and Jovinian were the first who dared to attack the doctrine of Mary's perpetual virginity; and he also assailed nunnery and other evils. After Jerome had written bitterly against Vigilantus in his sixty-first letter, he attempted to answer Belvidins, under great excitement. He did them great injustice by that most cowardly thing which a man can do, namely: to misrepresent his opponent, and be cut off his appeal to an unbiased posterity. The pen of Jerome was rendered very offensive by his grinding tyranny and crabbed temper. No matter how wrong he was, he could not brook contradiction. In these cases, it were simply mild to call his composition venom; for no man can read his replies to the simple and inoffensive words which he quotes from Vigilantus without disgust. He pretends to call it 'sacrilege,' either to hear or repeat what his opponent says. He then calls him a 'Jew,' a 'Samaritan' and a 'madman, disgorging a filthy surfeit.' He said that his tongue was only fit to be cut out – he had a 'fetid month, fraught with a putrid stench, against the relics and ashes of the martyrs.' He denounces him as a 'dog,' a 'maniac,' a 'monster,' an 'ass,' a 'fool,' a 'glutton,' a 'servant of the devil,' and a 'useless vessel which shall be shivered by the iron rod of Apostolic authority,' with a few other names quite as gentle and saintly. Jovinian received the same treatment from this delectable doctor. Tills reformer had said that there was no difference of merit between the married and the unmarried. This made Jerome's pious indignation boil over, and he calls the statement a 'savage howling of ferocious wolves, scaring the flock;' with other characteristic sayings of a slightly acid sort. Possibly, an interpretation of this animus is given in the 'Retractationes' of Augustine when he laments the Jovinian heresy, which had so far prevailed at Rome, that several nuns, whose honor was spotless, had been led away into the error of matrimony.

One marked feature which relieves the tendencies of this age is THE VIGOR WITH WHICH THE SCRIPTURES WERE MULTIPLIED. Few had ever possessed complete copies of them, and these were now rare, the late Bible-burnings having made a famine of the word of God; it was, therefore, in great demand, and great efforts were made to meet that demand. Diligent search was made for copies that had escaped destruction, and transcripts of them were multiplied. Constantine instructed Ensebins to have fifty copies of the Sacred Writings beautifully engrossed on parchment 'by artificial transcribers of books, most skilful in the art of accurate and fair writing, which (copies) must be very legible and easily portable, in order to their being used.' He also dispatched letters to his civil officers in various provinces, to see that every thing necessary was provided for this work, and supplied two public carriages to convey them to him at Constantinople, at his expense. This order was immediately executed, and the fifty copies were sent to him 'in volumes magnificently adorned.' [*Life of Constantine*, lib. iv, cap xxxvi] He also established a library in the imperial city, into which he gathered nearly seven thousand volumes, chiefly of Christian books. This grew to a hundred thousand in the days of the younger Theodosius, most of which were destroyed by the Emperor Leo III. Tischendorf conjectures that the Sinaitic MS., which he discovered in the Monastery of St. Katharine, on Mount Sinai, A. D. 1854-59, might have formed 'One of the fifty copies of the Bible which, in the year 331, the Emperor Constantine ordered to be executed for Constantinople.' [Tauchnitz ed, p. xii] The people had no power to resist the decisions of Councils,

Post-Apostolic Times

now enforced by the Emperor; and their free use of the Scriptures may have greatly pacified them to bear more patiently the many innovations which had crept into the Church. Possibly with this in view, the Council of Nicea ordained that 'No Christian should be without the Scriptures,' – that of Antioch, A.D. 341, that those who stayed at public worship only to hear the Scriptures read, without partaking of the eucharist, should be excommunicated; and that of Laodicea, A.D. 343-381, 'That the Gospels, with the other Scriptures, ought to be read on the Sabbath day.' The monks of those days were diligent students of the Scriptures; for Chrysostom not only exhorts 'the servant, the rustic and the widow,' to read them, but he asks, 'Are the Scriptures to be read only by monks?' And the common people used them freely, even the women and children hanging the Gospels about their necks, a fact proving that something more is needful to a pure Christianity than free access to the Bible. A Bible possessed but neglected, or used and distorted, leads to the same result in substance; on the principle understood and adopted by Julian the Apostate; when he forbade Christian educators to teach Gentile learning: 'Lest, being furnished with our armor, they make war upon us with our own weapons.'

This century was likewise very active in THE REVISION AND CIRCULATION OF THE SCRIPTURES IN SEVERAL LANGUAGES. Jerome, the crabbed monk of whom we have already spoken, devoted his life chiefly to the revision of the already existing Latin versions. known as the Ante-Hieronymian, that is; those made before his time, as the word denotes. This most learned of all the Latin fathers, A. D. 331-420, undertook his work at the request of Damasus, the Bishop of Rome. Much of the Old Testament he translated from the original Hebrew, but his revision of the New was based upon the old Latin version known as the Itala, compared with the Greek text. His work is now known as the Vulgate, or current Latin text of the Bible, and is declared by the Papal Constitution to be 'authentic, and unquestioned, in all private discussion, reading, preaching and explanation.' By 'authentic,' here, is meant authoritative, and Sixtus V threatened to excommunicate all who should vary from that text. Yet, the Vulgate as we have it today is not the unchanged text that Jerome left, for some of its renderings have been corrupted and made to fit into certain dogmas, as Fulke has shown in countless instances in his 'Confrontation of the Rhemish Testament.' Whether these were made by Pope Sixtus, or by Clement VIII, it is not easy to decide, as both of them changed Jerome's version. Clement charged that the edition of Sixtus swarmed with errors, and made two thousand changes therefrom. But Jerome himself introduced, or at least sanctioned the system of Latinizing Greek words by introducing them into the Latin Bible; the obvious effect of which was to render his version obscure, or, as the historian, Fuller, says, his translation 'needed to be translated over again.' And of the Vulgate as rendered in the Rhemish New Testament, the same writer quaintly says: 'They could no longer blindfold the laity from the Scriptures, resolved to fit them with false spectacles.' [Pierce's *Vindication*, p. 103]

But Jerome said of his own version, that he had 'Corrected only those errors which seemed to change the sense, and had permitted the rest to remain;' and that he had used for the purpose 'Greek copies which did not much differ from the usual Latin reading.' Amongst many Greek words which he transferred instead of translating them, was the family of words relating to baptism, making them cluster around the verb 'baptise;' so that, those who knew the Latin only, could not possibly tell what those words meant. This new-coined method of keeping back the meaning of God's commands has debauched the consciences of translators, and perverted many versions from Jerome's time to our own, by copying his pernicious example, and refusing to translate the exact sense of these words into

Chapter 4 - The Fourth Century

the mother-tongues of those for whom their translations have been made. And what has rendered this practice the more blameworthy has been, the common pretense, either that these words were too holy to be translated, that their meaning was immaterial, that it was indefinite, or that they were incapable of translation, for want of proper equivalents in the tongues in which these versions were made. The soul of a translator who attempts to pull that sort of wool over the eyes of honest folk, would suffer no injury by a very literal rendering from the Greek, of Rev.21:8, especially if he made it when alone on his knees before God. Possibly, Cartwright and Fulke had some such thought in mind when they said of the Rhemish Testament: 'That, compared with the authentical Greek text, it is in many places, ridiculous, insincere, untrue; and, consequently, of no authority.' This conduct of Jerome in forming the Vulgate, justly brought upon him the censure of Baillet, when he says: 'It is agreed that Jerome may be the greatest saint of all translators, but that he is not the most exact. He hath taken liberties which the laws of translation will not admit, and his adversary, Rufinus, fails not to charge him with it.' [Jug. Des Savans]

But this was not the character of all the versions made in the fourth century. For example, the 'GOTHIC,' by Ulphilas, is pronounced by scholars to be very faithful and accurate. This able and devout bishop of the Goths had induced his countrymen to become Christians, and they reposed boundless confidence in him, saying that whatever he did was well done. He was of Cappadocian ancestry, but was a native Goth; still, as his people had no written dialect, he found it necessary to construct a language for them, and first framed an alphabet of the Gothic language from the Greek, Latin and Runic characters, suited to his work. Into this he made a translation of the Old and New Testaments, excepting the Books of Kings and Chronicles; and tradition says, that these were omitted lest they should increase the fierce passions of his people for war. The relics which are left of his version are amongst the most valuable of antiquity, as it was made from the Greek text. These fragments cover the larger part of the New Testament, and he translates the verb *taptigo* by the word 'daupjan,' which means to dip. Tregelles thinks this to have been the vernacular Bible of a great part of Europe in the fifth and sixth centuries. Ulphilas lived A.D. 311-381, and after the ninth century his translation was lost until the sixteenth, when the Gospels were recovered; in the nineteenth, his Epistles of Paul were found. German scholars find the Gothic of this version superior to the German language, of which it is the parent, in richness and dignity of expression, as well as harmony and purity of tone.

The ETHIOPIC VERSION, mentioned by Chrysostom in his second homily on John's Gospel, was made in the ancient and vernacular tongue of Abyssinia, but by whom is not known. It is commonly referred to Frumentius, who first preached Christianity in that country; but at the best this is only tradition. It is generally ascribed to this century, and is regarded as the oldest monument of Ethiopic literature. Dillman declares it to be 'very faithful; being for the most part a verbal rendering of the Greek, and yet readable and fluent, and in the Old Testament often hitting the ideas and words of the Hebrew in a surprising manner.' It also renders the word which defines the act of baptism by 'tamaka,' to dip.

A number of different creeds are found in this century, but they did not by any means push the Bible aside. BASIL is a fair example of his brethren in his love for scriptural truth who, when Valens, the Emperor, promised him promotion if he would embrace Arianism, replied: 'That such fair promises were fit only to entice children, but that he was taught and nourished by the Holy Scriptures, and was ready rather to suffer a thousand deaths, than to suffer one syllable or iota of the

Post-Apostolic Times

Scriptures to be altered.' Then the Emperor fell into a rage, and threatened him with death; to which Basil answered, that 'If he put him to death, it was only to set him at liberty.' The prince then sat down to write an edict for his banishment, but at last tore up the paper and cast it from him; the great divine was left to labor and die in peace.

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

During this period the unity of the Roman Empire was broken, and it was divided into the Eastern and Western Empires; after which followed the migration of the barbarous Northern peoples. Then the Western Empire fell to pieces, and new nations sprang up out of the barbarian forests. The Church also was rent by controversies of every kind, chiefly those concerning the person and work of our Lord. This age is marked by the total eclipse of true justifying faith and the simple method of Gospel salvation. A dramatic salvation pushed it entirely aside, and our Lord's beautiful ordinance of baptism was used to push him aside, to take his place as the great remedy for sin. The absurd doctrine of baptismal regeneration had long been growing; but from this time it not only changed the whole current of Christianity for centuries, but corrupted its foundation truths.

True, a few individuals still held saving faith in Christ as a precedent to baptism. Athanasius declared, A.D. 360, that 'Our Lord did not slightly command to baptize, for first of all he said, 'teach, and then baptize;' that true faith might come by teaching, and baptism be perfected by faith.' So Jerome of Dalmatia, 378: 'It cannot be that the body shall receive the sacrament of baptism unless the soul have before received the true faith.' In the same year Basil urges: 'One must first believe and then be sealed with baptism. Faith must needs precede and go before. None are to be baptized but the catechumens and those who are duly instructed in the faith.' Several others taught the same thing, but for a long time there had been a strange admixture of error with this doctrine. In the last half of the second century even clear-headed Hippolytus had said of the baptized man, that he 'Goes down with faith into the bath of regeneration,...comes up from baptism bright as the sun, flashing with the rays of righteousness; but greatest of all, he comes up a son of God.' The Council of Nicea had actually decreed that he who goes down into the waters of baptism is obnoxious to sins; but he ascends free from their slavery, 'a son of God, an heir, yea co-heir with Christ.' And the Christian writers of the fifth century generally speak of baptism as intrinsically holy, 'ineffable' and 'astounding' in its results. Chrysostom preaches this dangerous heresy on the subject: 'Although a man should be foul with every vice, the blackest that can be named; yet should he fall into the baptismal pool, he ascends from the divine waters purer than the beams of noon...As a spark thrown into the ocean is instantly extinguished, so is sin, be it what it may, extinguished when the man is thrown into the layer of regeneration.' Then he solemnly exhorts those who are deferring baptism to make haste and be thus regenerated, as they were liable, in his judgment, to eternal torment; for he calls trine immersion 'The pool of regeneration and justification.' [Tom. I, p. 269]

But some of the writers of that age went even beyond this extreme, insisting that immersion in baptism wrought miracles on the body as well as grace in the soul. Socrates, the Christian historian, tells of a Jew, at Constantinople, who had been bedridden for years with the palsy; after trying all sorts of physicians he resolved to receive baptism, was brought to Atticus the bishop, on a bed, and when dipped in the water was perfectly cured. [vii., 4] This was even worse than paganism. Ovid, the old Roman poet, had ridiculed the idea that lustrations in water washed away sin: 'O, easy fools, to think that a whole flood Of water e'er can purge the stain of blood!'

Yet Christians clung to this heathen thought, and incorporated it into Christianity. Blondus tells us that at Rome, Mercury's Well purified from perjury and lying. But Ovid laughed at Peleus, who had murdered his brother Phocus, and thought himself absolved because Acastus had lustrated him in river water. A twin thought was perfected by the Christians of the fifth period, namely, that sin committed after baptism was unpardonable, without the severest penance; hence baptism was

Post-Apostolic Times

delayed as near to the hour of death as possible. Gratus was so troubled by this question that he asked the Council of Carthage, A.D. 348, whether a man so sinning did not need a second baptism. This notion wrought such mischief that as few as possible came to baptism; and many sought to bring this state of things to an end. For this reason even Chrysostom pressed that men should follow this duty for duty's sake – as sudden death might cut off the opportunity for baptism; then its neglecters would be lost, and those who were baptized at the last would only shine in heaven as stars, whereas, had this duty been done earlier they would have been like suns. Gibbon says on this subject:

'The sacrament of baptism was supposed to contain a full and absolute expiation of sin; and the soul was instantly restored to its original purity and entitled to the promise of eternal salvation. Among the proselytes to Christianity there were many who judged it imprudent to precipitate a salutary rite which could not be repeated; to throw away an inestimable privilege which could never be recovered. By the delay of their baptism they could venture freely to indulge their passions in the enjoyment of the world, while they still retained in their hands the means of a sure and easy absolution.' He attributes the conduct of Constantine to this presumption in pursuing his ambition 'through the dark and bloody paths of war and policy;' and charges that:

'As he gradually advanced in the knowledge of truth, he proportionably declined in the practice of virtue, and the same year of his reign in which he convened the Council of Nice was polluted with the execution, or rather murder, of his eldest son...The bishops, whom he summoned to his last illness in the palace of Nicomedia, were edified by the fervor with which he requested and received the sacrament of baptism, by the solemn protestation that the remainder of his life should be worthy of a disciple of Christ, and by his humble refusal to wear the imperial purple after he had been clothed in the white garment of a neophyte, The example and reputation of Constantine seemed to countenance the delay of baptism. Further tyrants were encouraged to believe that the innocent blood which they might shed in a long reign would instantly be washed away in the waters of regeneration, and the abuse of religion dangerously undermined the foundations of moral virtue.' [*Roman Empire*, chap. xx]

This 'abuse' of the Gospel mocked at the need of a holy life, made an ordinance a mere party watch-word at heaven's gate, and crushed out the spirit of Christ in a candidate for baptism. It became a mere talisman around which men could rally, and in the name of which Christians could persecute their brethren with inhumanity; plots, counterplots, broils, murders, ambitions and bribes, all revealed in a baptized barbarism; while gentleness, justice, purity and brotherly love well-nigh disappeared. The century opened with an intolerant bitterness on the part of the orthodox toward all who differed with them, not only in opinion, but in forms of expression. All dissent must seal its lips or bite the dust. At the close of the fourth, 'heresy' became a capital offense, punishable with death in some cases, under Theodosius, A.D. 379-395. His edict enforced uniformity of belief against all who differed with 'Catholics.' Their places of worship were confiscated for the use of 'Catholics,' they could neither bequeath nor inherit property, they were forbidden to dispute on religion, some of their ordained ministers were fined ten pounds weight of gold, others were banished, and the 'elect' of the Manicheans were sentenced to death as enemies of the State. The civil arm enforced the acts of Church discipline, orthodoxy was made the form of all public acts and offices, and when the balance trembled on any religious topic in controversy, the Emperor threw in the sword for settlement. The last toleration of religious differences was enjoyed under Julian the apostate, A.D. 362, if we except the brief eight months of Jovian in 363; but in 415 Honorius issued

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

an edict forbidding the Donatists to assemble, on pain of death. This was the result of a great debate held at Carthage, 411, between 279 Donatist and 280 Catholic bishops. This edict was not executed to the extreme, but it silenced every opposing tongue. Gibbon tells us that 300 of the Donatist bishops and thousands of their ministers were stripped of their property, banished to the islands, or obliged to hide themselves in the wilds of Africa. Many persons of rank in schismatic assemblies paid ruinous fines, and obstinacy was unpardonable. Of course there was much earnest remonstrance and resistance, and the more far-seeing Catholics were seized with alarm, for if the religion of the majority or that of the Emperor changed, their free action was at an end.

Moved by these fears, the Council of Antioch, A.D. 371, forbade appeals to Emperors in matters of purely ecclesiastical authority, without the consent of the bishop. Augustine led in the debate against the Donatists at Carthage, and afterward advocated forcible means for reclaiming them, under cover of Christ's words, 'Compel them to come in.' But in earlier life, when he was a Manichean himself, he thought it wrong to punish heretics. Petilian, his Donatist opponent, urged strongly that there should be no compulsion, or interference of the civil power in matters of religion. Violence however triumphed as usual, and Theodosius II commanded all books which did not conform to the Council of Nicaea to be destroyed, and those who concealed them to be put to death. Still, persecution not only followed all dissenting Christians, but the pagans were slain for their paganism. True, the Emperors were yet as much the head of the pagan faith as of the Christian; but they issued decree after decree prohibiting sacrifices to the gods under extreme penalties. The despotism of Theodosius treated his heathen subjects and Christian opponents alike. On the ground of a moral regeneration Christ demanded love for all men; but when this heathenish system of baptismal regeneration supplanted the need of purity of heart, Christians inflicted the same tragedy of horrors upon the defenseless pagans whom they were sent to convert, that the unconverted heathen had inflicted on them. Thus a heathenized baptism belied the gentleness of Jesus in the most atrocious way; and its ravenous thirst for blood pawned his royal crown to deck the brow of hate. When the persecuting demon took possession, Christ's rebuke, 'Ye know not what spirit ye are of,' was forgotten.

At this time the assumptions of the Emperors and the ambitions of the clergy had sunk the rights of the people in the dust, both in State and Church. The congregations had no longer the right to select their own pastors, much less to govern their internal affairs. By canons xii, xiii, of the Council of Laodicea, A.D. 360, the appointment of bishops in villages and other country places was forbidden, and the 'multitude' deprived of all voice in the election of the clergy, all power being now centered in the metropolitan bishop. Jerome was compelled to draw the contrast with former times. He says, in his 'Commentary on Titus,' I, I: 'Among the ancients, presbyters and bishops were the very same; but by little and little, in order that the plants of dissension might be plucked up, the whole management was intrusted to one individual. As the presbyters, therefore, know that they are subjected to him who was their president by the custom of their Church; so the bishops know that they are greater than their presbyters, more by custom than by the principle of any appointment of Christ.' Cardinal Manning gives us the fully developed doctrine which has grown out of that 'custom,' in the claim of present infallibility for the clergy. He says:

'The pastoral authority, or the episcopate, together with the priesthood and the other orders, constitute an organized body divinely ordained to guard the deposit of the faith. The voice of that body, not so many

Post-Apostolic Times

individuals, but as a body, is the voice of the Holy Ghost. The pastoral ministry as a body cannot err, because the Holy Spirit, who is indissolubly united to the mystical body, is eminently and above all united to the hierarchy and body of its pastors. The episcopate united to its center is, in all ages, divinely sustained and divinely assisted to perpetuate and to enunciate the original revelation.' [*Temporal Mission Holy Spirit*]

These high prerogatives on the part of the bishops made them worse and worse, till they took leave, not only of simple manners and pure doctrine, but of good sense. They gave themselves up to dissipation and voluptuousness, vied with princes in splendor and affected the rank of courts. Martin, of Tours, claimed superior dignity to the Emperor, the Bishop of Rome supremacy over all Church dignitaries, and the Bishop of Constantinople cursed him for claiming his right. Then the Bishop of Jerusalem entered the field, claiming that as his Church was founded first and by the Apostles themselves, he was the most venerable and his authority unquestionable. But the Emperor Valentinian III, A.D. 445, made Leo I of Rome the rightful ruler of the whole Western Church. The Emperors, however, impiously claimed high honor. They were addressed as the 'Supreme Master,' 'Everlasting King,' your 'Eternity' and your 'Godship.' Many of the bishops were grossly ignorant, for several of those who attended the Councils of Ephesus and Chalcedon, in this century, were unable to write, and attested the decrees in this form: 'I, such a one, have subscribed by the hand of - - -; or such a bishop having said that he could not write, I, whose name is underwritten have subscribed for him.'

This ignorance excited ambition for the speedy enlargement of the Church by infamous means. Gibbon says: 'The salvation of the common people was purchased at an easy rate, if it be true that in one year twelve thousand men were baptized at Rome, besides a proportionable number of women and children; and that a white garment, with twenty pieces of gold, had been promised by the Emperor to every convert.' [Rom. Emp., chap xx] He cites many grave authorities for the truth of this statement. But that process was both too slow and expensive, and Augustine set the fires of purgatory in full blaze, to awaken the people from their apathy. Clement, of Alexandria, first broached the doctrine of purgatory, in the third century. Cyprian had great trouble about those who had become martyrs before baptism, but concluded that as they were immersed in overwhelming sufferings they might be saved. But Augustine thought that the dead must be saved either by water in this world, or fire in the next. The case of the thief on the cross perplexed him sorely. He could not have gone to purgatory, for Jesus said that he would take him to Paradise; and as he suffered for his crimes, suffering could not save him. But as there is no record of his baptism before his crucifixion, Augustine found some relief in the thought, that no one knew that he had not been baptized beforehand! Here bitterly laments Augustine's 'morbid tendency' to 'twist and warp the simplest facts, to wrench and distort the plainest declarations of Scripture, and to hatch and scrape together the most sophistical arguments and the most fantastical hypotheses, rather than to submit to what makes against some favorite notion or fancy Yet, Augustine knew the truth here; he had known it thirty years before, when he wrote his earlier work.' [Mission of the Comf., pp. 236,237] Still as these twistings found for him a way to save men who sinned after baptism, by taking them through purgatory proper; so babes could now be baptized, and yet be saved if they fell into after sin.

This discovery made AUGUSTINE bold to take an advanced step for infant baptism. He held (Serm. 294) that unbaptized infants were consigned to eternal fire, though their damnation would be the lightest of all; and began to terrify the world with this horrible dogma. The word '*limbus*,' or

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

'fringe,' was used by him to indicate the outskirts of hell; but he held that dead babes unbaptized were punished by exclusion from heaven, and by positive pain in this new found *limbus infantium* of his. In that case, infant baptism met a prime necessity for the babes if they did not die, and purgatory another at the close of life, if they sinned after baptism. At this point another motive came in. Orthodox baptism administered to babes would rescue them from Arianism and till the ranks of the Church by natural birth, and so the sentimental superstition was established. The most eloquent preachers of this day vainly exhorted adults to seek baptism so long as they thought that severe penance could atone for sin after baptism; but a future purgation by fire gave a new phase to the question and rendered the baptism of babes absolutely necessary. Out of this new departure of infant salvation by baptism some fresh and perplexing questions arose. For example: the Council of Neo-Caesarea, 314-325, answered the curious question, Whether a mother being immersed shortly before the birth of her babe, secured thereby the baptism of her unborn little one? They gravely decided that in this case the mother 'communicates nothing to the child, because in the profession, every one's own resolution is declared.' In treating of this decision, Grotius cites two great commentators upon the canon: Balsamon, who thinks that the child could not be baptized because it was neither 'enlightened,' nor had 'any choice of the divine baptism;' and Zonaras, who decides that the babe had 'no need of baptism' until it was born. Grotius himself concludes that the Council could not think the infant baptized with its mother, as 'A child was not wont to be baptized, but upon its own will and profession.'

In the fourth century, the baptism of a babe outside of Africa was much more common than before; but in order to silence all opposition, the Council of Carthage, A.D. 397, decreed (can. ii) 'an anathema against such as deny that children ought to be baptized as soon as they are born.' [Du Pin, I, 635] Then, according to Bishop Taylor, the Council of Milevium, 416, decreed: 'Whoever denies that new-born infants are to be baptized, to the taking away of original sin – let him be anathema.' [*Lib. of Proph.*, pp. 320,321] The first injunction of infant baptism by Church authority was at Carthage, in 397; the second at Milevium, 416; and this last African decree, being confirmed by Innocent 1, was the first indorsement of the innovation by authority at Rome. But the great fight which Augustine made on the subject, marks it as an African movement from the first, and shows that it provoked resistance at every step, until his brave contest enforced it on the fifth century. Winer, the learned German, sums up the whole case thus in his Lectures: 'Originally, only adults were baptized; but at the end of the second century in Africa, and in the third, generally, infant baptism was introduced; and in the fourth century it was theologically maintained by Augustine.' This great critic thus explains the fact that Augustine, A.D. 353-430, was the first theologian who maintained a place for it in Christian theology, and attempted to indicate its theological bearings on the whole Christian system. He presided at the Council of Milevium, and was bound to defend the ground which its ninety-two members had taken. Having collected his brethren and pronounced a curse upon those who denied that immersed babes were washed from moral pollution thereby, he was forced to defend the error. And so this great mind went from one error into another, until he became the champion of ecclesiasticism, sacerdotalism and sacramentarianism, all distorted into monstrous proportions.

Augustine was beset, on the other hand, by PELAGIANISM, which denied original sin; and hence, to him, the need of baptizing babes. Pelagius contended that they were as pure as the light, and the wide prevalence of tin's faith terribly aroused Augustine. The companion of Pelagius,

Post-Apostolic Times

Caelestus, an Irish layman, assigned new-born babes to Adam's moral condition before his fall; and the two went together first to Rome and then to Africa. At Carthage, Aurelius the bishop summoned the Irish brother before a synod as a heretic, on the charge that he denied original sin, in that babes had need of remission; and so their baptism *was* unnecessary because it implied their sanctification in Christ. He was condemned, went under censure to Sicily, A.D. 412, and was condemned again by Zosimus the Roman bishop. He then repaired to Constantinople, 420, but returning to Rome was finally expelled. Augustine thought infant baptism a great bulwark against Pelagianism and an evidence of depravity.

We find another remarkable fact. Down to this time there was no provision for the baptism of babes in the liturgies, but now it began to appear. From an early period questions had been put to those who voluntarily assumed baptism. Ambrose, A.D. 340-397, put these: "'Dost thou believe in God, the Father Almighty?'" Thou hast said, "I believe." And you have been immersed. Secondly, you were asked, "Dost thou believe in Jesus Christ our Lord?" and you said, "I believe," and you were immersed. Thirdly, thou wast asked, "Dost thou believe in the Holy Ghost?" and thou said, "I believe" Then you were immersed the third time.' Right here Augustine met another grave difficulty. This formula must now be forced into use for babes in some way, as he wished the immersed babe to stand in Christianity exactly where the adult stood. Because the child could not answer for himself, the sponsor must answer for him. Or, as Dr. Jacob better expresses it, 'As the adult by his own mouth professed the faith which he had, the infant was, by the mouth of another, to express the faith which he had not.' This the doctor calls 'an ecclesiastical fiction, to exhibit an identity which did not exist.' Sponsors had existed for some time for every young person who made a voluntary confession of faith. But Augustine is the first to assume that the sponsors of babes took upon themselves the child's Christian responsibilities, by answering the baptismal questions in place of the babe; and so that in case of the babe's death before reaching responsibility, God would receive their answers as the confession of the child. Therefore, in Augustine's day, the questions were first put to the sponsors: 'Does this child believe in God? Does he turn to God?' etc. They replied, 'He does!' But Boniface I asked Augustine directly: 'How can it be said with truth that an infant believes and repents and so forth, when it has no thought or sense about such things?' Augustine replied: 'The infant is said to believe because he receives the sacrament of faith and conversion. As the sacrament of the body of Christ is in a certain manner called his body, so the sacrament of faith is called faith; and he who has this sacrament, therefore, has faith; and consequently an infant coming to be baptized may be said to have faith or to believe, because these questions and answers are a part of the celebration of the sacrament of the celebration of faith.' This answer, if it was intended to mean any thing, must mean that the infant believes because he is baptized, and therefore he was baptized.

This constructive faith of proxy made sad havoc of justification by faith; and yet it exhibits Augustine's conception that without faith baptism is invalid, and for that reason that the baptism of babes was a troublesome thing to manage. Faith of some sort must be had; and as the child had none of any order, somebody must believe for the two, although the babe had no hand in the arrangement. Innocent had approved infant baptism at Rome, but it grew very slowly there, for Boniface and others would keep on asking these inconvenient questions about the practice; so that it was not till A.D. 604 that Gregory, the Roman bishop, formed a liturgy for its celebration. It says:

'The font being blessed, and he holding the infant by whom it is to be taken up, let the priest inquire thus:

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

"What is thy name?" (*Answer*) "Dost thou believe in God, the Father Almighty, creator of heaven and earth?" (*Answer*) "I believe." "And in Jesus Christ, his only Son our Lord, who was born and suffered?" (*Answer*) "I believe." "Dost thou also believe in the Holy Spirit, the holy Catholic Church, the remission of sins, the resurrection of the body?" (*Answer*) "I believe." Then let the priest baptize with a trine immersion, once only invoking the holy Trinity, saying: "I baptize thee in the name of the Father (*and let him immerse once*), and of the Son (*and let him immerse a second time*), and of the Holy Spirit" (*and let him immerse a third time*)."

But the law of the State soon made it compulsory on parents to bring their children to baptism; resist it as they might, the legal demand left them no choice in the matter. Dr. Schaff says that compulsory infant baptism was 'unknown in the ante-Nicene age,' and pronounces it 'a profanation of the sacred event, and one of the evils of the union of Church and State, against which Baptists have a right to protest.' [Art. Bap. Infant, Herzog's Ency.]

A notable fact to be observed here is that, after all this stir, Augustine himself was not immersed until he came to manhood. We have noticed elsewhere that Monica, his mother, was one of the holiest women in Christian history. She trained his mind, having entered him as a catechumen when he was an infant, but carefully abstained from presenting him for baptism until he chose himself to be a disciple of the Lord. When young he fell dangerously ill, and earnestly desired baptism, but it was 'deferred, lest he should incur the deeper guilt of after sin.' [Philip Smith, Hist. Chn. Ch., p. 336] His early life had been very wicked, as his 'Confessions' show. Then, after all his maternal training, before his baptism he spent six months near Milan in receiving Christian instruction; and, strangely enough, was baptized with his own son, who was born of a concubine, and who had now reached the age of fourteen years. Ambrose did not immerse Augustine until he had reached the age of two and thirty years. And he was not alone amongst the fathers in this respect. Ephrein, of Edessa, the greatest hymnist of his age, is supposed to have been born of parents who were martyred for Christ; he was educated by Bishop Jacob at Nisibis, but was not baptized until eighteen years of age. Bishop Liberius did not immerse Jerome till about his twentieth year, although his father was a Christian. The father of Gregory Nazianzen was a bishop, and Norma, his mother, was a saintly woman. She devoted her child to God by prayer, as all true Baptist mothers do; but he was not baptized until he gave his own heart to Christ, when he was thirty years old. His own brother, Caesarius, physician to the Emperor at Constantinople and a devout Christian, was not baptized till near his death. The ancestors of Basil, of Cappadocia, had been followers of Christ for generations, and Emmelia, his mother, *was* eminent for godliness; yet he was not baptized till after his conversion when he had reached his twenty-seventh year. Chrysostom had Christian parents, too; and Anthusa, his mother, was so noted for her talents and consecration to Christ, that Libanine, the pagan scholar, said of her: 'Ah! what women there are amongst the Christians!' Still her eloquent son did not receive baptism until he had become a distinguished teacher of rhetoric. Then he studied for three years under Bishop Meletins, at Antioch, and was baptized upon his confession of Christ at the age of thirty.

If our blessed Lord instituted the baptism of infants when he prayed for them and blessed them, it is passing strange that with one consent the holy parents of these great men willfully neglected the baptism of their children, in open disregard of his love and law. The godly parents of these great lights in Christianity deliberately deprived their sons of their rights in the kingdom of God, if Christ required them to bring their offspring to baptism as babes. No women outside of New Testament times rank side by side in sanctity with three of these mothers; and how much better is it than a base slander on them to say that they were remiss in the first duty of Christian motherhood if Jesus

Post-Apostolic Times

required not the baptism of their babes at their hands? No writer of their day has left a rebuke of their sad negligence. Yet thousands of otherwise well-informed Christians in our day almost shudder in holy horror because Baptist fathers and mothers will persist in giving their offspring to Christ by prayer, by godly example and by Bible instruction, but will not rob them of the right to pat on Christ by their own personal obedience – the holy right of making their own good confession of their Redeemer before many witnesses. That is to say, they affect to be scandalized because Baptist fathers and mothers treat their children now exactly as the parents of Ephrem, Jerome, Gregory, Caesarius, Basil, Chrysostom and Augustine treated their sons. The simple fact is, that the illustrious godliness of these parents knew nothing about the immersion of babes as a Bible duty, and could not trifle with an ordinance of their God and King by so perverting Gospel baptism as to force it on their children. And if these most Christ-like of all Christ's disciples abstained from the baptism of babes on principle, until the Church began to teach the superstition that infants who die unbaptized are damned, what likelihood is there that the unnamed and now unknown thousands of less godly people practiced this pretended apostolic rite, which Augustine so thoroughly clouded by its admixture with the doctrine of salvation through the faith of proxy?

The act of baptism remained the same as it had been, the immersion of the body three times in water, and this amongst the orthodox and heterodox alike; excepting the sect known as Eunomians, of whom Theodoret and Epiphanius had complained in the previous century, because they immersed only the upper part of the body with the head downward. 'These,' says Cathcart, 'were the only men among all the heretics of the ancient Church, that rejected this way of baptizing, by a total immersion in ordinary cases.' [*Baptism of the Ages*, p. 56] This Arian sect used but an immersion of the upper part of the body, as far as the breast. But Cyril, of Jerusalem, says of the orthodox: 'Ye were led by the hand to the sacred font of the divine baptism, as Christ from the cross to the prepared tomb. And each was asked, if he believes in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. And ye professed the sacred profession, and sank down thrice into the water and came up again.' Basil asks: 'Where the tradition is taken from to immerse a man three times, and answers, that it is not a private or secret one, but of the Apostles. Jerome said: 'We are thrice dipped in the water, that the mystery of the Trinity may appear but one.' Augustine states that this way of baptizing opened a twofold mystery. Trine immersion was not only a symbol of the Trinity, but a 'type' of our Lord's resurrection on the third day. He says, also: 'Three times did we submerge your heads in the sacred fountain.' And Chrysostom tells us that 'three immersions give but one baptism.' Dupin, writes: 'They plunged those three times whom they baptized.' Maitland adds: 'The immersion was required to be threefold, or trine;' and so Bingham, with many others.

Yet, this well-attested historical practice of *three* immersions has no support in the Scriptures, but, as Dr. Conant says: 'Is clearly contrary to the words of the command. Had trine immersion been intended, the words would have been in the names of the Father, etc., or in the name of the Father, in the name of the Son, and so forth.' Jerome classes it with 'many other things which are by tradition observed in the Church, and which have no authority of Scripture for them, but the consent of the whole world,' which, he thought, gave the force of a precept, 'as in the font of baptism to plunge the head thrice under water.'

Further, this innovation now linked to it the repulsive custom of immersing the candidates in a state of entire nudity. Dr. Wall expresses his belief that they thought this better represented the putting off of the old man, also the nakedness of Christ on the cross; but in addition to this, they

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

came to regard baptism as a purifying of the body from all moral taint, so that if the water did not pass over every part of the body, leprous spots might be left. But whatever the motive for this misguided zeal, as Cave says: 'They were brought to the font and were first stripped of their garments, intimating their putting off the old man which is corrupt, with his deceitful lusts.' [*Prim. Christianity*, p. 317] Dean Stanley gives this exact account of the observance:

'There was but one hour for the ceremony; it was midnight. The torches flared through the dark hall as the troops of converts flocked in. The baptistery consisted of an inner and an outer chamber. In the outer chamber stood the candidates for baptism, stripped to their shirts; and turning to the west, as the region of sunset, they stretched forth their hands through the dimly-lit chamber, as in a defiant attitude toward the Evil Spirit of Darkness, and speaking to him by name, said, "I renounce thee, Satan, and all thy works, and all thy pomp, and all thy service." Then they turned, like a regiment, facing right around to the east, and repeated in a form more or less long, the belief in the Father, the Son and the Spirit, which has grown up into the so-called Apostles' Creed of the West, and the so-called Nicene Creed of the East. They then advanced into the inner chamber. Before them yawned the deep pool, or reservoir, and standing by, the deacon or deaconess, as the case might be, to arrange that all should be done with decency. The whole troop undressed completely, as if for a bath, and stood up naked before the bishop, who put to each the questions, to which the answer was returned in a loud and distinct voice, as of those who knew what they had undertaken. They then plunged into the water. Both before and after the immersion, their bare limbs were rubbed with oil from head to foot; then were they clothed in white gowns, and received, as token of the kindly feeling of their new brotherhood, the Kiss of peace and a taste of honey and milk; and they expressed their new faith by using for the first time the Lord's Prayer.' [*Christian Institutes*, p. 45]

This picture of pious savagery drawn by the delicate hand of her Majesty's late chaplain at Westminster, will greatly edify those who recoil from the shocking indecency of modern Baptists, who modestly immerse believers in full apparel, because the portrait is that of those canonized saints whom the foes of the Baptists so much admire. Then, it smacks so zestfully of the delectable doings of the Men of Munster, the apt and docile scholars of these fathers, as to deprive decent Baptists of sainthood entirely. But for the re-assurance of all parties, good Brenner, the great Catholic, says: 'If all this at present seems improper, the noble simplicity and innocence of the early Christians took no offense at it. They had but one thought about the matter, which was the importance and sacredness of the "mysteries." They looked at every thing of the natural order in the same sacred light.' [*Historical Presentation of Baptism*, pp. 22-4] And even St. Otho, Bishop of Bamberg, tells us most solemnly that 'Nothing indecent, nothing shameful; in short, nothing at all that could be disliked by any one,' took place, and that 'no honest persons abstracted themselves from baptism in consequence of shame.' Indeed, why should they, when this was the highest fashion of the times? for Simeon Metaphrastes states that the Emperor Constantine was entirely nude when immersed; and so was Jobia, daughter of Sapor, the King of Persia. Besides, Augustine enforces the practice with this religious consideration: 'Naked we were born, naked we go to the washing, and naked we go to the gate of heaven;' while Cyril addresses the newly immersed thus: 'As soon as you approached, you took off your clothing and so were naked. O, admirable thing! Naked you have been in the sight of all and you did not shame yourself.'

Glovis, the King of the Franks, was immersed after tins fashion, December 25, A.D. 496, by Remigius, the Bishop of Rheims, in the cathedral baptistery of that city. His case is a most interesting one and calls for narration. The Confederacy of the Alemanni on the Middle Rhine was a rival of the Frank Confederacy on the Lower Rhine, and Clovis was chosen as the commander-in-

Post-Apostolic Times

chief to repel the invasion of their territory. He was a bold, brave and desperate warrior. He met the foe in fierce encounter at Zulpich, about twenty miles south-west of Cologne, and the battle threatened to go against him. He, therefore, called upon his gods for help, but in vain. His wife, Clotilda, a Burgundian princess who was a Christian, had made every effort to convert him; but while he permitted his two sons to be baptized, he doubted the power of Christ unless he interposed specially in his behalf. Yet, he joined her in prayer to Christ, and vowed to become a Christian if he won a victory. Gregory, of Tours, gives the following as his prayer:

'The army of Clovis began to rush to sure destruction; but he seeing this, pained at the heart, moved to tears and with eyes lifted up to the heavens, said: "O, Jesus Christ, whom Clotilda declares to be the Son of the living God, then who art said to give help to the struggling and victory to those hoping in thee; devoted to thee, I entreat the glory of thy assistance; and if thou wilt indulge me with victory over these enemies, and I shall have full experience of that valor which the people dedicated to thy name proclaim that they have put to the proof, I shall believe upon thee, and I shall be baptized in thy name. For I have called upon my gods, and they have been far from helping me; from which consideration I believe that the gods who do not come to those obeying them are invested with no power. Now, I call upon thee, and I desire to believe upon thee, only let me not be overthrown by my adversaries." And when he said these things, the Alemanni began to seek flight; and when they perceived that their king was killed, they put themselves under the authority of Clovis, saying, "We entreat that no more people may be killed; we are thine."

Gregory adds that the queen then sent for the bishop to show him the way of salvation, and the king raised the difficulty that his people would not permit him to forsake his gods. On consulting them, however, they shouted, 'We are prepared to follow the immortal God.' Then, Remigius ordered the baptistery prepared, and the whole city flocked to the cathedral, or more properly to the 'temple of baptism' adjoining. The king walked through the streets under painted canvas, adorned with white curtains, and the baptismal building was lighted by wax tapers, and tilled with what he claims to have been a celestial perfume, an odor of Paradise. As the monarch entered this splendor, and the sweetest magic floated to his ear, he asked the bishop if this was the kingdom of heaven of which he had heard, and was answered, 'No! but it is the beginning of the way thither.' The baptistery in which Clovis was immersed was a large tank, or pool, which tradition has removed to Paris where it is now found in the Bibliotheque Nationale. It is seven feet long, two and a half feet deep, about the same in width, and is of polished porphyry. Alcuin gives substantially the same account, representing the eagerness of the king to be 'Washed in the living fountain of Catholic baptism, for the remission of sins and for the hope of eternal life. He led the eager king to the fountain of life, and when he came he washed him in the fountain of eternal salvation. So, the king was baptized with his nobles and people, who rejoiced to receive the sacrament of the healing bath, divine grace having been previously given them.' Before the bishop immersed him he said: 'Meekly bow thy neck, Sicambrian; worship that which thou hast burnt, burn that which thou hast worshiped.' Three thousand of his warriors and large numbers of his subjects were baptized with him, amongst them his two sisters. Hincmar says that the throng which pressed to baptism was so great, that the priest could not press through with the consecrated oil, 'hence, in a wonderful manner another oil appeared.' Avitus, Bishop of Vienne, wrote him a letter, saluting him 'as one born out of the water;' immersed in what Gregory calls 'a fresh fountain.' Thus, the founder of the French nation made confession of the orthodox faith, and was thrice immersed. At that time he was the only orthodox monarch in Europe, the others being Arians, for which reason he was called the 'Eldest Son of the

Chapter 5 - The Fifth Century

Church.' His subsequent moral inconsistencies show more martial enthusiasm in his conversion than sacrificial cross-bearing; an epitome of his whole life being condensed into his exclamation when he first heard of Christ's crucifixion: 'Had I been there with my brave Franks, I would have avenged his wrongs.'

This century is marked by many translations of the Scriptures. Theodoret, a Syrian bishop, says: 'The Hebrew Scriptures are not only translated into the language of the Grecians, but also of the Romans, the Indians, Persians, Armenians, Scythians, Sarmatians, Egyptians; and, in a word, into all the languages that are used by any nation.' Mesrobe, a devout Christian Minister of State to the King of Armenia, translated them into the Armenian at this time. He formed an alphabet of thirty-six letters in order to do his work ; and made his version first from the Syriac, and then from a Greek manuscript which was sent to him from the Council of Ephesus, A.D. 431. On account of its exact and elegant simplicity, it is called the 'Queen of Versions.' He uses the word '*mogredil*' to express baptism, a word which signifies immerse.

This age created those wonderful, illuminated biblical manuscripts, written, in many cases, on red, violet or dark purple parchment, often in letters of gold or silver, with illustrated borders and capitals. Many of them were brilliant beyond description, bound in ivory and studded with gems. The Emperor Theodosius devoted himself to the study of the Bible, and with his own hand produced a copy of the Gospels in letters of gold, formed by a chemical solution of that metal. It was also in this century that Patrick instructed the Irish in the use of the Roman letters.

Clement, of Alexandria, had warned Christians against the authority of antiquity and tradition, and saw no cure, therefore, but the 'written word.' He said that he alone was right: 'Who pursuing this course from year to year, in converse with and conformity to the Scriptures, keeps to the rule of the Apostolic and ecclesiastical purity, according to the Gospel and those established truths which, as given by the Lord, by the law and the prophets, whoever seeks shall find.' Instead of following this counsel, however, tradition came in like a flood. Even Chrysostom taught: 'It is clear that they (the Apostles) did not deliver all things by their epistles, but communicated many things without writing; and these, too, demand our assent of faith; it is tradition, make no further inquiry.' Epiphanius, of Salamis, declares as roundly: 'Tradition is necessary; all things cannot be learned from the Scriptures. The Apostles left some things in writing, others by tradition.' On this ground, every absurd practice was justified. Basil puts such questions as these: 'We sign with the sign of the cross. Who has taught this in Scripture? We consecrate the water of baptism and the oil of unction, as well as him who receives baptism. From what Scripture? Is it not from private and secret tradition ? Moreover, the anointing with oil, what passage of Scripture teaches this? Now a man is thrice immersed. From whence is it derived or delivered? Also the rest of what is done in baptism: as to renounce Satan and his angels. From what Scripture have we it? Is not this from private and secret tradition?' [*De Spiritu Sancto*, C. xxvii]

Chrysostom talks similar inane nonsense of the Supper. He tells us of 'The dreadful and mystic Table.' 'The Lamb for thee is slaughtered, the priest for thee contends, the spiritual fire from the sacred table ascends, the cherubim holding their stations round about, while the seraphim hovering around, and the six-winged veiling their faces, while for thee the incorporeal orders along with the priest intercede.'... 'Not as bread shouldst thou look at that, neither esteem that as wine, for not like other aliment: do these descend into the draught.'... 'Think not that ye receive the divine body, as from the hand of man; but rather as was the fire from the tongs of the very seraphim given to Isaiah.'

Post-Apostolic Times

[Hom., ix]

Think of cherubim veiling their faces, lest they catch a glimpse of bread and wine! No wonder that Tully, when ridiculing the heathen notion of the times, asks, 'Was any man ever so mad as to take that which he feeds upon, for a god?' [Cic. De Nat. Deor, 3] We can suppose that the angels shudder when men say that they eat the body, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ, and when they say that bread and wine, if dropped into the month of the dying and the dead works a miracle, as the Christians did at this time. Gregory Nazianzen, declares that when his sister Gorgonia was suffering from a severe malady she flew to the 'altar,' and holding it fast obtained an instant cure, by rubbing her body with a few crumbs and drops of the elements. Evagrius reports that it was the custom at Constantinople, for the school-boys to eat what remained of the consecrated bread after the Supper. The son of a Jewish glass-blower, in wrath threw another boy into a glowing furnace, but a woman in a purple robe was with him in the flames, pouring water on the coals, and his mother pulled him out unhurt. The fourth canon of the Church of Hippo decreed that: 'The eucharist should not be put into the mouth of the dead. For it was said by our Lord, "Take ye and eat." But corpses cannot receive or eat.' Ferrandus, a deacon of Carthage, was sorely tried because a black slave was taken with a violent fever and baptized before death, while unconscious. The deacon wrote to Fulgentius, Bishop of Ruspe, to know whether he was saved without the Supper. He thought that possibly he might be. In this he differed from Gelasius I, Bishop of Rome, who said: 'Jesus Christ, with his heavenly voice, pronounces, "Except ye eat my flesh and drink my blood, ye have no life in you." We see no exception made, nor has any one dared to say, that an infant without 'this sacrament of salvation can be brought into eternal life. But without this life he will no doubt be in everlasting death.'

In a word, the Supper had long been the subject of sad abuses. The third Council of Carthage, A.D. 397, was obliged to check these, and forbid the custom of giving the bread and wine to the dead, or of burying them with the dead, as was often practiced. By the close of the sixth century, there was no end to the ridiculous virtues claimed for these elements, many fanatics declaring that they had raised the dead. [Dallaeus De. Cult. Lat., p. 957] John Moschus, of Jerusalem, has the effrontery to tell this lying wonder of a certain pillar-saint, namely: 'That he threw these elements into a boiling hot caldron, when lo! immediately it was cold, while the bread and wine remained dry and safe!'

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

The period stretching from the fifth to the fifteenth century is often spoken of as the Middle Ages, and the first half of that time as the Dark Ages; because of feudal and papal violence, the universal reign of injustice and the torpor of the intellect. Innocent and Leo had long struggled to bring Christendom under the supremacy of the Roman See. This, Gregory the Great succeeded in doing. At the close of the seventh age, Alexandria and Antioch were captured by the Saracens, with great suffering to the Churches, while the Eastern Empire was fast declining and the Roman pontiffs were left without rivals.

As yet, we have said nothing of the introduction of the Gospel into the British Isles, and as the sixth century marks their Christian history very strongly, it will be proper to advert to the subject here. These islands were scarcely known to Rome, when her heavy hand was laid upon them under Julius Caesar. The classic nations and all the seats of ancient government lay to the far East; but these were at the extreme of the wild and barbarous West. When Plautius landed his four legions on the coast of Kent and took firm possession of them, Claudius, his master, followed, as if to enlarge the empire, but really to promote the spread of the Gospel, which was to redeem those dark lands from cruel superstition. By A.D. 180, Christianity appears to have reached every province of this colossal realm, from the Danube to Ethiopia and the Libyan Desert, and from the Tigris to Britain. It is not certain when the Gospel reached Britain however; although Bishops Bull, Burgess and Newton contend that it was introduced by one of the Apostles. Gildas thinks that it was before the defeat of the British forces under Boadicea, in 61; Bull and Newton, that a Church existed there before one was formed in Rome. Pagitt unites in this opinion, calling the Church at Rome not only a sister of the British, but 'a younger sister, too.' Matthew Paris fixes the date at about 167; Mosheim, in the reign of Marcus Aurelius, 161-180, being disposed to think that its missionaries took refuge there from France when persecution raged at Lyons and Vienna, 177; and Neander, at the close of the second century, and not from Rome but from the East.

Several of these writers place too much dependence on the statements of Clement Romanus, Irenaeus and Eusebius, who speak with a flourish of the Gospel going to 'the end of the West' at that early date. Gibbon contributes to this idea by saying, that the highways 'opened an easy passage to the missionaries as well as the legions from Italy to the extremity of Spain and Britain.' But Tertullian boasts of Christ's reign in his day: 'Among people whom the Roman arms have never yet subdued...In the farthest extremities in Spain and Gaul and Britain; 'and he names one or more of the British converts. Several writers of the second century make the same statement to persons high in the State; which, if they were exaggerated, would have defeated their purpose, by provoking official contradiction. But whatever the date of its introduction may have been, we have many evidences that it has never been entirely rooted out since, although the Anglo-Saxons by the middle of the fifth century invaded Britain, destroyed the Christian places of assembly, slew their pastors, burned the Scriptures, and drove the few ancient British Christians who were left into Cornwall, Wales and Cumberland, where in part they still retained a footing.

About fifty years ago Mr. Mitchell, the antiquarian, disintombed a church building at St. Pieran, on the sand near Truro, Cornwall, which is supposed to have been built before Austin visited Britain, and to have disappeared in the twelfth century, when several parishes on the northwest coast were buried in the sand. The preceding cuts represent this building and the stone font found there. Of course, idolatry was re-established wherever Christianity was driven out.

Post-Apostolic Times

Two salient points rise out of this early history, namely: Were these British Christians altogether uncorrupted from the simplicity of the Gospel before Pope Gregory sent Austin to Britain, A.D. 586? and, is there any foundation for the oft-repeated assertion that the Welsh people, especially, have never bowed the knee to Rome? It seems impossible to determine the first of these questions, as the general conviction amongst reliable authorities is, that the true Church history of this people and time has never been written, and cannot be with the material now at command. What doctrines they held, what ordinances they practiced, and what was the form of their Church government, are all undetermined questions. But it is at least reasonable to suppose, that owing to their political affinities with Rome during the first four centuries, Christianity took much the same general character in Britain that it did in other western parts of the empire. We know this as a well-established fact, that when the civil and ecclesiastical powers blended at Rome, the corrupt leaven permeated Christianity elsewhere; and in all likelihood this is true of Britain.

Under the theory of uninterrupted Apostolical succession, the Church of England claims to be a continuation of this ancient British Church. This is clearly a modern invention, to serve her clergy as a bridge over which they may trace their line back into the immediate post-Apostolic Church, without dragging the cumbrous chain through all the quagmires of the Church of Rome. The scheme is indeed ingenious, and it is claimed that the Bishops of London and York were both alive, yet in exile, when Austin came to Britain; but the whole plan lacks the evidence of truth, and wears the air of fancy. The swarm of monks which he found at Bangor, Isycoed, Flintshire, N. Wales; also at Bangor on Carrickfergus Bay, Ireland, founded A.D. 530, and in Iona, an island of the Hebrides, shows that these Christians who are said never to have bowed the knee to Rome had fallen into the same errors of faith and practice, in some things at least, with others. When we bring the baptism of King Lucius, St. German and Lupus, with their mission and miracles, together with the lives of the Cambro-British saints, such as David, Beuno, Winefrede and others, into the 'Ancient Christian History of Britain,' we move in the fog of legend and point to Rome as their true source, as surely as the needle points to the pole.

Gregory sent AUSTIN and his forty monks to Britain to restore what the Saxons had destroyed. Of course, he expected to find some remnants of the old Christianity; but his chief design was to convert the idolatrous Angles, Saxons and Jutes, who had wrought the havoc. There were few better or wiser men in his day than Gregory, although as a bigot he was very overbearing. And was he ignorant of the fact, that Columba, the Irish nobleman, known as the 'Apostle of the Highlands,' had established his great monastery in Scotland, and called his followers the 'Servants of God,' *Keldees*? It is of this great school that Dr. Johnson says, it was the 'Luminary of the Caledonian regions, where savage clans and roving barbarians derived the benefits of knowledge and the blessings of religion.' Then, there were many other monks, as at Deny and Durrow, making in all at least from five to seven thousand, and so the conversion of the Saxons was promising. Probably both these considerations excited the zeal of the pope, despite that pleasant story of the Angle youths whom he met in the market-place at Rome. For Bertha, daughter of the King of Paris, had become queen to Ethelbert, King of Kent, one of the seven Anglo-Saxon kings of Britain. She had almost persuaded her husband to embrace Christianity. Thus, Gregory sent Austin, a Roman monk, on this mission of converting the king and, if possible, all Britain, and of placing it under the sway of Rome. He began his work on the island of Thanet, where the king welcomed him, and he then proceeded to Canterbury. The king was baptized A.D. 597, after which he made Austin archbishop of that See,

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

at which place he built his cathedral, 602.

But, in the looseness of the times, Austin had been instructed to adapt the ceremonies of Christianity to the usages of the idolaters, that they might not be shocked by too great a change. And this was done. Bede tells us, that there was often an altar for the sacrifices of paganism and one for Christianity in the same temple; and Procopius his contemporary adds, that some who had embraced Christianity continued to offer human sacrifices. The old British Christians, however, sternly opposed the pretensions of Austin, who assumed great pomp and arrogance; spending more of his time in reducing them to conformity to what he called 'the unity of the Catholic Church,' than in converting the heathen. Up to that time, the Christians of what are now England, Ireland and Scotland had been free from the direct jurisdiction of Rome, and had maintained their ancient rites and customs. Thus, Austin charged them, saying: 'You act in many particulars contrary to our custom, or rather the custom of the universal Church; and yet, if you will comply with me in these three points, namely: to keep Easter at the due time; to administer baptism, by which we are again born to God, according to the custom of the holy Roman Apostolic Church; and jointly with us preach the word of God to the English nation, we will readily tolerate all the other things you do, though contrary to our customs.' [Bede's *Ecc. Hist.*, p. 70] This proposition was made at a conference held with the leaders of the British Christians at Chester. But Leiland says that they disputed with him with great ability, and refused either to accept him as their archbishop, or the pope as their master, or to change their customs. On the contrary, Dinoth of Bangor said: That they owed love and charity to all Christians, the Bishop of Rome with the rest, 'But other obedience to the pope we know not.' He then censured the pope for usurpation, and asked Austin to restore his unjust and tyrannical power into the hands whence it came. Whereupon Austin threatened them with war and death, for he was filled with indignation.

They refused to observe Easter at the same time with the Romish communion, because they did not believe that the pope celebrated it at the proper time. They refused to preach to the Saxons, because they had driven them from their homes, had persecuted them cruelly, and now sought to make them vassals; and they saw no fitness in exposing themselves anew to their wrath, on the bare request of a stranger who was preaching to them himself. As to the second particular, regarding baptism according to the custom of Rome, it is not easy to determine exactly what he demanded. Some think that he required them to adopt all the ceremonies which the Catholics had added to that ordinance; and others, that he exacted of them the practice of infant baptism. While, perhaps, this point cannot now be fully determined, several things seem to imply that he covered both considerations, and especially the latter. We have no record showing that infant baptism was practiced in Britain at that time, while there are hints that it was; but in view of the great simplicity of these British Christians, it is at least fair to suppose that it was not well and fully established, so that many still doubted its propriety. Geoffry characterized them as 'Sound in the faith, and pure in the worship, order and discipline, of Christ, as it was delivered to them from the Apostles and evangelists.' This statement, however, does not throw so much light on the subject as the following facts, namely:

1. That in 597, according to Bede, Austin 'desired the solution of some doubts that occurred to him,' and sent a letter to Pope Gregory by the hands of Laurentius and Peter the monk, asking for their solution. His eighth question, in part, was this: 'Also, after how many days the infant born may be baptized, lest he be prevented by death?' To which the pope answers: that the child may be

Post-Apostolic Times

baptized, 'The very hour it is born, is no way *prohibited*; because, as the grace of the holy mystery is to be with much discretion provided for the living and understanding, so it is to be without any delay offered to the dying; lest, while a further time is sought to confer the mystery of redemption, a small delay intervening, the person to be redeemed is dead and gone.' This was in harmony with what he had decreed not long before Austin put his question: 'Let all young children be baptized as they ought to be, according to the tradition of the fathers.' 2. But the conference with the British Christians, at which he demanded that they should 'administer baptism according to the custom of Rome,' was not held till A.D. 602, about five years after he had asked Gregory to solve his doubts on this question. 3. If Austin himself, even when he had been ordained 'Archbishop of the English nation,' had doubts on the question as to how many days old a babe should be before he could receive baptism, the pope's answer throws light upon his meaning in the phrase, 'by which we are again born to God,' and more than hints that the Britons neither believed this nor acted accordingly. 5. Disinterested writers, some of them ancient, understand this to have been the subject in dispute. Thierry, in his account of the matter, says of these British Christians, that they refused to believe in the 'damnation of infants dying without baptism,' which is the very point that the pope argues. Fabian represents Austin as demanding, 'That ye give Christendom to children,' that is, that they admit children into Christianity, according to the custom of the Roman Church. 6. And as if to show the resistance which infant baptism met with, Lingard tells us, that as early as the days of the grandson of Ethelbert of Kent: 'Persuaded of the necessity of baptism by the instructions of his teachers, the legislators of Wessex placed all new-born infants under the protection of the law, and by *the fear of punishment* stimulated the diligence of the parents. The delay of a month subjected them to the penalty of thirty shillings; and if, after that period, the child died without having received the sacred rite, nothing less than the forfeiture of their property could expiate the offense.' All this marks the hard struggle which ensued in enforcing infant baptism even upon the converts whom Austin made from the Saxons, and bears strongly upon the second point in his three requisitions.

Austin told the British Christians that if they would yield these three points, he 'would readily tolerate all the *other things*' which they did 'contrary to our customs.' [Bede's *Ecc. Hist.*, p. 70] What these were does not appear. But they treated his toleration with contempt, for Geoffrey of Monmouth says that they 'reckoned their faith and religion as nothing, and would no more communicate with the Angles than with dogs.' He then says, that when the King of Kent saw 'That the Britons disdained subjection to Austin, and despised His preaching,' he stirred up Ethelfrid, the King of Northumbria; a great army was raised, they marched against Bangor, A.D. 613, and slew these patriots who stood for religious freedom in their own country. Some writers place the number of the monks and priests who were slain as low as two hundred, while others put them as high as twelve hundred. And one such contest followed another until, before the end of the eighth century, all the Churches of Wales had submitted to the pope's authority. The 'Liber Landavensis' and other trustworthy documents bear abundant proof of their rapid and thorough fall. But that consummation was not reached until the sword, the purse and the pen, of the Saxon, the Dane and the Norman, had all been devoted to the task with untiring energy.

This period is made immortal by that stupendous mental and moral revolution which was effected by Mohammed, a native of Arabia, A.D. 569-632. But a degenerate Christianity had carefully prepared his way, so that everything was ready for the introduction and spread of his new system. It is difficult to find one body of Christians who, at this time, had not departed in a large

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

measure from the primitive simplicity of Christianity. Metaphysical jargon had taken the place of its doctrines and almost buried its truths. Its holy spirituality had nearly expired in fierce contentions, either about matters of no vital consequence or those which never can be settled. The original beauty of its institutions had been frightfully remodeled, and an intolerable weight of ceremonies had ridiculed its pure and unpretending rites out of existence. With obscure exceptions, Christians had become a by-word and a hissing in Arabia, and in the East generally. They had given themselves up to legends, to the adoration of relics, of images, saints and angels, of Mary-worship, and otherridiculous and extravagant things. These, together with salvation by baptism, the seeking of soul-food by eating the Supper, the forcing of babes into the communion of the Church and their participancy in the Supper, purgatory, ecclesiastical pomp and corruption finished the work; so that Gregory the Great himself likened the Church to a ship, rotten and leaky, hourly looking for wreck. She had become thoroughly indolent, contentious and faithless to her trust, and was ready to be led away with any new doctrine.

Learning was nearly extinct, or was shut up in the cells of monks. Many of those bishops of whose lordliness we hear so much could neither read nor write, and their lives were given to the most odious forms of iniquity. The Church was full of spurious Gospels and other writings; and stood out before the world in bitter strifes and absurd distractions, parading an empty pride which proved to men the need of a new faith and threatened her entire overthrow east of the Bosphorus. The condition of Arabia, social, political, religions, threw powerful influences in favor of a new religion. The Arabians were pre- eminently ignorant, and no one faith prevailed strongly over another, so that no great bond held them together. They were not even united under one civil government, but under several which were at enmity with each other – a condition exactly adapted to combine them under one rapturous book and one bloody sword. Mecca, the birthplace of Mohammed, was also a singular center of religions sects, Jewish, Christian and Pagan; and he saw the weakening effect of their hostilities, especially in the divisions and hatreds of those who professed the same creeds. In the times of Roman persecution the Jews had flocked there for security, and all sorts of Christians had fled for the same protection, where they could cherish and broach their own views without fear. Of course, in this promiscuous interblending, all kinds of errors mixed themselves with truth, until there came a general decay of first principles. The epoch was specially turbulent. New kingdoms were springing up out of the vast wrecks of the Empire and in their seething jealousies Arabia, which was rising into importance, only required a leader to make her formidable. In a word, he would be a great artist, whose pen could draw a picture so black as to exaggerate the fearful state of things in this age of usurpation, fraud and error, which inflicted its due penalty in a dark and endless variety of evils.

Mohammed was highly gifted by nature. He was graceful in person and manners, rising superior to many of his countrymen in his genius, and highly enthusiastic. In very early life his powerful mind grasped the great influence of religion over mankind, an idea which drew him into deep religious contemplation, and rendered him affable to the weak and deferential to the powerful. What his original notions were in framing a new religion, whether enthusiasm or hypocrisy predominated, is a secret left with God. But for years he affected an almost total exclusion from the world, and was ready to burst upon it with his new revelations just after the Emperor Phocas had conferred upon Gregory the Great the title of Universal Pastor. Phocas had murdered his predecessor, Maurice, in order to take the crown, and he desired to prop up his throne by the support of the Church. Gregory

Post-Apostolic Times

had passed through a long, fiery contest for this supremacy in the Church, and so he sanctioned the usurper and received his reward. But dying at that juncture, Boniface took the title, A.D. 606, while the Arabian prophet really opened his public mission in 609 – a remarkable coincidence. The many sects of his own home opened to him a wide field for his joint-political and religious experiment. The first idea which seized his mind was that the doctrine of the Unity of God was in danger of being lost. This one great truth was common to Jews, Christians and Arabs. But pagan polytheists amongst them contradicted this doctrine; and by gratuitous assertion lie accused the Jews of holding a plurality of gods by believing in Ezra as the son of God; and accused the Christians of the same in the doctrine of the Trinity. By this artifice he made himself the apostle of the tenet of the Divine Unity, and used it to prove his own legation from God.

In that gloomy cave at Mount Hara, near Mecca, he made this fundamental article of the Old and New Testament the cornerstone of his new system. He was shut up to the alternative of framing an entirely new religion, or of grafting new notions of his own into the credibility of those already existing. In this laboratory, therefore, he tampered with Christianity and Judaism, mixing certain elements of these weighty and ancient faiths with a curious compound of pagan superstitions. The admixture under his weird alchemy came forth an eclectic faith from genuine, spurious and apocryphal writings, the Bible, the pagan traditions and the reveries of the Talmud. What did not suit his purpose lie threw aside, and studiously accommodated his teachings to the preconceptions of all sects, yet directly imitating none. For the Jew he recognized the divine authority of Moses; for the Christian the divine mission of Jesus; and for the pagan he tolerated all his imposing ceremonies. He opened his mission with tact and sagacity, showing that he read the popular mind. He appealed directly to the prejudices and prepossessions of his countrymen; declaring himself a delegate from God to supplement what Moses and Christ had left unfinished, by improving their work, supplying their deficiencies, closing forever the book of prophecy and thus clothing the new revelation with an air of progress. His sagacious penetration employed all these in the best way to promote his ambition. His largest elements, therefore, were taken from Moses and Christ, as he depended on them for his vivifying principle to be cast into the dull and inert mass, and to give it plausibility and consistency. This was his passport both to Jewish and Christian confidence, and shows his superior skill to use the most powerful auxiliaries in his politic cause. Then he bent the sword around the motley mass to bind it together. This laid bare his design on the State, while the Koran interpreted his purpose on the Church. This singular piece of composition, the Koran, is thrown together in the most desultory manner, after the general order of Eastern writing. Yet it possesses great copiousness; it is full of natural, vivid imagery, is elegant in cadence, and wealthy in rhythm. Indeed, the Mussulman is proud of what he calls its inimitable sublimity, and avows that for this reason it cannot be translated out of the Arabic into any other tongue.

The Arabians were also proud of their descent from Ishmael, and the antiquity of their temple, which, Mohammed told them, angels had built for Abraham, after the pattern of that built for Adam in Paradise, and that Ishmael and Abraham both worshiped there. Hence, he was sent to save his countrymen from that idolatry which adored the stars which floated over its venerable walls. But he appealed only to their pride, their blind prejudices and quenchless passions. He gave them a political religion on a level with their sensual lives. There was no mystery in it for their reason to grapple with or for their faith to fathom, no discipline to keep their depraved appetites in check, no pride to be mortified and no sacrifices imposed for the blessing of others. Then he threw into it the

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

martial element. There were new laurels to conquer, new fields of slaughter for fierceness and rapine to flood and new provinces to possess. In order to fire their zeal he declared the divine patience exhausted, and that every monument of idolatry must be destroyed by the sword. Thus all things favored his plan, and the Church was to reap the terrible harvest which she had sown. Yet there was not light enough left to penetrate the bosom of his odious system; not piety enough to exhibit a Christian superiority to the imposition. In fact, he urged it upon his countrymen as a better practical religion than any that then existed, and there was little in the spirit or conscience of the so-called Christian Church to contradict him.

Paulician history has come to us mainly through the persecutors of the Paulicians, and it scarcely has its parallel for calumny in the annals of the centuries. They have always been coupled with the MANICHAEANS, and nothing has been too base to say of them. Bossuet and Bowers have distinguished themselves in this calumny, but Bowers has been effectually answered by the learned Lardner. With his characteristic narrowness of all whom he dislikes, Bossuet says of them: 'This so hidden a sect, so abominable, so full of seduction, of superstition and hypocrisy, notwithstanding imperial laws which condemned its followers to death, yet maintained and diffused itself.' [Bossuet on Manichaeans] This is his usual style of treating the sober facts of history, hence so collected a pen as Buckle's charges him with an 'audacious attempt to degrade history,' as 'a painful exhibition of a great genius cramped,' who could 'willingly submit to a prostration of judgment, and could display a blind credulity, of which in our day even the feeblest minds would be ashamed.' Fenelon was a lovely spirit and almost adored Bossuet, meeting in return little but taunt and scorn. In his noble book defending Madame Guyon, he had ventured to differ in opinion with him on a single point, whereupon Bossuet arrogantly sent a charge of heresy to Rome in 1697 against his gentle fellow-bishop. True, Louis XIV had trusted him with great responsibilities, but the good man was compelled to sign a recantation on pain of death – an act which Bishop Burnet treats with contempt. [Burnet's *Hist. of his own Time*, p. 657; Schaff Herzog, *Ency. Art. Fenelon*] Mosheim esteems him as lightly as Buckle as a historian, saying: 'This writer certainly did not go to the sources, and being influenced by party zeal, he was willing to make mistakes.' [*Ecc. Hist.* iii] Neither Jortin nor Fleury trust him where points of orthodoxy or Church authority are concerned. The older writers cherished a singular inveteracy against the Manichaeans as if they were fiends incarnate. Eusebius denounces Manes as a 'barbarian,' a 'madman,' 'diabolical and furious,' and otherwise speaks so unguardedly that the discreet Lardner says of the great historian in this case, he 'appears out of humor and scarce master of himself.' Without doubt, the system of Manes was abstruse, intricate and subtle, therefore it must be examined with the more care. It was a piece of mystic theology and cold-blooded reasoning which brought the theories of the Gnostic to a point of logical extravagance, and mingled the doctrines of the Magi with those of Christ. It allied with it little superstition, but aiming at the profoundest philosophy, it was as cold as ice; this alone put it beyond the grasp of a fiery spirit like Bossuet, and he confounded the Paulicians with the Manichaeans, principally because he implicitly trusted their two enemies, Photius and Siculus, the authors who have sent their names down from the ninth century on a tide of acrid invective. Arnold of Germany, Beausobre and Lardner have honored themselves and the subject with sedate investigation and judicial candor, and have set right many of the inconsistencies and contradictions of Photius and Siculus. Let us examine the competency of these two witnesses. Who were they and to what did they testify?

Photius possessed great ability, but he was an interested party in his own evidence, and we may

Post-Apostolic Times

fairly question how far he is entitled to absolute credence. As Patriarch of Constantinople, no one was more interested than he in crushing the Paulicians. He was a layman, a great diplomat, and headed one of the most scandalous dissensions of his times. In five days he hurried himself through the five necessary orders, to become Patriarch on the sixth day, thrusting himself into the place of Ignatius, son of Michael I, a man of blameless character, who was deposed because he refused to put the Empress out of the way of plotting Bardas by forcing her into a nunnery. But Pope Nicolas I, by the advice of a synod held at Rome, deposed Photius as an usurper, A.D. 862. In turn, Photius excommunicated the pope, but Gass says that another synod deposed Photius in 867 as 'a liar, adulterer, parricide and heretic.' He was restored to the patriarchate on the death of Ignatius, but was degraded and banished by the Emperor Leo in 886 for political intrigue and embezzlement of the public money. This is the chief witness on whose word the Paulicians are condemned. Peter Siculus is not so well-known; but he was a nobleman under Basil when that emperor drifted into a war with the Paulicians. He was sent to Fabrica, a Paulician town, to negotiate an exchange of prisoners, remaining there from seven to nine months under restraint, within an enemy's lines by sufferance. After this, he pretends to write their history as a sect. But they were split up into several sects, and how could he learn the history of them all in that place and time? They were scattered, according to Gibbon, 'through all the regions of Pontus and Cappadocia,' and made up of 'the remnant of the Gnostic sects,' with many converted Catholics, and 'those of the religion of Zoroaster.' This was the training he received. for writing a history of the Paulicians, under the absurd notion that they were followers of Manes. Gass remarks that Photius wrote his book before A.D. 867, and Siculus wrote his after 868, the latter having a 'curious resemblance' to the former, from which Siculus 'borrowed.' Gibbon charges him with 'much prejudice and passion' in defining 'the six capital errors of the Paulicians.' Now, on common legal principles, what is the value of these two witnesses? Had they full knowledge of the subject to which they deposed? Were they disinterested and unbiased? And did their testimony harmonize? On the first of these questions we have scant knowledge. As to the second, no more partial witnesses could be chosen, one being patriarch of that religion which the Paulicians opposed, the other ambassador to a prince who was seeking their lives. And as to the third, their testimony conflicts in many points, and bears the marks of ill-will. They openly take the place of accusers rather than of witnesses, and treat them as enemies whom they would destroy. Photius makes no attempt to disguise his hatred, but bluntly titles his book 'against' them. Then, Siculus is so violent in his denunciation that he spends his strength and space in scorning what they denied, rather than in slating what they held, his deepest grievance being, that they rejected so much that lie avowed. The whole animus of their design and drift is seen in their unblushing effort to stigmatize them as Manichaeans.

The Paulicians themselves certainly should have known what they were. and both these witnesses explicitly state that they repelled this charge with great spirit. But what difference did that make with these maligners? So long as they could befoul their fame by that odious brand, they pinned the charge to them as if it were true. Gibbon states that the Paulicians disclaimed 'the theology of Manes, and the authors of the kindred heresies, and the thirty generations, or aeons, which had been created by the fruitful fancy of Valentine. The Paulicians sincerely condemned the memory and the opinions of the Manichaean sect, and complained of the injustice which impressed that invidious name on the simple votaries of St. Paul and of Christ.' 'All through, these witnesses judged them by a false standard of their own raising,' while the Paulicians are allowed no counter

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

evidence nor cross-examination, nothing but denial and protest. Photius pretended fair play when he took up his pen to write '*Contra Manichaeos*' in one book, without telling what they did believe; and then, on a false assumption, followed that by three others to confute them as though they were disciples of Manes. Mosheim protests against such a bare-faced abuse when he says of the Paulicians: 'They declared their abhorrence of Manes and his doctrine, and it is certain that they were not genuine Manichaeans, although they might hold some doctrines bearing a resemblance to those of that sect. [*Ecc. Hist.*]

THERE WERE DIFFERENT CLASSES OF MANICHAEANS AS WELL AS PAULICIANS, but Photius and Siculus lump them *en masse* and convict themselves again and again of misrepresentation in matters of public notoriety. They were much like Augustine, who for nine years had been a zealous Manichaean, and whose loudest complaint against them afterward was that they laughed at Catholic credulity and mocked at its authority, setting up reason against these, as well they might. Photius and Siculus weaken themselves by that silence which shows that they did not tell the whole truth, as well as renders it doubtful whether they told nothing but the truth. We find such contradictions as these in their testimony. They admit that Constantine, the leader of the Paulicians, received the New Testament as his inspired guide, and cited it to prove his tenets, and then charge him with claiming to speak by the Holy Spirit. They fail to charge him with teaching any new doctrine, but allege that he pretended to speak by the Holy Spirit, and then charge him with borrowing his doctrines from the Scythian, Pythagoras, and other pagan teachers! They condemn him for professing to be the very power of God, but fail to show that he ever attempted miracles! They ridicule the Paulicians as an aristocratic organization, then sneer at them because they gave the Scriptures to everybody, because they had no priests, and because, instead of listening to the ravings of their inspired leader, they read the Scriptures publicly! They charge them with dissolute lives, with gluttony and obscenity at their festivals; and in the same breath tell us that they studiously married, drank no wine and ate no flesh! They taught that they might eat fruit, herbs, bread, but neither eggs nor fish. In other things they discredit their whole testimony under the ordinary rules which govern evidence.

So far as we know the true history of the Paulicians is this. They first appeared about A.D. 660, and on this wise. CONSTANTINE, a young Armenian and a Manichaean, sheltered a Christian deacon who was flying from Mohammedan captivity in Syria. Grateful for his hospitality, the deacon gave him a copy of the Four Gospels and Paul's Epistles. These the youth prized as a new treasure from God. Gibbon says:

'These books became the measure of his studies and the rule of his faith; and the Catholics, who dispute his interpretation, acknowledge that his text was genuine and sincere. But he attached himself with peculiar devotion to the writings and character of St. Paul. The name of the Paulicians is derived by their enemies from some unknown and domestic teacher; but I am confident that they gloried in their affinity to the Apostle to the Gentiles...In the Gospels and the Epistles of St. Paul, his faithful follower investigated the creed of primitive Christianity; and, whatever may be the success, a Protestant reader will applaud the spirit of the inquiry.'

He then affirms that the Paulicians respected the Old Testament, the Epistles of Peter and the teachings of Manes. It is hard to obtain their full creed. Siculus blesses 'the divine and orthodox Emperors,' because they committed their books to the flames, 'and if any person be found to have

Post-Apostolic Times

secreted them, he was to be put to death, and his goods confiscated.' Beausobre states that they agreed but little with the Manichaeans, gave the Scriptures to all, even women, and treated the worship of crosses, images, relics and Mary with contempt, like the Friends, they had no order of clergy or pastors, but held their assemblies as a universal priesthood, having no councils, synods or association; or, as Gibbon expresses it, their 'teachers were distinguished only by their scriptural names, by the modest title of fellow-pilgrims, by the austerity of their lives, their zeal or knowledge, and the credit of some extraordinary gifts of the Holy Spirit. But they were incapable of desiring, or at least obtaining, the wealth and honors of the Catholic prelacy; such anti-Christian pride they bitterly censured, and even the rank of elder or presbyter was condemned.' They rejected the perpetual virginity of Mary, but believed that she gave birth to the body of Jesus precisely as its form came from heaven. For these reasons they could not live in the Greek Church, nor could they be Manichaeans, believing and practicing as they did, neither were they Baptists.

In regard to Baptism and the Supper, Meander says that they rejected 'The outward celebration of the sacraments;' and Gibbon, that 'In the practice, or at least in the theory of the sacraments, the Paulicians were inclined to abolish all visible objects of worship, and the words of the Gospel were, in their judgment, the baptism and communion of the faithful.' By which is clearly meant, that they neither used the elements of water in baptism, nor of bread and wine in the Supper. They believed in a baptism known as the Consolamentum or baptism of the Spirit, which they administered by laying a copy of the Gospels on the head of the candidate, accompanied with prayer. As to the Supper, they fed on Christ only by faith in the heart, regarding this as the spirit of the institution. In a word, on the ordinances they were in substance Quakers. In this, again, they differed from the Manichaeans, who both administered water baptism and the Supper, in the use of the proper elements, as is seen in the dispute of Felix with Augustine, and the accusations against them of Leo the Great; though Beausobre surmises that they used water instead of wine at the Supper, because of their known abstinence from wine. The simple fact appears to be, that they became so thoroughly disgusted with all the ceremonies and nonsense which the Catholics threw about baptism, making it regeneration *defacto*, and with the ridiculous abomination of transubstantiation, that they rejected both, by swinging to the other extreme. And no wonder. Clearly enough, they were Reformed Manichaeans, who were disgusted with the rubbishy teachings of the times all around, and were groping their way back to primitive truth as best they could, with the little light that they possessed. They were terribly troubled with Gnosticism and Oriental Magism, as were most of the Christians of their day, and were filled with all sorts of speculations as to the nature of God, the origin of matter, its relations to moral and physical evil; and so were poor specimens of Christians any way, when measured after the full order of the Gospel. But the Christian world at that time afforded nothing better. Dr. Semler accords them more correct ideas of godliness, worship and Church government than the Catholics of that time, and these virtues drew upon them more persecution from the hierarchy than their doctrinal views. Besides, as we shall see hereafter, the germ of a great movement in the right direction was lodged in them, which, finally, led to the most gratifying results.

As best they could, they were trying to get at the Bible and to follow its light. Wolff, the Editor of 'Photius,' speaks of them as mightily affecting Apostolical things, because they changed their surnames to scriptural names, as Timothy, Titus and Sylvanus, and called themselves 'Christians,' as if Catholics were Roman and heathen; they also designated their Churches by New Testament

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

titles, as Ephesians, Colossians, and the like. All this was of little account, but the future showed that this love of the Bible grew with them, for Siculus tells us of the manner in which Sergius one of their most successful defenders was converted to their views, about 810. A Paulician woman asked him: 'Why do you not read the holy Gospels?' He replied, 'It is not lawful for us laymen, but only for the priests.' She pressed him to the privilege, declaring that God desired all to be saved, and showed him his right to the Scriptures, as a good Quakeress or Baptist woman might; and being converted, he stirred Western Asia for more than a generation and brought nameless thousands to Christ.

It may be well to say, in closing, that some think the conversion of young Constantine a mere revival of this sect. Mosheim finds its origin in two brothers, Paul and John, natives of Samasoto, and Photinsin another Paul, who lived under the reign of Justinian II. Several state that this sect had been treated with great rigor in a number of imperial edicts, and had almost disappeared when Constantine revived it, only to be treated with greater barbarities. Be this as it may, he preached his doctrines with all his might for seven-and-twenty years, and they spread wide and fast, shaking the whole of Asia Minor, reaching to the Euphrates. Such vast numbers of Catholics were converted, that the Emperor sent Simeon, one of his officers, with a military force to Cibossa, to bring the guilty preacher to justice. Gibbon touchingly describes the scene, when he says: 'By a refinement of cruelty, they placed the unfortunate man before a line of his disciples, who were commanded, as the price of their pardon and the proof of their repentance, to massacre their spiritual father. They turned aside from the impious office; the stones dropped from their filial hands, and of the whole number, only one executioner could be found, a new David, as he is styled by the Catholics, who boldly overthrew the giant of heresy. This apostate, Justus by name, again deceived and betrayed his unsuspecting brethren, and a new conformity to the acts of St. Paul may be found in the conversion of Simeon; like the Apostle, he embraced the doctrine which he had been sent to persecute, renouncing his honors and fortunes, and acquired amongst the Paulicians the fame of a missionary and a martyr.'

But, as is usual in such cases, the word of God grew more and more, and so prevailed. Such a change came over the spirit of the Eastern Church itself that Leo Isauricus the Emperor issued an edict, A.D. 726, prohibiting the worship of images; and in 754 his son called a council of three hundred and thirty-eight bishops, who condemned not only their worship but their use. The result was that the Churches were cleared of images, and pictures of the crucifixion only were left, the images being publicly burned. The Roman Pontiff resented this, and civil war followed, with all sorts of complications between the rulers, both of Church and State. Under the Emperor Nicephorus their religious liberty and privileges had been restored. But persecution broke out afresh under Michael Caropalatus and Leo the Armenian. Then their endurance failed. They rebelled, slew the tyrannical Bishop of Neo-Cesaraea, with the Emperor, magistrates and judges, and took refuge with the Saracens. But one persecution followed another until the Paulicians allied themselves with the Mussulmans to save their people from total extermination. The Empress Theodora issued a fresh edict against them, and between A.D. 832 and 846 one hundred thousand of them were put to death in the most barbarous manner. Infuriated with their persecutors, they took up arms in self-defense, and the contest continued in one shape or another until, in 973, large numbers of them were transported to Philippopolis, south of the Balkan mountains, in what is now called Bulgaria. For more than a century the Paulicians stood with unshaken fortitude, which the sword was unable to

Post-Apostolic Times

suppress. Like men, they defended their rights to home, religion and liberty under the holy sanctions of rebellion against intolerable tyranny. And now they were accorded full religious freedom in their transportation, on condition that they would guard the borders against the pagans. But the conflict between them and the Greeks continued till the twelfth century. Alexius Comnenus put forth some kind efforts to reclaim them, but failed, and they finally took refuge in Europe, where we shall meet them again amongst the Albigenses. Anna Comnena tells the sad story in her great historical work. [Alexiados, L. v., p. 108] God wrought mighty things through the Paulicians.

In the sixth century, the PHILOXEMIAN (SYRIAC) version of the New Testament was produced by the Bishop of Hisrapolis, who was a thorough opponent of image worship. He was denounced as a Manichaeon, and the Emperor Justin banished him into Thrace, where his enemies murdered him. In translating the word *baptise* he used the word 'amad,' immerse, as it was used in the Peshito. Mar Abba translated the Old Testament into Syriac about the same time. The ARABIC version was made in the seventh century, and employs two words for this purpose, '*anada*' and '*tsabagha*,' both of which give the sense of immerse and are used inter-changeably in the version. It may be noted here, that this period originated the practice of obliterating the manuscript text of Scripture from the face of vellum or parchment by some chemical process, by boiling, or the use of quick-lime. As this was done for gain in sale, the Council of Trullo, in canon lxviii, forbade the practice on pain of excommunication.

In the gloom of the eighth century the word of God shone here and there as in a dark place. The PERSIC VERSION, as now known, came into existence, rendering the words relating to baptism by the terms *shustan*, *shuyidan*, or *wash*. But in its influence upon modern Christianity, we have the much more important translation of the four Gospels into the ANGLO-SAXON. The Saxons from Northern Germany and the Angles from Denmark, who emigrated to Britain A.D. 449, spoke dialects of the same language, which in process of time blended and became known as the Anglo-Saxon in England; for the Angles gave their own name to their new home, En-gle-land. This work was executed by that great Saxon, the Venerable BEDE, who almost with his last breath dictated to his

amanuensis the closing words of John's Gospel. Lewis mentions a very ancient version of the four Gospels in the old Saxon, said to be made by one Alfred a priest as early as the year 680, but it is lost. Two days before Bede's death he was taken suddenly ill; he breathed with great difficulty and his feet began to swell. He understood what this meant, and dictated all the day long, saying: 'Make haste, I know not how long I shall hold out; my Maker may take me away very soon.' His scribe remarked, 'There is but one chapter more.' The man of God replied, 'It is easy; take your pen, dip it in ink and write as fast as you can.' He did so, and coming to the end of the chapter, said: 'Master, but one sentence is wanting.' 'Write it quickly,' said the dying translator. 'It is done,' cried the amanuensis. 'Thou hast well said the truth,' rejoined the gasping bishop, 'it is finished. Hold my head with thy hands; let me sit on the holy spot where I have so often prayed, and I will invoke my Father.' When placed on the pavement of his cell, he sung 'Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Spirit.' And as the word 'Spirit' dropped from his lips he breathed his soul into the bosom of Jesus before the ink on the last chapter of John was fairly dry.

He rendered his work faithfully. The words used by him to express the Christian ordinance of baptism were *dyppan*, *fullian*, that is, dip, cleanse. There are three MSS. copies of the Saxon Gospels, and in cases which relate to this rite, *depan*, *dyppan* and *fullian* are used, the last word

Chapter 6 - The Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Centuries

meaning to *whiten*; probably having reference to the idea of regeneration, as the effect of the dipping. There is no possibility of mistaking what he means when he uses '*dyppan*' as the translation of *baptizo* in Matt.3:11) and 28:19; for, in describing the rite as Jesus received. it in the depths of Jordan, he says, of that spot in the eighth century: ' n the-place where our Lord was baptized stands a wooden cross as high as a man's neck, and sometimes covered by the water.'From it to the farther, that is, the eastern, bank, is a sling's cast; and on the nearer bank is a large monastery of St. John the Baptist, standing on a rising ground, and famous for a very handsome church, from which they descend to the cross by a bridge supported on arches, to offer up their-prayers. In the farther part of the river is a quadrangular church, supported on four stone arches, covered with burnt tiles, where our Lord's clothes are said to have. been kept while he was baptized.' [De Locis, Sane, Lib. Tom. iv, pp. 430,32]

The ninth century gave ALFRED to England, a prince who ranked with Charlemagne in ability, but was much his superior in gentleness and godliness. Under the influence of Alcuin his instructor, the great Emperor unwittingly prepared the Saxons whom he had conquered, and thus made Germany – the fruitful soil in which Baptist principles afterward flourished. Alfred, stimulated by the affection of Judith his step-mother, first acquired a thirst for knowledge and then a love for Christ. He gave the English the right of trial by jury, and said of them: 'It is just that they should ever remain free as their own thoughts.' But his great love for them is seen in his Christ-like design to give them the Bible in their mother tongue. The old Chronicle of Ely says that he succeeded in doing this, but this is doubted; it is more likely that William of Malmesbury gives the exact fact when he tells us that Alfred began a translation of the Psalms with his own hands, but left it unfinished, for he died at fifty-two. Still, Boston of Bury states that 'he translated the whole of the Testament into the English tongue.' Spelman thinks the same, and that he had commenced the Psalms when death stopped his work. It is clear, however, that he did one or both these forms of work, and was the first layman who made such an attempt.

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages

The Emperor Justin crushed out the last right of conscience in the matter of baptism in the sixth century, by making it a special subject of civil legislation. He issued an edict commanding all unbaptized parents to present themselves and their children for baptism at once. Leo III issued another edict, A.D. 723, demanding the forcible baptism of the Jews and Montanists. Toward the close of the sixth century the baptism of infants was turned to gain, in the shape of fees paid for its administration; but the charges soon became so enormous that the poor could not pay them, yet, lest their children should die unsaved, the frightened parents strained every nerve to get them baptized. A few, and but a few, opposed these outrages. Stokes mentions Adrianus, a pastor at Corinth, who not only refused to baptize infants, but cast his influence against the practice; for which Gregory accused him to John of Larissa of the crime of turning young children away from baptism and suffering them to be lost. [*Bap. Hist.*, p. 57]

As showing the religious greed of the times, it may be said here in passing, that both in France and Spain the sale of bishoprics became common in these centuries. The refinement and hospitality of the clergy may be inferred from the fact that A.D. 585 the Council of Macon decreed that bishops should not keep mastiffs to worry beggars. Many of these bishops, whose haughtiness was unendurable, could neither read nor write and their lives were given up to the most odious forms of iniquity. In 653 the Council of Toledo forbade the ordination of those who could not read the psalms and hymns used in the public service, with the ritual in baptism. In Britain the canon of Edgar required the priests 'To take care of their churches, and apply exclusively to their sacred duties; and not to indulge in idle speech, or idle deeds, or excessive drinking; nor to let dogs come within their church inclosure, nor more swine than a man might govern.' Besides this, the grave Council of Prague censured those of the higher clergy who whipped the inferior ministers, or compelled them to carry the bishop upon their shoulders. And as if these barbarities were not enough, in the seventh century the wine of the Supper was mixed with ink and the pen dipped therein, when a contract or covenant was signed. Such signatures were peculiarly holy, especially when made in the sign of the cross. When bishops wished to throw uncommon venom and gall into their curses and excommunications, they called for the consecrated cup, which was intended to commemorate the love of Christ, and dipped the pen in this fluid to strike the superstitious with double horror. Such absurdities readily prepare our minds for the many perversions to which baptism was subjected during the same period.

Infant baptism had about as severe a struggle to force itself upon the faith of men as had transubstantiation. In the fourth century we find Gregory of Constantinople obliged to defend it and publicly censuring parents who delayed it for their children. In his fortieth oration and in the pulpit of his cathedral, when preaching to many who did not believe in the absurdity, he said:

'But, say some, what is your opinion of infants who are not capable of judging either of the grace of baptism, or of the damage sustained by the want of it; shall we baptize them, too? By all means, if there be any apparent danger. For it were better they be sanctified without their knowing it, than that they should die without being sealed and initiated. As for others, I give my opinion that when they are three years of age, or thereabouts (for then they are able to hear and answer some of the mystical words, and although they do not fully understand, they may receive impressions), they may be sanctified both soul and body by the great mystery of initiation.'

He gives this as 'my opinion;' and the value of his opinion is seen in its entire absence of

Post-Apostolic Times

reference to Bible authority, and in the fact that he was trying hard to drive Baptist notions out of 'some' of his hearers, who raised troublesome questions on the subject. His embarrassment can best be understood when we take into account that this primate of all Greece was born when his father was a bishop, and yet was not baptized himself at 'three,' but only at thirty years of age. Nay, his own Emperor, Theodosius, who was very likely one of his hearers, had just been baptized at the age of thirty-four or five years. Nectarine, who succeeded him as bishop in the same diocese and pulpit, was not baptized at all until after his election to fill Gregory's place. All his surroundings made it a most interesting occasion for a controversial sermon on infant baptism from this great pedobaptist oracle.

Yet the *Penny Cyclopaedia* says that some of the fathers of the fifth century did 'not scruple, in spite of edicts and decrees, to condemn the practice of baptizing infants, as a deviation from Scripture and the early custom of the Church.' In 858-882 infant baptism had become almost universal, to the exclusion of believer's baptism, excepting in mission fields where new peoples were converted. Indeed, to deny infant baptism was considered, both by the ignorant and the learned, as the denial of infant salvation, and all dissidents were hated accordingly. Possibly it was on this ground that a synod of British prelates, held near Clonesho in 747, decreed that the clergy should take no money for baptizing infants. Charlemagne made baptism a political institution, and compelled the conquered Saxons to be baptized under pain of death. After this, political baptism and political Christianity soon became nearly universal. In 826 his son Lewis was asked to restore Harald, a petty king of Jutland, to his throne; he consented on condition that he would be baptized, and so Harald and his brother were baptized at Mentz. After that two priests accompanied him to his own country and baptized his subjects. Hence Christ's simple institution was converted into a piece of political craft, a machine of State. Even good Alfred made it a condition of peace that the conquered Danes should be baptized; and Hume tells us that 'Guthrun and his army had no aversion to the proposal; and without much instruction, or argument, or conference, they were all admitted to baptism. The king answering for Guthrun at the font, gave him the name of Athelstan, and received him as his adopted son.' Thierry adds that the Dane promised Alfred that if he would desist from pursuing him, he and his army would be baptized and retire to East Anglia in peace; and Alfred, A.D. 879, not being strong enough to carry on the war, accepted the proposal. So this historian says that 'Guthrun and the other pagan captains swore by a bracelet consecrated to their own gods to receive baptism faithfully.' It may be well to remember that this beautiful arrangement was not made by Jesus and John at the Jordan, but by an English king and a pagan Dane, in the ninth century. Ridpath, speaking of this enforced treaty-baptism, says that to the Danes it 'was no more than a plunge in the water. Sweyn himself had already received the rite at the hand of the zealous priests, anxious for the welfare of his barbaric soul. One of the other leaders made a boast that he *had been washed twenty times?*' [*Cyclop. Universal Hist.* ii, 213]

We have another case quite as interesting, in connection with Norway and Iceland, which is detailed in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, Art. 'Infant baptism,' by T.M. Lindsay. D.D., Professor of Divinity and Church History in the Free Church College, Glasgow. He shows that infant baptism, as a pagan civil rite, existed for civil purposes in these two countries long before the introduction of Christianity. It was connected with the savage custom of exposing infants who were not to be brought up; much after the order of things in Africa. The Doctor says:

Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages

'The newly-born infant was presented to the father, who was to decide whether the child was to be reared or not; if he decided to rear it, then water was poured over the child and the father gave it a name; if it was to be exposed, then the ceremony was not gone through. If the child was exposed by any one after the ceremony had been gone through, it was a case of murder; whereas it was not thought a crime if the child was made away with before water had been poured over it and it had been named. The same people, after the introduction of Christianity, turned this into a Christian rite called *skero*.' Then the Doctor remarks that the analogy between the two 'lies in the use of water, the bestowal of the name, and the entrance into civil life through the rite.'

This thorough and frank scholar might also have added the difference in the form of using the water between the ancient pagan rite and the so-called Christian rite of these centuries; for Christianity was introduced into Norway in the tenth and eleventh centuries, and its baptism was very different from that of the Apostolic age. However, if the ancient Norwegians and Icelanders had immersed their babes it would have made no difference, as Herzog says that 'the people remained pagan at heart long after they had officially become Christians.' [Ency. Art. Norway] Well did Baronius speak of this as a 'monstrous age' for many other reasons; but what could be more 'monstrous' than the enactment of Charlemagne, that all infants should be baptized before they were a year old, a nobleman being fined for neglect 120 shillings, a gentleman 60, and others 30. In those days a sheep, was bought for a shilling; so that a poor man must sacrifice a flock of 30 sheep and a nobleman 120, if he neglected to bring his babe to this Christian State- fold. [Labbe and Cossart, 1152] The Northumbrian law, A.D. 950 was in substance the same: 'Let every infant be baptized within nine days, upon pain of six *ores*; and if the infant die a pagan within nine days, let his parents make satisfaction to God without any earthly mulct; if after he is nine days old, let them pay twelve *ores* to the priest besides.' Whether the fine paid to the priest would rescue the deceased little pagan from its *limfnis infantium* does not appear. It is difficult to determine, at this distance of time, what the basis of 'satisfaction to God' might be, as between a babe of seven, nine and ten days; but there must have been some difference, as Elfric understood the matter, when he addressed the priesthood about A.D. 759, saying: 'Ye should give the Eucharist to children when they are baptized, and let them be brought to mass that they may receive it, all the seven days that they are unwashed.' Evidently these teachers were not troubled at all about the question of consciousness on the part of the child in either of the ordinances; for about 960 Pope John XIII baptized a bell in the Lateran, and named it John the Baptist; still the bell understood the matter quite as well as the babe.

The very enactment of these penalties, proves the existence of dissent from the custom of infant baptism in all the ranks of society, and in all places where they were imposed. Labbe and Cossart tell us that in 1022 ten priests at Orleans, France, were found who rejected the doctrine that baptism washes away sin, and that the real body and blood of Christ exist in the bread and wine. The king and queen and many bishops flew to the spot in alarm, accused, tried and burnt these holy men at once; the gentle queen keeping guard at the door of the cathedral where the proceedings were held, and in a most lady-like manner knocking out the eye of her own confessor, who was amongst those consigned to the flames. [ix, p. 836,842]

As for the method of baptism, there was no necessity for protest even in these dark centuries for Cardinal Pullus, in the twelfth century, describes it thus: 'Whilst the candidate for baptism in water is immersed, the death of Christ is suggested; whilst immersed and covered with water, the burial of Christ is shown forth; whilst he is raised from the waters, the resurrection of Christ is proclaimed.' [Patrol. Lat. v. 150]

Post-Apostolic Times

But infant baptism was opposed at every step. Dr. Allix speaks of a people in Turin and Milan who vehemently condemned it as an error, and the Bishop of Vercelli sorely complained of them in 945. Dupin quotes Dachery as authority for saying that the canons of the cathedral in Orleans, mentioned above, suffered for their views of infant baptism. 'They maintained that baptism did not remove original sin,' which was the plea commonly used in its favor, in behalf of infants. Milner and Hawies tell us of Gundulphus, the leader of a people who were brought to trouble for the same views. They particularly objected to the baptism of infants, because they were altogether incapable of understanding or confessing the truth.' [Hist. Ch. iii, p. 194] When Gerard, the Bishop of Cambray and Arras, cited Gundulphus to appear before a synod in St. Mary's, at Arras, A.D. 1025, he seems to have become nearly wild on the subject. The same charge of heresy was brought against Berengarius by the Bishop of Leige, and also by the Bishop of Aversa; and Archbishop Usher thinks that 'Several of the Berengarian sect had spread his doctrine in several of the Belgic countries, who upon examination did say that baptism did not profit children to salvation.'

A very warm controversy arose in the sixth century on the subject of trine baptism. Pope Pelagius complains of the Eunomians: 'That they baptize in the name of Christ alone and by a single immersion.' He avows that Christ requires baptism 'by trine immersion,' and in the name of the Trinity. Pope Gregory, too, enforces this order in his 'Sacramentary:' 'Let the priest baptize with a triple immersion, with only one invocation of the Holy Trinity.' When the Spanish bishops explained to him that they had begun to practice single immersion because the Arians, who also immersed three times, taught that a second in the name of the Son, and a third in the name of the Spirit, indicated their inferior condition to the Father; he modified his order, under the idea that one immersion best expressed the equality of each person in the Trinity. Leander, Bishop of Seville, sought the pope's counsel in the matter, who, in a letter, replies: 'Concerning the three immersions in baptism, you have judged very truly already, that different customs do not prejudice the holy Church whilst the unity of the faith remains entire.' So he assents to the use of one immersion, lest the 'heretics' interpret the three immersions 'as a division of the Godhead;' at any rate so far as Spain was concerned. 'Yet this judgment of Pope Gregory did not satisfy all men in the Spanish Church; for many still kept to the old way of baptizing by three immersions, notwithstanding this fear of symbolizing with the Arians. Therefore, some time after, about 633, the fourth Council of Toledo which was a general council of all Spain, was forced to make another decree to determine this matter and settle the peace of the Church. While some priests baptized with three immersions, and the others with but one, a schism was raised endangering the unity of the faith; for the contending parties carried the matter so high as to pretend that they who were baptized in a way contrary to their own were not baptized at all.' [*Bingham's Antiq.* iii, b. xi, ch. xi] The council sided with the pope, yet it was a long time before trine immersion was abandoned.

As these centuries were peculiarly distinguished for their great baptisteries, we shall consider these striking examples of Baptismal Archaeology in this place. The valuable remains of antiquity are found not only in books, but in ruins, coins, vases, sculpture and other works of art. The fact that Augustus-Caesar changed Rome from brick to marble throws great light upon the true sources of Roman history; as it shows the trend of the Roman mind not only in the material, but in its measurement, shape, cost and use. Inscriptions also are found with other signs on the natural rocks, on tombs, metal plates, tablets of fine clay, pillars of temples and palaces. Some of these have continued for thousands of years, and are readers to us of ancient history, especially that of Egypt,

Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages

Assyria, Persia, Greece and Rome. This is especially true when they are intended as monuments of human transactions and events. In this way the Baptistery is the monument of Christian baptism.

To Jesus and his Apostles, the foundations of the Temple, its towers and fortresses, were relics of the stone age of Israel. As our Lord habitually walked to and fro in its porches and cloisters, these relics filled him with sacred thought; and his unlettered disciples asking for the import of this sacred Archaeology, exclaimed: 'Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here?' In like manner, these ancient baptisteries call us back to the true baptismal age, its literature and primitive teaching, as these were understood by their builders. These antiquarian remains challenge our reverence for Christian truth, and every lover thereof will take pleasure in these historic stones, will walk about them to tell their number and honor their dust. His love of the truth endows them with a voice; they cease to be dead architecture and become living teachers. Such sacred remains calmly rectify the mistakes of the present; for in that case, the simplicity of the child corrects the sophistication of the man. They teach us that present truth-lovers do not stand alone in their generation, but that the years of ancient times call us back, to our profit. Old centuries as by magic draw us back, and old generations rehearse the truth as it lives in venerable art and antiquity. These throw the inward spirit of the past into the present outward form and become the frame-work for new thought; and through their imagery the living past and the living present are brought into the equipoise of a sublime truth. They help us to put new meaning into old words and acts; so that instead of casting the old away, it is continued, found to be eternal and exactly harmonious.

The baptisterium amongst the ancient Romans was simply a place of bathing, which Rugler calls the 'swimming-tank of the ancients;' and its construction is well illustrated by the discoveries at Pompeii, especially in one of the lesser baths of white marble, which Gell describes as of a circular form eighteen feet six inches in diameter. With them, as with us, a bath in the ordinary sense of the word was the immersion of the body in a medium different from the ordinary one of atmospheric air, which medium was usually common water in some form. The Romans practiced warm more than cold bathing, and wherever they found hot springs they converted them into baths. The 'warm' water spoken of in the recently discovered 'Teaching of the Apostles,' leaves the implication that the public baths were used for baptism. The baths of Caracalla contained 1,600 marble seats around the inner sides, for the use of bathers; and those of Diocletian, 3,200; these buildings being open to the public, and the price for bathing being only about half a cent of our money. Of course, primarily, these baths were constructed without regard to the Christian rite, but in all probability they suggested the form of Christian baptisteries. Wallcott says in his 'Sacred Archaeology:' 'The early Christians were baptized in water by the road-side (Acts 8:36-38); or in a river (Acts 16:13-15); or in a prison (Acts 16:33); or in a spring, or at sea; or in private houses (Acts 9:18;10:47, 48); or in any place.' At Rome there was an early baptistery in the house of Cyriacus, in the Pontificate of Marcellus, A.D. 308-310, according to the same authority. Down to the middle of the second century no place was specially set apart for the rite, for at that time the Christians had no places of worship. But by the end of the third century they had not only sanctuaries of their own, but also special buildings devoted to the uses of baptism, as those spoken of by Eusebius, at Tyre. Haydn's 'Dictionary of Dates' says: That in the 'reign of Constantine, 319, baptisteries were built, and baptism was performed by dipping the person all over.' Hope says that the early Christians 'Always practiced baptism by immersion, and out of the church (edifice); consequently they wanted a building for the purpose of baptism, as much as for that of worship.' [*Historical Essay on Architecture*, p. 115]

Post-Apostolic Times

The earliest Christian baptistery known is in the Catacomb of Calixtus at Rome, and was used in the times of the pagan persecutions. Parker says that this catacomb was a burying-place as early as the first century, although its earliest inscription is A.D. 268-279. This secret, subterranean relic is a small chamber, containing a cistern, or as it is called, 'a well,' a fountain; and is about four feet deep, supplied by a small stream on the left side, with steps down into it, as Parker says, 'for baptism by immersion.' When the first Christian sanctuaries were reared, baptisteries were also erected as distinct buildings; but often the baptistery preceded the Church edifice itself and was the point about which the place of general assembly arose. In such cases the baptistery was built on a large scale for receiving a great number of people, and it stood near to the church building to which it belonged. Generally the form of the baptistery was hexagonal, but some were circular and all had a *piscina*, or reservoir, in the middle. They were also called '*illuminatoria*,' because there the converts were instructed or illuminated before baptism. The baptistery was not introduced into the church edifice until the sixth century, and then only into the porch or entrance, to indicate that immersion was the door into the Church itself; but this practice did not become common until the ninth century. Yet Clovis was immersed in a church edifice in the latter part of the fifth century.

We have distinct accounts of about sixty of these structures in Italy alone; in the generality of Italian cities one large baptistery sufficed for all the churches of that city. These commonly adjoined the cathedral; as at Pisa and Florence, but in Rome itself most of the churches were supplied with baptisteries; for mention is made of the building or repairing of five different baptisteries in that city, between A.D. 772-816. Pope Leo III rebuilt that of the Apostle Andrew, a circular building and enlarged its 'fons,' because the place was too small for the people who came for baptism. In distinction from all others this building became known as 'The Baptistery;' and as its size increased it grew into a meeting-place for religious assemblies, even for ecclesiastical councils. In each baptistery there was a table for the Supper as well as a reservoir for the immersions; and Martene tells us that until about the eleventh century the Supper was administered there to all who were immersed. Immersion was the necessity which called these structures into existence. Ralin says that their 'origin' was 'dependent' on the old custom of having a great baptismal occasion, and of the rite of immersion; otherwise a bowl in the hand would have met every purpose, as now, in all cases where immersion is not practiced. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* truly says, Art. 'Baptistery:' 'Christianity made such progress that infant baptism became the rule, and as soon as immersion gave place to sprinkling, the ancient baptisteries were no longer necessary.' Then the size of the font was reduced, and as immersion was pushed aside the bowl sufficed. Gailhabaud in his celebrated work on architecture covers this point:

'At the origin of the new religion baptism was to be administered by immersion. We desire to especially note a locality marked by the cemetery of St. Pontiano. There one sees a kind of large basin, filled with water, and hollowed out of the soil at a depth quite convenient to receive quite a number of neophytes.' But when the Church in most of Europe ceased 'to recognize the inopportuneness of immersion and replaced it by pouring, – ever since that time it has established, in place of the reservoir made below the soil and filled with water for immersing the neophytes, the font of stone. This marks in the history of religion and of the liturgy a very noticeable change in the administration of baptism.' [iv, pp. 112,121]

In the nineteenth century, where Christians have turned their backs upon the old ordinance and substituted another, they build no such edifices at an enormous cost; but the primitive Christians

Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages

looked upon burial in water as obedience to Christ, and their antiquated baptisteries stand as solemn witnesses against the popish innovation. Prior to the tenth century, Easter, Pentecost and the Epiphany were the ordinary times employed for baptism, when great numbers of the candidates and their friends assembled; rendering it needful that the baptisteries be spacious and separate from the church buildings, which were always crowded by the general worshipers.

The most celebrated of the baptisteries now remaining are found at Rome, Florence and Pisa; the most ancient being that of St. John of Lateran, at Rome, fourth century. This building is octagonal, being about 75 feet in diameter and is extremely splendid. The *piscina*, or bath, is octangular, of green basalt, about 25 feet in diameter and from 3 to 4 feet deep. It was constructed by Sixtus III, who died A.D. 440; and, according to DeBussicre, 'has served as a model for all those' erected in the principal Italian cities. On the ceiling of one of its chapels is an old mosaic of the Baptist immersing in the Jordan, possibly of the fifth century. It is seldom used for baptism, yet to this day such Jews and pagans as accept the Roman faith are immersed there on Easter Eve. On the shape of these baptisteries Audsley makes these curious remarks, in his 'Dictionary of Architecture:' 'For more than one reason the octagon appears to have been adopted in preference to the circle. It was the one which presented the least difficulty of construction, especially when the classic entablature was retained; it was also from very early times held as the emblem of regeneration. The square, from the original idea of the earth's shape, was accepted as the emblem of the world; the octagon was adopted by the Christians as that of perfection, consequent upon the confession of the faith, and the new birth in baptism; and the circle as the emblem of eternity or everlasting life.' [Page, 268,269]

The most magnificent baptistery now in existence is that of Florence. It has a diameter of about 100 feet, its gallery is supported by 16 granite columns, and its vault is decorated by the richest mosaics. Its bronze doors are marvels of beauty in bass-relief, and fifty years were spent in preparing them. This structure was originally the cathedral of the city, built about the middle of the seventh century. The old font stood in the center; but when Philip de Medici was immersed in it his father to the great disgust of Florence, had it destroyed, for the same reason that Peter I.; of Russia, broke the drinking-cup of Luther after drinking from it himself, namely, that it should never be used again. The locality of the font is still seen, however, as that part of the floor is plainly paved, while the rest is laid in beautiful patterns of black and white marble. The present font was erected A.D. 1658, to supply the place of that which was destroyed A.D. 1577.

The baptistery of Pisa is known to the entire world for its splendor. It has a diameter of 116 feet, and its pear-shaped, dome towers 160 feet high, supported by most costly columns and arches. It was commenced A.D. 1153, and its cost was so great that it long remained unfinished, until the citizens levied a rate upon themselves for its completion. Its walls are eight feet thick, it has a basement, a main and an attic story. The font is described by Webb as an octagonal bath 'for adult baptism.' The building was begun by Diotisalvi, but the work was not prosecuted until 1278, nor completed till about the opening of the fourteenth century. Credulous people of the nineteenth century would have us believe that all this taste, toil and cost was had for the purpose of pouring a handful of water upon the head! The accompanying cut of the interior as it stands today gives the ancient ideal of Gospel order: 1. The pulpit, from which the candidate for baptism is exhorted to faith on Christ. 2. The basin or font in which he is immersed. It is octagonal, being 14 feet in diameter and 4 feet deep, and is supplied with water by a tube. 3. The Lord's Table, where he took

Post-Apostolic Times

the Supper after his immersion.

The largest baptistery ever built was that of St. Sophis at Constantinople. At one time it served as the residence of the Emperor Basilisens, and a great ecclesiastical council was held within its walls. Three thousand people once assembled in the baptistery at Antioch at one time, to be baptized; but the baptistery of St. Sophis was greater even than that at Antioch.

Mention may be made of the great baptistery at Aix, which was constructed A.D. 1101; of that of Verona, A.D. 1116; and of that of Parma, with its three matchless gates, said to have been pronounced by Angelo as worthy of being the gates of Paradise. The same praise is claimed for those of Florence, and yet it is questionable whether he said this of either of them. The Parma baptistery was begun A.D. 1196, and completed 1281. Its great marble font, 8 feet wide and 4 feet deep, is cut out of one yellowish-red block and stands in the middle of the floor, bearing date A.D. 1299. The records of the Church at Parma contain an official report of its uses, sent to the pope and bearing date November 21, 1578, saying that this sacred font was consecrated to baptism 'per immersionem.' [Cote, *Baptisteries*, p. 160] The baptistery at Verona contains a basin of marble 28 feet in circumference, hewn out of a single block of porphyry, and is four and one half feet deep. The baptistery of Pistoia is especially interesting, and differs from most of those described. It was built A.D. 1337. The font is of white marble and is square. Standing near to the western entrance is a beautiful black and white marble pulpit, from which sermons were preached, to show that the people must hear and believe before they could pass into its waters. Its square pool is 10 feet in diameter and 4 feet deep. The baptistery at Milan is peculiar, and differs from all others. As if to convey the Scriptural idea of burial, it is in the shape of the ancient sarcophagus. Its material is porphyry, being 6 feet 8 inches long and 24-inches deep. Dean Stanley refers to this baptistery in the words: 'With the two-exceptions of the cathedral of Milan and the sect of the Baptists, a few drops of water are now the Western substitute for the threefold plunge into the rushing rivers or the wide baptisteries of the East.' [*Hist. Eastern Ch.*, p. 117]

Great Britain furnishes a beautiful example of a natural but historic baptistery which must be noted here. Dr. Oathcart presents it in this graphic description:

'About eleven miles from the Cheviot Hills, which separate England from Scotland, and about the same distance from Ainwick Castle – the well-known residence of the Dukes of Northumberland – and two miles from the village of Harbottle, there is a remarkable fountain. It issues forth from the top of a slight elevation, or little hill. It has at present as its basin a cavity about 34 feet long, 20 feet wide, and 2 feet deep. By placing a board over a small opening at one end its depth can be considerably increased. A stream flows from it, which forms a little creek...The spring is a place of public resort for the population for many miles around, and for numerous strangers, on account of its early baptismal associations...An ancient statue, as large as life, lay prostrate in the fountain for ages, probably from the period when the monasteries were destroyed, in the time of Henry VIII. This statue, when the writer saw it, was leaning against a tree at the fountain. It was, most likely, the statue of Paulinus. It was called "the bishop." Its drapery, the action of the atmosphere upon the stone of which it is made, and its general appearance, show that it was set up at a very remote period, perhaps two or three centuries after Paulinus baptized the Northumbrian multitude in the fountain.' [*Baptism of the Ages*, pp. 217,28,29]

This fountain is commonly known as 'Our Lady's Well,' after the Virgin, and is one of the natural baptisteries where Paulinus administered Christian immersion. The Vicar of Harbottle has caused a crucifix to be erected in the center, with the following inscription: 'In this place Paulinus the bishop baptized three thousand Northumbrians, Easter, 627.' This accords exactly with the statement

Chapter 7 - Baptism and Baptistries in the Middle Ages

of Camden, who describes Harbottle as 'on the Coquet River, near to which is Holystone, where it is said that Paulinus, when the Church of the English was first planted, baptized many thousands of men.' A convent lies in ruins at Holystone, close by, which was probably raised as a monument to the holy spot and its waters. Camden lived in the last half of the sixteenth century, when the tradition was all aglow; and the clerical son of Oxford reared this cross as late as 1869.

As to the Supper, the doctrine of transubstantiation crystallized in those centuries, and apparently in an incidental way. In 787 the Council of Nice alleged that the bread and wine of the Supper were not images of Christ, but his very body and blood. This brought the great controversy to a head, and giants on both sides drew their swords. Amongst these Ratram wrote a powerful treatise against transubstantiation, 863, which centuries afterward convinced Ridley of his error on the subject; then Ridley lent it to Cranmer, in whom it wrought a similar change. John Scotus, the Roger Bacon of his day, wrote a stronger work, 875, which lived for about two centuries. Many Councils denounced, and that of Rome, 1059, condemned it to be burnt. Berengarius, 998-1088, followed with heavy blows. Bigotry wrecked itself upon these men in every shape, but their doctrines spread through Germany, Italy, France and Britain; for as fires never burn out controversies, more than winds blow out stars, the dispute went on to the Reformation and is as firm and fresh today as ever.

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

These have come down to us chiefly in frescoes, mosaics and base-reliefs. Baptism itself symbolizes thought as it lies in the divine mind, so that the human eye catches the truth of which it is the symbol. Art in these pictures marks the ordinance as it existed in the life-time of the artist, and only to this extent are they of historical value. The co-existing literature of his times, however, must show the purpose of his treatment, and interpret its forms in his absence. In fact we are so dependent on this literature, that where a separate history of the picture is not preserved, only the contemporary writings of its day can give us its age. The pictures, therefore, even in the rudest state of the art are in no case purely realistic, but symbolical also. Dean Stanley pronounces those of the Catacombs, 'mis-shapen, rude and stiff,' which is seen at a glance. Most of them have been restored several times and also altered; so that, as Parker remarks, to this extent they have lost their historic value, especially by changes of shape and color, though the general design is unchanged. He says: 'A work which has been restored becomes the work of the hands that restore it.' Their age and damp situation has rendered their restoration necessary, and in the case of the Callixtine frescoes he ascribes this work to Leo III, 795; and that of Ponziano to Nicholas I, 858-867. Even the great fresco of the Supper by Da Vinci, at Milan, though upon a perfectly dry wall and scarcely four hundred years old, is fast fading out. Parker states that the St. Ponziano has not been restored 'over carefully,' and that 'The rather rash outline of the Baptist's right arm and shoulder are drawn over a far more careful and correct figure.' Also: 'The stiffness of the restoration, white eyes and heavy, incorrect outline, point to a late date.'

Early Christian art at the best was deficient in all respects, and its broad, symbolic ideal must ever be remembered in seeking its historic bearings. The earlier companion pictures on the Supper made by the same hands in the same places strongly attest this. The table is spread, a company is gathered around it, but with one exception no wine is on the table. There is a small supply of bread in some cases, in others abundance, but in all there is much *fish!* A fresco in the Crypt of St. Cornelius presents a mysterious fish swimming in water, with a basket on its back containing the bread and wine of the Supper. Yet this strange conceit is in keeping with the ancient play upon the Greek letters of our Lord's technical name IXOYE, that is, 'The Fish.' This is a very ancient anagram amongst Christians. Almost all the fathers, Greek and Latin, call him 'The Fish,' the 'Heavenly Ichthus;' and so they made the fish an emblem of both Baptism and the Supper, to set forth the truths which these express. This figure was early engraved upon the rings of Christians by the advice of Clement of Alexandria, 194, possibly because the heathen could not detect its meaning. He says: 'Let the dove and the fish...be signs unto you;' and Augustine calls Christ the Fish, 'Because he descended alive into the depths of this mortal life as into the abyss of waters.' An inscription of the fourth or fifth century found at Autun, France, exhorts the baptized to 'Eat, drink, holding Ichthus in thy hand. Faith brought to us and set before us food, a Fish from a divine font, great and pure, which she took in her hands and gave to her friends, that they should always eat thereof, holding goodly wine, giving with bread a mingled drink.' Yet the ancient Christians never celebrated the Supper by the use of fish. Here, then, while we have the realistic table, we have the mystic symbol of fish thereon – possibly intended by the painter to keep before the mind Christ's presence with his disciples, when he broke bread and ate fish with them on the evening after his resurrection. A more singular use of a fish is found in the Catacombs, where a ship is carried on its back through the water – evidently intended to represent the Church being carried through the stormy sea of life by firmly resting on

Post-Apostolic Times

Christ, 'The Fish.' The helmsman also is Christ, the Dove on the poop is the Holy Spirit, and the Dove on the mast represents the heavenly peace which Jesus is giving both to Peter and the ship.

Hippolytus glows when speaking of the Church as a ship, tossed by storms but never wrecked, because Christ is with her. He makes the cross her mast, his word her rudder, his precepts her anchor, the sea her laver of regeneration. The Spirit breathes into her sails to waft her to her heavenly port; and he gives her an abundant entrance into her desired haven. In the above rude gem from the Catacombs two Apostles are rowing, and a third, Peter, is stretching his hand to Christ in prayer as he meets Jesus on the wave, to save him from sinking. But in the following we have the idea of Hippolytus, where the storm-fiend is endeavoring to wreck the Church by persecution. In the distance is a man swept away by the same waves which dash over the vessel, to represent the children of this world being drowned in the billows of perdition. But with Christ on the deck and the Almighty hand readied forth from above, the cross-ribbed flag rises high in the bow above the threatening sea. Although the rudder is swept away, the outstretched hands of Jesus direct her course in the gale.

These purely symbolical pictures from the Catacombs may help us to understand their Baptismal Pictures, where we have a large admixture of the real and the symbolic. No. 4 is from the Crypt of St. Lucina at Rome, and is described by Father Garrucci. Its date is in dispute, but it is the oldest painting of Christ's baptism known. Many high authorities assign it to the close of the second or the opening of the third century, amongst them De Rossi. The Saviour is leaving the Jordan after his immersion, and John takes him by the hand to welcome him to the bank. 'Neither the head of John nor that of Christ is adorned by the nimbus, which was not adopted into Christian art from pagan art to indicate sanctity and authority till the fifth century. But the leaf in the mouth of the dove, which denotes the Holy Spirit, indicates that he brings a message of peace from heaven in honor of Christ's baptism. A passage from Tertullian throws light upon this figure: 'As after the waters of the deluge, in which the old iniquity was purged away, as after that baptism (so to call it) of the old world, a dove sent out of the ark and returning with the olive-leaf was the herald to announce to the earth peace and the cessation of the wrath of heaven; so, by a similar disposition with reference to matters spiritual, the Dove of the Holy Spirit sent from heaven flies to the earth, to our flesh, as it comes out of the bath of regeneration after its old sins, and brings to us the peace of God.' (De. Bap., c. vii.)

No. 5 presents a youth ankle-deep in water, the administrator holding a roll in one hand, and resting the other on the candidate's head to plunge him in the water. The roll in his left hand indicates his authority or commission to baptize, as one 'sent from God;' and also shows that the painter had John in his 'mind's eye,' even if he fell into a double anachronism first as to the extreme youth of Christ, and then in substituting the Roman toga for the Jewish tunic; showing both his Roman taste and the poverty of his artistic genius by copying the drapery of his every-day life. The Ursian Mosaic at Ravenna clothes John in a robe of similar fullness in which the folds hang differently, the toga being capable of endless adjustments as seen in classic statuary. But is this painting from 'the Chamber of the Sacraments,' in the Catacomb of Callixtus, a baptism of Christ? The Arian Mosaic of St. Maria, in Cosmedin, is intended for Christ without doubt, in which he looks almost boyish, as also in this fresco. The ablest writers call attention to this fact, as according with the general methods which treat of him in all departments of early Christian art. Didron, in his great work on 'Christian Iconography,' treats at large upon the juvenility of Christ's figure in all early

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

Christian art, but especially of this curious feature in the earliest Catacomb pictures, which constantly represent him as a youth from twelve to fifteen. He remarks: 'That the figure of Christ, which had at first been youthful, becomes older from century to century, in proportion as the age of Christianity itself progresses. That of the Virgin, on the contrary, becomes more youthful with every succeeding century.' p. 249. This method came neither from mistake nor ignorance; but was chosen as the best mode known to express the meek, lowly and teachable in Jesus. Lord Lindsay says: 'He is represented as an abstraction; as the genius, so to speak, of Christianity ; a beardless youth, to signify the everlasting prime of eternity.' The nude figure stands in the water only slightly above the ankles; but his undress, as well as the expanse of the water, are in themselves symbols of his immersion without regard to the depth of the sheet; for why should the artist place him in water at all, especially unclothed, in order to pour water on his head? The youth is standing at his full height, and Garrucci writes of this picture: ' The candidate has only his feet in the water. The water, then, in which one must be immersed, is not, in fact, literally represented, but indicated by sign.' (VI, v, p. 95.)

Nos. 6 and 7 from the Catacomb of Callixtus relate to the same subject; 6 being taken - from Garrucci, and 7 from De Rossi. They are symbolical and strikingly illustrate the painter's conception of baptism. These frescoes are on separate walls of the same crypt, and Prof. Mommsen treating them as one continuous picture, says with great clearness: 'We see on the first wall a man striking the rock with his staff; from the spring thus opened a fisherman catches a fish on a hook. Farther on the same spring serves as a baptismal font, out of which the man baptizes the boy standing before him, laying his hand on his head. Without doubt, Christ is here conceived of as the rock, as in the Epistle to the Corinthians: "They drank of that spiritual rock that followed them, and that rock was Christ;" and the man who strikes the rock is more likely Peter, who is often designated the new Moses, than Moses himself. It is not necessary to speak of the fisherman, Peter, who was called to be a fisher of men.'

Here we have that favorite symbol of the fathers, which applies the figure of the fish to Christians as well as to Christ, as Tertullian: 'We smaller fishes, after the example of our Fish, are born in the waters;' and of Melito, second century, 'fishes are the holy ones of God.' Hilary, Augustine and Optatus in the fourth century do the game, the latter calling the baptismal waters '*piscina*,' a fish-pond. By introducing the angler into the picture, the idea is conveyed that another conversion has taken place, and so the newly-immersed candidate is another fish caught, a disciple of Christ drawn out of the waters of baptism which flow from Christ the smitten rock; a purely allegorical idea in exact keeping with the religious literature of the times in which the painter lived.

Here are clearly three distinct and purely allegorical ideas: a wide expanse of baptismal water issuing from a rock and shown to be 'living' water from the fact that it contains large fish; a Gospel minister represented by the fisherman with his hook and line, first acting as a 'fisher of men' and then baptizing the disciple drawn to Christ; after that comes the perfected baptism in the 'laying on of the hand' when the process of conversion is finished and attested. What, then, are we to understand by the profuse, fire- like jets which fall around the candidate as he stands in the water nearly up to the knees? With a singular infatuation this fresco has been eagerly seized upon as the one drawing of antiquity proving the modern doctrine of affusion with water as baptism, either added to immersion or substituted for it; but used chiefly to justify this substitution, directly in the face of all Church history and literature, for the first thousand years after Christ. Clearly his body has just been raised

Post-Apostolic Times

from the water, and this spray shoots above the head of the candidate to the height of about one-fourth of his person, then falls on one side to a line with his thigh and on the other down to the water. It is the only picture of an ancient baptism in which such a spray is found; and the question to be determined is, whether the artist intended it as a symbol or a realism, while much else in the scene is allegory. It cannot be mistaken for a nimbus nor yet for an aureole, although it compasses the whole person excepting a part of one leg. Certainly the law of gravitation determines that it cannot be intended for water dripping from the body after immersion, for it flies upward more than the length of the head and neck together above the head. Nor can it be water or oil, or any other liquid whatever falling from the baptizer's hand or from a vessel, as his hand rests flatly and firmly on the youth's head. Affusion or aspersion of water are entirely out of the question here, because the spray has no natural or apparent source. Neither the sense of sight nor a stretch of the imagination can call it water without showing where it comes from. Let any man try a thousand times to produce such a fillet of water around any one without the use of the uplifted hand, or of some vessel from which it is poured, and he must fail as often as he tries. More than this, the curves have not the appearance of water. The lines start up from the middle of the head in an arched, forked, wing-like form, which cannot be produced with water excepting when dashed upward in a body and with great force. The strokes of the pointed lines above the head, the flamboyant curve as of flame and its arching over the shoulders at so great a distance from them, do not harmonize with the specific gravity of falling water. But they look more like jets of flame projected upward and outward by the natural force of fire, and they convey the conception which the ancient artists expressed of 'cloven tongues, like as of fire.' No. 8, taken from the Catacombs and photographed from Garrucci (vol. iii, pi. 140, No. 1), expresses the same symbolical idea in association with the resting of cleft flames upon the heads of the Apostles at Pentecost.

The artist has introduced the Virgin Mary in the center of the Apostolic group, possibly because she is mentioned with the 'Twelve,' Acts 1:14; and also to express his idea of her superiority to them, by taking the place of her Son at their head, a notion in keeping with the errors of his day. The 'cloven' or divided appearance of the fire, as well as its flashing form, indicates the same idea in these two painters of different dates. The blaze-like curve in No. 7 suggests that the author intended that fresco to express his idea of the figurative and supernatural baptism of fire in union with baptism in water – a thought in perfect harmony with the religious literature of his times. We have innumerable instances in which the Fathers speak of such a baptism in association with the baptism of water. Tertullian tells us that the Valentinians added this fire baptism to their water baptism. Smith's *Dictionary of Antiquities* not only treats of a sect who maintained the true baptism to be that of the Spirit and fire, but speaks of a treatise in which 'we read of some who, by what means is not known, produced an appearance of fire on the baptismal water, in order to complete what they thought necessary for Christian baptism.' [Art. Baptism, paragraph 87] A tradition existed on this subject from Justin Martyr downward. In his dialogue with Trypho the Jew, he says that 'When Jesus descended into the water, a fire was also kindled in Jordan.' The Ebionite Gospel reports that after Christ's baptism; 'Immediately a great light shone around upon the place.' In commenting upon these passages, Dr. Lardner remarks: 'This account, therefore, of the fire in the river Jordan seems to be only a story which Justin had received by tradition.' Drs. Cave and Grabe, as well as Lardner, think this tradition an inference drawn from the evangelical account of the opening heavens. [Lard., *Works*, viii, 138,139] Add to this the avowal of John concerning the baptism of fire not many days

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

hence, and it is easy to see how the traditional fiery baptism associated itself with the primitive water baptism in many minds. Ephrem, the great hymnist of the Syrian Church, fourth century, speaking of Christ's baptism says: 'Behold the fire and the Spirit, in the river in which thou wast baptized.' Is it any more strange that an ancient painter should embody this emblematic idea in a picture, than that so grave a Father as Justin should incorporate it into his controversy with the noted Jew? Surely, there was more common sense in doing either, than in the late attempt to force this fresco into the service of aspersion by making it an annex and interpreter of 'The Teaching of the Twelve Apostles.'

That work requires men to be baptized in 'running water. But if thou hast not running water, baptize in other water; and if thou canst not in cold, then in warm. But if thou hast neither, pour water upon the head.' Here, however, the administrator has both running water and an abundance of it; and, therefore, to pour water upon the head would be in direct opposition to the above injunction. A wide stream of 'living water' is presented, big enough to produce a fish, in length one third of the candidate's full stature; and so the baptizer is supposed to be following the instruction in the exceptional case by pouring water on the head, and that miraculously too, without the aid of any vessel or the use of either of his hands! Here is a pedobaptist miracle in resurrection from the Catacombs for enlightening the nineteenth century. Even Smith's 'Dictionary' forces this Callixtine fresco to bear testimony to affusion in baptism as an ancient practice, and cites as a parallel case, that 'one common mode of bathing among the ancients was the pouring of water from vessels over the body, as we may see in ancient vase paintings.' That water was so used in the ordinary spray or shower-bath is clear enough; but what has that to do with this picture? Here is not the representation of the usual bath, but of a Christian baptism. Besides, when the 'vase paintings' picture affusion in the common bath, they show the vessel from which the falling water flows, which is the very thing that this painting does not show. It cannot be enlisted into this modern service without the greatest violence to the literature of the earlier ages. Chrysostom understood the baptism of fire metaphorically, for the gifts and graces of the Spirit; while Cyril of Jerusalem understood it realistically, as seen in the form of cloven tongues at Pentecost. The resemblance to fiery horns rising above the head of the baptized in No. 7, and the forked flames above the heads of the Twelve in No. 8, are clearly intended to represent the same symbolical ideal, by similar arching, cleft and aspiring curves. But the affusion of water is inadmissible until it can be shown where it comes from, and how it ascends far above the head in this cleft and arching way without visible agency or projecting force.

No. 9 is a more important painting, found over the baptistery in the Catacomb of St. Ponziano, which is ascribed by Boldetti to the fifth or sixth century, but by Parker to the ninth. It is over an arched recess, at the bottom of which is a well or fountain, said to have been used for baptism by the early Christians in the times of persecution. In the upper part Christ is represented as standing up to the waist in the Jordan. The Holy Dove with rays from his beak is over his head, fish are swimming in the water, and a hart or stag is looking intently into the stream. John is standing on the bank reaching forward with his hand on Christ's head. Another figure stands on the opposite side in a white garment; the three figures have the nimbus. The lower part of the representation is under the arch; on the wall is a jeweled cross with the A and O hanging from its arms to indicate that Christ is the Beginning and the Ending of faith, and the two candlesticks standing upon them are designed to set forth the Divine and human nature of our Lord. The symbolism here is on a large

Post-Apostolic Times

scale, for the artist evidently intended not only to give us an ideal baptismal scene in the immersion of Jesus, but to associate with it such a body of divinity as would show the great doctrines on which baptism rests, and its necessary outcome from them; so that the emblematic and the realistic are copiously blended. The jeweled cross is very significant, being set with gems, leaves and flowers. This the ancients called The Cross of Glory, while they called the plain wood The Cross of Shame, to mark the degradation to which the Baptized Crucified submitted for our sins. The two flames from the candlesticks on the transverse beam are designed to show the wealth and fullness of illumination which the atonement throws upon baptism, and the light needed by those who are buried beneath its waters. Then, the cross itself descends into the water to exhibit the connection of the atonement by Christ's death with the ordinance. The clear and still fountain beneath is the believer's liquid grave, where he is to be buried 'into the likeness of Christ's death.'

Portions of the upper picture are purely imaginative, as the angel on the right shore from Christ resting on a cloud and holding our Lord's robe. Then, the hart looking earnestly into the water symbolizes the thirst of the believing soul for the waters of baptism. This idea is probably borrowed from Jerome's comment on the first verse of Psalm 42: 'As the hart pants after the water-brooks, so does my soul pant for thee, O God.' The nimbus thrown around the head of John, Jesus and the angel, and the luminous irradiancy around the Holy Dove, distinguish them as sacred personages. Thus, in this remarkable picture, the immersion of Jesus and the deep baptistery provided for those who cling to his cross are but members of a great system of truth which the artist intended to preach; his primary purpose being to show forth Christ's redeeming work and the results flowing from it by faith and obedience, as seen in baptismal burial and resurrection with him. The baptistery is supplied by a natural spring, and is, according to Ricci, from four to five feet deep; Canon Venable says, with a descent of ten steps. Since writing the above, Dr. Dodge calls attention to Bellermann's description of a baptistery in the Catacombs at Naples: 'There is a niche in the wall under the middle door, eight feet high, five and a half feet broad, in which one still sees a cross with four equal arms painted red, and a Greek inscription, which means "Jesus Christ conquers. According to a tradition, there was once before this niche a great baptismal basin, deeply embedded in the earth, so that one could look on this place as the baptistery of a subterranean Church,' p. 81. It seems that the cross was a baptismal one, like that which we see in the Pontian Cemetery. The inscription is remarkable. Rev. St. John Tyrwhitt in his work on 'Christian Art and Symbolism' says: 'The earliest crosses, as that called the Lateran, are baptismal crosses...The cross is in its first use the symbol of baptism into the Lord's death, or death with him,' p. 124.

No. 10 presents the same symbolic style. It is the noted Ursian Mosaic, taken from the Baptistery of St. John at Ravenna, supposed to have been built by Ursus, A. D. 390-396, but the mosaic which adorns its high dome is referred to 450. Its three most striking symbols are the lettering at the left of Christ's shoulder; the anointing of Jesus by John with oil or myrrh from a vessel; and the river-god. Our "Lord stands up to the waist in the waters of the Jordan, with the nimbus and Holy Dove over his head. John's right hand holds the 'ampulla,' or anointing cup, over Christ's head, but his left hand grasps a jeweled cross. His left knee is bent forward and sustains what looks like a cruet or flask, in shape much like the Oriental bottle made of skin. This object partly obscuring John's knee, the cross and Christ's right arm, suggest the source from whence he has drawn the oil for the anointing. This however, only provided it is not a defect in the mosaic, which is possible. Garruci names no blemish here in his description of the picture, while he speaks of one in the lettering 'Iord,'

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

which was originally 'Iordann.' This medallion realistically confines the subject to the immersion of Jesus in the sacred river; but the artist adds the symbols in harmony with the practice of baptism in his own times. Lundy's comment is, that John 'applies the *unction* with a small shell.' [*Monumental Christianity*]

At what time the custom of anointing the baptized with oil originated is not known. Jortin thinks that it was unknown to Justin Martyr, A.D. 103-168, as he does not hint at it in describing the rite of baptism. But Justin refers to it in another place, saying: 'If Mary anointed the Lord with myrrh before his burial, and we celebrate the symbols of his sufferings and resurrection in baptism, how is it that we first, indeed, anoint with oil, and then celebrating the aforesaid symbols in the pool, afterward anoint with myrrh?' [Quest. ad Orthod., 137] The general custom of anointing in baptism probably came in a little later, when the wealthy began to embrace Christianity, for Tertullian says much of this unction. We may see the reason for its adoption, for everywhere in the Roman Empire the free use of oil was deemed necessary to the completion of a common bath. The Christians found many fanciful reasons for the introduction of this practice in baptism. God anointed Jesus with the Holy Spirit at his baptism – the very name 'Christ' signifies the anointed; Mary anointed his body before his burial, with much more in that line; and 80 according to the best authorities they gave many reasons for this 'chrism,' as they called it, both before and after baptism. Anointing betokened prosperity and happiness, and so they likened the Spirit to oil and his grace to unction; and after baptism they poured olive oil upon the head, thus, as they said, anointing their converts with the 'oil of gladness above their fellows,' in token of their consecration to a holy life. Tertullian writes:

'We are, according to ancient custom, thoroughly anointed with a blessed unction, as the priests were wont to be anointed with oil from a horn. And the unction running down our flesh profits us spiritually in the same way as the act of baptism, itself carnal, because we are plunged in water, has a spiritual effect in delivering us from our sins. Then the hand is laid on us, inviting the Holy Spirit, through the words of benediction, and over our cleansed and blessed bodies, freely descends from the Father that most Holy Spirit.' [De Bap. c. vii, viii]

They found many other reasons for this practice. In the Grecian games, the wrestlers and runners anointed themselves plentifully before they began their contests. When their frame and joints were pervaded with oil, it was supposed to give them a quick agility of action and an easy grace of movement, and so added to their chances of success. As Paul referred to the laws of these contests, 'so run I, so fight I,' they borrowed a figure from the same, and applied it to the Christian athlete, when beginning his race and combat in baptism. Ambrose, of Cahors, the supposed author of 'De Sacramentis,' says to the immersed: 'Thou didst enter... Thou was anointed as the athlete of Christ.' Dr. Cave, quoting Cyril, remarks:

'They were cut off from the wild olive and were grafted into Christ, the true olive-tree, and made partakers of his fruits and benefits, or else to show that now they were become champions for Christ and had entered upon a state of conflict, wherein they must strive and contend with all the snares of the world, as the athlete of old were anointed against their solemn games, that they might be more expedite, and that their antagonists might take less hold upon them. Or rather, probably, to denote their being admitted to the great privileges of Christianity, a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation (as the Apostle styles Christians), offices of which anointing was an ancient symbol, both of being designated to them and interested in them; and this account Tertullian favors, he tells us 'tis derived from the ancient, that is, Jewish discipline, where the priests were wont to be anointed for the priesthood: for some such purpose they thought it fit that

Post-Apostolic Times

a Christian should be anointed as a spiritual king and priest, and that no time was more proper for it than at his baptism, when the name of Christ was confessed upon him.' [*Prim. Christianity*, pp. 317,318]

This unction figured largely in the ecclesiastical controversies and legislation of after centuries; and as early as the fourth, a contest arose whether it should precede or follow baptism. Tertullian's statements show that it followed baptism, and most of the Fathers contended lustily for the same order, Augustine being amongst the most earnest. Bunsen says that 'The unction followed immediately after the immersion.' This question fanned the love for anointing into a mania, until Itabanus, Archbishop of Mentz, A.D. 788-856, actually exalted it into a separate 'sacrament.' He did this by doubling each ordinance; and so he called the bread and wine two, and the 'chrisma' another, apart from the immersion; four in all. Dr. Cave, citing Cyril again; Bays (p. 324) that the person baptized:

"Was anointed the second time, as S. Cyril tells us; and, indeed, whatever becomes of the unction that was before, 'tis certain that that which Tertullian speaks of as a part of the ancient discipline, was after the person was baptized." The anointing took place both before and after the immersion; and the whole service was finished by binding a white linen cloth, called the "*chrismale*" around the head of the immersed, to retain the oil upon the head for a week afterward.' [Herzog, *Cycl.*, p. 202]

The author of the Ursian Mosaic evidently wished to portray the anointing of Jesus in connection with his baptism; but unable to depict the invisible unction of the Holy Spirit, he meets the necessity by putting the ordinary baptismal unction into the hand of John. It entered not his mind to emit a stream from the beak of a dove, so the best agent that his art could supply was the anointing cup in John's hand. Hence he is pouring on the oil above the nimbus and beneath the bead of the Dove, to indicate his authority from God to place his hand between the second and the third persons in the Trinity, to the honor of God's anointed Son. This act directly connects the artist's conception of the river-god with the effect of the anointing. When he did this work the universal teaching was that great virtue lodged in the baptismal oil, in fact, that it was miracle-working in its effects. Cyril, of Jerusalem, tells us that the holy oil in baptism destroyed all traces of sin and drove out the evil one; and Pacian insists that 'the baptismal water washes away sin, the chrism gives the Holy Spirit, and so the regeneration is complete.' [Smith's *Dic. Chr. Antiq.* Art. Exorcism] Not the least of these effects is seen in expelling all demons and evil spirits from the water by the oil. In conformity with this idea, the artist has introduced the emblematic figure of the river-god, according to the ancient form. He has ascended from the stream, with a leafy calamus or reed in his hand and a wreath on his brow, in token of dominion over that river. He is alarmed, is looking away from the holy anointing and bends forward, as if making for the shore to depart from a scene of such sanctity. No. II gives us an ancient Roman bath, as is seen by the elegant heathen bass-relief upon it, which had been consecrated to Christian use by placing upon the oil pedestal an image of John the Baptist, who is invoked to serve as its patron saint.

In the baptistery known as that of Constantine, adjoining the Church of St. John of Lateran, at Rome, special provision was made for this service of unction. The circular basin of this building is three feet deep and twenty-five in diameter. Both Anastasius and Damasus, in their lives of Sylvester, say that in their time it was lined within and without by 3,008 pounds weight of silver; and 'in the middle of the basin stood a column of porphyry, bearing on its top a golden phial full of ointment,' to be poured upon the heads of the newly-immersed ones. Hence the mosaic under

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

consideration steps forth to confirm the literature of many centuries, which in its turn reflects light back upon Christian archaeology. The attempt, then, to force this picture into the service of modern affusion does the greatest possible violence to all the circumstances of the case, and to the unbroken testimony of the ages. In the absence of color in a piece of sculpture or painting where liquid is poured forth, the circumstances and positive testimony taken together must determine what that liquid is. And in all these cases these pictures unite in showing it to be oil and not water. Common sense alone suggests, nay, even common decency, that no one would take another to a stream of water, strip him naked and lead him down into it up to the waist, for the purpose of pouring water on the head from the hand or a shell or a vessel, either before or after the honest immersion of that head in the same element, much less without such immersion at all. At any rate, those who pour water on the head now and call it baptism are extremely careful not to go through such a series of useless acts to reach that end. If the primitive Christians did, they were not so wise as the moderns. But when they tell us that oil was poured upon the head in baptism, 'as the priests were wont to be anointed with oil from a horn,' as Tertullian expresses it, we cannot only see the reason for all these steps, but for their full expression in ancient Christian art.

This absurd claim renders itself simply ridiculous, in the attempt to show that because clinics or sick persons in bed had water poured upon them, which act passed for baptism, any example of this can establish a universal rule. Jesus was not a clinic at any time, much less when John baptized him; nor were clinics taken to the Jordan and placed in its waters up to the waist, that a cup of water might be poured upon their heads. This picture treats of the baptism of Jesus; and it was just as natural that the painter should invoke the use of oil, the universal custom of his day amongst Christians in baptism, to represent the anointing of the Holy Spirit, as that he should use the cross, the flask and the river-god. But what sane artist would think of making John lead our Redeemer nude into the Jordan to pour a cup of water on his head? He would be deemed as fit for the lunatic asylum as the coining painter who shall represent a current infant baptism in this year of grace 1886 by drawing John in the Jordan with a naked babe in his arms, dropping a particle of water on its brow from a cup, with a flask of water on his shoulder.

No. 12 is found in the dome of the Arian baptistery at Ravenna, and is known as St. Maria in Cosmedin. It is given by Father Garrucci and bears date a century later than figure 10, namely, A.D. 553. Here again, our Redeemer is presented above the loins in the waters of the Jordan; which river is made a winding trench, with a typical resemblance to the actual course of that sacred stream, as if the artist had visited the spot. The Holy Dove has descended directly above the head of Christ and hovers there, emitting a stream of unction from his beak which actually unites him with the person of our Lord. The Baptist is clothed in a camel's skin, holding a bent reed in his left hand, while his right rests upon Christ's head.

At the right of Jesus is the river-god again, a seated figure with long hair and horns; instead of the wreath on his head we have the leafy calamus in his hand to indicate his royalty; his lower limbs are wrapped in an ample robe and an urn stands at his side. Abbe Crossnier points to the horns and urn as emblems of his deity; and his left hand raised in astonishment seems to express wonder and alarm for the holiness of the scene, but especially has the heavenly unction startled him. Here we see what a century had done for the mosaic art. By this time the later artist had devised a better method of symbolical representation, so that he disposes entirely of John's intervening cup between the Spirit and the Son, to express the anointing; and brings the Dove and the Lord into immediate

Post-Apostolic Times

union by a realistic flood from the mouth of the Dove, to set forth the divine unction. This is in exact accord with what Smith says of another ancient practice. In article 'Dove' he observes: 'A golden or silver dove was often suspended above the font in early times. These sometimes contained the anointing oil used in baptism.'... 'Doves of the precious metals, emblematic of the Holy Spirit, were also suspended above the font in early churches.'... 'One of the charges brought against Severus by the clergy of Antioch at the Council of Constantinople, A.D. 536, was that he removed and appropriated to his own use the gold and silver doves hanging over the sacred fonts.' [*Dic. Chr. Antiq.*] But the ampulla was more frequently in other shapes than that of the dove.

With all these facts staring us in the face, men have the temerity to tell us that in one of these mosaics John is pouring out water on the head of Jesus, and in the other the Holy Dove is pouring out – well, they do not exactly know what, but something that teaches the doctrine of affusion in Christian baptism! What do they mean by this? Do they mean any thing, soberly and definitely? Can they mean that the artists in these mosaics intended to teach that the water baptism of John administered to Jesus was incomplete, until the Baptist in the first case and the Spirit in the second super added a water affusion likewise? Will they give us one example, in the Bible or out of it, in which it has ever entered the mind of man that the Holy Dove has poured water upon any man to complete his water baptism or to supersede his immersion? Certainly not. But this artist clearly did intend, by a too literal and realistic manner, to attempt the reduction of an invisible anointing of Jesus of Nazareth to the physical eye, and hence this stream from the mouth of the dove. The design in both cases is unmistakable. In the Ursian Mosaic the oil descends from John's vessel to depict an anointing of the Spirit by the use of oil without a stream from the Dove, and in the Arian Mosaic the Dove gives forth his own anointing essence; consequently the literal oil is dispensed with, showing that in both cases unction is set forth and not water. If the reader will examine No. 8, he will see that the artist of the Pentecostal scene, intended to present Mary as receiving the Spirit's anointing in the same way precisely. The divided flame rests upon her head as upon each of the Apostles, but in addition the Dove emits a stream from his beak, exactly like that in the Arian Mosaic. Did the artist intend to convey the thought that the Spirit was aspersing Mary with water in baptism? And yet there *is* the same reason for saying this, that there is for saying that the Arian artist intended the mosaic to carry the idea that the Holy Spirit emitted a stream of water upon her Son in baptism. No, we say with Lundy, in his *Monumental Christianity*: 'The Dove is pouring down the Divine afflatus from his beak on the head of our Lord.'

No. 13 is a fragment of glass from a broken cup found in the Esquiline, and known by the name on its face. It depicts a newly baptized girl. Those who have examined it say that when held to the light its transparency reveals her figure, with her knee raised and bent and her right arm extended, as if preparing to leave the baptistery. A priest with a halo around his head stands at her side, in a priestly robe. Directly above her is an inverted globular vessel, universally known in ecclesiastical parlance as the 'ampulla.' It is hung in a garland and a liquid flows copiously from it upon the girl's head. This vessel takes this name, says 'Smith's *Dictionary of Christian Antiquities* (Art. 'Ampulla') 'probably from its swelling out in every direction'... 'A globular vessel for holding liquid;' in fact, the very vessel used in the old Roman bath and at the ancient baptistery for the purpose of anointing. A hand rests upon the girl's head, and a dove hovers above her bearing a branch of seven stems, to indicate the seven graces of the Spirit which are now hers; the dove itself being a messenger of peace, as in the Saviour's baptism (see No. 4). Every item in this fragment is full of symbol. The

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

white clothing indicates the girl's future purity, chastity and faith; the ampulla is hung in a garland to denote that the occasion of the baptism is festive; it hangs near the bright, opening heavens without visible support; the dove is descending to show that she is a favorite, 'beloved' of God ; and she stands in the deep water to denote her immersion. We are chiefly concerned, however, with the inverted ampulla, its contents and their use in ancient baptism. The accompanying cut, No. 14, is taken from the article 'Bath' (*Encyc. Britannica*), and is the same vessel found in the cup of Alba. It was in common use amongst the ancient Christians at the altar, for it contained the wine as well as the oil. When John III ordered the Lateran Church at Rome to supply altar-plate for the Oratory of the Martyrs, with other pieces, he required the ampulla. Yet as Smith's Dictionary says:

'More commonly the word denotes a vessel used for holding consecrated oil or chrism. Optatus Milevitanus tells us that an "ampulla chrysmatis," thrown from a window by the Donatists, remained unbroken...By far the most renowned ampulla of this kind is that which is said to have been brought by a dove from heaven at the baptism of Clovis, and which was used at the coronation of the Frank kings. Hincmar, in the service which he drew up for Charles the Bold (840), speaks of this heaven-descended chrism whence that which he himself used was derived, as if of a thing well-known. Flodoard (10th century)' tells us that at the baptism of Clovis, the clerk who bore the chrism was prevented by the crowd from reaching his proper station; and that when the moment for unction arrived, St. Remi raised his eyes to heaven and prayed, when a white dove suddenly flew upon the rostrum, bearing an ampulla filled with chrism from heaven.' [*Dic. Christian Antiq. Art. Ampulla*]

This vessel was often of gold, silver or other metal, and was hung over the font as well as the altar, as in this Cup of Alba. The knowledge of these facts sets aside the unnatural and forced notion, that the ancient Christians took candidates into deep water for the purpose of pouring a little on their heads in lieu of immersion ; and that against their own testimony to the contrary for thirteen hundred' years. With this glass fragment before his eyes, a man's common sense should tell him that no necessity could call for hanging an inverted vase in this style over the head of a baptized person in order to pour from it a little water on the head, while she stands in very deep water, and the baptizing priest stands at her side empty-handed. His dress and nimbus show him to be a sacred person, while his attitude and outstretched hand express reverence at this falling unction. We have, indeed, records of Church theatricals in the Dark Ages, but few are so ridiculous as this perfusion would be. Such a play would not be good pantomime, but the most senseless of dumb shows, and withal very full of machinery. While unction was no part of baptism as Christ ordained it, but was, as Bingham says, 'an appendage to baptism,' yet it came to be regarded as an essential part of baptism; and the author of the 'Constitutions' insists that the anointing must be had with oil, or ointment, in order to participation in the Holy Spirit, on the part of the immersed.

A word must be added, as to the laying on of the hand in all these pictures. The imposition of the hand is as old as the race, its significance resting on the purpose – that of healing, mediation, investiture in office or blessing. Here it relates to immersion, and of this one act it is symbolic. Generally these pictures present their finished subject, without the order in which one act consecutively followed another in making up the whole. The several parts are to be taken in their natural succession, as the painter has given us his finished ideal. In no other way could he give his subject in repose. He cannot well give it at an unfinished stage of the baptism, as at the moment of burial or when buried or when rising. Therefore, the hand is laid on the head either before the candidate is bowed forward for immersion or when it is raised afterward. In these pictures we have

Post-Apostolic Times

both. Tertullian's remark clears up the whole matter. He says: 'A man having been let down in water and dipped between a few words rises again...Then the hand is laid on us, invoking and inviting the Holy Spirit through the Benediction.' [De. Bap.]

The accompanying cuts give additional force to this fact. That from St. Mark's, No. 15, is unmistakable, and is evidently intended to give the whole significance of our baptism as well as the facts of our Lord's baptism. We have John's ax laid at the root of the trees, and the generation of Christ's immersed followers represented by the fish and the new-born convert with him in the waters ; both symbolical of the newly born to God, whatever their actual age. A man of eighty just brought to Christ is what Paul calls a 'new-born babe;' and in the person of a convert in the water) at the foot of the angel who is about to cover him with a robe, we have precisely the idea of Tertullian: 'We smaller fishes, after the example of our Fish, are *born* in the waters.' No. 16 is found on the northern gate of the Baptistery of Parma, a base-relief sculpture intended to represent the baptism of Christ, as is seen by the nimbus around the head of the immersed. The waters of the Jordan are thrown up into a heap, after the style of art in the Middle Ages, this picture being attributed to the thirteenth century. In seven out of the eight pictures used here, where the baptized are standing in the water, the hand of the baptizer is laid upon the head; the only exception being that of St. John, Ravenna, where John is anointing our Lord. Even in the Arian Mosaic, where the Dove is anointing Christ, John's hand is laid on his head to indicate the finished immersion. But the highest authorities on these works of Christian art tell us, that the hand on the head of the person in the water is the sign of immersion. Beltrami, of Ravenna, says of John's hand on Christ's head in the Arian Mosaic: 'The priest placed his hand fully upon the head of the candidate while in the water; and thus by three immersions and rapid emersions the baptism was complete.' [Description of the A.M., p. 130] Bottari states that 'The hand is placed on the head to indicate immersion.' [Catacombs, 1, p. 198] The 'Apostolic Constitutions' require 'The priest to lay his hand upon the head of the candidate, dipping him three times.' Garrucci in his history of 'Christian Art' says: 'That the laying on of the hand was customary and of special moment in immersion.' [Catacombs, ii, p. 233] Cardinal Colonna writes: 'The Catechumens, without clothing, descended into the water of the baptistery, and were there immersed three times; the priest accompanying the act with his hand, and invoking at each immersion the name of one of the persons of the Holy Trinity.' [Moroni's *Dic. Ecc. Hist.*, iv, p. 218] And DeRossi warns us that 'We ought not to confound the imposition of the right hand with which the ministrant accompanies the immersion of the candidate with what the bishop does in the case of the neophyte, as he emerges from the water, and is clothed in white at the confirmation.' [Vol. 2, p. 234] Thus, these and other adepts, not one of them Baptists, bring daylight from the Catacombs, bearing voluntary and unbiased witness against their own practice as aspersionists.

There are many more early pictures of baptism besides these, amongst them a notable one of a king and queen in a baptistery, each wearing a royal crown, supposed to represent their majesties of Lombardy, immersed about A.D. 590. All, however, bear the same line of interpretation, and all the reliable authorities declare that their interpretation is found in immersion. Then these two things are quite as remarkable in confirmation of its correctness, namely: 1. That in none of the Catacomb pictures is John found pouring any thing on Christ's head, as his anointing was ascribed to God directly. We have the earliest instance of this in the Ravennian Mosaic of A. D. 450, when oil was universally used upon the baptized. 2. We have no case in the Catacombs of any one dipping a babe in water, or of one holding a babe in the arms, pouring or sprinkling water upon him. All are adults,

Chapter 8 - Ancient Baptismal Pictures

and all are standing their full height in the water; while We have many inscriptions to deceased infants and some pictures of children, amongst them that of Jesus blessing children, given in this work. But in no case is there the least sign of water in connection with them suggesting baptism. Even where our Lord blesses the child, they both stand on dry land, the little one at his side. This silence, under all the circumstances, is suggestive without the weight of historical testimony; and as a negative, it hints broadly in confirmation of its opposite positive.

It is believed that while the foregoing suggestions are not intended to be interpretations of the pictures given, they are in harmony with the teaching and practice of the earlier centuries, as their literature shows abundantly. That this teaching and practice varied from New Testament injunction and example is not to the point. The crude and even ridiculous notions embodied in these pictures were seriously entertained by those who executed them, and they all go to show that the practice of those ages was in harmony with that of the Baptists of our own times, in so far as that the radical idea of baptism was that of the burial of the body in water. None of the archaeologists, historians or interpreters here cited are Baptists, but chiefly they are Catholics and antiquarians of great note, who have given the result of their researches simply as antiquarians and not as biblical critics or theologians. Their testimony bears every mark of candor and is entitled to great weight.

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

This was the iron age, in which the Church slept her iron sleep. Yet it was a cardinal era, as when the first spike of light darts across an arctic sky to break the night and herald the revolutionary day. Stagnation awoke the soul of the age by its very oppression, and it half resolved to be free. The Crusades had opened the sluices of vice, ecclesiasticism sat drunk on the throne of night, and the Archbishop of Narbonne said that 'St. Peter's boat was sinking.' At this moment Abelard caught the breaking dawn. He represented the free thought which the Crusaders had brought back with them, and helped to loosen the bands of tradition by pointing out the contradictions of the Fathers; ridiculing the current notion that Christ's death was a ransom paid to the devil, and warmly rebuking immorality in peasant, priest, prelate and prince. Admiring youth thronged the presence of this brilliant philosopher, whether in the wilderness of Troyes or the University of Paris. His severity and originality stirred the opposition of the dull, the narrow-minded and the vile, and Bernard accused him of heresy. Bernard himself bewailed the depravity of the priests, but still was a captive to the superstitions of the age. Some of the popes honestly sought to reform the Catholic Church, while Gregory VII abolished the sale of holy offices and checked concubinage in the clergy.

Another new idea of the times was to encourage the rise of great cities. They became independent friends of light and supported better government. Those of Northern Italy and Southern France drew to them various Oriental sects, many of them 'pure' men, compared with those generally seen; prominent amongst these were Catharists from Bulgaria and Thrace. These strangers brought with them many false doctrines, but they rejected popular vices, the authority of pope and bishop, and studied the New Testament. The fairest civilization of the Middle Ages arose where they flourished. In a certain and important sense Abelard, Bernard and Gregory, with the Crusaders and Cathari, all worked together. And contrary to popular supposition, Tanchelyn was helping them by preaching in the streets of Antwerp and Utrecht, while Peter of Bruis was drawing men to Christ between the Rhone and the Alps. These two were as heartily hated by the priests as they were beloved by the people, and such was the influence of the man of God in Holland that for twelve years the mass had not been celebrated in many places where he preached. Tanchelyn went to Rome with much the same result as Luther, four centuries later. On his return he was imprisoned at Cologne by order of the archbishop, but by the aid of a smith, a disciple, he escaped. Afterward he was slain by a treacherous priest. He held that the Bible is the only guide, Christ the only head of the Church, with no mass and no infant baptism. These doctrines survived him, were preached by his successor, Everwacher, and the after susceptibility of the Netherlands to Baptist principles has some connection with his early sowing. The several sects of the Cathari hold a close affinity to our subject, and we must now present a cursory view of this interesting people.

The CATHARI ('the pure') have been the subjects of much confusion in ecclesiastical history, largely in consequence of classing many and widely different sects under that general name, both amongst ancient and modern writers, whether Catholic or Protestant. The latter have been too ready to hail all dissidents from Rome by that name as welcome simply because they were dissenters, the Catholics as cheerfully consigning all these to anathema for the same reason, with but little distinction. In truth, with few exceptions, all have dealt in this wholesale distribution, instead of examining each sect and candidly assigning it to its true place in the long list of sects, which have been so designated. For the purposes of general description, Schmidt designates the Cathari as 'a dualistic sect which originated in Eastern Europe, independently of the Manichaeans and Paulicians,

Post-Apostolic Times

but from the same source – an intermingling of European and Asiatic ideas.' He thinks that they originated in Bulgaria, from whence they spread into Thrace, where they were known as Bogomiles, then into Dalmatia and Slavonia, till merchants brought the heresy to Italy, and the Crusaders to France; and so Flanders, Sicily and other countries became thoroughly infected therewith. But the sects into which the Cathari soon split became almost too numerous to mention here, each one of them retaining more or less of the original leaven ; but some being popularly so known while they had nothing whatever in common with the original system, which was very pernicious. To call them all Cathari in that sense, therefore, is a simple slander pinned upon them by their foes. The generally received opinions amongst them were far enough removed from the Gospel, running all the way from absolute dualism, with its fantastic mythology and its wild fancy, up to a semi gospel standard of morality and even spirituality, if intense asceticism can be so called. They were decidedly anticlerical, and yet their organization was strictly aristocratic, having one order of teaching for the masses and another for the privileged; all being known respectively as '*auditores*,' '*oredentes*' and '*electi*.' Their views of Christ led them to deny his incarnation and resurrection; they denied the necessity of baptism proper, substituting for it the imposition of hands, which they held to be the true spiritual baptism; they also refused to eat all kinds of procreated food, and discouraged, if they did not disallow, marriage. But at the same time they considered relics, images, crosses and even material sanctuaries as odious and the work of Satan, because men had come to adore them.

The BOGOMILES were a branch of the Cathari. Herzog thinks that they took their name from a Bulgarian Bishop of the tenth century, that they were an offshoot from the Paulicians, and says that they abounded in the Bulgarian city of Philippopolis. They were condemned as heretics and suffered great persecution. Basil, one of their leaders, was burnt in Constantinople in 1118, before the gates of St. Sophis. The Paulicians of Bulgaria furnished the Cathari of Southern France. Gibbon thinks that they found their way there either by passing up the Danube into Germany or through Venice in the channels of commerce, or through the imperial garrisons sent by the Greek Emperor into Italy. But come as they might, we find them at Orleans A.D. 1025, in the Netherlands 1035 and in Turin 1051. About half a century later banishment from their own country drove them in great numbers to the west, and they appeared plentifully at Treves and Soissons, in Champagne and Flanders. Their teachings soon attracted the attention of the priests, the peasantry, and even the nobles. Their followers became so numerous as to demand condemnation by the Council of Toulouse, 1119, and that of Tours, 1163. But despite excommunications and curses, they so grew that in 1167 they held a council of their own and openly formulated their faith and ecclesiastical order, which they stoutly held, against both the Roman hierarchy and the secular power for almost a century. Another branch of the Cathari is found in the Albigenses.

The ALBIGENSES arose in Southern France early in the eleventh century and were first known as Publicani; but at last took their name from the city of Aibi, the center of the Albigeois district. They were first called Albigenses by Stephen Borbone, 1225. It is difficult to get at their exact tenets and practices, but they were generally numbered with the Cathari, and had many things in common with other sects so known. They rejected the Romish Church, and esteemed the New Testament above all its traditions and ceremonies. They did not take oaths, nor believe in baptismal regeneration; but they were ascetic and pure in their lives; they also exalted celibacy. They increased so rapidly that they drove the Catholic priests from their churches, of which they took possession, forming schools and congregations of their own. They made the Catholic Church an object of

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

contempt, the nobility heading the movement, and they also formed their own synod; four different Catholic Councils condemned them, but all to no purpose. Bernard tried to reclaim them, and various disputations were had with them; but in 1180 Cardinal Henry commenced a crusade against them with the sword. Much carnage followed. One crusade succeeded another. Innocent III offered the prelates and nobles all the blessings of the Church for the use of their sword and the possessions of the heretics as an additional reward. Their own prince, Count Raymond VI, was compelled to slaughter his subjects, and the pope summoned the King of Northern France with all his nobles to the same bloody work. Half a million of men were gathered, four Archbishops joined the invaders with twelve Bishops and countless nobles. Towns were sacked, seven castles surrendered to the pope, and five hundred villages, cities and fortresses fell.

Barons, knights, counts and soldiery flocked like eagles to the prey from all directions. Their superstition was fed by the promise of two years' remission of penance, and all the indulgences granted to the invaders of the Holy Sepulcher; and their cupidity was fired by the tender of the goods and lands of the heretics, as well as the right to reduce them to Mohammedan slavery. They followed the lead of Arnaud, the legate of the Holy See, bearing the cross and pilgrims' staves, from the adjacent countries, French, German, Flemish, Norman. They first attacked Beziers, which was strongly fortified and garrisoned; but it was taken by storm and thirty thousand were slain. Seven thousand had taken refuge in the Church of St. Magdalene, and the monk Peter tells us with the most ferocious coldness that they 'killed women and children, old men, young men, priests, all without distinction.' There were many Catholics in the town, and the 'Holy Legate' was asked how these should be spared, when he commanded: 'Kill them all, God will know his own!' Lest a heretic should escape they piled all in an indiscriminate heap, and the Chronicle of St. Denis gives the whole number as sixty thousand. After Beziers had fallen, July 22, 1209, Carcassone was invested. There Count Roger, the nephew of Raymond, was inveigled under the pretense of safe-conduct and a treating for peace out of the city into the enemies' camp and by treachery was made a prisoner as a heretic. When his men found their captain gone they retreated by a private passage, the great city fell, and its captain died in a dungeon, as the pope expresses it, 'miserably slain at the last.' The French barons agreed that any fortress which refused to surrender on demand, but resisted, should when captured find every man put to the sword in cold blood by the cross-bearers, that horror might appall every heart in the land. Their own historian says: 'They could not have dealt worse with them than they did; they massacred them all, even those who had taken refuge in the cathedral; nothing could save them, nor cross, nor crucifix, nor altars. The scoundrels killed the priests, the women, the infants, not one, I believe, escaped.' Eight hundred nobles were either hanged or hewn to pieces, and four hundred heretics were burnt in one pile.

The story of this murdered people for about half a century is heart-sickening in the extreme. They held many errors of the head, but no prince ever ruled over grander subjects. They were far advanced in refinement, and were high-toned in morality. Their record is the brightest, briefest and bloodiest in the annals of pious, persecuting deviltry. It begins in the middle of the twelfth century, and was blotted out before the middle of the thirteenth. It is a short, swift stream of gore mingling with their mountain torrents, but more romantic than their Alps. If the eternal snow and ice had not turned these eternally pale, the frozen steel of St. Dominic had chilled them forever, when the pravity of his infernal machine made them witnesses of a rushing destruction, without parallel in human villainy.

Post-Apostolic Times

Amongst the Cathari, however, we find a Baptist body at Cologne and Bonn. Whence they came we are not informed; but they appeared in 1146, and Evervin gives a full account of them in writing to Bernard, of whom he seeks aid in their suppression. He says that they had been recently discovered, and that two of them had openly opposed the Catholic clergy and laity in their assembly; the archbishop and nobles being present. The 'heretics' asked for a day of disputation, when re-enforced by certain of their number they would maintain their doctrines from Christ and the Apostles; and unless they were properly answered they would rather die than give up their principles. Upon this they were seized and burnt to death. Evervin expresses his astonishment that they endured the torment of the stake not only with patience, but with joy; and asks how these members of Satan could suffer with such constancy and courage as were seldom found amongst the most godly. He then describes their heresy.

They professed to be the true Church, because they followed Christ and patterned after the Apostles; they sought no secular gain or earthly property, but were the poor in Christ, while the Roman Church made itself rich. They accounted themselves as sheep amongst wolves, fleeing from city to city, enduring persecution with the ancient martyrs, although they were living laborious, holy and self-denying lives. They charged their persecutors with being false apostles, with adulterating the word of God, with self seeking, and the pope with corrupting the Apostle Peter's chair. He says: 'They do not hold the baptism of infants, alleging that passage of the Gospel, "He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved."' They rejected the intercession of saints, and they called all observances in the Church which Christ had not established superstitions. They denied the doctrine of purgatorial fire after death, and believed that when men die they go immediately to heaven or to hell. He therefore beseeches the 'holy father' to direct his pen against 'these wild beasts,' and to help him to 'resist these monsters.' He then says, some of them 'Tell us that they had great numbers of their persuasion scattered almost everywhere, and that amongst them were many of our clergy and monks. And as for those who were burnt, they in the defense they made for themselves told us that this heresy had been concealed from the time of the martyrs – and that it had existed in Greece and other countries.' All this he evidently believed. But Manichaeism had not been 'concealed from the time of the martyrs;' for his predecessors had openly contended with it everywhere. This heresy was a discovery of another sort to the provost of Steinfeld.

This letter aroused Bernard, who opened his batteries upon the 'wild beasts' in his 'Sermons on Solomon's Song.' He is especially bitter toward them because they despised infant baptism, is virulent because they refused to take oaths and observed secrecy in their Christian rites; and lays several serious things to their charge, although he professes to know but little about them. And then his little knowledge of them obliges him to bless whom he would fain curse; for he says: 'If you ask them of their faith, nothing can be more Christian; if you observe their conversation, nothing can be more blameless; and what they speak they prove by deeds. You may see a man for the testimony of his faith frequent the church, honor the elders, offer his gift, make his confession, receive the sacrament. What more like a Christian? As to life and manners, he circumvents no man, overreaches no man, and does violence to no man. He fasts much and eats not the bread of idleness, but works with his hands for his support. The whole body, indeed, are rustic and illiterate, and all whom I have known of this sect are very ignorant.' And so he 'marveled,' as others in the Apostolic times had at the same things.

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

'This sect,' says Herzog, 'lived on in the regions along the Rhine, especially in Cologne and Bonn.' But it was terribly persecuted...In 1163 several of them were burnt, after the Canon Echberthad tried in vain to convert them. This monk was sent to preach to death all who had escaped the stake. His sermons survive to this day, and in their dedication to Reginald Archbishop of Cologne he rehearses his disputes with 'these monsters,' and tells many things which he had learned about them, in part by torture and the threat of death. But his statements do not hold together. He evinces confusion, if not bewilderment, in his attempt to understand their tenets. Like most of the Catholic witnesses, he fell into the temptation of tracing this particular heresy to some of the old and proscribed 'heretics,' which carried disgrace with it, and so challenged the hatred of men and covered the new 'heretics' with obloquy. Hence, in his thirteen sermons, he labors hard to fasten upon them the faith and practices of the Manichaeans; for with most of his brethren, he was afflicted with Manichaeism on the brain whenever he scented heresy. He construes their observance of the Supper into a 'mere evasion,' and takes the word of an apostate from them, who says that they denied the birth of Christ, his proper human flesh and his real death and resurrection; teaching that all these were but a simulation. He would have us believe that they renounced water baptism altogether, substituting therefor the Consolamentum; and then takes particular pains to tell us that their principal reason for denying baptism to infants, was found in their incapacity to receive it, and so, that it should be deferred till they came to the exercise of faith. He adds, that they were divided into several sects, yet he classes them all with Cathari, 'a sort of people' whom he pronounces 'very pernicious to the Catholic faith, which, like moths, they corrupt and destroy.' Gieseler shows that they rejected infant baptism, because baptism should be administered only to believers.' This zealous monk betrays the entire animus of his denunciation of these Cologne Baptists, when he says of them that they sustained their positions by the authority of Scripture. 'They are armed with the words of the Holy Scripture which in any way seem to favor their sentiments, and with those who know how to defend their errors, and to oppose the Catholic truth; though in reality they are wholly ignorant of the true meaning couched in those words, and which cannot be discovered without great judgment.'

In 1231 Konrad of Marburg, a fanatical Dominican monk, led a terrible persecution against this sect, and little is heard of them in Germany afterward. It is very likely that the band of thirty martyrs, of whom Milner, Dr. Henry and William of Sewbury speak, were of this body. They tell us that in 1159 thirty men and women who spoke German reached England, and for their religious principles and practices were arraigned before a Council of clergy at Oxford. They were found guilty of incorrigible heresy, and Henry II ordered their foreheads branded with a red-hot iron; they were to be whipped through the streets of the city, their clothes to be cut off at their girdles, and then to be turned into the open fields, all persons being forbidden to give them shelter or relief. This was in the depth of winter, and every one of them perished with hunger and cold. These appear to have been the first heretics deliberately murdered in England, for what Newbury calls 'detesting holy baptism' as practiced by Rome. The dates and general facts suggest these as the victims of German persecution, for Echbert says of the Cologne Baptists: 'They are increased in great multitudes throughout all countries, to the great danger of the Church, for their words eat like a canker, and, like a flying leprosy, run every way, infecting the precious members of Christ. These in our Germany we call Cathari; in Flanders they call them Piphles; in French, Tisserands, from the art of weaving, because numbers of them are of that occupation.'

The term Cathari has also been applied to another thoroughly Baptist sect, which arose in the very dawn of the century: the PETROBRUSIANS. their leader was the great reformer, PETER OF BRUIS. In order to prevent confusion, it may be well here to define what is meant by the term 'Baptist,' when used to characterize one of these historical bodies. A Pedobaptist is one who baptizes babes. An Anti-pedobaptist is one who rejects the baptism of babes. But this does not of necessity make him a Baptist; for the Paulicians, Cathari, Albigenes, and in fact the modern Quakers, all cast

Post-Apostolic Times

infant baptism aside, but administered no baptism at all. Hence all these have rejected the baptism of babes as a matter of course, but we cannot, for that reason, number them with Baptists. An 'Anabaptist' is one who baptizes again for any reason. The Novations and Donatists were 'Anabaptists,' and reimmersed those who came to them from the Catholics. At the same time the Catholics were 'Anabaptists,' when they reimmersed those who came to them from what they called the heretical bodies. They were therefore Pedobaptists and 'Anabaptists' at the same time. But a Baptist proper, in modern parlance, is one who rejects the baptism of babes under all circumstances, and who immerses none but those who personally confess Christ under any circumstances; and those who are thus properly immersed upon their faith in Christ, we have a right to claim in history as Baptists to that extent, but no further.

For this reason we cannot honestly claim several of the Cathari sects as Baptists, simply because volumes might be filled with reliable evidence to show that they hated infant baptism with downright hatred. They opposed it with all their might and even ridiculed it as an unmeaning ceremony, which they classed with images, prayer for the dead, purgatory and such other gear. Often, indeed, they were obliged to have their babes immersed by the Roman priests, because the civil *as* well as the ecclesiastical law of the land in which they lived laid them under grievous penalties for refusing. But as a moral institution they treated it with contempt, as thousands who are not Baptists now do. Yet what were their views of the immersion of believers in water? Many of them knew but little about it; they had never seen a believer immersed. The baptism of babes enforced by the civil power had well-nigh driven it from nominal Christian countries, made so by the strong clutch of law. They could not be immersed if they would, as believers; for this was unlawful. Deprived of this right, the civil and ecclesiastical law drove them into Quakerism, in counting the believer the subject of a higher baptism, as they called it, in the Consolamentum. And what was that? Ermengard describes it thus:

'When they wish to impart the Consolamentum to any man or woman, he that is called Greater and ordained, having washed his hands and holding in his hands the book of the Gospels, admonishes him or them who come to receive the Consolamentum that they place their entire faith in that Consolamentum. And so, placing the book on their heads, they repeat the Lord's Prayer seven times, and then the Gospel of St. John, beginning with the words, "In the beginning," and going as far as the passage which reads, "Grace and truth through Jesus Christ." Thus is the Consolamentum completed. Do you ask by what persons it is administered? We answer, by those among them who are called the ordained. But if none such be present, there be those who among them are called the Consolati (by them), it is administered, and if there be no men present, even women may administer it to the sick. They believe that by it the remission of every sin and the cleansing of every stain is accomplished, without any satisfactory penance whatever, if they die immediately after. They say even that no one, save he who has received that Consolamentum from the Consolati, can by any work, not even by martyrdom, nor if he keep himself as much as possible from all sins and faults, reach the heavenly kingdom. And they believe this also, that if he who administers the Consolamentum should have fallen into any of the sins they call criminal, as, for example, to eat an egg, or fish, or cheese, or to slay a bird, or any animal save reptiles, or even into any of the sins the Roman Church calls criminal, then the Consolamentum does the recipients no good. Nay, they hold the recipient should again have it administered by another, if he desires to be saved.'

This account is abundantly sustained by indisputable evidence. And this so-called 'spiritual baptism' was administered because they cast aside material water as 'evil' or 'corrupt,' while the Romish Church immersed therein. How can we count such people as Baptists, whatever their views

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

of infant baptism may have been? So far as the question of baptizing babes was concerned, they were Anti-pedobaptists; and so far as immersion in water was concerned, the Romanists were better Baptists than they.

In the Petrobrusians we find a sect of Baptists for which no apology is needed. Peter of Bruis seized the entire Biblical presentation of baptism, and forced its teaching home upon the conscience and the life, by rejecting the immersion of babes and insisting on the immersion of all believers in Christ, without any admixture of Catharistic nonsense. He was a converted priest, it is believed a pupil of Abelard, brought to the Saviour's feet by reading the Bible. There he saw the difference between the Christianity of his day and of that of the Apostles; and he resolved to devote his life to the restoration of Gospel Christianity, and began his work as early as A.D. 1104. He threw tradition to the winds with the double sense of Scripture, and took its literal interpretation. With this went the doctrine of transubstantiation, holding the Supper as a merely historical and monumental act. He held the Church to be made up of regenerated people only, counted the bishops and priests as he know them, mere frauds; and cast aside all the ceremonial mummeries of the Romish hierarchy. He would not adore images, offer prayer to or for the dead, nor do penance. He laughed at the stupidity which holds that a child is regenerated when baptized, that he can be a member of Christ's flock when he knows nothing of Christ as a Shepherd, and demanded that all who came to his churches should be immersed in water on their own act of faith. He had no controversy on the subject of immersion with the Romish priests, for they practiced nothing else as the custom of their Church in his day, nor for a century afterward; therefore no separate Baptist body was needed for that reason. His great offense was that he reimmersed those whom they had immersed as babes when they became disciples of Christ and were regenerated by the Spirit of God.

The chief testimony that we have of him is from Peter the Venerable, the Abbot of Clugny, and a brief passage from Abelard. This Peter, his deadly opponent, gives a full account of his doctrines and tried to crush him; but, singularly enough, never breathed a syllable against his practice of immersing, for that was Peter's own practice, only its subjects were babes. The venerable monk, 'Maxima Biblioth.'(xxii, 1035), defines the views of the Petrobrusians precisely as would an able Baptist of today, and attempts to answer them with the exact stock arguments of 1886. He says: 'The first article of the heretics denies that children below the age of reason can be saved by the baptism of Christ; and affirms that another's faith can do those no good who cannot yet exercise faith of their own, since, according to them, it is not another's but one's own faith which, together with baptism, saves, because the Lord said, "Whosoever believeth and is baptized shall be saved."' He makes them say in another place, 'It is an idle and vain thing to plunge candidates in water at any age, when ye can, indeed, after a human manner, wash the flesh from impurities, but can by no means purify the soul from sins. But we await an age capable of faith, and after a man is prepared to acknowledge God as his and believe in him, we do not, as you slander us, rebaptize, but baptize him; for no one is to be called baptized who is not washed with the baptism wherewith sins are washed away.' The Abbot stood side by side with Bernard in his Biblical scholarship and mental force. They were the leading defenders of the Catholic faith in France, and threw themselves into the gap with all their might to defend her against these simple Gospel Baptists. Instead of bowing to our Lord's words as an obedient disciple, Peter indulged in this absurd reasoning: 'Has the whole world been so blinded and hitherto involved in such darkness, that to open their eyes and break up the long night it should, after so many fathers, martyrs, popes and heads of all the Churches, have to wait so long for you,

Post-Apostolic Times

and choose Peter of Bruis and Henry, his disciple, as exceedingly recent apostles, to correct the long error? If this be true, it is manifest how great an absurdity follows. For then all Gaul, Spain, Germany, Italy, yea, all Europe, since for three hundred years, yea for near five hundred years, has had no one baptized save in infancy, has had no Christian. But if it has had no Christian, then it has had no Church. If no Church, then no Christ; if no Christ, then assuredly they have all perished.' It seems never to have entered his head that Christ was before and above all the fathers, popes and heads of the Churches; and that, therefore, they must all obey him and take the consequences of their own disobedience, be they what they might, rather than nullify his law.

The Petrobrusians were a thoroughly antisacerdotal sect, whose hatred of tyranny threw off the Roman yoke of the twelfth century; a democratic body, in distinction from the aristocratic organizations both of the Catholics and the Albigenses. It appears from the assembly of the latter body, at Lombers, that they had a pope who had come from far-off Bulgaria, and who carefully defined the bounds of their various Catharist bishoprics. In that assembly also they had warm contests; and the names of those are given who were exalted to episcopal functions by the forms of the Consolamentum. We have seen that their numbers were very great as a people, but the members of the Electi were comparatively few. Reiner, who had spent seventeen years amongst them, tells us that 'the Credentes were innumerable,' but that the Electi of both sexes did not exceed four thousand. This form of aristocracy well suited the feudal cast of society in that day, and may explain, in part, why the rationalistic nobles and the hierarchical priesthood so readily became Cathari. But the Petrobrusians were of the common people, who sought the Saviour by simple directness and not through any saving intervention. They demanded the words of Christ in the New Testament for every thing, and not the traditions of an inner and favored few. With a quaint tinge of chagrin, something after the fox-and-grapes order, Peter the venerable abbot hints that his brother, Peter of Bruis, refused to immerse infants because he was too lazy to perform the rite; as if it were easier to dip overgrown peasants in the Rhone than tiny babes in the fonts. He thought, also, that his beloved Baptist brother burned the crosses because it was easier to do that than to worship them; and that he rejected masses because he was hardly paid enough for saying them. The Petrobrusians were thoroughly and deeply anti-Catholic in all that conflicted with the Gospel. While they were Puritanical they were not ascetic. They abolished all fasts and penances for sin because Christ only can forgive sin, and this he does on a sinner's trust in his merits. They held marriage as a high and honorable relation, not only for Christians generally, but for the priests. They denied that the person of Christ could be made a sacrifice on the altar, that the chair of the pope is the chair of Peter, and that one bishop had power to consecrate another. They made void the priesthood of Rome, condemned its sacraments as superstitious, and demanded that baptism be administered only to believers. With them a Church did not mean an architectural structure, but a regenerated congregation, nor had consecrated places any charm for them; for God could hear them as well in the marketplace as in the temple, and loved them as much in a barn as before an altar. Their success filled the Romish communion with alarm. Peter of Bruis was little superior in learning to Peter of the Gospel; but, like his great predecessor, he was sincere, earnest and eloquent, and the Lord wrought mightily by his hand. Multitudes flocked in all directions to hear him as a man specially sent of God to bring glad tidings of great joy. Soon his word turned the dioceses of Aries, Embrun, Die and Gap upside down. In their enthusiasm the people burned their images and crucifixes, some Catholic places of worship were overturned, and many monks and priests were handled very severe.

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

On a certain Good Friday the crowd brought all their wooden crosses and made a bonfire of them, at which they roasted and ate meat. Their venerable adversary thus describes their work: 'The people are re-baptized, the churches profaned, the altars overthrown, the crosses burned, flesh is eaten, even on the .day of our Lord's passion, priests are whipped, monks are imprisoned, and by terror and torture they are compelled to marry wives.'

If this were true, the whipping and imprisonment of these helpless Romanists is very un-Baptistic; and as to the question of compulsory marriages, the abbot probably drew slightly on his imagination, as none but the priests themselves had the legal power to celebrate marriage; to say nothing of taking their wives under the pressure of Baptist ringleaders whom they banished, and who were obliged to fly to Narbonne and Toulouse for their lives. In these places Peter bravely preached for twenty years, and with great success. Besides, his doctrine spread not only through Provence and Dauphine, but much farther to the east. At last, however, in 1126, while he was preaching at St. Gilles, he was suddenly arrested by a violent mob and burned at the stake, his eloquent tongue being silenced in the midst of his triumphs.

But the death of Peter was not the end of his cause. Labbe calls him 'the parent of heretics,' for almost all who were thus branded after his day trod in his steps; and especially all Baptist 'heretics.' Even the candid and celebrated Dr. Wall says: 'I take this Peter Bruis (or Bruce, perhaps, his name was) and Henry to be the first antipedobaptist preachers that ever set up a Church or society of men holding that opinion against infant baptism, and rebaptizing such as had been baptized in infancy.' When, like Elijah, God took Peter to heaven in a fiery chariot, he had Elisha ready to catch his falling mantle, in the person of HENRY OF LAUSANNE; or, as Cluniacensis much prefers to put it, he was followed by Henry, 'the heir of Bruis's wickedness.' This petulant author imagined that Peter's principles had died with him, and like a simpleton writes; 'I should have thought that it had been those craggy Alps, and rocks covered with continual snow, that had bred that savage temper in the inhabitants, and that your land, being unlike to all other lands, had yielded a sort of people unlike to all others.' But he soon perceived his mistake. No doubt the sublime aspects of the Alps, like all mountainous regions, were well adapted to start free inquiry in the unfettered mind, and to inspire those distinct tones of religion which stimulate it to advanced thought. Their deep foundations excite to logical deduction, and their broad stretch invites the reasoning powers to throw off all that hampers and hoodwinks them by vulgar submission to antiquated authority. Their very lines and curves, set gracefully against the blue sky, invite manhood out of itself to talk with God in strains of wonder, poetry and sublimity; until a loving awe for him steals over the spirit, as his sunshine bathes the brow of the peak, and the soul is drawn under the winning dominance of adoration and love. There a man feels both his littleness and his freedom, the pain of being hemmed in by obstruction, the stinging smart of dictation, and the terrible delight of rising upward if he can take no other direction. Like the eagle which sails above his hut, his soul dares to rise into grand and dreadful sensations where his spirit feels the majesty of its own wing; his eye scrutinizes the relations of the man in the valley to the mountains around him, and to the God above him, and he resolves to soar into a freedom as wide and high as the liberty of his own nature. Such a mountaineer is not easily tethered to bogs in the Roman Cainpagna, nor to the vale of the sluggish Tiber; but he soars to the sources of the dashing cascades, to read his greatness and that of his fellow-men in the wide-open volume at the footstool of Jehovah's throne.

Such a bold soul had Christ been preparing in Henry, the next brave Baptist of the Swiss valleys.

Post-Apostolic Times

He had formerly been a monk of Clugny and had joined himself to his master, Peter of Bruis, in the midst of his toils; and thus had caught his spirit and been imbued with his principles. Our venerable abbot kindly tells us that Henry added some errors of his own to those of Peter, a noble tribute to his progressive mind; but he fails to tell us what they were. Most likely he pushed the attributes of a zealous "Reformer a little further against current abuses. Already he had reached the degree of deacon in the Catholic communion, when his fiery eloquence in exposing the wickedness of the clergy cut him off from further hearing amongst them. He then made common cause with Peter, as Melancthon did with Luther and Whitefield with Wesley. The Abbot of Clugny denounces him as an 'apostate, who had returned to the vomit of the flesh and the world, a black monk was he.' He was a man of letters; but his peculiar attraction lay in his contempt for the applauded traditions of the Fathers and in his appeal to the neglected Bible. In Neander's *Life of Bernard* he says of Henry:

'He had all the attributes to deeply impress the people, great dignity in personal appearance, a fiery eye, a thundering voice, a lively step, a speech that rushed forth impetuously as it flowed from his heart, and Bible passages were always at hand to support his addresses. Soon was spread abroad the report of his holy life and his learning. Young and old, men and women, hastened to him to confess their sins and said they had never seen a man of such severity and friendliness whose words could move a heart of iron to repentance, whose life should be a model for all monks and priests. He appeared in the garb of a penitent, his long beard hanging upon his breast, his feet bare even in winter, a staff in his hand; a very young John the Baptist, in a living voice. In drawing his picture, an enemy speaks of his face, through the quickness of his eyes, as like a perilous sea; tall of body, quick of gait, gliding in his walk, quick of speech, of a terrible voice, a youth in age, none more splendid. than he in dress.' [Page 335]

In 1116 this lithe, young Baptist apostle of the Alps drew near to the thriving city of Mans, and sent two of his disciples within the gates to obtain permission of Hildebert the bishop to preach in his diocese. This prelate was a disciple of Berengarius, and so looked with favor on Henry's efforts to purify the Church. He was about to depart for Rome, but instructed his archdeacon to treat Henry kindly and allow him to preach. The fame of his piety had reached the city before him, and the people believed that he possessed a prophetic gift. He entered Mans, and while the bishop was visiting Rome the people received him with delight; the priests of the lower order sat at his feet, almost bathing them with tears, while most of the higher clergy protested against him and stood aloof. A platform or pulpit was specially erected for him, from which he might address the people. He made marriage a chief matter in his sermons, he would free it from unnatural restrictions, would celebrate it in early life and make it indissoluble. He would not accept the repentance of an unchaste woman until she had burned her hair and her garments in public. He condemned extravagant attire and marriage for money. 'Indeed,' says his enemy, 'he was marvelously eloquent,' a remark which couches his matter as well as his manner. While the priests wept over his exposure of their corruptions, the people were enraged at the priests. They refused to sell any thing to them, threatened their servants with violence, and their safety was secured only by the shield of public authority. The clergy came to dispute with Henry, but the people handled them roughly and they fled for safety. Chagrined at their defeat, they united in a letter forbidding him to preach, but the people protected him and he went on boldly.

When the bishop returned the people treated his religious acts with contempt and said: 'We do not want your benedictions. You may bless the dirt. We have a father and a priest who surpasses you in dignity, holy living and understanding. Your clergy avoid him as if he were a blasphemer,

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

because with the spirit of a prophet he is uncovering their vices, and out of the Holy Scriptures is condemning their errors and excesses.' The bishop had an interview with Henry, but dared not tolerate the stanch reformer any longer. Henry, therefore, retired to Poitiers and other southern provinces of France, where he continued to labor with great success, in some cases whole congregations leaving the Catholics and joining his standard. The people gave him a ready hearing, for the Catharists and Peter had prepared his way. He had met Peter in the Diocese of Narbonne and received from him the direction of the rising sect. Ten years after the martyrdom of Peter he labored in the regions of Gascony, in the southwest of France, and made a deep impression. In 1134, however, he was arrested by the Bishop of Aries and brought before the Council of Pisa, held by Innocent II, and condemned to confinement in the monastery of Clairvaux, of which Bernard, the chief opposer of the Petrobrusians, was abbot. He soon escaped, however, and was found preaching in Toulouse and the mountain regions round about under the protection of Ildephons, a powerful noble who had become his disciple.

His ministry was so influential that Bernard, in his tour of visitation, found 'churches without congregations, the people without priests, the priests without due honor, the mass and other sacraments neglected, and the fast days unobserved.' He complains that 'the way of the children of Christians is closed, the grace of baptism is refused them, and they are hindered from coming to heaven; although the Saviour, with fatherly love, calls them, saying, "Suffer little children to come unto me.'" The venerable abbot looked upon their baptism as salvation, and to him their exclusion from the immersion which he administered was exclusion from Paradise. The loving Lamb of God had redeemed them; but because Bernard could not hear his voice calling them through the baptistery of a corrupt Church, he was tormented with the thought that surely they must perish. To be sure, that Church was powerless to admit them into heaven by its blessing, or to shut them out by its curse. So he, with his brethren, put them to the sword, with their parents; and all the time, while the blood of innocents was following its keen edge, Jesus was rising from his throne to receive their parting spirits to his bosom as fast as they were slain. Bernard was fretting his soul with the thought that they were 'forbidden to come' because they were not brought through his appointed way, so he made their shrill wail echo up and down the Alpine valleys, while they passed through the darker vale of death to him who redeemed his little ones with his own precious blood.

At the time when the land swarmed with Henry's followers, Pope Eugenius III determined to suppress him and his work, and for this purpose employed Bernard, Cardinal Alberic and others. Bernard held a phenomenal influence over the masses on account of his pure life and reputed miracles; and crowds flocked to hear him preach as if he were an angel of God. He proposed at once to prove the divinity of his mission by miracles. 'Let this be a proof,' said he, 'that our doctrine is true and that of the heretics false, if your sick are healed by eating the bread which I have blessed.' But he could not always hold the people. At Vivi-defolium they left the church, and when he followed and addressed them in the street they interrupted him with Scripture passages until his voice was drowned. On his return he wrote a letter, in which he congratulated himself on gaining something by his labors, but urged the people to finish the work of extermination which he had begun. 'Follow and seize them, and determine not to rest until the sects have been driven out of your territory, for it is not safe to sleep in the vicinity of serpents.'

Under such instructions the bishops succeeded in recapturing Henry, when the Pope's legate cited him and his disciples to answer at his tribunal. His followers fled, and in 1148 Henry was

Post-Apostolic Times

brought before the Council of Rheims, at which Pope Eugenius III presided. He was condemned as a heretic to perpetual confinement and hard fare in a neighboring monastery, where he soon died. But the work which Peter and he had done was so great that when they were dead it survived them. We have seen that Tanchelyn had planted the same seed in Cologne which they had planted in France; and we are reaping the harvest today.

One of the great movements of the century brings before us the immortal Italian, ARNOLD. He was born at Brescia, in the North of Italy, about A.D. 1105, and was an educated monk, a disciple of Abelard; having listened to his lectures, with a crowd of other young men, in his school of the 'Paraclete' and been indelibly impressed thereby. God had endowed him with rare gifts. He possessed great fervor, purity and serenity, with a remarkable flow of eloquence; these he united to most graceful and attractive manners and charming conversational powers. As a preacher, he filled Lombardy with resistance to the pride and pretensions of the priesthood. He was the purest, most severe and bold personification of republican democracy, both laical and ecclesiastical, of the century. At that time Feudalism had wrought such desolation that there was a reaction in Italian aspirations to resist empire and the papacy. These were the two grand Italian ideals of his day, and he determined upon the resurrection of the Roman commonwealth and the destruction of the temporal power of the pope. Under the stirring appeals of his deep convictions and impassioned eloquence the popular cry was raised: 'The people and liberty,' and he became as much its incarnation as Mazzini and Garibaldi in modern times. As the apostle of religious liberty, he contended for a full dissolution of the union between Church and State, and fired the cities to seek perfect freedom from both pope and empire by establishing a republic. As a patriot, he looked upon these civil enemies only with contempt, and summoned Italy to shake them off. As a Christian, he was an antisacramentarian, desiring to bring the Church back to the New Testament standard; or, as Gibbon expresses it, he boldly threw himself upon the declaration of Christ, 'My kingdom is not of this world.' He would not use the sword, but maintained his cause by moral sentiment; and yet formed the daring plan of planting the standard of civil and religious liberty in the city of Rome itself, for the purpose of restoring the old rights of the Senate and the people. His pure morals and child-like sense of justice started the whole land.

From about 1130 he preached with such power that by 1139 the Lateran Council sentenced him to banishment; and to escape death he fled to the Swiss Canton of Zurich. Amongst the mountains of Switzerland he found shelter with many Lombards who had fled from the hatred of their own countrymen. In Zurich he boldly maintained 'that every city should constitute an independent state, in whose government no bishop ought to have the right to interfere, that the Church should not own any secular dominion, and that the priests should be satisfied to enjoy the tithes of nature, remaining excluded from every temporal authority.' He was not allowed, however, to remain quietly in his asylum, but was driven from place to place with a price upon his head. At last, goaded principally by Bernard and the pope, he determined to attack Rome boldly and openly; and did so with great effect. In the public streets he proclaimed to the multitude that the sword and scepter are intrusted to the civil magistrate; that abbots, bishops and the popes must renounce their State or their salvation; and that all their temporal honors are unlawful. The Romans rose in a body to assert their inalienable rights as citizens and Christians, to confine the pope to spiritual matters, to put his ecclesiastics under the civil power, and to establish a laical government with the Senate at its head. Rome was thrown into insurrection; all Europe felt his power, and the eyes of Christendom were

Chapter 9 - Christianity in the Twelfth Century

turned to the Eternal City. After a desperate contest against three several popes, which cost Lucian his life, a new constitution was framed and the sanction of Adrian IV was demanded to its provisions. The pope fled for his life, his temporal power was abolished and a new government was established in 1143, which maintained the struggle with varying fortunes for about ten years. The violence of the people, however, prevented final success. They rose in insurrection, demolished the houses and seized the property of the papal party, while Arnold was conservative and touched nothing. Nevertheless, his holy apostolate planted the seeds of that republicanism which controls the Italy, Switzerland and France of today.

Bernard seems to have hated him with a singular intensity, and called him a conspirator against Jesus Christ. Pope Eugenius III put Rome under interdict (1154), an act which deprived it of all its religious privileges; the Emperor Barbarossa marched against it with a large army, and after a contest of about eleven years this daring reformer was obliged to surrender. In 1155 he was hanged, his body burned to ashes and his dust thrown into the Tiber, lest the people should collect and venerate it as a precious relic. Thus perished this great patriot and martyr to the holy doctrine of soul-liberty. But Italy will ever hold his name in hallowed remembrance. Down to A.D. 1861 a simple slab commemorated his noble deeds, then a modest statue took its place. But in 1864-65 the Communal and Provincial Councils of Brescia each voted a sum of 30,000 lire (Ital.) for a splendid monument to his honor. The city of Zurich made a large contribution, and from other sources, the sum soon amounted to 150,000 lire (Ital.), about \$30,000. The ablest artists of Northern Italy competed for the prize model, which was awarded to M. Tabacchi. The base is done after the design of the great architect, Tagliaferri, who has succeeded admirably in reproducing the old Lombard style of architecture of Arnold's time. It is of various colored marbles hewn from the rocks of Brescia. The statue and the four base-reliefs were cast in the artistic foundry of Nelli of Rome. The statue itself is of bronze and is four meters (13 feet 4 inches) high. Arnold is represented in a preaching attitude; his gigantic figure being that of a monk in a long robe with most graceful folds. His long, nervous arms extend from the wide sleeves, his wonderful face is serene, but inspired for address; and the simplicity of the whole conception is worthy of the greatness of the man. The first alto-relievo represents him expounding his doctrines to the Brescians, holding in his hand the Book of Truth; in the second he is on trial, defending himself before his judges against the accusations of his foes; in the third he stands preaching in the Forum, surrounded by shields, broken columns and capitals, among which is also the Arch of Titus; the fourth presents him on the scaffold with his hands tied behind his back, the judge at his side about to read his sentence, and a funeral pile ready for lighting behind him. The scene is terrible, but he stands in calm majesty, his eyes steadily fixed before him. This beautiful work of art was dedicated to him as the forerunner of Italian liberty in the nineteenth century, and was officially unveiled at Brescia August 14, 1882. Most eloquent orations were delivered, while redeemed Italy looked on, by the patriot Rosa and Zanardelli, 'Minister of Grace and Justice' for that year.

Although the great distinctive feature in which Arnold most sympathized with Baptists relates to his unbending opposition to any union whatever of Church and State, he appears to have symbolized with them in some other respects. Dr. Wall says that the Lateran Council of 1139 condemned him for rejecting infant baptism, and he thinks that he was 'a follower of Bruis' in this respect. If so, then the Council which condemned the Petrobrusians condemned him. Bernard accuses him and his followers of deriding infant baptism. Evervone not only complains of the same

Post-Apostolic Times

thing, but says that they administered baptism only to believers. Gibbon also states that Arnold's 'ideas of baptism and the Eucharist were loosely censured; but a political heresy was the source of his fame and his misfortunes.'

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

The cut on page ? embodies the several Waldensian symbols, and portrays at a glance their struggles and triumphs. The first is a candle lighted in the night, with the motto: 'Light Shines in Darkness.' The flame is enkindled by one of the seven stars, which is fed by light from above. The second is a burning bush unconsumed, to show that their fiery persecutions left them undestroyed. The third is a lily growing amongst thorns, yet unchoked and rising above them – the sign of delicate weakness calmly rejoicing over annoying difficulties. The fourth is the anvil of truth, beaten by the hammers of its foes; Church and State, foreign and home enemies try to split it, but break their own hammers. The fifth is the serene Waldensian, standing bolt upright; he despises the bishop's miter, crook and crosier, with the pope's tiara and rosary, and tramples them under foot.

Walter Mapes, an Englishman of the twelfth century and a favorite of Henry II, was sent on a mission to the papal court, and first met the Waldensians at the Lateran Council, A.D. 1179. He calls them 'Valdesii, from their primate, Waldo,' PETER WALDO, whose name answers closely to the English name Wood. There is fair ground for the belief that an Evangelical people lived in the isolated Cottian Alps before the twelfth century, but the evidence is too scanty and fragmentary to be used with confidence for historical purposes. Some Waldensian writers think that they can trace their origin back to the days of Constantine and even to the Apostles, but Dieckhoff and Herzog have shown that this claim will not bear critical investigation. The ablest modern historians do not find them beyond the great reformer Waldo, an ideal figure of whom, in merchant's dross, now stands in the great Luther monument at Worms.

This man of God was born at Vaux, in Danphine, on the Rhone, and became a rich merchant at Lyons, where he lived in a street known for generations after his banishment as 'Cursed Street.' The sudden death of a friend, who fell by his side at a feast, led him to consecrate himself to Christ, A.D. 1160. While his heart was touched by pondering upon the vanity of earthly things, he joined a crowd in the street who were listening to the song of a troubadour, whose theme was the blessed death of St. Alexis. He first took the singer home with him, and then visited a learned divine to ask more about the way to heaven, who replied: 'There are many roads to heaven.' But Peter asked him, 'Which is the surest?' and was answered, 'If thou wilt be perfect, go sell all that thou hast and give to the poor.' That day he made the Gospel his only rule and literally obeyed the injunction. He paid his creditors, gave his house, field and vineyard to his wife, provided for his daughters, and then spent three days in the week relieving the wants of the poor in the public square. Many thought him insane, but he said: 'I am not mad, as you suppose, I am avenging myself of my enemies (his wealth), who have reduced me to such servitude as made me more mindful of them than of God.'

He also put his money to a use uncommon in those days. He employed Stephen of Ansa and Bernard Ydross to translate the Gospels from the Latin Vulgate of Jerome into the Romance dialect for the common people, as well as the most inspiring passages from the Christian Fathers. Then, filled with the love of Christ, he took preaching tours and sent his converts on the same errand. These three acts were prophetic of the whole Waldensian career: the voluntary poverty of its preachers; the free use of the Bible; the right of laymen to preach the Gospel. No other layman except William the Conqueror, Peter's contemporary, had ventured on such work, and no sect had yet commenced its existence with a popular translation of the New Testament; a bold step which soon aroused opposition.

Peter did not at first call in question any doctrine of the Romish communion, nor did he

Post-Apostolic Times

contemplate separation from it, his simple purpose being to win men to a holy life. Hence, he and his followers were not treated as 'heretics; 'but the Bishop of Lyons demanded why they preached and expounded the Scriptures without Church authority? They replied, according to Stephen of Borbone: 'We ought to obey God rather than man. Christ commanded his disciples to preach.' They said but little at this time about the superstitions and corruptions of the Catholics. This they left to the fidelity of those in that communion, who, like themselves, wished to see the spiritual life of that body revived. Amongst these, Peter Vidal said: 'The pope and his false doctors have put the Holy Church in such distress, that God himself is incensed at it. Thanks to their sins and follies, the heretics have arisen; for when they give the example of iniquity, it is hard to find any who will abstain.' And Pierre Cardinal exclaimed: 'The priests grasp on every hand, and are reckless of the sorrow they cause. The whole world is theirs, they make themselves its masters. Usurpers toward some, generous toward others, they employ indulgences and use deceit, they give absolutions and they make good cheer. Now they have recourse to prayers, and now pursue their ends by murders. Some they seduce with God, the rest with the devil.'

The crime of Waldo and his followers was that they were 'schismatics,' because they established a new apostolate, and usurped the office of preaching without papal authority. The real trouble was that the common people would listen no longer to the greedy, lazy and immoral priests, who addressed them in an unknown tongue and ground them down with tithes. These self-sacrificing, new teachers brought them the Gospel in their mother dialect, claimed no authority over them, preached Bible truth without money or price, and recommended the whole by godly lives. Whether they intended to undermine the hierarchy or not, the priesthood saw the peril, took the alarm, and plied its ecclesiastical authority to save its existence.

Unable to persuade and powerless to compel them to stop, the Bishop excommunicated them A.D. 1176 for preaching without his authority. Instead of accepting this excision, they appealed for redress to Pope Alexander III, and because he wanted them to remain in the Church he laid the matter before the Lateran Council at Rome in 1179. He praised Peter for his vow of poverty, embraced him; and would have permitted him to preach, provided that he maintained the faith of the Fathers Ambrose, Augustine, Gregory and Jerome. For this forbearance Waldo was indebted to Cardinal Pullia; and thus encouraged he sent two of his disciples to the council to secure fuller recognition, as he was not satisfied with the right of preaching himself. The pope turned these over to Walter Mapes for examination, who says of them: 'There were brought to me the two Waldenses, who seemed to be the chief of their sect, to dispute with me, and shut my mouth as one who spoke evil. I confess I sat in fear lest in so great a Council the privilege of speaking might be denied me, seeing that it was at the request of sinners.' But he soon overcame his fear, with good zest began to make light of the simple preachers, and even ridiculed them before the Council because they avowed that Christ had sent them to preach and clothed them with power by the Holy Spirit. He, however, betrayed trepidation, for he said: 'If we let them in, we shall be driven forth ourselves.' They were virtually condemned, for they were granted permission to preach only on condition that the local priest requested it, a thing that he was slow to ask. The reason given for this prohibition was: 'That the Roman Church cannot endure your preaching.' This enforced silence made them all the bolder: 'Did not Christ send us?' said they, 'why should his Church hinder us?' And they went everywhere preaching the Word.

This, of course, could not be endured, and in 1183-84 a special council was held at Verona by

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

Pope Lucius III, in the presence of the Emperor Barbarossa, 'to bind in the chain of perpetual anathema those who presumed to preach, publicly or privately, without the authority of the bishop.' Though excommunicated, they were held as less perverse than other disowned ones, their sentence stating that they presumed to preach without any 'authority received either from the Apostolic See or from the bishops of their respective dioceses.' This ban did not class them with the Catherists, with whom they had no part; and often when the priests had controversies with these, they appealed to the Waldensians with their ready store of Scriptural truth to help them. Even as late as 1190 the Archbishop of Narbonne held a colloquy with them to win them back. Their first great contest, then, concerned the right of lay preaching and not doctrine. Pope Innocent, their great enemy, expressly says, long afterward, that they 'would usurp the office of preaching' as an innovation. On the ground of doctrine, they were not obnoxious to Rome at that time. Yet when Lucius anathematized them they were obliged to fly in every direction. Waldo, with one band of his disciples, fled to the rugged fastnesses of the Cottian Alps, the dividing line between Dauphine in Southern France and Piedmont in Northern Italy. These first settled in Dauphine, on the French side, but soon crossed the border to the Italian. They labored, however, in both fields, and the great body of the people soon embraced their doctrines.

Piedmont had five valleys, but the mountain tract on the southern side had only three. In these gorges, caverns, passes and dizzy peaks, their descendants still survive, after a period of seven hundred years. Their first real settlements were in the thinly populated and half cultivated valleys of Angrogna and Sail Martino, where the Romans erected an arch, calling it the 'Gate of Italy.' The house of the Count Lucerna, the ruler of the land, had on its escutcheon the words: 'The light shines in darkness,' which became the Waldensian motto. Their greatest triumphs were in Italy, in the Duchy of Savoy, on the eastern slopes of the Cottians; and their secondary were on the western, under the scepter of France. This Count may have favored the new settlers, but the Benedictine monks, who had a monastery and lands in Savoy, were greatly alarmed at the inroad of this flock of emigrants. In time, however, the Dukes of Savoy assailed them, but the Kings of France were too much engaged to trouble these godly mountaineers, and so they found refuge under one government when the other persecuted them, flight being their only safeguard. For this reason, in part, the history of the Italian Waldensians is far more complicated than that of the French, and more full of adventure by invasion, defense, defeat, suffering and triumph. For a time their very obscurity protected them against the curses of Rome. After a while Waldo turned to the North, but his ferocious persecutors drove him into Bohemia, where it seems likely that, as an old man, he finished his work in peace and fell asleep in Jesus.

The anathema of Lucian, A.D. 1183-84, was followed in 1192 by a demand from the Bishop of Turin that all who found a Waldensian should bring him to his court bound with fetters to be punished, and his successor followed in his steps. But constant persecution sharpened their appetite for the truth and they soon began to fall into so-called 'heresy.' Gradually they claimed the right of private judgment in the interpretation of the Scriptures, and came to oppose some doctrines and practices of the Church of Rome touching the power of the clergy, the sacraments and ecclesiastical authority. They resented the yoke of the pope and the bishops; asserted the right of laymen, and even of women, to preach; avowed that the wickedness of the priest neutralized the effect of the ordinances; declared that confession might be made to a good layman, and that absolution from him was effective. They, also, like the Catharists, denied the oblation of the mass, all oaths, war, begging

Post-Apostolic Times

and capital punishment; while a few of them went so far as to deny infant baptism. It is of this class that Du Pin says, they regarded 'The washings of infants' as 'of no avail to them; the sureties do not understand what they say to the priest.'

Persecution soon scattered small bodies of them in every direction. Individuals wandered where they could, and little companies took refuge in various countries, soon becoming the founders of small communities – who, for convenience, we may call the WALDENSIANS OF THE DISPERSION. Sometimes these bands merged into other sects, or they grew up a separate people, constantly developing new views; and at last they became much more radical protestants against Rome than the original Romance Waldensians. Failure to make this distinction clear, and even sharp, will lead us to confound one Waldensian sect with another, and to mix their doctrines and practices in a medley of confusion; for scarcely two sections of them believed and practiced the same things throughout. Nor did any one class of Waldensians hold the same doctrines and follow the same rites at all times. When we lose sight of these changes and variations we fall both into confusion and contradiction concerning this whole people. Those of the Dispersion had so increased to the West as far as Spain, in 1192, that Alphonso, King of Aragon, issued a decree expelling them from his realm, and they were treated nowhere else with greater severity. Edict after edict, the last generally the worst, drove them out. The wrath of God and the charge of treason were launched upon all who shielded a

Waldensian, gave him food, heard him preach, or treated him kindly. The king commanded: 'Let this our edict be read on the Sabbath by the clergy in all cities, forts and villages of our kingdom, and be enforced by our vicars, bailiffs and judges. Any person, noble or not, who shall find a Waldensian anywhere in our kingdom, after three days' notice has been given to leave, may injure him in any way, that will not mutilate his body or take his life, without fear of punishment, but rather with the assurance of receiving our favor. We grant the Waldensians till All Saints' Day to leave or begin to leave the land, or expose themselves to the risk of being plundered and scourged.' In the face of this edict, which was renewed by Alphonso's son, Peter II, the Waldensians continued to spread even as far as Seville. Peter's son, James I, 1227, at Pope Gregory's request, established an Inquisition which caused the flight of many into Castile. They were tracked to its valleys, thrust into prison and severely punished; but not one yielded, and the king himself carried wood to the pile and set fire to the martyrs. Thereafter any one who heard the Waldensians preach, knelt with them in prayer, gave them a kiss or called them 'good men,' was suspected and punished.

Another body of the Dispersed Waldensians was found at Metz, in Northern France, as early as 1199, when the bishop of that city informed Pope Innocent III of the trouble which they made him. He sought the pope's advice in the matter, telling him that both in the city and diocese a large number of laymen and women were reading the Bible in the Gallic tongue and preaching from place to place. Some of them had come from Montpellier, bringing translations with them which they used in secret assemblies. When the parish priests undertook to correct these things they spurned their interference, telling them plainly that the Bible was better than any thing that they could give them. The pope's reply against the little flock said, that 'Although the desire to understand the Scriptures and edify one another out of them is not blamable, but rather commendable; still, he could not favor the secrecy of their meetings.' He warned them against Pharisaic pride, and threatened them with discipline if they would not hear his fatherly exhortations. But the 'heretics' went on with their Bible teachings; and a delegation of abbots came from Borne, A.D. 1200, who dispersed the assemblies,

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

burned the Bibles and, according to the Chronicles of Albericus, 'extirpated the sect.'

In order to stop these Christ-like proceedings of the Waldensians, the fourth Lateran Council, A.D. 1215, and the Council of Toulouse, 1229, forbade laymen to read the Bible either in the language of the people or in the Latin, and the Council of Tarragona, 1242, bound the prohibition on the clergy also.

The Waldensians of the Dispersion became established in various cities, as Geneva, Aquileia, with others in Switzerland and Italy; and, in fact, they stretched all the way from Aragon to Milan and Florence, and dotted Lower Germany. The Bishop of Turin was greatly disturbed by some of them about 1209. He had been a Benedictine Abbot, and took advantage of the passage of the Emperor Otto IV, on his way to be crowned at Rome, to secure the right of expelling the Waldensians who were 'sowing tares in his diocese,' and of expurgating every thing that contradicted the Catholic faith. But the Counts of Lucerna befriended them and secured the free exercise of their religion, in the treaty made with the Duke of Savoy, in 1233. This protected them for many years.

In 1212 a congregation of five hundred Waldensians was discovered at Strasburg. At first the bishop of that city sought to reason them out of their position against the Catholic faith; but such was their ready use of Scripture that disputations always inured to their advantage. Then he proclaimed that all of them who would not forsake their errors should be put to death by fire without delay. Many recanted, surrendered their books, and reported to him that they had three chief centers and three leaders – in Milan, in Bohemia, and on the ground in Strasburg. These leaders, they said, were not clothed with authority like the pope, but owed their influence to the personal confidence reposed in them by their brethren. One of their chief duties was to collect money for the poor. Eighty persons in all, amongst whom were twenty-three women and twelve preachers, would not surrender their faith. John, the Strasburg leader, answered in the name of all. His appeal to Scripture could not be overthrown, and when his persecutors would apply the test of red-hot iron to see if he were sent of God, he replied: 'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.' 'Ah, he does not want to burn his fingers,' scornfully cried the monks. 'I have the word of God,' he answered, 'and for that I would not only burn my fingers but my whole body.' All who stood with him were put to death. Before their execution they were charged with all sorts of heresy, to which John replied from the Scriptures, moving the bystanders to tears. And when the final demand was made: 'Will you maintain your belief?' he replied, 'Yes, we will.' They were then led, amid the cries of kindred and friends, to the church-yard, where a broad and deep ditch had been dug. Into this they were driven, wood was piled around them and they perished in the flames. To this day men tremble when the 'Heretics' Ditch' is pointed out in Strasburg. [Bender, p. 62]

We find another body of Dispersed Waldensians, A.D. 1231, in the provinces of the Danube. They were subjected to a terrible persecution for three years by bloody Conrad of Marburg. An extended account of others is preserved in a 'Chronicle of 1260,' by an anonymous writer. They lived in the diocese of Passau, which was embraced in the Duchy of Austria. He gives the names of forty-two towns and villages in the diocese, some of them upon the Danube and others close to the borders of Bohemia, where Waldensian congregations were found. The Jesuit Gretser, in editing this report, omits the honest explanations which it gives for the spread of the Dispersed Waldensians. The manuscript lays it to the impure life of the priests, to the conversion of the sacraments into gain, to the multiplication of masses, to the prurient use of the confessional and to pretended miracles; such as, tears of blood flowing from a picture, the lighting of a lamp from heaven, the exaltation of false

Post-Apostolic Times

relics as those of angels, the sweat of Christ, and passing off the bones of oxen as those of saints. Great fault is also found with the adoration of the pope as God upon earth, greater than men and equal to angels, infallible and sinless. An additional cause for public favor was found in the Waldensians themselves; for the author says that they were content in poverty, avoided lying, profanity and theft, and were diligent in business. They were shoemakers, weavers and other artisans; temperate in eating and drinking, and they led godly lives.

Their converts were made by the Bible and religious books. They went as peddlers to a cottage or a nobleman's castle, offering fabrics or jewelry for sale; and when asked if they had any thing else, they answered: 'Yes, great rarities; I have one precious stone through which you can see God, and another that kindles love to him in the heart.' With that these peddlers brought out the precious roll of Holy Writ. Whittier, our gentle Quaker poet, has beautifully pictured these heavenly, traveling Waldensian merchantmen with goodly pearls, thus:

'O, lady fair, I have yet a gem, which a purer luster flings
Than the diamond flash of the jeweled, crown
on the lofty brow of kings; A wonderful pearl of exceeding price,
whose virtue shall not decay, Whose light shall be as a spell
to thee and a blessing on thy way.' The cloud went off from the pilgrim's brow
as a small, meager book, Unchased with gold or gem of cost,
from his folding robe he took. 'Here, lady fair, is the pearl
of price, may it prove as much to thee. Nay, keep thy gold,
I ask it not, for the word of God is free.'

Still another reason for their increase is found in that they were loyal to their prince and country. About this time a violent contest between Pope Innocent IV and the Emperor Frederick II compelled every Austrian to choose between his civil and his ecclesiastical allegiance. As Bishop Rudiger took sides with the Emperor and smote the papal legate with his fist, love for the pope was turned into hate in many hearts. In these political convulsions, when the Inquisition and the pope were set at naught, every papal interdict brought a Waldensian jubilee and the sect spread rapidly. Frederick the Warlike, Duke of Austria, who died in 1246, unlike the Emperor, had shown favor to the Catholics by laying violent hands on the Waldensians.

But no class of the Dispersed Waldensians call for more important notice than those of Lombardy. Those who settled in and about Milan were known as the 'Poor Italians,' and were a mixture with dissenters already on the ground. Our interest in them is increased from the fact that many of the Waldensians of Lombardy were really the followers of Arnold of Brescia, of whom we have spoken. For as the followers of Waldo were scattered abroad after his death, so the Arnoldists were driven everywhere after the martyrdom of their leader. These, with the 'Humble Men,' so called, of Lombardy, multiplied 'like fishes,' and grew in favor with the magistrates of Milan, who gave them a piece of ground for a meetinghouse, and allowed them to rebuild it after the archbishop had destroyed their first structure. Those who were merged into this body were numbered with the Waldensians of Lombardy. In 1877 Preger published at Munich what is possibly the oldest Waldensian document extant, which throws some light on them. It gives a colloquy between six delegates of the original Romance and as many of the Lombard Waldensians. These held a conference on their general affairs at Bergamo, May, 1218; and this account thereof was sent a few years afterward by the Lombardy brethren to the party in Germany.

All classes of Waldensians held some things in common amongst themselves, also with the Petrobrusians and with certain of the Catharists. Yet generally they are confounded with each other, for they are all supposed to have been alike; and so we fail to reach their differences. For example,

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

the Council of Toulouse and the second and third Lateran Councils launched decrees against those who rejected infant baptism, Catharists and others, some suppose including the Waldensians. But that of Toulouse, 1119, and the second Lateran, 1139, were held before the Waldensians existed; as according to all modern history they originated with Peter Waldo in 1100. Again, the third Lateran, 1179, as well as these preceding councils, condemned the Cathari, but not the Waldensians. Dr. Wall thinks that the Baptists of Cologne, 1092, came from Dauphine, where Peter of Bruis had preached; and if he is correct, then they were numbered with the Cathari and condemned by the same councils.

Mistakes have arisen touching the views of the Romance Waldensians on infant baptism, from wrong translations and uses of the 'Antichrist,' the 'Noble Lesson,' the 'Minor Catechism,' and the 'Twelfth Article' with the forged date of 1120. If they opposed infant baptism it is unaccountable that their literature, running through four centuries, gives no formal argument against it, and no accompanying demand for the baptism of believers only. And further, their enemy Pope Innocent in his letter No. 143 says, 'That the Waldenses err in the faith, or depart from sound doctrine, thou hast not expressed to us.' Yet at that moment no departure from the faith of the Catholics was more frightful than the doctrine that infants would be saved if they died unbaptized; and they enforced this doctrine by the most terrible decrees of their councils, but not by name, against the Waldensians. On the other side, too, this subject is full of perplexity. For if the Romance Waldensians actually practiced infant baptism from the first, it is very singular that they have left no argument for its authority, no trace of its defense, and no ritual for its observance, in all their early literature, while they positively rejected the Consolamentum.

When we attempt to supplement their own testimony by that of their contemporaries, we unfortunately find little to relieve this perplexity. Almost all Roman Catholic writers agree with Cardinal Hosius, who says: 'The Waldenses rejected infant baptism.' Addis and Arnold declare of them: 'As to baptism, they said that the washing of infants was of no avail to them.' [*Cath. Ency.*] This impression is deepened by the fact that Farel, Oecolampadius and others, at the time of the Reformation, made strenuous efforts to convince the Waldensians of Eastern Dauphine and Savoy of the righteousness of infant baptism; as if the more zealous of them still rejected that doctrine. Dr. Keller thinks that they commonly practiced adult baptism and allowed their children to be baptized, saying: 'Since the Waldenses have always fundamentally, on fundamental principles, held fast to baptism on faith, where they neglected it they did so under the pressure of the constrained position in which they found themselves.' [*Die Reformation*, Leipzig (1885), p. 90] Certain it is that their enemies, to whom we are indebted for the earliest account of their faith and practice, use strong language on this subject. But they fail to tell us clearly of what Waldensian branch they speak, while sometimes the fair inference is that they speak of the Romance and at other times of the Dispersed bodies, as those of the Rhine and other parts of Germany. Take the following examples:

I. Ermengard, about A.D. 1192, says: 'They pretend that this sacrament cannot be conferred except upon those who demand it with their own lips; hence they infer the other error, that baptism does not profit infants who receive it.' [*Max Bibl. Patrum* xxiv, p. 1,609]

II. Alanus, who died A.D. 1203, appears to include the Waldensians amongst those who reject infant baptism, and yet it is not positive that he does; although he is writing against them. He represents those whom he denounces as saying that 'baptism avails nothing before years of discretion are reached. Infants are not profited by it, because they do not believe. Hence a candidate

Post-Apostolic Times

is usually asked whether he believes in God, the Father Omnipotent. Baptism profits an unbeliever as little as it does an infant. Why should those be baptized who cannot be instructed?' [*Patrologia Latina*, vol. 210, p. 346]

III. Stephen of Borbone says, A.D. 1225: 'One argument of their error is, that baptism does not profit little children to their salvation, who have neither the motive nor the act of faith, as it is said in the latter part of Mark, he who will not believe will be condemned.' [Dieckhoff, *Die Waldenser*, p. 160]

IV. Paelido Beinerius, A.D. 1230-1250: 'Concerning baptism, they say, the Catechism is of no value. Again, that the washing that is given to infants is of no value. Again, that the sponsors do not understand what they answer to the priest. They do not regard compaternity' (I. e., the relation of sponsors). [Charvaz *Recherches Historiques*, p. 428]

V. Moneta, the Dominican, who wrote before A.D., 1240: 'They maintain the nullity of the baptism of infant, and affirm that no one can be saved before attaining the age of reason.' [Charvaz, p. 428] Hahn, in quoting Moneta, makes him say: 'These heretics charge that the Roman Catholic Church baptizes first and teaches afterward, while the Church of Christ taught at first before baptizing; also, that Christ and his Apostles never baptized any one without faith and reason.'

VI. One of the Austrian Inquisitors, A.D. 1260: 'Concerning baptism, some err in saying that little children are not saved by baptism, for the Lord says, he that believeth and is baptized shall be saved. Now, a child does not yet believe, consequently is not saved.' (By baptism, he must mean.) 'Some of them baptize over again, others lay on hands without baptism.' [Preger, *Beitrag Z. Gesch. der Waldesier*, p. 206]

VII. David of Augsburg, A.D. 1256-1272: 'They say that a man is then truly, for the first time, baptized, when he is brought into their heresy. But some say that baptism does not profit little children, because they are never able actually to believe.' [in D'Argentre, v. I, p. 84; *Abhdig d. iii, cl. d. K. B. A. d. W.* 1878. Bd. xiv, Abth ii, s. 207]

It may be that some of these writers did not intend these remarks to apply to the Waldensians alone, or if so, to all of them without exception. Some of the early members of the sect may have earnestly rejected infant baptism, while it is certain that many of the Dispersed did and practiced only the baptism of believers. Clearly those of the Romance class, who united with the Reformers in the sixteenth century, held few Baptist sentiments which made either party hesitate at the union. The embassy sent to Bucer and OEclampadius, in 1531, shows how these communities stood with Rome on that subject. They really came to learn of the Reformers what their contest with Rome meant; for they did not understand the full difference between the contestants, and wished to be instructed. A great Council of the Waldensians was held at Angrogna, in Savoy, 1532, to which the Swiss Protestants sent Farel and Olivetan, and then a new departure was taken. Henceforth the Piedmontese Waldensians were joined to the Swiss Protestant Pedobaptists; although a minority of the Council refused to be bound by its decision, though not on purely Baptist grounds. One of the weaknesses of the Swiss Protestants has always been that they have spent their strength in asserting that Pedobaptisin is valid; as if they had derived the first practical benefit from it in their struggle with Rome; and as if this hugging of a limb of popery were really necessary to an efficient protest against the other errors of that dark system. At the time that this union took place the Reformers were bitterly persecuting the so-called Anabaptists, even unto death, for rejecting infant baptism.

There was, however, a remarkable association between the Waldensians of the Dispersion and

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

the Baptists in the sixteenth century, both in doctrine and practice. Mosheim and Limborch mark this likeness, the latter saying: 'To speak candidly what I think, of all the modern sects of Christians, the Dutch Baptists most resemble both the Albigenses and Waldenses.' [*Hist. Inquisition*, I, ch. viii]

Indeed, in some cases, the Baptists evidently sprang from the Waldensians, and everywhere in that century pushed resistance of infant baptism to the front; so that it was made the chief ground of their martyrdom by both Protestants and Catholics. Goebol, in his *History of Christian Life in the Rhine Provinces*, says that wherever in Germany, before the Reformation, there were large bodies of Waldensians, there, during the Reformation, large bodies of 'Anabaptists' sprang up. At that time this people alarmed all Europe. Every Church and State stood in awe of their increase, and this panic united all their foes in the ignoble bonds of bloody persecution. While some Protestants denied the doctrine of baptismal regeneration, not believing that unbaptized children, dying, perished; yet they were as firmly resolved to burn all who cast infant baptism aside, as were those who lodged the salvation of babes in their baptism.

On one point more the Waldensians of the Dispersion were one with the Anti-pedobaptists. They insisted upon a regenerate Church membership marked by baptism upon their personal faith; while in later times, at least, most of the Romance Waldensians became Pedobaptists and semi-Romanists upon that point. The Baptists of today and the original Waldensians have much in common. They sought the restoration of Apostolic Church life in a true Christian character and in a holy Church membership; they followed the literal interpretation of Scripture; their priesthood was that of believers and not of a hierarchy, men renewed in heart and life; they rejected the error of regeneration by baptism; they believed in and practiced immersion only, even if their babes were baptized; and they made holiness of heart and life the point on which every thing turned concerning the living material of which the Church of Christ must be composed.

As to the church government of the Waldensians, it is necessary to speak with great caution. The French Waldensians held to the Episcopal form by three orders, bishops, priests and deacons; but Reinerius says of the sect in general: 'They say, the bishops, clergy and other religious orders are no better than the scribes and Pharisees.' This relates to character, however, but they did not despise a true Christian ministry; for the same writer, who was a resident of Lombardy, says that there they had 'elders.' Yet there is nothing to show that they had any order of ministers amongst them as a universal thing; or even regularly located pastors, as we should deem them. They had 'barbs' or preachers, but on the principle of the seventy disciples whom Jesus sent forth two by two. These were not divided into orders, but into three moral classes, from which the mistake has arisen concerning an Episcopal form of government. They had the preaching class of celibates, the contemplative class of celibates, a sort of monks and nuns, and the preaching class of married men. Waldo and his preachers committed large portions of the Bible to memory, and going into the highways, hedges, streets and lanes of their cities and villages they repeated these passages, explaining and enforcing them. Whether men and women were learned or illiterate, they taught them the gospels by heart and, in turn, sent them out to teach the same. These went from house to house teaching and preaching wherever they could find hearers. They have 'No fixed dwelling place, but go about two by two, barefoot, clad in penitent's, raiment, like the Apostles stripped of all, following the Christ who was stripped of all.' [Herzog, p. 149] Preger says that all 'Ecclesiastical authority was vested in the congregation, so that there was no room for bishops;' and, of course, it was their only court of discipline and appeal. [Page 38,39] In this fraternity of preachers, in the absence of orders

Post-Apostolic Times

distinction was made between them as major and minor. This arose from the custom of sending them out in twos, a young man and an older, that the younger might learn from the elder. Reinerius represents them as holding that all men in Christ's Church stand on an exact parity, no one being greater than another, and that the sacrament of orders is a nullity. The account of the conference of the twelve delegates held at Bergamo shows as much. The first question which they were called to settle was occasioned by Waldo's wish that no one should be put over all the societies. They agreed to a sort of general superintendency as most conducive to peace and prosperity in all their communities. The superintendents were to be chosen for a definite period, or it might be for life. It was further determined that either new converts or tried friends might, be appointed as preachers. Waldo had prejudice against the cooperative communities to which the Lombardy brethren belonged, fearing the undue influence of prosperity upon them. The community Bystein they laid aside, and after that, preachers and people alike were allowed to earn money. Their system of preaching shaped itself after the order of an itinerancy. Every year their barbs or preachers met to confer about the general interests of their people, much as the Society of Friends do now, and to 'station the preachers' as the Methodist call similar work. This they denominated 'changing the twos;' for except the infirm and old, they remained from but one to three years in a place. These preachers were poor and made poverty a virtue both of necessity and choice, and small sums of money were given to them for their support. But they had no regular salary, and at their annual meeting they divided money amongst the poor who were not preachers and amongst themselves, as each needed. If any of these traveling missionaries had fallen into grievous sins through the year, they were expelled. If any had committed lighter faults, they were admonished and forgiven. And when all had asked forgiveness of each other, they went out to do the work of another year.

George Morel, one of their preachers, details all this and more to Bucer and OEcolampadius, A.D. 1530, in these words: 'So also we go forth once a year, *to visit our people in their homes*, for they dwell in the mountains, in various hamlets and villages, and we hear one after another in secret confession...Our people for the most part are a simple peasantry, gaining their livelihood by agriculture, scattered by the frequent persecutions in many places, and separated from each other by great spaces. For from one end to the other is eight hundred miles. They are everywhere subject to the civil magistrates and the priests of the unbelievers. Yet, by the grace of God, it never or rarely happens that a Waldensian man or woman is arrested or punished by the said authorities, or that one visits houses of ill fame.' In this passage the word *milh* (miles) has been mistaken for *mille* (thousands), and some unknown writer has put the figures 800,000 into the margin of the manuscript; from which blunder all sorts of fabulous numbers have been ascribed to the Romance Waldensians, while the valleys in which they lived could not be made to support 100,000 people at the most. When, therefore, we read in Reinerius and others of Waldensian 'churches,' we are obliged to take the phrase in a modified sense; for in truth they seem to have been less of a sect, in the modern sense of the term, than a disjointed series of congregations or societies of religious men. According to the showing of Herzog, these congregations were not all alike either amongst the Romance or the Dispersed. They appear to have had no fixed ecclesiastical organization, for which they each claimed Gospel authority; but they left their plans free to be modified by their trying circumstances to any required extent. It is tolerably evident that they were religions bodies without due constitutional form, serving only the ends of a godly brotherhood in brotherly love, rather than the purposes of strict supervision, watch care and extension. All can see from the circumstances of

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

the case that it would have been extremely difficult, if not impossible, to keep up regular and visible Church organizations with the laws of the State sternly against them. They could maintain amongst themselves an understood separation from the Catholic hierarchy, but they had not the civil right to avow an open rupture with Rome, and to perfect an open organized separation.

Indeed, it is questionable whether they did not consider themselves as a body of holy men still within the Church of Rome, rather than as separate churches, in the proper sense of the word, something after the Wesleyan order of societies within the Established Church of England during the life of Wesley and long afterward. That Church persecuted them bitterly, and yet Wesley and his immediate followers went to it regularly for the ordinances. There is a singular confusion in the statement of Reinerius and others on this point. They charge the Waldensians with arrogance for assuming that they were the only Church of Christ, and in the same breath they charge them with craft for remaining in the Catholic communion. For example, a Roman Inquisitor who claims that 'he had exact knowledge of the Waldensians,' says: 'They communicate and administer the sacraments in the vulgar tongue.' And again: 'They celebrate the Eucharist in their household cups and say that the *corporal*, or cloth on which the host is laid, is no holier than the cloth of their breeches.' Then, with marked inconsistency, Reinerius makes these two separate statements, namely: 'They do not believe the body and blood of Christ to be the true sacrament, but only blessed bread which, by a figure only, is called the body of Christ...This sacrament they celebrate in their assemblies, repeating the words of the Gospel at their table, and participating together, in imitation of Christ's Supper.' Yet after that he adds, either truly or falsely: 'They frequent our churches, are present at divine service, offer at the altar, confess to the priests, observe the Church fasts, celebrate festivals, reverently bowing their heads, though in the meantime they scoff at all these institutions of the Church, looking upon them as profane and hurtful.' Last of all he makes this remarkable statement which seems to cover both the others, namely: that they hold 'a great show of truth, for that they live righteously before men, and believe all things well of God, and all the articles which are contained in the creed, only they blaspheme and hate the Church of Rome.'

We must either throw his testimony aside as one tissue of falsehood, or believe that some of the original Waldensians did accept such offices from the Romish priests, possibly from fear. But we cannot reject this evidence, for Morel himself states to the Reformers: 'We abominate the masses, but we attend them, and receive the host at the hands of the Roman priests.' This the priests would not object to, for they did not look upon them as an ecclesiastical body, but as religious guilds of weavers. Yet they cursed them again and again, for between A.D. 1307-1323 the Inquisition of France passed six hundred and seven sentences against heretics, and ninety-two of them were against the Waldensians under one name or another. Besides, David of Augsburg, A.D. 1256-1272, declares that in his day they attended the confessions, fasts, feasts and sacraments of the Catholic Church. And at the time of the Reformation, OEcolumpadius lays the same charge at their door: 'We hear that you, through fear of persecution, have denied and concealed your faith to that degree, that you hold communion with the unbelievers, and go to those masses which are only worthy of abhorrence.' He then tells them that they had better suffer 'in the abyss of hell' than endure against their consciences the blasphemies of the godless. And, according to Gillies, their own historian, they only gave up all fellowship with the Catholics when at the synod of Angrogna, A.D. 1532, the Reformers refused to unite with them on any other condition. But the Bohemian Waldensians, as late as 1573, gave as the reason why they had never united with some of their own Waldensian

Post-Apostolic Times

people elsewhere, that 'for the sake of peace they attended the papal mass, which they knew to be idolatrous.' It is more reasonable to apply this evidence as showing the Waldensians to be a Christian body without formal Church organization, than to regard them as hypocrites, as Reinerius did, or as members of two antagonist Churches at the same time for any reason whatever.

A word may be needful on their pre-eminent love of the Bible. Stephen of Borbone tells us of Waldo's care that it be translated into the peculiar Romance dialect. No characteristic was more marked in the Waldensians than their love for the sacred volume, and this love compelled them to share the treasure with others by translations into the Flemish, German and French. Neander says that their two characteristics, above all others in Germany, were their general distribution of the Scriptures and the common priesthood of believers. [Vol. ii, p. 659] Herzog finds no sect which was so zealous for the circulation of the Scriptures as they. Others built Church systems and sought to make the Bible support them, thus rendering it a secondary means; but, says Ochsenbein, the Waldensians laid down the Bible as the foundation and practically built upon its truths. [Page 33] A Romish Inquisitor, in speaking of them, tells us: 'They can say a great part of the Old and New Testaments by heart. They despise the decretals and the sayings and expositions of holy men and cleave only to the text of Scripture...They contend that the doctrine of Christ and his Apostles is sufficient to salvation without any Church statutes and ordinances, and affirm that the traditions of the Church are no better than the traditions of the Pharisees, insisting, moreover, that greater stress is laid on the observation of human tradition than on the keeping of the law of God.' Seisselins, Archbishop of Turin, also states: 'They receive only what is written in the Old and New Testaments.' Last of all, Reinerius reports that 'whatever is preached that is not substantiated by the text of the Bible they esteem fables;' for which reason Pope Pius II complains of their holding that 'baptism ought to be administered without the addition of holy oil,' a fact which explains the further remark of Reinerius: 'They hold that none of the ordinances of the Church which have been introduced since Christ's ascension ought to be observed, as being of no value.' It is not likely that the Catholics were first impelled to forbid the Bible to the people by the malignant purpose of shutting them up in darkness, but by that ultra conservatism which dares not put it into the hands of the unlettered today without an accompanying creed. The public mind is esteemed by many to be unbalanced, and its bent must be shaped carefully or it will be perverted. The Waldensians cast all such rubbish to the wind believing that the Bible never corrupted any man, while creeds have corrupted millions. Hence we find in one of their sermons on the Sower the following tribute to the Holy Oracles: 'The word of God is the salvation of the souls of the poor, the cordial of the languishing, the food of the hungry, the consolation of the afflicted, the excommunication of vice, the heir of virtue, the shame of devils, the light of hearts, the way of the traveler.'

At the Conference of Bergamo, the Lord's Supper was a subject of wide difference, but both sides appear to have interpreted the words: 'This is my body,' literally, as Luther did. The Lombards would not admit, however, with their Romance brethren, that any one could change the bread into the body of the Lord, but confined that power to holy men. They quoted many texts of Scripture to prove that the sacrifices of the wicked are an abomination to the Lord. Yet in order to provide for a faithful worshiper who was served by an unfaithful administrator, it was asserted that God himself would change the elements in such a case without the aid of man. The Lombards were further asked, 'Why they had given up their former practice of confession?' To which they replied: 'When I was a child I spake as a child, but when I became a man, I put away childish things.' With confession,

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

the Dispersed Waldensians put away the childish practice of the mass, and abandoned the dogma of the real presence in the Supper. The great theologian, David, of Augsburg, who died A.D. 1272, declares unequivocally of the Bavarian Waldensians: 'They do not believe that it is really the body and blood of Christ, but only consecrated bread, which is called the body of Christ, figuratively, as Christ is also called the 'Rock.' Herzog gives the following description of the Supper as certain of the Waldensians celebrated that ordinance:

'Every year they met for the observance. The presiding officer called the assembly to order. A goblet of unmixed wine and a cake of unleavened bread were placed upon a cloth-covered table. The administrator exhorted the assembly to pray for the forgiveness of their sins, and repeat the Lord's Prayer seven times, to the honor of God and of the Holy Trinity, that he would himself prepare the sacrament. Then all fell on their knees, and prayed the Lord's Prayer seven times. After they had arisen, the presiding officer made a sign over the bread and wine, broke the bread, distributed it among them, all standing. In the same manner he served the cup.' [Page 220]

Their views of Religious Liberty are easily gathered. So free did they hold themselves, that they contemned excommunication even from the true Church of Christ simply for the holding of any particular religious opinions, and treated expulsion from the Catholics with contempt. They silenced their ministers for immorality, but we know next to nothing of other punishments in their brotherhood. As to civil interference, Alanus says that 'They denied the right to persecute men for their religious views and practices.' In keeping with this statement, their 'Cantica' denounces the 'clergy of the Church of the malignants as evil hunters, who kill the hunted after the manner of hungry hounds. Pretending to be spiritual hunters they are become wicked foxes, that slay with evil teeth the poor chickens of Christ. Such are the homicidal monks...Verily, as in the days of Christ, Annas and Caiaphas and the rest were Pharisees, so, now, Pope Innocent; they would not go into the house of Pilate lest they be defiled, they delivered up Christ to the secular arm, just as they do yet.'

Thus God raised up this noble people in the deep gloom of the ages to shine as a light in the dark places of the earth – a lily in Alpine snows, to bloom amongst thorns, thistles and weeds. They give this account of themselves in the 'Noble Lesson:' 'The Scripture says, and we can see it, that if there is a good man who loves and fears Jesus Christ, who will not curse and swear and lie and commit adultery, and kill and rob, and avenge himself on his enemy; they say at once he is a Waldensian and worthy of punishment.' One of their smaller Catechisms teaches six commandments of Jesus: 'Thou shalt not be angry with thy brother, nor look upon a woman to lust after her, nor put away thy wife except for the cause of adultery, nor swear, nor resist evil, and thou shalt love thine enemy.' For the maintenance of these things they were hated and abused for centuries. In the Alps they were a simple and primitive community, of shepherds and farmers, whose country was naturally inaccessible and barren. They passed through thirty-six persecutions which spared neither age nor sex.

The crusade of Simon of Montfort so utterly destroyed them that Sismondi says: 'Simon stamped out not only a people but a literature.' Dominic, the father of the Inquisition, persecuted them with a high hand. From A.D. 1160-1500 their fortunes varied from the greatest prosperity to the depths of misery; alternating from an ardent zeal against the Romish Church to a cowering dread and a wretched compromise on the part of many with the doctrines of Rome, very similar to the Old Catholic movement of our times. The most dreadful of all their persecutions began in 1560, when many of their villages were deserted. The old, the feeble, women and children, fled to the forests,

Post-Apostolic Times

the rocks, the highest peaks of the mountains. Untrained peasants were obliged to form themselves into small brigades. Tottering old men and boys organized themselves into guards and sentinels, and accomplished immortal exploits by their skill and fortitude against veteran invaders. Possibly it had been better had they earlier invoked the spirit of men, who, in defense of their holiest rights to serve God, must measure swords with the incarnate fiends and craven bigots who dared to oppress them, on the ground that to thrash a coward is to challenge his respect. The horrible Inquisition was formed for the express purpose of planting an iron foot upon the throat of the most hallowed rights of man: It never was suppressed till organized force chastised it; and the same treatment might have cowed its devilishness much sooner, both to the honor of God and man. This tribunal of infernal origin clothed certain monks with limitless power to torture Waldensians and lead them to execution without legal forms or the rights of trial. And that power was plied upon these inoffensive people in those extremes which nothing can inflame but sanctimonious infernalism.

Many of them were frozen to death, others were cast from high precipices and dashed to pieces. Some were driven into caverns, and by filling the mouths of their caves with fagots were suffocated. Others were hanged in cold blood, ripped open and disemboweled, pierced with prongs, drowned, racked limb from limb till death relieved them; were stabbed, worried by dogs, burned, or crucified with their heads downward. Fox relates one case in which four hundred mothers who had taken refuge in the Cave of Castelluzzo, some 2,000 feet above the valley, entered by a protecting crag, were smothered with their infants in their arms. And all the time that this gentle blood was flowing, that sanctified beauty known as Innocent III, drank it in like nectar of Paradise. Of the Waldensians and other murdered sheep of Christ, he said: 'They are like Samson's foxes. They appear to be different, but their tails are tied together.' The blood-thirst of the Dominicans earned for them the stigma of 'Domini Canes,' or the 'Lord's Dogs.' The very sentences which they pronounced in mockery of trial and justice were a Satanic compound of formality and heartlessness, sanctimony and avarice, obsequiousness and arrogance. At the conclusion of a session of the Inquisition, held in Switzerland, 1430, the following decree was published:

'In the name of God, Amen. We, Brother Ulrich of Torrente, of the Dominican order at Lausanne, and with full apostolic authority, Inquisitor of heretical iniquity, in the diocese of Lausanne; and John de Coluinpnis, Licentiate and especially appointed to this work by the venerable father in Christ, Lord William of Challant, Bishop of Lausanne, have directed by the pure process of the Inquisition that you, Peter Sager, born at Montrich, now sixty years old, thirty years and more ago forswore the Waldensian heresy in the city of Bern, but since then have returned to that perverse faith, as a dog to his vomit, and held and done many things detestable and vile against the most holy and venerable Roman Church. You have stubbornly asserted that there is no purgatory, but only heaven and hell; that masses, intercessions and alms for the souls of the departed are of no avail; and there are many other things proved against you in your trial, that show that you have fallen back into heresy. O grief! Therefore after consideration, and investigation, and mature consideration, and weighing of evidence; and after consulting the statutes, both of divine and human law, and arming ourselves with the revered sign of the Holy Cross, we declare: In the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Amen; – That our decision may proceed from the presence of God and our eyes behold justice, turning neither to the right nor to the left, but fixed only on God and on the Holy Scriptures, we make known as our final sentence from this seat of judgment, that you, Peter Sager, are and have been a heretic, treacherously recreant to your oath of recantation. As a relapsed heretic, we commit you to the arm of the secular power. However, we entreat the secular authorities to execute the sentence of death more mildly than the canonical statutes require, particularly as to the mutilation of the members of the body. We further decree, that all and every property that belongs to you, Peter, is confiscated, and after being divided into three parts,

Chapter 10 - The Waldensians

the first part shall go to the government, the second to the officers of the Inquisition, and the third to pay the expenses of the trial.' Some of the town expenses attending the execution of Peter are found in the town records, as follows: 'Paid to Master Garnaucie for burning Peter Sager, 20 shillings; for cords and stake, 10 shillings; for the pains of the executioner, 28 shillings; special watchmen during the execution in the city, 17 shillings, 6 pfennigs; in the citadel, 9 sols; for the beadles, 14 shillings.' The fuel must have cost a large amount, as twelve wagon loads were used. Side by side with this fiendish record stand these two charges: 'Twenty- eight measures of wine for the dance at the court-house, in honor of the Count of Zil. – cauldron, in which Caspar Antoine, of Milan, was boiled.'

Have Waldensian blood and purity ever been avenged?

Post-Apostolic Times

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

In the thirteenth century and onward, a few seers read the signs of the coming Reformation. Men's souls felt the need of it, and hope lived on. They saw that the cause of Christ was not dead, its vitality was but suspended, and everywhere prophetic aspiration looked for the end of shameless pretension and scandalous morals in the Church. Three classes are known as the Reformers before the Reformation: the Theologic school, chilled by farcical superstition; the Mystical, who groaned in spirit after God; and the Biblical, whose faith in the word of God never faltered. This last school longed to cast the Bible into the mass of torpid profligacy, as the prophet threw salt into the pot of death. John Tauler, A.D. 1290-1361, was the most noble and noted of the Mystics. He was the son of a wealthy farmer of Strasburg. For eight years he sought some one to lead him nearer to God, and at last found his tutor in a beggar at the gate of the cathedral. He allied himself with those known as 'Friends of God,' at Strasburg and Cologne, and deserves to be ranked with Fenelon for learning, piety and eloquence. Of his sermons Luther said to Spalatin: 'If you enjoy solid theology, just like the ancient, get Tauler's sermons; for I have found no theology, whether in Latin or in any other tongue, that is more sound and consonant with the Gospel.' He did little, however, to reform his times; he enjoyed inner fellowship with God and trampled upon his own selfishness, but had no power to work on the dead level of a reformer.

With the great revival of letters the learned began to appeal from the decrees of the Church to the text of the Fathers, from them to the Latin Vulgate, and then from that translation to the Greek parchments. But the Italian thinkers rested in the revived literature; chiefly in philosophy, the charms of verse and the golden measurement of prose. Some of them were kings amongst men; but the restored classic form, diction, elegance, imagination, were the scepter which they waved, and its motions made no stir of dry bones in the open valley of vice. Rome gloried in the beauties of Hellas rather than in the beauties of holiness, in the song and the drama rather than in the realities of saving truth. At times shame aroused her humanist mood and she had fierce fits of morality, when she thundered against her own wickedness, being careful always not to strike herself with lightning. She was like the acolyte, who all his life had been too close to the altar to feel any reverence for its mysteries. Old Greek thought was welcome, but not the Galilean. But when her learning went on pilgrimage into the Transalpine kingdoms and touched the less volatile and more robust races, it was felt at the foundations of humanity. German and Italian mind met at Constance and Basle; the souls of Dante, Medici and Piccolomini (Pius II) clashed with the controversialists at Prague, Vienna, Cologne and Heidelberg; and while this seething mass was all alive, Guttenburg threw the first printed Bible into the vast ferment, and it has never been quiet since. From that day, 1455, the Reformation began to set in firmly. That very year Reuchlin, the father of Hebrew learning in Germany, was born, and twenty-two years later, Erasmus. These were called the 'Two eyes of Germany.' The first was the great forerunner of Luther, and fought against indulgences for a generation before that monk was born. He dared to compare the Vulgate with the Hebrew and to point out its errors. When rebuked for doing so he said: 'I revere St. Jerome as an angel; I respect De Lyra as a master; but I adore Truth as a God.' In that saying he uttered the great thought of the Reformation.

The first great master who had grasped it was the princely Yorkshireman and pure-hearted pastor of Lutterworth. He was the father of the greatest idea of three centuries, namely: The gift of the Bible to England in English, as the inheritance of all, from the king and queen down to the plow-

Post-Apostolic Times

boy and milk-maid. He read the charter of God to man traced on the parchment, and while his own heart burned he quietly vowed that it was the native right of every Englishman to warm his bosom by its reading. Men call this lowly, daring farmer's son the 'Morning Star of the Reformation.' More gracefully may Wickliff wear the trope of Augustine, when he compares some saints to the sun. He charmed by the luster of his rising, he strengthened by the reign of his light, he filled the heavens with the glow of his decline, and after five hundred years the moon and the stars of the Reformation make to him their obeisance. The inflow of French had corrupted the old vernacular, so that the Anglo-Saxon version had become obsolete. Besides, it had become a crime for those who could read the Scriptures in their mother tongue to do so. The clergy themselves were grossly illiterate, many curates knew not the Ten Commandments, nor could they understand one verse of the Psalter. The pope sent his bull to Beaumont for his consecration as Bishop of Durham; and Andrews, in his *History of Britain*, tells us that he tried again and again to spell out its words in public, but was so puzzled that at last he cried out: 'By St. Louis! it could be no gentleman who wrote this stuff.' Edward III entered his protest against this state of things, and Wickliff resolved to end it forever. At that time a manuscript copy of one page of Scripture was of immense cost and printing was not discovered. The annual allowance of a university scholar was but fifty shillings, the wages of a laboring man three half-pence a day, and two arches of London bridge only cost 25 pounds, in 1240; yet in 1274 the Abbot of Croxton paid for a fairly written Bible in nine volumes the sum of 33 pounds 6s. 8d.

In Wickliff's day the contest between the Church and the civil power was just growing severe, and he devoted his whole life to a struggle with the papacy. Newman well describes the conflict: 'The State said to the Church, "I am the only power that can reform you; you hold of me; your dignities and offices are in my gift." The Church said to the State, "She who wields the power of smiting kings cannot be a king's creature; and if you attempt to reform her you will be planting the root of corruption by the same hand which cuts off its branches.'" Bull after bull was thundered against Wickliff for one thing or another, five of them in one month; but he quietly persevered, preparing his Bible for the common people. He took the greatest pains to make it plain, casting aside all foreign terms and scholastic words, using the uncouth language of the people, so that the most lowly and unlettered could understand what they read or heard. Knighton, Canon of Leicester, his violent foe, saw his drift and said: 'Christ intrusted his Gospel to the clergy and doctors of the Church, to minister it to the laity and weaker sort. But this Master Wickliff, by translating it, has made it vulgar, and laid it more open to the laity, and even women who can read, than it used to be to the most learned of the clergy and those of the best understanding; and thus the gospel jewel, the evangelical pearl, is thrown about and trod underfoot of swine.'

Wickliff finished his work in 1380 and died at Lutterworth, his body sleeping there amongst his flock, in the chancel of the parish church. As his Bible aroused the English conscience, the pope felt a chill; he heard unearthly sounds rattle through the empty caverns of his soul, and he mistook Wickliff's bones for his Bible. The moldering skeleton of the sleeping translator polluted the consecrated ground where it slept. The Council of Constance condemned his Bible and his bones to be burnt together. The pope shivered all over, chilled to the marrow, and he needed a fire to thaw him withal. So after the godly preacher had slept quietly for over thirty years, Chicheley, Archbishop of Canterbury, went down in state to Lutterworth to give new life to the venerable rector and to set him preaching again. A great body of solemn clergy went with him to enforce the grim sentence,

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

and somehow managed to keep straight faces while they went through the pious farce of dragging the ghastly Yorkshire frame from the tomb. The little sanctuary stood on a hill, and when they had sated their ghostly ire at the charnel-house they drew the skeleton to the tiny river Swift, consumed it with dry fagots and threw the ashes into the generous stream. Every atom of his dust rested on a softer, purer bosom that day than Chicheley had ever known. Such a treasure had never floated on the laughing brook before, so it divided his holy ashes with the Severn and the sea. Little Lutterworth was too small either for his Bible or his bones, and now they are welcomed by the wide world.

Froude finds a resemblance between some of Wickliff's views and those of the Baptists, and others have claimed him as a Baptist. But it were more accurate to say that many who carried his principles to their legitimate results became Baptists. His foundation principles were:

'That all truth is contained in the Scriptures, and that Christ's law sufficeth by itself to rule Christ's Church; that we must receive nothing but what is in the Scripture; that whatever is added to it or taken from it is blasphemous; that no rite or ceremony ought to be received into the Church but that which is plainly confirmed by God's word; that wise men leave that as impertinent which is not plainly expressed; that we admit no conclusion that is not proved by Scripture testimony; and that whoever holds the contrary opinions is not a Christian, but flatly the devil's champion.'

In his translation he uses the words '*wash*,' '*christen*' and '*baptize*' in regard to the initiatory ordinance. His rendering of Matt. 3:5,6, is, 'Thanne ierusalem wente out to hym and al indee, and al the cuntre aboute iordan: and thei werun waischen of hym in iordan and knowlechiden her synnes.' Again, in verse 11: 'I waisch you in watyr.' Also Mark 1:5: 'and thei weren baptisid of hym in the flum Jordan.' [English Hexapla] He always retains the preposition '*in*' and never '*with*,' '*in* water,' '*in* Jordan,' even when he speaks of Christ's figurative baptism, his overwhelming in grief he gives the same rendering, Mark 10:39: 'Ye schulen be waischun with the bapty, *in* whiche I am baptisid.' The natural force of the word *in* is made doubly emphatic by the use of the word '*wash*,' wash in; allowing that he intended to convey the sense of dip; according to Greenfield, 'It is evident, that to wash the body or person, without specifying any particular part of the body, must necessarily denote *to bathe*, which clearly implies *immersion*, washing being the mere consequence of immersion. This sense of the translator agrees exactly with his common practice and that of his times.

Wickliff's translation was to kindle the truth afresh through all Germany, and to light the way of John Huss and Jerome of Prague through the flames of Constance. The Bohemians came of the Slavonic race, and were originally known as Czechs. They conquered Bohemia in the sixth century, and becoming Christians under the labors of Methodius, a Greek priest, long remained members of the Greek Church. They were brought under papal supremacy in 968, when their ritual was abolished, the Latin imposed upon them, and the cup taken from the laity. Their king was elective, and while bent on preserving their constitutional freedom against the pretensions of Austria, they were restive under the religious restrictions of the pope. HUSS was of this Czech blood, and intensely national in spirit, therefore antipapal, as all Bohemian Catholics were. Insular England, also, had the ear of Bohemia through Anne, the English queen, wife of Richard II, and sister to their own king. She was the personal friend of Wickliff, who was one of her husband's chaplains. Huss made his writings his constant study, and when he not only defended them but demanded their free

Post-Apostolic Times

use amongst the Bohemians, two hundred volumes of them were publicly burnt at Prague. Some Waldensians in 1385 had brought Wickliff's works to Prague, and the Queen of Bohemia had helped Huss to circulate them. Various scandals helped to awake Bohemia; notably amongst them the discovery in an old church at Wilsnak, of three communion wafers impregnated with what seemed to be blood. The priests proclaimed that this was the blood of Christ, and pilgrims came flocking from all the adjacent countries, even as far as Norway, to be healed, before the whole transaction was exposed as a fraud. When Huss and Jerome were burned all Bohemia was aroused, and in 1415, four hundred and fifty-two nobles not only subscribed to their doctrines, but bound themselves to protect the preaching of God's word on their estates. For a long time these Reformers maintained the Bible as the supreme authority in all matters of doctrine and life, but when they came to its interpretation they were hampered by the popish idea of uniformity; for they could not tolerate each other's rights, and so split into two parties. One body rejected all that was not expressly commanded in Scripture, the other accepted all ecclesiastical practices which the Scriptures did not expressly forbid; which is in essence the position of the Baptists and Pedobaptists down to this day. The radicals were called Taborites, from the name of the fortified mount which they held; the conservatives were known as Calixtines, from *calix* (cup) which became their symbol, and the kingdom, was thrown into civil war.

The TABORITES followed ZISKA, a most intrepid leader. He was far in advance of Huss in his doctrines, not only pushing aside the traditions of the Church and leaving every man to interpret the Bible for himself, but, in 1420 his party published fourteen articles, amongst which are these: That the faithful are not to receive the views of the learned, unless they are found in the Bible; that no decree of the Fathers, or ancient rite, or tradition of men is to be retained, but those which are found in the New Testament; that infants ought not to be baptized with exorcisms, and that the use of sponsors should be discontinued. [Blunt's *Dic. of Sects*, Art. Hussites] Some members of this body joined the 'Brethren of the Law of Christ,' or the 'Bohemian Brethren.'

Before speaking of these, a word may not be unacceptable concerning that marked character, Ziska. He was a Bohemian nobleman, and in 1410 lost an eye in the war between the Prussians and Lithuanians. Afterward, he became chamberlain to King Wenceslaus. He was a most daring chief, whether of loyal or insurgent forces. Sigismund laid claim to the Bohemian crown, but Ziska withstood him with desperation. At Kuttenberg, a Catholic city, where his Catholic enemy burned, hanged and beheaded sixteen hundred prisoners of war as heretics, he retaliated terribly upon the monks and priests; and no wonder. He lost his remaining eye by an arrow-shot in a great battle which defeated Sigismund, A.D. 1420. But this made no difference with him as a chieftain. When entirely blind, his hot blood made him the same indomitable victor. He would take his stand on an elevation in the center of the battle-field, with his best officers all around him. Then he borrowed their eyes, as he turned his empty sockets this way and that. His staff reported to him the progress of the fight, and he gave his imperious commands accordingly. Almost without fail, panic seized the Germans, who were utterly routed again and again. At last, the emperor finding that he could do nothing against him, offered him the government of Bohemia, the command of his own armies, and a yearly tribute, if he would acknowledge him as the King of Bohemia. He spurned the tender, and at that point died of the plague. He had been the perfect terror both of the pope and the emperor when he had but one eye, and when he lost the second their torment increased. This dauntless, blind, old Semi-Baptist, must have been of the sturdy type after which the iron-boned Roundhead and the

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

steel-nerved Covenanter and the adamantine Puritan took cast. For, it is said that before he died, he pledged his followers to tan his skin for a drum-head, that the very sound of his hardened hide might strike terror into these brazen foes of God and man. This may be legend, but it is as seriously said that they granted his request; if so, to the honor of his religious posterity, he that hath ears to hear, can catch the sound of that 'drum ecclesiastic' all round the globe in this nineteenth century.

The Bohemian Brethren became numerous, counting about one fourth of the people. Even a century before Huss, King Ottocar II found so many heretics in his realm that he applied to the pope to extirpate them. Peregrinus, A.D. 1310, attempted to convert or destroy them. But John of Drasic released the prisoners from patriotic motives and abolished the inquisitor's court. The Waldensians abounded over the border in Austria, and kept up their union with those of Lombardy. They so developed in Bohemia that they supplied numbers of preachers for Northern Germany, for in the Acts of the Inquisition in Brandenburg and Pomerania, 1391, four hundred Waldensians are mentioned by name. In 1393-94 it brought one thousand Waldensians under its power in Thuringia, Brandenburg, Bolieinia and Moravia. Endless numbers evaded the inquisitors, but in 1397 one hundred of them were burnt in Steyer, Austria; and in the opening of the fifteenth century they had great influence in Bohemia. Peter Chelcicky, named from the village of Chelcic in Southern Bohemia, was the forerunner of the 'Brethren.' He was an original and independent thinker, criticized John Huss freely, and would take sides with neither of the Hussite factions. He first appears in public life in the Bethlehem Chapel, Prague, 1420, in a dispute with Jacobellus, on the wrong of appealing to arms in questions of religion, nor did he believe in war at all, not even in self-defense. He insisted on the new birth, and thought it better to baptize believers only, who could show their faith by their works, but did not absolutely forbid infant baptism; still, he would confine it to the children of believing parents. He says that Christ 'Speaks of faith first, then of baptism. And as we find this doctrine in the Gospel we should keep it now. But the priests err in baptizing the great multitude, and no one is found, neither old nor young, who knows God and believes his Scriptures. Nevertheless, all without discrimination are baptized. But we should hold firmly that baptism belongs to those who know God and believe in his Scriptures.' He complains that the masters at Prague had made baptism as common. 'As a huckster who sits in the market-place and sells plums.' Palacky ranks him next to Huss, as the greatest thinker of Bohemia in the fifteenth century, and says that he was familiar with Waldensian views as early as 1419. Goll believes that he was one of their body when he came to Prague from his home on the Austrian border; as, in his neighborhood great open-air meetings were held, with lay preachers and baptizers. A council held at Bourges, A.D. 1432 complains thus: 'In Dauphine there is a certain district included between the mountains which adheres to the errors of the Bohemians, and has imposed and sent tribute to them.' The Waldensian prisoners before the Inquisition at Freiburg, 1430, acknowledged that some of their apostles came from Bohemia; and Aeneas Silvius, afterward Pius II, wrote, July, 1451, that all sects had migrated to Tabor, the chief being Waldensians. When they organized in the northeast corner of Bohemia, they so feared to take any but Gospel steps that they sent delegates to search for the true Church in any part of the earth, but met their ideal nowhere; then they sent to Vienna, to confer with Stephen for a formal union with the Waldensians, but it failed. The followers of Peter became a separate society, known as the 'BRETHREN OF CHELCIC,' but persecution and division nearly extinguished them in about fifty years, when they revived under Lucas, a new leader, who was sent, with another delegate, to visit Italy. On their way to Rome they passed through Florence, and witnessed the

Post-Apostolic Times

burning of Savonarola, May 23, 1498. These brethren found a welcome amongst the hidden Waldensians at Rome and more openly in Piedmont, but it was especially warm at the latter place, where they had much conference on points of faith and practice. The two parties could not agree in all things, but some of them united in a famous protest against the Romish Church, in which they say: 'Antichrist has, by cunning, taken away from the Lord Jesus the grace and truth of true hope by Christ's merits, and ascribes this truth to saints, clergy, sacraments, words, yes, to hell-fire. Participation in the merit of Christ is gained by faith, poured in by the Holy Spirit. The deception consists in this: Antichrist awakens the faith that, if one is only baptized and receives the sacrament, he has received the sacrament and the truth. Antichrist attributes the reformation effected by the Holy Spirit to dead, external faith, and baptizes infants in that faith, and in the same gives its orders and other sacraments.' What Erasmus said of some of the Hussites, appears to have been true of the 'Brethren: "They admit none until they are dipped in water.' So, Cainerarius tells us that many who united with the Brethren renounced the baptism of infants which they had received in the State Church, and were baptized before they came into the new fellowship.

Herzog shows very fully that at the opening of the Reformation, the Waldensian communities were numerous, not only on the Cottian Alps, but in Naples and Provence, 'besides scattered congregations in Italy, Switzerland, France, and Germany.' He also says: 'At various times they appear to have been numerous at Bern, Strasburg and Passau. In the last-mentioned place they attracted attention by refusing to pay tithes, and by rejecting monasticism, *infant baptism*, exorcism, and the sacrament of confirmation. When the reformatory movement began in Bohemia, they were naturally attracted by it, and their connection with the Bohemian Brethren became a turning-point in their history.' Goll, in his *History of the Bohemian Brethren* (I, p. 73), says that their Tract, 'Reasons for Separation from Rome,' 'rejects infant baptism.' There is scarcely ground for doubt that the Brethren baptized all who came to them from the Romanists, they also rejected infant baptism as such, and in its place substituted this singular process, which they called a 'Baptismal Agreement.' When the child was christened, they exacted a solemn promise of the sponsors to bring him up in the faith. But when the child was grown up, and was able to profess his own faith in Christ, he received a second baptism, entering into the real baptismal covenant; of which, Herzog says: 'Really, as Flaccius protested to Bodenstein, the second act damned the first.' [Do.] They would not allow the baptism of a dying child, but would pray for him instead. 'Doubt as to the value of infant baptism is a specific mark of the Brethren.' [Zeschwitz Katechismen Waldenser, p. 198] Lucas defended the practice of repeating baptism, both in those who came from the Catholics and those amongst themselves who had not received it upon their personal faith, down to 1521; but after his death, under Luther's influence, the second baptism was dropped and confirmation took its place.

About A.D. 1500 the 'Brethren' of all sects in Bohemia were so numerous in city and country, that Pope Alexander VI sent Dominican monks 'to preach amongst them and hold colloquies, to win them back to his fold. But this failing, King Ladislaus II was persuaded, in 1503, to issue bloody edicts banishing their laymen, who refused to recant, and committing their preachers to the flames. This scattered them as the hoof of a beast separates the roots of a bed of camomiles, but it did not crush them. On the contrary, they used the most active measures for their own vindication and defense, especially through the press, and the growing intelligence of Europe listened to their manly story. This persecution continued long, its tortures, imprisonments, and burnings ending only with the king's death, March 13, 1516.

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

Bohemia has well been called the 'Cradle of the Reformation.' It is difficult to ascertain exactly when the Scriptures were first rendered into its native tongue, or by whom they were translated from the Latin vulgate. But portions so translated were in circulation before Huss, and about the time that he began to preach these several parts were collected for the first time; after his martyrdom copies were greatly multiplied. The greater part of a Bohemian Bible was extant at the close of the fourteen century, as it is well-known that Queen Anne of England possessed a Bohemian Bible. Aeneas Sylvius remarked that 'It was a shame to the Italian priests that many of them had never read the New Testament, while scarcely a woman could be found among the Bohemians (or Taborites) who could not answer any questions respecting either the Old or New Testaments.' From A.D. 1410 to 1488, four different recensions of the entire Scriptures can be traced, and many more of the New Testament, some being translated anew. It is an interesting fact, that Guttenberg, the inventor of cut metal types, used them in printing the earliest edition of the Latin Bible (the Mazarine), A.D. 1450-1455 ; and that the Bohemian Bible, published by the Brethren in 1488, was one of the first instances on record, where the newly-invented art of printing was applied to the use of the Bible in a living language. This was fifty years before England enjoyed Wickliff's Bible in print, and four years before the discovery of America by Columbus. The love of freedom and education went hand in hand in Bohemia, and were common to her whole people. Before A.D. 1519, six printing-presses were running, three of which were owned by the Brethren, whose authors issued sixty productions between A.D. 1500-1510, witnesses to their mental activity. They also produced those hymns which have made them immortal. While under fierce persecution, their families were compensated for the loss of sermons, by tracts, books of devotion and inspiring hymns.

This godly literature went on increasing and preparing the world for the Reformation. When Bohemian nationality was lost in the Thirty Years' War (1620), three fourths of her population were Protestant, and the cultivated people of the nation choosing to renounce their country rather than their religion, sought their homes where they could, to the number of seventy thousand men, including artists, clergy, nobility and scholars. Every Bohemian book was burnt on suspicion or brand of heresy, and some individuals boasted that they had burnt sixty thousand copies of this sacred literature. Such precious relics as escaped the flames were shut up in various places, guarded by bolts, chains, iron doors and gates, and labeled 'Hell.'

In all that related to love for the Bible and religious liberty, SAVONAROLA, the confessor of Florence, was in sympathy with the Brethren of Bohemia. He was a Dominican monk, A.D. 1452-1498, earnest, devout, and so versed in the Scriptures that he could almost repeat them from memory. He was a Christian patriot, who vindicated the rights of the Florentine Republic, and a political leader in that cause. He demanded the removal of the pope and the recognition of Christ as King. In person he was small, awkward in his gestures, violent in his manner, and profuse of imagery; hence the vehemence of his preaching against the Medicean court and the pope, whom he regarded as an atheist. Pope Alexander VI, of abominable memory, tried to silence him by the offer to make him a cardinal. This offer he spurned, with the remark that he wished no red hat but one dyed in his own blood, 'the hat given to the saints.' Long practice at public speaking and much study so removed or overcame his natural defects that he became a consummate orator, who swayed the people almost to fanaticism, so that they held regular burnings of elegant but licentious books and works of art. He was excommunicated and finally burnt, with two of his disciples.

The Lollards form an important link in this chain of events. The followers of Wickliff were early

Post-Apostolic Times

known by this name; but some trace their origin to Walter Lollard, who was burnt at Cologne about A.D. 1322. The term was applied at Antwerp to a society formed there in 1300 for ministering to the sick – it is supposed from the Dutch *lullen* – to sing in a low tone, as at funerals, where they soothed by slowly sung dirges. But it soon became a term of reproach, by an ingenious twist, as if it were derived from *lolium* (darnel), tares amongst wheat. Wickliff was regarded as the father of the Lollards, but whether his followers assumed that name, or it was pinned to them, in stigma, is uncertain. During his lifetime Wickliff sent out great numbers of itinerant preachers, who preached in market-places, moors, commons, and wherever they could find hearers. They increased so rapidly that Pope Martin raved against them in the most vulgar manner, and Archbishop Courtenay spent five months in purging Oxford University of their presence. The underlying spirit of Lollardism sought the right of unfettered thought, the free interpretation of the Bible as the rule of faith, and the apostolic simplicity of the ordinances. During the reign of Richard II, the followers of Wickliff sent Twelve Articles to Parliament seeking certain social and politico-religious reforms, for they shared in the political dissatisfaction which swept over the continent in the fourteenth century. It had taken an exciting form in Italy, France and Germany; in England, it concerned ecclesiastical property and the right of the State to confiscate it; the Lollards taking the negative of that question, not believing in the union between the Church and the State.

In seeking a thorough reformation of religion, it was necessarily involved in political struggles, for religion was held at the caprice of political tyranny. The pontiffs made pretensions to all temporal as well as spiritual power, and kings were sworn to obey them in all things. Innocent III coolly instructed John of England what to do in his kingdom, and when he disobeyed, deposed him, expelled him from the Church, put his kingdom under interdict, absolved his subjects from their allegiance and forbade them to obey him. Thus crushed, May 15, 1213, John publicly took his crown from his head and gave it to the pope's legate, who, by his master's command, returned it in five days. The nation wrung its great Bill of Rights, Magna Charta, from John A.D. 1215, but the pope had the impudence to annul all its provisions. His bull reprobated it as a conspiracy against himself, as dangerous to the cross of Christ and destructive to the regal rights of England. He prohibited and annulled it in the name of the Trinity and of the Apostles Peter and Paul, then laid 'the fetters of excommunication' on the barons, placed 'their possessions under the ecclesiastical interdict,' and required the bishops to proclaim his sentence with the ringing of bells and the burning of candles. Things went on from bad to worse, until, when Henry IV was crowned, the pope bound him by oath to obey him as sovereign lord in all things. This insufferable impertinence kept England in a continual broil with Rome, and as true Englishmen the Lollards could brook such outrages no longer. Their resistance made them objects of pontifical hate. Walden and others charged Wickliff with being one of the seven heads from the bottomless pit, and the adherents of Rome generally indulged in the same black tirades; amongst them Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, who denounced them as 'malignants,' 'putrid' and 'rotten,' till he frothed at the mouth.

The result was, that from the accession of Henry IV, 1399, their blood flowed in a stream for nearly two centuries with slight respite, chiefly while York and Lancaster fought the bloody battle of the roses. Fuller touchingly remarks: 'The very storm was their shelter.' Capital punishment for matters of opinion in religion was introduced into the laws of England, 1401, and William Sawtre was the first Lollard martyr under that savage provision.

Fuller says that Henry was more cruel to the Lollards 'than his predecessor,' and Fox states that

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

he was the first English monarch who burnt heretics. But Camden alludes to a case, it is thought the one recorded in the Chronicle of London, of one of the Albigenses who was burnt in 1210; and Collier tells of a deacon who became a Jew, was degraded by a council at Oxford, 1222, and burnt under Henry III. This inhuman torture had long existed on the Continent, and Burnet attributes its late introduction into England to the high temper of the people, who would not submit to such severity. But this consideration is not satisfactory, while the fact stands that Parliament deliberately enacted the law for the burning of heretics, making the nation responsible for their murder, while in other lands the will of the prince was sufficient to burn heretics without statute law. The English sheriffs were forced to take an oath to persecute the Lollards, and the justices must deliver a relapsed heretic to be burned within ten days of his accusation. [II. Henry V, Stat I, C. 7] The fact is, that the pope dictated English law at the shrine, and Archbishop Chicheley says openly, in his Constitution, 1416, that the taking of heretics 'ought to be our principal care.' JOHN BADBY, a Lollard and a poor mechanic, was brought before Archbishop Arundel, March 1, 1409, on the charge of heresy touching 'The Sacrament.' He said that he believed in the omnipotent God in Trinity, but if every wafer used in the sacrament were Christ's veritable body, soul and divinity, there would be 20,000 gods in England. Being condemned to death March 16, he was bound with chains, put into an empty barrel and burnt in Smithfield, in the presence of the Prince of Wales, afterward Henry V, who at the stake offered him a yearly stipend from the treasury if he would recant.

Even where the accused recanted the punishment was barbarous. John Florence, accused of heresy, renounced his views but was sentenced to be whipped for three Sundays before the congregation in the Norwich Cathedral, and for three Sundays more in his own parish church at Shelton, bearing a taper and clothed only in canvas undergarments. The English had become mere serfs to a religious despotism, which brought them to the climax of wickedness that murdered its best subjects for claiming the sacred immunity to worship God as they would. England made certain shades of opinion in the Church 'high treason to the crown,' simply constructive treason at the most; for so-called heresy was made disloyalty under the pretense that the 'King of Glory was contemned under the cover of bread.' In other words, the denial of the 'Real Presence in the sacrament of the altar' was made an overt act against the monarch of the realm. And so, the chief aim of king and Parliament was legally to grill to ashes the most patriotic people of England. The secular method of punishing treason was by hanging or beheading, but Bale says that at the Parliament at Leicester it was enacted (2 Henry V) that the Lollards should be hanged for treason against the king and burnt for heresy against God.

It was in keeping with this double-handed tyranny that LORD COBHAM (Sir John Oldcastle) was put to death. He was a Welshman of great ability and consecration to Christ, who had been imprisoned in the Tower, but had escaped and was recaptured after being hunted for four years with a price upon his head. Bishop Bale says that: 'Upon the day appointed, he was brought out of the Tower with his arms bound behind him, having a very cheerful countenance. Then was he laid upon a hurdle, as though he had been a most heinous traitor to the crown, and so drawn forth into St. Giles's field, where they had set up a new pair of gallows. As he was come to the place of execution, and was taken from the hurdle, he fell down devoutly upon his knees, desiring Almighty God to forgive his enemies. Then was he *hanged* up there by the middle in chains of iron, and so consumed alive in the fire. That is, he was hanged over the fire as a traitor, and then burnt as a heretic, 1418.'

This state of things did not cease down to the time of Henry VIII, when tyranny changed hands

Post-Apostolic Times

only from the pope to the monarch. When the head of Anne Boleyn fell upon the scaffold, no man dared to proclaim her innocent, even on religious grounds, and the king used the power which the law left in his hands to persecute either Catholic or Protestant as he would. Indeed, for three hundred years no great soul arose in England who was able to arrest the despotism of pope and sovereign. Religions freedom or bondage ebbed or flowed through the will of the monarch, and, in that matter, the nation counted for little as against imbecile pope or royal despot.

When a heretic was condemned the church bells tolled, the priest thundered and the sentence of excommunication was pronounced. The priest seized a lighted candle from the altar and cried: 'Just as this candle is deprived of its light, so let him be deprived of his soul in hell.' All the people were obliged to say 'So be it;' then came fine, imprisonment and death. Under Henry VIII it was proposed to consolidate all the penal laws against religion, when he said: 'Leave that to me.' He and his bishops then framed the 'Six Article Act,' which decreed that if a man denied that the bread and wine in the Supper were the very Christ, he should suffer death by burning and forfeit all his possessions to the king, as in high treason. [31, Henry V, iii, C. 14, Sec. 8,9] No mercy was shown under any circumstances.

The views of the Lollards on infant baptism are not so easily stated, as their teachings on the Real Presence and their resistance to Church power. Possibly Dr. Williams states the case as carefully as any one. He says: 'There were also among the Lollards, or early English followers of Wickliff, some who followed out the results of Wickliff's principles, in the study of the vernacular Scriptures to the conclusion that baptism went with faith, and that infants, not capable of exercising the one, should not receive the other.' He also cites the fact which Rastell has preserved in his *Entrees*: 'A Latin writ, sending over to the bishop for judgment according to the canon law, three several groups of Lollards, who all reject infant baptism.' [Lecs. Bap. Hist., p. 126] Walden denounced Wickliff 'for denying infant baptism, that heresy of the Lollards, of whom he was so great a ring leader;' but probably unjustly. Fox also complains that one error of the Lollards was that they denied that children are lost who die before baptism. Wickliff practiced infant baptism, but denied that babes were lost if they died unbaptized. Hence, when some of his followers came to separate their salvation from their baptism, they naturally held it in light esteem, after the order of John Frith. who said: 'Baptism bringeth not grace, but doth testify unto the congregation that he which is baptized had such grace given him before.' The testimony is too nearly unanimous to be contradicted, that many, if not most, of the Lollards did not practice infant baptism, while some did, amongst them Wickliff himself. Knyghton informs us that in a few years after Wickliff's death more than half the people of England became Lollards, and sowed a free harvest for the Baptists, but their sufferings were intolerable.

The most monstrous barbarity attended the martyrdom of William Tylesworth and James Bainham. Tylesworth was burnt at Amersham, 1506, when his only daughter was compelled to take a brand and set fire to the pile which consumed her honored father. Proclamation was made at his burning that whoever brought a fagot or stake to consume him should have forty days' pardon. Crowds of ignorant people brought them, and caused their children to bring them. After his martyrdom that daughter, with twenty-four others bearing fagots on their necks, were taken to Aylesbury and other towns as a show, after which their cheeks were branded with red hot irons.

James Bainham, a barrister of the Middle Temple and the son of a knight, was imprisoned by Sir Thomas More, who tied him to a tree and whipped him with his own hands. He was sent to the

Chapter 11 - The Bohemian Brethren and the Lollards

Tower, loaded with irons, and condemned to death by Bishop Stokesley on charges of heresy. Amongst other things, he said of baptism: 'We belong to God by adoption, not by water only, but by water and faith.' His sufferings overcame his flesh and he recanted. He was then sentenced to walk before a cross to St. Paul's barefoot, to stand before the preacher during the sermon with a fagot on his shoulder and a lighted taper in his hand. After paying a fine of twenty pounds he was released; but on publicly renouncing his recantation with deep sorrow, he was burnt in Smithfield, April 30, 1532, and joined the noble army of martyrs gathered from the ranks of the Lollards.

Post-Apostolic Times

THE ERA OF THE REFORMATION

Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists

A word here may be necessary as to the proper name of this interesting people; were they Baptists or Anabaptists? They are commonly characterized as 'Anabaptists' by friends and foes; yet this name was especially offensive to them, as it charged them with *rebaptizing* those whom they regarded as unbaptized and because it was intended as a stigma. By custom their most friendly historians call them 'Anabaptists,' yet many of their candid opponents speak of them as 'Baptists.' The Petrobrusians complained that Peter of Clugny 'slandered' them by calling them 'Anabaptists,' so did their Swiss and German brethren after them. The London Confession, 1646, protests that the English Baptists were 'commonly though unjustly called Anabaptists.' Knollys resented this name, calling it 'scandalous;' and Haggar, 1653, rebukes Baxter for its use. 'You do very wickedly to call them Anabaptists, thereby to cast odium upon us,...why, I pray you, are you so wicked and malicious as to call them Anabaptists?' Blackwood, 1645, complains of being 'nicknamed Anabaptists. We deny your title; Anabaptism signifies baptism again; our consciences are fully satisfied with one baptism, provided it be such as we judge to be the baptism of Christ; and if our consciences judge that sprinkling we had in our infancy to be none of Christ's baptism, I ask you whether can we, in good conscience, rest satisfied therewith? We are, if we must needs be new named, Antipedobaptists, or Catapedobaptists, but no Anabaptists.' Baptists now refuse to be called 'Anabaptists,' and for the same reasons. Respect for ourselves and our ancestry demands that the offensive title be thrown aside, and it is not used in this work excepting in quotations. Neither we nor our fathers can properly be named Anabaptists, and to use the term is simply to accept a misleading 'nickname' pinned upon us in contempt.

Modern Baptists need the admonition of Keller, who says: 'Whenever, at the present time, the name "Anabaptist" is mentioned, the majority think only of the fanatical sect which, under the leadership of John of Leyden, established the kingdom of the New Jerusalem at Munster...There were "Baptists" long before the Munster rebellion, and in all the centuries that have followed, in spite of the severest persecutions, there have been parties which, as Baptists or "Mennonites," have secured a permanent position in many lands. The extent of the Baptist movement in the first period of its growth, is at present very considerably undervalued in cultivated circles.' He calls the Munster doings a 'caricature' of Baptist ideas, and adds: 'With the majority at the present time, those views are the ruling ones which three hundred years ago were vanquished after a severe conflict...A more correct understanding of the movements, which, at the beginning of the "Reformation were thus in collision, would be of the greatest value for an understanding of much of the development of today ; and, any way, it is unjust that the nation (Germany) should fail to recognize some of its most gifted men simply because they are known as Anabaptists. In the last decades, out of the ruins and rubbish left behind in the desolation wrought by the religious war, already many an old work of art of that day has again been brought to light.' [Preussische Jahrbucher, Sep. 1882]

Let us at least respect our ancestry enough to join the latest and best continental writers in calling them Baptists.

Baptist Switzerland did not lie in the forest cantons, in the narrow valleys sheltered by pinnacles which rend the clouds and are crowned with eternal snow. It ran farther north through the belt of free cities on the Upper Rhineland, on both sides of the river and the frontier. On the Swiss side it

The Era of the Reformation

included Berne, Basel, Zurich, St. Gall and Schaffhausen; and on the German side Strasburg, Ulin, Augsburg, with other great centers of wealth and high culture. This republic of letters contained the best schools and universities in the Republican Confederation. Democratic ideas took root amongst patriots who had won their independence over the body of Charles the Bold at the gate of Nantz. They first prized the political principles on which their republics bravely stood, but found religious bondage incompatible with free States. When neither bishop nor king linked them to Church life politically, they concluded logically enough that religion was no longer a governmental science. In mediaeval and aristocratic Saxony and other monarchies the Church and State formed one body, and religious life was honey-combed by a legal membership in the Church of newborn babes. Many asked, therefore, why republicanism could not properly let the commonwealth of Israel alone? Hence, when republics claimed the right to bind the consciences of their citizens and counted all criminals who resisted their mandates, a dark shadow fell athwart the republican escutcheon, for that class. As Baptists, they discovered that the conscience of each man being free Godward, nations who had conquered the right to take care of themselves could never be cramped back into an enforced religious uniformity.

The great Baptist movement on the Continent originated with no particular man nor in any one place. It seems to have sprung up in many places at about the same time, and its general growth was wonderful, between 1520 and 1570 – half a century. Keller says: 'A contemporary, who was not a Baptist, has this testimony concerning the beginning of the movement: "The Anabaptist movement was so rapid, that the presence of Baptist views was speedily discoverable in all parts of the land."' He mentions Switzerland, Moravia, the South and North German States and Holland, with many principalities, and writes: 'The more I examine the documents of that time, at my command (as archivist of Munster), the more I am astonished at the extent of the diffusion of Anabaptist views, an extent of which no other investigator has had any knowledge.' He speaks of their churches in Cologne, Aachen, Wesel and Essen, in East Friesland, the duchies of Bentheim, Linden, Oldenburg, Lippe and the city of Minden. [Pref. to *Hist. Anabaptists*] He cites Frederic of Saxony, the Duke of LIMEBURG and the Reformer Ehegius, to show that from 1530 to 1568, Saxony and the Lutheran cities were filled with Baptists, also the Westphalian cities, Soest, Lippstadt, Leingo, Unna, Blomberg. Osnabruck and others. He says: 'The number of Baptists was especially great both in Thuringia and in Hesse, as well as in the "Evangelical cities," Bremen, Hamburg; Lubeck, Brnnswick, Hanover, etc.:' and that 'the coast cities of the North Sea and East Sea, from Flanders to Danzig, were filled with Anabaptist views.' Then he finds them everywhere, from the duchy of Cleve on the Lower Rhine, up that river to the Alps. The sixteenth century opened with a general awakening throughout Europe to the need of religious reform, and this was specially marked in Switzerland, before Luther. In ideal, the Swiss reformers longed to get back to the Apostolic pattern, to a spiritual Church free from the control of human policy, and their aims took a Baptist bearing. It is sheer ignorance to represent the Swiss Baptists as merely urging reform in a defective baptism. This is a monstrous bugbear to frighten superstitious folk, who count the refusal of a spurious baptism to what they call 'covenanted babes,' as an affront to Christ, and all one with 'soul-killing.' They held infant baptism in discredit, not only as a human institution, but as a flagrant impiety palming itself off as an institution of God, and asking the State to enforce it on pain of death, while the Church claimed to administer it by the authority of the Trinity! This double claim rendered it an abominable thing which stepped in between them and their children, robbing both of their natural

Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists

rights. Looking upon it in this light, it became an alarming perversion of the whole genius of a spiritual religion, and a piece of wild fanaticism which forestalled all right of choice in either parent or child, in order to smuggle the babe into the State-Church. To force its baptism under the magisterial domination of pains and penalties was to bind the infant to a clerical despotism, which, if repeated in England or the United States today, would shiver their governments to atoms. The scenic caricatures of these Swiss Baptists have been a simple mendacity answering the end of an historical trick to nullify real facts and render honest men hateful. '

When ZWINGLI took lead in the Swiss Reformation, he demanded obedience to the word of God in all Christian matters, and resolved to reject what it did not enjoin. When debating with Dr. Faber, before six hundred Catholic dignitaries at Zurich, 1523, he laid down this foundation principle. Faber demanded who should judge between them on the matters in dispute, and Zwingli pointed to the Hebrew, Greek and Latin Scriptures, which lay before him. Instead, the doctor proposed that the issue should be decided by the universities of Paris, Cologne and Freiburg. Zwingli replied that the men in that room could tell better what the Scriptures taught than all the universities. 'Show me,' he demanded, 'the place in the Scripture where it is written that we are to invoke the saints.' When Faber defended that doctrine by the Councils, Zwingli showed that as these erred, nothing was binding but the Bible, and said that he would go to the universities if they accepted the Bible as the only judge. Dr. Blanche said: 'You understand the Scriptures in one way, and another in another. There must be judges in order to decide who has given the right interpretation.' But Zwingli refused to give any man a place above the Scriptures. Many of his hearers had strong Baptist tendencies and took in this radical doctrine. Educated by so skillful a general, they turned his own weapons upon him when they took issue with him on other subjects; and he was powerless, being obliged to appeal to the sword drawn from the Catholic armory. He was the most advanced of all the reformers biblically, but the moment that he fell into controversy with his own Baptist disciples, he broke with his fundamental principle and made the magistrates of Zurich the decisive judges in the dispute.

The Baptists said: On all such questions the Bible is autocratic; apply it honestly, under the divine right of private judgment, without trammel, and we will follow it; but we refuse to take the interpretations of it which the magistrates give us, for God has not made them our interpreters in such matters. This compelled Zwingli to fall back squarely on the Romish ground, and in turn to compel them to follow the Council. Then came the first break between him and them, on infant baptism. At that moment he was so nearly with them on that subject, that he was willing to delay the baptism of infants 'until they arrived at years of discretion.' He said in 1525: 'The error that it would be better to baptize children when they had come to years of understanding, seized me too a few years ago;' giving as his reason that 'There is no clear utterance in the New Testament that commands the baptism of children.' Keller attests that, 'Luther at the outset designated Zwingli and his followers as the party associates of these who held views in reference to infant baptism, that were different from his own.' [Preussische Jahrbucher, 1882] 'We can easily see,' says Hase, 'why the Baptists were not satisfied with the excuses of the Swiss reformers;' and as easily we can see why Zwingli complained: 'The Papists call us heretics, and the Anabaptists call us half-papists.' Sometimes he encouraged the practice, sometimes not, always denying the regenerating efficacy of baptism; but finally he concluded to continue infant baptism on the ground that if it ceased the people would clamor for circumcision, as they must have a bond of visible union. OEcolampadius

The Era of the Reformation

had said: 'We have never dared to teach infant baptism as a command, but rather as an instinct of charity.' [To Zwingli, 1527, St. w Ka., 1883, p. 173] Like him, Zwingli feared a division in the Reformed ranks and resorted to these expedients to prevent this, until Pedobaptist pressure forced him to turn over the question to the civil power. As Dr. Dörner says: 'He saw that the setting aside of infant baptism was the same as setting aside the national Church, exchanging a hitherto national reformation of the Church for one more or less Donatist. For, if infant baptism were given up, because faith was not yet, there only remained as the right tune for it the moment when living faith and regeneration were certain. And then baptism would become the sign of fellowship of the regenerate, the saints, who bind themselves together as atoms out of the world.' [*Hist. of Prot. Theology*, S. 294]

The Baptists of Zurich began to assail infant baptism in 1523, one of their pastors calling it a useless thing. 'One might as well baptize a cow or a calf,' he said. Then Grebel writes: 'Those who understand the teaching of the Scriptures in reference to baptism refuse to allow their children to be baptized.' Reublin rejected the practice and held a public discussion with the pastors of Zurich, the only result of which was, that the Council arrested two men of his congregation and three from the village of Zollikon near by for refusing to bring their children for baptism, fining them each one silver mark and thrusting them into prison. [Egli Zurich Baptists, p. 18] When the Council demanded why they refused, they answered that Christ required them to believe before they could be baptized; and they stood there firmly. [Studien und K., 1882, pp. 216,217,225,245,283] Zwingli had published a tract on the subject which fanned the excitement, and the Council had appointed a public discussion. Grebel asked that the debate be in writing, with the Bible as the only source of appeal, and Zwingli agreed to this, but the Council refused. Yet when they met in the Council Hall, January 11, 1525, and his disputants held him to this Bible restraint, he ungenerously charged them with dictating that he should preach nothing but what suited them; and he became so excited as to draw forth the counter-charge of violently stopping their mouths by interruption, screaming and long address. [Egli, p. 21] Zwingli presented the current Pedobaptist arguments of his time, and the brave Council, as in duty bound, sagely declared him the victor. With equal gravity they decreed the next day that all should have their children baptized within a week or be banished, and that a christening font at Zollikon, which had been demolished, should be repaired. These forceful arguments were repeated almost daily, and on January 21 the Council came to New Testament example, after the Jewish order, and straitly charged the Baptists to keep silent on this subject; which was about as hard a thing as they could ever do. Of course this made Zwingli's triumph good, and the Baptist preachers were ordered out of the country within a week, as a punishment for allowing him to become victorious and for the sin of rendering themselves harmless.

All left but Castelberger, who was ill and allowed to remain for a month, but they charged that he must not hold any meetings, and so put Zwingli to the needless trouble of vanquishing him over again. The Baptist babes, however, were not brought to baptism, and on February 1 the Council ordered the disobedient arrested and each child baptized as soon as it was born. Mantz and Blaurock, with twenty-four parents of Zollikon, were brought to trial within a week. After sentence to pay the cost of their imprisonment and a fine of 1,000 gulden, all were released except two. Mantz claimed the right to baptize all who came to him, but was threatened with the Tower if he repeated the crime, and Blaurock was to swear allegiance to the authorities in this matter. The fair conclusion is that they both flouted the magistrates; for soon after, at a great Baptist meeting at Zollikon, Blaurock

Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists

spent the whole day in preaching and baptizing. When this sad news reached Zurich the Council fined those who had been baptized, and threatened with banishment all who should be thereafter. Some few recanted, but most of them refused to submit. Zwingli was not dictator in Zurich, but he cannot be relieved of responsibility in this matter. The Council, consisting of two hundred, had entire ecclesiastical power over the city and canton. He appealed to it again and again for religious decisions, and approved its doings; in fact he was its guide. Yet it organized itself into a Protestant Inquisition, robbed Christ's disciples of their freedom, tortured them, confiscated their property and put them to death, and he approved its acts. He believed that the officers of State were responsible for the religion of the people and helped them to make Swiss Protestantism as intolerant as Romanism. Hess puts this point clearly: 'Zwingli said public order demanded the severity he exercised, but his decrees were in the face of the proclamation which the Reformers had made of religious liberty.' His theory was exactly that of the Catholics, and he invoked the edge of the sword as effectually as the pope. His dream was power, and under the pretext of removing what he called a canker of heresy, he wielded physical violence." In his sixty- seven theses against Rome he said: 'No compulsion should be employed in the case of such as do not acknowledge their error, unless by their seditious conduct they disturb the peace of others.' But these Zurich Baptists were never in sedition. They simply worshiped Christ in their own houses or in the forests and gorges, and the nearest they came to sedition was to insist that the magistrates had no right from God to persecute them for doing so.

All sorts of lame and flimsy pleas have been created to cover these barbarities, but their blood stains 'will not out.' These Protestant Inquisitors well knew that when their own religious opinions subjected them to civil tribunals, they resented such interference. Their enthusiasm had only been fired and their convictions deepened by whippings, rackings and burnings. Yet they tried the same severity upon the Baptists which the Catholics had tried on them. And that, too, under the plea that while it was wicked for Catholics to torture them, it was but an act of saving love for Protestants to drown Baptists in murderous waters. Zealous republicans themselves, they comfortably forgot that their Baptist fellow-countrymen had a touch of William Tell and liberty about them; and so they proved their own love of freedom by treating their fellow-patriots as harshly as possible. The common hypocritical apology, that a charitable veil must be drawn over such murderous proceedings because of the darkness of the age in which they lived, is little better than a crime. They had the most thorough knowledge of the art of gentleness toward themselves, dark as was the age, and the gentleness of these whom they legally murdered stood in incarnate rebuke before them ; hence it was but one step to the Golden Rule of Jesus, had they not been better pleased to use the iron rod. Common justice pushes this mendacious pretense aside, and finds a true verdict against them as narrow, fanatical and wicked. True, the brutal laws of Frederick II were still in force, but they professed to be loving disciples of God's Lamb and not Thugs under the emperor; and no law of his could compel them to slaughter their fellow-disciples for Jesus' sake. We may hoodwink ourselves as we please, and gloss over their acts as we may, but this Reformed Inquisition has painted its own portrait black and it cannot be bleached white. Its Draconian holiness throws all honest forbearance into spasms. It is worthy of the Pharisaic and Sadducean Sanhedrin, but is a disgrace to the light and sweetness of the Son of Man, whom they slew.

In truth, Zwingli had his hands full. His opponents had as clear heads and stout hearts as himself, their education was as broad, and they stood serenely fortified by the word of God. When Hubmeyer

The Era of the Reformation

raised the issue of infant baptism with him, 1523, he wavered, as we have seen; and afterward when his Baptist friend reminded him of this in his published work on baptism, and pressed-him for scriptural authority, he replied:

'The New Testament does not command the baptism of infants, neither does it forbid it; therefore we must look to the Old Testament for an analogy which will clear up the matter.' Dr. Rule, no lenient apologist of Baptists, says: 'The Council of Zurich had been called on by Zwingli to decide what the citizens should receive as true doctrine, and at once gave evidence of their incompetence by expelling a devoted Christian, who, being an unprotected outcast, was made the first martyr of the Reformation in these cantons.' As far as appears, he approved all the cruelties of that tyrannical body without a word of remonstrance, although he brought every trivial subject to their notice – throwing the blame upon the Baptists themselves after the usual shift, 'they deserved what they got.' Playing fast and loose with the New Testament himself, and baptizing children in obedience to the 'silence' of the New Testament, still he demanded of the Baptists a positive injunction of Christ for baptizing on a confession of him those who had been christened as babes. So he could stand coolly by and see the Baptists drowned, but surely not because the New Testament was silent on the subject of drowning Baptists. If its silence gave consent to the baptism of infants, certainly it did not render the legal murder of Baptists holy. Well might he admit that 'nothing cost him so much sweat as his controversy with the Baptists.'

Who were these Swiss Baptists, whom the "Reformed Inquisition handled so savagely? One of them was CONRAD GREBEL, who early in the Reformation was Zwingli's most admired and admiring friend. Born about 1500, his father was a noted member of the Zurich Council. He educated Conrad in the universities of Vienna and Paris. Like Augustine, his son was proud, moved in high society and led a godless life when young. In 1521, Basel invited him to high literary work, and on returning to his native city Zwingli became his pastor, discovered his great intellectual power and became closely identified with him. In a letter to Myconius, August 26, 1522, he says of Grebel: 'He is a most candid and learned youth.' But the next year they began to draw apart on the true character of a Gospel Church and broke completely. He told Zwingli: 'The Scriptures teach that all children, who have not arrived at the knowledge of good and evil, are saved by the sufferings of Christ.' He held infant baptism to be a sin, by attributing to itself what only belonged to the cross of Christ. Again he said: That by faith in the blood of Christ, only can sin be washed away, 'So that the water does not confirm and increase the faith, as the Wittenberg theologians say, nor does it save...Let us form a community of true believers, for it is to them alone that the promise belongs, and let us establish a Church without sin;' clearly meaning not an immaculate body, but a congregation of regenerate men, rejecting the practice which made all in the State members of the Church by infant baptism. This Zwingli did not want, but wanted a State- Church, and objected, that it was not possible 'to make a heaven upon earth, for Christ taught us to let the tares grow with the wheat till the harvest, when the angels would separate them.' Grebel cared less about keeping the angels busy than he did for obedience to Christ, but failed to bring Zwingli to his views. He had no political controversy with his countrymen, excepting on the question of religious liberty, but devoted himself to missionary work in the villages on Lake Zurich. The peasants there were in revolt and the Pedobaptist pastors rose with them, but he kept aloof, preaching only the Gospel. The great Baptist Church at Hinwyl was established by him, with many others.

FELIX MANTZ was a noble Swiss Baptist leader, a native of Zurich. His father was a canon of the cathedral and gave him a liberal education. He was a thorough Hebrew scholar, was the firm friend of Zwingli, and had been with him from the first. He began to question the scriptural character

Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists

of a State-Church and infant baptism in 1522. In a scholarly manner he endeavored to draw Zwingli to this Gospel ground, but he broke at once with Mantz, who began to preach in the fields, forests and his mother's house, translating his text from the Hebrew, and expounding his translations. For this 'and the rebaptism of adults' he was arrested at Chur and driven from the city, but returned under the threat of the authorities to take his life. As he was from Zurich, he was shortly after sent there for punishment, and lay in prison for a long time. There he went through all sorts of disputations and sufferings, for he lived on bread and water. His release was offered if he would stop baptizing, and finally he escaped with twenty others, hoping, as one expressed it, 'That they could safely reach the Bed Jews across the ocean,' – the American Indians, then recently discovered, expecting more humanity from them than from the holy Swiss evangelicals. Mantz argued with Zwingli on baptism and asked him to write a book on the subject, which he did with great severity, but Mantz was not allowed to publish an answer.

At last the Reformed Inquisition accused him of obstinately refusing 'to recede from his error and caprice,' for they said that he would 'Seek out those who wished to accept Christ and follow his word, and unite with them by baptism, but let the rest alone in their own unbelief,' and many other things in the same line. They then chose Jan. 5, 1527, as the black day for his judicial murder. His sentence gave him over to the executioner, who put him into a boat, bound his hands over his knees, put a block between his arms and legs, threw him into the water to drown, and then his property fell to the government. He denied before them that he opposed civil government, spoke of the love of Christ very sweetly and left one of the most pathetic letters, exhorting his brethren to a Christ-like spirit. He was led on the day of his slaughter from the Wellenburg, the heretics' tower, through the fish-market and shambles to a boat, preaching to the people as he went. A Reformed pastor at his side sought to silence him, but his faithful brother and his old mother brushed away their tears and exhorted him to suffer firmly for Jesus' sake. The executioner put the black cap on his head, bound him to a hurdle and threw him into Lake Zurich, as he cried, with Jesus, 'Into thy hands I commend my spirit!'

The effect of his execution was electric, and Baptists sprang up all over the land. Capito wrote from Strasburg to Zwingli, Jan. 27, saying: 'It is reported here that your Felix Mantz has suffered punishment and died gloriously, on which account the cause of truth and piety, which you sustain, *is greatly depressed.*' He wrote again within a week to learn whether he died for 'violated public faith,' or on account of 'obstinacy' in religion, 'and with what firmness he came to the end of life.' The crime of the Council haunted its members, after the manner of the Baptist and Herod, and they wrote in self-defense to Augsburg that they slew him 'as a warning to others.' Bullinger accounts for Mantz's fortitude thus: 'Malefactors are often stiff-necked when they are executed.' This poor 'malefactor' demonstrated his stiff-neckedness just before his death, in these words: 'The Gospel teaches divine love, leads us away from hatred and envy to love. According to the nature of his heavenly Father, Christ showed his love to all men. Love to God through Christ alone can stand. Like our heavenly Father, we should be merciful to all. Christ forces not one to his glory, but chooses the willing and prepared by faith and baptism.' And this was one of those frightful Baptist fanatics, whose very name sends a chill through some Christian veins.

GEORGE JACOB BLAUROCK was another Swiss Baptist worthy. He was a monk who abandoned the monastery of Church for the Gospel, a very simple-hearted man, who became an intrepid and eloquent disciple of Christ. When he reached Zurich he went at once to Zwingli to be

The Era of the Reformation

instructed in the way of salvation, with but little satisfaction. He then sought the Baptists, and in great agony of soul obtained remission of sins from God while amongst them. At once he saw that his infant baptism was not of Christ, and begged to be baptized on a confession of his own faith in his Saviour. Falling on his knees, Grebel poured water on his head. Zwingli charged him with schism in becoming a Baptist. He replied that he had the same right to separate from Zwingli that Zwingli had to leave the pope. Then he held debates with the reformer, once in the cathedral, and Bullinger's account of them shows that he was a full match for Zwingli. As he must be answered, the old farce was repeated of chains, imprisonment, and finally death by drowning. On the day of Mantz's murder, the hands of Blaurock were bound, his body stripped to the waist; and he was led through the streets, where, by order of the Reformed Inquisition, he was beaten till his flesh quivered and his blood flowed in his tracks. On reaching the gates of the city an oath was demanded of him, that if he was permitted to go free he would not return. This he refused for a time and was sent back to prison, but afterward he took it and left the city forever. Then Zwingli was mean enough to reproach the Baptists for not excluding him from their fellowship for having taken an oath which, he said, was contrary to their principles. He was pursued from place to place until, according to Cornelius, he was burnt at the stake at Claussen, in the Tyrol, A.D. 1529, but not before he had moved the greater part of Northern Switzerland by his hallowed eloquence.

BALTHAZAR HUBMEYER was the noblest of the Swiss Baptists. He was born at Friedburg, Bavaria, A.D. 1480, and studied philosophy and theology under Eck, the great antagonist of Luther, graduating 1503. In 1512 he became preacher and professor of theology at Ingolstadt, but was cathedral preacher at Ratisbon in 1519. He embraced Luther's views in 1522, and leaving his preferments in the Catholic Church he settled at Waldshut, being in full communication with Zwingli. His power and eloquence moved that city; he assisted Zwingli in the great debate at Zurich with the Catholics, 1523, after which they became the closest and warmest friends. His powerful ministry almost destroyed Romanism in Waldshut, and Austria compelled him to seek refuge elsewhere. This he found in Schaffhausen, but soon discovered that the Reformation in Zurich had not gone back to the Apostolic model. He had laid his best thoughts before Zwingli and OEccolampadius, who at first saw their consistency, then rejected them. However, he followed his convictions, left the State-Church and was baptized by Reublin, at Waldshut in 1525, with more than a hundred of his former congregation. He felt his way to Baptist principles very gradually and on thorough conviction. At first when children were brought to him as a Reformed pastor for baptism, he preached on the little ones being brought to Christ and blessed by him without the use of water (Matt. 19); but if their parents still demanded christening, he gratified them without yielding his own views. After forming a Baptist church, he baptized more than three hundred of his former hearers, and the population became largely Baptist. He preached in the open air to great multitudes at St. Gall also, and made a deep impression on the popular mind in the second disputation at Zurich. Being obliged to leave Waldshut the second time, he now found refuge amongst the Baptists of Zurich.

There he was soon arrested and cast into prison, where he lay four months, appealing to his old friend, to the emperor, to the Confederation and the Council, but in vain. His health was broken, his wife was in prison, and he lay in a dungeon with more than twenty others: 'Where no light of sun or moon penetrated, where bread and water were the only nourishment, and these could not be taken for days together, on account of the sickening odors of the place; where the living were shut up with the dead, with no hope of escape but in death or recantation.' The Zurich Inquisition used all

Chapter 1 - The Swiss Baptists

methods to compel him to recant, for he had written several powerful books which were stirring the public mind ; amongst them one 'Concerning Heretics and those that burn them.' He showed that all butchery under the pretense of zeal for Christ was a fraud, and an open denial of him who came to save men and not to burn them. Another work of his on Baptism so aroused the Reformers of Berne, Basel and Strasburg, that Zwingli was forced to reply. Haller said: 'Many have been misled by Hubmeyer's book, but do not be alarmed too much, *the Council has banished every Anabaptist.*' Zwingli's reply was so bitter and vindictive, that Hosek says: 'He gave reins to his passions;' and Stern writes of Hubmeyer's production, that he 'Showed moderation, respect for his opponents, and force, not in coarse or violent language, but in thought.' Many of his positions were fresh and very forceful. In answer to the evasive and shallow pretensions of Zwingli, that the silence of the New Testament permitted infant baptism, he said that the spirit of our Lord's command to baptize the believing forbade its use to babes, thus: 'The command is to baptize those who believe. To baptize those who do not believe, therefore, is forbidden. For example, Christ commanded his Apostles to preach the Gospel; in so doing, the doctrines of men were forbidden.' Was he correct?

Zwingli, Jud, Myconius and others visited him in prison, and by one means or another wrung from him a recantation. Faber says that he was laid on the rack, and Cunitz, that he was compelled to recant, April 6, 1526. His own words imply the same. His appeal to the Council of Schaffhausen says:

'I pray you, for God's sake, and in view of the last judgment, do not press and force me or any other Christian teacher, but hear me, summon my calumniators to appear against me, have no respect for persons, great or small, but judge righteously, for judgment is the Lord's and the judges are his servants. But should this, my earnest and heart-felt request, not be heeded, though even the Turks would not refuse it, and I should be compelled by prison, torture, sword, fire or water, or permitted by the withdrawal of God's grace, to say or confess any thing different from the opinion by the enlightenment of God I now cherish; then I do hereby protest that nobody may be offended at my deed, whatever God may bring to pass, and testify before God, my heavenly Father, and before all men, that I will suffer and die as a Christian. May God lend me a brave, unflinching, princely spirit, that I may abide on his Holy Word, and in a real Christian faith commend my spirit into his hands.'

He also tells us that he offered to discuss these and other issues with Zwingli in public, and if convicted of error they might put him to death; but if Zwingli were shown to be wrong, all that he asked of him was to preach the truth. This Evangelical Inquisition, however, thought the rack their most conclusive answer to his holy convictions, and in a moment of weakness the great confessor fell into the relapse which met the noble Berengarius before him, and the learned Cranmer after him. And in the wail of a wounded and humiliated soul he exclaims: 'They compelled, or sought to compel, me, a sick man, just risen from a bed of death; hunted, exiled, and having lost all that I had, to teach another faith.' A great triumph, truly, for Christian men of their standing and pretensions! The people were summoned to the great cathedral, which was crowded, to hear his recantation and the death-knell of the Baptists. Zwingli preached a great sermon on 'Christian steadfastness,' save the mark, and loud and long he declaimed against these heretics; then Hubmeyer was to mount the pulpit and renounce his firm faith, to the delectable edification of the Holy Inquisition of Zurich. Egli says that Zwingli warned the magistrates not to trust Hubmeyer to speak in the cathedral. He had a lively memory of what many weeks of labor had failed to do in shaking his faith, till the rack summed up the whole Gospel case. As the inquisitors could not forego the show, all eyes now turned

The Era of the Reformation

eagerly to the broken frame of the meek Baptist as he climbed the pulpit. He began to read his recantation in a broken, weak and quivering voice, until his heart choked his utterance and he broke down. He swayed to and fro before his audience like a bruised reed shaken by the wind; when suddenly the unseen hand of God was put forth to bind him up, and raising himself to his full height, he filled the sanctuary with the shout, that 'Infant baptism is not of God, and men must be baptized by faith in Christ!' The crowd surged like waves and burst into tumult. Some were seized with horror and some shouted applause, till the roof of the Minster rang. Zwingli screamed above the rest, the inquisitors were in a Pedobaptist panic, and the scene closed by dragging Hubmeyer from the pulpit, hustling him through the multitude, and thrusting him back into his dungeon. Once more in his cell, he rewrote his faith in Christ, which writing he closed in these words:

'O, immortal God, this is my faith. I confess it with heart and mouth, and have testified it publicly before the Church in baptism. I faithfully pray thee graciously keep me in it until my end, and should I be forced from it out of mortal fear and timidity, by tyranny, torture, sword, fire or water, I now appeal to thee. O, my compassionate Father, raise me up again by the grace of thy Holy Spirit, and suffer me not to depart without this faith. This, I pray thee from the bottom of my heart, through Jesus Christ, thy most beloved Son, our Lord and Saviour. Father, in thee do I put my Trust, let me never be ashamed.'

After much more suffering he was permitted to leave the canton quietly, whence he made his way first to Constance and then to Moravia, where we shall meet with him again in his new home.

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

It was customary for the ancient Baptists to use private declarations of their principles drawn up by some member of their communion, as they had no official ruling body to issue such statements. Persecution obliged their private use, because documentary evidence of heresy was greatly desired by their enemies, in proof of treason to the State religion. Such a Confession, the first now known, existed in the form of 'Seven Articles,' drawn in the year 1527. On July 31st Zwingli issued his *Elenchus Contra Catabaptistas*, in which he says that he had two copies of this Confession. He also says that scarcely one of the Baptists was without a concealed copy and upbraids them with failure to give their Articles to the world. He professes to give a copy of them, translated into Latin, *ad verbum*, and publishes it for the purpose of sustaining his charges that they were 'fanatical, stolid, audacious and impious.' Virtually he charged the Baptists with failing to stand up to their Confession like men, pitting their manhood against their patriotism and the fear of death. They must have felt this accusation keenly, as they were ready to die for their principles. SCHLEITHEIM was a little village near the foot of the lofty hill Am Randen, seven miles northwest of Schaffhausen, at the eastern termination of the Jura range. From this quiet retreat, away from their foes, these venerable Baptists promulgated their Confession of Faith in the form of a circular letter addressed without limit to the congregation of their brethren, thus: 'Letter of the Brotherly Union of certain believing, baptized children of God, who have assembled at Schleithem Am Randen, dated on Matthias' day (February 24th), 1527. To the congregations of believing, baptized Christians.'

This Confession is given in full in the Appendix, in a translation from a German copy now in the archives of the Canton of Schaffhausen, made from the original document for Dr. Osgood. It was probably first printed by Beck. [Bgeck's *Die Geschichtsbucher der Wiedertaufer*, pp. 41,899] Of course, it is not accompanied by any statement as to who formed the assembly. Its value and bearing are determined not only by internal evidence, but it accords exactly with the copy of Zwingli, with such differences only as arise from his Latinized form. The number and order of its articles, with their subject-matter, expression and diction, are identical, allowing for his Latin transposition. Signature to it would only have courted death with Mantz, who had been drowned by order of the Council for the same sentiments, on the 5th of January of the same year. It is a clear and powerful document, evidently the work of one master-mind, as is shown not only by its unity but from the accidental retention of the personal pronoun 'me' (*mich*) in the Prologue. Its author is believed to have been Michael Battler, an ex-monk, highly educated, quiet and amiable, who suffered martyrdom May 21st, 1527, at Rothenburg on the Neckar. Its substance and Christ-like spirit render it 'shocking,' as the 'Britannica' expresses it, that its adherents should have been treated with death." [Ency. Britannica, Art. Baptists] We shall find this Confession a perfect defense against the slanders of the sixteenth century Baptists, and an interpreter of their principles and conduct throughout.

A long list of Swiss Baptist worthies must be passed in silence for want of space, as Hottinger, Stumpf, Reublin, Castelberg, Ockenfuss and others; but something must be said here of the life and labors of LUDWIG HETZER. where he was born and educated is not certainly known, but he was a thorough scholar and distinguished himself at Zurich as an adept in the learned languages, he acted as scribe and editor of the second discussion there, the debate relating to the use of images; on which subject he wrote a popular tract, in which he challenged the Catholics to show that images are good for any thing but fuel. He adopted as his motto, 'God redeem the captives.' He translated Bugenhagen's Commentary on Paul's Epistles, in the preface of which he laments the timid

The Era of the Reformation

interpretations of the Reformers and their half-hearted work. In Zurich he associated with the Baptists and was obliged to leave with their leaders, January 21st, 1525. He made his way to Augsburg and fell in there with the same class of brethren, but does not appear to have united with them. In September of the same year Ecolampadius employed him in literary work at Basle. That great author had prepared a work on the Lord's Supper, which Hetzer translated into the German and put to press in Zurich. In his preface to this work he objected to infant baptism, because salvation was attached to the water, also because unbaptized children were believed to be lost and were buried in unconsecrated ground. [Winter's *Bavarian Anabaptists*, p. 58]

Again being compelled to leave Zurich he went to Strasburg and became fully identified with the Baptists there. He remained with Denk, sometime at Strasburg and then at Worms, engaged in translating the Old Testament. Once more he was banished and made his way to Hishofszell and Constance, but was thrown into prison for four months at the latter place. One day a charge was framed against him and the next day he was beheaded February, A.D. 1529. The records of Constance charge him with having two wives. There was no witness before the court, and it has been said that he confessed this immorality on his trial. He had married the widow of Regel, a high citizen of Augsburg, who loved Hetzer, and to whom Hetzer had dedicated a book on the conversion of the Jews. At Constance the falsehood was given out that he had married his wife's maid, but at Augsburg, where Hetzer was better known than most public men, this allegation was not made. Nor do Zwingli or Ecolampadius, who knew him a thousand times better than the fanatical court at Constance, hint at such a thing. Strasburg, Augsburg and Zurich had taken pains to banish this accomplished scholar, some of them twice, and yet no man in Germany or Switzerland knew of his two wives except his murderers at Constance, and this only came to their knowledge on the day before his murder, and on his own testimony at that, as they say Alas, master! Happily does Keller resent this charge against Hetzer, as 'an unproved and unprovable statement.' [Keller, p. 454] How would a self-convicted polygamist conduct himself before magistrates to whom he had confessed his crime? And how did Hetzer behave? John Zwick, with Ambrose and Thomas Blaurer, say that they were eye-witnesses. Thomas Blaurer says that when Hetzer was sentenced to death he was filled with joy, and a throng of clergymen, councilmen and citizens of all ranks visited him all day long. Zwick and Metzler were Reformed pastors of Constance, and Zwick says that he 'conducted himself with great propriety, God be praised in his behalf.' His friends spent the night with him in singing and prayer; he rejoiced that he had translated the Scriptures for the common people, and was impatient to be with Christ.

Zwick says that he saw him on the morning of his execution. And what did the alleged adulterer say? 'He addressed us all as his dear brethren. He constrained us all to pray with him. The room was very full. He now prayed to God with a seriousness such as I have never seen or heard.' Then what? Did he confess his guilt to those kind pastors? O, no; instead, says the same witness, 'He gave an exhortation to us preachers, and mingled it with a few words on infant baptism, that we should not enforce it as if we must whether or no baptize the children, but suffer it to be quite free.' When led to execution, he called the names of Mantz, Hubmeyer and others who had received the martyr's wreath, exhorted Constance to show God's word in its life, and offered prayer for all present, in which the people joined with tears. Hast reports, that when he laid his head upon the block he said to all: 'If I have offended any of you in my life, forgive me.' Then addressing the throne of grace, he cried: 'If I have offended thy majesty my God, I thank thee that thou hast extended my life. so

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

that I can now, by my last confession, rescue many, many souls!' [*Hist. Anabaptists*, p. 223] After this manner he beautifully confessed Christ. Opening his Hebrew Bible at the Twenty-fifth Psalm, he asked the people to kneel with him and read in a loud voice, at the 15th verse: 'He shall pluck my feet out of the net,' like Paul with 'these chains;' he dropped his eyes on the cords that bound him, and the people repeated the words after him, as well as they could for sobbing. He then offered the Lord's Prayer, adding at the amen, 'Through Jesus Christ, the Saviour of the world, by his blood!' As the executioner approached with the ax he prayed that the Lord would not leave him, and a voice from the multitude cried, 'God will not forsake thee!' A slight flush tinged his cheek, he calmly laid his head on the block, the stroke fell and the learned translator was gone.

The court at Constance appears never to have read the false charge planned against Jesus for alleged blasphemy, and how the evidence destroyed itself by contradiction. If it believed that this good man was an adulterer, it should either have purified its records or put a padlock on the mouth of its city pastors. John Zwick, who knew the history of Constance and that Huss and Jerome were martyred there, says of Hetzer: 'A nobler and more manly death was never seen in Constance. He suffered with greater propriety than I had given him credit for. They who knew not that he was a heretic and an Anabaptist could have observed nothing in him... We were all with him to his end, and may the Almighty, the eternal God, grant to me and to the servants of his word, like mercy in the day when he shall call us home.' So Thomas Blaurer, his fellow-pastor, says: 'No one has, with so much charity, so courageously laid down his life for Anabaptism as Hetzer. He was like one who spoke with God and died.'

After Hetzer's death, Zwingli said that he had suppressed a book of Hetzer's against the divinity of Christ. On this statement some have classed him with Antitrinitarians, but it strikes us as remarkable that this alleged evidence of his heresy should have been destroyed by his accuser, and that not one line of this mysterious book has been produced, especially as there is no confirmatory proof that he held these views, excepting a passage violently forced into that service from one of his hymns. On the contrary Keller, quoting from Dr. Beck's recent history of the Austrian Baptists, affirms that the 'proof of this charge has not been found.' [*Die Reform.*, p. 433] Hetzer wrote many hymns, which were published in Zurich after his death and are now standard in Germany as spiritual hymns. This particular one commends itself to Spener, Freylinghausen, and Franke, of Halle, leaders of the Pietists, yet the sentiment complained of is not Hetzer's but one which he puts into the mouth of the world concerning Christ. He wrote a tract against 'Revelry and the Abuse of the Tongue,' and dedicated it to Achatio, a citizen of Constance. In writing to this friend, he says of Christ, he 'Made the world by his word, became flesh and dwelt amongst us, whose glory shall be seen.' And who can believe that he rejected the vicarious atonement of Christ, who closed his last prayer with these words: 'Through Jesus Christ, who saved the world by his blood.' He was never suspected of being an Antitrinitarian till after his death, nor do the soundest Orthodox theologians so account him now.

There were many centers of Baptist influence in Switzerland besides Zurich and Waldshut, for in 1527, the year in which the Brotherly Union issued the 'Seven Articles' at Schleithem to the 'Congregations of Believing, Baptized Christians,' there were assemblies of that character in thirty-eight places in the Canton of Zurich alone. ST. GALL became a stronghold of Baptist principles. In 1523 a large crucifix, richly carved and ornamented, stood near the Upper Gate of Zurich. One night it was overturned and it was found that one of the trespassers was a Baptist, who, for his fault, was banished from the city. He made his way directly to St. Gall his native place, and one day when

The Era of the Reformation

Kessler, the Reformed pastor there, was publicly expounding Rom. 6, the iconoclast interrupted him with the remark: 'I infer that you think children may be baptized.' Kessler asked, 'Why not?' to which the Baptist answered: 'He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved.' Soon after this. Wolfgang Ulimann, son of a distinguished citizen of St. Gall, returned to the city. He had been immersed in the Rhine at Schaffhausen by Grebel, who met him on the way. Grebel told him that a change had taken place in his own mind on the method of baptism and he convinced Ulimann that he should be immersed. Kessler says that Ulimann 'Refused to be sprinkled out of a dish, and was drawn under and covered over with the waters of the Rhine.'

His return to St. Gall gave a great impulse to the new movement. Grebel soon followed him, and on April 9th, 1525, this evangelist took a large number of converts a distance of two or three miles and immersed them in the Sitter River. These Baptists worshiped in fields and woods where multitudes heard them, and soon their church numbered eight hundred. Crowds came in from the Canton of Appenzell to hear the new faith, some say as many as two thousand, who carried it back and scattered it through their Alpine hamlets and valleys. Reformed pastors and others of note embraced it, and Baptist congregations were gathered at Tenfen, Herrisau and Brunnen. They went to rivers and streams as they could find them for immersion. Besides, they used a great wooden vat in the Butcher's Square, at St. Gall, until a building known as the 'Baptizing House,' came to be regularly used as a baptistery. [Naef. St. Gallen, p. 1021] Baptists became so numerous in Teuten that the parish church dismissed its Reformed pastor and elected Hans Krusi, a Baptist, in his place. He was soon arrested by the Abbot of St. Gall, and would have suffered death had not the people rescued him. On his second arrest he was taken to Lucerne and bound to the stake, when he rushed out of the flames, and the Catholic crowd would not allow the sheriff to lay hands on him. [Do., 1022] Two years later, Ulimann and two others were burned at the stake at Constance.

Vadian, perhaps the leading citizen of St. Gall, became alarmed at this state of things which threatened to destroy the State Church, admitted that infant baptism had become a shameful abuse and desired reform, but in a gradual manner. So, as a conservative measure, he asked the city Council to ply the old machine and grind this dissent to powder. Grebel warned him not to dye his hands in innocent blood, but the Council imposed a heavy fine on all who should be baptized, and forbade the Baptists either to baptize or break bread, on pain of imprisonment or banishment. A special police force of two hundred was sworn in to enforce the decree, and violence was let loose in the city.

The Baptist Church at St. Gall was noted for strict morality and deep piety, but soon it was put to a severer trial than persecution. Goaded by the suppression of all their religious rights, some of this flock became doubly zealous, and when their shepherds were driven away one man found his head so turned that he ran into wild fanaticism. Like many monks, friars and canonized saints, he went into visions, ecstasies and raptures, in which he said God commanded him to slay his own brother, as a test of his faith. He committed the terrible fratricide, and inflicted a staggering blow on the Church. The most honorable bodies of Christians have been disgraced by similar events in times of religious commotion. The Baptists of St. Gall were shocked at the horrible deed of this infatuated crank and promptly discarded the crazy murderer, as did also a general Council of their brethren, held the next year. [Ruchat, *Hist. Swiss Ref.*, I, 312; Cornelius, ii, 267] It is no small disgrace to many writers that they have taken special pains to lay the crime of this madman at the door of the Baptists of St. Gall, because they could blacken them in no other way. Would that such writers knew

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

more of the spirit of Chalmers when he says: 'A sect may be thrown into discredit by a few of its individual specimens, and the same association may be thrown upon all its members...A system may be thrown into discredit by the fanaticism and folly of some of its advocates, and it may be long before it emerges from the contempt of a precipitate and unthinking public, ever ready to follow the impulses of her former recollections; it may be long before it is reclaimed from obscurity by the eloquence of future defenders; and there may be the struggle and perseverance of many years before the existing association, with all its train of obloquies, and disgusts, and prejudices shall be overcome.'

No reasonable man will brand all the Apostolate with the falsehood of Peter or the suicide of Judas, nor all the Presbyterians with the burning of Servetus, nor all the Swiss Reformers with the cruelties of Zurich; any more than a man with a fairly decent conscience can lay this man's sin at the door of all the Baptists of St. Gall. Probably the simplest and most reliable account is given by the enemy of the Baptists, Vadian, a burgomaster and judge of that city, first published in 1877. He says that Thomas Schucker had taken too much wine, or in some other way had become unbalanced, and toward day-break on the 8th Feb. ('Foolish Thursday,' as it is called), he went and cut off his brother's head.

'Then without coat or shoes, in shirt and stockings, he came running to my house, and said he had drunk vinegar and gall, but not a word about his deed. I saw he was not right, and had him locked up, and at the trial it was plain that Thomas was *non compos mentis*. Every body felt sorry for him, for Thomas's friends were a devout and honest set of people.'

Surely that fratricide cannot easily be misrepresented more to the injury of his Church than of his family.

BASLE was another center of Baptist influence. It had caught a liberal spirit from Erasmus, the genius of its University, and from Œcolampadius, who was much gentler than his compeers generally.

Not only was he a friend to Denk and Hubmeyer, but at one time his own doubts of infant baptism were so grave that he was half ranked with the Baptists. His early bearing toward them as a people was worthy of high manhood, and in public and private he labored with them in a Christian and reasonable manner to win them to his views, at least for some years; after which he finally denied his humane impulses and followed Zwingli in the attempt to convert them behind prison bars. As early as June 2, 1526, they were banished from the city, but they filled the country districts, where Mantz preached with great success. In April, 1527, Œcolampadius became alarmed at the weakness of the cruel decree, and complained that the government was too lenient; and in May, 1528, the law was sharpened in vain, for the persecuted returned to their homes despite hate, insult and scourge, and were thrust into prison to be rid of them. They were required to stop preaching in the fields and forests and to attend the State Churches; but all to no purpose, for the city and country swarmed with them. In 1529 nine of their number were arrested and brought before the Senate. Œcolampadius expounded to them the Athanasian and Apostles' Creed, and tried, in his blindest manner, to win them, but this was all one with threats to the end of recantation. A simple-hearted miller replied to him: 'Since I heard the word of God, renounced my irregular life, and was baptized on confession of sins, I have been persecuted by every body, while before, when I was plunging into all manner of vice, nobody chastened me or put me in prison. I am confined in the Tower like a

The Era of the Reformation

murderer, and what is my crime? What evil have I done? None. God be praised, in your conscience I know you are convinced of my innocence.' A wood-worker then took the laboring oar and said: 'Turn over the Old Testament and the New, and see if you can find you have a right to draw a pension. You have more time than I, for I must get bread by the toil of my hands, so as not to be a charge to any one.' This piece of nobility was more than the August Senate could stand, and it burst into laughter. Œcolampadius, ever manly, rebuked the court, saying: 'Gentlemen, this is no time to laugh. Rather pray for the glory of God, that the Lord would soften their hard hearts and give them enlightenment.' Another of the nine cried out: 'Why do you so blacken our doctrine of baptism? I pray you by the love of Jesus Christ, do not persecute good people.' And still another said: 'They can do nothing to us without the will of the Father, who counts the very hairs of our heads. Do not fear, God cares for you.' Three of them recanted and were released, and six were exiled with the threat of death if they returned. [Ruchat, ii, 167] Officers were sent to warn others to depart, but they refused to go. One simple rustic said: 'You are not lords of the earth to order us so haughtily to leave it. I am willing to obey the command of God. But he says in the Psalms, "inhabit the earth," and I will inhabit that part of it where I was born and educated, and no one shall expel me by any prescript or mandate, while I live.' On another occasion Blaurock took the same ground, saying: 'I would rather die than forswear the earth, the earth is the Lord's;' and Baumgartner said: 'God made the earth as much for me as for the magistrates.' The only result of this and other measures was that Œcolampadius advised the Council to treat the obstinate with greater severity still; and on April 1st, 1529, it issued an edict to imprison all Baptists, and keep them there on bread and water till they publicly retracted; then, if they apostatized they should be put to death by the sword. Two prominent Baptists were scourged through the city, and as the blows fell they admonished the crowd that 'Our principles would not appear so odious if you left off your sins. We suffer these stripes cheerfully for the sake of Christ and his baptism, for that is the only charge they bring against us.' [Gastius, p. 200] A great number of peasants were brought into the city in chains, for traitors and informers were abundant. When asked what they had done, they answered: 'Nothing against Christ or his word, though perhaps against certain old customs and rites.' Then in turn they asked: 'Why can we not have a church of our own in which we can sow the true doctrine of Christ, confer baptism on penitents, celebrate the Lord's Supper, and practice excommunication? Why do you, Œcolampadius, forever attack us, and attempt to destroy us and annihilate our doctrine which is of God, and which in your conscience you approve? Were you ever injured by us in the least?'

Sometimes they were branded in the forehead, had their fingers mutilated or the tongue cut out. [Do., p. 311] In 1530, five of them were drowned in the Rhine without a murmur, while the witnessing multitude wept, praised their pure lives, their simple manners and their bravery in dying; and many inquired if theirs was not the true doctrine.

Gastius tells of one hero who was put upon the rack to force him to betray his brethren, especially the man who had baptized him, but he would not reveal a word. After long and full torture he cried at length:

'I am a citizen of the earth, my country is everywhere, and my burial-place anywhere. Why do you not kill me? I will not betray my brethren even if you tear me to pieces. My body is yours, burn it, scathe it, lacerate, destroy it if you please. Increase your cruelty, you will gain nothing. Thus far my soul is free from torture but full of joy, from the consolations which God pours into my heart. I have received the true baptism. The testimony of sacred Scripture persuaded me to do it. I have left a life of sin, and put on the likeness of

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

Christ. I have plotted no evil that I should receive such cruel treatment.' In response to the promise of liberation from the rack if he would betray his brethren, he spat in the face of his tormentor, saying: 'Get thee behind me, Satan, thou savorest not the things that be of God.' All that the man had done was to be baptized on his faith. They finally let him go.

There is scarcely an end to this record of barbarities, and this suffering was endured with a resignation of the most striking character. 'Nothing could exceed,' says Starck, 'the steadfastness with which they endured all this. They declared publicly that their sufferings had come upon them for the sake of the people, and on this account they were willingly endured.'

Schaffhauisen shared largely in Baptist blessing, as well as Hallau, where a Church was formed by Brodli, who, together with Reublin, baptized the entire Reformed congregation – a fact which greatly disturbed the Zurich Inquisition, but it was powerless in the matter. In 1526 there was a good interest in Berne, but all Baptists were banished from the city and canton. As early as 1526 they were very strong in the Gruningen District, upon which the Council of Zurich turned all its power to crush them. In 1525, Blaurock was arrested by the bailiff of the district while preaching at Hinwyl. The officer demanded help from the people, and when they refused, he forced the preacher on a horse and took him away. In order to enlighten his understanding, they removed him to Zurich, had a great discussion on baptism, and then put him in irons and kept him on bread and water in prison till their logic took effect. They tried to prove to him that the children of Christians are not less God's children than those of Jews, and that those who are rebaptized crucify Christ afresh. But poor Blaurock was slow to see how these baptized children of God demonstrated their sonship in his case; while he readily saw how his rebaptism was crucifying him with Christ quite surely. So, in order to prove their sonship, the Council, by public proclamation on St. Andrew's day, 1525, prohibited 'rebaptism,' by punishment without further forgiveness. In this mandate they frankly say to the inhabitants of the district, that its wicked 'Anabaptists' have proclaimed their doctrines without the permission and consent of the Church, declaring:

'That infant baptism is not of God, but has sprung from the devil, and, therefore, ought not to be practiced. They have, also, invented a rebaptism, and many, even unlearned in the Holy Scriptures, taken with their vain talk and so far persuaded, have received this rebaptism, esteeming themselves better than other people...Therefore, have we imprisoned, and punished for their good, some of the authors of Anabaptism and their disciples, and have twice, at their desire, ordained conferences, or discussions, on infant baptism and rebaptism. And notwithstanding that they were in all cases overcome, and some of them have been let go unpunished. because they promised to abstain from rebaptism; and others have been banished from our jurisdiction and bounds; yet have they, disregarding their promise, come again among you, and have sown their false doctrine against infant baptism among the simple people. Whence has arisen a new sect of Anabaptists. Therefore we have imprisoned these Baptists, and punished their followers for their own good.'

It is noteworthy that neither the Council of Zurich nor any other court in Switzerland brings the slightest charge of sedition or disloyalty to the State against the Baptists. Occasionally, some question of that sort crops out on the examination of an individual prisoner, and in every case he repels the charge and avows his civil loyalty. But in this historical document, the only antecedent of their 'Therefore,' relates to the subject of baptism and the ecclesiastical divisions which had grown out of this issue; the penalty enjoined clearly shows that they so understood the whole question. It is in these words, 'Therefore, we ordain, and it is our earnest purpose that henceforth all men, women, boys, and girls, abstain from Anabaptism, and practice it no longer, but baptize the young

The Era of the Reformation

children. For whoever shall act contrary to this order, shall, as often as he disobeys, be punished by a fine of a silver mark; and if he shall prove disobedient, we shall deal with him further and punish him according to his deserts without further forgiveness. Let each one act accordingly.'

The Baptists of the district appealed to the people, explained at length their Bible views of baptism, and said, most reasonably, that they could not depart from their convictions, citing many passages from the New Testament to justify their faith and practice. Then they concluded with these words: 'If now the members of the Zurich Council designate the baptism of Christ as Anabaptism, the common people will be convinced that the reverse is the fact, and that infant baptism is really Anabaptism. Now, we desire that you will leave us alone with the truth; if, however, this may not be, we are ready, for the sake of the truth, to suffer through the grace and power of God.' But they could not let them alone. Falk and Rieman, two Baptist preachers, had been put in prison by the Gruningen magistrates; so the Inquisition was thirsting for their blood and trying to get them into its own hands. These authorities would neither execute them nor turn them over to the Inquisitors, and Zurich appealed to Berne for help. The question of jurisdiction being settled, they were delivered to the Inquisition and after long imprisonment, on August 11th, 1528, they were examined; when they refused to betray their brethren, or to refrain from baptizing on their faith in Jesus all who came to them. They were condemned to death, September 5th, and were taken to the middle of the river Limat and drowned. [Ref. ormat iongeschichte, ii, S. 14]

At first, Zwingli and the Council were content with the fine and imprisonment of their victims, but when this failed to cure them they were loaded with chains. On the 7th of March, 1526, the Council of Zurich decreed that those who baptized any person who had been previously christened, should, if condemned, be drowned without mercy. On this ordinance Fusslin makes these remarks: 'If any one asks with what kind of justice this was done, the Papists would have an answer. They would say, according to papal law heretics must die. There is no need to inquire further. The maxim is applicable here. What the papacy condemns is condemned. But those who hold to evangelical faith renounce the pope and papal authority, and the question now arises, with what propriety do they compel people to renounce their views or religion, and in case of their refusal inflict upon them capital punishment?' Upon the plea that Zwingli tried to induce the Council to be less severe, the attempt has been made to relieve him entirely of odium; and happy would it be for his memory if his name could be purged of this blot. He had opportunity enough to have sent his protest down to posterity had he desired to do so. But this is all he seems to have said on the subject, and without dissent: 'The most noble Senate determined to immerse in water, whoever shall have immersed in baptism, one who had previously emerged.' Hence, it soon passed into a sneering proverb: 'He that baptizes will be baptized himself.' [Fusslin Beytrage, I, S. 274, 77] If Zwingli opposed this barbarity, we have scant means of explaining the fact that on November 19th, 1526, the Council confirmed this edict and afterward carried it into execution. Besides, the same infamy was practiced in other cantons; showing that it did not meet with the condemnation of the leading Swiss Reformers. In the Canton of Berne, a decree was passed requiring the Baptists to attend the regular State Churches, especially at the quarterly communion. If they refused, they were to be banished; on returning the first time they were to be ducked in water, the second time drowned without mercy; and all who had been baptized were to be fined ten pounds apiece. [Schreiber Hubmeyer, ii, 194]

In 1530 (January 20th), Conrad Winkler was drowned at Zurich, as the fourth of its murdered Baptists; and Weesen, who lived at Zurich at the time, says that he was martyred ' For having

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

rebaptized, against express command, so many people that he did not know the number. He leaped up, struck his hands together, as if he rejoiced at his death; and immediately before he was thrust under, he sang with a clear voice one or two verses of a hymn.'

The name of Appenzell should be held in special honor, for, when in 1532 her seven sister cantons ordered the drowning of Baptists, she declined to sign the decree and for a generation left them undisturbed. [Zellweger, Hist. App., iii, p. 430] "Now and then, also, there was an individual protest against the general barbarity. There is an appeal in the Munich Library from a Reformed preacher, who, while he looks upon the Baptists as erratic, not only denounces their imprisonment and slaughter but invokes God's wrath on their persecutors, and gives as his reason that, 'They do not deserve punishment but need instruction.'

Even at Basel, where all sorts of cruelties had been inflicted upon the brethren short of the death penalty, November 13, 1530, its Council decreed that all banished Anabaptists who returned should be dipped in water and sent away again; and should they return the second time they were to be drowned.' [Herzog, Leben J., Œkolampads] As if divine Providence had thrown a special shield over the heads of these poor harmless sheep of Christ, against the vile accusation that they were reckless seditious and suffered as such in Switzerland, we not only have the voluntary testimony of their foes as to their purity, but we have evidence that some of the best of their enemies resented these monstrosities as unjustifiable. Haller writes to Bullinger that the 'Anabaptists avoid vices, are bound closely together, and impose on the simple by their strict behavior. Their pertinacious constancy in facing death has led so many into their ranks, that some of the Senate (Berne) are averse to any more executions and favor perpetual confinement. The question has come up, Whether the sword ought to be used *on those guilty of no crime?* We have sent to Strasburg to know what method they pursue.' [Ottius, p. 55] The result of these deliberations was a new edict in 1533, urging pastors to labor with the Baptists, who were not to be touched if they stopped their baptismal agitation; but if they continued preaching and baptizing they should be confined for life on bread and water, and not drowned. Whoever heard that the legal penalty in any land for sedition was drowning; and who can give an instance of a man in Switzerland being drowned for disloyalty to the government? Drowning was chosen to spite their faith as well as to kill their bodies; but within a month this relaxation of the law was interpreted to mean liberty. Nevertheless, the Senate breathed easier when they were no longer obliged by their own law to murder their fellow-religionists. If Zwingli was opposed to this terrible death penalty, why did Berne send to Strasburg for light and not to Zurich? But, on the contrary, Zurich now sought advice of Berne about killing Baptists, and in answer that city sent back its amended decree. [Ruchat, iii, 130] Toward the close of August, 1534, however, Haller wrote that they were increasing again rapidly, and that 'The Senate extorted from us our opinion as to the best way to get rid of them, hoping we would favor their slaughter. On the contrary, we showed the Senate that the cause of this disease and heresy was the vices and various scandals prevalent in the Church, and then we made known our project. Nov. 8th, the Senate, the Councils and the thirty-five bailiffs from the country met, read over the old decrees, and then agreed on a new one. In this they declare faith is a gift of God, and we have only to do with external affairs. The advice given was, for all to hear the ministers, have 'their children baptized, go to communion or give an excuse, and have their marriages celebrated in church.' The Baptists who would neither leave the canton voluntarily nor take the oath were to be reported to the Senate.

Four short months sufficed to tolerate this more humane edict. In March, 1535, the Senate issued

The Era of the Reformation

a declaration supplementary thereto, providing that those who would not submit were to be imprisoned eight days, then, if they persisted, they were to be exiled, and the men who returned were to be put to death by the sword and the women drowned. Still the Baptists grew, and in 1537 they prepared for an open Conference, which, in March, 1538, was held in the capital, debating all the old points with their persecutors. So thoroughly were the authorities confounded, that in the autumn of the same year they decreed that every doctor, preacher and chief of the 'Anabaptists' was to be beheaded without mercy, even if he recanted. Before the execution he was to be put upon the rack to find out 'what his intention was, and what the Anabaptists would do if they became more powerful than the authorities.' All others of the sect who were arrested should first be labored with, and if persistent put to death, the men with torture added.

The Third Article adopted at Schleitheim says of the Supper: 'All who would break one bread for a memorial of the broken body of Christ, and all who would drink one cup as a memorial of the poured-out blood of Christ, should beforehand be united to the one body of Christ, to wit, by baptism.' Eachard said, in 1645, that the 'Anabaptists would not communicate with others...by strictness of order.' And as to the act of baptism, the First Article says that all who believe in Christ are 'To be buried with him in death, that with him they may rise.' At this time pouring and aspersion had become very common in most of the western countries, and the first question which arose amongst the Swiss Baptists related to the purging out of infant baptism rather than the restoration of immersion. When that question forced itself upon them they returned to the New Testament order. Dr. Rule, who speaks contemptuously of them, says that they took their converts 'and plunged them into the nearest streams;' which well accords with the First Article and with Hubmeyer's use of the word 'dipping' in his writings. He prepared a Catechism for those who were to be 'baptized *in* water,' and expresses his belief 'that Christianity will never truly prosper unless baptism is restored to its original purity.'

The fact that they built a baptistery at St. Gall, and that John Stumpf, a Lutheran pastor, who lived near Zurich from 1522 to 1543, and wrote of them in 1548 from personal knowledge of their practices, says that they 'Rebaptized in rivers and streams,' is good evidence that they immersed. As we have already seen, another Roman Catholic historian, August Neaf, Secretary to the Council of St. Gall, in his history of that city, published at Zurich (1859-1863), says that in 1525 the Baptists there 'Baptized those who believed with them, in rivers and lakes, and in a great wooden vat on the Butcher's Square, before a great crowd.' Simler says that 'Many came to St. Gall, inquired for the Taufhaus (Baptistery), and were baptized.' {*Collection*, I, p. 132.) Then Sicher, a Roman Catholic, gives this account of their baptisms at St. Gall: 'The number of the converted increased so, that the baptistery could not contain the crowd, and they were compelled to use the streams and the Sitter River, to which on Sundays those desirous of baptism went in so great numbers that they resembled a procession.' [Arx. Geschichte d. Stadt, St. Gallen, ii, S. 501; do., p. 34] At first Grebel poured water on the head of Blaurock, at Zurich, out of a 'dipper,' and called it baptism. Afterward, when he changed his mind on the subject, he immersed Ulimann in the Rhine, and Cornelius tells of the joyous procession which he led from St. Gall to be baptized in the Sitter, a distance of nearly three miles. Surely one 'dipper,' at least, must have been left in that city, April 9th, 1525, to have rendered this service had it been needed that day. Dr. Osgood tells us that he took the pains, in 1867, to walk from St. Gall to the Sitter, to inspect the country and reach the reasons for their long journey. He found that 'A mountain stream, sufficient for all sprinkling purposes, *flows through the city*, but in

Chapter 2 - The Swiss Baptists – Continued

no place is it deep enough for the immersion of a person, while the Sitter River is between two and three miles away, and is gained by a difficult road. The only solution of this choice was, that Grebel sought the river, in order to immerse candidates.' [Burrage, *Anab. of Switzerland*, p. 117]

All this shows us what Ecolampadius meant when he cried out: 'You are not Baptists but Catabaptists, that is, "perverters of baptism."' [Studien und Kritiken, 1883, p. 166] Featley says: 'At Vienna the Anabaptists are tied together with ropes, and one draweth the other into the river to be drowned, as it should seem, the wise magistrates of that place had an eye to that old maxim of justice: let the punishment bear upon it the point of the sin, for as these sectaries drew one another into their error, so also into the gulf; and as they drowned men spiritually by rebaptizing, and so profaning the holy sacrament, so also they were drowned corporeally.'

He clearly alludes to the drowning of Hubmeyer's wife and others in martyrdom at Vienna.

The Era of the Reformation

Chapter 3 - The Reformation – Zwickau and Luther

Amongst the so-called 'Anabaptists' there were three views as to civil government. A very small party, those of Münster, believed in establishing Christ's kingdom by the sword at the cost of sedition and revolution. We have seen that the party represented chiefly by Hubmeyer, believed in government, paid all taxes and obeyed all ordinances that did not interfere with the free exercise of religion. But, as a magistrate must bind himself by civil oaths and use the sword, they held that a Christian should not be a magistrate, because the Apostles knew nothing of Church taxes imposed by the State, held no civil office and took no part in war. They thought that civil government was necessary for the wicked; but their foes either could not or would not understand them. Their modern enemies evince the same state of mind. Hence, in one breath they tell us that they were perverse, enemies of civil government, and would not touch the sword either for war or capital punishment. And, without blushing, in the next breath they tell us as coolly that they drew the sword, established theocratic magistrates and deluged Germany with blood. That is, they deliberately did what their first principles would not allow them to do, and suffered martyrdom for doing that which, in conscience, they refused to do.

The Sixth Article in the SCHLEITHEIM CONFSSION contains a clear and distinct recognition of the divine sanction of civil government, its legitimate powers, duties, and obligations. It as fully defines the absolute separation of Christian discipline and polity from the civil power – denouncing the use of the sword by Christian people for any purpose. It enjoins abstention from lawsuits in worldly disputes, and is so careful of the sphere of Christian action, as to advise exclusive devotion to Christian duty and refusal to assume the responsibilities of civil office. Whether we approve their views or not, we cannot readily misunderstand what they were. They had never known a government which did not require magistrates to persecute others for their religion; and it was but natural that they should shrink from any civil service which demanded such persecution as a duty to God and man.

HUBMEYER represented a third class, who believed in all the usual forms of civil government, in which all citizens should participate in common, including the proper use of the sword outside of persecution. These were called Swordsmen 'by the other parties, and in 1528 two hundred dissidents withdrew from Hubmeyer at Nicolsburg, calling themselves 'Staffsmen,' to designate their non-resistant principles, because they would not touch the sword either in revolt or warfare. When, therefore, the Zwinglian and Catholic peasants of Switzerland arose against the authorities, the non-resistant Baptists refused to unite their fortunes with them, and Grebel denied that he ever entertained a thought of subverting the government. [Burrage, Siwss Anab., p. 110; Fusslin, ii, 249] Hubmeyer complained that his enemies, of whom he said that he had as many 'as the old Dragon had scales,' misrepresented him on this subject, and to put himself right he dedicated a tract on 'The Sword' to the Chancellor of Moravia, in which he thus speaks of the passage, 'My kingdom is not of this world:'

"There must be judges, or the Scriptures will fall to pieces which speak of their duties. "The power of the keys;" yes, that power belongs to the Church, but it is distinct from civil tribunals. So long as men will not obey God there must be courts. Let us be thankful for a just government, though our sins deserve an unjust one. "An eye for an eye;" yea, that was old-time revenge, but now courts execute penalty. "Our weapons are not carnal;" no, not the weapons of the Church, but the weapons of the State are. The two swords should not be opposed to each other. A Christian judge will be most apt to be just. Satan, depart and no longer mislead simple people. "Love your enemies;" yes, that is for the individual, but the government does not punish from

The Era of the Reformation

envy, from hatred, but from justice, and is not referred to in the text.'

No Reformer of the sixteenth century holds the balance so exactly as this, in defining the relations of the State to its citizens and to the Church. He advocated civil government and the freedom of the Church from the State as clearly as any writer of our own day. Nor did Zwingli misunderstand the delicate distinction which this class of Baptists drew on that subject. Under the title of 'Who gives occasion to disturbance' he issued a challenge to them, in which he says: 'They want to have a Church, but no government is to protect the preaching of the Gospel by any violent measures or interfere with the freedom even of heretical preachers.'

DENK, whom Haller calls the 'Apollo of the Anabaptists,' held to the same principles. He says: 'The Apostles treat earnestly that Christians must be subject to government. But they do not teach that they may be governors, for Paul says, "What have I to do to judge them that are without." He would have Christians withdraw from politics, and leave unconverted men to wield the sword of the civil and military ruler as a thing entirely separate from the Church. Denk took the ground, that all government must be sustained as the Apostles sustained it, namely: That in the Church Christ was King and held the spiritual sword for excommunication. That was the 'only spiritual sword which he knew; but for the proper ends of civil government, the material sword was in the hands of the State, whose authority was from God. The other Reformers knew nothing about the distinction between civil and religious government on this broad and high plane. Keller draws this sharp distinction: 'While Denk, with energy, defended the proposition that it was not becoming in civil magistrates to proceed against their subjects with force in matters of faith; both Luther and Zwingli taught that it was the duty of the civil magistrates to establish the true faith within their territorial limits, and to maintain it with the severest penalties.' That discreet historian, Mosheim, recognizes these various classes of Baptists, and says: 'They are called Anabaptists because they all denied that infants are proper subjects of baptism, and solemnly baptized over again those who had been baptized in infancy; yet, from the very beginning, just as at the present day, they were split into various parties, which disagreed and disputed about points of no small importance.' He is too careful to make 'Anabaptism' and sedition convertible words, but says, that these Baptists,

'Did not all suffer on account of their crimes, but many of them merely for the erroneous opinions which they maintained honestly, without fraud or crime. It is, indeed, true that many Anabaptists were put to death, not as being bad citizens or injurious members of civil society, but as being incurable heretics, who were condemned by the old canon laws, for the error concerning adult baptism...I could wish there had been some discrimination made, and that all who believe that adults only are to be baptized, and that the ungodly are to be expelled the Church, had not been indiscriminately put to death.' [Mosheim, *Ecc. Hist.*, iii, p. 202-4]

But true history is bringing them its calm revenges of justification.

In the first quarter of the sixteenth century many Catholics were much stirred on the subject of Church reform, but the most earnest souls sought it mainly in the rise and growth of monastic orders, in which Saxony abounded. Their idea was, that withdrawal from the world was better than victory over it, that it were better to avoid temptation than to combat it, and to be a monk than to be a man. Pressed to this extreme, piety lapsed into senility on the one hand and into fanaticism on the other. In this atmosphere the mystics had sprung up amongst the pre-Reformers with much honor to Christianity. The forgotten doctrine of the Spirit, as an experimental fact, appeared in one direction and a sterner ritualistic system in another. The mystics threw aside the wild notion that baptism can

Chapter 3 - The Reformation – Zwickau and Luther

cleanse the soul, and that the soul is sustained by a morsel of bread and a drop of wine, instead of by the indwelling Spirit. Tauler caught this doctrine from Eckart, his master, and while Luther was a monk, he embraced it from Tauler. But some mystics were deluded into that reflective method which associates the indwelling Spirit with direct revelations from God, and which lifts the soul above religious speculation or mistake.

The flourishing city of Zwickau was the home of many who held this view. It lay in Saxony near the borders of Bohemia. Silver mines were discovered there in 1491, the yield of which was so great that the ore could not be coined and fabulous fortunes were gathered. Many cloth-makers grew up under this wealth princely merchants, and in 1521, 300,000 pounds of wool were used and 10,000 pieces of cloth made. Amongst the well-to-do master-weavers was Nicholas Storck, probably a native of the city. He and his journeymen began to hold such meetings for prayer and praise as the Bohemian Brethren held.

Thomas Münzer was a friend of Luther's and pastor of the Lutheran Church in Zwickau. At Easter he pronounced from the pulpit that Storck understood the Bible better than the priests and was possessed of the Holy Spirit. Storck soon set apart twelve apostles and seventy-two disciples, rejected infant baptism, and baptized believers only. Münzer stood by him, but not as stoutly as Cellaring and Stubner, two young scholars, friends of Melancthon, who came to the city about that time. Dr. Sella, another Lutheran, a member of Münzer's congregation, was at the head of the city authorities as burgomaster and identified himself with the movement, which gained ground for about a year, without interference from the City Council. But he died April 10, 1521, and this opened a conflict.

On the 14th Wildenauer, another Lutheran pastor, of haughty manners and loose habits, being denounced by Storck, made a stir. On the 16th the Council deprived Münzer of his parish, as one of the parties to the quarrel, and he left for Prague. Great excitement followed; fifty-five weavers were imprisoned in the Tower, and the magistrates called Storck to account for many things, amongst others, for teaching that children are not benefitted by baptism. Keller quotes an old chronicle, which says that Storck was brought before the Council for teaching heretical Bohemian sentiments' [Geschichte, p. 16] In fact, he is charged with introducing the Bohemian heresy into Zwickau; thus connecting the Bohemian Brethren with the German Baptists. One, who met Storck soon after, says of his person: 'He was rather slim, wore a long gray coat without folds and a broad-brimmed hat. He conversed easily, pleasantly and humbly, and replied to answers in a manner as devout and holy, as if he had been an angel of God.' [Storck, by R. Bachmann, Zwickau, 1880, p. 4] Then he, with Stubner and Cellarius, went to Wittenberg to consult with Melancthon, while Luther was still at the Wartburg. Stubner spent six months with Melancthon, who said that Storck 'had the right understanding of the Bible.' He was charmed by their devout manner and spirit, for he thought that their views were agreeable to reason and deserved examination, and wrote to the Elector: 'I cannot tell how much I am moved by these men.' The Elector answered: 'We know not what God will accomplish through these plebeians; now and then he is wont to use obscure men in his service.' But he advised Melancthon not to hold a disputation with them on baptism. He had better wait for Luther, for they quoted St. Augustine to prove that nothing could be brought in favor of infant baptism, except ecclesiastical custom. Up to this point all these parties were Lutherans.

Carlstadt, a man of deep convictions, who sacrificed much for the truth, and was a superior scholar to Luther, espoused their cause at Wittenberg, and, all together, they greatly moved the city.

The Era of the Reformation

In the ensuing April, however, Luther returned, and met them in sharp controversy, or, as he expresses it, began 'to rap these visionaries on the snout.' He denounced them in the cathedral, and they went to preach elsewhere. He also denounced Carlstadt as a 'fanatic' because he rejected the doctrine of the Real Presence and destroyed images. In September, 1522, Storck returned from a preaching tour through Thuringia, and labored with Luther to drop infant baptism and make the Reformation thorough. But while translating the Bible, at the Wart-burg, Luther had determined to retain whatever practices it did not forbid. At first he had no light struggle on this subject of infant baptism. On other subjects he had been forced, against his will, step by step, to abandon the Fathers, the Councils and Catholic tradition, being driven to the authority of the Scriptures. But when he found no Bible authority for infant baptism, he assumed a new attitude. At that point he had a fiery contest with himself as to the true key of biblical interpretation, and he deliberately chose the negative turn. That is, he determined to abide by what the Scriptures did not forbid, instead of by what they enjoined, as the law of ordinances. He saw at a glance where his rule of interpretation on other subjects must inevitably lead him on this point; and he dared not venture one step further in free thought, for fear of invoking a complete moral revolution. To take one step more was to let infant baptism go and the State Church with it, so that a regenerate Church only would be left. But this was not the sort of Church that Luther wanted and he said: 'Where they want to go I am not disposed to follow. God save me from a Church in which are none but the holy.' Any man of discernment can see, with Plank, that Luther simply trifled with this truth. He says: 'Luther treated the objections to infant baptism very superficially, and dismissed the whole matter as a very inopportune question.' [Ges. Prot. Lehrbegriffs, ii, p. 53]

His embarrassment on this subject is clearly seen. Bellarmine, the great Catholic disputant, saw the utter insufficiency of Scripture to sustain infant baptism, and the absolute necessity of sustaining it as an unwritten tradition, which cannot be proved by Scripture. [De Verbo die ch. 4] Vilinar, also, reaches this conclusion: 'If baptism does not regenerate, but is a mere symbol, then the symbol and regeneration must come together. The Baptists are profoundly logical.' [Theology of Facts, p. 67] Calvin takes the same ground, but goes a step further. He says:

'This principle must always be adhered to, That baptism is not conferred on infants that they may be made children of God. But because now, in this place and degree they are reckoned with God, the grace of adoption is sealed in their flesh. Otherwise, the Anabaptists might justly exclude them from baptism. For unless the truth of the external sign applies to them, it will be mere profanation to call them into participation of the sign itself.' [Calvin, Schyn. *Hist. of Mennonites*, p. 107]

But Luther stood with Augustine, and could not see that children could be 'reckoned with God' while they were in a state of original sin, and he christened them to wash it away, first baptizing them on the faith of others, and requiring them to be justified by their own personal faith afterward; and so, Strack's words are as true on this point as on others: 'Luther retracted some of his concessions to the people, out of fear of the Anabaptists. [Bilder, p. 2] And the *Westminster Review*, of 1870, presents the exact truth when it says, that he was 'Terrified into inconsistency with his ultimate principles' by the 'Anabaptists.' Melancthon, also, was disturbed on this subject, and in order to remove his doubts, Luther said:

'What is not against the Scriptures is for the Scriptures, and the Scriptures for it,' and demands in his own

Chapter 3 - The Reformation – Zwickau and Luther

dogmatic way: 'How can you prove that children cannot believe? Unless we insist on the presence in them of the faith of the Church, we cannot continue the right, but must simply reject infant baptism. You say, the examples of such faith are weak. I find nothing stronger. The Church has power not to baptize children at all, because there is no place in Scripture that compels us to believe that, as we do other articles.' [Walch, *Works of Luther*, xv, 103]

Thus, he would do as a positive duty to God whatever the Scriptures did not prohibit his doing; as in the Supper, Carlstadt asked: 'What Scripture have you for elevating the cup?' to which Luther indignantly replied: 'What Scripture is there against it?' By the same answer he might have justified the offering of masses for the dead, auricular confession, purgatory, the infallibility of the pope, or any other absurdity which the Catholics practiced, but which the Scriptures had not positively forbidden by name. The mere mention of such a shallow but dangerous position lays bare its fallacy, and its practical bearings involved Luther at last in shocking inconsistency, as his conduct in the bigamy of Philip of Hesse shows.

Christina, the daughter of George of Saxony, had been Philip's lawful wife for sixteen years, and was the mother of eight children. But her husband wished to add Margaret von der Saale as a second wife, and as if he desired to act on Luther's principle of interpreting the Bible, he wrote to the Wittenberg theologians, reminding them that the Scriptures did not forbid him to have two wives! This practical test of Luther's rule greatly troubled its author, yet, nothing daunted, on December 10th, 1539, he and Melancthon united in an answer, in which they boldly took the ground, that what Moses had allowed in regard to marriage the Gospel did not forbid: 'Therefore,' they say: 'Your highness has not only our approbation in this case of necessity, but also our reflections upon it.' [De Wette, *Luther's Briefe*, Berlin 1825-28, 6, 239-44] This bigamous marriage took place at Rothenburg, March 4th, 1540, without divorcing his first wife, and on the next day the Landgrave wrote Luther, 'with a cheerful conscience,' thanking him for his counsel in the case. In Luther's reply of April 12th, he says: 'I notice that your highness is in glee about the advice given, which we like to be kept silent, otherwise the rough peasants will follow your example, alleging still more grievous causes. This would create a great deal of trouble.' [Rommel, *Philip, Landgraf von Hessen*; Giessen, 1830; Lenz, *cor. of Philip with Bucer*, 361-3] And why should not Luther, on his negative system of interpreting the Bible, permit polygamy in the marriage of Margaret as readily as the baptism of Christina's children in the name of the Trinity, if the Scriptures did not forbid either? The one position is as consistent as the other.

This is the most vital point in connection with the Reformation, showing where Luther broke with the principle of absolute obedience to God's word; and as the ablest writers of modern times locate his weakness here, we must stop to look calmly at his mistake. Goebel says: 'As Luther, since 1522, so did Zwingli, in 1525, forsake the positive principle of depending on the Scriptures, for the negative stand-point, saying: "Infant baptism is nowhere forbidden in the Scriptures."' [I, p. 158] The Romanists took advantage of his blunder at once. Fabri, their great doctor, asks: 'How can you convince an Anabaptist out of the Scriptures that infants should be baptized? In what Gospel is it commanded? The Donatists demanded Scripture of Augustine for infant baptism, but he referred them to the tradition of the Apostles.' He then says, that if the Lutherans would convert the Antipedobaptists from their error, you must ask help of the Catholic Church and her apostolic tradition, for she says with Augustine, 'That must be observed which the Church observes.' Mohler, another great Catholic authority, thinks that 'Luther having connected the efficacy of the sacraments

The Era of the Reformation

with faith only, it is not possible to understand why infants should be baptized. From the Reformer's point of view, there was the utter want of an adequate ground for this ecclesiastical rite.' [Symbolics] And Bayle says, that the Reformers were obliged to refute the Antipedobaptists: 'By the arguments of the Papists against themselves.' [Dic. Art. Anabaptists] Jorg fully agrees with all this, saying: 'Infant baptism is the offspring and guide of an infallible Church. The Baptists, alone, carried out the idea of the Reformation...Having abolished the authority of Rome, the Reformers proceeded to substitute for it their own.' [Geschichte des Protestantismus, ii, 39] Cardinal Wiseman also teaches that infant baptism cannot be without an infallible Church to give it authority.

A few visionaries attempted to push Luther's partial Reformation to a one-sided revolution by new revelations of the Spirit, and Luther swung to the other extreme of rejecting the healthful results of Bible teaching. Hess shows that the Baptists wished to strike the happy medium between these extremes. 'Unable to rise to a higher stand-point, they wanted to restore the manner of life of the primitive Church.' [*Life of Zwingli*, p. 209] They demanded that each person should be baptized upon his own faith. Luther built a Church on sacraments and enforced its tests of discipleship by State legislation, just as the Catholics had done. He held the doctrines of a universal priesthood of believers and of justification by faith alone, but he could not make infant baptism harmonize with either of them. He denied that baptism could avail any thing without faith, and so was obliged to ascribe to the infant 'the faith of the Church,' whatever that might mean. Thus, he found in the faith of the sponsor a quasi magical virtue, of which the Bible knows nothing; but which, ratified by the State law, made the babe a member of the Church. Beard, the able Oxford lecturer, puts this point thus:

'When this distinction is clearly seen, it helps to liberate the mind from the influence of ecclesiastical usage, and to reveal the Scriptural justification of infant baptism in its real weakness and insufficiency.'

Of the Baptists he says:

'Theirs were the truths which the Reformation neglected and cast out, but which it must again reconcile with itself, if it is ever to complete its work.'

And still again he says, of a baptized believer:

'Here the conditions of a true sacrament are fulfilled; the grace of God, the outward sign, the operative faith, are all present...It was, therefore, no dogmatic accident which made the mysticism of the Reformation assume the Anabaptist form. The word Anabaptist, as I have already pointed out, is used to cover very various phases of religious belief. But this one peculiarity was common to all Anabaptists.' [Hibberd Lec., p. 188; do., Lec. vi]

Luther could see the bearings of baptism on the justifying faith of a believer, for justification by faith was a mystical doctrine; but when he came to the faith of sponsors for christened babes, he was at sea. The Baptists pushed Luther's doctrine of a universal priesthood of believers to a wholesome application, by denying all Church authority to make, and all civil authority to say, without Bible direction, who were or were not believers. Luther said: 'I am governed in this matter by the silence of the New Testament;' the true Baptists replied: 'The case must be decided not by the silence of the New Testament, but by its positive instructions.' Here was the radical point of difference between them. Luther believed Scripture to be the word of God, but practically restricted its free

Chapter 3 - The Reformation – Zwickau and Luther

interpretation by insisting on the binding force of its silence! Forsaking the direct instruction of Scripture to follow its silence, he landed in politico-ritualism; other extremists added to its positive instructions and landed in politico-fanaticism; the Baptists contented themselves with following its absolute requirements, and were branded by both the other parties as 'heretics,' fit only to be put to death for their obedience to Christ. Thus in the Reformation weak humanity swung from one extreme to another. The theological inconsistencies of Luther drove him to ultra-ritualistic ground; and belief in new revelations of the Spirit carried the Zwickau men into ultra-Quakerism on the doctrine of the Spirit. The true Baptists anchored themselves to the positive requirements of the word of God, and stood firmly there to their death. Dr. Keller, in his new book *Die Waldenser* sums up the whole case thus: 'Two things characterize the Baptists: "The Lord has forbidden, and Christ meant what he said."' [Page 149]

The Era of the Reformation

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

The Peasants' War of A.D. 1525-26 shook Southern and Central Germany. The age was in a fever of political excitement, and this war was not an affair of religious doctrine but of political liberty and the natural rights of man. The first German conqueror took possession and then gave lands in fee to his officers or lords, and in turn these bound their dependants to servile occupancy. The citizens took rank as nobles and 'villains,' and all others were serfs, the serfs going with the soil on which they were born. They could not leave their master's domain nor appeal from his authority, nor could he sell them. He took to himself the common pastures, the fish and game, exacting high rents or tithes, and they must submit or revolt. He also forced his religion upon them and made them act through the religious idea, their knowledge being narrowed down to a few notions on that subject. For ages Germany had boasted that liberty was the birthright of her people, boor and prince. Her primitive Teutonic population were farmers and graziers, who wandered without landmark or fixed habitation. Then, they formed themselves into little States under a kind of land ownership but with few conventional restrictions or claims to the perpetual right of property. In time, however, estates shaped themselves after the map of restricted society and revenue became hereditary. Thus feudal tenures sprang up, defense became necessary and authority grew. As wealth increased, military power and imperial rule followed, with all the exactions of blind obedience. Under this yoke the peasant was uneasy for ages, periodically waking up to his lost liberties, with new attempts to break the bond of 'villanage' and shake off his burdens.

As far back as A.D. 1073 the peasants of Thuringia and Saxony rebelled and Henry IV shed torrents of their blood. In 1476 there was a rebellion at Wurzburg; in 1491 another in Swabia; and in 1503 the peasants of Spire formed a confederacy, called the 'League-shoe,' from the device painted on their standard. The King of France stirred up a peasant outbreak in Belgium, and a rustic army 30,000 strong, with a loaf and a cheese on its banners, went forth to reduce the nobility to decency, but were themselves slain by Albert of Saxony. In 1514 'Poor Kuntze,' a farmer of Wurtemberg, led a seditious force which took several cities, threatening destruction to the clergy and nobility because of their avarice and tyranny; but the emperor and princes were alarmed and made concessions to avoid worse calamities. In Poland, Hungary and Transylvania there was another peasant revolt in 1515 against the oppressions of their rulers. Laurence, a Catholic presbyter, and Michael, a monk, were amongst their captains; 400 nobles perished, 13 bishops were impaled, only one escaping, and 70,000 people were slaughtered. In fact, the fiery waves of revolution seethed under the whole German Empire, discontent was universal and every peasant was ready to grasp the sword in revolt. But at this time, the people afterward called 'Anabaptists' were not known in Germany.

When rebellion burst forth in 1525-26, it was neither at Zwickau nor at Münster, but in the Black Forest. Church and State united to grind the faces of the poor peasants under the pretense of fighting the Turks, and they resolved to wear the iron collar no longer. John Müller, their chief, wore a red cap and cloak and carried the standard of revolt, a flag of black, white and red, through the forest region. Village after village was aroused, enthusiasm spread like wild-fire, new towns and cities threw open their gates and the people swelled the ranks from all quarters. They marched triumphantly everywhere. Nor was this uprising a mere blot upon the face of history, as is commonly represented. If it is right to rise in arms at all against tyrannical princes, this war was as holy as any that ever was waged. The peasants tell their story well in their immortal manifesto submitted to the

The Era of the Reformation

reason and justice of mankind. They held public meetings everywhere, to express their grievances and petition for redress. They prayed for the Gospel of freedom, but no relief came, and at last they stated their case in Twelve Articles, of which instrument Voltaire said that 'Lycurgus would have signed it.' Luther declared to the princes that its several articles were 'So just and right, that all feelings of consideration toward you, before God and the world, are removed.' There has been much doubt as to the authorship of this noble State paper, but Prof. Pfleiderer attributes it to Hubmeyer.

So honorable and patriotic was this document in its demands and so temperately worded that it is simply a picture of their exhausted long-suffering. They asked for the pure word of God and the right to choose their own pastors; for their exemption from all tithes, except that of wheat, of which they would pay a tenth for the support of their pastors and the poor; for relief from bondage and from such obedience to the magistrates as it is not lawful for Christians to render; for justice administered fairly and firmly according to plain, written laws; and for permission to fish in the rivers and hunt in the forests. They back each article with a forceful passage of Scripture, because, in some way, they had come to believe that Christ intended men to possess rights of conscience. They say: 'Christ bought and redeemed us by his precious blood, the shepherd as well as the noblest, none being excepted; wherefore, it accords with Scripture that we are and will be free.' They close by promising that if any of these demands be unjust they shall have no force. These articles were read publicly in every place and adopted by the people. They marched triumphantly into Wurtzburg; and before long Spire, the Palatinate, Alsace, Hesse and other great centers adopted the articles. Many of the upper classes, Catholics and Reformers, put themselves at the head of the peasants. The general uprising took place by concert, January 1st, 1525; as a signal, the Convent of Kempton was captured, and from that moment the country was in a blaze from the Rhine to the frontier of Bohemia. Monasteries, castles and cities were destroyed, and every kind of excess was committed by 300,000 men in arms maddened by intolerable oppression to the desperation of despair. All this took place ten years before the madness of Münster, showing it to be but an incident in the long German uproar.

We see here how religion entered the contests of the Peasants' War and by whom it was introduced. It is simply absurd to say that these peasants were 'Anabaptists.' Did they demand the right to choose their own pastors because their masters had forced unwelcome 'Anabaptist' shepherds upon them? The peasants were Catholics and Lutherans, and their enforced ministers were the same. Many of their masters were bishops and other clergy. The entire disturbance was simply the abnormal German mind forcing its way back in a crude manner to its native freedom, and the 'Anabaptists' cannot for any purpose be made a stalking-horse, in the face of historic truth, to force a false issue to the front. The chief actors in these scenes candidly lay before us the real facts. When the princes desired the Elector to aid them against the rebellion, he said to his brother, John: 'Cause has been given for the poor people to make this uproar... They have been dealt hardly with in many ways by us rulers, both spiritual and temporal.' The deputies from Saxony and Hesse said in the Diet at Augsburg:

'The rising of the peasants was the effect of impolitic and harsh usage.' At first, Luther, being the son of a peasant, sympathized with his own race and said to the bishops: 'It is your guilty oppression of the poor of the flock, which has driven the people to despair.' To the princes he said: 'My lords, it is not the peasants who have risen against you, it is God himself who is opposing your madness. Think not that you can escape the punishment reserved for you. For the love of God, calm your irritation; grant reasonable terms to these poor

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

people, appease these commotions by gentle methods, lest they give birth to a conflagration which shall set all Germany in a flame.' In his 'Secular Magistracy' he uses this strong language: 'God Almighty has made our princes mad, so that they imagine they can act and command their subjects as they please. God delivers the princes to their reprobate senses. They wish even to govern souls, and thus they bring upon themselves God's and all people's hatred, and in this way they perish, with the bishops, priests and monks; one rascal with the other. The people wearied of your tyranny and iniquity can no longer bear it.' He calls them 'Blockheads, who wish to be called Christian Princes.'

His work on 'Christian Liberty' drew the peasants to him as a leader, and then many of them declared for the Reformation; but up to 1525 possibly nine tenths of them were not allowed to hear the Reformation preached. For some reason, which is not clear, he suddenly turned his back on them and in that year published his infamous pamphlet 'Against the Rapacious, Murderous Peasants.' They then charged him with being a fawning sycophant to the nobles. 'From that day,' says Beard, 'he became harder, more dogmatic, less spiritual, less universal. He is no longer a leader of thought, but the builder up of a church, on conditions prescribed by the existing political constitution of Germany.' After the war the rebels returned almost as a body to the Catholics, and Luther did more to drive them back than any other man. His bitterness and cruelty toward them were appalling. He denounces them as 'faithless, treacherous, lying, disobedient, boobies and rascals, who deserved the death of soul and body.' He declared them under the ban of the God and Emperor, and he who strangles them first does right well. He charged them with 'three horrible crimes against God and man: rebellion against rulers, robbery of castles and convents, and the pretense that they fight under the Gospel.' Yet, in 1524, when Erasmus wrote him that he feared 'a bloody insurrection,' he replied: 'A common destruction of all monasteries and convents would be the best reformation, because they are useless.' Many of the peasants destroyed these and he raved against them after this coarse fashion: 'A wise man gives to his ass food, a pack-saddle and the whip; to the peasant oat straw. If they are not content, give the cudgel and the carbine, it is their due. Let us pray that they may be obedient; if not, show them no mercy. Make the musket whistle against them, or else they will be a thousand times more wicked.' He exhorted the princes to hunt them down like 'mad dogs. Strike! slay front and rear! Nothing is more poisonous, pernicious, devilish than a rebel...So wonderous are the times now, that a prince can win heaven with blood more easily than others can by prayer...Beat, strangle, hang, burn, behead and mutilate them.'

Certain writers never weary of attributing this bloody work to the 'Anabaptists.' But Bishop Jewel honestly lodges it where it belongs; while he would screen Luther, he says that the partners of this 'conspiracy had for their watch-word the name of Our Lady, and in honor of her were bound to say five Ave Marias every day.' Great concessions were made to the peasants for a time; during the war much church property was put to secular uses, many high privileges and taxes were abolished, all princes but the Emperor were brought down to the democratic level of citizens, free courts were established, the clergy were restricted to their individual churches, and uniformity was given to weights, measures and currency. But these were not secured until the war had cost possibly 150,000 lives, and the burning of several hundred castles, convents, hamlets and towns. Sometimes Luther attempted to wash his hands as innocent of the whole affair, and then again he was willing to bear the whole responsibility, but others laid the blame at his door. Erasmus said to him: 'You disclaim any connection with the insurgents, while they regard you as the author and expounder of their principles.' A controversial writer of 1532 says: 'Luther first sounded the tocsin; he cannot clear

The Era of the Reformation

himself from the rebellion, although he wrote that the common folks should not use force without the magistracy. The common people do not hear that, but they observe whatever part of Luther's sermons and writings they please.' Osiander writes: 'When Luther saw the peasants attacking not only the bishops and clergy, but also his teaching and the princes, he preached their slaughter like that of wild beasts;' and the enemies of the peasants were as bitter toward him as the rebels themselves. In 1525 Amerbach received a letter from Zasius, in which the latter says: 'Luther this pest of peace, this most pernicious of all two-legged beings; has plunged the whole of Germany into such a fury that one must regard it as a sort of security if he be not killed at once.' Sometimes, when looking round for a scape-goat, Luther attempted to throw the responsibility on 'the prophets of murder,' as he called the Zwickau men. But at other times he arrogated prerogatives to himself, for which, as Erasmus says, 'no parallel can be found, scarcely distinguishable from madness,' and for which no apology can be made, such as this: 'I, Martin Luther, have slain all the peasants in the insurrection because I commanded them to be killed; their blood is upon my head. But I put it upon the Lord God, by whose command I spoke.'

These and many other facts sufficiently show why Gieseler says that 'no traces of Anabaptist fanaticism were seen' in the Peasants' War. Some individual 'Anabaptists' were drawn into the contest, as at Mühlhausen, under the lead of Münzer, who was not in any proper use of the term an 'Anabaptist' himself. On the contrary, Keller, in his late work on the 'Reformation' (p. 370), says that Cornelius has shown that in the chief points Münzer was opposed to the Baptists. It seemed an inevitable result that religious fanaticism should be thrown into a contest in which politico-religious questions formed the chief element, and especially where such a fiery spirit was allowed to come to the front. Yet it is questionable justice, whether even he ought to be blackened from head to foot. The true story of Thomas Münzer appears to be this. He, was born in Stollberg, at the foot of the Hartz Mountains, A.D. 1490, and studied, some think at Wittenberg, others at Leipsic; that he took a degree as master of arts is clear, and that he had large knowledge of the Scriptures. After teaching in several places, he became a chaplain and confessor to the nuns at Bentitz, near Weissenfels. There he rejected transubstantiation and united himself with the Lutherans. In the following year he became one of their pastors at Zwickau. But soon he broke with the Wittenberg reformers on account of what he called Luther's 'halfness;' for he demanded a pure Church on the mystic idea, yet, in direct contradiction therewith, that it should first be established by force, and then defended by divine and miraculous interposition. After leaving that city he fled from place to place and settled at Mühlhansen near the close of 1524. There he preached his gospel of the sword and of divine revelations, actually caring little about the true character of the gospel Church. His politics soon brought him into direct conflict with the city council, which he entirely overthrew. Here he diverged from the Baptists and drew from them a severe rebuke. Grebel, in the name of the Zurich Baptists, September 5th, 1524, addressed him as follows:

'Is it true, as we hear, that you have preached in favor of an attack on the princes? If you defend war or any thing else not found in the clear word of God, I admonish you by our common salvation to abstain from these things now and hereafter...Unless every thing is to be altered after the example of the Apostles it were better to alter nothing. If this radical and complete change cannot be made at once, teach, at least, what ought to be, for it is far better that a few should be rightly instructed by the word of God, than that many should believe through deception an adulterated doctrine.'

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

In his youth certain mystical writings had given a false direction to Münzer's piety, which bent cleaved to him both as a Catholic and a Lutheran, and following only what he called the 'inner light' he fell into all sorts of vagaries. He was ambitious, eloquent, thirsted for fight and fame, and was ready to lead a faction whenever opportunity offered. At Alsted he headed a mob, broke into a church and destroyed its images; at Mühlhausen he put himself at the head of the city government, and when the Peasants' War commenced there he led its whole population in revolt. After a fierce and fantastical captaincy on his part and the slaughter of his followers, he was captured May 15th, 1525, was put to brutal torture and then beheaded.

Most of the later writers agree with the author of Johnson's 'Cyclopaedia' in saying that 'He entertained peculiar ideas of infant baptism, *similar* to those of the Anabaptists, with whom, however, he had no direct connection.' This point of similarity consisted in that he rejected infant baptism in theory, on the ground that the baptism of the Spirit, as he called it, was the only true baptism for any person, babe or adult. But, differing with the Baptists, he practiced infant baptism in form, twice a year christening all born in his congregation. In 1522 at Alstedt he threw aside the Latin liturgy and prepared one in German, in which he retained the formula for infant baptism. He also wrote against Luther's view of baptism, but not on Baptist grounds. The Swiss Baptist leaders, in the letter just cited, express the hope that as he had spoken against infant baptism he would go further and take their ground, that 'believers only are to be baptized' and that 'you decline to baptize infants,' a thing which he had not then done. He spent eight weeks in Switzerland in the autumn of 1524, and had a conference with some of these leaders at Klettgau; but they seem not to have agreed either on this subject or on the use of the sword, and he never became one of them. On this journey, according to Herzog, he met Ecolampadius at Basel and uttered views to him in no wise Baptist; this was in harmony with his whole life. The fact that he was a Roman Catholic priest and a Lutheran pastor shows that he had been christened as a babe; and there is no evidence that he was ever baptized upon his own faith or that he baptized others on their faith who had been christened as infants. It is, therefore, a singular perversity that so many writers should have attempted to palm him off as a Baptist and the father of them. Dr. Rule in his 'Spirit of the Reformation' says: 'He performed a ceremony on baptized persons which they mistook for baptism, and with his followers received the designation of Anabaptist.' But Ulhorn says that he 'did not practice rebaptism and did not form a congregation.'

The barbarities which accompanied the Peasants' War so enraged the German princes that they followed the revolt with the most sanguinary and remorseless measures. They simply massacred their subjects with frigid callousness, as butchers would kill sheep. The atrocity of the imperial party was a perfect match for that of the peasants. These once crushed, the bishops and nobles found it their turn to glut themselves in the coarsest manner upon the tears and blood of these tillers of the soil. Their fury and brutal cruelties render it doubtful whether they were not superior to the rustics in the acts of bitter revenge. They shed blood wherever they could find a vein, and in the chill temper of steel they hanged their prisoners by companies on the roadside.

But when the peasants were beaten the spirit of revolt was not broken; they were more oppressed than ever and kept their rebellion smothered. The Catholic princes charged the Lutheran princes with fostering sedition, and they retorted that it was the result of Romish persecution. They all saw that if this violence was continued worse calamities must follow, and yet they dreamed that they could tear patriotism from the hearts of their subjects by main force. They sought to cure political

The Era of the Reformation

revolution by religious strategy. But this drove the courage of the peasants into religious madness, under the delusion that they could now achieve a spiritual victory by the sword. Common sense would have prevented the sedition entirely, and then the religion of the peasants would have taken healthy care of itself; but this was not commanded. Catholic and Lutheran kept the outrages seething all over the land, and at last, ten years after Múnzer, came Múnster.

Few writers have treated this subject with greater care and clearness than Ypeig and Dermout in their *History of the Netherland Church*. They say of the Múnster men that while they are known in history as 'Anabaptists,' they ought by no means to be known as Baptists. 'Let the reader,' they request, 'keep this distinction constantly in mind in the statement which we now make respecting them...Since the peculiar history of the Anabaptists and Baptists has exerted so powerful an influence on the Reformation of the Church in this country, the nature of our historical work requires that we present in its true light the whole matter from its origin.'

After speaking at great length of the Múnster men and their excesses, especially of their leaders, they say of Mathiesen:

'He laid as the foundation of his new system of doctrine that teaching respecting the holy ordinance of baptism which, in part, had long before been maintained by the Baptists. He considered infant baptism not to be of the least advantage to the religious interests of a Christian. In his opinion baptising should be delayed to years of discretion and after a profession of faith on the part of the baptized. Therefore every one who passed over to the community of which he was the head must first be baptized, *even if he had been baptized in another society at an adult age*. When he renounced his confession of faith he also renounced his baptism...It can now be easily understood how the followers of the Múnster leaders received the name of Anabaptists or *re-baptizers*. So far as their views of baptism are concerned, these could easily have been tolerated, and they need not have been hated by reasonable persons on account of these. But besides these they taught doctrines fraught with important errors, partly founded on old Pelagianism, partly on Unitarianism, partly on Mysticism and partly on other impure principles.

'Yet, even with these opinions they could have been suffered to exist had they behaved themselves properly as members of society. But their peculiar notions of Christian freedom were extravagant in the highest degree, and with these were united all sorts of foolish ideas derived from an incorrect interpretation of the Apocalypse, ideas of a thousand years' kingdom at hand, in which the saints shall reign with Christ and enjoy every kind of physical and spiritual pleasure. The community imbibed these opinions from Mathiesen, and by these their sensual feelings were so greatly excited that they united themselves to him, for the promotion of a happy life here upon earth, with impetuous ardor and sanguinary violence to overthrow entirely the thrones of princes, if it were possible, and of this they had no doubt. Mathiesen, like another Mohammed, sought through fire and sword to effect the downfall of all governments which were within the reach of his foolhardy undertakings, and to found an everlasting kingdom, which, under his royal administration, should spread itself over the whole earth. He should conquer the world and triumph over all the enemies of the kingdom of God. Then Christ should appear in the clouds of heaven and confirm him in his regal dignity, depose the pope as Antichrist, and solemnly place himself in the same situation as the highest ruler over the Church...Since the enlisting of the rebel Anabaptists happened in this manner, it is sufficiently evident that the great majority cannot be supposed to have been Baptists in heart or belief. *They were people of every variety of religious beliefs, and many of them of no religion at all in heart, although, they aided the Protestant cause.*

'From the nature of the case the majority of the Romanists knew no difference between the various Protestant parties and sects, and would make no distinction. Hence the abhorrence only deserved by some of the Anabaptists was bestowed upon all Protestants. The honest Baptists suffered the most severely from this prejudice, because they were considered by the people to be the same and were called by the same name. The

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

fact that they agreed in their opinions in respect to the holy ordinance of baptism was the unfortunate occasion of this thing. On this account the Baptists in Flanders and in Friesland suffered the most terrible persecutions. In the next place the anger of the Romanists was excited against the Zwinglians, since these agreed most nearly with the Baptists in their simple religious rites, and had deviated most widely from the ancient Church. Besides these, the Lutherans also were compelled to undergo the most distressing persecutions on account of the indignation of the Romish government and priesthood at the wicked conduct of the Anabaptists. It is to these disturbances caused at Münster that we must ascribe the stringent measures against the Lutherans at Deventer in 1534-35. Lutheranism was considered the fruitful source of all manner of corruption in Church and State.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Netherland Church*, Chap. on History of Dutch Baptists]

Here is a most important point brought out clearly. If the Lutherans and Zwinglians were confounded with the 'wicked Anabaptists,' as our authors call the Münster men, how much more easily did both Catholics and Protestants come to confound the 'honest Baptists' with these madmen. The Dutch historians go on to state that:

'The Baptists suffered the most, yet the entire mass of the Protestants were more or less injured. This will appear if attention be directed to the edicts which since that time have been issued by the Emperor for the purpose of retarding the work of the Reformation. In these all Christians who separated from the Romish Church were called Anabaptists...The Emperor and all his statesmen knew that the Baptists generally had, both by word and deed, testified that their peace-loving hearts abhorred the seditious conduct of the Anabaptists...In this manner the attempt was made to throw sand in the eyes of the superficial thinkers among the Romanists. It was no very difficult task to do this. Since the government comprehended all the Protestants under the general name of Anabaptists, the shortsighted Romanists confiding in its superior discernment, could easily be brought to the same unfavorable point of view...The Anabaptists seemed to them to be a lawless people, consisting partly of Baptists, partly of Zwinglians, partly of Lutherans – men who formerly adhered to the old Catholic faith, but who had now entirely renounced religion...They would not see that which they might have seen. How evident it was that although the Baptists appeared to agree with the Anabaptists in respect to the baptismal question, the former entirely disapproved of the course pursued by the latter. For it had been, and continued to be, a doctrine of the Baptists, that the bearing of arms was very unbecoming to a Christian. Did not the Anabaptists pursue a course directly the opposite of this?...Who could have imagined that such a purpose prevailed among the Baptists, who were the meekest of Christians? And yet the Romanists, without dissent, agree in ascribing these things to all the Baptists. We have nowhere seen clearer evidences of the injurious influence of the prejudice, nowhere have we met with a more obstinate unwillingness to be correctly informed, and a more evident disposition to silence those who better understood the truth of the matter. Prejudice, when once deeply imbibed, blinds the eye, perplexes the understanding, silences the instincts of the heart and destroys the love of truth and rectitude.

'We shall now proceed more at length to notice the defense of the worthy Baptists. The Baptists are Protestant Christians entirely different from the Anabaptists in character. They were descendants from the Ancient Waldenses, whose teachings were evangelical and tolerably pure, and who were scattered by severe persecutions in various lands, and long before the time of the Reformation of the Church were existing in the Netherlands. In their flight they came thither in the latter part of the twelfth century. In this country and in Flanders, in Holland and Zealand they lived as quiet inhabitants, not intermeddling with the affairs of Church and State, in the villages tilling the land, and in the cities working at some trade or engaged in traffic, by which means each one was well supplied and in no respect burdensome to society. Their manner of life was simple and exemplary. No great crime was known among them. Their religious teaching was simple and pure, and was exemplified in their daily conduct.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Netherland Church*, Chap. on History of Dutch Baptists]

In 1524-25 Münster had risen and been subdued with the other cities of Southern and Central Germany, and things flowed once more in the old channel. Then, in 1532, Rothmann, a very

The Era of the Reformation

powerful Lutheran pastor of Münster, stirred it so effectually that six entire parishes fell into the hands of the Lutherans, and nothing was left to the Catholics but the monastery and cathedral. The Lutherans took possession of the city government, drove away the Catholic bishop and clergy, and equipped troops to protect the Lutheran religion. The spirit of insurrection spread and the two prevailing sects were drawn into the movement, when, in 1532, Rothmann, whose influence was sweeping all before him, suddenly avowed himself an 'Anabaptist' and ran into every kind of wild vagary. He taught an illumination of the Spirit which superseded the need of the written word of God, and afforded new revelations by visions and dreams; that rank and station should be abolished; a community of goods established; that Christ was about to return to the earth; and that it must be conquered to him by force of arms, that he might reign here a thousand years.

Others flocked about him, amongst them Bockhold and Mathiesen. These soon outran Rothmann, and each in turn became prophet and king. They called Münster 'Mount Zion,' and proclaimed it the center of the world, for there Christ would right the wrongs of all the peasants, and establish the millennial kingdom of God. They proclaimed a theocratic government, put many to death and confiscated the estates of the citizens. The population soon became a rabble of all religious sects and none. Bockhold, the sham monarch, inaugurated a reign of terror, in which every vile passion was let loose and every crime was committed without decency or limit. The horrible violence which reigned for about a year threw common humanity to the winds, so frantic and sanguinary was the madness; and the cause of virtue is best served by avoiding the monstrous recital in detail. Münster fell completely under that general law of political, moral and fanatical epidemics which always works out such results, where superstition first makes men cruel, and then fiery passions sway their whole being. The town was taken June 24th 1535, and in the following January the ringleaders were put to death. Violence has ever been the natural consequence of soulless oppression, and yet any attempt to excuse the outrages of Münster is itself a crime. The wrongs of these people lived long after the Peasants' War, and could not die in their revengeful memories. Both the oppressors and the oppressed acted more like demons than men, and the result was seen in that desperation of all subject races when brought to bay after long degradation.

That ignorance is inexcusable which attributes the rise of Baptists to 'The period of the Münster kingdom;' much rather can it be proved that in the lands mentioned Baptist Churches existed for many decades, and even centuries. No greater injustice can be done to any people than has been done to the German Baptists, in the attempt to saddle them with the evils of the Peasants' War and the villainies of Münster. Not one of their old and acknowledged leaders was found in the uproar either at Muhlhausen or Münster, and but few of their people were mixed up with these proceedings. As to numbers, they were an insignificant sect in Germany proper at that time, and as a body on principle, they stood aloof from filling the magistracy, from oaths and the sword. In Switzerland, where the Peasants' War raged as violently as in Germany, they positively refused to unite their fortunes with the peasants, and their course there throws light upon their conduct in Germany. Grebel and Simon Stumpf, to their honor, sympathized with the down-trodden people, but their principles would not allow them to draw the sword. Grebel branded the oppressors as 'The tyrants of our forefathers,' but he denied that he had ever thought of subverting government. When the Swiss peasantry revolted in the Gruningen district, they attacked the cloisters of Bubikon and Ruti with their Zwinglian pastors in their ranks. Their Baptist neighbors, meanwhile, gave them their moral support, but left the sword sheathed for conscience' sake. They relied upon the spirit and

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

morals of the Gospel to enlighten the souls of the people, believing that this would work out their social liberties too. Hubmeyer aided the peasants at Waldshut much in the same way. Zimmerman, the historian of the Peasants' War, says: 'In Waldshut and the Evangelical Brotherhood there were heads capable of grasping the bold and great thought of uniting the forces of the peasants, split up as they were among countless leaders, in one purpose and aim: namely, the restoration of the old liberty of the empire, and the overthrow of existing un-Christian oppression. To this end brotherhoods were formed and armed throughout the entire German empire, and communication by means of correspondence and messengers was regularly sustained.' This 'Brotherhood' was entered by 138 cities, and by counts, knights and bishops innumerable, but by few Baptists. A branch was organized at Waldshut, which city Muller entered with 1,200 peasants; but when the persecuted Baptists there were charged with heresy and sedition, they uniformly denied the second charge, although they delighted in the doctrinal heresy charged upon them. Jacob Gross, a disciple of Hubmeyer, fled from Waldshut rather than bear arms. When Bruppacher was examined on the rack at Zurich, he said that he had never heard his brethren 'Teach that there should be no magistracy; or that in case they should be successful they would overthrow the State.' And they uniformly denied that they had any thing to do with sedition, while doctrine and not sedition was the burden of their oral discussions and literature.

Happily, in modern times, the calumny that the Baptists were responsible for the horrors of Münster has lost its edge and the truth has found its way to the surface. Brandt attributes them to some 'enthusiastical Anabaptists,' but is careful to add: 'Not to the well-meaning Baptists.' Schaff pronounces it 'The greatest injustice to make the Anabaptists, as such, responsible for the extravagances that led to the tragedy of Münster.' Uhlhorn says that 'Sedition, or a call to sedition, is not chargeable against the Anabaptists of Southern Germany at this time; I have found no trace of any fellowship with the seditious peasants.' But their contemporaries, who knew them well, bear the same testimony. Capito, their stern opponent at Strasburg, says that he must 'openly confess' that most of them manifest 'godly fear and pure zeal. Before God I testify that I cannot say that their contempt for life springs from blindness rather than from a divine impulse.' Wetzel, the Catholic, declared that 'Whoever speaks of God and a Christian life, or earnestly strives after personal improvement, passes as an arch Anabaptist.' And Frank, who wrote in 1531, says of them: 'They teach love, faith and the cross. They are long-suffering and heroic in affliction...The world feared they would cause an uproar, but they have proved innocent everywhere. If I were emperor, pope, or Turk, I would not fear revolt less from any people than this...All the Baptists oppose those who would fight for the Gospel with the sword. Some object to war or any use of the sword, but the most favor self-defense and justifiable war.'

The truth is out of joint somewhere when men charge them with enmity to civil government, with being revolutionary and the veriest butchers, because their faith forbade them to draw the sword. Bayle tells us that Turenne remonstrated with Van Benning for tolerating them, when he replied: 'They are good people, and the most commodious to a State in the world, because they do not aspire to places of dignity. We fear no rebellion from a sect that makes it an article of their faith never to bear arms. They edify the people by the simplicity of their manners, and apply themselves to arts and business, without dissipating their substance in luxury and debauchery.' Nay, Bayle himself says that their great enemy DeBres 'Says nothing to insinuate that the Anabaptist martyrs suffered death for taking up arms against the State, or for stirring up the subjects to rebel, but

The Era of the Reformation

represents them as a harmless sort of people...'Tis certain that many of them who suffered death for their opinions had no thought of making any insurrection.' [Dict. Art. Anabaptists] A few madmen of Münster, with Rothmann at their head, aroused their new converts to their views, and so brought disgrace upon their name; but if any of the acknowledged leaders had to do with the vile conspiracy, who and where were they?

Melancthon says that he made particular inquiry whether Storch was with Münzer in his uprising, but he found nothing to justify his suspicions. And Hase adds: 'No one can prove that Storch was guilty of direct political aims. He went about seeking out the elect, who forsook home and their native land for the sake of the truth.' [Neue Propheten, p. 101] Cornelius sums up the whole matter, covering the time from 1525 onward, when he says: 'Anabaptism and the Peasants' War had no conscious connection. The two movements were generally distinct.' So much has been said of these disgraceful transactions at Münster, and said so rashly, to the injury of Baptists, that one is tempted to add cumulative evidence on the subject, even to prolixity. The mean-spirited charges were flung in their faces by men who persecuted them at that time, and they repudiated them with deep feeling, as cruelly adding insult to injury. This side of the case must be noticed. Keller quotes an old chronicle to show that Greble and Mantz were called 'false prophets' by the fanatical libertines in Abbacell, whom they rejected and combated, keeping clear of them in entangling alliance because they were libertines. [Vol. ii, 35] The Schleithem Articles as well as many private writings throw a strong light upon this subject. Not only does the sixth article, on 'The Sword,' relieve them from this odium, but they wash their hands of the revolutionary transactions at Zwickau and Muhlhausen, the first in 1521, the last in 1524, under Münzer. They say to the Baptist congregations:

'Scandal has been brought in amongst us by certain false brethren, so that some have turned from the faith, imagining to use for themselves the freedom of the Spirit and of Christ. But such have erred from the truth and have given themselves (to their condemnation) to the wantonness and freedom of the flesh; and have thought faith and love may do and suffer all things, and nothing would injure or condemn them because they believed.' They warn that 'faith' does 'not thus prove itself, does not bring forth and do such things, as these false brethren and sisters do and teach...Beware of such, for they serve not our Father, but their father the devil. But ye are not so, for they who are in Christ have crucified the flesh, with all its lusts and longings.' After they have given the seven articles, they say: 'These are the points which some brethren have understood wrongly and not in accordance with the true meaning, and thereby have confused many weak consciences, so that the name of God has been grossly blasphemed. For which cause it was necessary that we should be united in the Lord, which, God be praised, has taken place...Mark all those who walk not according to the simplicity of divine truth, which is contained in this letter, as it was apprehended by us in the assembly, in order that each one among us be governed by the rule of discipline, and henceforth the entrance among us of false brethren and sisters be guarded against. Separate the evil from you.'

One of the Baptist martyrs, Dryzinger, in 1538, only three years after the craze, was examined as to whether he and his brethren approved of these vile proceedings. He answered that 'They would not be Christians if they did.' Hans, of Overdam, another martyr, complained of these false accusations of violence. He said: 'We are daily belied by these who say that we would defend our faith with the sword, as they of Münster did. The Almighty God defend us from such abominations.' Young Dosie, a beautiful character, who was a prisoner to the Governor of Friesland, and endured cruel slaughter for his love to Christ, was asked by the governor's wife if he and his brethren were not of that disgraceful people who took up the sword against the magistrates. With the sweet

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

innocence of a child he replied: 'No, madam, these persons greatly erred. We consider it a devilish doctrine to resist the magistrates by the outward sword and violence. We would much rather suffer persecution and death at their hands and whatever is appointed us to suffer.' All this is no more than Erasmus said of them in 1529: 'The Anabaptists have seized no churches, have not conspired against the authorities, nor deprived any man of his estate or goods.' They had no sturdier foe than Bullinger, yet he renders this verdict: 'Say what we will of the Baptists, I see nothing in them but earnestness, and I hear nothing of them except that they will not take an oath, will not do any wrong and aim to treat every man justly. In this, it seems to me, there is nothing out of the way.'

But Cornelius tells us plainly: 'All these excesses were condemned and opposed wherever a large assembly of the brethren afforded an opportunity to give expression to the religious consciousness of the Baptist membership.' This was the case at Augsburg, where a formal convention of their leaders discountenanced all political measures. No one outside of their number has better described their advanced position as a people in all respects than Fusslin, in his preface to vol. ii of *Beitrag*:

'The Reformers rejected the superstitious abuses attached to the sacraments; the Anabaptists restored the sacraments themselves to memorials for believers. The Reformers preached against unnecessary bloodshed; the Anabaptists denounced war of *every kind*. The Reformers protested against Catholic tyranny; the Anabaptists denied to any civil power authority in matters of religion. The Reformers decried public vices; the Anabaptists excluded the immoral from their fellowship. The Reformers sought to limit usury and covetousness; the Anabaptists made them impossible by the practice of communism. The Reformers educated their preachers; the Anabaptists looked for the inner anointing. The Reformers condemned the priests for simony; the Anabaptists made every preacher depend on the labor of his own hands and the free gifts of the people.' The Baptists of our day are the first and the freest to wash their hands of all the black deeds at Münster, not only because they are black, but also because their true brethren of the sixteenth century renounced them as honestly and earnestly. Several of the Münster men professed some things in common with the Baptists, but more that the Baptists detested. Fusslin, with characteristic impartiality, says: 'There was a great difference between Anabaptists and Anabaptists. There were these amongst them who held strange doctrines, but this cannot be said of the whole sect. If we should attribute to every sect whatever senseless doctrines two or three fanciful fellows have taught, there is no one in the world to whom we could not ascribe the most abominable errors.' He clearly alludes here to the Münster teachers. But, as clearly, he did not look upon them as the fathers of the Baptists in Germany. Without doubt a handful of Baptists in that city ran into polygamy, the only instance in all the centuries where a congregation of them has embraced that abomination. But even there the shocking practice was condemned and resisted at every step. Goebel tells us (I, p. 189) that two hundred moral and moderate Baptists in Münster heroically withstood the iniquity, and it was not established until forty-eight of this number had been put to a bloody slaughter for their resistance. So that in the struggle nearly fifty true Baptists fell martyrs to purity in that German Sodom; and at last, the ministers and most of the people yielded to the clamor for polygamy under this reign of terror.

While this handful of madmen had not been educated in visions, violence and indecency by the Baptist leaders of Switzerland and Germany, others had impregnated them with these doctrines from their cradle. For centuries these teachings and practices had filled the air. The doctrine of wild visions, both of God and the devil, was taught in the monastic institutions, and wonders of this sort were blazoned abroad by bishops, cardinals and popes everywhere. The Catholic communion believed then and still believes in new revelations from God. Saints innumerable are mentioned who heard voices from heaven, had visits from the Virgin, the Father, the Son and the angels – as Ignatius, Aquinas, Teresa, Felix and Anthony. Francis was not only inspired to read men's minds and consciences as well as their faces, but he received the rules of his new order of monks directly

The Era of the Reformation

from God. Like John of Leyden he appointed twelve apostles, and one of them hanged himself to boot. He also 'prophesied' that he should become 'a great prince' and be adored over the whole earth. Bridget, Catharine and Rosa, with endless nuns, were prophetesses. Teresa took the crucified Christ by the hand, was espoused to him and went up to heaven in the shape of a white dove. The Münster men never had such dreams, raptures, apparitions, phantasms and ecstasies as the canonized saints of Rome. Neither did Luther help the lunatics to sounder doctrine when he saw the devil in the form of a 'dog,' 'a whisp of straw,' a 'wild boar' and 'a star;' nor when he threw the inkstand at his head. As to violence:

Catholics and Protestants taught them that tradition, reason and Scripture made it the pious duty of saints to torture and burn men as heretics out of pure love for their holiness and salvation. Protestants told them that it was sacred duty to slaughter those as schismatics, sectaries, malignants who corrupted the Church and would not live in peace with the Reformed. Who educated these fanatics in Christian love and gentleness? The law of their times was to repel force with force. When the Münster men came into power they applied the reasoning of their tutors in atrocity, saying: 'Our bounden duty is now to rid the earth of Christ's enemies and ours, as they would rid it of us.' And who will say that all these murderers did not stand on the same plane of outrage and barbarity in this respect? As to immoralities:

Every pure mind shrinks from the abhorrent indecencies of Münster. And who had set them this example? They practiced polygamy; but ten long years before this, 1524, Luther had written: 'The husband must be certified in his own conscience and by the word of God that polygamy is permitted to him. As for me, I avow that I cannot set myself in opposition to men marrying several wives, or assert that such a course is repugnant to the Holy Scripture.' About the same time he preached his famous sermon on 'Marriage,' which chastity may well pass in silence, beyond this one expression: 'Provided one has faith, adultery is no sin.' It was not the madmen of Münster but Martin Luther who said: 'Whatever is allowed in the law of Moses as to marriage is not forbidden by the Gospel.' His course in the shameful affair of Philip, Landgrave of Hesse, shows that although he 'did not wish to see this practice (polygamy) introduced among Christians,' yet he held to his old views. Hence, in 1539, four years after the Münster abomination, Philip told him, with what Michelet calls 'a daring frankness,' that he must marry another wife or continue his adulteries, saying: 'I have read with great attention the Old and New Testaments, and I can discover no other resource save that of taking another wife; for I neither can nor will change my course of life; I call God to witness my words.' Yet with that unblushing brow before him, Luther, with Melancthon, Bucer and four others, signed and sealed a document, attempting to dissuade the Landgrave, but failing of that, closed by saying: 'If, however, your highness is utterly determined upon marrying a second wife, we are of opinion that it ought to be done secretly.' Antony Corvinus the fourth signer of this reply to Philip, gives an account of the examination of John of Leyden, at which he was present, in which John gave his seven articles of faith. He intrenched himself behind Luther's position, saying that they followed 'the example of the patriarchs,' declared marriage a political institution, and then put in the same plea as Philip. In Philip's letter to the Wittenberg divines he said: 'Ever since my marriage I have lived constantly in a state of adultery and fornication, and as I will not forego this course of life, I am interdicted from taking the holy communion; for St. Paul expressly says, "The adulterer shall not see the kingdom of heaven."' John of Leyden adopted this plea, saying, in his seventh article: 'It is better to have a plurality of wives than a multitude of prostitutes. God be our judge.' Henry, the

Chapter 4 - Peasants' War – Mühlhausen and Münster

Duke of Brunswick, berated Luther for his approval of Philip's bigamy; when Luther replied, with his usual mildness, in his famous article, 'Against the Buffoon:' 'The duke has daily swallowed devils, and he is chained in hell with the chains of divine judgment.' He then exhorts the pastors to denounce the duke from the pulpit as one who 'has been damned by divine judgment.' But when he revised his pamphlet, he said to Melancthon that he had been altogether too moderate.

And what better examples had the Catholics set the Münster men in the line of purity? From the ninth century down, as Bowden says, in his 'Life of Hildebrand:' 'The infamies prevalent among the clergy are to be alluded to, not detailed.' The open licentiousness of the popes was appalling. The popes of the fifteenth century were profligate and debased beyond belief. Innocent VIII publicly boasted of the number of his illegitimate children. Alexander was a monster of iniquity, who gave dispensations for crimes that cannot be written. Baronius says that the vilest harlots domineered in the papal see, at their pleasure changed sees, appointed bishops, and actually thrust into St. Peter's chair their own gallants, false popes. Take simply the case of John XII Bowden wrote: 'The Lateran palace was disgraced by becoming a receptacle for courtezans; and decent females were terrified from pilgrimages to the threshold of the Apostles, by the reports which were spread abroad of the lawless impurity and violence of the representative and successor of two others equally vile. But these were no worse than Sixtus IV, who erected a house of ill-fame in Rome, the inmates of which, according to Dr. Jortin, 'paid his holiness a weekly tax, which amounted sometimes to 20,000 ducats a year.' The purest spirits in the hierarchy blush to tell the hard narrative of monastic life in the sixteenth century, although it made pretension to spotless virtue. ArchhishopMorton, 1490, accused the Abbot of St. Albans with emptying the nunneries of Pray and Sapnell of modest women and filling them with vile females. The clergy kept concubines openly from the pope down. Ten priests addressed a letter to the Bishop of Constance, asking permission to marry, confessing that their wicked mistresses had been their 'scandal and ruin.' He absolved them and others on the payment of five gulden; and Hottinger writes that the revenue from this source was 7,000 gulden. This was a full match for the obscenities of Münster. Such transactions in sacred life led these madmen to throw away all license in civil life.

A word as to the nude indecencies of Münster must finish this chapter. People appeared naked at the baptistery and in public places. Where had they learned these revolting practices? For centuries the fanaticism of Rome had immersed all persons in a state of nudity. As far back as A.D. 347, the Ritual of Jerusalem required the candidates for baptism 'to put off the garments wherewith they are clothed.' Brenner, the great Catholic authority, says: 'For sixteen hundred years the candidate for immersion was completely undressed.' The Synod of Cologne, in 1280, carried this fanaticism to such an extent, that they decreed that an infant must have water poured upon its head in the name of the Trinity to save it from perdition, if dying, when but half-born. How like Lambecius, who blamed the Danes and Swedes for delaying baptism through 'bashfulness and shame Since, formerly men and women laying aside their bashfulness, their whole bodies being entirely nude, were baptized in the presence of all; and that not by sprinkling, indeed, but by immersion or sinking them.' These are the men [Catholics] who now shudder at Münster! These are the men who formerly put hundreds of thousands upon the rack, of every rank, ago and sex, to be tortured.

Rome practiced the same indecencies in flagellation, borrowed from the heathen feast of Lupercale, in which, according to Virgil and Plutarch, young noblemen walked through the streets

The Era of the Reformation

naked, cutting themselves with whips and rods, in austerity, while sacrifices were burning to the gods. The same barbarity was practiced by Christian women in France, Mezaray being authority. For two centuries this flagellant madness ran through Bavaria, Austria, the Upper Rhine and Italy, nay, through Saxony itself. These morbid fanatics practiced all stages of undress, formed a brotherhood, swept in thousands through these lands, singing hymns, having revelations from angels and the Virgin, and with a letter from Christ himself, which they exhibited in their pilgrimages. Motley calls the Münster men, 'Furious fanatics, who deserved the mad-house rather than the scaffold:' and how much better were Catholics or Protestants, in practicing the same things? It is hardly worth while sending the Münster fiends to perdition alone, *nolens volens*, for unbearable beastliness. There was this difference between their butchery and the legal murders of Protestant and Catholic, called martyrdoms, namely: that theirs were acts of violence perpetrated in a religious craze or frenzy, while the others were the result of deliberate legislation, put on the statute-book, in that icy sublimity which dresses itself in the guise of human and divine law. But history will mete out to all these parties that tardy justice which will be honestly accepted by all in due time.

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

The German and Swiss Reformation preceded the English in point of date, all being due to the same causes, while each in a sense stood alone. When Wessel, the mystic, died Zwingli was a boy of five years, Luther of six, Erasmus was a man of twenty- two, Reuchlin of thirty-four and Melancthon was unborn. Luther did not nail his theses to the cathedral door at Wittenberg till 1517, but the Bohemian Reformers sent a delegation to Erasmus at Antwerp as early as 1511, asking him to point out any errors in their Confession of Faith, but he found none. Sebastian Frank, who published his history A.D. 1531, says: 'The Picards in Bohemia are divided into two, or as some say, into three parties, the large, small, and very small, who hold in all things with the Anabaptists, have all things common, baptize no children, and do not believe in the real presence.' So far from finding the origin of the so-called 'Anabaptist' movement in the lawless extravagance of Munster, 1534-35, it is seen that the Swiss history of the Baptists which has been given, preceded that date, and a similar history marks their movements in Bohemia. Addis and Arnold, in their *Catholic Dictionary*, say that various sects repudiated infant baptism in the Middle Ages, and they trace not only a genetic but an historical connection between these and the Baptists, – agreeing with the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, that 'The continuity of a sect is to be traced in its principles, and not in its adherents.'

MORAVIA After Hubmeyer fled from Zurich in 1526, he made his way to Nicholsburg in Moravia, where he established the Baptist cause. This became the field of his labor and the churches multiplied rapidly, partly from the banished of all lands and partly from new converts. They were no more welcome to the king and emperor there than elsewhere, but the rulers stood in fear of the Turks at the time; the Hussites were passive, yet welcomed the Baptists to their estates, so that they could preach and celebrate the ordinances, and they had peace. Ulimann had also fled from Switzerland to Moravia, but in 1530, he returned to persuade his Baptist brethren to leave their Alpine home and seek freedom there too. Full of hope, many gathered their little property and started on this long pilgrimage, but were waylaid at Waldsee, and because they would not renounce their principles, Ulimann and the men were beheaded, while the women were drowned.

The question concerning the use of the sword soon divided the Moravian Baptists, Hubmeyer believing in its civil use, but a party of non-resistants withdrew to Austerlitz in 1528. That party subdivided in 1531, when Reublin, another Swiss Baptist, took a company of one hundred and fifty to Auspitz, on the plea that they had not sufficient freedom at Austerlitz in public speaking, that their brethren intermarried with unbelievers and that they were not treated with equality. This party soon fell into 'vain janglings,' and Reublin. was excluded for withholding from the common funds. [Cornelius, ii, p. 72] Jacob Huter, however, soon restored harmony by means of a common constitution, and his followers were known as the Huterites.

The Baptists increased to sixty congregations in twenty years, each numbering several hundreds; besides, many settled in Hungary and Transylvania to avoid persecution. [Krip. Tyrol. Anab. p. 17] By vote of the people, each congregation chose its pastor and deacons. [Do., p. 18] Their pastors were good Bible students, and their people were fond of sacred song, some of their hymns numbering forty-five verses each; for they put an exhortation, a Bible story or the history of a martyr into rhyme. They formed themselves into a community under the direction of one head, and divided into households; each with 'ministers of the word' and 'ministers of need,' and the whole fraternity labored. They taught their children in a common school, and when old enough put them to a trade. Marriage was restricted to their own sect, and their joint earnings went into a common treasury, out

The Era of the Reformation

of which all were supported.

De Schweinitz, a little later than the middle of the century, says of them: 'In Moravia there were many Anabaptists...This sect, which numbered seventy communities in Moravia, was divided into three factions; the communists, who kept up a community of goods, the Gabrielites, and the Sabbatarians. It is said of the Anabaptists, that they were the best farmers, raised the best cattle, had the best vineyards, brewed the best beer, owned the best flour mills, and engaged on a large scale in almost every kind of trade known in their day.' He further says that in spite of frequent persecutions they prospered. 'Their industrial pursuits, for which they became celebrated, won the good-will of powerful families among the nobility; and when Maximilian expressed his surprise that they had not been extirpated in his father's time and casting his tolerance to the winds, proposed to drive them out of the country, the Upper House of the Diet protested against such a measure as destructive to the interests of the kingdom. Hence they were allowed to remain, but loaded with taxes.' [*Hist. Unitas Fratrum*, p. 238-361, 1885]

Keller says: 'In Moravia, where the Baptists for a long time found influential protectors, persecution begun in 1528. At Easter, in Brunn, Thomas Waldhausen, with two associates, was burned, and at Znaym and Olmutz several of the leaders were put to death. Also at Bruck, in Steinmark, nine men were beheaded and three women were drowned.' [*Preussische Jahrbucher*, 1882]

Erhard tells of a curious Catholic, who visited them and evidently 'cast a wishful eye' upon their full cheer. [*Moravian Baps.*, pp. 32-45] He complained:

'They will not have any poor among them, the sisters dress like the nobility in silk and satin, though they are only waiters and porters wives. They have no lack of grain, but gather every year enough for seven. They have plenty of ducats and gold crowns, so that they paid one bill of twenty-two hundred gulden. Their tables are loaded with hare, fish, fowl, nor do they lack good Holland cheese. They ride in beautiful wagons and on fine horses. Their stalls are filled with fat cattle, swine and sheep. They monopolize all the trades, and it looks as though they would soon buy out the lords.'

Good for the 'Anabaptists,' for once they evinced grand common sense, and none the less for keeping that hungry monk out, even if his eyes did water. Still, they were kind, and when famine passed over the land they had enough and much to spare for their neighbors. Then their abundance made Moravia a sort of 'Promised Land' for their pinched brethren who came flocking to them from other countries, for bread and liberty. When these gaunt wretches arrived they said: 'Brother, it is ours by God's gift. In your poverty we will give you and your little ones food and clothes, shelter and schools.' And they had many such calls, as in one year sixteen hundred Baptist emigrants left Switzerland and Bavaria for Moravia. Their manner of life was very frugal, they used few words, were vehement in disputation, and willing to die, but not to yield.' [*Schultetus*, p. 265] They called themselves 'Apostolical;' and elected their general superintendent, who instructed them in the rules of faith and life, and prayed with them every morning before they went to work. A quarter of an hour before eating they covered their faces with their hands in meditation. Their dress was plain and dark, and they conversed much on the future. [*Zedlers, Universal Lex.*, vol. 55, p. 2215] Erhard, an eye-witness, wrote in Latin rhyme: 'Would that Diogenes might see your baptism and make sport of your washings. You will sometime be called Trito-Baptists, when you are immersed in the Stygian lake.' This evidently alludes to their method of baptizing believers, for they denounced

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

infant baptism severely. When Zeiler visited them long afterwards, 1618, he reported them as still living after the same simple order, and says that they numbered seventy thousand. His account of their communion is very interesting.

'In summer, they would gather at some central point to "break bread," as they called the communion. Long tables were arranged with seats for the company. The day preceding, preparatory sermons were preached, with another early on the day of the celebration. After reading the words of the institution and a prayer, a slice of a large loaf of bread was handed to the presiding preacher, in this case one of the nobility, he broke off a piece and passed the rest to his neighbor, and so on from table to table. Slice after slice was broken until every one had taken a morsel. In like manner the wine was poured out of large vessels into smaller ones and passed around.' [Do.]

When we bear in mind the constantly recurring outbursts of persecution, their steady increase seems remarkable. They were deprived of HUBMEYER, their great leader, in 1528, seven years before the Münster uproar. The Austrians imprisoned him at Vienna, where Faber and Beck tried earnestly to lead him back into the fold of Rome, but he would not yield a hair's-breadth and was burnt, March 10th. Three days after, his wife was thrown from a bridge into the Danube with a heavy stone around her neck, and drowned. He was a great character and a prolific author of large literary ability. His motto, 'Truth is immortal,' gives the key-note to his high, bold and logical spirit. His full mind overflowed with original thought, delighting in that keen insight which eagerly hails the truth of God without gloss as supreme. His translations of the Gospels, Epistles to the Romans and Corinthians, with his twenty-four works, are prohibited in the Index [of Prohibited Books] at Rome, although he was one of the 'most pure and amiable men of his age.' Herzog, in speaking of his great controversy with Œcolampadius, remarks: 'From what has come down to us concerning the discussion, the claim (of victory) is not a matter of surprise. The only direct consequence of the whole affair was to confirm the Anabaptists in their position.' [*Life of Œcol*, I, S. 312]

Here is a specimen of his ability, shown in his colloquy with the great professor at Basel:

Œcolampadius. 'It is ridiculous to say the Christian Church has been in the wrong so many centuries.'

Hubmeyer. 'That is a loose argument, commonly used by the godless. You must be hard pushed to brandish this sword of straw. If it had been sharp it would have pierced you long ago, when handled by the papists.'

Œcolampadius. 'It has been the custom of Mother Church to baptize infants.'

Hubmeyer. 'Yes, of the papal, but not of the Christian Mother Church. Not of the Father of the Church, who is in heaven, or he would have his Son plant it.'

Œcolampadius. 'What need is there of separation on account of water?'

Hubmeyer. 'It is not a matter of water, but of the high command and baptism of *Christ*. *Water is not baptism.*'

The Era of the Reformation

Eccolampadius. 'I will prove my statement out of Exodus.'

Hubmeyer. 'Baptism is a ceremony of the New Testament. I demand a text with which you support infant baptism out of the New Testament.'

Another asked, 'Whether Christ did not entitle those to baptism who were of the kingdom of heaven.'

Hubmeyer answered: 'Tell me, were the infants our Lord loved, embraced, and blessed, *previously* baptized or not? If yes: you throw away your argument against those who keep them back from baptism. If no; am I to understand that Christ calls, embraces and loves unbaptized children? What need have they, then, of baptism?'

He had met Zwingli much in the same way, when the Reformer said: 'The child is born of Christian parents.'

Hubmeyer. 'What is born of the flesh is flesh.'

Zwingli. 'All Judea came to John to be baptized, surely there were infants in Judea.' Hubmeyer. 'Then Annas, Caiaphas, Pilate and Herod came, too, I suppose.'

Zwingli. 'There are many things besides infant baptism, not expressly mentioned in the Bible, not against God.'

Hubmeyer. 'Be still, Zwingli, or the Catholic, Faber, will hear you. That is what he said to you, but you demanded a plain passage from him.'

Zwingli. 'Paul says he baptized the household of Stephanus. Is it not credible that children were in that household?'

Hubmeyer. 'That is credible which can be proved by the word of God. Paul was glad that he had baptized no more than this household, lest they should boast. Now infants would not trouble the Apostle in that way.'

Zwingli might well 'be still.'

Hubmeyer's death scattered his flock to the forests and mountains, and they were scarcely settled again when a second storm burst upon them, in 1535. But HUTER became a leader, and soon displayed great independence of mind, with large resources, he did not believe in the use of the sword, but was very forceful with the pen. His letter to the Governor of Moravia is a marvel of intelligence, manliness and reason, indicating one of those strong minds which rise above passion into the calm and broad penetration of right and honor. King Ferdinand had slaughtered the Baptists without mercy, destroyed their property and driven them into exile, and now the remnant were

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

ordered to leave the land. But so faithful, fearless, kind and statesmanlike was Huter's demand for human rights that its scope and spirit commanded the conscience of the persecutor, who revoked his cruel decree to extirpate them, a thing scarcely known before in history. The result was that they returned to their homes and had rest for twelve years; then for seven years Ferdinand hounded them again, when their landlords were threatened with royal displeasure if one was found on their estates, and after a time they were obliged to fly to Hungary. Soon, however, the gallows were erected before their own doors; their new home together with Poland and Wallachia rejected them, and they sought refuge again in Moravia, but gave up the attempt to keep together and hid in woods and caves till 1554.

When the ferocity of their foes abated they prospered again in Moravia for nearly fifty years, and became very numerous, as we have seen. As early as 1528 two thousand had joined them from Silesia through the influence of Gabriel of Scherding, and Hast says that by 1526 infant baptism was almost obsolete in Silesia. [*Hist. Anab.*, 198] In 1530 there were about fifty Baptist churches, ranging from four to six hundred attendants each and stretching from the Eifel to Moravia. [Do., 159] After half a century's quiet Rudolph II made another savage attempt to extirpate them. He was a descendant of Ferdinand, inherited his hatred of the Baptists, and fined any one of his subjects five hundred ducats who fostered them. In 1622 nearly forty congregations of them were driven out of Moravia into Hungary and Transylvania. [Ottius, 1621, 1622] For what? In the height of their prosperity, 1589, Christopher Erhard, a Catholic, had spent some time with them and published his observations in a book. He says that the devil helped them to repeat long passages from the Bible, quoting chapter and verse; that they regarded baptism as the covenant of a good conscience and the Supper as a memorial of Christ's death. He thought, however, that they were armed, because some said that they shot rabbits and ducks, and Kelner, of Austerlitz, had swords hanging over his bed. Then he tells this story to prove their pugnacity:

'They say that they do not strike, but let any one try and see. He will prove by his own skin whether they smite or not. The holy David wrote concerning them: "He toucheth the hills and they smoke." One day I spoke to one of them, and called him an Anabaptist. He resented the name, and when I proceeded to justify the appellation, he proceeded suddenly to lay a stick five times, with all his might, upon my back, and might have seriously harmed me. When I met another and told him the insult I had received, he repeated the same thing. These are the men that never use the stick.' [Erhard, *Moravian Brethren*]

If Shakespeare had called out this verdant gentleman in 'Much Ado about Nothing,' he would probably have introduced him as he did Dogberry: 'O That he were here to write me down an ass. But, masters, remember that I am an ass; though I be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass.' He was unwise to call his Baptist brethren nicknames, when they carried sticks.

All kinds of evil reports concerning the Moravian Baptists were sent back to Bavaria, but despite these a constant stream of emigration flowed thither; and so absolute was the satisfaction afforded by the new faith that few were terrified into recantation. [Winter, *Bavarian Baptists*, 141] By great judiciousness the many companies of women and children who crossed the borders completely eluded the officers of the law, traveling at night in disguise and in the by-ways; thus they foiled their enemies. Prince William V offered a reward of forty gulden for every Baptist captured, with sixty extra for a missionary. [Winter, *Bavarian Baptists*, 124] The missionaries lived in dens and caves, as did David when he was hunted by Saul, and the gatherings of the people were as secret as those

The Era of the Reformation

of the Covenanters in the Highlands of Scotland. As early as 1547 the Huterites had published what they called a 'Reckoning of their Faith,' from the pen of Peter Reidemann. The Jesuits attempted to blot this book out of existence, and nearly succeeded. No copy is known to remain of the first edition, and but two of the second; one of which is in the Baptist Seminary at Morgan Park, Illinois. Their enemies distributed the so-called 'Nicholsburg Articles' through Europe as their doctrinal standard, which charged various heresies upon them. But this 'Reckoning,' as well as the investigations of Cornelius, shows that these 'Articles' are a forgery, most probably made up by an inquisitor. [Cornelius, ii, p. 281] Scultetus says that the Huterites were still in Moravia in 1718.

The pen was wielded against them as well as the sword, and in all its power. In 1528 Bishop Fabri published six sermons against them at Prague. He stoops to tantalize them with their forced wanderings, as evil spirits seeking rest and finding none; places them in company with Herod for shutting infants out of heaven by refusing baptism to them, which he calls the murder of the innocents. As to confessing Christ before baptism, he demanded with solemnity *ex cathedra*: 'What will you do with mutes? And where do the Scriptures say that a babe shall confess? You say that preaching goes before baptism; well, we always preach before we baptize an infant. If you are so literal you have no right to baptize any one until you have gone into all the world.' Dr. Leopold Dick published a tractate against them in 1531. He took ground that 'it is certain the Apostles always baptized infants,' because 'it cannot be shown that they did not baptize them,' – in substance Luther's argument. In the same way he could as easily have proved that they gave them the Supper after they were circumcised. 'Wolves,' he says, 'ought to be killed, and the Anabaptists are wolves.' Bullinger, the successor of Zwingli, launched a volume against them full of hard words and weak arguments. He complains of them bitterly to this effect: They say such good and pious things of God, that they must be bad – they praise God when they are mistreated, and joyfully die for their religion, and there must be something wrong about such people, – the reason why they withdraw from others is that they will not tolerate wicked folk in their fellowship, and, in fact, say that it is vain to demand that people forsake sin and then draw no line between saint and sinner; then he insists that doctrine is more than baptism, although he confesses that baptism is doctrine. He is grieved because their traveling preachers will go to people and read the New Testament and keep up that practice, too, until they are baptized; that they always carry books with them, even when they labor at cutting spoons and twisting baskets – nay, they arm their converts with power to dispute out of the New Testament with the regular clergy, and meet in barns and forests instead of going where infant baptism is defended; and what is quite as bad, they actually refuse interest for loans of money, and think slavery as bad as usury. After calling them most of the harsh names which the liberal vocabulary of his day furnished, he appeals to them affectionately to desist. The essence of his appeal is this: Dearly beloved Anabaptist brethren, do not divide our State churches after this fashion. Let those remain Christians whom Christ has not positively rejected. You want to be called Christians, and are very devout Christians. Why do you act so? You ought to know better. And if you will not learn better, yon deserve to be burnt. Light the fagots for them, brethren.

Returning now to the Rhine, we find there, that, when the Baptists were driven over the borders of Switzerland, they made their way into Baden, Bavaria and Austria, where, as Ullhorn expresses it, they propagated their tenets 'by itinerant missionaries,' and great success attended them at Strasburg, Nurnberg and Augsburg.

STRASBURG. this free imperial city was the Wittenberg of the South and a Baptist stronghold.

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

It was famous for its wealth, refinement and tolerance, so that persecution filled it with fugitives from every quarter, for its magistrates leaned toward liberty of conscience. Bucer, Zoll and Capito were the three great Reformed preachers there. Bucer wished to adopt vigorous measures against heretics, but his coadjutors were reluctant, and for once suppression was the unpopular side. He preached to small audiences, his books were little read, the people favored the Baptists, and he demanded a disputation. Capito entertained them at his hospitable home, and spoke of their godliness in the highest terms, so highly, indeed, that Zwingli and Ecolampadius, in 1528, thought that he had become one of them. [Heberle, Capito's relations to Anab., p. 1] He never rejected infant baptism, however, but in 1524 he wrote to Zwingli that he was undecided on the subject. He utterly rejected the notion that baptism was a channel of grace, for unless the condition of heart corresponded with the significance of the rite it becomes a false sign. He had published his 'Commentary on Hosea,' in 1528, in which he said of the Baptists:

'Great good comes to all the Churches by their appearance. The people are more prudent, the preachers more watchful, all offices are better filled. Those who, in the face of the hardest tyranny, defend Anabaptism in connection with the confession of Christ, err, if they err, without bad intention, for they make use of rebaptism not as a means of dividing the Churches, but as a sign that they believe the Word of the kingdom and are ready to lay down their lives for their Redeemer. We should, however, pray that the Lord would fill with the knowledge of his name these servants of God, witnesses of Christ, and our dearest brothers; though I do not think less of them if they are weak in this point.' When the Austrian government went to butchering the Baptists at Rothenburg, in 1527, Capito plead their cause thus, with his pen:

'In regard to baptism, magistracy, and oaths, our dear brothers and brave confessors of the truth may have erred somewhat; but in other matters, they are glorious witnesses of the truth and vessels of honor, and this error does not affect their salvation, for God knows his own. Of the elect, surely are these prisoners, for they have the fear of God, and their very zeal for his honor has led them to this error. In chief matters of faith and essential points, they do not err. Do not, therefore, punish them, but rather instruct them.' [Heberle, Capito's relations to Anab., p. 1]

The first so-called rebaptism at Strasburg was administered by Jacob Gross, a disciple of Hubmeyer, in 1526. He had fled from Waldshut in company with Reubliu, the man who at Basel joined a Romish procession following a relic and holding up a Bible above his head, cried: 'This is the only true relic, the rest are dead men's bones.' Many were converted at Strasburg, and not a few of the most learned and distinguished citizens. Amongst them was Otto Brunfels, who was first a monk, then a teacher and a physician. He was the publisher of the works of Wickliff and Huss, and Linnaeus himself calls him 'the father of botany.' [Rohrich, Mittheilungen, iii, p. 201] Lucas Hackfurt, the Superintendent of Charities; Fridolin Meyer, the rotary; John Schwebel, the teacher; Jacob Vielfeldt, a noted scholar, and Paul Volzium, to whom Erasmus dedicated his 'Enchiridion' and willed one hundred gulden, whose piety equaled his learning. But the most marked of them all was Pilgram Marbeck, a noted civil engineer from the Tyrol. He built aqueducts about the city and constructed a wood-slide, by which timber was brought to market from distant mountains, which timber long bore the name of 'Pilgram- wood.' He had been driven from the Catholic Tyrol for conscience' sake, to stand at the head of the Baptists in a Protestant city, and he boldly attacked the errors of the Reformers. He reached Strasburg in 1530, and in 1531 published two books advocating Baptist views. The sale and reading of these books were immediately forbidden, and he was summoned before the Council. Before that body, he said: 'This matter is subject to no human

The Era of the Reformation

tribunal, though I gladly speak of it before all Christians.' He begged the Council not to regard the person of any one for his religion, but to judge impartially. He said: 'It is baptism, everywhere misused, that involves us in hate. I have received it as the sign of an obedient faith, looking not at the water but at God's command.' He charges the preachers with crying out against the Baptists without warrant of Scripture, for there is not one letter there in favor of infant baptism, and so, they sought to compel people through infant baptism to enter the kingdom of heaven. He denied that the magistrates had the right to interfere with the kingdom of God, for that in matters of faith there is no judge invoked but Jehovah. Bucer showed how the aid of the magistrate had been sought. Marbeck replied: 'He who will not be taught by the Word, let him go to the magistrate.' But, December 18th, 1531, the Council banished him. He said: 'I have always submitted to the ordinances of the magistrates, and will yield to this decision, but if in future the Spirit of God should lead me back, I will make no promises.' He then asked for three or four days to get ready. He thanked the magistrates that they had saved the city from the stain of his blood, and exhorted them not to oppress the consciences of those who had nowhere in the world to go for protection, and had fled to them for shelter. After wandering all through Germany, he died at Augsburg.

Nicholas Prugner, an able astronomer, was strongly suspected of being a Baptist, yet he never fully identified himself with them. Eckard Trubel, a grand old knight, sent out his ringing sentiments from his castle. To his brethren he said: 'Great is your reward if you are faithful, but all divine and human rights of heathen and Christians forbid the execution of any one, be he Jew, Turk, heathen or Christian, on account of his faith.' This sentiment is worthy of use as the text to the 'Bloody Tenet,' and the key-note to American Religious Liberty. This he backed by such advanced and statesmanlike utterances as these:

'He who has a good conscience, by the word of God, should not allow it to be broken by human reason and opinion, but remain steadfast. It is better and easier to go to prison or hang on a tree with a good conscience, than to live with a doubtful, restless conscience, even in the glory of King Solomon. Man's hands make short work of it, but God gives eternity. The government has no power to use force with consciences.'

Denk came to Strasburg in 1526, and rendered great service there. And in 1528, Jacob Kantz, who had been the chief Lutheran pastor at Worms, but had become a leading Baptist, was banished thence and came to Strasburg. In 1529 he was cast into prison for the bold advocacy of his principles and united with Reublin, his fellow-prisoner, in calling the Reformers: 'Unskilled carpenters, who tear down much, but are unable to put any thing together.' In the appeal of the sufferers from their dark prison, they say: 'We have told others of the way of salvation through Christ, and those who surrendered themselves to God we have at their own request baptized, not of ourselves, but according to the strict command of Christ. Baptism is the registering of believers in the eternal Church of God. It must not be refused to those who have heard the word of repentance and yielded to it in their heart, faith confessed is wine, and baptism is the sign hung out to show that wine is within. What a thing is this, to hang out a sign while the wine is still in the grape on the vine, where it may be dried up.' They mean, as in the case of an infant baptized on another's faith for the future, That it may fail, as the promised wine may blight while in the grape on the vine. Then they say: 'Infant baptism is not according to the command of Christ, for no one can tell by it who is Esau and who is Jacob, a believer or an unbeliever.'

In process of time they were taken from the Tower and banished, and in 1532 Kautz asked

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

permission to return to Strasburg, but was refused. Reublin went to Moravia. For a long time severity failed to dislodge the Baptists in Strasburg. Bucer, in writing to Blaurer, 1531, said: 'They cause me infinite trouble.' In the next year he vehemently congratulates him upon his bloody triumph over them at Constance, and expresses the hope that necessity may compel the Senate at Strasburg to move more heartily in this matter. And still, the following year, he complains: 'We will lose our Church and commonwealth, by preposterous and impious clemency to the sectaries. They say, Strasburg will cease to be a free city if violence is done to conscience. But the sects are so increasing, necessity will change the mind of the Senate. Meanwhile, popular hatred is concentrated on Hedio and me.' Again, he calls this clemency 'the sin of the Senate,' until it finally yielded to his entreaties and drove the Baptists from the city, after eight days' warning, in 1534. In 1535 the magistrates ordered that, 'For the sake of Christian unity and love,' nobody should thereafter shelter, feed or assist any 'Anabaptist,' but every one, old and young, who hears of one anywhere shall at once report the same to the authorities. Moreover, no child was to go more than six weeks without baptism, or punishment should follow. Yet, this did not work a perfect cure, and in 1538 the Senate said:

'We have not desired to take the lives of these sectaries, as we were authorized and commanded by imperial law to do; but hereafter, those who return after a second banishment shall lose a finger, be branded in the cheek, or put in the neck-iron; and if any return the third time, they shall be drowned. We do this, not to make men believe as we do. It is not a matter of faith, but to prevent division in the Church.'

Yet, the axe, the branding-iron, the river, did not daunt Baptist consciences, the 'heretics' remained and increased in Strasburg, just as if they had not been forbidden.

AUGSBURG was the headquarters of Baptists in Southern Germany. It was a rich city with a large laboring class, whose chief comfort sprang from the Gospel. Dr. Osgood writes that in 1527 the Baptist church there numbered 800 members. [Bap. Qu. Rev., iii, 332] When Hetzer was a young man he gathered the first company of Baptists there, 1524. After him JOHN DENK became their leader. [Keller, ein Apostel der Wiedertaufer, p. 101] Uhlhorn speaks of him as intellectual, of elegant manners, classical culture and profound nature. He was born in Bavaria, near the close of the fifteenth century, and studied at Basel. He graduated a first-class Latin, Greek and Hebrew scholar. For a time he acted as proof-reader to two publishers in Basel and attended the lectures of Œcolampadius, who procured for him the position of principal in St. Sebald's school, Nurnberg, the German center of printing if not of learning. According to Keller, when this school was formed Melancthon was selected for its principal and he accepted, but for some reason did not serve. The next best man for the place was Denk, who was installed in 1523. His high and independent views of God's word and of the Supper soon brought him into collision, however, with Osiander the Reformer, and after eighteen months' service he was banished, January, 1525, and forbidden to come within ten miles of this famous free city, on pain of death. Osiander was one of those harsh and unlovely spirits who anticipated the narrow Lutheranism of the next generation.

Denk went to Augsburg and kept a private school. There he met Hubmeyer, who baptized him before he went to Moravia.

Wagenseil, in his *History of Augsburg* (1820-'22, ii, p. 67), says of the Baptists of 1527, they held 'That baptism should be given to none who had not reached years of discretion, and the candidates must not be merely sprinkled with water, but wholly submerged.' Clement Sender, a

The Era of the Reformation

Catholic contemporary, from 1518 to 1533, in his *Rise and Progress of Heresy in Germany*, Ingoldstadt, 1649, p. 25, writes: 'In Augsburg, in three gardens attached to houses, there used to assemble more than eleven hundred men and women, rich, mediocre and poor, all of whom were rebaptized. The women, when they were rebaptized, put on trousers...In the houses where a baptistery was these trousers were always kept.' [Quoted by Dr. Osgood]

Denk soon drew many noted merchants to the Baptists, including two members of the lower council and other citizens, to the number of eleven hundred in the city alone, besides forming many churches in adjacent villages. Hans Hut was one of his converts and became a strong leader. Denk's powerful pen was kept busy in defending his cause against attacks from Rome, Wittenberg and Zurich. Rhegius, the Lutheran, soon persecuted him out of the city, and he found refuge in Strasburg, where most sects were tolerated. Capito and Zeil were the leading Reformed ministers there; both opposed police interference with the Baptists, whose ranks were full of public men and many first-class scholars. Denk stirred the whole city by a tract, and met Bucer in public disputation, winning great honor by his dignity and mental expertness. This was followed by violence, and he retired to Landau. Here Baader, the Lutheran pastor, drew him into debate, the result being that he and all his congregation abandoned the practice of infant baptism.

We find Denk at Worms with Hetzer in 1527, translating the Old Testament prophets. Osiander had its sale prohibited at Nurnberg, but with little effect, as it soon passed through thirteen editions, and in all has numbered seventeen. This was the first modern German translation of the prophets. Possibly Keller, the present archivist of Münster, has given this subject as full investigation as any one now living. He says that from 1466 to 1518 eighteen editions of the entire German Bible had been issued, besides twenty-five editions of the New Testament. Dr. Jostes and others claim Catholic origin for some of these, but he stoutly contends that all editions published down to 1518 were the work of the Waldensians; and this is likely, for the inquisitors at Strasburg found and destroyed German Bibles in 1404, and at Freiburg in 1430; and in 1468 the German primate, Berthold of Mayence, prohibited the use of the German Bible. The Bible of 1483 puts a print of the pope at the head of the host overthrown by the angels in the Apocalypse, which proves its anti-catholic origin. Dr. Keller also puts Denk and Hetzer amongst the standard translators of the German Bible; and Metzger thinks that the frequent agreement between the Zurich and Wittenberg versions is due to the fact that both used the 'Worms' translation. The translation made by Baptists in 1527 leaned to the ancient Waldensian version, and for a century the Mennonites preferred the Waldensian version to the Lutheran.

In August, 1527, there was a gathering of sixty Baptist leaders at Augsburg, over which Denk presided, which, amongst other things, declared that Christians should never take possession of government in an unlawful way. The result of that meeting unified their faith and enkindled their missionary zeal, so that the empire felt the pulsations which it sent out. For a time he sought rest in Basel, but just before his arrival Baptists had been forbidden there; to the honor of his old friend, Ecolampadius, however, he was made an exception, and the gentle wanderer was protected. Worn out with labor and persecution while yet young, he passed through a quiet illness, and died a natural death at Basel, in great peace of soul, 1527. Almost his last work was a series of articles setting forth his faith in the sweetest and most apostolic spirit. Arnold was so struck with these features that he remarks: 'From them it may be seen whether he can be regarded as godless and his followers as diabolical.' The following extract from Dr. Keller presents this beautiful character in his true light:

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

'John Denk, according to the opinion of competent judges, belonged to the most distinguished men of his time. Although by his position in reference to the Church he drew upon himself the opposition of the ruling powers, and in all places was surrounded by enemies, no one has been able to bring into doubt His masterly gifts, or to discover even the smallest spot in his character. Unstinted praise is accorded to him in the testimonies that have come down to us concerning him, a fact which is all the more important since we have only the testimony of his opponents. The well-known Strasburg reformer, Wolfgang Capito, praises Denk's most exemplary walk in life, his remarkable talent, and his outward bearing, qualities which, as Capito says, drew the people to him and held them in a wonderful manner. Vadian, the friend of Zwingli, made a brilliant sketch of the young man. "In Denk, that distinguished young man," he says, "were all talents so extraordinarily developed that he surpassed his years and appeared greater than himself." The pastor of St. Gall, John Kessler, who had the opportunity of making Denk's acquaintance, says concerning him: "This John Denk was exceedingly familiar with the letter of the Holy Scriptures, and had a good knowledge of the three leading languages. In person he was tall, of most agreeable manners, irreproachable in life and highly indeed to be commended, had he not defiled his mind and doctrine with such fearful errors." [Preussische Jahrbücher, Sep., 1882]

Another contemporary said of him: 'The world will not heed the dear man. Well, when the time of misfortune comes, it will have to say that it brought on itself its evil days.' A late biographer says of him: 'The prophecy came true in a more powerful manner than could have been anticipated. As long as Denk's words, "In matters of faith every thing must be left free, willing and unforced," were despised, an unlucky star ruled the destiny of Germany. Nearly three centuries were necessary to make room for Denk's ideas. The injustice which has been done the men of Denk's party cannot be made good by later times, but it is the duty of the historian to see that the property right in the ideas for which they suffered be not snatched from them, or ascribed to those who battled against their principles, as may be proved in the most decisive manner.'

Beard says in his Oxford Lectures: 'There is a great concurrence of testimony both to the depth of the influence which he exerted, and the integrity and sweetness of the character which justified it.'

Franck calls him 'a quiet, retiring, pious man, the leader and bishop of the Anabaptists...He belonged to that age of Anabaptism when it was at once a deeply religious and a truly ethical movement, before the relentless rage of stupid persecution had deprived it of its natural leaders, and handed it over to extravagance and license. Men gathered eagerly about Denk, hung upon his lips, adopted his principles, and were afterwards not afraid to suffer for their faith. He showed himself, in the three years within which all his activity was comprised, a great religious leader, and he might, possibly, had his life been prolonged, have developed into a philosophical theologian too. In a quiet, singular way, he united the qualities which kindle religious enthusiasm in others with a sweet reasonableness, such as belongs to hardly any other theologian, orthodox or heretical, in the age of the Reformation...In him, radical Protestantism lost a leader whose place no Spanish or Italian rationalist can supply.' [Herbert Lec., 1883, p. 206,207]

This 'Apollo of Anabaptism,' as Haller calls him, died nearly eight years before the Münster outbreak. God enabled him to lay the foundations of Baptist truths very solidly in Southern Germany, and no wonder. His heart was brimful of child-like purity and simplicity, his thinking was elastic, forceful and versatile, and his literary compositions were finished and winsome, for his discussions laid open his entire heart. No man of his times commanded a fitter cast of mind or broader literary powers to lead men back to first principles and make himself the center of a great

The Era of the Reformation

movement. His body was frail, but his whole being delighted in Christ's teachings, he had no suspicion of his own honesty and his heart never failed him or the truth.

In the year that Denk died, Langenmantel, a nobleman, became the Baptist pastor at Augsburg, and faithfully did his work in this powerful Church. [Keller, *Life of Denk*, p. 102; Uhlhorn, *Life of Rhegius*, pp. 116,123,128]] At first he received the Baptists to his house and then defended them. October 15th, 1527, he was arrested for complaining of the reformed preachers that they were avaricious, that they charged double fees for baptizing children, that they neither preached nor lived according to God's word, but that they taught this doctrine: 'He who is foreordained to sin must sin.' These he calls words of 'horrible blasphemy, the voice of Satan, not of Christ, as God gives no cause for sin,' and he exhorted his brethren to 'stand firm, for soon they will hang, burn and behead.' When brought into court, he was told that he deserved to be beheaded, but because his noble relatives pleaded for him, perpetual banishment should suffice. He wrote a hymn and four tracts, which are extant. One of the latter was on the 'Old and New Papists,' in which he defended the Gospel Supper as a simple memorial, in reply to Luther's absurdity that Christ is in the bread, as fire is in the red-hot iron. Another is a complete defense of the Baptists from the Scriptures. He rejects the term 'Anabaptist,' which means to baptize again, for he says: 'We are Co-baptists, but you are Anti-baptists...You do not keep the commandments of Christ, especially that relating to baptism. Is it right, when Christ speaks four or five words, for one to take the last word and put it first and the first last? You turn it about and take the last word first, according to your will. Where is it said to baptize without preaching the Gospel and faith? Now, I demand testimony before the whole world, and give them all the Scriptures to show where God has so commanded.' He was finally put to death by the sword, although his family offered five thousand florins for his release.

Several other leaders were imprisoned and condemned at Augsburg, amongst whom were Gross, Hut and Snyder. The 'Martyrology' says, that many of the Baptists there were branded and one had his tongue cut out. Hans Koch and Leonard Meyster were put to death in 1524, and Leonard Snyder in 1527. Hut had refused to bring his babe to baptism in 1521. Early in his religious life he had tendencies to sedition and was always a strong millenarian. Hubmeyer contended with him on these points, and in his preaching he said much of the end of the world. The circular which called for his capture described him as 'a very learned man;' his conduct shows him to have been brave and even daring. In his prison he kindled straw to burn the beam and loosen the chain which bound him, and was suffocated in the effort. His corpse was brought out amid the ringing of the city bells and burnt on the public square, and his ashes thrown into the Wertach. In 1527 the Dukes of Bavaria issued decrees for the arrest and imprisonment of all Baptists. This document was posted in the market-places and read from all state pulpits.

Duke William was very zealous, and wrote a full description of one poor offender to the Bishop of Passau: 'His name is Anthony, born at Salzburg, a last-maker, a big, heavy fellow, thirty years old, lame in his right hand, wears a red cap, left Augsburg without a coat, will stop with Hermann Kheil, a brother, on the fish-market.' Soon the prisons were crowded with Baptists, many died in prison, others were branded, burned or drowned in the Isar; but few left the Falcon Tower unpunished. At Augsburg it was made the duty of one of the city councilors to be present at the opening and closing of the gates, so that no Baptist should enter. [Wagenseil's Augsburg, ii, 67] Sender, a monk of the city, kept an account of the daily outrages practiced upon them: January 12th, 1528, twelve were banished; 13th, thirty were imprisoned; 18th, ten perpetually exiled; 19th, twenty

Chapter 5 - The Reformation – German Baptists

driven out of the city; 22d, seven scourged out of town; 23d, three men and five women driven out; 24th, one refusing to take the oath was branded on the cheek. [Uhlhorn, *Life of Rhegius*, p. 132] The barbarous crusade ran on till February, when a general sweep was made. At Easter two hundred were surprised at the house of Ducher, as they were holding a 'love-feast;' then Seebold preached and his sermon cost him his life, for he was slaughtered April 25th, his congregation being driven in all directions; a little later twelve were slain at Augsburg.

Rhegius, the reformed preacher, was at the bottom of this bloody work, and a lady of the nobility, a prisoner, said to him: 'There is a great difference between you and me. You sit on a soft cushion beside the Burgomasters and declaim as Apollo from his tripod, while I must speak here on the ground bound in chains.' He said that if the 'Anabaptists would keep their errors to themselves they would be let alone; but if they proposed to gather a peculiar people to God and return from banishment, then the government must use the sword.' [Uhlhorn, *Life of Rhegius*, p. 134,135]

In February, 1527, George Wagner (Carpenter), was captured by dragoons and cast into prison at Munich, and every means was used to make him recant, even the duke visiting him to change his mind, but in vain. The fourth charge against him was, 'That he did not believe that the very element of the water itself in baptism doth give grace' (regeneration). He was asked why he esteemed baptism lightly, knowing that Christ was baptized in the Jordan. He then showed why Christ was baptized, but that our salvation stands in his atonement and not in his baptism. Then he opened the true use of baptism. [Fuxe, I, 402] When brought out for execution, the procession halted at the steps of the City Hall to hear the charges of heresy read, and a school-master asked him, 'George, are you not afraid to die, would you not be glad to go back to your wife and children?' He replied, 'To whom would I rather hasten?' 'Recant and you can go.' On his way to the stake his wife and children came, and kneeling before him, begged him to recant and save his life. [Hast, p. 221] He said: 'My wife and children are so dear that the duke could not pay me for them with the revenue of the State, but I part with them for my inmost love to God.' 'Do you really believe in God as confidently as you say?' 'It would be hard for me to face a death so terrible if I did not.' He offered prayer, and a priest promised to say masses for his soul, when George said: 'Pray for me now that God will give me patience, humility and faith. I shall need no prayer after death.' A brother asked him for a sign of perseverance in the flames, when he promised to confess Christ as long as he could speak. As he fell in the fire he cried, 'Jesus! Jesus!' and was with him.

Two letters from prisoners fell into the hands of Rhegius, 1528, in which they show most beautifully their reliance on the saving work of Christ. Amongst other things this is set forth:

'The only answer to give our enemies is faith and patience, for this is the hour and power of darkness...If any one asks you why you were baptized, tell him to go and ask Jesus, the Son of God. He will tell you why he gave the command. If you reply out of the Holy Spirit you will not contradict the command of Christ, for the Holy Spirit gave the command through Christ. Christ, our Brother, was circumcised after the law when he was eight days old, but baptized to fulfill all righteousness, according to the New Testament, when he was thirty years old. The truth says that teaching is the principal and most needful thing, for the apostles made disciples before they baptized them. He who baptizes children confesses that baptism is more necessary than teaching.'

Another apostle amongst the Bavarian Baptists was Augustine Wurzelburger, a school- teacher who did a great work amongst them, but the dukes demanded his execution. The magistrates of Regensburg, however, reported that they found so much 'reason in his views,' that they counted him

The Era of the Reformation

not worthy of death, he had simply been rebaptized. The dukes frankly declared this guilt enough, according to many princes and prelates. On a second demand he was promptly put to death. Also, at Salzburg, many were slain. Seventeen of them were discovered in the pastor's house, and all were burned, but those who recanted had the privilege of being beheaded beforehand. Many were locked in their place of worship and burned therewith. Also a beautiful child of sixteen was condemned to be burned, and the whole town interceded for her life. But she remained steadfast, and as an act of mercy the executioner carried her, like a lamb, in his arms, held her under water in a trough and drowned her, and then threw her body into the flames. [Ranke, *Hist. Ref.*, iii, 363] At Vienna one day a large number were drowned in the Danube, being bound together in such a manner that as one fell into the water he drew another after him. All met their fate with joy.[Gastius, 178] Martyrdoms took place also in many other cities, where Baptists were treated like reptiles and wild beasts. This was especially true at Rothenburg on the Neckar, where Michael Sattler, who had been a monk and had become a Baptist, was slaughtered. The fiendish sentence was carried out to the letter in 1527. His tongue was cut out, twice his flesh was torn with red-hot pincers, and then he was brought in a cart to the city gate, where his flesh was torn five times more before he was burned to ashes. His wife and several other women were drowned, several men were beheaded and about seventy more were murdered in one way or another.

Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued

Most interesting facts are connected with the Baptists of the Tyrol. Fugitives from other lands flocked to this Austrian province as early as 1525, and Ferdinand began to persecute them in 1527. Their places of worship were torn down and their ministers made to suffer by water, fire and sword. When Bishop George issued his command for their arrest, Ulrich Mailer was forthwith burnt alive at Brixen, for the king had confiscated all Baptist property and ordered the burning of all their preachers. Sunday after Sunday his decrees were read from the State pulpits, and priests failing to publish them were to be punished. Despite all this activity, Baptists filled Innthal and the Brenner Pass. Schwatz, a town of twelve hundred people, had eight hundred of the new faith. A prisoner at Innsbruck, confessed that he had himself baptized four hundred. This sudden growth was due in part to the coming of Blaurock from Switzerland, whose eloquent enthusiasm ranked him, in the eyes of the people, as a second Paul. Many fled from this persecution to Moravia, and, angered by their escape, the king issued a new order in 1529, inflicting death on all, regardless of recantation. Baptists were burnt in every village and city wherever found, and amongst them Blaurock, at Claussen. The town records say that sixty-seven perished at Kitzbuhel, sixty-six at Rattenburg, and twenty-two at Kuffstein. Down to 1531 one thousand had been put to death in the Tyrol, or two hundred and fifty a year; whereas only two hundred and sixty-four persons were martyred in the reign of 'bloody Mary.' No writer of the present day possesses such facilities for full and accurate statement on this subject as Dr. Keller, of Munster; and, on what he pronounces 'reliable statements,' the number of Baptists put to death was as follows: In 1531, 1,000 had been martyred in the Tyrol and Gortz, 600 at Enzisheim, 73 at Linz, from 150 to 200 in the Palatinate. In 1527, 12 had suffered death in Switzerland and about 20 at Rottenburg. He cites Hase, a stout opponent of the Baptists, who says: 'The energy, the capacity for suffering, the joy in believing, which characterized the Christians of the first centuries of the Church, reappeared in the Anabaptists.'

Under the edict of 1530 all houses were searched, to discover who refrained from mass, and what children had been held back from baptism; the houses of all who sheltered Baptists were to be destroyed, informers were rewarded from twenty to forty gulden and Baptist property was to meet the costs of the Inquisition. The trials were private, and the purpose of Ferdinand was to annihilate these homeless disciples. When the storm was at its height the Baptists of Moravia heard 'what a great work God was doing in the Tyrol,' and sent Jacob Huter, their leader, to assist them. He saved many of them from the blood-thirst of Ferdinand by sending them into Moravia; but on his second visit he was arrested and executed. A gag was put in his mouth, he was led to Innsbruck, where he was first thrown into cold water, then into hot, then his flesh was torn with pincers, the wounds filled with brandy and set on fire.

Sigmund von Wolkenstine, a young noble of seventeen, was another victim. After a year's imprisonment he was set free for a little time, to choose, between recantation and new sufferings. He selected the latter, but his powerful family induced the king to permit him to enter the army. A price was put upon the head of Griessteller, now the Baptist leader. The officers of a dozen districts combined and found him in the mountains, between Bruneck and Rodeneck. After a long hunt, the king was delighted with his capture and he was speedily put to death at Brixen. The fagots had been soaked in rain the night before and would not burn, so the people begged for the sword as the easier death, but dry fuel was brought and he was burnt alive. Spies were hired to be baptized, to gain the confidence and find out the secrets of the sect, and after all other measures had failed to crush them

The Era of the Reformation

it entered into somebody's head that possibly argument and exhortation might convert them! Hence, Cardinal Bernard ordered his priests to preach the word of God, according to the Scriptures – the best cure for 'Anabaptism' ever devised. But, in the eyes of Ferdinand, this made things worse and worse and he went back to the old weapons. Then he made his edicts cover all Austria and her dependencies, and thus, in 1545, Moravia became as perilous to the Baptists as the Tyrol. Yet, these Tyrolese brethren stood as firmly as their own mountains; when the king became emperor, State affairs so absorbed his attention that he forgot all about this hated people. When he returned to his task, however, every valley and ravine was scoured, and the old scenes were re-enacted. Baptists swarmed in Pusterthal, and in Au they were the ruling power in society.

In 1585 four Tyrolese Baptists ventured from Moravia to labor in their own country. Jacob Panzer had left home when seventeen, but was now a man of forty, simple-hearted, active and strong in the faith. Ruprecht Sier, thirty years of age, Leonard Mareez, aged forty-two, and a fourth, whose name is not given, formed the heroic band. Each of them was rooted in the faith, and would stretch upon the rack rather than betray a brother. They met their friends in forests, by-ways and crags, as best they could, but some of their relatives were in prison and could not be reached. They were hunted at every point, two of them wavered and one fled, but Panzer met martyrdom by the axe. These facts, with many others of equal interest, are found in Kripp's *Contribution to the History of the Anabaptists in the Tyrol*: Innsbruck, 1857.

The first effect of the Reformation in Germany was to drive away the old Catholic priests, often in disgust and angry controversy, long before Reformed pastors could fill their places, and when they did come the community was convulsed more than ever. At first the change was not for the better in the public morals, but the contrary. The newly- preached doctrine of Justification by Faith alone without the merit of works was not understood, and many acted as badly as they could, because good works could not save them. People paid absolute obedience to the old authority; but when that discipline was thrown aside the new clergy had little power over them, and were obliged to depend upon the secular arm to bring under moral restraint a multitude of nominal believers without the bond of heart-love for the Gospel. Blaurer, the Reformer at Constance, complained: 'Ourselves bear a great share of the blame. We want to hear so little of real penitence that our doctrine itself is open to suspicion. My labor and my life become distasteful to me when I regard the condition of many cities, evangelical to such a small degree that scarcely any trace of genuine conversion can be shown in them at all. Out of Christian liberty they make, by a godless interpretation, liberty to commit sin. It is agreeable to be justified, redeemed, saved for nothing; but there is not one who does not resist with bands and feet mortification of the flesh, crosses and sufferings and Christian devotion.'

Luther said, in 1526: 'Those who want to be Christians in earnest, and confess the Gospel by hand and mouth, ought to enlist themselves by name and assemble apart from all kinds of people in a house alone to pray, read, baptize, receive the sacrament and practice other Christian duties. In this manner we could know who were not Christians, punish, correct, exclude and excommunicate. Then we could expect general thanksgiving, giving willingly and distributing among the poor. I cannot yet found such a church, for I have not the people to do it with, and do not see many who are urgent for it.'

This frank utterance shows that at heart he shared the high and pure intentions of the Baptists for a thorough reform, and a return to a purely regenerated church, after the Gospel pattern. But his

Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued

hands were tied, for the condition even of the German clergy was much like that of the Swiss, of whom Ballinger honestly confesses that only three deans in Switzerland could read the Old Testament, some did not know of the Bible at all, and not all of them could read the New Testament. After the general upbreking, this was the material on which the Reformation was obliged to depend for its ministers in many places. Luther and several other leaders were more than half Baptists at that time. Early in his ministry he told certain Bohemian brethren that he did not like their views of infant baptism because they used it in hope of future faith when they came to years of responsibility. It either regenerated the children or it meant nothing. He said: 'If you receive the sacraments without faith, you bring yourselves into a great difficulty, for we oppose against your practice the saying of Christ: "he that believeth and is baptized shall be saved."' [Stan. Hosii. De haeres. nostri temporis, lib. 1] At that time he also taught the practice of immersion. He said:

'The term baptism is Greek, and may be rendered dipping, as when we dip something in water, so that it is covered all over. And although the custom is now abolished amongst many, for they do not dip children, but only pour on a little water, yet they ought to be wholly immersed and immediately withdrawn. For this the etymology of the term seems to demand. And the Germans also call baptism *taufe*, from depth, which in their language they call *tiefe*, because it is fit that those who are baptized should be deeply immersed. And certainly, if you look at what baptism signifies, you will see that the same is required. For it signifies this, that the old man and our sinful nature, which consists of flesh and blood, are totally immersed by divine grace, which we will point out more fully. The mode of baptizing, therefore, necessarily corresponded with the signification of baptism, that it might set forth a certain and full sign of it.' [Opera Luth. Tom., I, pp. 70- 2]

Keller shows that most of the [Protestant] leaders stood on semi-Baptist ground at that time. Ecolampadius writes, February 6th, 1525: 'I have some letters to friends advocating infant baptism, but hardly any one will listen to me;' so general was the defection on that subject. And in 1528, William Farel, Calvin's patron, defended the Baptists against their foes. A year before, September 7th, 1527, he said: 'It is not understood by many what it is to give one's name to Christ and fight for Christ, to walk and persevere in newness of life by the infusion of the Spirit with whom Christ immerses his own, who, in this mind and by this grace wish to be immersed in water [*intingi aqua*] in the presence of the Christian congregation, that they may publicly protest what they believe in their hearts, that they may be dearer to the brethren and closer bound to Christ by this solemn profession, which is only rightly dispensed as that great John, and that greatest of all, Christ, commanded.' [Keller, Ref., pp. 374-386]

In this state of the public mind Baptist evangelists came preaching personal repentance, faith and a holy life, salvation finished, full and free through Christ's atonement; with a church sustained by pure love to him and not by the secular arm. They taught that 'The water of baptism does not save by its natural force, for it is no more than any other creature of God,' but that men are effectually saved from their sins by faith in Christ's sacrifice. 'But,' said they, 'if faith in Christ saves, wherefore baptism? Faith is a root of a faithful heart. If you believe, you do the works of a believer, as a good tree bears good fruit. Yet, these works do not merit salvation. The word that teaches me to believe teaches me to be baptized, for faith without works is dead.' This preaching threw new light upon the whole Gospel system, and so effectually turned men to holiness that a net of small Baptist churches was formed in all the districts of Germany, from Alsace to Breslau, from Hesse to Etschland. [Cornelius, ii, p. 43] In many places the commotions of the times had left the people without teachers, and these evangelists were plain men who supported themselves, preached in barns, woods,

The Era of the Reformation

gardens, private houses, the people heard them and many were radically converted. These formed themselves into simple churches, with the Bible as their only guide, each choosing its own pastor and officers. They met for prayer (the prayer-meeting was commonly called 'the Heretics' School'), for fellowship, the breaking of bread, and the exercise of brotherly watch-care and discipline. Not believing in State support and receiving none, they voluntarily divided the results of their daily industry, without selfishness, as did the saints at Jerusalem under similar circumstances of persecution. They had 'all things common,' not in the sense of renouncing the right of property, but in the sense of sharing it freely one with another, in suffering.

It is needless to say that people living such lives have always been systematically traduced, as these men were in the heat of their adversaries; but as the world has had time to cool, every man now owes the naked justice to himself to read their history with open eyes, throwing aside the old trick of defaming those whom it is not convenient to understand. Historical aptitude should be quickened by the unveiling of three centuries to a sharper insight into this great movement, so that its length and breadth can be taken in, with that round compactness which the Germans themselves call *combinationsgabe*. The branding of men with ink who cannot be reached with iron should cease. Day by day their entire trend is becoming clearer and clearer, until the best investigators of passionless history accord to nineteen twentieths of them the honest aim of restoring apostolic Christianity by molding simple societies of godly men after the ideal of Christ. Their foundation idea was to develop all goodness, not by bringing the State into the Church as a part thereof but by taking each citizen into the Church on his individual consecration to Christ. This, of course, destroyed sacerdotalism, uprooted all political bases in religion and made the Bible, which embodies Christ's will, the touch-stone of all Christian truth. The State was to protect all its citizens as citizens, without regard to their religious opinions, so that the civil magistrates could control no man's conscience. Zwingli would have them do no injustice in exacting tithes, but the Baptists said that the civil authorities should levy no such tithes at all. Catholic and Protestant alike made it the duty of the magistrate to establish religion and enforce it by fine, imprisonment and death; but the Baptists said, 'No; this is a remnant of heathen usurpation, of which Christ's law knows nothing.' Few authorities have caught the broad view of the Baptists better than the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, which says:

'The Anabaptists of Germany were historically noteworthy, not because they insisted on rebaptism as a condition of admission into their communion, but because the enthusiasm of the Reformation manifested itself to them in a form and manner altogether peculiar. Their views as to the constitution of the Church and its relations to the State, and the efforts they made to realize these views, furnish a problem, partly theological, partly historical, of which the satisfactory solution is not easy. Anabaptism, as a system, may be defined as the Reformation doctrine, carried to its utmost limit; the Anabaptists were the extreme left of the army of the Reformation. It is true that they regarded each other as in different camps; but their mutual denunciations cannot conceal the fact that even the most peculiar doctrines of the Anabaptists were to them only corollaries illegitimately drawn, as the more orthodox Reformers thought, from the fundamental principle common to both, of the independence of the private judgment, and the supreme importance of the subjective element, personal faith in religion. The connection of this principle with this theory of the Church and its connection with the State, their doctrine of the sacraments, and even their political rising, is so obvious that it need not be dwelt upon.' [Art. Anabaptists]

Practically, the churches of the Reformation outside of the Baptist ranks were strangers to the highest doctrine in the scale of human rights, that of private judgment; they alone expounded,

Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued

maintained and extended it to all. All persons were forced into the national churches by law. No matter how profane or skeptical they might be, the law made all members of the Church, and compelled the most licentious to go to the Lord's table, on pain of fine and torture. As clear and resolute thinkers, the Baptists saw that the Protest at Spire [see next paragraph], in teaching personal justification by faith, touched the very essence of church-building and exploded the whole plan of National Church life. The Reformers saw the bearings of this fact, at a glance, and in order to guard the nascent system they fortified it with the sign which Rome had created, and practically threw the 'Protest' to the winds by punishing dissent with bloodshed throughout the continent. Out of that flow of blood sprang the eternal rights of conscience, which the Reformers claimed as their own right, and which they denied to those whose blood was shed. To them that right was a primary truth, to others unallowable. So, this was not a mere inconsistency either in logic or conduct, but a radical difference of principle between them and the Baptists. Let us examine this vital point closely.

In 1526 each German State had been left to manage its own religious affairs, as they might answer severally 'to their own conscience.' But it was not intended in this to recognize the right of the individual conscience in each man, but a State conscience, a nonentity, was created as a part of the Reformed system, so far seceding from a universal conscience located at Rome. Hence, at the second Diet of Spire, 1529, certain members began to feel their way back further, to a personal conscience, avowing that they could do nothing touching their salvation but what their own 'conscience directs and teaches.' They declared their willingness to obey the Diet in 'all dutiful and possible things,' but they must obey God, as they say, 'for our conscience' sake.' They stated that they could not 'hold and fulfill the imperial edict in all points' with a 'good conscience,' it was 'against our conscience' to 'force them under the edict in question;' they based their dissent on the sanctity of Christian conscience, and the Diet was obliged to qualify its previous decree, and to tolerate religious differences amongst the Lutherans themselves within certain limits. Having admitted so much of the principle of soul liberty, right there the Baptist and anti-Baptist battle of the Reformation took its sternest quarters. Schenkel has caught the genius of the struggle, and says: 'The deepest source of that protestation is, the newly awakened consciousness of the eternal rights of conscience...Protestantism is, therefore, a great deed of conscience...In whatever confession or church institution this freedom is not recognized, that is anti-Protestant.' But the famous Protest of Spire was defective, in that it attempted to make provision against what it considered the defects of conscience from ignorance and a wrong bent. It assumed what is true, namely, that personal conscience is no more infallible than the judgment or will; but it also assumed what is not true, namely, that the State conscience is more reliable, although its existence is a mere myth. Yet, for the relief of some parties who composed the Diet, it said that it would seek 'the honor of Almighty God, of his holy word, and the salvation of our individual souls,' by the dictates of conscience. Had it taken one step more the battle between it and the Baptists had been ended. It failed to lay down the doctrine that every Christian should be allowed to govern his own conscience by the absolute dictation of Scripture, under the divine right of its private interpretation; that the Christian conscience could not otherwise be free, and that conscience itself, as well as faith and life, should be left to the teaching of the Scriptures. This was the firm Baptist ground: that God demands the vital submission of the conscience itself to his infallible word, and that every disciple should be left free to follow that, as endowing him with a 'good conscience toward God.' The Baptists located the responsibility of conscience, as well as the exercise of intelligence, at the tribunal of inspired truth,

The Era of the Reformation

as the last court of appeal in all soul life. The Reformers could not be made to see that point at all, but drifted further and further away from it, until as Hase says, 'The Protestant Church appears only like a purified form of Catholicism. In various ways it practically represented itself as infallible, and even expressly claimed that there was no salvation out of itself.' [Hist. Ch., pp. 43-8]

This blunder concerning the radical rule of faith led the Reformers into all sorts of absurdities, as the attempt to embody a whole nation in a church, in disregard of age or moral character, and it explains the principle on which they persecuted all whose consciences differed from their own. Their plea was, that all heresy is ruinous and must be crushed out, and that all consciences but ours are heretical. Looking at the Reformation from this point, Luther lamented that it was a failure. He wrote: 'Our evangelicals are seven times worse than they were before. For since we have learned the Gospel we steal, tell lies, deceive, gormandize [gluttony], tipple and commit all kinds of vice.' Of course, it followed that he must set this to rights at the cost of any suffering to the wrong-doer, in 'all good conscience,' after the example of Saul, and he mistook his own imperiousness as zeal for God, for he confined not his interference to overt and immoral acts. This is his avowed claim: 'Whoever teaches differently from what I have taught, or whoever condemns, he condemns God and must remain a child of hell...I will not have my doctrine judged by any one, not even by angels.' [Sämmtliche Werke, pp. 28,144,346] This Lange confirms when he avows: 'Luther's imperious nature would allow no one else to have his own way.' He seemed at first to take the ground that the Scriptures were imperial, but fell back upon persecuting the consciences that yielded absolute submission to them. He granted that conscience is the eye of the soul, and there stopped; but the Baptists added, the Bible gives it light, and the conscience cannot be free unless guided by a free Bible. A free conscience governed by a free Bible forms the regnant, double franchise of God's sons.

Cardinal Hosius said truly that Luther did not intend to make all Christians as free as himself; thus, when they rejected his authority over their consciences, he treated them as the pope treated him; so Luther became a persecutor by slow degrees. He wrote to Spalatin, in 1522, concerning the Baptists: 'I would not have any who hold with us imprison them.' [Hast, p. 55] In 1528 he also said: 'I am very sorry they treat the Anabaptists so cruelly, seeing it is only on account of belief, and not because of the transgression of the laws. A man ought to be allowed to believe as he pleases. We must oppose them with the Scriptures. With fire little can be accomplished.' [Hosek, *Life of Hubmeyer*, p. 43] And still he sanctioned the decree of the Elector of Saxony, the same year, forbidding any but the regular ministers to preach or baptize, under penalty of imprisonment. [Hast, p. 157] Charles V issued the terrible edict of Spire in 1529, commanding the whole empire to a crusade against the Baptists. He ordered that: 'All Anabaptists, male or female, of mature age, shall be put to death, by fire, or sword, or otherwise, according to the person, without preceding trial. They who recant may be pardoned, provided they do not leave the country. All who neglect infant baptism will be treated as Anabaptists.' This was worse than any thing in mediaeval persecution, for at least the form of a trial had been observed; but the Protestant princes who assented to this edict left no way of escape, 'The design' being, as Keller says, 'to hunt the Baptists with no more feeling than would be shown to wild beasts.' [Die Reformation, p. 448] The Peasants' War had only just closed when this ferocious edict was issued, yet it gives no hint that the Baptists were charged with sedition. The decree of 1529 was renewed in 1551, with this explanation: 'Although the obstinate Anabaptists are thrown into prison and treated with severity, nevertheless they persist in their damnable doctrine, from which they cannot be turned by any amount of instruction.' [Ottius, *Anab.*,

Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued

p. 113] If the remedy lay in 'severity' they ought to have been cured effectually, for everywhere they were treated much after the manner of serpents. A letter from a priest to his friend in Strasburg says: 'My gracious lord went hunting last Sunday, and in the forest near Epsig he caught twenty-five wild beasts. There were three hundred of them gathered together.' [Rohrich, *Anab. in Strasburg*, p. 112]

Wigandus breathes the same spirit when he asks: 'Do you patiently protect such terrible enemies of holy baptism? Where is your zeal for the house of God? Where such people as Jews and Anabaptists are tolerated there is neither grace nor blessing.' [Hast, p. 157] Luther, Zwingli and Melancthon uttered the severest things possible against them,

without once stopping to show that their faith was contrary to the teaching of Jesus. Leonard Kayser had been a learned and eminent Catholic priest in Bavaria. He became a Lutheran, was intimate with Luther and the Wittenberg doctors, but soon saw that the principles of the Reformation properly applied must lead him into the Baptist ranks. In less than two years after following his convictions, he was committed to the flames near Passau. When taken to the fire in a cart, he held up a flower, saying: 'My lord, if you can burn me and this flower I am rightly condemned; if not, reflect on what you have done and repent.' They piled on more fagots than usual, to burn him quickly. When the wood was consumed only his hair was burnt, and the flower was left unhurt in his hand. In giving an account of his martyrdom, Luther himself says that a larger fire being made, his head, hands and feet were burnt off, but the body was unconsumed. Braght tells us that the body was cut to pieces and thrown into the river Inn. Luther described the martyrdom of his old friend as wonderfully ecstatic and steadfast, yet he said of other Baptists that it was 'all of the Devil,' with whose councils he seems to have been uncommonly intimate. 'Holy martyrs,' he said, 'such as our Leonard Kayser, die with humility and meekness toward their enemies, but these go to their death strengthening themselves in their obstinacy.' Cornelius informs us that Kayser was an elder of the 'Anabaptist' Church in Scherding.

Zwingli shared Luther's views in the persecution of the Baptists. In his book against them he denounces them as 'bitter,' 'full of anger,' 'hypocrisy and slander,' and 'ought of all godly men to be suspected and hated.' He charges them with crying out against 'witnesses in baptism' (godfathers and godmothers), 'saying that the Scripture doth nowhere appoint them.' Zwingli, said they not that truly? do the Scriptures anywhere appoint them? Was he free from bitterness and anger when he and the magistrates convulsed the whole land with fire and sword, to enforce the senseless usage of godfathers and godmothers? Or did he think a few bundles of Swiss pine-knots threw the strongest possible light upon the words: 'Love thy neighbor as thyself?' Few of the Reformers possessed as many lovable traits of character as the Swiss Reformer, yet he could allow himself to say of these men who had never harmed him: 'Most of them find it easy to withhold from the joys of the world, for they belong to the dregs of society...But now out of their baseness they make a nobility to suit themselves,' – an unintentional tribute to their godly genius.

Melancthon was, possibly, the most lamb-like spirit amongst the Reformers. Both Luther and Zwingli were excessively arbitrary and imperious, failing of that higher manhood which can brook contradiction with inquiring meekness. Their opinions differed on the Supper, and Zwingli said that 'Luther was not possessed by one pure spirit, but by a legion of devils.' When attempts were made to promote mutual good feeling between them, notwithstanding their differences, Luther replied: 'No, no; cursed be such alliance, which would endanger the cause of God and men's souls. Begone! You are possessed by another spirit than ours...The Zwinglians are a set of diabolical fanatics, they

The Era of the Reformation

have a legion of devils in their hearts, and are wholly in their power.' But who would expect Melancthon to belch out such rage as this against any human being? Yet even gentle Philip allowed himself to say: 'One Anabaptist is better than another, as much as one devil is better than another.' [Erasmi Ep. ad Cochlaeum] 'It is the devil that makes them callous to death.' [Gosch. d. Weidert, Keller, p. 13] In his letters to Myconius, 1530-31, he tells him that at the beginning of this movement he was 'foolishly merciful,' but now be looked upon them as a diabolical sect, not to be tolerated. [Corp. Ref., ii, pp. 17,18,549]

'Mild Melancthon' differed from other persecutors only in the deliberate manner in which he defended the slaughter of God's elect. The pope called their crime 'heresy,' he called it 'blasphemy,' but the victims knew only death, dealt out to them as to vipers. His mildness of manner made the pious homicide the more cruel, and he must have blushed when the three simple-hearted Baptists confronted him at Jena. He had fled thither from the pest, 1535, when a commission was examining certain poor imprisoned Baptist peasants, and the Council invited him to act with them. The Münster disgrace was at an end, and he asked the peasants whether they were there. They replied that they had never been at Münster, and that their consciences could not approve of sedition. When he examined them on the doctrine of the Trinity they answered that, not being learned, they could say little of that high article of faith. He demanded, Why they preached in secret? They replied: 'The divine word is relentlessly persecuted, we are not allowed to preach publicly, and now, we are forbidden not only to be hearers, but doers of the word.' As to the community of goods, they thought it their duty to share their property with their poor brethren who were suffering. They also denied the lawfulness of oaths and of infant baptism. [Goebel, I, p. 166] He reports, with a flavor of disgust, in his own narrative, that they said:

'Baptism of infants was not enjoined, and that all children are saved. whether of Christians, heathens or Turks. God was not such a God as would damn a little child for the sake of a drop of water, for all his creatures were good. And they denied original sin in children, for such have never covenanted to it; but when a man grows up and consents to sin, then, for the first time, original sin has power.'

He asked them of obedience to civil magistrates. They said that they needed none, they cleaved to God alone, but they did not condemn civil government for the world. If the magistrates would let them alone in their faith, they would cheerfully pay taxes and do as they were bidden. They were examined concerning the Supper, and said they did 'not believe in a Lord God made of bread.' Hase says that Melancthon found these unlettered peasants orthodox on the Trinity and the incarnation, but a little unsound on original sin. [Neue Propheten, p. 178] Still, they denied infant baptism, and that was enough; so, on the 27th of January, 1536, they sealed their faith with their blood. Melancthon wrote what he thought a full refutation of their doctrines for John the Elector, but his real reply to the innocent peasants was the unanswerable anti-Baptist logic of ax and flame. Jobst Moller, the chief speaker of these helpless villagers, was purely illiterate, and yet he held his own against Melancthon with great strength. 'Since that time,' says Beard, 'the world has thrashed out many of the questions which were in dispute between Jobst Moller and the first scholar of Germany; and the result is not in all respects what the theologians of Wittenberg would have expected.' [Lects., p. 198]

In what bold contrast the immortal words of John Denk stand to all this: 'There are certain brethren who think they have completely fathomed the Gospel, and whoever does not assent to their

Chapter 6 - The German Baptists – Continued

dictum must be a heretic above all heretics. If an account of faith is given, they call it sowing seeds of division and dissension among the people. If reproaches are passed by unnoticed, they say it shows fear of the light.' In his treatise on the 'Law of God,' published in 1526, a year before his death, are these words from this profoundly serene spirit: 'Love forgets itself, and the possessor of it minds no injury which he receives for the sake of the object of his love. The less love is recognized, the more it is pained, and yet it does not cease. Pure love stretches out to all, and seeks to be at one with all. But even if men and all things are withdrawn from her, she is so deep and rich she can get along without them, and would willingly perish herself if she could thereby make others happy. This love is God, who has made all things, but cannot make himself; who will break all things, but cannot break himself. Love cannot be understood except in Christ.' Casper Schwenkfeld was far from being a Baptist, but he knew and loved Denk, and writes: 'The Anabaptists are all the dearer to me, that they care about divine truth somewhat more than many of the learned ones.' Then he candidly states what he understood the Baptists to believe thus: 'The Old Covenant was a slavery, in so far as God, on account of man's perversity, constrained them to serve him. Hence, the sign of the covenant, circumcision, was put upon them before they desired it. They received the sign whether they were willing or not. But baptism, the sign of the New Covenant, is given only to those who, being brought by the power of God, through the knowledge of true love, desire it, and consent to follow true love. Unless love forces them they should not be compelled.'

Melancthon fell into the mistake of all history, in compelling infant baptism. It was all right with him that the Council of Nice ordered the rebaptism of Novatians, whether they desired it or not; but when the Baptists baptized a man on his own request, because of his love to Christ, he became at once the worst of all men and must welter in his own blood for his crime.

Voltaire, the atheist, had the common sense to say that the Baptists 'laid open that dangerous truth, which is implanted in every breast, that mankind are all born equal.' [*Gen. Hist.*] And Beard says that their sins can be easily counted: 'They did not baptize their children; they thought it sinful to take an oath; they refused military service.' The Anglican Gregory's sum of their tenets is this: 'Baptism ought to be administered only to persons grown up to years of understanding, and should be performed, not by sprinkling them with water, but by dipping them in it.' [*Hist. Chn. Ch.*, ii, p. 430] Hozek, the Catholic, gives this summary: 'The Church was to be a perfect Christian people, living without reproach, observing the Gospel faithfully, possessing and governed by the Spirit of God.' Heppe, the Calvinist, gives this analysis of their doctrines: '1. Against all external churchism. 2. Against infant baptism. 3. Against any view of justification that does not involve sanctification, by the direct and essential indwelling of the Holy Spirit in the human heart.' [*Hist. of Prot.*, I, p. 71] Hast, the critic, who resided at Munster, says that:

'To realize regeneration among men was the Anabaptist aim, and if they failed, the noble and exalted thought that animated them, and for which they strove, must not be deprecated. They have deserved in this particular the respect of an unprejudiced later age, before a thousand others; and they seem in the choice of means to attain this end, to have been generally equally worthy of respect. It is not so much the advocacy of the doctrine of regeneration that is so noticeable and characteristic of them, but the fact that they held on so hard for its realization. They stood in their consciousness much higher than the world about them, and, therefore, were not comprehended by it.' [Hast, p. 114] Whatever follies a few of them fell into, their high purpose and advanced thought put them as a people in the van of genuine reformers, whose standard the world is aiming to reach at the close of the nineteenth century. [Hast, p. 114] Hence, today, we hear the

The Era of the Reformation

impartial and philosophical Uhlhorn say of these German Baptists: 'The general character of this whole movement was peaceful, in spite of the prevailing excitement. Nobody thought of carrying out the new ideas by force. In striking contrast to the Münzer uproar, meekness and sufferings were here understood as the most essential elements of the Christian ideal.' [Art. Anabaptists, *Schaff-Herzog Enc.*] Thus, it came to pass, in the words of Ritschl, that 'The decision against the Anabaptists was effected by the power of the magistrates.' [*Hist. Pietism*, I, p. 36]

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

Recent investigators, and especially Keller, have clearly shown that the principles of the Waldensians spread very early in Bohemia and influenced the Reformation under Huss, giving rise at last to the Bohemian Brethren. Tradition says that Waldo himself went thither, and that his followers abounded in Austria on the Bohemian border. It is equally clear that, as early as 1182, the views of Waldo had found their way into Holland, and when persecution raged against the Waldensians in Southern Europe, many of them found refuge in the Netherlands, so that by 1233 Flanders was full of them. Many of these were weavers (Tisserands), and the first Baptists found in Holland were of that trade. So numerous were they that Ten Kate says, All the weaving was in the hands of 'Anabaptists.' Van Braght records the martyrdom of hundreds of these refugees, who were known by different nicknames, and were living quietly in the Netherlands, long before Luther was born. Limborch describes them as 'men of simple life and judgment,' and thinks that if 'their dogmas and institutions are examined without prejudice, it must be said that of all Christian sects which exist to-day no one more nearly agrees with them than that called the Mennonite.' Ypeig and Dermout are of the same opinion. They say: 'The Waldensians scattered in the Netherlands might be called their salt, so correct were their views and devout their lives. The Mennonites sprang from them. It is indubitable that they rejected infant baptism, and used only adult baptism.' [*History of the Dutch Baptists*, I, pp. 57,141]

Further they say that their principal articles of faith were: The sole authority of the Scriptures; the headship of Christ; the rejection of Church authority; the accounting of the pope as a layman; confession to a priest as useless, as God alone can pardon sin; salvation only by Christ; good works in obedience to God, and confirmation of faith; no adoration of saints; and the observance of Baptism and the Lord's Supper.

He declares that they cultivated religion of the heart, and regulated their lives by our saviour's teachings, that they condemned the bearing of arms and self-defense against unrighteous power, and were known as the people who say 'Yea and Nay.' This is added: 'From this historical account of the ancient Waldenses of the Netherlands, as they were in the twelfth century, and of their doctrine as it then was and continued to be in the succeeding centuries, it can be seen how, in every respect, the ancient and modern Baptists of the Netherlands, whose condition and doctrine are generally known, resembled them. Yet we must notice, as an exception to this, the characteristic article of faith respecting baptism. In none of the Confessions of Faith of the Waldenses, it is true, is the article found, and yet it is certain that the Netherlands Waldenses always rejected infant baptism, and administered the ordinance only to adults. We may find this positively asserted respecting the Netherlands Waldenses by Hieronymus Verdussen, by the Abbott at Clugny, and other Romanist writers. Hence it is that they are better known in this country by the name of Anabaptists than by that of Waldenses.

'It can easily be seen by a reference to their opinions respecting baptism how natural it was that, when in the sixteenth century some Anabaptists joined the seditious rabble, this evil was laid upon all Anabaptists, and all who afterwards preferred to be called Baptists, were branded by their enemies with the same hated name...They would, without doubt, quietly have done much good had they not made their doctrine respecting the baptism of adults too prominent. In this respect their religious zeal was not united with wisdom. They did not hesitate openly to entice many from the Romish Church to their community, and upon their initiation to rebaptize them. This greatly excited the anger of the people and the disapprobation of the government, which strictly forbade the practice. Before the name of Luther as a Reformer was known, it appears that the

The Era of the Reformation

Anabaptists in this land carried on the work of Reformation originally undertaken by others, and drew many from the Church of Rome to them, and rebaptized them...In the sight of the authorities they lived as peaceful citizens, obedient and noted for their upright honesty, conscientiousness, temperance and godliness. The earlier Roman writers who are willing to pay a proper respect to the truth admit this to have been the fact. From this narration it is not difficult to understand how greatly the Waldenses of the Netherlands, or so-called Anabaptists, were pleased when Luther and his followers so zealously commenced the Reformation. They immediately made known their approbation, they glorified God, who in their time had raised up brethren with whom they could so well unite; at least in the main points. Yet they adhered firmly to their own peculiar views, especially respecting the baptism of adults.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Dutch Baptists*]

These writers then go on to show that there was amongst them a mystical and fanatical element, known as the '*perfect*;' then there were the 'imperfect' who adorned their pure faith by a praiseworthy mode of life.

'These were, indeed, ornaments of the Christian Church, who, as lights placed upon a hill, sent forth a wide illumination in the midst of the surrounding darkness. Persons of both classes were scattered through Germany, Switzerland, the Netherlands, etc. Was it indeed surprising that the folly of many of the so-called *perfect* should, at the time of the Reformation, have affected the whole? This will appear the less astonishing if it be remembered that among the Lutherans and the Zwinglians might be found fanatical errorists who were learned instructors of the people...By far the greater part of the Anabaptists of the first class, and absolutely all of the second sort, were the most pious Christians that the Church ever had, and the most valuable citizens of the State. These worthy Anabaptists, or, as they may more properly be called, Baptists, were to be found in great numbers in the Netherlands, in Friesland, Groningen and Flanders. In the provinces that we have not mentioned their ancestors, the Waldenses, were settled, as we have said, in the twelfth century.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Dutch Baptists*]

After giving a full account of their extensive internal influence upon all the Protestant Christians in the Netherlands, these authors add:

'Although there were among the Baptists few learned men; yet they were zealous students of the doctrines of the Christian religion, willingly reading moral, practical writings, but with greater eagerness studying the Bible and inciting each other to diligence in the understanding of this precious volume. What a beneficial influence this must have had on the other Protestants, both as regards a virtuous course of life and an inquiry into the truth of the faith. Even among the Protestant teachers, who, in other respects, were wholly Lutheran, there were found many who openly stated that, on account of the above-mentioned facts, they held the Baptists in the highest estimation and loved them as brothers.' Amongst these they mention the renewed John Anastatus: A 'very sensible, sedate, noble, thinking, upright Lutheran, who considered the Baptist brethren to be in error in some doctrinal points, but elevated above the other Protestants on account of their peace-loving disposition, strength of faith and godliness of life. This appears from a work which he wrote at Strasburg in 1550, in the Lower Rhine dialect, or Gelder language, entitled *The Guide of the Laity*.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Dutch Baptists*, I, App., p. 50]

Here we see why the Baptists went by the name of 'Anabaptists' rather than by that of Waldensians. At the appearance of Luther they came out of their obscurity and hiding-places, and undertook to scatter the light of a more certain Gospel; and to break the power of Romish superstitions. Their zeal in pushing their doctrine of adult baptism aroused the opposition of government, which issued the sternest edicts against them. Nevertheless, they baptized many Catholics before Luther was heard of. The first question of Inquisitors was: 'Have you been re-baptized?' so widespread was this practice.

In the Reformation, according to De Hoop Scheffer, quite as many of the Waldensians in

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

Holland identified themselves with the Baptists as with the Lutherans or Zwinglians, and those who fled from persecution in Germany proper and Switzerland made many converts. In 1523 a book appeared in Holland, without the name of the author, entitled *The Sum of the Holy Scriptures*. It was soon translated into English, French and Italian, and so many editions were sold that it aided largely in spreading Baptist views throughout Europe. It has recently been reprinted. On baptism it says:

'So are we dipped under as a sign that we are, as it were, dead and buried, as Paul writes, Rom. 6 and Col. 2. The life of man is a battle upon earth, and in baptism we promise to strive like men. The pledge is given when we are plunged under the water. It is the same to God whether you are eighty years old when you are baptized; or twenty; for God does not consider how old you are, but with what purpose you receive baptism. He does not mind whether you are Jew or heathen, man or woman, nobleman or citizen, bishop or layman, but only he who, with perfect faith and confidence, comes to God, and struggles for eternal life, attains it as God has promised in the Gospel.'

One of the commonest errors classes the Baptists of Holland with the Münster insurrection, chiefly because John of Leyden and others from that country took part in that outbreak. Keller corrects this error thus: 'No one who impartially studies the history of Menno Simon and of John of Leyden can deny that the doctrines and the spirit of the two men were infinitely unlike, and much more unlike than, for example, the doctrines and spirit of the Lutheran and Catholic Churches.' The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* says: 'That after the Münster insurrection the very name "Anabaptist" was proscribed in Europe.' This of itself introduced confusion in tracing their history, because the name ceased to identify any specific sect, and classified immense numbers of men with the Münster uproar who were no more connected with it than the pope himself. But says this authority: 'It must be remembered that Menno and his followers expressly repudiated the distinctive doctrines of the Münster Anabaptists...They never aimed at any social or political revolution, and have been as remarkable for sobriety of conduct as the Minister sect was for its fanaticism.' Menno himself says: 'I warned every man against the Münster abominations, in regard to a king, to polygamy, to a worldly kingdom, and to the use of the sword, most faithfully.'

Ypeig and Dermout tell us that the Netherland Baptists were much scattered until 1536, when they obtained the position of a regular community separated from the German and Dutch Protestants; but at that time they had not been formed into one body by any band of union. This privilege was obtained for them by the sensible course of Menno Simon.

MENNO SIMON was born in Friesland, in 1492. He was thoroughly educated and possessed large native powers. He became a Catholic priest, but in due time went to Luther for counsel in seeking his soul's salvation. He tells us little of the result, but details fully the impression which the martyrdom of Snyder made upon his mind. Sicke Snyder, so called because he was a tailor by trade, was slaughtered at Leenwarden in 1531, by the sword, his body laid on the wheel and his head set upon a stake, because he had been rebaptized. Menno says: 'I heard from some brethren that a God-fearing man had been beheaded because he had renewed his baptism. This sounded wonderfully in my ears, that any one should speak of another baptism. I searched the Scriptures with diligence, and reflected earnestly upon them, but could find no trace of infant baptism.'

He says that he consulted Luther's writings on that subject, who told him: 'We must baptize them on their own faith, because they are holy;' but he could not see that they were holy, or that they had any 'faith' if they were. He went to Bucer, who told him that: 'We should baptize them in order to

The Era of the Reformation

bring them up in the ways of the Lord.' He went to Bullinger, who said that we should baptize all our children because the Jews circumcised their sons. Then, as none of them gave him scriptural authority in the case, he went to the Bible as his only guide, and finding it silent on the subject, he cast the doctrine aside as a human figment, united with a Baptist church and began to preach the Gospel. For a quarter of a century he did the work of an evangelist from country to country, enduring every sort of suffering for Jesus' sake, and established churches in Friesland, Holland, Brabant, Westphalia and the German provinces on the Baltic. One Reynerts sheltered Menno in his house, but this was a crime, and while the preacher escaped, his heroic host died a martyr rather than betray him. Blunt says that his followers became 'notorious for their deference to the Scripture, and, instead of claiming an inspiration superior to it, bowed down to the most literal interpretation of its precepts.' The Lord of Fresenburg, from admiration of the purity of his disciples, invited them to settle on his estate in Holstein and promised them protection. Many fled there, who established churches, and there Menno died in peace, 1559.

The two Dutch historians quoted so largely already say of him that he excluded from the community 'some of the so-called *perfect* who had either taken part in the riots or had not disapproved of them. He also excluded and gave over to the contempt of the brethren all the rest, who could not be checked in their wicked fanaticism by his sensible instructions. His abhorrence of these perverse men was so strong that he was not only ashamed of them, but he counted it a sin to eat and drink with them. As he also inspired others with the same abhorrence of their conduct, the whole community of Baptists was soon freed from the loathsome leaven of the riotous "Anabaptists." Through his instructions also the tolerably pure doctrines of some Baptists were made purer; much more nearly allied to the spirit of true Christianity. It was one of his fundamental principles that in the search for religious doctrines nothing should be embraced that is not found in the Holy Scriptures, and in the use and application of these mere human deductions should be avoided.' [Ypeig and Dermout, *History of the Dutch Baptists*, chap. on Dutch Baptists]

Whether he was ever immersed is a matter in dispute. Scheffer thinks that he was not, although he says that 'in Germany, until 1400, there was no other method than immersion.' It is clear that after that date the method changed, and that the Mennonites practiced pouring, at an advanced stage in their history. Menno's great testimony lodged against infant baptism, for which he and his people, in common with all the so-called 'Anabaptists' of the Netherlands, endured great persecution. The accounts given of their sufferings by such secular historians as Motley, as well as by the martyrologists, are horrible in the extreme. Christians of various sects were butchered in cold blood, so that, in five-and-twenty years, under Charles V, 50,000 persons are said to have been hanged, beheaded and buried or burnt alive in the Netherlands alone. A very large proportion of these were Baptists. June 10, 1535, a furious decree was fulminated at Brussels, calling for the death of this entire people. Even if they recanted they were to die by the sword instead of fire, the women were to be buried alive, and all persons were forbidden to petition for any grace, favor or forgiveness for them. Before suffering death in any of its sanguinary forms, these helpless victims were generally put to the rack. Motley thus describes this atrocity:

'The rack was the court of justice; the criminal's only advocate was his fortitude...The victim, whether man, matron or tender virgin, was stripped naked and stretched upon the wooden bench. Water, weights, pullies, screws, all the apparatus by which the sinews could be strained without cracking, the bones crushed

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

without breaking, and the body racked exquisitely without giving up the ghost, was now put in operation. The executioner, enveloped in a black robe from head to foot, with his eyes glaring at his victim through holes cut in the hood which muffled his face, practiced successively all the forms of torture which the devilish ingenuity of the monks had invented. The imagination sickens when striving to keep pace with these dreadful realities.' [Motley, *Rise of the Dutch Republic*, I, pp. 223,224]

It was more common to bury the women alive than the men, and it was done generally in this manner. A coffin was made, so small that the poor wretch must be squeezed into it without room to struggle, with holes for iron bars to keep the body down. After laying it on a scaffold and forcing the body into it, a cord was run through the bottom of the coffin, tied round the neck and violently drawn tight. Then earth was thrown upon it, and the living burial was completed. Dr. Rule relates the case of a harmless woman at Leenwarden, 1548, in whose house a Latin Testament was found. She was put on the rack and asked whether she 'expected to be saved by baptism?' She answered, 'No; all the water in the sea cannot save me, nor any thing else but that salvation which is in Christ, who has commanded me to love the Lord my God above all things, and my neighbor as myself.' A printer at Hesvelt was beheaded because he had put this note into one of the printed Bibles: 'The salvation of mankind springs from Christ alone.' About 1549, the Baptists were persecuted with great vigor. Twenty of them lay in prison at Amsterdam, when all but five men and three women made their escape. Elbert Jansen, a lame man, might have escaped but refused, and on the 20th of March he, with seven others, was burnt, on the charge 'that they had suffered themselves to be rebaptized and had wrong notions of the sacraments.' Rule mentions nine other men at Amsterdam who, for being Baptists, were taken out of their beds and removed to the Hague. There they were beheaded and their heads sent back to Amsterdam in a herring-barrel, where they were set upon stakes. Hans of Overdam was put to death in Ghent in 1550. He was a talented man, of gentle but indomitable spirit and of great spirituality. In the touching account of his sufferings it is said that he thus addressed his brethren:

'Dearly beloved, it is not enough that we have received baptism on the confession of our faith and by that faith have been engrafted into Christ, unless we hold fast the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end. The Council began to speak to us, why we were not satisfied with the faith of our parents and with our baptism. We said: We know of no infant baptism, but of a baptism upon faith, which God's word teacheth us.'

The account of his arrest is most interesting. One Sunday morning himself and a friend had met in the woods to worship God, with a company of their brethren. They sought other brethren in vain for near an hour, and were about to return, but began to sing softly, that if their friends were at hand they might hear them. They heard a rustling and stopped, when three armed men stood before them. Hans said pleasantly: 'Well, comrades, you have been seeking a hare and have not caught it.' The three bid them surrender as prisoners; and immediately their eyes fell upon a wagon load of their brethren, who were guarded by three justices and their officers. Hans and his friend were then bound together in irons and led to the castle, about a mile distant. Here they were kept for three days and then taken to Ghent, where they met their betrayer. They were charged with holding 'assemblies of this new doctrine,' contrary to the order of the emperor. Hans replied: 'It is not given him of God to make such laws; therein he exceeds the power granted him of God. In this matter we know him not as a ruler, for the salvation of our souls is dearer to us and we must give our obedience to God.' They went through various examinations and disputations, but were finally condemned to death. The

The Era of the Reformation

Procurer-general said: 'The reason you are condemned as heretics is that various learned persons have disputed with you. and you have not suffered yourselves to be instructed.'

Motley, quoting at large from Brandt, records the noted case of Dirk Willemzoon, who was guilty of no crime but that of being a Baptist. Being sentenced to death, he made his escape over a frozen lake, late in the winter, when the ice had become weak. Three officers pursued him, and one of them breaking through, he cried for help, as he was drowning. The other two fled, but the tender-hearted Baptist left the shore at the peril of his life, flew across the cracking ice to his rescue, and the hero saved him. Having thus magnanimously rescued his enemy from death, he was himself burnt at the stake for his pains. [*Dutch Republic*, ii, p. 280] Time fails to enlarge upon these individual cases of suffering for Christ's sake, for Baptists were tolerated nowhere. Other dissenters fled to lands where they were safe, but no voice pleaded for them, and no arm was raised for their defense; hence Ten Kate says that in the Netherlands they furnished ten martyrs where other Reformed sects gave one. The following figures are appalling. The Dutch Martyrologies mention in Ghent, 103; in the Province of Holland, III; at Antwerp, 229; and this ratio was kept up everywhere, except in the province of Groningen. Nor did it matter if they fled to other lands. The Martyrology relates the sufferings of 900 martyrs by name. and makes reference to 1,000 others. Lihencron collected the martyr hymns of Lutherans and Baptists. He found three Lutheran hymns, commemorating four martyrs, but sixty-two Baptist hymns, extolling the steadfastness of three hundred brethren. De Hoop Scheffer says:

'In 1635 the magistrates of Zurich undertook to compel the Mennonites by force to enter the Reformed Church. They were thrown into prison, and their property was confiscated. Schaffhausen, Berne and Basel joined hands with Zurich, and great cruelties were perpetrated. Berne sold a number of its Mennonites as slaves to the king of Sardinia, who used them on his galleys. In the course of about seventy years all Mennonites were expelled from Zurich, Schaffhausen and St. Gall.' [*Schaff-Herzog Ency.*, Art. Mennonites] The minor forms of persecution were numberless. Baptists met where they could to hear the Gospel, in darkness, in barn, and brake, and bush, through cold, and snow, and hail. Dragoons hunted them by the light of moon and stars, to detect their secret places of meeting, and tragedy commonly followed, in one form or another. Their first crime was to worship God and administer baptism at midnight; then came separation from home, wife, child, parent and other kindred. Flight or banishment followed; arrest, imprisonment, inquisitors and torture were only the beginning of the end. Said a simple-hearted prisoner:

'The chief reason for torturing me is to make me tell how many preachers there are, what their names and where they live, where I went to school, how many I have baptized, where I was ordained, and by whom. They wanted me to call the magistrates Christians, and say that infant baptism is right. Then I pressed my lips together, left it all with God and suffered patiently while I thought of the Lord's words: "No one has greater love than this, that a man should die for his friends."'

Nothing was left undone to terrify them into recantation, but they were strangers to fear. 'Let us not be frightened,' said they. 'Though the hounds bay, and the lions roar; for God, who is with us, is a mighty God and will keep his own.' Ursula Werdum, a noble lady at Overyssel, was taken from her castle to the stake. Her mother and sister came from afar to change her mind, but their entreaties had no effect. On the way to execution she joined hands with one 'Mary,' who had been disowned by her family, and they sung the praises of God as they walked. They gave each other the kiss of peace and prayed for their persecutors. Mary begged the judges to shed no more innocent blood, but a priest drove Ursula from her and the burning pile. She turned back, saying that she wanted to go to the same glory, in the same way; and, turning to the stake, said: 'Our Father, who art in heaven.'

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

'Yes.' said the priest, 'that's where he is found.' She replied: 'Because I look for him there, I can face death here.' When she ascended the pile her foot slipped, and the judge thought that she yielded. 'No,' said she, 'the wood slipped; I will remain steadfast to Christ,' and died.

Buckle quotes from the official report of the Venetian ambassador to the court of Charles V, made in 1546: 'That in Holland and in Friesland more than 30,000 persons have suffered death at the hands of justice for Anabaptist errors.' [*Hist. of Civilization*, I, p. 189] No chapter in history is more horrible than that which records the persecutions of the Netherland Baptists under Charles V. He ordained the amputation of a hand or the extraction of an eye on every author or printer of their books. All the accused were to be examined as to the baptism of their babes, midwives were sworn to baptize new-born children, mothers whose infants were born away from home must bring baptismal certificates, and all pastors were commanded to keep baptismal registers, that the parents of the unchristened might be brought to punishment. State baptismal records have figured largely in the persecution of Baptists. They appear to have been created for that purpose first by Zwingli: 'Because the Baptists have often said that they did not know whether they were baptized or not;' he requested the Council at Zurich to record the names of each child, with its father and godmother, 'as it will establish who are baptized, and Anabaptism will not be able to break in again overnight.' Hence, according to Hofling (*Sacrament of Baptism*, 2,245,) on May 24, 1526, the keeping of registers was decreed, because 'many people would not have their children baptized.' Holland understood this way of entrapping Baptists as well as Switzerland.

The whole land was stricken with terror and the cries of the tortured were heard perpetually, gallows and trees on the highways were hung with dead bodies. Dr. Rule says: 'The very air was polluted with the stench, and the knell of death sounded heavily from every belfry. [Duke] Alva gloated over the carnage.' This fiend invented many new methods of torture for the amusement of the soldiery, amongst them the screwing of iron to the tongue and the burning of the end till it dropped off, and when the sufferer screamed they mocked at his fine 'singing.'

Despite these persecutions they perpetually multiplied. Keller says that in 1530 there was scarcely a village or city in the Netherlands where Baptists were not found. Bullinger complains that the whole province of Belgium was infested with them; and Micronius wrote, that Menno's kingdom not only extends through Belgium, but from 'Flanders to Dantzic.' In 1550 the leading reformed element, according to Ten Kate, was Baptist, and in Friesland, in 1586, one inhabitant in every four was a Baptist. The magistrates of Deventer refused admission to the inquisitors, saying: 'We can make all the examination needful of the faith of our burghers. You have nothing to do in this matter, and we order you to leave without delay and never return on such an errand.'

Baptist industry and frugality distinguished them in trade and commerce. Peter Lioren, one of them, introduced the cat-boat and extended the herring and whale fisheries, to the enrichment of the nation. Halbertsma asks:

'How was it possible to find better citizens? They brought into the treasury their thousands every year, and never took out a penny as officials. They set fire to no property, but dug wells to put out fires. They fired no musket, but they nursed the wounded. They were not soldiers, but they furnished the sinews of war.'

When men were martyred publicly a straw hut was built around the stake and the martyr consumed with it, so that he should neither be seen nor heard. Verbeck, a Baptist pastor, suffered in this way in Antwerp, 1561.

The Era of the Reformation

The people could endure this diabolical work no longer, and the States of Holland declared the PRINCE OF ORANGE Viceroy, in their determination to shake off at once the Spanish and Papal yoke. William had been governor of Holland under the king of Spain from 1559. In 1556, while still a Catholic himself, he wrote to his subordinates: 'I have neither the will nor the means to help the Inquisition, or execute the placards. If peace is to be preserved in this land, liberty of worship must be guaranteed to every inhabitant. There must be a halt in persecution until an appeal can be made to the king.' When he was required to uproot heresy he determined to surrender his office, and then to take up arms against Alva. Possibly he did not at once comprehend all that his motto meant, but when his brother, Lewis, marched into Guelderland his new note was, 'Liberty of nation and conscience.'

A.D. 1572 the continent was still ablaze, however, with the tires of persecution, and human bodies were lighting men everywhere to a better day. Protestant raved against Catholic and Catholic against Protestant, and both against the Baptists. Philip of Hesse, the lone dissenter at the Diet of Spire, was the only prince of that day who was unwilling to dye his sword in innocent blood. He would imprison heretics and exile them to lands where they met with no mercy, but he would not slay them. And, possibly, inspired by his example, God was raising up a greater than he, who should defend every Christian against the blood-thirst of his brother Christian. No country was more thoroughly soaked with the blood of the saints than Holland, under Philip II of Spain, Duke Alva and the Inquisition, but its bitterest trial came in the opening of 1572, in its contest with the Spaniard.

As far back as 1559, the Prince of Orange was in Paris, when Henry II. told him that he and Philip had made a treaty to put all Netherland Protestants to the sword. At that time the young prince was but twenty-six, but he then and there mentally resolved to thwart that bloody policy by arousing the Protestant population of the Netherlands to throw off the Spanish yoke. In due time he appealed to them and to the courts of Northern Europe to aid him in rescuing Holland, but at first largely in vain. After several victories had awakened popular sympathy, his appeals for aid to the wealth of Holland were met with coldness and frowns. He had thrown all his own possessions into the contest, had even sold his plate and jewels and mortgaged his estates, to carry on the war against Spain, and was nearly obliged to abandon the attempt, when a trivial circumstance gave him new courage.

Early on an April morning, and oppressed with anxiety, he was walking near his headquarters at Dillenburg, when two simple strangers approached him and, taking him to be one of the royal household, asked if they could have an audience with the prince. He led them into the castle and made himself known. On asking who they were and their business, he found that they were Jacob Fredericks and Dirk Jans Cortenbosch, two Holland Baptist preachers. They had been visiting their brethren on the Rhine, and on their return home came to see whether they could serve the prince. They explained to him their principles, and he told them his general purposes and needs, asked them to urge their friends to contribute money to the advancement of the common Christian cause, and thanked them heartily when they promised to do so. On the 20th of the same month he issued the following decree: 'Be it known to the magistrates and the officials in the North, that you are by no means to allow any one who preaches and observes the true word of God, according to the Gospel, to be hindered, injured or disturbed, or to have his conscience examined, or on that account to be persecuted by inquisition or placards.' A fortnight later, May 5th, he sent his secretary with a letter to his Baptist friends pleading: 'Let every one contribute. This is a time when even with small sums

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

more can be effected than at other times with ampler funds. His lordship will ever be ready to reward them for such good and faithful service to the common cause and to their prince.'

With slight variations in minor things, Motley also touchingly details these circumstances. He says: 'These appeals had, however, but little effect. Of three hundred thousand crowns, promised on behalf of leading nobles and merchants of the Motherlands by Marcus Perez, but ten or twelve thousand came to hand. The appeals to the gentlemen who had signed the compromise, and to many others who had, in times past, been favorable to the liberal party, were powerless. A poor Anabaptist preacher collected a small sum from a refugee congregation on the outskirts of Holland, and brought it, at the peril of his life, into the prince's camp. It came from people, he said, whose will was better than the gift. They never wished to be repaid, he said, except by kindness, when the cause of reform should be triumphant in the Netherlands. The prince signed a receipt for the money, expressing himself touched by this sympathy from these poor outcasts. In the course of time, other contributions from similar sources, principally collected by dissenting preachers, starving and persecuted church-communities, were received. The poverty-stricken exiles contributed far more, in proportion, for the establishment of civil and religious liberty, than the wealthy merchants or the haughty nobles.' The same author speaks of the prince, as conceiving 'the thought of religious toleration in an age of universal dogmatism,' for that 'he had long thought that emperors, kings and popes had taken altogether too much care of men's souls in times past, and had sent too many of them prematurely to their great account. He was equally indisposed to grant full powers for the same purpose to Calvinists, Lutherans or Anabaptists.' [Motley, *Dutch Republic*, ii, p. 16]

Immediately on giving their promise the Baptists made the collections, but, owing to the loss of one of their collectors in the perilous undertaking and the poverty of their churches, their returns were delayed. Fifty years of unrelenting persecution had left them but little besides their patriotism; yet, on July 29th, they brought their patriotic offering of a thousand florins to the prince at Remund. The prince had faithfully kept his word. At a meeting of the Estates of Holland, July 15th, he had been declared governor, in place of the Duke of Alva; and had proclaimed that 'the freedom of religion shall be guarded, every body shall exercise it freely in private or in public, in church or in chapel, without let or hinderance from any one.' And eight days later, in camp, he made proclamation to protect Catholics. 'No one, whether priest or layman, shall be wronged or injured in property or person;' and offenders against this order were to be put to death, as malcontents and disturbers of the general quiet and welfare. When the Baptists made their offering to him out of the penury of their confiscation; burdened by hosts of widows and orphans, left by thousands of their martyrs, he asked them: 'Do you make no demand?' They answered, 'Nothing but the friendship of your grace, if God grants to you the government of our Netherlands.' He assured them of his sympathy for them and for all men. And he kept faith with them to the letter, although his fidelity involved him in perpetual turmoil with his best friends. Motley says that:

'His intimate counselor, the accomplished Saint Aldegonde,' was 'in despair because the prince refused to exclude the Anabaptists of Holland from the rights of citizenship. At the very moment when William was straining every nerve to unite warring sects, and to persuade men's hearts into a system by which their consciences were to be laid open to God alone, at the moment when it was most necessary for the very existence of the fatherland that Catholic and Protestant should mingle their social and political relations, it was indeed a bitter disappointment for him to see wise statesmen of his own creed unable to rise to the idea of toleration. "The affair of the Anabaptists," wrote Saint Aldegonde, "has been renewed. The prince objects

The Era of the Reformation

to exclude them from citizenship. He answered me sharply, that their yea was equal to our oath, and that we should not press this matter unless we were *willing to confess that it was just for the Papists to compel us to a divine service which was against our conscience.*" It seems hardly credible that this sentence, containing so sublime a tribute to the character of the prince, should have been indicted as a bitter censure, and that, too, by an enlightened and accomplished Protestant. "In short," continued Saint Aldegonde, with increasing vexation, "I don't see how we can accomplish our wish in this matter. The prince has uttered reproaches to me that our clergy are striving to obtain a mastery over consciences. He praised lately the saying of a monk who was not long ago here, that our pot had not gone to the fire as often as that of our antagonists, but that when the time came it would be black enough. In short, the prince fears that after a few centuries the clerical tyranny on both sides will stand in this respect on the same footing." [Motley, *Dutch Republic*, iii, pp. 206,207]

Nor did it matter that his most intimate friends were offended with his broad toleration. Motley further says: 'No man understood him. Not even his nearest friends comprehended his views, nor saw that he strove to establish, not freedom for Calvinism, but freedom for conscience. Saint Aldegonde complained that the prince would not persecute the Anabaptists, Peter Dathenus denounced him as an atheist, while even Count John, the only one left of his valiant and generous brothers, opposed the religious peace – except where the advantage was on the side of the new religion.' [Motley, iii, p. 349] Again, he adds: 'Sincerely and deliberately himself a convert to the Reformed Church, he was ready to extend freedom of worship to Catholics on the one hand and to Anabaptists on the other, for no man ever felt more keenly than he that the Reformer who becomes in his turn a bigot is doubly odious.' [Motley, iii, p. 617] He moreover rebuked those who would interfere with his generous impulses and principles, as another remarkable passage from this distinguished writer will show:

'The Prince of Orange was more than ever disposed to rebuke his own church for practicing persecution in her turn. Again he lifted his commanding voice in behalf of the Anabaptists of Middleburg. He reminded the magistrates of that city that these peaceful burghers were always perfectly willing to bear their part in all the common burdens, that their word was as good as their oath, and that as to the matter of military service, although their principles forbade them to bear arms, they had ever been ready to provide and pay for substitutes. "We declare to you, therefore," said he, "that you have no right to trouble yourselves with any man's conscience, so long as nothing is done to cause private harm or public scandal. We therefore expressly ordain that you desist from molesting these Baptists, from offering hinderance to their handicraft and daily trade by which they can earn bread for their wives and children, and that you admit them henceforth to open their shops and to do their work, according to the custom of former days. Beware, therefore, of disobedience and of resistance to the ordinance which we now establish.'" [Motley, *Rise of the Dutch Republic*, iii, p. 334]

In William's letter to Middleburg, 1577, he praises the Baptists, who had brought their contributions at the peril of life, and had 'helped to win liberty.' In the previous year, when writing to induce Amsterdam to join the States, he had said: 'I am determined to oppress no man's conscience, and to force no one to adopt my religion.' When, therefore, in 1577, the Reformed preachers, headed by Vander Heiden and Jan Paffin, tried to persuade him to limit the liberty of the Baptists, he replied that 'the time is past for the clergy to assume control over consciences, and attempt to subject all men to their opinions.'

The result of this long, dark struggle of the Baptists was that through this 'silent' but sincere man their radical principle of soul liberty for Christians found its way into the first compact of States since the foundation of Christianity. While this instrument was not a constitution, but only a compact, yet Motley says that it 'became' the foundation-stone of the Netherland Republic.' [Motley,

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

iii, p. 414] And that republic, says Motley, 'became the refuge for the oppressed of all nations, whether Jews or Gentiles; Catholics, Calvinists, and Anabaptists prayed after their own manner to the same God and Father.' [United Netherlands, iv, p. 532] In 1579, Article XIII of the Union of Utrecht declared: 'Every one shall be free in the practice of his religious belief, and that, in accordance with the peace of Ghent, no one shall be held or examined on account of matters of religion.' [Motley, iii, pp. 412,413,415]

Many of the Reformed clergy wore extremely restless under this provision, and some of them sought to turn the prince against the 'Anabaptists' in utter disregard thereof. But his answer was that, 'To persecute them would justify the Catholics in the persecution of the Protestants.' These transactions and especially the testimony of the prince to the true character of the 'Anabaptists,' serves to put them in their true light, despite all the conscienceless slanders of their enemies. He speaks of them as 'Peaceful burghers, always perfectly willing to bear their part in all the common burdens.' In governmental matters they held substantially to the views of the Society of Friends in Great Britain and the United States, but they were found amongst the most loyal and firm supporters of the government, in all that left their religious rights untouched. The thousand florins which they wrung from their poverty to speed the cause of civil and religious liberty are a thousand flat contradictions of the slanders which have been thrown in their faces, and the testimony of their prince should make any man blush to the ears who has the impudence to repeat them, and enter him on the list of false witnesses. Prince Maurice, his son and successor, showed the same noble spirit. Zeeland went on, still treating the 'Anabaptists' with severity by insisting that they should take the oath, although they were as loyal to the government without the oath as others who swore. They were also refused permission to print a book or hold a meeting, without the consent of their zealous and petty tyrants. Maurice came to their rescue and demanded that they should be let alone; nothing should be exacted of them which injured their consciences. Even after the victory for religious liberty at Middleburg, and regardless of all honorable obligations which the authorities had given to maintain it, in 1591, when a scurrilous edict was issued against the Baptists, he wrote thus: 'Although the declaration of the Estates and of the prince, our father, of glorious memory, suffices to regulate your conduct toward the Anabaptists, nevertheless we have judged it necessary to write you to observe the statutes and to let the Anabaptists alone, until the Estates pass some other order.'

The noble spirit of William lived after him; for in 1582 the magistrates of Leyden dared to use these words to the Estates of Holland: 'We will tolerate no religious oppression whatever, in great or in small, nor receive any statutes or decrees that involve it. Our unanimous opinion is, not to trouble each other in matters of worship; and we will not be turned from this position by any synod's decree. We will, by God's grace, maintain this position to the death, for liberty ever consists in the freedom of every man to speak his opinion. We exhort the estates, therefore, to join hands with us, to bear in love each party in its peculiar beliefs, so far as they do not conflict with public security, and thus have a good-natured people united against the common enemy.'

Afterwards, the Articles of the Union of Utrecht were so interpreted and amended as to permit their persecution, but the names of William the Silent and his son will ever stand as the first amongst princes to advocate liberty of conscience. And all honor to Holland, which ever after remained a land of comparative safety, if not of comfort, for the men of all faiths. This was amongst the first of reasons which led to her speedy rise to a front rank amongst the nations; in commerce, wealth and learning, and opened her harbors to the noblest fugitives from all lands. For these blessings Baptists

The Era of the Reformation

should give thanks to their simple preachers and their brethren, who cheered the grand prince in his darkest hours, and for whose sake he threw the shield of liberty over the heads of all hounded and hated men who love God. In addition to the pen of Motley, the above facts may be found in Doopsgezinde Bijdragen, J. G. De Hoop Scheffer, 1873; Ottii Annales, p. 158; Brandt, *Hist. Reformation*, I, p. 609; Schrock's *Hist. Ch. on Anab.* in Holland; and *Hist. des Anabaptistes*, pub. by Desbordes, 1599, p. 244.

The Baptists of the Netherlands fell into many divisions on church discipline, about marriage, dress and social relations; they laid great stress on managing the members of their own congregations. Menno lodged the true marks of a Christian congregation in: The faithful preaching of God's word, and obedience thereto; in the confession of Christ's name by the observance of baptism and the Supper; in love toward men, a holy life and the endurance of persecution, if need be, for Christ's sake.

The following are some of their acts of discipline. In 1538, at a conference at Bachold, they separated from every seditious remnant of the Minister fanatics, who were led by Battenburg. In 1554, at a conference held at Wismar, Menno's home, they recommended the temporary exclusion of members who married outside the congregation and their restoration if they maintained their faith. But some insisted on the separation of husband and wife, in case of the exclusion of one of them. On these and other questions, they split up into numerous sects, disfellowshipping one another; some of them even required rebaptism of those coming to them from the other factions, and they called each other all the unlovely names that commonly disgrace quarreling Christians.

Their divisions and subdivisions abounded in petty questions, such as the treatment of bankrupts, whether or not they should patronize the vessels of excluded members, and similar points, until, in the little city of Hoorn there were thirteen sorts of Baptist Churches. Their contentions became so perfectly disgraceful that Menno said: 'My sadness was as bitter as death, and I knew not for grief what to do. Yea, if the gracious breath of the Almighty had not preserved me, I should have lost my senses.' As to the question of immersion amongst the Motherland Baptists:

There is not conclusive evidence that they immersed as a rule, until after the middle of the sixteenth century. As sprinkling and pouring had commonly taken its place amongst all sects, they adopted the prevailing method, though often practicing immersion, as was still done by the Catholics. Yet that many of them clung to immersion is evinced by the fact that some of the followers of Menno pleaded that they could not immerse in prisons, nor always in their own houses, and so practiced pouring. Robinson says of Menno, that 'he was dipped himself, and he baptized others by dipping.' Dr. Angus, a critic in Mennonite lore, says that he 'always laid great stress on immersion.' Menno's own words imply this: 'After we have searched ever so diligently we shall find no other baptism besides dipping in water, which is acceptable to God, and maintained in his word...Let who will oppose, this is the only mode of baptism that Jesus Christ instituted, and that the Apostles taught and practiced.' [Mennonis Simonis, Opera, p. 24]

Most of the Church historians in Germany and the Netherlands accord to the Baptists of those countries a high antiquity, which they are able to trace by lines more or less distinct, but which they do not formulate into full and authentic record. For example, Mosheim says of the Dutch Baptists that their true origin 'is hid in the remote depths of antiquity, and is, consequently, extremely difficult to be ascertained.' Drs. Dermont and Ypeig, in reporting their historical investigations to the King of Holland, say that:

Chapter 7 - The Reformation – Baptists in the Netherlands

'The Baptists, who were formerly called Anabaptists, and in latter times Mennonites, were the original Waldenses, and have long in the history of the Church received the honor of that origin. On this account the Baptists may be considered the only Christian community which has stood since the Apostles, and as a Christian society, which has preserved pure the doctrines of the Gospel through all ages.'

So Dr. Keller, in his recent work, which throws a flood of light upon the early history of the German Baptists, says, after describing their great numbers: 'It would be a great mistake if one should believe that all these remarks have reference only to the period of the Münster kingdom; much rather can it be proved that in the lands mentioned Baptist Churches existed for many decades and even centuries.' He also adds: 'The more I examine the documents of that time at my command, the more I am astonished at the extent of the diffusion of Anabaptist views, *an extent of which no other investigator has had any knowledge.*' Even Zwingli, who died in 1531, said: 'The institution of Anabaptism is no novelty, but for thirteen hundred years has caused great disturbance in the Church.' Yet, in the main, these writers do not trace the line beyond the statement of the countries and cities where they existed, of which Keller, who is possibly the most learned investigator of the subject now living, gives a long list, but adds that a perfect list of 'Baptist Churches cannot be enumerated, for the reason that their existence was a profound secret.'

For the same reason it is difficult to trace the history of the COLLEGIANTS to their origin, but this, at least, is known, namely, that they were found in Holland as early as 1619, and can be traced down for about two hundred years, under the name of Collegiants, from their *collegia*, and Rheinsbergers, from the name of the village near Leyden, where they held their great assemblies. They are supposed to have received immersion from certain Baptists exiled from Poland. They laid out grounds and put up buildings at Rheinsberg, where they sunk a stone baptistry on their own premises and immersed their converts, the candidate kneeling in the water, his head being bowed forward and buried. Their Confession made the Bible their standard of faith and life, they required faith in Christ as the Son of God, before the reception of baptism and the Supper, they demanded a holy life, exercised the liberty of prophesying, defended the right of private judgment, and kept their piety active by prayer and conference meetings, when these were unknown elsewhere in Holland. They first organized into an Assembly, after the decree of the Synod of Dort, 1619, which removed two hundred Arminian pastors, for they were Arminian in doctrine, and were opposed to war and oaths. Their leaders were the brothers Van der Kodde, members of a devout family, which had suffered persecution for more than a hundred years, as Reformers. Their grandfather, William Jansoon, was a great Bible student, who kept the Scriptures hid for safety on his farm. His seven grandsons were good Latin scholars and one of them taught Hebrew in the high-school at Leyden. Prince Maurice said to D'Aubert, the French ambassador, one day as they rode through the Collegiant lands: 'Our peasants can read Latin.' He then summoned these brothers from their work in the field, and, to the astonishment of the diplomat, talked with them in Latin and French.

They established an orphan asylum, for which the widow of the clerk of Rotterdam gave them 10,000 gulden; they frequently raised 60,000 gulden a year to take care of their own poor, and when the dykes burst, in 1740, they commenced a subscription for repairs which readied 60,000 gulden. They had meetings in eighteen different towns in 1740, but their meetings ceased at Rheinsberg in 1787. At the beginning of the present century Hefele still traced some remains of the sect, but they divided into two parties, one of them running into Unitarian views. They built two places of worship

The Era of the Reformation

at Rheinsberg, and continued the contest for thirty years; but at present the sect is about extinct, some of them being absorbed into the Mennonite and other bodies, from which originally they were entirely separate.

Dr. Angus kindly forwards the above picture of baptism as administered in Rheinsberg by the Collegiants, and as representing the Mennonite baptism of those times.

The history of the Netherland Baptists is a most exhilarating and sad one. As a body, they have largely faded away in their original testimony. Perhaps they did the great work which called them into existence and kept them alive so long, namely, the defense of Denk's great principle, 'that the civil magistrates should not use force in matters of faith.' For this they suffered all that men can suffer. In the language of Froude: 'On them the laws of the country might take their natural course, and no voice was raised to speak for them. For them no European agitated, no courts were ordered into mourning, no royal hearts trembled with indignation. At their death the world looked on complacently, indifferently, or exultingly. For them history has no word of praise.'

Menno Simon said that while their murderers were 'saluted by all around as doctors, masters, lords, we are compelled to hear ourselves called Anabaptists;' and so are treated as the pests of society.

'What misery and anxiety have I felt in the deadly perils of persecution for my poor sick wife and little children! While others lie on soft beds and cushions, we must often creep away into secret corners. While others engage in festivities to the music of fife and trumpet, we must look around whenever a dog barks, fearing the spies are on our track. Yet those who suffered with Jesus then reign with him now.'

BAPTISTS OF GREAT BRITAIN

Chapter 1 - Immersion in England

From the introduction of Christianity into Britain, its baptism was immersion. Simpson says, in the preface to his *Ancient Baptismal Fonts*, of which he names 353 in England: 'As immersion was practiced in this Church until the Reformation, and perhaps occasionally later, as will afterwards appear, all fonts were up to that period sufficiently large for the purpose.' Grose also says of the baptisteries in the churches, that: 'The basins were very large. There was an anteroom where the ceremony of immersion was performed.' [*Antiquities*, I, p. 156] So Lingard, in his *History of the Early English Church* tells us: 'When an adult solicited baptism, he was called upon to profess his faith in the true God, by the repetition of the Lord's Prayer and the Apostles' Creed, and to declare his intention of leading a life of piety...He then descended into the font, the priest depressed his head below the surface, saying, I baptize thee,' etc. The candidate 'was plunged into the water, the mysterious words were pronounced, and he emerged a member of the Church.' The same author says again, that when infant baptism had been introduced, 'The priest himself descended into the water, which reached to his knees. Each child was successively delivered undressed into his hands, and he plunged it thrice into the water.' [*Antiq. Anglo Saxon Ch.*, p. 317] Gregory the Great is the authority for the statement that in 597 Austin and his missionaries baptized ten thousand in one day, to which Gocelin, Bede and others add that this baptism was in the river Swale. This river is in Kent, running between the Isle of Sheppy and the main land, and is navigable for ships of 200 tons burden. Green speaks of this scene, saying: 'The Kentish men crowded to baptism in the river Swale.' [*Hist. Eng. People*, p. 55] And Gocelin calls it 'the river of holy baptism,' adding: 'All entered the dangerous depth of the river, two and two together, as if it had been a solid plain; and in the true faith, confessing the exalted Trinity, they were baptized one by the other in turns, the apostolic leader blessing the water...So great a progeny for heaven born out of a deep *whirlpool!*' [*Patrologiae Latinae* 80, v, pp. 79,80]

After the Venerable Bede has given an account of a large wooden baptistry hastily built at York, A.D.627, for the baptism of Edwin, king of Northumberland, he describes the baptism of Paulinus in the Yorkshire river 'Swale, which flows past the village of Catteract (Carrie); for as yet oratories or baptisteries, in the very beginning of the infant Church there, could not be built.' Alcuin, when speaking of the immersion of the king and his nobles 'in the sacred fountain,' says that York remained illustrious: 'Because in that sacred place King Edwin washed in the water.' Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, 669, enjoined triple immersion. Canon Ladains said: 'If any bishop or presbyter does not perform the one initiation with three immersions, but with giving one immersion only, into the death of the Lord, let him be deposed.' Brown's *History of York Minster* marks the position of the wooden baptistry, 'inclosing a spring, still remaining, which, according to Dr. Giles, was discovered while making repairs of the present cathedral.'

In gathering up these and other cases, Bede, who died A.D. 735, says: 'For he truly who is baptized is seen to descend into the fountain, he is seen to be dipped in the waters, he is seen to ascend from the waters.' The Council of Calichyth (Chelsea), held under Kenwolf, king of the Mercians, in 816, passed this canon: 'Let the presbyters know when they administer sacred baptism, not to pour holy water upon the heads of the infants, but always to immerse them in the laver, after the example given by the Son of God himself to every believer, when he was three times immersed

Baptists of Great Britain

in the waters of Jordan.' In the following century the baptism of Ethelred took place on this wise, according to William of Malmesbury: 'When the little boy was immersed in the font of baptism, the bishops standing around, the sacrament was marred by a sad accident.' Such immersion is in keeping with the 'Sarum Use' (Liturgy), which existed from 1087, and of which Dr. Wall remarks, that it did all along enjoin dipping, without any mention of pouring or sprinkling. Cardinal Pulis, a lecturer at Oxford and Paris, in a treatise published about 1150, writes: 'Whilst the candidate for baptism in water is immersed the death of Christ is suggested; whilst immersed and covered with water the burial of Christ is shown forth; whilst he is raised from the waters the resurrection of Christ is proclaimed. The immersion is repeated three times.'

In 1200, the Council of London enjoined immersion; that of Sarum in 1217, and that of Oxford in 1222, did the same: while the Synod of Worcester, 1240, decreed that 'In every church where baptism is performed, there shall be a font of stone of sufficient size and depth for the baptism of children...And let the candidate for baptism always be immersed.' Two Councils held at Perth, 1242, 1296, by canon instructed the minister what to do before immersion, and in the days of Wallace and Bruce, a barbarous custom prevailed in the clanish feuds, amongst the border countries, which left the right hands of male children undipped in baptism, in order that they might with this unsanctified hand deal the more deadly blows upon their foes, as one of our great poets embodies the sentiment: 'And at the sacred font the priest through ages left the master hand unblest, To urge with keener aim the blood-incrusted spear.'

Sir Walter Scott refers to this custom in his notes on the minstrelsy of the border, and says, that it existed in Ireland also. The Percy Society's poems of Wm. de Shorham, vicar of Seven Oaks, gives an exposition of baptism about 1313, in which he says, that men may dip in warm water 'in whaut' (winter) and in the 'salt sea.' But he forbids dipping at baptism in wine, 'sither' (*cyder*), 'ne in pereye,' also in ale and 'other liquor that changeth water's kind,' a practice which prevailed to some extent. Water only must be used, but he allowed ice to be melted, for the purpose of procuring water. Pope Stephen allowed baptism in wine, if death impended, and water could not be had, and several cases are on record, in the Irish Church, where children were immersed in milk. They had water enough at hand anywhere for the purpose of aspersion, but immersion in some fluid was indispensably necessary in the absence of water, even if rarer and more expensive than water.

Before this time, however, as these many injunctions show, aspersion was made an exceptional method of administering the rite, in consequence, no doubt, of the permissive decree of the Council of Ravenna, 1311, before which it had no sanction. But the exceptions were few for a long period. Arthur, the eldest brother of Henry VIII, and Margaret his sister, were immersed in the years 1486 and 1502 with elaborate ceremonies. Leland describes at length the new font made for the baptism of the prince at Winchester, lined with cloth to prevent the cold sides touching the child, and says, that 'the prince was put into the font.' The same writer describes the baptism of Margaret, grandmother to Mary Queen of Scots, at Westminster Abbey: 'As soon as she was put into the font all the torches were lighted.' He gives similar accounts of the dipping of Edward VI and Queen Elizabeth, showing that the royal family was immersed as well as the common people, according to the ecclesiastical requirements of the times.

It is clear enough that dipping continued as the normal form of the rite all through Edward's reign (1547-52), but Walker says, 'Sprinkling was sometimes used.' Indeed, the first Church permission found in England for any thing but immersion is in the Prayer-Book of 1549, which says,

Chapter 1 - Immersion in England

that 'If the child be weak, it shall suffice to pour water upon it.' With this exception the rubric demanded that the priest shall 'take the child in his hands,' and 'shall dip it in the water thrice. First dipping the right side: second the left side: the third time dipping the face.' In 1552 the word 'thrice' was dropped from the book, together with the directions for the dipping to the right, left, etc., and the instruction was simply, 'shall dip it in water.'

But this gradual change met with great resistance. William Tyndale, in his *Doctrinal Treatise*, 1528, writes:

'Ask the people what they understand by their baptism or washing? And thou shalt see, that they believe, how that the very plunging into the water saveth them...Behold how narrowly the people look on the ceremony! If aught be left out, or if the child be not altogether dipped in the water, or if, because the child is sick, the priest dare not plunge him into the water, but pour water on his head, how tremble they! how quake they! How say ye, "Sir John" [a common name for a priest], say they: "Is this child christened enough, hath it full Christendom?" They believe verily that the child is not christened.' Again he says: 'Tribulation is our right baptism, and is signified by plunging into the water.' So the people were gradually robbed of the only symbol which gave the right import of their baptism, which was made what he quaintly calls: 'A turn-again lane unto them, which they cannot go through, nor make three lines agree together...The sentences of the Scripture are nothing but very riddles unto them, at the which they guess as the blind man doth at the crow and expound by guess, a hundred doctors by a hundred ways.'

In his *Obedience of a Christian Man* he says, that 'The plunging into the water signifieth that we die and are buried with Christ, and the pulling out again signifieth that we rise again with Christ in a new life.'

And in his Prologue to John's first Epistle he adds:

'Now, we be all baptized; but, alas! not one, from the highest to the lowest, ever taught the profession or meaning thereof. And, therefore, we remain all blind generally, as well our great rabbins, for all their high learning which they seem to have, as the lay people. Yea, and so much the more blind are our great clerks (the learned), that where the lay people, for a great number of them are taught nothing at all, they be all wrong taught, and the doctrine of their baptism is all corrupt unto them with the leaven of false glosses, ere they come to read the Scripture; so that the light which they bring with them, to understand the Scripture withal, is utter darkness, and as contrary unto the Scripture as the devil unto Christ.'

It was with all this and much more in view that Watson, Bishop of London, 1558, wrote: 'Though the old and ancient tradition of the Church hath been from the beginning to dip the child three times, etc., yet that is not of such necessity, but that he is but once dipped in the water, it is sufficient, yea, and in time of great peril and necessity, if the water be but poured on his head it will suffice.' [*Doct. of Baptism*, chap. x, p. 147] So stern was the resistance, however, to this innovation, that Middleton, Bishop of St. David's, issued an 'injunction' in 1582, forbidding triune immersion in baptism. [Lee, *Ch. under Elizabeth*, I, 248] The second Prayer-Book of Edward VI, 1552, enjoins only a single immersion, and that of Elizabeth, 1560, made no change in this rubric. This is still the law in the English Church. But, so far as appears, the word 'sprinkle' first took rank in an English ritual, in the Catechism of 1604. In answer to the question, 'What is the outward visible sign or form of baptism?' it replies, 'Water, wherein the person baptized is dipped or sprinkled with it.' This was followed by the *Westminster Directory*, 1644, which decided, that 'It is not only lawful, but also sufficient and most expedient, to be by pouring or sprinkling water on the face of the child.' Thus, in less than a century, what had been the general rule was reversed, and what had been the rare

Baptists of Great Britain

exception became the rule; yet, in 1660, dipping had not become entirely extinct, as it was common in 1644. Lord Brooke, in his *Treatise on Episcopacy*, 1641, charges, that the 'Anabaptists' refuse baptism to their children till they come to years of discretion, 'but in other things they agree with the Church of England.' His subject is baptism, and his 'other things' must relate to this subject, for in doctrine and government they were wide apart. Blake, of Tamworth, says, in 1644 'I have been an eyewitness of many infants dipped, and I know it to have been the constant practice of many ministers in their places for many years together. Those that dip not infants do not yet use to sprinkle them, there is a middle way between these two. I have seen several dipped; I never saw or heard of any sprinkled, or (as some of you use to speak) *rantized*. Our way is not by aspersion, but perfusion; not sprinkling drop by drop, but pouring on at once all that the bowl contains.' Dr. Wall attributes the change to the Puritan clergy, whose deference to Calvin's authority led them to adopt sprinkling in accordance with his own form, adopted 1545.

Walter Cradock, preacher at All Hallows, and one of the sweetest spirits of his day, preached before the House of Commons, at St. Margaret's, Westminster, July 21, 1646, in which sermon he exhorts Parliament not to establish 'any outward external' for a test of church fellowship, as: 'Baptizing this way or that way, I mean by dipping or sprinkling, or by conjunction of opinion on some controverted point...Therefore, when I have communion with a saint, I must not look so much whether he have taken the covenant, or have been baptized once or twice or ten times.' And in a marginal note he adds: 'I speak not this as if my opinion were for rebaptizing or against the baptizing of infants of believers, *the contrary appears by my practice.*' [Pages 27,28]

The value of his testimony is found in the fact that he gives no hint whatever that immersion was a new thing in England, but the implication runs all through his writings that it was very prevalent, and the public were as familiar with it as with the 'covenant' or any other 'controverted point' of that period. Besides, if immersion had been introduced amongst the 'Anabaptists' in 1641, it would have been simply preposterous for a learned clergyman to be exhorting Parliament, five short years after, not to make 'baptizing this way or that way, by dipping or sprinkling,' the foundation of church fellowship. Nothing could be more far-fetched, or even impertinent, than such an appeal. Fortunately, he throws much light upon the general subject two years later, 1648, in his 'Gospel-libertie, its Extensions and Limitations,' from which the following passages are taken:

'Saith Christ, Baptize all nations, that is, go and use water for their washing, for whatever men find in the word, I speak not of now...If Christ had tied men to go into Jordan, as in that country it was so hot, they might go with a great deal of comfort; but if Christ had made baptism such an ordinance as that in all climates and countries and regions they must go over head and ears in a river, we know in some climates it would have been present death. As with us in this climate, at some times of the year to be put over head and ears in the Thames, it would be death, at others not.' [Pages 23,24] It is refreshing in the bitterness of the seventeenth century, side by side with Featley, to find a man who had the candor to apply his own logic on this subject and stand by it to its legitimate conclusions. Thus, on the Supper he says, p. 24:

'The Lord took bread and wine, and blessed, and broke and gave them; and the drift of all the business is to show the breaking of his body, and the shedding of his blood. Now, he hath bound us that we should break bread and drink wine, that may represent the thing; but he hath not bound us to *bread* so properly called, or to *wine* properly so called; for there are some countries that have neither bread nor wine, but only roots that they call bread, and they have water for their drink. Now, if Christ had said it must be true bread, and true and real wine, that must do the deed, these people could never have the Supper of the Lord.'

Chapter 1 - Immersion in England

Like Baxter, he was very nervous about the health of the English nation, and had little love for cold water to that end, but he never charges the Baptists with being the authors of a new style of homicide. He does think, however, that they laid too much stress on dipping, and says on p. 26:

'Of dipping over head and ears, because the word *bapto* signifies over head and ears sometimes, and because the preposition *em* signifies to go into, from that they bind *all the saints all the world over*, to go into rivers, so that if a man be not *dipped*, but only sprinkled, because of the preposition *em*, that makes a nullity of the Church, that it is no church, and so, consequently, there shall be no church at all.' Still, with a charity far in advance of his age, he cannot bear to have the Baptists abused, especially in nick-naming them. and several times he rebukes this sharply, as on page 40, thus:

'I see the devil gets much advantage by nick-names, by calling men Presbyterians, and Antinomians, and *Anabaptists*, and I know not what. Therefore, I beseech you, beware how you use those names, though I say not it is unlawful, yet there be mistakes, let us call them as gently as we can, that are generally among us.'

Here is no 'Gangraena' nor vulgar slang, but a Christian scholar, and more, a Christian gentleman, who understands the times in which he lives, and knows how to talk about decent people with whom he differs on serious questions. On p. 100 he says: 'There is now among good people a great deal of strife about baptism; as for divers things, so for the point of dipping, *though in some places in England they dip altogether*. How shall we end the controversy with those godly people, as many of them are. Look upon the Scriptures, and there you shall find that *bapto* (to baptize), it is an ordinance of God, and the use of water in way of washing for a spiritual end, to resemble some spiritual thing. It is an ordinance of God, but whether dipping or sprinkling, that we must bring the party to a river, or draw the river to him, or use water at home, whether he must be in head and foot, or be under the water, or the water under him, it is not proved that God hath laid down an absolute rule for it. Now, what shall we do? conclude on the absolute rule that God hath laid down in Scripture, and judge of the rest according to expediency...Let us judge whether sprinkling or dipping be more *expedient*, and then there would be no strife. For there is scarce a man in this place that if he were persuaded that dipping were not an absolute rule, but it were to be judged according to expediency, he would rather have in a modest way the use of water, than to have men and women, and weak people, it may be in the winter time, over head and ears into the river; he would rather make use of water in a more civil and safe and less dangerous way.'

He neither charges upon the Baptists that their practice was unscriptural, new, nor a change from their former practice. On the contrary, he asks: 'How we shall baptize, whether by sprinkling or going into a river, because it is probable that some of them did;' as to the English practice he says: 'In some places in England they dip altogether. How shall we end the controversy with those godly people, as many of them are.' He then frankly intimates his honest opinion that the controversy was as old as Christ's command to baptize, for he says, on p. 16, that when Christ sent his disciples to baptize he gave the command. 'And there was an end. They might ask a hundred questions. Shall we do it in a river or in a brook? to young or to old? in winter or in summer?...But Christ lays down the sum of the doctrine, and the end of it, In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, and there is no more of it.' The only new thing that he hints at in this whole question of dipping, is his great concern for the life of the dipped. For centuries those opposed to them had been devising every conceivable method of getting rid of them, by fire and fagot, as in England and Holland, and by drowning outright, as in Switzerland and Austria. But now, one tender-hearted

Baptists of Great Britain

opponent springs up, who cannot bear the thought even of having their feet wet. Compassion was a new thing in their case, they were sickly and 'weak,' and to think of taking such 'feeble folk' into the 'Thames' and other rivers or brooks and wetting their 'ears,' and that in winter too, was a moving thought for kind-hearted Walter Cradock. Yet as the Baptists would not stop this old, uncivil, unsafe and 'dangerous way,' he says, page 108:

'I speak not that you may persecute godly people, or that it is altogether unlawful for the saints to meet in another place...Or thus, suppose in this country or in a colder that people did go and baptize in rivers, whereas this is not an absolute command. But only the using of water, lay down that, and by that means divers subjects *die*, and lose their lives, suppose this were real, herein for aught I know the magistrate may determine a course, and take another way, because herein is prejudice to His subjects.'

This last is the passage referred to by Baxter in his *Plain Scripture Proof*, pp. 134-137, in evidence that dipping is a violation of the Sixth Commandment, and should be stopped by the magistrate. His words are:

'As Mr. Cradock shows in his book of *Gospel Liberty*, the magistrate ought to restrain it, to save the lives of his subjects. That this is flat murder, and no better, being ordinarily and generally used, is undeniable to any understanding man.'

Certainly, Cradock's words will bear no such construction as Baxter put upon them, and that he meant no such thing is clear not only from the words themselves, but from the kind manner in which he uniformly treated those who had been 'dipped over head and ears in the river.' He saw a slight tendency to suicide in such conduct, and he thought such people were too good to 'die and lose their lives,' and for aught he knew to the contrary 'the magistrate *may* determine a course, and take another way.' He could not bear him to lose such 'subjects,' he had too few of them now, but he hardly knew how to prevent it, for he says: 'I speak not, that you may persecute godly people,' who are dipped as they were altogether, 'in some places in England.'

The reader may want to know somewhat more of this open-hearted, honest Walter Cradock, who, according to Baxter, thought Baptists guilty of murder. Joshua Thomas states that he was a Welshman of a reputable family in Monmouthshire, who, when a student at Oxford, visited his friends in Wales, and while there heard Mr. Wroth, the rector of Llanfaches, preach, and was converted. The next news we have of him is through Archbishop Laud, in 1634, to whom the Bishop of Landaff had reported that Walter was preaching as curate in St. Mary's in Cardiff; but that 'being a bold, ignorant young fellow, he had suspended him, and taken away his license.' Then Neal tells us that in 1634-35 he was cited to London and condemned as a schismatic, so that he was compelled to leave the Establishment and preached all through Wales with great power. One of Laud's most serious charges against him was that he said in the pulpit, 'that God so loved the world, that for it he sent his Son to live like a slave, and die like a beast.' Brooks tells us, that this earnest Puritan formed an Independent Church at Llanfaches in 1639, and Orme, in his *Life of Baxter*, writes that about 1635, Baxter and Cradock became acquainted in Shrewsbury, when a strong affection was formed between them. But the *Broadmead Records* inform us that in 1643 he and his church were obliged to fly from Wales to Bristol before the king's army; they took refuge in Bristol, which was held by the 'Parliament's army.' Then Cradock was glad to find a home amongst those who had been dipped head over ears in the river Frome, and as they had no pastor he administered the Supper to

Chapter 1 - Immersion in England

them: 'First at ye Dolphin, in ye greate Roome, then afterwards sometime at a baker's house, upon James' Back, who was a Member of ye Church.' When the king's army captured Bristol, these Welsh Independents and the Bristol Baptists fled together to London, and there 'Did commonly meet at Greate Allhallows for ye most parte. Only those professors that were Baptized before they went up, they did sitt downe with Mr. Kiffen and His Church in London, being likewise Baptized.' [*Broadmead Records*, pp. 25,26] In 1646 we have his great sermon before Parliament, while preacher at All Hallows, and in 1648 his *Gospel Liberty*, which Baxter uses to such poor account; and not least of all his statement that in some parts of England dipping was used altogether; with his request, in 1646, that Parliament would not make this a test of Church fellowship. He died about 1660.

Amongst the opponents of the new practice of sprinkling, some of the Baptists were found in stout resistance; notably, as early as 1614, Leonard Busher, the author of *Religious Peace*, wrote thus:

'It is well worthy consideration, that as in the time of the Old Testament the Lord would not have his offerings by constraint, but of every man whose heart gave it freely: so now, in the time of the Gospel, he will not have the people constrained, but as many as receive the word gladly, they are to be added to the Church by baptism. And therefore Christ commanded his disciples to teach all nations, and baptize them; that is, to preach the word of salvation to every creature of all sorts of nations, that are worthy and willing to receive it. And such as shall willingly and gladly receive it, he hath commanded to be baptized in the water; that is, *dipped for dead in the water.*' [*Plea for Liberty of Conscience*, Hans. Knollys. Soc. Tracts, p. 59] S. Fisher also, in his *Baby Baptism Mere Babyism*, resists the innovation bravely. On July 29, 1649, he held a controversy at Ashford, with several clergymen, and in 1653 published his book, in which he devotes 159 pages to show that sprinkling cannot be called baptism without perversion. He says: 'Having raised the rotten basis of your Babyism, I come now to reckon with your Rantism, and to examine whether our manner of baptizing, which is by dipping, is the baptism which was instituted by Christ.' He closes page 464 as follows:

'Thus have I done with both parts of that subject of rantizing, which partly at the motion of your Ashford disputants I was engaged in, and partly by that mere demi-reformation that is made on this point on a party of men in Lincolnshire and elsewhere (of whom I suppose there are several congregations), who having long since discovered the true way of baptism as to the subjects, namely: That professing believers only and not any infants are to be baptized, but remaining ignorant of the true way and form of administering the ordinance, are fallen into the frivolous way of *sprinkling believers,*' which to do is as much no baptism at all as to dip infants is no baptism of Christ's ordaining. Which people, for whose sakes as well as others I write this, will be persuaded, I hope, in time, to be as to the outward form, not almost only, but altogether Christians, and rest no longer in that mere midway, mongrel Reformation.' Baxter said in 1650; 'I may say, as Mr. Blake, that I never saw a child sprinkled, but all that I have seen baptized had water poured on them, and so were washed.' From that time onward, sprinkling pushed pouring out of the way so fast that Selden, who died in 1654, remarks sarcastically in his *Table Talk*:

'The baptizing of children with us does only prepare a child, against he comes to be a man, what Christianity means. In the Church of Rome it has this effect, it frees children from hell...In England, of late years, I ever thought the parson baptized his own fingers, rather than the child.' This is substantially what Featley had said in 1644: 'The minister dippeth his hand into the water, and plucketh it out when he baptizeth the infant.' [*Dipper's Dipt.*, p. 70]

So fast did the exception become the rule, that in the opening of the eighteenth century Dr. Wall tells us that he had heard of two persons then living who had been dipped in the font; also of one clergyman then living who had so baptized infants, and that at the request of the parents he had

Baptists of Great Britain

himself administered baptism in the same way. He further states that during the reigns of James and Charles I all christened children were carried to the font, which act said: 'The minister is ready to dip the child if the parents will venture the health of it.' Dean Comber, in his work on the Common Prayer, 1688, said of the baptismal rite: 'Because the way of immersion was the most ancient, our Church doth first prescribe that, and only permits the other where it is certified the child is weak, although custom has now prevailed to the laying of the first wholly aside.' To this day, however, as Dean Stanley says: 'In the Church of England immersion is still observed in theory...The rubric in the public baptism for infants enjoins that unless for special causes they are to be dipped, not sprinkled, but in practice it gave way from the beginning of the seventeenth century.' Occasionally it is used now, but according to the annals of that Church [of England] the last recorded instances of immersion, before the Restoration were in dipping three infant sons of Sir "Robert Shirley, in the reign of Charles I. This agrees with Gale's answer to Wall, that dipping continued till Queen Elizabeth's time, 'and then fell into total disuse, within a little more than a hundred years, and sprinkling, the most opposite, was introduced in its stead.'

We fall into a mistake, however, if we suppose that the Baptists were the only people who resisted this change. Becon tells us that in the reign of Elizabeth there was contention on the subject in the Established Church. Wall treats of this at great length, and of the efforts made by many to restore dipping, not only, as Rogers expresses it to D'Anvers, 'in order to the peace of the Church,' but also to conciliate the Baptists, 'by your reunion with it, and the saving of your souls by rescuing you from under the guilt of schism, I could wish the practice of it retrieved into use again.' Indeed, Daniel Rogers went so far as to say: 'I believe the ministers of the nation would be heartily glad if the people would desire or be but willing to have their infants dipped, after the ancient manner, both in this and in other churches; and bring them to baptism in such a condition as that they might be totally dipped.' Walker, Towerson and other divines took the same ground. Sir Norton Knatchbull, one of the most learned men of his day, was of the opinion, 'That it would be more for the honor of the Church, and for the peace and security of religion, if the old custom could conveniently be restored.' And Sir John Floyer, whom Wall pronounces 'a learned physician,' wrote a *History of Cold Bathing, Ancient and Modern*, in which he showed its healthiness and blessings, without regard to climate, adding, that he could not 'advise his countrymen to any better method for preservation of health, than the cold regimen, to dip all their children in baptism,' and 'to wash them often afterwards, till three quarters of a year old.' By 'wash' here he evidently means dip. He thought, also, that 'the approbation of physicians would bring in the old use of immersion in baptism.' [Wall's *Inf. Bap.*, ii, pp. 406-14] The strange medley into which Baxter fell on the subject may throw light upon Sir John Floyer's position. The Kidderminster divine had become deeply concerned on this matter of immersion as affecting the national health, and had said, in 1650, that it was 'A plain breach of the Sixth Commandment, "Thou shalt not kill."' So far then from being an ordinance of God, he denounced it 'as a most heinous sin,' and thought that 'the magistrate ought to restrain it, to save the lives of his subjects.'

This seemed to afford amusement for the ablest physicians of that period but in the nineteenth century, when the bath is accounted a constant necessity to health, what an edification it must be to the bathers at Newport, Long Branch, and Gape May to hear the pious author of *The Saint's Everlasting Rest* declaim thus, in depicting the terrible calamities which follow immersion. He says:

Chapter 1 - Immersion in England

'Apoplexies, lethargies, palsies, and all other comatose diseases would be promoted by it. So would cephalalgies, hemicranies, phthises, debility of the stomach, crudities, and almost all fevers, dysenteries, diarrhœas, colics, iliac passions, convulsions, spasms, tremors, and so on. All hepatic, splenetic, and pulinonic persons, and hypochondriacs, would soon have enough of it. In a word, it is good for nothing but to dispatch men out of the world that are burdensome, and to ranken churchyards. I conclude, if murder be a sin, then dipping ordinarily over head in England is a sin; and if those who would make it men's religion to murder themselves, and urge it upon their consciences as their duty, are not to be suffered in a commonwealth, any more than highway murderers; then judge how these Anabaptists, that teach the necessity of such dipping, are to be suffered...If the minister must go into the water with the party, it will certainly tend to his death, though they may escape that go in but once...I am still more confirmed that a visible judgment of God doth still follow anabaptizing wherever it comes.' [*Plain Scripture Proof*, pp. 134,135]

Baptists of our day ought not to be more severe on Baxter than to quote his own well-weighed words, for when he got over these occasional Anti-Baptist fits, he contended earnestly that he ought to take the Lord's Supper with his Baptist brethren, and then 'Richard was himself again.' We have room for gratitude that he lived not in this age, or not a man of us could have obtained a Life Insurance Policy. Perhaps all the suffering that he deserved was meted out to him by Dr. John Owen, in these words:

'I verily believe that if a man who had nothing else to do should gather into a heap all the expressions which, in his late books, confession and apologies, have a lovely aspect towards himself, as to ability, diligence, sincerity, on the one hand, with all those which are full of reproach and contempt toward others, on the other. The view of them could not but a little startle a man of so great modesty, and of such eminency in the mortification of pride, as Mr. Baxter is.'

With a change in the ordinance itself, there naturally came in a change of the name by which it was known, namely, a 'washing.' From the most ancient times, washing had been spoken of as the result or consequence of dipping, as in the case of Naaman, who washed in the Jordan seven times, having dipped himself that number of times. To wash does not necessarily now mean to dip, yet, as the less is contained in the greater, so he that is dipped is washed. After his seventh dipping, Naaman was 'clean.' So Meyer, on Mark 7:4: 'Except they *wash* is not to be understood of washing the hands, but of immersion, which the word in classic Greek and in the New Testament everywhere means; here, according to the context, to take a bath.' Plumptre, on the same passage, says: 'The Greek verb (that to *wash*) differs from that in the previous verse, and implies the washing or immersion (the word is that from which our word *baptize* comes to us) of the whole body, as the former does of a part.' Beza, on the same text, says that '*baptizein* does not signify to *wash*, except by consequence. For it properly means to immerse.' Lightfoot describes unclean persons amongst the Jews as '*washed* in some confluence of waters, in which so much water ought to be as may serve to wash the whole body at one dipping.' For centuries the word wash was not used as a synonym for baptism, but was commonly used to express the cleansing effect of baptism, as an immersion. Cyprian says of clinics, that they were not *washed* but perfused by the saving water;' evincing that in his judgment perfusion was not to be accounted as washing in the same sense as immersion. [Ep. lxix]

Pouring and sprinkling having taken the place of immersion in England, baptism came to mean another thing from its former self; the words wash and washing naturally changed to adapt themselves to the new ordinance and to the theology by which it was interpreted. Hence, Baxter speaks of babes who had water poured upon them, and so were washed. In keeping with the change of the ordinance, P. de Witte asks: 'Ought we not again to bring in dipping as the Muscovites and

Baptists of Great Britain

others did?' and answers: 'It is not necessary, because washing is done with sprinkling as well as by dipping.' Until the Puritan divines returned from Geneva, they held the idea that tropical washing was the consequence of being overwhelmed, just as wetting is the consequence of immersion. Wickliff had so used the word in translating Mark 10:39: 'Ye shall be *washed* with the baptism in which I am baptized.' And it is specially interesting to note how reluctantly the English people received the new sense of the word *wash*, in association with sprinkling in baptism. Not being able to see how that act could express the thought of cleansing without the full dipping, some resorted to the absurd idea that rubbing the water in would supply the place of immersion, in efficacious washing, and so we have several accounts of the adoption of this practice. P. Barbour's *Discourse*, 1642, records a striking example of this absurdity. He pronounces this sage opinion on the efficacy of rubbing, p. 14: 'All do or may know that a thing dipped in water is not, therefore, washed or made clean, neither is washing always intended in the dipping of a thing in water. Indeed, washing to make clean is by the way of dipping in many times, that by putting the thing into water and *rubbing* of it or the like it might be cleansed, which I conceive it was the way of their washing in those times and countries where Baptists first began.'

Chapter 2 - Immersion in England, Continued – Persecution

Let us now look at the practice of the people commonly known amongst the English as Baptists, *par excellence*. In the absence of definite information the inference would be warranted, that their administration of the rite corresponded to that which they saw in the State Church; for their chief controversy with their brethren at that time did not relate to the mode, but to the subject of baptism. Their important word was not 'how,' but to 'whom' should baptism be administered? Their foes called them '*Anabaptists*,' those who baptize again. Their offense, as a general thing, was not that they administered this ordinance in a different way from other Christians, but that they baptized on a confession of faith those who had been 'baptized' in infancy. There was no sharp controversy in the earliest literature of the Anabaptists on the method of baptism, although we have some clear definitions of baptism and some cases of immersion. But, as a rule, in the maintenance of baptism on personal trust in Christ, they said little of immersion until they saw it vanishing away before human authority, even in England, where it had maintained itself so long. Step by step, the Reformation in England was feeling its way first to the naked and radical question: Who shall compose the Church of Christ? The Roman yoke was broken, but in their efforts to rid the nation of superstition the Protestants were divided. The Puritans were still in the State Church, and many of them wished to stay there; but the Baptists took the ground that the pale of the Gospel Church could never be measured by the boundaries of the nation. The Church must be made up only of Christians, and the settlement of that question must radically change the British Constitution. The consequence was that they threw themselves first into the recovery of a purely spiritual Church, and then into the restoration of apostolic immersion. That the struggle was hard and hot is seen in the fact that about two hundred works, *pro* and *con*, were issued in the seventeenth century on the questions of infant baptism and dipping. Many of these are preserved amongst the 'King's pamphlets' in the British Museum, and others are lost. Public oral disputation on these subjects was rife also, in the hands of noted champions. One platform dispute was held in Southwark, 1642, between Dr. Featley and Mr. Kiffin; another in London, 1643, in which Knollys, Kiffin and Jessey took a part. T. Lamb and others held a third debate at Turling, in Essex, 1643; and a fourth was had in 1647, at Newport Pagnall, by J. Gibbs and R. Carpenter. S. Fisher and several clergymen held a fifth at Ashford, in 1649; and in the same year another took place at Bewdley, between Richard Baxter and John Tombes. Similar contests occurred between Dr. Chamberlain and Mr. Bakewell, in London, 1650; H. Vaughan, J. Craig and J. Tombes, at Abergavenny, in 1653; and still another at Portsmouth, in 1698, between Dr. Russell and Samuel Chandler, 'with his majesty's license.'

At the very time of these public disputations the Westminster Assembly met, by order of Parliament, and was in session from 1643 to 1649, and its discussions were sorely disturbed on this question of 'dipping.' Yet, according to Neal, there was not one Baptist in that body. Dr. Lightfoot, one of its leading members, kept a journal of its proceedings, and his entry for August 7, 1644, tells us of 'a great heat' in the debate of that day, when they were framing the 'Directory' for baptism, as to whether dipping should be reserved or excluded, or whether 'it was lawful and sufficient to besprinkle.' Coleman, called 'Rabbi Coleman' because of his great Hebrew learning, contended with Lightfoot that *tauveleh*, the Hebrew word for dipping, demanded immersion 'over head;' and Marshall, a famous pulpit orator, stood firmly by him in the debate, both contending that dipping was essential 'in the first institution.' Lightfoot says that when they came to the vote, 'So many were unwilling to have dipping excluded that the vote came to an equality within one, for the one side was

Baptists of Great Britain

twenty-four, the other twenty-five; the twenty-four for the reserving of dipping, and the twenty-five against it. The business was recommitted,' and the next day, after another warm dispute, it was voted that 'pouring or sprinkling water on the face' was sufficient and most expedient. How did this Presbyterian body, without a Baptist in it, come to such 'a great heat' on dipping if it were a novelty and an innovation amongst them in England?

It is a significant fact also that S. Fisher, in his 'Anti-Rantism,' complains that at Ashford and elsewhere the clergy would discuss only the 'subjects,' carefully avoiding all discussion of the method of baptism, a thing which they would have been slow to do if they had known that the 'so-called' new baptism or immersion was, as such, an innovation in England. This they were careful never to charge. Dr. Funk, Catholic professor at Tubingen, dates the rise of sprinkling and its first prevalence thus: 'Throughout the fifteenth century, in decrees of synods, immersion is referred to as the general and orderly form of baptism.' Of sprinkling he says: 'The first sure evidence of its practice is met with at the Synod of Florence, when the Archbishop of Ephesus made it a subject of complaint against the Western Church' (1439). When it was introduced immersion long resisted it as a new form, and this scholar says that when water was poured upon the head the rest of the body was still immersed. On the general subject, he quotes from the Synod of Passau, 1470; of Wurzburg, 1482; of Besancon, 1571; of Aix, 1585; and Caen, 1614.

These discussions had produced such a growing distrust in the public mind on the subject of infant baptism, as early as 1661, that for the first time a form of service was introduced into the Prayer-Book for the public baptism of those of riper years. The preface honestly states the reason: 'By the growth of Anabaptism through the licentiousness of the late times, crept in amongst us, is now become necessary, and may be always useful, for the baptizing of natives in our plantations and others, converted to the faith.' The Baptists were assailed for attempting to restore the ancient state of things as if they had committed an unheard-of crime, and but for the history and literature of many centuries the clamor might lead to the supposition that immersion had never been heard of until they sought to restore the normal English baptism. They were called a 'New-washed company,' were charged with bringing in a 'new dipping,' a 'novelty' and an 'invention,' with being 'led away of the devil,' with 'murdering the souls of babes,' and a few other things of the same gracious sort. Bigotry and hate could not have raised a greater howl if immersion had then been practiced on English soil for the first time. And yet even Dr. Featley is compelled to say in his 'Clavis Mystrica,' 1636: 'Our font is always open, or ready to be opened, and the minister attends to receive the children of the faithful, and to *dip* them in the sacred laver.' Even in our day an attempt has been made to leave the onus of invention upon the English Baptists, in the matter of immersion, because simple-hearted Barbour happened to say, in 1642, that the Lord had raised him up to '*divulge* the true doctrine of dipping.' Yet, his entire treatise discusses the question, 'What is the true ordinance of the dipping of Christ, and wherein does it differ from children's dipping?' In the very sentence which speaks of *divulging* the doctrine he says that it 'was received by the apostles and primitive churches, and for a long time unavoidably kept and practiced by the ministry of the Gospel in the planting of the first churches.' The word 'divulge' was not confined at that time to the sense of disclosing or discovering a thing, as now, but it meant primarily to 'publish.' Henry Denne was immersed in 1643, and preached the Gospel from that time onward; and yet, in sending him forth on a special mission, the Baptist Church at Fenstanton, October 28, 1653, says that, 'On that day' he 'was chosen and ordained, by imposition of hands, a messenger to *divulge* the Gospel of Jesus

Christ;' surely not to make it public, as a new thing. Barbour speaks of the 'dipping of infants' more than a score of times, as a thing with which all were familiar, but he says: 'That dipping whereof we speak is burying or plunging a *believer* in water, he desiring of this ordinance.'

There is less clear and decisive evidence of the practice of immersion amongst the English Baptists from 1600 to 1641 than might be desired, but the passage cited from Leonard Busher, and other proofs, render it certain that they did not first practice it in 1641. It is quite clear that some of them practiced affusion up to that time, while some immersed, but after that date affusion seems to have ceased amongst them and only immersion obtained. The case of John Smyth, who baptized himself in 1608, may be conceded to have been an affusion, and yet this is by no means certain, neither has his immersion been proved. After all that Dr. Hoop Scheffer and others have said on the subject, passages from Smyth's three Confessions of Faith are strangely in conflict with the thought that he practiced aspersion upon himself for baptism. Article XIV in his Latin Confession describes baptism as 'the external symbol of remission of sins, of death and resurrection.' Article XXX in his English Confession says: 'The whole dealing in the outward visible baptism of water setteth before the eyes, witnesseth and signifieth, the Lord Jesus doth inwardly baptize the repentant, faithful man in the laver of regeneration and renewing by the Holy Ghost, washing the soul from all pollution and sin, by the virtue and merit of his bloodshed.' The confession of himself and friends, published after his death, Article XXXVIII, says: 'That all men, in truth died, are also with Christ buried by baptism into death (Rom.6:4; Col. 2:12), holding their Sabbath in the grave with Christ.' And Article XL, 'That those who have been planted with Christ together in the likeness of his death and burial shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.' These utterances savor more of immersion than affusion, and yet they were probably written after his Se-Baptism [self baptism], so that its form is left in doubt, with the probability that it was a dipping.

A feeble but strained attempt has been made to show that none of the English Baptists practiced immersion prior to 1641, from the document mentioned by Crosby in 1738, of which he remarks, that it was 'Said to be written by Mr. William Kiffin.' Although this manuscript is signed by fifty-three persons, it is evident that its authorship was only guessed at from the beginning, it may or may not have been written by Kiffin. The church referred to was that of which Messrs. Jacob and Lathrop had been pastors, but the fact that a part of this congregation did not know that the immersion of believers had been practiced in England cannot be accepted as decisive proof that all the Baptists were strangers to that practice, still less that it had never been known in England before 1641. It can scarcely be supposed that Leonard Busher should have written in 1614 that Christ 'commanded 'those who 'willingly and gladly' received 'the word of salvation to be baptized in the water, that is, dipped for dead in the water,' and that he neglected to obey that command himself. He calls himself 'a citizen of London,' and his style as an English writer, though somewhat unpolished, was equal to the average of his times; he appears to have been acquainted with the Greek Text of the New Testament; he addressed the king (James) and 'the High Court of Parliament' as a man who had the right to address them as a 'citizen,' and with a full knowledge of English affairs. He speaks of himself and his brethren as: 'We that have most truth are most persecuted, and therefore most poor,' and his work bears internal evidence that at some time he had been exiled from his native land for his religion. The 'Address to the Presbyterian Reader,' which forms the Introduction of his Treatise, is signed H.B., supposed to be Henry Burton, and it says of Busher that he was 'an honest and godly man.' What the Treatise itself says of Robinson and the Brownists, with these circumstances, all

Baptists of Great Britain

point to the supposition that he was a member of the Baptist Church, formed in London by Helwys in 1612-14. But, in any case, the fair inference from his own words is, that he was an immersed believer nearly thirty years before the MS. to which Crosby refers was written. The following is the text of that paper:

'1640. 3d mo. The church became two by mutual consent, first half being with. Mr. P. Barebone and ye other half wth. Mr. H. Jessey. Mr. Richd. Blunt wth. him being convinced of Baptism yt. also it ought to be by dipping ye Body into ye Water, resembling Burial and riseing again, Col. 2:12; Rom. 6:4: had Sober-Conference about it in ye. Church, and then wth. some of the forenamed, who also were so convinced. And after Prayer and Conference about their so enjoying it, none having so practiced in England to professed believers, and hearing that some in the Nether Lands had so practiced, they agreed and sent over Mr. Richd. Blunt (who understood Dutch) with Letters of Commendation, who was kindly accepted there, and Returned wth. Letters from them; Jo. Batte a Teacher there; and from that Church to such as sent him. 1641. They proceed on therein, viz.: Those persons yt. ware perswaded Baptism should be by dipping ye. Body, had mett in two Companies and did intend so to meet after this: all these Agreed to proceed alike together: And then Manifesting (not by any formal Words) a Covenant (wch. Word was Scrupled by some of them) but by mutual desires and agreement each testified: These two Companyes did set apart one to Baptize the rest, so it was solemnly performed by them. Mr. Blunt Baptized Mr. Blacklock, yt. was a Teacher amongst them, and Mr, Blunt being Baptized, he and Mr. Blacklock Baptized ye. rest of their friends yt. ware so minded, and many being added to them they increased much.' Dr. Featley, author of *The Dippers Dipt*, born 1582, died 1645, bears direct testimony to the practice of believer's immersion amongst the Baptists at a much earlier period than 1641. In that year he held a dispute with four Baptists at Southwark; and, as he says, in his dedication to the reader, Jan. 10, 1644, 'I could hardly dip my pen in any thing but gall,' we may not suspect him as stating facts within his knowledge to their special advantage. Yet on this subject he says of them: 'They flock in great multitudes to their *Jordans*, and both sexes enter into the river, and are dipt after their manner. And as they defile our rivers with their impure washings, and our pulpits with their false prophecies and fanatical enthusiasms, so the presses sweat and groan under the load of their blasphemies...This venomous serpent (*verè Solifuga*) is the Anabaptist, who, in these latter times, first showed his shining head, and speckled skin, and thrust out his sting near the place of my residence, for *more than twenty years*.' He conveys the idea that they had defiled the 'rivers with their impure washings,' in being 'dipt after *their manner* quite as long as they had defiled '*our pulpits*' and '*presses*,' and that near his own residence 'for more than twenty years.' To his knowledge, then, they had 'dipt' 'both sexes,' in the English 'rivers' from before A.D. 1624; his whole work treats of them as 'Dippers,' who in baptism always 'dipt,' and had he known that they had ever done any thing else, he would have been very happy to have charged them with now throwing aside the right method and with taking up the wrong.

When P. Barbour speaks of the way of 'new baptizing,' he also speaks of baptism having been 'in captivity in Babylon;' which indicates, not that the Baptists had now originated dipping in England, but that they had restored the historical baptism which England had ever known till that time. This he calls 'God *returning* to build his tabernacle.' Smyth himself, in reply to Clifton, calls the baptism of the Baptists '*new*,' but in what sense? He says: 'They set up a *new or apostolic baptism which Antichrist had overthrown*...When all Christ's visible ordinances are lost, either men must *recover* them again, or must let them alone.' The word 'new' was customarily applied to reforms in those days. Gov. Bradford calls Smyth's church at Amsterdam a 'new communion,' a term which Bishop Hall applied to the Brownist churches, but neither of them meant that a church was a new device in the earth. The Bishop complains that the Separatists classed the Church of England with the old Church of Rome, saying:

Chapter 2 - Immersion in England, Continued – Persecution

'The want of noting one poor distinction breeds all this confusion of doctrine and separation of men. For there is one case of a New Church to be called from heathenism to Christianity; *another*, of a former church to be reformed from errors to more sincere Christianity... This is our case. We did not make a New Church, but mended an old. Your Clifton is driven to this old, by necessity of argument; otherwise he sees there is no avoiding of Anabaptism... Neither is new baptism lawful (though some of *you* belike of old were in hand with a rebaptization; which, not then speeding, succeedeth now to your shame), nor a *new*, voluntary, and particular confession of faith besides that in baptism, though very commendable, will ever be proved simply necessary to the being of a church.'

Even Baxter has been called to the stand for the purpose of saying that the Baptists 'do introduce a *new sort* of Christianity'...and 'a new sort of baptism, which the Church of Christ never knew to this day...As if they were raised in the end of the world to reform the baptism and Christianity of all ages, and were not only wiser than the universal Church from Christ till now, but also at last must make the Church another thing.' When Baxter explains Baxter, whatever else he may mean, he does not mean that dipping was a new device either in England or in Christianity. In defining baptism he writes: 'The action of the minister on God's part is to wash the body of the baptized with the water, which, in hot countries, was by dipping them over head, and taking them up.' Again: 'It is commonly confessed by us to the Anabaptists, as our commentators declare, that in the Apostles' time the baptized were dipped over head in the water... We have thought it lawful to *disuse* the manner of dipping, and to use less water.' Nor did he think that 'rebaptism,' as he calls it, was a 'new sort of Christianity and baptism,' for he declared that 'If any person discovered a minister who baptized him to be no minister' he might be baptized again; 'nor would I account it *morally* twice baptizing, but a physical repeating of that act which morally is but one. Neither did he think that Baptist dipping had made 'the Church another thing' in such sense as to cut them *off* from Christian fellowship. He says: 'For the Anabaptists themselves, though I have written and said so much against them, as I found that most of them were persons of zeal in religion, so many of them were sober, godly people, who differed from others but in the point of infant baptism, or, at most, in the points of predestination, free-will and perseverance.' He asks: 'May Anabaptists, that have no other error, be permitted in church communion? Ans. Yes, and tolerated in their practice also: For 1. They agree with us in all points absolutely necessary to communion. 2. The ancient Christians had liberty either to baptize, or let them stay till age, as they think best: and, therefore, Tertullian and Nazianzen speak against haste: and Augustine and many Christian parents were baptized at age.' After yielding the whole ground to the Baptists in this way, it is hard to understand what he means by 'a new sort of baptism, which the Church of Christ never knew to this day,' unless it be the new line or succession of baptism which Smyth had introduced by baptizing himself.

This is clear enough from P. Barbour's discourse. After attempting to prove that the baptism of the Roman Catholic Church is valid, he speaks of Smyth's baptism, protesting that if pure baptism 'Is nowhere else to be found remaining in the world, there is no ground for this practice of *raising* baptism: by persons baptizing themselves.' Instead, There should be 'a seeking out of the Church where she were to be found, and there receiving the holy obedience of Christ's baptism as in a *right line*, and so be added to the Church, and from thence conveying the truth into these parts again where it had *ceased*. He then tries to show at great length that if baptism be 'lost and fallen out of the world, and an idol and likeness were in the room of it,' no persons have the right to attempt a 'new beginning,' or 'go about the raising, erecting, or *setting up of it again*, without a special commission from God.' He then complains that those who reject Roman baptism insist on the

Baptists of Great Britain

practice of dipping; 'and that persons are to be dipped, all and every part to be under the water, for if all the whole person is not under the water, then they hold that they are not baptized with the baptism of Christ...Truly they want a Dipper that hath authority from heaven as had John...I hope when they have further considered this matter they may abate of the fierceness of their opinions, so as to think that baptism under or in the defection may be God's ordinance, so as there shall be no need of this new dipping,' which he admits to have been but a revival of the old practice.

Denne put the question of dipping in England in its true light in his public disputation at St. Clement Dane's church with Mr. Gunning in 1656. At p. 40 he says:

'Dipping of infants was not only commanded by the Church of England, but also generally practiced in the Church of England till the year 1600; yea, in some places it was practiced until the year 1641, until the fashion altered...I can show Mr. Baxter an old man in London who has labored in the Lord's Pool many years; converted by his ministry more men and women than Mr. Baxter hath in his parish; yea, when he hath labored a great part of the day in preaching and reasoning, his reflection hath been (not a Sack- possit or a caudle), but to go into the water and baptize converts...I wonder that Mr. Baxter should forget that he hath read in authors, which he deems authentic, who write that Ethelbert King of Kent, with 10,000 men and women, were baptized in Canterbury, upon the 25th of December, in the year 597.'

And the same tone *is* maintained by 'R.W.' in his *Declaration against Anabaptists* in answer to Cornwall; he says, London, 1644, p. 1:

'You argue thus, "That which God hath joined together, no man ought to separate, (But faith and baptism, or more properly dipping,) God hath joined together; therefore, faith and baptism (or dipping as the original renders it) no man ought to separate."'

The fact is, that it was not the dipping of the Baptists which shocked their opponents so much as Smyth's act with some of its consequences. The Anti-Baptists possessed a certain church and ministerial succession, and under this idea they regarded his course as profanity. They considered Baptists as mere interlopers, having no right to administer the ordinances in any way, as they had renounced that succession. The Baptists were regarded as 'upstarts,' and their 'new dipping,' looked at in any light, was but an innovation. Backus caught this distinction with great clearness, and says: 'Being hardly accused with the want of *valid administrators*, moved seven Baptist churches, who met in London in 1643 to declare it as their faith that by Christ's communion every disciple who had a gift to preach the Gospel had a right to administer baptism, even before he was ordained in any Church;' much less that he should be required first to prove his regular descent by succession from the Apostles. [Backus, ii, p. 4] Whoever the Baptists immersed had, in the opinion of their foes, been baptized as babes, and so their after-dipping was new and unauthorized, especially when had in unconsecrated places, as rivers and streams; such as Old Ford River, near Bromley, in Middlesex, which Wilson, in his 'Dissenting Churches,' says 'was much frequented' for this purpose, nay their foes even professed themselves shocked with the bodily exertion of such immersions. John Goodwin, in semi-comic style, says of 'the Baptist who dippeh' that he 'had need be a man of stout limbs, and of a very able and active body; otherwise the person to be baptized, especially if in any degree corpulent or unwieldy, runs a great hazard of meeting with Christ's later baptism instead of his former.'

Baxter affected to be shocked, for it was reported to him that they baptized in the rivers, naked. Featley and others report the same, but none of them pretended to have been eye-witnesses of these

reported indecencies. On the contrary, Baxter adds: 'I must confess I did not see the persons baptized naked, nor do I take it to be lawful to defame any upon doubtful reports,' words which imply honest doubt. But Richardson resented this imputation, saying: 'We abhor it, and deny that any of us ever did so;' then he challenged Featley 'to prove it against us if he can.' This the Doctor was careful never to attempt. Haggard declares that he had baptized and been at the baptizing of 'many hundreds if not thousands, and never saw any baptized naked in his life, neither is it allowed nor approved of amongst any that I know of.' Baxter lived near Tombes, his great Baptist disputant, and yet followed 'common fame' in this matter, instead of inquiring of him, thus allowing anonymous slanderers to fill his ears. He said that he was willing to commune with the Baptists, but he seems never to have taken one step to learn the truth of this charge against his dear brethren. Even had he found the charge true, he should not have been too much shocked that they copied the fanaticisms of the Fathers, whom he so much revered: Chrysostom, Augustine and Cyril, who stickled zealously for nude baptism. Besides, in England the children were baptized without clothing at that time. Dr. Wall says that 'the wealthy people began to object to the stripping of their children naked, and the affrighted screams with which they received immersion.' Bacon confirms this, saying that honesty and shamefacedness forbiddeth to uncover the body, and also the (weak) state of infants, for the most part, cannot away with dipping.' Wall coolly adds that the Baptists need not to have made so great an outcry against Baxter's charge of indecency, for that the primitive Christians baptized in entire undress. And for the same reason Baxter need not to have cried out against the Baptists, even if he could have proved that they followed this bad example of the primitive Christians; which, however, they seem to have avoided with all carefulness. Their confession of 1643 evinced their modesty, by requiring 'convenient garments, both upon the administrator and subject, with all propriety, when they immersed.'

This chapter can scarcely be closed better than by showing that the so-called 'Anabaptists' of the realm had long practiced according to these views. There are traditions of Baptist Churches in England from the fourteenth century, but they are not well sustained by historical records. Collier speaks of many infants who were left unbaptized in the middle of the twelfth century. Robinson says that there was a Baptist church at Chesterton in 1459; and others mention 'heretics' all over England, who refused baptism for infants in various reigns down to Henry VIII. The law of the land demanded the baptism of all, but as we have no reliable records of Baptist churches it is fair to infer that these objectors were either English Lollards or foreigners driven from the Continent. We do not find the name 'Anabaptist' applied to English 'heretics' until the reign of Henry, 1509, nearly a century after all trace of the Lollards is lost, their chief relic then being the Lollard's Tower, that of St. Gregory's Church, contiguous to St. Paul's Cathedral, which had been used as their prison. Fox records that in 1535, according to the registers of London, nineteen 'Anabaptists' were put to death in various parts of the realm, and that fourteen Hollanders were burnt in pairs in England. A *History of the 'Anabaptists' of High and Low Germany* was written in 1642, and is now amongst the 'King's Pamphlets.' Its bitter author writes (p. 55): 'All these are scions of that flock of Anabaptism that was transplanted out of Holland in the year 1535, when two ships laden with Anabaptists fled into England;...here it seemeth they have remained ever since' (p. 48). Barclay also reports that in 1536 'Anabaptist' societies in England sent a delegation to a great gathering of their brethren in Westphalia. It appears, therefore, that the origin of the English Baptists, as a distinct sect, is to be found amongst the Baptist refugees who were driven from the Netherlands.

Baptists of Great Britain

The Lollards had prepared the way for the rapid spread of the principles of these Dutch Christians, and since 1535 Baptist witnesses for the truth have stood firmly on British soil, either as individuals or as organized churches. By 1536 their doctrines had so spread amongst English folk that a Church Convocation denounced them by name, requiring the people to repudiate their principles and practices, 'as detestable heresies and utterly to be condemned.' Dr. Wall, in recording this proceeding, says: 'Some people in England began to speak very irreverently and mockingly about some of the ceremonies of baptism then in use;' and he gives a catalogue of profane sayings that began to be handed about among people, as follows: 'That it is as lawful to christen a child in a tub of water at home, or in a ditch by the way, as in a stone font in a church. Custom then immersed the child in the consecrated 'font,' not in unhallowed streams. Another 'profane saying' was: 'That the hallowed oil is no better than the Bishop of Rome's grease or butter.' Again: 'That the holy-water is more savory to make sauce with than the other (water), because it is mixed with salt; which is also a very good medicine for a horse with a galled back; yea, if there be put an onion thereto, it is a good sauce for a giblet of mutton.' This kind-hearted divine resented such unreverential reflections of the English Anti-pedobaptists, and so did the king and Convocation. Still the good doctor thought that this threw no dishonor on infant baptism, but Henry and the Convocation saw disdain for the thing itself, in contempt for the ceremonies which attended it, and proceeded to read the nation a lecture, in six particulars. They declared baptism necessary to eternal life, that it belongs to infants, and makes them sons of God; that, being born in original sin, they cannot be saved but by the grace of baptism, etc. Then they discover the real *animus* of their action with their alarm for the mischief on the subject which the Baptists had already wrought in the public mind. They say to all Englishmen 'that they ought to refute and take all the Anabaptists' and Pelagians 'opinions in this behalf for detestable heresies.' Then Wall cites Fuller out of Stow to prove that in 1538 six Dutch Anabaptists were punished in London, 'four bearing fagots at Paul's Cross, and two being burnt in Smithfield.' Again quoting from Fuller, he writes: 'This year the name of this sect first appears in our English chronicles,' and from Fox, that ten Dutch 'Anabaptists' were put to death in England in 1535, a year before these utterances of Convocation. The sixth article condemns this heresy in '*other men*,' who were not of these prescribed bodies, alluding to the English Baptist infection; for the lower house complained to the upper, in its 'catalogue of some errors that began to be handed about among some people,' and which the united body sharply rebuked. The king published a proclamation, 1538, condemning all Baptist books; an Act of Grace was passed the same year from the benefits of which the Baptists were excepted, and the Bishops of the Southern Province issued a commission to seek out and punish them. Brand reports that in 1539 thirty-one 'Anabaptists' fled from England and were slaughtered at Delft, Holland; the men were beheaded and the women drowned.

Froude mentions a number who were put to death for 'being faithful to their conscience,' and Stow tells us of four being burnt in Smithfield. These facts indicate their growing strength at that time. In a royal proclamation, issued in 1540, some of their so-called errors are thus enumerated, namely: 'That infants ought not to be baptized, and that it is not lawful for a Christian man to bear office or rule in the commonwealth.' But persecution only promoted their increase. Strype tells us that about 1548 'Anabaptist' congregations had been gathered at Booking and Feversham, amongst whom are many English names. Sixty of their members were arrested; and Hart, Middleton, Coal and Brodbridge, four of their ministers, were made prisoners. Middleton was martyred in the reign

Chapter 2 - Immersion in England, Continued – Persecution

of Edward, and when Archbishop Cranmer threatened him with death he replied: 'Reverend sir, pass what sentence you think fit upon us. But that you may not say that you were not forewarned, I testify that your turn may be next;' and twenty years afterwards his expectation was realized. Hooper wrote to his friend, Bullinger, 1549, that he was lecturing twice a day to great crowds, but that the 'Anabaptists' flocked to the place and gave him much trouble, another indication that these hearers of his were English born. And last of all, Latimer, in preaching before Edward VI, March 29, 1549, told the king that he had heard of many of them in the realm, of five hundred in one town, and that in many places they had been burnt, dying cheerfully for their faith, coolly adding: 'Well, let them go.' [Latimer himself was later burned by Queen Mary; thus the Protestants who burned the Baptists were themselves burned by the Catholics!]

The literature of the times is in keeping with these statements. In 1548 John Vernon translated and published Bullinger's *Holesome Antidote Against the Pestilent Sect of the Anabaptists*. William Turner, a physician, 1551, issued a treatise called a 'Triacle' (*remedy*) 'against the poyson lately stirred up agayn by the furious Secte of the Anabaptists.' Philpots, in his sixth examination before Lord Riche, 1555, told him that every heretic would have a church to himself, 'as Joan of Kent and the Anabaptists.' The phrase 'lately stirred up *agayn*' in the title of Turner's book, must have reference in the past, to the Act of Convocation and to the Commission of 1538, when Cranmer and eight others were appointed to persecute them with all severity. Henry had required every English justice to enforce the laws against them, and thus to scour the whole realm. This stringency was not needed to hunt out a few exiled foreigners in London, Essex and Norfolk. Everywhere there was a growing neglect of infant baptism. One of Bishop Ridley's warrants of search, in 1550, demanded, 'whether any speaketh against baptism of infants.' Even Hooper was suspected on that question. Before he was nominated for the bishopric he held: 'We may not doubt of the salvation of the infants of Christians that die before they be christened;' showing that such opinions were no bar to public confidence. But Ridley had a mania for infant baptism, and in 1553 ordered that all the children in his diocese 'be christened by the priest;' and in his 'Declaration of the Lord's Supper' we find him talking such superstition as this: 'The bread indeed, sacramentally, is changed into the body of Christ, as the water in baptism is sacramentally changed into the fountain of regeneration, and yet the material substance thereof remaineth all one, as was before.' A congregation of Baptists was found in London in 1575, twenty-seven of whom were imprisoned, and two burnt in Smithfield; and the sect can be traced by their blood all through the century, aided by the light of Burnet, Fuller and Fox.

Tradition connects the name of ANNE ASKEW with the Baptists. She was a thorough Protestant, a firm friend of Joan Boucher, and a helper to her in circulating the Bible and other religious books privately in the palace. She was the youngest daughter of Sir William Askew, was thoroughly educated, being as delicate and gentle a spirit as ever ascended from Smithfield to paradise. She was intimate with Queen Catharine Parr, and so fell a victim to Bishop Gardiner's craft, he expecting to attain her majesty of heresy through Anne, who was but four and twenty years of age. Much of her time, day and night, was spent in prayer; she reveled in the freshness of the Gospel, and her frank, meek, unsuspecting simplicity won the queen's heart. She was arrested and thrown into the Tower on the charge that she rejected the mass. There she was put to the rack, but her clear and calm mind would neither criminate herself nor Catharine. Hence, when Bishop Gardiner and Chancellor Wriothesley saw that their policy was to be thwarted, the chancellor

Baptists of Great Britain

demanded that Sir Anthony Knevelt should torment her further. This the lieutenant of the Tower refused, when Wriothsley threw off his gown, and drew the rack so severely that he almost tore her body to pieces. She endured this with such firm trust in God and such lofty courage that she seems like an angel of light amongst her tormentors. She had various hearings, in which her harmless wit overpowered her foes. The lord mayor demanded of her: 'Sayest thou that the priests cannot make the body of Christ?' She answered: 'I say so, my lord; for I have read that God made man, but that man can make God I have never yet read.' *Qu.* 'What if a mouse eat of the bread after the consecration? What shall become of the mouse, thou foolish woman? Ans. 'What shall become of her say you, my lord?' He replied: 'I say that that mouse is damned!' She artlessly rejoined, to his lordship's chagrin: 'Alack, poor mouse!' When condemned to be burnt, her torture forbade her to walk to the stake, and she was carried in a chair. There a written pardon was offered to her from the king if she would recant. She calmly turned her eyes away, and fell in the flames a sacrifice to Jesus, 1546, before she was five and twenty. Shaxton, the apostate, preached at her burning, and a disgusting scene followed. The chancellor, the Duke of Norfolk, the Earl of Bedford, the lord mayor, and other dignitaries feasted their eyes on her and the three who perished with her, seated on a bench under the shadow of St. Bartholomew's church. A rumor spread that benevolent hands had put gunpowder about the martyrs to shorten their misery. These cravens were filled with terror for their own safety, lest the powder should cast the fagots where they sat. They could gloat upon the heroine, whose love for Christ was reducing her to ashes, but sat trembling lest the brands should touch them. Jesus, rising from his throne, welcomed her to a security which these selfish cowards could never disturb again.

Four years afterwards, under Edward VI, we have the fearful martyrdom of JOAN BOUCHER, of Kent, probably of Eythorne, near Canterbury, where there was a Baptist assembly. She was a lady of note, possessing large wealth, and was well known at the palace in the days of Henry and Edward. With her friend Anne Askew she was devoted to the study and circulation of Tyndale's translation, which had been printed at Cologne, 1534. Strype says that she carried copies of this prohibited book under her clothing on her visits to the court; and very likely to the prisons also, which she often visited, using her wealth to relieve those who suffered for Jesus' sake. She was charged with various heresies, and was arrested, May, 1549. Amongst other things, she denied that the Virgin Mary was sinless by nature, insisting that like other women she needed to rejoice 'in God her Saviour,' as she herself said. Joan neither denied the proper humanity of Jesus nor that he was Mary's son. But she held, with many others of her day, that he became man of her 'faith,' not of her flesh, lest he should inherit her sinful taint; yet, she believed in Christ's miraculous incarnation, and in him as 'that holy thing' born of Mary. Her idea was a mere speculation, or, as Vaughn expresses it, 'a subtle fancy,' not in itself half so weak as the notion of Mary's own immaculate conception, manufactured to meet the conclusion which Joan wished to avoid, namely, the peccability of Christ's humanity. On this frivolous quiddity [a quibble] was this noble woman kept a year and a half under the hair-splitting batteries of Cranmer, Ridley, Whitehead, Hutchinson, Cecil, Lord Chancellor Riche, and others of the Protestant Inquisition; more is the pity that they had no better business. She was examined and cross-examined, entreated and threatened, all to no purpose. Neal, Burnet and Philpot have affected to treat her as 'weak,' 'vain' and 'fanatic,' charges which their manliness had better have applied to her learned tormentors; for her recorded examinations show more of these infirmities in them than in her. They did not evince one thoroughly amiable trait in the whole transaction, while she

displayed an acute and powerful mind, moved by a warm and impulsive heart.

True, she rejected their notion of Mary's sinlessness and demanded Scripture for their teaching, while they had none to give; then, she gave none for her own speculations, and that was about all of consequence between them, on this issue. The whole farce was a small and mean business for men of their cast and cloth, and if she were an empty-headed woman, as they pretended, they honored themselves but little in spending eighteen months of their time and labor on her figment, for she well held her own with the whole learned and malignant crowd of them. Lord Riche says, that he kept her at his own house for 'a fortnight,' and had Cranmer and Ridley visit and reason with her daily. Ridley bent all his eloquence upon her mind, but could not shake her convictions. Her judges called her every thing but the lady which her parentage, position and character demanded, and they felt terribly grieved when her insulted patience told them the plain truth, in more polite language than their own. 'Marry,' said she, 'it is a goodly matter to consider your ignorance. It is not long ago since you burned Anne Askew for a piece of bread, and yet you came yourselves soon after to believe and profess the same doctrine for which you burned her. And now, forsooth, you will burn me for a piece of flesh, and in the end you will come to believe this also.' Did Thomas Cranmer and Nicholas Ridley remember her true words in the flames, and did they help to light them through the fire? Fox tried hard to save her, and to induce John Rogers to help him. Rogers refused, thought that she ought to be burnt, and spoke lightly of death by burning, but then he did not dream of being chained to the stake himself. Fox, pitying her, seized the hand of his friend Rogers and replied: 'Well, it may so happen that you yourself will have your hands full of this mild burning.' Whether he had or not, his poor wife proved the force of Fox's prophetic apprehension when she stood with her eight children and saw her husband consumed to ashes, five years later.

Joan Boucher suffered amongst the fagots, May 2, 1550, to the eternal disgrace of all concerned. Common decency might have spared her the mockery of having Bishop Scorey preach to her while at the stake and vilify her there, under pretense of pious exhortation. Yet, possibly, her last act did him a service which he much needed, and which had never been done to him before. Her sermon to him is immortal, while his to her has long since been forgotten. Listening to him just as her soul ascended to heaven in the flame, she said in reply: 'You lie like a rogue. Go read the Scriptures!' Much needless ink has been shed on an attempt to show that Edward stained her death-warrant with tears when he signed it, because Cranmer clamored for her life. But Hallam long since said that this royal tear-scene should be dropped from history; though detailed by Burnet. And the young Tudor well sustains Hallam from his private journal, which is any thing but tearful. With his own hand he wrote: 'Joan Boucher, otherwise called Joan of Kent, was burnt for holding that Christ was not incarnate of the Virgin Mary, being condemned the year previous, but kept in hope of conversion; and the 30th of April the Bishop of London and the Bishop of Ely were to persuade her, but she withstood them and reviled the preacher that preached at her death.' So much for his Journal, but there is no proof that Edward signed her death-warrant at all. This was seldom done by the monarch, and in her case it was issued by the Council to the Lord Chancellor. On the authority of Bruce, editor of the works of Hutchinson, Parker Society edition, the following is taken from a minute of the Council itself, dated April 27, 1550. 'A warrant to the L. Chancellor to make out a writt to the shireff of London for the execution of Joan of Kent, condemned to be burned for certain detestable opinions of heresie.'

HENDRICK TERWOOKT, a Fleming by birth, and of a fine mind, another Baptist martyr of

Baptists of Great Britain

note, was burned in Smithfield, June 22, 1575. He was but five and twenty, had rejected infant baptism, and held that a Christian should not make oath or bear arms. While in prison he wrote a Confession of Faith, in which he said: 'We must abstain from willful sins if we would be saved, namely, from adultery, fornication, witchcraft, sedition, bloodshed, cursing and stealing,...hatred and envy. They who do such things shall not possess the kingdom of God.' He also set forth that the 'Anabaptists' 'believe and confess that magistrates are set and ordained of God, to punish the evil and protect the good,' that they pray for them and are subject to them in every good work, and that they revere the 'gracious queen' as a sovereign. He sent a copy to Elizabeth, but her heart was set against him and his people, as hard as the nether millstone, and this young son of God must die because he would not make his conscience her footstool. Bishops Laud and Whitgift hated him and the Baptists, the latter dealing in this heartless slander: 'They give honor and reverence to none in authority, they seek the overthrow of commonwealths and states of government, they are full of pride and contempt, their whole interest is schismatic and to be free from all laws, to live as they list; they feign an austerity of life and manners, and are great hypocrites.' When he comes to the dangerous method of specification, he virtually admits his slander. He berates them for complaining: 'That their mouths are stopped, not by God's word, but by the authority of the magistrate. They assert that the civil magistrate has no authority in ecclesiastical matters, and ought not to meddle in cases of religion and faith, and that no man ought to be compelled to faith and religion; and lastly, they complain much of persecution, and brag that they defend their cause not with words only, but by the shedding of their blood.'

Terwoort was not an English subject, but, persecuted in his own land for his love to Christ, he fled and asked protection of a Protestant queen, the head of the English Church, and she roasted him alive for his misplaced confidence. Nor was his a singular case. Bishop Jewel complains of a 'large and unauspicious crop of Anabaptists' in Elizabeth's reign, and she not only ordered them out of her kingdom, but in good earnest kindled the fires to burn them. Sir James Mackintosh says that no Catholic was martyred in Edward's reign, and happy had it been could he have written that the virgin Queen also avoided a Baptist holocaust. Marsden thinks that the Baptists were the most numerous dissenters from the Established Church in her reign, and Camden affirms that she insisted on their leaving the kingdom on pain of imprisonment and confiscation of property. Yet even this did not satisfy her implacable hate, as a real Tudor. She pursued them more and more, until they were driven in all directions, some being put to death; but the large part of them fled to Holland, where at this time they enjoyed more toleration. Dr. Some, however, an English clergyman of note in his day, informs us that they had several secret 'conventicles' in London, and that several of their ministers had been educated at the universities. In 1580, he wrote a treatise, attacking them and their faith. His charges against the Baptists were: That they insisted on maintaining all ministers of the Gospel by the voluntary contributions of the people; that the civil power has no right to make and impose ecclesiastical laws; that the people have the right to choose their own pastors; that the High Commission Court was an anti-Christian usurpation; that those who are qualified to preach ought not to be hindered by the civil power; that though the Lord's Prayer is a rule and foundation of petition, it is not to be used as a form, for no form of prayer should be bound on the Church; that the baptism of the Church of Rome is invalid; that a Gospel constitution and discipline are essential to a true Church; and that the worship of God in the Church of England is, in many things, defective. For these views they were accounted 'heretics,' and suffered so severely that from 1590 to 1630 we

Chapter 2 - Immersion in England, Continued – Persecution

find but plight trace of Baptists in England.

About 1579 Archbishop Sandys declared both of the Brownists and Baptists: 'It is the property of froward sectaries, whose inventions cannot abide the light, to make obscure conventicles,' and he would compel them to attend the Established Church. He was the more disturbed because so many 'heretical' exiles from Holland had sought refuge in England, for it is said that in 1571 there were nearly 4,000 Dutch and other foreigners in Norwich alone, many of them Dutch Baptists, from whom Weingarten thinks that Brown borrowed his best ideas of a Gospel Church. Robert Brown, chaplain to the Duke of Norfolk, and Robert Harrison, the master of a grammar school, were Puritans, and went to Norwich in 1580. There they mingled with these exiles, and formed an independent Church, but the Bishops had no rest till Brown was banished. He, with Harrison and about fifty others, in 1581, fled to Middleburg, in Zeeland, and formed a Church, which became extinct because of divisions, and Brown returned to the Church of England. Elizabeth was especially set against the Separatists, and in 1597, Francis Johnson, pastor of their Church in London, with some of his flock, escaped to Amsterdam.

On the accession of James I, 1603, the four sects of England were, the Roman Catholic, the Church of England, divided into the Puritans, who conformed in some things, and others who conformed in all, the Brownists, afterwards known as Separatists and Independents, and a few Baptists, who were disowned of all. The Gospel seed sown by Brown in his own country took root, and notwithstanding his return to the English Church, Sir Walter Raleigh said, in 1592, that there were 20,000 Brownists in England. John Robinson, a firmer and more steady mind, went to Norwich, then to Scrooby, 1600-1604, cast the Brownists in a healthier mold, and they became known as Independents.

Baptists of Great Britain

Chapter 3 - Baptists of Great Britain – John Smyth – Commonwealth

Rev. John Smyth, educated at Cambridge, became vicar of Gainsborough, Lincolnshire, and a determined foe of the Separatists. After examining their sentiments for 'nine months,' however, he renounced episcopacy as unscriptural and was cast into the Marshalsea Prison, Southwark, but being liberated, he became pastor of the Separatist Church at Gainsborough in 1602. William Brewster was a Separatist at Gainsborough, but removed to Scrooby near Bawtry, where Clifton became pastor, with Robinson as assistant. Both these little flocks, however, were driven from their homes, Smyth fleeing to Amsterdam, probably in 1606, where he joined Johnson. Clifton and Robinson followed in 1608, settling first at Amsterdam, then at Leyden. In 1620 a portion of the Church at Leyden migrated to Plymouth, New England, with Brewster as elder, and formed the first Congregational Church in America. On arriving in Amsterdam, Smyth at first united with the 'ancient' English Separatist Church there, in charge of Johnson, with Ainsworth as teacher. At that time the Separatists of Amsterdam were in warm controversy on the true nature of a visible Church. Smyth published a work on the fallen Church, entitled *The Character of the Beast*, and a tractate of seventy-one pages against infant baptism and in favor of believers baptism. For this he was disfellowshipped by the first Church, his former friends charging him with open war against God's covenant, and the murder of the souls of babes and sucklings, by depriving them of the visible seal of salvation.

This led Smyth, Helwys, Morton and thirty-six others to form a new Church which should practice believer's baptism and reject infant baptism. Finding themselves unbaptized, they were in a strait. They were on good terms with the Dutch Baptists, but would not receive their baptism, lest this should recognize them as a true Church; for they believed that the true Churches of Christ had perished. Besides, Smyth did not believe with them in the unlawfulness of a Christian to serve as a magistrate, nor on the freedom of the will and the distinctive points of Calvinism, he being an Arminian, which points he considered vital. He believed that the Apostolical Church model was lost, and determined on its recovery. He renounced the figment of a historical, apostolic succession, insisting that where two or three organize according to the teachings of the New Testament, they form as true a Church of Christ as that of Jerusalem, though they stand alone in the earth. With the design of restoring this pattern, he baptized himself on his faith in Christ in 1608, then baptized Thomas Helwys with about forty others, and so formed a new Church in Amsterdam. In most things this body was Baptist, as that term is now used, with some difference. This is established by their four extant forms, of what is in substance, one confession of faith. Two of these were written by Smyth and are signed by others, and the other two came from the same company, probably under the lead of Helwys. Their theology is Arminian, they claim that the Church is composed of baptized believers only, that 'only the baptized are to taste of the Lord's Supper,' and that the magistrates shall not, by virtue of their office, meddle with matters of conscience in religion.

Smyth and his congregation met in a large bakery for a time, but he soon saw his mistake in his hasty Se-baptism, and offered to join the Dutch congregation of Baptists known as 'Waterlanders,' under the pastoral charge of Lubberts Gerrits. Part of his congregation, under the leadership of Helwys, would not unite with Smyth in this movement, but excluded him from their fellowship and warned the Dutch Church not to receive him. Soon after this Smyth died, August, 1612, and the Dutch body recognized his company. Meanwhile the question had arisen with Helwys and his followers whether they were doing right by remaining in Holland, to avoid persecution in England,

Baptists of Great Britain

and at the peril of their lives they had returned to London, in 1611, and formed the first general Baptist Church there, 1612-14. Little is known of its history beyond the general statement that the Dutch Baptists of London rallied around Helwys and John Morton, his successor, that it was located in Newgate, and that in 1626 it numbered one hundred and fifty persons. Helwys published a work defending their course in braving persecution, and probably translated a Dutch treatise on baptism in 1618. No account is given of his death, but Taylor dates it at 'about' 1623. Masson says, in his *Life of Milton*, 'This obscure Baptist congregation seems to have become the depository for all England of the absolute principle of liberty of conscience expressed in the Amsterdam Confession as distinct from the more stunted principle advocated by the general body of the Independents. Not only did Helwys's folks differ from the Independents generally on the subject of infant baptism and *dipping*; they differed also on the power of the magistrate in matters of belief and conscience. It was, in short, from this little dingy meeting-house, somewhere in Old London, that there flashed out first in England the absolute doctrine of religious liberty.'

So far as is known, the Amsterdam Confession of the Baptists is the first which laid down the full principle of religious freedom, after the Swiss Confession of 1527. It is absolutely the first now known to take positive ground in favor of the salvation of all infants who die in infancy, from the time that Augustine taught the detestable doctrine that unbaptized infants who die are not admitted into heaven. Wickliff held that they are saved without baptism, but his doctrine was not formulated by a Christian body. Also, in defining the limits of Church and State, they came down to those foundation principles which the Independents had not reached. Ainsworth's Confession said: 'The government should protect true believers, strengthen the proper administration of the true worship, punish transgressors, and uproot false worship.' Helwys understood things better. He sent a copy of his work on religious liberty with a letter to James I, in which he boldly says: 'The king is a mortal man and not God, therefore hath no power over the immortal souls of his subjects, to make laws and ordinances for them, and to set spiritual lords over them. If the king has authority to make spiritual lords and laws, then he is an immortal God, and not a mortal man.'

No English king had heard such words before. The Independents were far in advance of the Puritans and the Presbyterians on this subject; but even Johnson said: 'Princes may and ought to abolish all false worship, and to establish the true worship and ministry appointed by God in his word, commanding and compelling their subjects to come into and practice none other than this.'

The Amsterdam Baptist Confession bravely said: 'The magistrate is not, by virtue of his office, to meddle with religion or matters of conscience; to force and compel men to this or that form of religion or doctrine, but to leave the Christian religion free to every man's conscience, and to handle only civil transgressors, for Christ is the only King and Lawgiver of the Church and conscience.'

When the Brownists left the English State Church, they objected to its hierarchy, liturgy, constitution and government, as antichristian. Smyth, therefore, broke with them on the issue that if that Church was apostate, as a daughter of Rome, then its clergy were not qualified to administer Christ's ordinances. The Brownists, however, considered them valid, and called the English Church their 'mother,' while they denounced her as 'harlot' and 'Babylon;' but Smyth, having been christened in her pale, concluded that he was yet unbaptized. Bishop Hall caught this point keenly, and was severe on the Brownists when he opposed Smyth. He wrote:

'You that cannot abide a false Church, why do you content yourselves with a false sacrament? especially

Chapter 3 - Baptists of Great Britain – John Smyth – Commonwealth

since our Church, not being yet gathered to Christ, is no Church, and therefore her baptism a nullity!...He (Smyth) tells you true; your station is unsafe; either you must forward to him, or back to us...You must go forward to Anabaptism, or come back to us. All your rabbins cannot answer that charge of your rebaptized brother...If our baptism be good, then is our constitution good...What need you to surfeit of another man's trencher?...Show you me where the Apostles baptized in a *bason!*'

Smyth having rejected infant baptism also on its merits as a human institution, Ainsworth said, in 1609, that he had gone 'over to the abomination of the Anabaptists.' Bishop Hall wrote the above words in 1610, calling him then 'your rebaptized brother,' which indicates that he left the Brownists about 1608. His enemies have represented him as hair-brained, fickle and fond of novelty. But Schaff-Herzog does him the justice to say that: 'Seized by the time-spirit, he was restless, fervid, earnest and thoroughgoing...A man of incorruptible simplicity, beautiful humility, glowing charity, a fair scholar and a good preacher.' His writings show that he thirsted for the truth; and several times he shifted his positions before he felt sure that he stood on solid ground, a fact creditable to his convictions and moral courage. As to his Se-baptism [self-baptism] the following things seem clear, namely:

1. *That he did baptize himself when he cast aside his infant baptism.* He believed that no man had a pure baptism or could administer the same, not only because of the corruption of baptism, as then practiced, but because of moral defection in all the Churches. This was no new doctrine. The Donatists held that the validity of baptism was affected by the bad life of the administrator; and Cyprian asks: 'Who can consecrate water who is himself unholy, and has not the Holy Spirit?' But Smyth was feeling his way far back beyond this to the Gospel ground, that the validity of baptism has no regard to the administrator, as it is governed by the faith of the candidate. He denied the need of all visible succession in the ministry and ordinances, and yet his sincere but impulsive mind was held in secret thrall to this subtlety. He denied that the fable of antiquity is an attribute of a true Church, and yet he would found a new line of baptizers, to give purity to the ordinance in the future. He evidently reasoned and decided thus: 'Let the fallen Churches stand alone. They have turned Christ's ordinance out of doors and established their own, so I cut loose from them and throw myself directly into the hands of God. I take the last method left of honoring him, and he knows my singleness of heart. My infant baptism was meaningless, a pious fraud practiced upon me, and its alleged blessings are mere nursery pictures. They have thrown shame on the Gospel, blunted my conviction of truth, and put my personal faith in Christ to a deep blush. Hence I will cut the last thread that binds me to "the defection of Antichrist."' Logic took him to that point, but love to Christ carried him further, and he resolved to offer himself to Christ in baptism, come what might, and he baptized himself, in obedience to an imperative sense of duty. There is a legend of Thekla, the unbaptized martyr, that when led out to the wild beasts, she threw herself into a trench full of water, and shouted, with joy: 'In the name of Jesus Christ, I am baptized on my last day!' Without her lot, Smyth possessed the same spirit. He denied the arrogance that salvation is lodged in ordinances, that God has given them into the keeping of any body of men to dispense, rejecting whom they please. Baptism was to him a right and privilege from God, and because it had been forced upon him as a child, the extreme view of the Church now forced him, as he believed, to throw aside all human intervention in the matter. Yet in his Confession he explicitly expresses his faith in an accredited ministry, a regenerate body, but he could not trace it through one century, not to say sixteen. He concluded, therefore, that it made no matter whether he, being unbaptized, baptized himself, or

Baptists of Great Britain

another unbaptized man baptized him. This was his Puritan mode of cutting himself adrift from the last tie of popery in Protestantism. The result was the same, so far as baptismal succession was concerned, whether he baptized himself or was baptized by an unbaptized person. His entire being was impelled by that sentiment, and the quicksilver no more changes the weather, than eccentricity led him to Se-baptism.

However mistaken he was in his reasoning, he knew, as a matter of fact, that nearly half the so-called countries of the world are unable to tell by record whether the Gospel was first preached to them by ministers or laymen, much less can their personal baptisms be traced. He could not tell whether the man who brought it to the British Isles was himself baptized, or if so, who baptized him, where, when or how. Smyth held his own consecration to Christ in baptism acceptable to Christ, and he was better satisfied with it himself, than he had ever been with his infant baptism, of which others had told him. These being his motives to Se-baptism, we may now notice that:

2. *Its proof is found in his own uncontradicted statements and those of his contemporaries.* He defended his act by claiming that when succession is broken off, men are not bound to join fallen Churches: 'But may, being as yet unbaptized, baptize themselves, AS WE DID, and proceed to build churches themselves.' When Clifton asked him by what right he baptized himself, he replied: 'As you, when there was not a true Church in the world, took upon you to set up a true Church...Seeing, when all Christ's visible ordinances are lost, then two men joining together may make a Church, as you say, why may they not baptize, seeing they cannot enjoin unto Christ but by baptism?...Each of them unbaptized, hath power to assume baptism *each for himself*, with others in communion.' Barebone charges against the Baptists, 1642, that they baptized themselves by the 'Way of new baptizing lately begun;' they have no warrant from heaven, he argues, 'As had John the Baptist, to set up baptism themselves,' nor to baptize themselves and others. In Clifton's *Plea for Infants*, 1610, he calls upon Smyth to bring 'Warrant from the Scripture, that you being unbaptized may baptize yourself...Resolve me, that you can baptize yourself into the Church, being out of it, yea, and where there was no Church.' In the same year, J. H. published a book against Smyth, in which he says: 'Tell me one thing, Maister Smyth, by what rule baptized you yourself?...It was wonder you would not receive your baptism from the Dutch Anabaptists, but you will be holier than all.' Ainsworth, Robinson, Bernard and others, charge Smyth with being a Se-Baptist (self-Baptist), and he took the greatest pains to defend his own act as absolutely necessary.

3. *Whether he dipped himself is not so clear, but all the circumstances, with a few statements of that day, imply that he did.* Those who wrote against the Baptists after 1640 make no distinction on the matter of immersion between the Baptists of that period and those who had continued down from 1610, nor report any change amongst them, from affusion or perfusion to dipping. On the contrary, they speak of them as one stock from Smyth downward. Sometimes they speak of him as the father of English 'Anabaptism,' and uniformly, in contempt, they call them 'Dippers.' Barebone says in his Discourse: 'They want a Dipper, that had authority from heaven as had John, whom they please to call a Dipper.' Bishop Hall's remark, 1610, when speaking of Smyth as 'your rebaptized brother,' is very significant. In scornful sarcasm he demands of the Brownists, who used affusion: 'Show me where the Apostles baptized in a *bason!* What need you to surfeit of another man's trencher?' The very point of his thrust implies that Smyth had dipped himself, contrary to their practice, and that he had Apostolic authority for dipping as baptism. It further implies that the meat on Smyth's 'trencher' had nauseated them, because, like the Apostles, he had discarded the 'bason.' Featley, in

what Orme calls his 'ridiculous book,' *The Dippers Dipt over Head and Ears*, complains of the 'new leaven,' because they dipped, and says: 'It cannot be proved that any of the ancient Anabaptists maintained any such position, there being three ways of baptizing, either by dipping, or washing, or sprinkling.' [*Dippers Dipt*, p. 187] But in this declaration he contradicts himself several times, as we shall see. He clearly states their then current practice when he says, that the sick cannot, 'After the manner of the Anabaptists, be carried to rivers or wells, and there be dipt and plunged in them.' He adds, that they held 'Weekly Conventicles, rebaptized hundreds of men and women together in the twilight in rivulets, and some arms of the Thames and elsewhere, dipping them over head and ears.' He bitterly complains that they 'Flock in great multitudes to their Jordans, and both sexes enter the river, and are dipped after *their manner*;' and that they had followed these terrible practices 'near the place of my residence for more than twenty years.' He wrote this Jan. 10. 1644, which would carry him back to 1624, at least. But he never accuses the English Baptists of substituting dipping for some other practice which they had previously followed. He gives not one hint that in England they had ever been any thing else but 'Dippers,' an unaccountable silence, if they had practiced something else there within the previous fifty years.

Directly to the contrary, his whole book assumes that the Baptists of his day were the veritable descendants of the Münster men. He calls Storke 'The father of the Anabaptists of *our age*,' and a 'blockhead' from whom 'the chiefs flew into England,' when he was hewn down in Germany; and makes Knipperdolling their 'Patriarch.' He alleges that they 'stript themselves stark naked when they flock to their Jordans to be dipt,' and is delighted to tell us, on the authority of Gastius, that at Vienna 'Many Anabaptists were so tied together in chains, that they drew the other after them into the river, wherein they were suffocated.' This, he thought, the proper punishment for their sin, and bewails that their successors were treated more leniently in England. His words are: 'They who drew others into the whirlpool of error, by constraint drew one another into the river to be drowned; and they who profaned baptism by a *second dipping*, rue it by a third immersion. But the punishment of these Catabaptists we leave to them who have the legislative power in their hands; who, though by present connivance they may seem to give them line, yet no doubt it is that they may more entangle themselves, and more easily be caught.' He clearly intends us to understand that these Continental Baptists had been immersed first as children, second on their faith, which 'profaned' the first, and entitled them to drowning in a 'third immersion.' He says that this 'Anabaptist' fire was subdued under the reigns of James and Elizabeth, but it had revived again from 'the ashes.' Amongst the 'six things' which he charges as peculiar to the sect, the first is: 'That none are rightly baptized' but those who are dipped, or as he loves to express it, those who 'Go into the water, and there be dipt over head and ears;' and he fails to hint that the English Baptists had ever done otherwise, when baptizing.

Wilson's *History of Dissenting Churches* (I. p. 29, 30) says of Smyth:

'He saw grounds to consider immersion as the true and only meaning of the word baptism, and that it should be administered to those alone who were capable of professing their faith in Christ. The absurdity of Smyth's conduct appeared in nothing more conspicuously than in this: That not choosing to apply to the German Baptists, and wanting a proper administrator, he baptized himself, which procured him to be called a Se-baptist. Crosby, indeed, has taken great pains to vindicate him from this charge, though it seems with little success. His principles and conduct soon drew upon him an host of opponents, the chief of whom were Johnson, Ainsworth, Robinson, Jessop and Clifton. The controversy begun in 1606, about the time Smyth

Baptists of Great Britain

settled in Amsterdam. Soon afterward he removed with his followers to Leyden, where he continued to publish various books in defense of his opinions.'

Neal says that he 'Settled with his disciples at Ley, where being at a loss for a proper administrator of the ordinance of baptism, he *plunged* himself, and then performed the ceremony upon others.' [*Hist. Puritans*, I, 243] In Smyth's case, it is nothing to the purpose whether the Mennonites, Waterlanders, or those 'Anabaptists' called 'Aspersi' used affusion or not, as he repudiated them all. There is not a particle of evidence that he affused himself, and it is a cheap caricature to imagine that he disrobed himself, walked into a stream, then lifted handfuls of water, pouring then liberally upon his own head, shoulders and chest. We have the same reason for believing that he immersed Helwys, as that he dipped himself. Masson writes: 'Helwisse's folk differed from the Independents generally on the subject of infant baptism and dipping.' And as he thinks that Bugher was a member of that 'congregation' in 1614, the man who described a baptized person as one 'dipped for dead in the water,' the fair inference is carried that the first General Baptist Church of London was composed of immersed 'folk.'

Notwithstanding that Edward Wightman, a Baptist of Burton-on-Trent, had been burnt at Lichfield, April 11th, 1611, and that persecution of his brethren continued without martyrdom, they had so increased in 1626 that they had eleven General Baptist Churches in England: which, as Featley sourly says, had increased to forty-seven of various sorts in 1644. Some claim that a Particular Baptist Church was formed at Shrewsbury in 1627, and another at Bickenhall, near Taunton, in 1630: but it is more likely that the first of this order was established by John Spilsbury at Wapping in 1633. These terms originated in the fact that the Arminian Baptists [general Baptists] held to a general and the Calvinistic Baptists [particular Baptists] to a particular atonement; hence they adopted these titles.

Spilsbury's Church came into existence on this wise. In 1616 the first congregation of Independents had been gathered in London, under the pastoral care of Henry Jacob, who was succeeded by John Lathrop. A number of this society came to reject infant baptism and were permitted to form a distinct Church, September 12, 1633; with John Spilsbury for their pastor; and, according to Lord Selborn, in the St. Mary's Chapel case, Norwich, for a number of years after its formation it was a Strict Communion body, so far as the Supper was concerned. Crosby says that 'most or all of these received a new baptism.' In 1638 William Kiffin, Thomas Wilson and others, left Lathrop's Independent Church, then under charge of Mr. Jessey, and united with Spilsbury's Church. Wilson, in his *History of Dissenting Churches*, says that some time after this, disputes arose in Spilsbury's Church on the subject of 'mixed communion,' and Kiffin with others withdrew to form a new Church, Devonshire Square. At page 410 he explains what he means by 'mixed communion;' it was not the reception of unbaptized persons either to membership or the Supper, but 'mixed communion' with unimmersed ministers. His words are: 'In a course of time a controversy arose in that Church on the propriety of admitting persons *to preach* who had not been baptized by immersion. This produced an amicable separation, headed by Mr. Kiffin, who seems to have been averse to the plan of mixed communion, but the two societies kept up a friendly correspondence.' Not only that, but they cooperated in resisting the contumely [contempt] of their enemies and in building up each other in the faith. By 1643 the Calvinistic Baptist Churches in and about London had increased to seven, while the non-Calvinistic Churches numbered thirty-nine, forty-six in all. The English Calvinistic Churches, together with a French Church of the same faith, eight in all,

Chapter 3 - Baptists of Great Britain – John Smyth – Commonwealth

issued a Confession of Faith in 1643, of fifty articles; not to erect a standard of faith, but to close the mouths of slanderers. Its preface says of their enemies:

'They, finding us out of that common road-way themselves walk, have smote us and taken away our veil, that so we may by them be odious in the eyes of all that behold us, and in the hearts of all that think upon us, which they have done both in pulpit and print, charging us with holding free-will, falling away from grace, denying original sin, disclaiming a magistracy, denying to assist them either in persons or purse in any of their lawful commands, doing acts unseemly in the dispensing the ordinance of baptism, not to be named amongst Christians. All which charges we disclaim as notoriously untrue, though by reason of these calumnies cast upon us, many that fear God are discouraged and forestalled in harboring a good thought, either of us or what we profess, and many that know not God (*are*) encouraged, if they can find the place of our meeting, to get together in clusters to stone us, as looking upon us as a people holding such things as that we are not worthy to live.'

This Confession was signed by sixteen ministers, two from each Church; and amongst them both John Spilsbury and William Kiffin, a significant fact in its bearings on the ground of their after separation. A second edition was published in 1644, and a third in 1646, the last with an appendix by Benjamin Coxe. Edward Barber, the minister of the Church meeting in Bishopsgate Street, had published a treatise in 1641, to prove that 'our Lord Christ ordained dipping.' Now, in this 'Confession,' Art. XXXIII says, that a Church is 'a company of visible saints...being baptized into the faith of the Gospel;' and Art. XXXIX, that baptism is 'to be dispensed upon persons professing faith, or that are made disciples, who, upon profession of faith, ought to be baptized, and after to partake of the Lord's Supper.' Article XL defines the manner of baptizing 'to be dipping or plunging the whole body under water.' These articles, signed by Spilsbury as the fifth name and Kiffin as the eleventh, show that these two worthies were entirely agreed as to the question of immersion on a confession of faith in Christ as a prerequisite to the Supper, and that Wilson was right in stating that the disturbing element between them related to 'mixed communion,' but not amongst members of the same Church. They must all be 'dipped under water' on entering the 'company of saints' made 'visible' by this expression of their faith as 'disciples,' and 'after' that 'partake of the Lord's Supper.' Spilsbury and Kiffin being agreed here, as their signatures show, the controversy between them was 'on the propriety of admitting persons *to preach* who had not been baptized by immersion.' Wilson says that Kiffin 'seemed averse' to mixed communion after that stamp, and left amicably, so that their fellowship was not disturbed at all on the subject treated of in the 'Confession,' namely, communion at the Lord's Supper.

A most interesting branch of this history connects the name of Henry Jessey with this period. Henry Jacob continued to serve the Independent Church which he founded in 1616, until 1624, when he removed to America, and was succeeded as pastor by John Lathrop, who also went to America in 1634, and settled first at Scituate and then at Barnstable, Mass. Then Jessey became its supply in 1635, and its pastor in 1637. At one time or another this Church was seriously disturbed on the subject of baptism. Wilson tells us that under Mr. Lathrop's ministry 'some of the society entertained doubts as to the validity of baptism performed by their own minister; and one person who indulged these scruples carried his child to be baptized in the parish church.' This giving offense to several persons, the subject was discussed at a general meeting of the society; when the question was put it was carried in the negative, and resolved by the majority not to make any declaration at present, '*whether or no parish Churches were true Churches.*' This action led to the withdrawal of those 'who

Baptists of Great Britain

were dissatisfied about the lawfulness of infant baptism,' and to the formation of the Calvinistic Baptist Church of 1633, under Spilsbury's ministry. Under the ministry of Jessey others left and united with the Baptists; six persons in 1638, a larger number in 1641, and a greater number still in 1643. These movements created frequent debates in the Independent Church. 'This,' says Wilson, 'put Mr. Jessey upon studying the controversy. The result was that he himself also changed his sentiments...His first conviction was about *the mode of* baptism; and though he continued for two or three years to baptize children, he did it by *immersion*. About the year 1644 the controversy with respect to the *subjects* of baptism was revived in his Church, when several gave up *infant* baptism, and among the rest Mr. Jessey...1645 he submitted to immersion, which was performed by Mr. Hanserd Knollys.' [*Hist. Diss. Chs.*, I, p. 43]

It seems that Jessey's Church had become large by 1640, and by 'mutual consent' had divided, 'just half being with Praise-God Barebone, and the other half with Mr. Jessey.' They were in controversy on the subjects and method of baptism, Blunt and Jessey being the leaders of those who had embraced Baptist views, numbering fifty-three, and Barebone the leader of those who remained Pedobaptists. The fact that the eight Churches formulated baptism as a 'dipping or plunging of the whole body under water,' is sufficient to show that they themselves had been organized and had grown up in that order; as well as the declaration in the preface, that they had been accused of 'unseemly acts in dispensing the ordinance of baptism,' namely, by immersing nude persons. If they had not immersed from their origin, they were slandered in the statement, that they immersed at all, to say nothing of alleged indecencies, 'not to be named by Christians,' in connection with their immersions. To say that Spilsbury's Church immersed in 1643, but had not practiced dipping from 1633, is to charge that Church with changing the form of its ordinance, and with repelling a slander to which it had never been subjected; for the accusation that it immersed naked persons carried with it the charge of dipping, whether the alleged nudity were true or false. Here, then, we have fifty-three persons, with Jessey at their head, seeking immersion; but they will not go for it to Spilsbury's Church, though, clearly, he had practiced it since 1633. And why? According to the anonymous account attributed to Kiffin, because none had then, May, 1640, 'so practiced in England to professed believers!' and so they must send to Holland to import dipping! What do they mean by this?

We have already seen that the members of Jessey's Independent Church were great sticklers for ministerial regularity, and lodged the validity of baptism very largely in the administrator. Nay, some of his own congregation had refused to acknowledge the authority of John Lathrop to baptize, and one member who believed in infant baptism, whose child Lathrop had baptized, would not accept it as properly done and took his babe to the parish Church to have it baptized over again on the ground of this irregularity; and so sensitive were 'the majority' on the subject that they refused to say whether or not the parish Churches were true Churches. Lathrop had been trained for the Church of England at Cambridge, had received Episcopal ordination, and served in that ministry in Kent; but no matter, having gone over to dissent, some of his own people doubted whether his baptisms were valid! And there are many reasons for believing that this is a similar case, and that these fifty-three members of the same congregation declined to accept immersion from what they considered an unauthorized administrator. They intended to be immersed, but the English Baptists at that time were universally accused of self-baptism, some of them having received their baptism from John Smyth, and while the Baptists denied this with spirit, none of them thought of insisting

on a baptismal succession, but argued that any unbaptized Christian could baptize if needful. This point was in hot dispute at the time. The author of *Persecution for Religion Judged and Condemned*, 1615, labors hard to show that it is not necessary that he who baptizes should be a baptized person. Barclay and others suppose that John Morton, who was with Smyth and Helwys in Amsterdam, was the author of this book. Whether Smyth immersed them or not, it is quite clear that they received no baptism after that which he administered to them. Some time before Smyth's death he frankly retracted his error in baptizing himself and them; therefore Helwys charged him as guilty of 'the sin against the Holy Ghost.' In his 'last book' he allows that Helwys still held that baptism to be valid, and accuses him of unChristianizing all who did not walk to his 'line and level,' even 'upon pain of damnation.' He says: 'If Master Helwys's position be true, that every two or three that see the truth of baptism may begin to baptize, and need not join to former true Churches, where they may have their baptism orderly from ordained ministers, then the order of the primitive Church was order for them and those times only, and this disorder will establish baptism of private persons.' But although Smyth had repudiated the doctrine which he himself had introduced, yet the English Baptists clearly held it at that time, and as clearly the fifty-three refused baptism at their hands because they held them to be irregularly baptized. Evidently Keal regarded the matter in this light. He pronounces Binnt's conduct in going over to Holland to be immersed 'strange and unaccountable;' but suggests this solution of the matter: 'Unless the Dutch Anabaptists could derive this pedigree in an uninterrupted line from the Apostles, the first reviver of this usage must have been unbaptized, and, consequently, not capable of communicating the ordinance to others. [*Hist. Puritans*, I, 497] He understood immersion to have been revived in England at that time, but as the 'reviver' was not in the immersionist succession, Jessey's people thought his followers incapable of immersing them. Perkins and others held that if a Turk should be converted, and led others to Christ, he might baptize them, being unbaptized himself. John Robinson had charged that the Baptists of England were unbaptized on the ground that they had not received baptism from any authorized source, having rejected the Church of England as an apostasy. Even the Confession of the Eight Churches seemed to aim at covering the case by that article which says, the 'person designed by Christ to dispense baptism the Scripture holds forth to be a disciple; it being nowhere tied to a particular office or person extraordinarily sent,' How natural it was, then, for these brethren from an Independent Church to conclude that the immersion of the English Baptists being irregular, they not being properly immersed, therefore, that they must send to Holland for a pure baptism through a qualified administrator.

This charge was reiterated with great asperity. In 1691 Collins denies that they received their baptism from John Smyth, pronouncing the allegation 'absolutely untrue.' Yet, even later than that, John Wall persisted in declaring that their baptism was 'Abhorred of all Christians; for they received their baptism from one Mr. Smyth, who baptized himself; one who was cast out of a Church.' Edward Hutchinson, however, 1676, referring to this very case says, that after this godly band of men had resolved to lay aside infant baptism, 'Fears, tremblings and temptations did attend them, lest they should be mistaken... The great objection was the want of an *administrator*; which, as I have heard, was removed by sending certain messengers to Holland, whence they were supplied.' [*Covenant and Baptism*] The greater part of the English Baptists looked upon this act as savoring of popery, it looked like seeking a baptismal succession. And the fact, that it ignored their baptism, may account for the use of the above article in the Confession. It was held that the Collegiants of

Baptists of Great Britain

Holland had received their immersion from the Polish Baptists, and when Batte, one of their teachers, had immersed Blunt there, he returned to England in 1641, and immersed Blacklock, one of the fifty-three, and they the rest of that company. But they never immersed the eight Churches; they having been dipped before the fifty-three became Baptists at all; they and their descendants have continued that practice ever since.

The rapid growth of the English Baptists at this time, in influence and numbers, aroused such fiery but strong minds as Thomas Edwards and Dr. Featley amazingly. In the Dedicatory Epistle to his 'Gangræna.' published 1646, he tells Parliament that 'The sects have been growing upon us, even from the first year of your sitting, and have every year increased more and more, things have been bad a great while, but this last year they have grown intolerable.' He speaks of an order of February 16th, 1643, in which Parliament had 'hindered' unordained ministers 'from preaching and dipping,' but says that they were 'bought off and released by some above.' On p. 16 he combats the opinion that the 'army commanders and common soldiers' were Independents. No; 'there would not be found one in six of that way,' for the army was 'made up and commanded of Anabaptism.' He says, on p. 58, that the 'Anabaptists' have 'stirred up the people to embody themselves, and to join in church fellowship, setting up independent government, rebaptizing and dipping many hundreds.' He denounces them on pp. 65, 66 because 'They send forth into several counties in this kingdom, from their Churches in London, as church acts, several emissaries members of their Churches, to preach and spread their errors, to dip, to gather and settle Churches;' yea, 'some of them went into the North as far as York,' where some were rebaptized 'in the river Ouse,' and the water was 'so hot as if it had been in the middle of summer.' On p. 95, part ii, he declares that Independents in armies, county, city, (were) falling daily to Anabaptists.' On p. 149 he says that they abounded at Hull, Beverley, York and Halifax. On p. 146, he tells Parliament that Oats went into the country from town to town 'dipping many in rivers,' the rich at ten shillings a head, and the poor at two shillings and six pence. Part iii, p. 139, shows him cut to the heart, because the Baptists 'kill tender young persons and ancient, with dipping them all over in rivers, in the depth of winter.' His heart is comforted, however, on p. 194, to be able to say that 'We shall find no Church sounder for doctrine than the Church of Scotland, nor greater enemies, not only against papacy and prelacy, but against Anabaptists.' But as he could not help himself, he nobly proposes, on p. 108, to prove a certain story which he has told, if his opponent will join the Presbyterians in a petition to Parliament for the forbidding of all dipping and rebaptization, and exemplary punishment of all such dippers as Brother Kiffin.' Yet he tells us frankly, on p. 178, that he never saw Denne, Clarkson, Paul Hobson, Lamb, Web, Marshal and many others: 'I know them not so much as by face, having never so much to my knowledge as seen them.'

The Confession of the Eight Churches was issued in the midst of the revolution, which, for the time, overthrew the Stuart monarchy. The issue between king and Parliament was still doubtful, as Marston Moor and Naseby were not yet fought. With great unanimity the Baptists enrolled themselves on the side of the people, and fought bravely for liberty, civil and religious. It has been inferred that Bunyan fought with the Cavaliers; mainly, from his silence on the subject. But at this time he was not a Baptist, and so there is no clear case that any Baptist drew his sword for the king. Their choice is easily explained. They had suffered tyranny too long and hated it too much to fight for a prince who was a tyrant on principle, who had Laud, the bigot and persecutor, for his spiritual adviser. Their patriotism soon won them high honor. Cromwell's son-in-law, Charles Fleetwood,

Colonel and Lord-Deputy of Ireland, was a Baptist; as well as Major-General Harrison, who held the confidence of the Protector for so many years, and who owed his advancement to real merit. Lord Clarendon speaks of him as having 'an understanding capable of being trusted in any business,' a man who was 'looked upon as inferior to few after Cromwell and Ireton in the councils of the officers and in the government of the agitators: and there were few men with whom Cromwell more communicated, or upon whom he more depended for the conduct of any thing committed to him.' When the Protector dissolved the Long Parliament, an act which brought odium upon him, above all others he intrusted Harrison with that delicate duty, because of his prudence and integrity. Harrison was also appointed one of the judges to try Charles I for treason to his people, and he signed the death-warrant. At the time of the trial he held Baptist views, but he and his wife were not baptized until 1657. A contemporary chronicle informs us that his baptism occurred in the depth of winter, but we know not with what congregation he united.

Harrison became estranged from Cromwell in later years, because he regarded him as too ambitious. Cromwell fearing his military ability and popular influence threw him into prison; and having embraced enthusiastic views concerning the Fifth Monarchy, which Christ was about to set up on earth, he lost caste with the more sober Baptists, although they sympathized with him largely in his estimate of the Protector. Under Charles II, Harrison was executed at Charing Cross for the part he had taken in the death of Charles I, but to the last he justified that act. His execution was a piece of the most vulgar butchery. It occurred November 13th, 1660, and Pepys writes, that he went 'To see Major-General Harrison hanged, drawn and quartered: which was done, he looking as cheerful as any man could be in that condition. He was presently cut down, and his head and heart shown to the people;' and Ludlow adds, that his head was carried on the front of the sled upon which Chief-Justice Coke was drawn to execution. Harrison told his judges that he had no reason to be ashamed of the cause in which he was engaged, nor do his Baptist successors under Victoria blush for him.

Another prominent officer who cherished Baptist sentiments was COLONEL JOHN HUTCHINSON, who must be reckoned amongst the choicest spirits of his times. Lucy, his wife, was in every way worthy of him. She wrote a Memoir of him, which is one of the most charming biographies in English literature, for in point of learning she had scarcely an equal amongst the women of England, and not a superior. Her husband was born in 1616, was the son of a baronet and received his education at Cambridge. He loved God, prayer, meditation and the study of the Scriptures, and having ample property, settled in quiet retirement after his marriage. But when the civil war broke out he threw himself into the cause of the people with great patriotism, and after the death of Charles became famous as the governor of Nottingham and its castle. There he exerted immense influence for English liberty, and became a great favorite with his countrymen. He and his wife were first Presbyterians, and she tells the interesting story of their conversion to Baptist principles. Her own mind became deeply interested in the question of infant baptism, from the fact that she looked for the birth of a babe; and having examined the Scriptures with her husband, doubts arose in their minds on that subject.

After the birth of their child they consulted a number of Presbyterian divines at their home, but concluded that the word of God gave no warrant for its baptism. This laid them open to much calumny and blame, but they stood firmly in their integrity. Lucy was the daughter of Sir Alien Apsley, governor of the Tower, while her husband's mother was a Byron, of which family the great

Baptists of Great Britain

poet came; and their influence for patriotism, consecration to Christ and family virtue, was their great shield against molestation.

As Colonel Hutchinson had been one of the judges who condemned Charles to death, he was imprisoned first in the Tower and then in Sandown Castle, where he died in Christian triumph in 1644. He was eloquent, fearless and powerful in the House of Commons, and so firm a defender of religions liberty, that Fox, the founder of the Friends, found him his chief protector when a prisoner at Nottingham.

We have already seen that John Spilsbury was a man of high repute in the Baptist ministry in those days, yet not much more than this has come down to us concerning him. His name, however, is mentioned for the last time as standing side by side with that of Kiffin in the Declaration against Tenner's Rebellion, 1662. His colleagues now best known to us are Kiffin and Knollys.

WILLIAM KIFFIN was born in 1616, and lost both his parents in the Plague when but nine years old. William but just escaped death, having nine plaque-boils on his body. At thirteen he became an apprentice to John Lilburn, the noted brewer, but at fifteen he left his master, and wandering about the streets of London in a melancholy manner, he passed with the crowd into St. Antholius's Church, where Mr. Foxley preached on the Fifth Commandment. He thought the preacher knew his case, so exactly did he describe his duty to his master, and he quietly returned home. After that, he heard Norton, the Puritan, preach from 'There is no peace to the wicked,' and was deeply stirred, but on hearing Davenport, in Coleman Street, from 'The blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin,' he says: 'I found my fears to vanish, and my heart filled with love to Jesus.' After the manner of Bunyan he alternated for months between hope and fear, temptation and triumph, until he joined the Church of which Lathrop was pastor. After enduring much persecution for holding religious meetings in Southwark, and being imprisoned, in 1643, he went to Holland for a time, and made a considerable sum of money in business before he returned. He went to Holland, again in 1645, and returned worth several thousand pounds, on which he entered the shipping business, meanwhile preaching the Gospel without charge.

The government made him an assessor of taxes for Middlesex, and he reached great influence in the community, although he had become a Baptist in 1638. When the controversy arose in Spilsbury's Church on the propriety of admitting unimmersed persons to preach, he established the Devonshire Square Church, 1640, and became its pastor. Soon after he was arrested and committed to prison. On a Sunday afternoon between sixty and seventy Baptists were met for worship, when six of them were arrested, brought before Parliament, admonished and discharged, and on the next Sunday four peers attended their worship, one of them probably being Lord Brooke, who favored dissenters. It is quite likely that this led Featley to challenge them to a disputation before Sir John Lenthal, the justice who brought them before the lords, and who called Featley's book, *Kiffin's Coffin*. Featley and Edwards, the author of 'Gangræna,' assailed him bitterly. Kiffin's wealth exposed him to wanton persecution, in which his foes expected fines or bribes. In 1655 he was brought before the lord mayor at Guildhall, charged with preaching 'that the baptism of infants is unlawful,' and Monk afterward annoyed him greatly, by sending him to the guard at St. Paul's. His life was long, for he served the Devonshire Square Church over half a century; which spread through the reign of five monarchs, James I, the two Charles, James II and William III, besides the Protectorate of the two Cromwells. And it was full of trouble, for he was charged again and again with almost every conceivable plot against the government. Yet nothing was ever proved against him; and in

1701, he died at the age of 86, also full of honors. In sagacity, manners, godliness, labors and wisdom, he ranked as the leader of his denomination. Thurlow, Strype, Bumet and many others have honored his name with a high place in history, and Macaulay says of him: 'Great as was the authority of Bunyan with the Baptists, William Kiffin's was greater still.'

The same may be said today of his molding influence upon American Baptists more than a century and two thirds after his death. Kiffin was the great champion of the Baptists in his day. Robert Pool, one of the sharpest Presbyterian controversialists of that period, made a savage attack upon the Baptists, and Kiffin came to their rescue in his reply, London, 1645. Pool demanded: By what Scripture warrant Baptists separated from congregations where the Word and Sacraments were truly dispensed. Kiffin denied that they were so dispensed in the congregations from which they separated, otherwise they would be guilty of schism; then demanded: 'What Gospel institution have you for the baptizing of children, which was a pure invention of men and not an institution of Jesus Christ? When you have dispensed the word and power of Christ for the cutting off all drunkards, fornicators, covetous, swearers, liars, and all abominable and filthy persons, and stand together in the faith, a pure lump of believers, gathered and united according to the institution of Christ; we, I hope, shall join with you in the same congregation and fellowship, and nothing shall separate us but death.' Pool asked on what Scripture authority they separated from other *Reformers* and framed new congregations of their own? Kiffin replied: That Baptist churches existed before episcopacy, but Pool had withdrawn from Reformed Episcopacy. 'Where, as you tell us of a great work of reformation, we entreat you to show us wherein the greatness of it doth consist, for as yet we see no greatness unless it be in the vast expense of money and time. For what great thing is it to change Episcopacy into Presbytery, and a Book of Common Prayer into a Directory, and to exalt men from livings of £100 a year to places of £400 per annum? But where have they yet framed their State Church according to the pattern of Christ and his Apostles?' And when Pool pressed his point: On what Scripture ground the Baptists vindicated themselves from the sin of schism in defection from the Reformed Churches? Kiffin gave this home-thrust: The Presbyterians held that the baptism and ordination of Rome were valid, and that she was right in exacting tithes and state-pay, and yet held themselves guiltless of schism in leaving Rome. But when they shall return, 'as dutiful sons to their mother, we will return to you or hold ourselves bound to show just grounds to the contrary.'

At this time the Baptists of England generally distinguished themselves from the Pedobaptists as those of '*the baptized way*,' because they held that sprinkled folk were not baptized at all. But those of this '*way*' divided on the subject of communion, part of them being open communion, led by Bunyan, Jessey and others, while the great majority of them were strict in their communion. Kiffin led this wing of '*the baptized way*,' being followed by Denny, Thomas Paul, Henry D'Anvers and others. The controversy was hot, and in his '*Right to Church Communion*,' Kiffin says in reply to Bunyan:

'If unbaptized persons may be admitted to all church privileges, does not such a practice plainly suppose that it [baptism] is unnecessary? For to what purpose is it to be baptized, may one reason with himself, if he may enjoy all church privileges without it? The Baptists, if once such a belief prevails, would be easily tempted to lay aside that reproached practice, which envious men have unjustly derided and aspersed, of being *dipt*, that is, baptized, and challenge their church communion by virtue of their faith only. And such as baptized infants would be satisfied to discontinue the practice when once they are persuaded that their children may be regular church members without it, for if it be superfluous, discreet and thrifty people would

Baptists of Great Britain

willingly be rid of the trouble of christening-feasts, as they call them, and all the appurtenances thereto belonging. So that in a short time we should have neither old nor young baptized, and by consequence, be in a like condition to lose one of the sacraments, which would easily make way for the loss of the other, both having an equal sanction in Scripture. And the arguments that disarmed the one would destroy the other, and consequently all ordinances, and modes of worship, and lastly religion itself.'

No morsel of reasoning in the English language has ever disposed of the essence of the Communion question so fully as this; and if his proposition had been intended as a prophecy concerning Bunyan's Church itself, it could not have been more strictly fulfilled to the letter, in that it now discards baptism entirely as necessary to the right of church fellowship.

HANSERD KNOLLYS was born in Lincolnshire, 1598, was educated at Cambridge and ordained in the Church of England by the Bishop of Peterborough. He was a thorough scholar, and published many works, amongst which were grammars of the Greek, Latin and Hebrew languages. After holding a living at Humberstone, in Leicestershire; for three years, he resigned it on account of objections affecting the principles and practices of the Established Church.

In 1638 he left England to escape persecution, and arrived in New England, becoming pastor of a Church in Dover, then known as Piscataqua, New Hampshire. He returned to England in 1641, and became a very popular preacher in the various Churches of London. But one day, preaching in Bow Church, Cheapside, he spoke against infant baptism, which gave such offense that he was thrown into prison. On his release he went into Suffolk, where he was mobbed as an 'Anabaptist,' and after being stoned was sent to London on a warrant to answer to Parliament. Last of all he established a Baptist Church, meeting in Great St. Helen's, London, where he seldom preached to less than a thousand people. There, says Wilson, he gave great offense to his Presbyterian brethren, 'and the landlord was prevailed upon to warn him out of the place.' After this he preached to large congregations in Finsbury Fields, till he was 'summoned before a committee of divines in the Queen's Court, Westminster.' He had written a letter on the intolerance of the Presbyterian divines in London, to a friend in Norwich, which found its way to London and appeared against him. Again and again he was forbidden to preach, and as often he disregarded the charge and was pursued or imprisoned. At times he fled to Wales, Holland and Germany, to escape his foes. But his life was spared to the ripe age of ninety-three, and he preached the word in all parts of the kingdom; on Sundays generally delivering three or four sermons, and as many during the week, for a period of forty years. When in prison he had to content himself with one a day. Because of his great meekness and learning he won many distinguished persons to Baptist views. Amongst these was Dr. De Veil, a foreign divine, of the Gallican Church, and professor of divinity in the University of Anjou. On abjuring Rome he fled to Holland first and then to London, where he became intimate with Bishops Stillingfleet, Compton Lloyd, Tillotson, Sharp and Patrick. While passing his *Minor Prophets*, *Solomon's Song*, *Matthew* and *Mark*, through the press, he found some Baptist writings in the library of Compton, the Bishop of London, the examination of which led him to seek the counsel of Knollys, and he united with the Baptists, to the great shock of the Bishops, all except Tillotson, who had been brought up a Baptist himself and knew how to value men of convictions. Knollys also immersed that great Oriental scholar, Henry Jessey, who spent his life upon a new translation of the Bible, a translation which, though not completed, was of great value to other scholars.

Those mentioned above were all Calvinistic Baptists, who were in a minority in and about London, but the General Baptists had men of equal piety, learning, and force of character amongst

them. One of these was John Tombes, educated at Oxford, where he became a lecturer at the age of twenty-one. Leaving the university, he became famous as a Puritan preacher; and being satisfied at Oxford that infant baptism was an invention of men, his convictions were deepened at Bristol. In 1643 he went to London to consult the most famous of the Presbyterian divines assembled there; they rehearsed to him their stock arguments, and rejecting them as hollow, he was baptized upon a confession of Christ and became a Baptist pastor at Bewdly, near Kidderminster. He had severe controversies with Baxter and others on Baptist positions, and was pronounced by Baxter 'the most learned writer against infant baptism.' He wrote also more than a score of volumes on other subjects. Although a Baptist, such was his scholarship and intellectual power that in 1653 Parliament appointed him one of the 'triers,' or commissioners, to examine and approve those who were to exercise the public ministry in the national Church. After the Restoration he left the ministry and conformed to the Church as a lay member, claiming the right to do so without altering his opinions, and that after he had kept poor Baxter's hands so full for many years.

HENRY DENSE was educated at Cambridge, and became a minister in the Established Church, about the year 1630. He was a stout Puritan, but his convictions led him to unite with the Baptists, and he was immersed into the fellowship of the Bell Alley Church, London, by Mr. Lamb, in 1643, and entered the Baptist ministry at once. He attained great fame as a disputant and as a 'very affectionate' preacher. He not only met Dr. Gunning in debate, but answered Featley's ridiculous book. Persecution followed him everywhere, and he suffered much for Christ, but planted many Churches, chiefly in the eastern counties. He was heroic in following his convictions of duty wherever they led him, and withal he entered Cromwell's army in obedience to the demands of his patriotism. There he served as a 'cornet,' or cavalry officer, meanwhile preaching to the soldiers; but mutinied with the twelve regiments in Oxfordshire, who demanded a free government, after the death of Charles. Some of his companions were punished with death, but he was pardoned. He wept bitterly when his life was spared, and afterward gave a history of the whole transaction. His death soon followed the Restoration and his memory was greatly honored.

HENRY JESSEY was a famous Baptist of those times. He was a Yorkshireman, educated at Cambridge and ordained in the Established Church in 1627. He refused to conform to all the Romish notions which Laud set up as the standard of clerical orthodoxy. In 1637 he became pastor of the Independent Church which Henry Jacob had formed in 1616. From time to time members of this Church adopted Baptist views and separated from it, as we have seen in the cases of Spilsbury and Kiffin. These events turned his attention to the subject of infant baptism, which, after consultation with many leading Pedobaptist divines, he concluded was unscriptural, and in 1645 he was immersed by Knollys. He differed with the Confession of the Eight Churches on the question of communion, and published the first work known in England in favor of open communion. He was endowed with noble abilities and enriched with high Christian graces. After the Restoration he endured great persecution with holy fortitude, and died in prison in 1663. A letter of his informs us that one of the London Churches, meeting in Great Allhallows, received two hundred members by baptism between the years 1650-53; a fact which illustrates the rapid increase of Baptists not only in London and Kent, but also in the middle and northern counties.

The Fifth Monarchy men waxed bold and numerous during the latter years of the Commonwealth. It was but natural that the somber and fiery religious spirit of those times should betray ill-balanced intellects into fanaticism. New sects sprang up in a day and disappeared as

Baptists of Great Britain

quickly, and amongst them the Fifth Monarchy men. They were Premillenarians, with this modification of the chiliastic views which have been held by some in various ages, namely: they believed that Christ was about to come and begin his millennial reign at once, and that they were divinely commissioned to set up his kingdom on earth. A few of them were disposed to effect this revolution by the sword, but the greater part favored peaceful measures. A meeting was called in London for debate concerning 'the laws, subjects, extent, rise, time, place, offices and officers of the Fifth Monarchy;' but probably the authorities suppressed it as mischievous, for it does not appear that it was held. The proposal to make it 'public' and to hear 'debate' indicate the pacific ideas of the leaders, and General Harrison was reported to be in sympathy with the movement, with a few other Baptists. But the Calvinistic Baptists were prompt to protest against the measure; they, with their brethren, the General Baptists, believing that the Prince of Peace will establish his kingdom without the sword. Just as the Protector's life was drawing to a close these misguided men. chose Thomas Venner as their leader. He was a wine-cooper, and created an insurrection. He became nearly insane at the thought of monarchy restored in Charles II, and determined to destroy royalty as opposed to Christ. He rallied followers and armed them, adopted a banner on which was the lion of the tribe of Judah, with the motto, 'Who shall rouse him up?' and then proclaimed Jesus as King. The military were called out, and in a fight these men were slain or taken prisoners; Venner and fourteen others being hanged and quartered for treason. The fact that Venner and fifty men issued out of the Baptist meeting-house in Coleman Street has associated this mad proceeding with the General Baptists as a people, but very unjustly. Venner was not a Baptist; on the contrary, he threatened them that *if* he succeeded he would show them whether infant baptism were in the Bible, possibly as they had found it there so often, by the light of fagots. Mr. Lamb, the pastor of the Coleman Street Church, at once united with the London Baptists in issuing a strong appeal to the world, showing that they were bound in conscience to render to Caesar his right, and had no sympathy with Venner's doings. This is clear enough from the fact that only fifty men issued out of the meeting-house with Venner, and yet Lamb's Church was 'by far the largest' Baptist Church in London. The British public believed the disclaimer of the Baptists, but not so the perfidious monarch; urged by his minister, Edward Hyde, Lord Clarendon, who hated the Baptists for their espousal of the Parliamentary cause, he made this insignificant piece of rant the pretext for a series of abuses upon the Independents, Quakers and Baptists, which will disgrace his name for ever. While some few Baptists believed in the doctrine of Christ's millennial reign, there is no satisfactory evidence that one of the fifty men were of their number, or that a single Baptist took part in the plot. Harrison was committed to the Tower for supposed complicity with it, but Garlyle, who studied this period with great thoroughness, gives it as his opinion that 'Harrison (was) hardly connected with the thing except as a well-wisher.' Froude sees the matter in much the same light, for he says: 'With the Fifth Monarchy men abroad, every chapel, except those of the Baptists, would have been a magazine of explosives. The Baptists and Quakers might have been trusted to discourage violence, but it was impossible to distinguish among the various sects.' [*Men of Letters*, Bunyan, p. 46]

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

We must now look at the Baptists after the Restoration, the most noted of whom is JOHN BUNYAN. He was born at Elstow, near Bedford, in 1628, the famous year in which Charles I was forced to yield the Petition of Right. His education was next to nothing, yet he was favored above the boys of his village, for he attended the grammar school founded by Sir William Harper at Bedford; how long is not known, but at the best his educational attainments were quite scanty. Nature had given him a warm, light, frolicsome heart, which held him ready for any sort of glee and mischief, and under reversed circumstances subjected him not only to the pensive, but the desponding. He early feared God and longed to love him, but his giddiness and love of fun drew him into sin, until he became addicted to wrong-doing, principally lying and swearing. Because his father and himself were tinkers, and Gipsies in England have been tinkers from time immemorial, he was long supposed to be of this alien blood. But the records of his family are now traceable to about A.D. 1200, and the name itself, as then known, Buignon, indicates that the family was of Norman origin. This great descendant of that house was a man of intense feeling on all subjects. The religion of his times was of the most earnest nature, emotional, deep, almost fanatical, and when Bunyan's heart began to yearn after the Lord Jesus, his whole nature was inflamed. If we should take his own version of his case literally, he would compel us to believe that he was a sad scamp in youth and a desperate villain in early manhood. He tells us, however, that he was never drunk nor unchaste, and certainly he was never a thief nor a highwayman. He broke the Sabbath, loved dancing, ball-playing, bell-ringing and rough sports generally, and for these, with lying and profanity, his passionate self-accusings threw him into a deep and terrible sense of guilt. His agonies and conflicts continued for months; he dreamed frightful dreams and saw alarming day visions, heard warning voices and read his doom written in letters of fire. Meanwhile, he was a soldier in the civil war, and at its close married a poor, but godly, orphan girl. Froude says that his marriage speaks much for his character, for 'had he been a dissolute, idle scamp, it is unlikely that a respectable woman would have become his wife when he was a mere boy.' At any rate, his soul-conflict not only continued, but deepened, until his sufferings became unbearable, and he concluded that he was too wicked to be saved and must be lost. One day, when walking alone in the country, a flood of light broke upon his mind with these words: 'He hath made peace through the blood of his cross;' when, he says: 'I saw that the justice of God and my sinful soul could embrace and kiss each other. I was ready to swoon, not with grief and trouble, but with solid joy and peace.' Soon after this, 1653, Mr. Gifford immersed him in the river Ouse, when he became a member of the Baptist Church at Bedford, as we shall see more fully in the next chapters; and in 1655 he entered the ministry of the Gospel.

Lord Macaulay speaks thus: 'The history of Bunyan is the history of a most excitable mind in an age of excitement.' While this consideration does not throw light upon the source and sweep of Bunyan's genius, it may and does suggest a weighty reason why it took the hue and channel that it selected for its expression, both in his personal history and in the sixty works of his pen. The sixty years of his natural life ran through a long list of the most remarkable events of the English annals. In his day the High Commission and the Star Chamber brought before his mind the most vital question of human rights. This Court was empowered on mere suspicion to administer an oath, by which the prisoner was bound to reveal his inward thoughts, opinions and convictions, and thus accuse himself on pain of death. Every day filled Bunyan's ears with some new, romantic and blood-stirring event. He held his breath and turned pale when he heard that Charles lost not only his crown

Baptists of Great Britain

but his head as a traitor, when Cromwell drew the sword for British liberties and progress, when Cavaliers and Roundheads flew in every direction, when the Commonwealth was nourished with the blood of his brethren, and when Naseby, Edgewood and Marston Moor decreed, that no irresponsible tyrant should ever mount the throne again. He was familiar with the mad plots of Oates, Dangerfield and Venner, with the Conventicle Act, the ejection of two thousand men of God from the pulpits in a day, the faithlessness of the second Charles, the hypocrisies of James, the Butcheries of Claverhouse, the infamous mockery of justice in Jeffreys, and the fall of the perfidious Stuarts. The smoke of burning martyrs filled the air over his head, and he saw the blows for freedom which were struck by Hampden and Pym, Sidney and Russell. Howard, the great philanthropist, a hundred years afterward, walked the same streets and country roads that Bunyan trod, and, it is said, caught his spirit of prison reform largely from the 'Den' in which Bunyan had lain. The great singers of his day were Herbert and Milton, Dryden and Shakespeare. And the mighty preachers were Howe and Henry, Charnock and Owen, Tillotson and South, Sherlock and Stillingfleet. Bunyan's observation was keen and extensive; he lived in the very heart of England, was an actor in some of its most exciting scenes, and it is impossible but that the spirit of the times moved him at every step. In his day, English literature had become thoroughly imbued with all the elements of poetry and fiction; nay, even of romance. These had come down through high Italian authorship. Not only had the colloquial English descended through Wycliffe, and its higher literature through Chaucer, but they had been largely blended in the Bible, with which Bunyan was most familiar; so that simple, idiomatic Saxon English was prepared to his hand; being full of image and awe, of wonder and grandeur, which he could express to the popular mind in a very racy style. Unconsciously he felt the force of his mother-tongue; it stimulated his genius, became the groundwork of his thought and the model of his utterance; a choice which places him side by side with Shakespeare and the English Bible, as one of the great conservators of our powerful language.

In a burst of unreasoning loyalty the English people, in 1660, placed Charles II on the throne, without exacting proper guarantees for that liberty which they had bought with their own blood. He had given his word on honor to protect all his subjects in their religious freedom; and then, like a true Stuart, he sold that honor to his lust of power. Hardly was he seated on the throne when Venner's petty insurrection furnished a pretext for vengeance upon all his opponents, and especially those in the dissenting sects, no matter how much they proved their loyalty. Amongst the first victims of his tyranny we find Bunyan, charged with 'devilishly' and 'perniciously' abstaining from going to church, 'as a common upholder of meetings contrary to the laws of the king,' and with 'teaching men to worship contrary to law.' He was sentenced to Bedford jail for three months, and at the end of that time to be transported if he refused to conform. But his judges kept him in prison for six years: and when released he instantly began to preach again, whereupon he was imprisoned for another six years. Being released still again, he began to preach at once, and was arrested for the third time, but was detained only a few months. His judges were harsh with him, but his real oppressors for these twelve weary years were the king and Parliament, who made it a crime for any one to preach but a priest of the Church of England. It was long supposed that he was imprisoned mostly in the town jail of Bedford, on the bridge over the river Ouse, but it is now clear that his long imprisonment was in the county jail, where his anonymous biographer of 1700 says, that he heard him preach to sixty dissenters and three ministers. There is good ground for believing, however, that he passed a considerable period in the jail on the bridge, and that he wrote his *Pilgrim's Progress*

there.

While we are obliged to reprehend the base injustice which kept this grand preacher pining in a prison, however leniently treated, the fact is forced upon us, that the wrath of man was made to praise God; for had not his zealous servant been compelled to this solitude, we should not have had that masterpiece of literature. His 'Holy War' and other productions would have brought down to us a literary name for him of no mean order, but his 'Pilgrim' is a book for all people and all time. Bunyan's great power is in allegory and this form of it is unique, because its facts and dress are not fantastic, but are inherent in man's common sense and moral nature. His 'Pilgrim' is full of truth – this he drew from the Bible; of history, which he took from Foxe's *Book of Martyrs*; of terse English, which he learned from Spenser and Chaucer; of human nature, which he borrowed from himself and his circumstances; of hallowed conviction, which he caught from the Holy Spirit; and of uncrippled boldness, which was inspired by his love of soul-liberty. In earlier times some treated this great book with sneer and scorn, but in later days the first critics have vied with each other to exhaust upon it the language of eulogy. Dr. Johnson, Coleridge, Arnold, Macaulay and Froude have pronounced it equally fit for the plowman and the philosopher, the peer and the peasant; and the Queen of England thinks 'Christian,' its great character, a pattern for her grandchildren to copy in the palace. The glorious truth which made the heart of Bunyan beat quicker under the tinker's doublet has since given 'heart's-ease' to many a throbbing bosom which heaves under the purple. And the humbler walks of life, from old age to childhood, have made it next to the Bible, the story of their lives. In all souls it has created visions, interpreted dreams, and awakened 'the joy that made me write.' The eight editions through which it passed in thirty years gave but small promise of the progress of its pilgrimage since. No book has been rendered into so many languages, except the word of God itself. To many who are now 'high in bliss upon the bliss of God,' it first set 'the joy-bells ringing in the city of habitation.' The pauper and beggar of London have read it in thoroughfares and squares, and threaded their way by its guidance through Vanity Fair. The Italian has crouched beneath the shade of the Vatican, and trembled to look up lest he should see Giant Pope. The dusky Burman has taken it into the deep jungle, to show him stepping-stones through the Slough of Despond. The darker African has stolen with it into a by-path of the wild woods, and, under the palm-tree, has dreamed of the white man's heaven. The son of Abraham and the daughter of Jerusalem have read its pages to the sigh of the wind amongst the olives and the ripple of Kedron; and the Hindoo, with Bunyan in his hand, has resolved on courage when he crossed the 'deep river;' for angels, such as do not wait upon the banks of his sacred Ganges, beckon him over. No wonder that when Mr. Brown, the minister of Bunyan's meeting, lately visited Scotland, a worthy Highlander was startled when introduced to him as 'Bunyan's successor.' Starting back and measuring him from head to foot, he exclaimed: 'Eh, mon! but ye'll ha hard work to fill *his shoon!*' Dean Stanley says: 'When in early life I lighted on the passage where the Pilgrim is taken into the House Beautiful to see "the pedigree of the Ancient of Days, and the varieties and histories of that place, both ancient and modern," I determined that if ever the time should arrive when I should become a professor of ecclesiastical history, these should become the opening words in which I would describe the treasures of that magnificent store-house. Accordingly, when, many years after, it so fell out, I could find no better mode of beginning my course at Oxford than by redeeming that early pledge; and when the course came to an end, and I wished to draw a picture of the prospects still reserved for the future of Christendom, I found again that the best words I could supply were those in which, on leaving the

Baptists of Great Britain

Beautiful House, Christian was shown in the distance the view of the Delectable Mountains, "which they said, would add to his comfort because they were nearer to the desired haven" This was a worthy and heart-felt tribute from Westminster to the dreaming tinker whose effigy now adorns the House of Commons, side by side with those of orators, heroes and statesmen in honor of the man, who, though he 'devilishly' abstained from attending the church 'contrary to the laws of the king,' has preached in all pulpits and palaces ever since.

After Bunyan's final release from prison in 1672, he became pastor of the Church at Bedford, and so threw his life into Gospel labor, that his fame as a preacher increased until he was, perhaps, the most famous minister of his day. The few sermons which have come down to us, show that he spoke as he wrote. As in his *Pilgrim* he embodies more of the Bible than does Milton in his *Paradise Lost*, so in his sermons we find more true human nature than in Shakespeare. His sentences burn with sacred touches of divine experience and move us with sympathy, so that they must have melted his bearers to tears. They also abound in personification and figure, touched by a little quiet but keen satire, and are rich in reality, tenderness and life. So great was his success as a preacher, that the largest buildings to which he had access in London would not contain the multitudes who flocked to hear him. One of his early biographers says: 'I have seen about twelve hundred at a morning lecture, by seven o'clock, on a working day, in the dark winter time. I have computed about three thousand that came to hear him one Lord's-day at the town's-end meeting-house, so that half were fain to go back again for want of room, and then himself was fain, at a back door, to be pulled almost over people to get up stairs to his pulpit.' John Owen heard him preach, probably at Zoar Chapel, and when King Charles expressed wonder that a man of his learning could bear to listen to the 'prate' of a tinker, he answered, that he would gladly give all his learning for this tinker's power. In the doctrinal controversies of the times, he gave and took many a hard blow, but his writings leave slight traces of personal bitterness toward his opponents. Indeed, hard feeling seems to have been a stranger both in him and his house. His wife was gentle to a proverb. When he was in prison she went to London to pray for his release, and induced a peer of the realm to present a petition to the House of Lords in his behalf; so the judges were directed to look into the matter afresh. She, therefore, appeared before Sir Matthew Hale, Chester and Twisden. With all the simplicity of a woman's love she told her artless story. She said that her husband 'was a peaceable person,' and wished to support his family. They had four helpless children, one of them blind, and while he was in prison they must live on charity. Hale treated her kindly, Twisden harshly, and demanded whether he would leave off preaching if released. In child-like honesty she replied, that 'he dare not leave off preaching so long as he could speak.' Her request was denied and she left the Court in tears, not so much, she said, 'because they were so hard- hearted against me and my husband, but to think what a sad account such poor creatures would have to give at the coming of the Lord.' Jesus wept because Jerusalem stoned the prophets, and Bunyan's wife was much like him. But, this giant in genius was just as tender-hearted as his wife. Where do we find such pathos in any passage as this, which he wrote in prison:

'The parting with my wife and poor children hath often been to me in this place as the pulling off my flesh from my bones; and that not only because I am too, too fond of those great mercies, but also because I should have often brought to my mind the hardships, miseries and wants my poor family was like to meet with should I be taken from them; especially my poor blind child, who lay nearer my heart than all I had besides. Poor child, thought I, what sorrow art thou like to have for thy portion in this world! Thou must be

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

beaten, suffer hunger, cold, nakedness and a thousand calamities, though I cannot now endure the wind should blow on thee. But yet, thought I, I must venture all with God, though it goeth to the quick to leave you. I was as a man who was pulling down his house upon the head of his wife and children. Yet; thought I, I must do it, I must do it.'

So loving was Bunyan's disposition, that he kept the heart of the jailer soft all the time. He not only allowed him to visit his church frequently, unattended, and to preach the Gospel, too; but his blind Mary constantly visited him, with such little gifts as she could gather for his solace. She had great concern for him, lest he sorrowed beyond all hope, and often when parting with him, would put her delicate fingers to his eyes and cheeks, to feel if the tears flowed that she might kiss them away. His blind babe died and left him in prison; with O, how many fatherly benedictions upon her sweet memory. It was meet that little, blind Mary Bunyan should enter the Celestial Gate before the hero of the 'DEN,' a true 'shining one' to watch and wait for his coming. Nor did she wait long. In 1688 he went to London to reconcile an alienated father and son, and succeeded. But on the journey a violent storm overtook him, and he contracted a fatal illness which after ten days took him to Jesus, the King in his beauty, and to blind Mary, when he first saw her sweet eyes blaze with light. She raised not a hand to his cheek then, as was her old wont in Bedford, for God had wiped away all tears from his eyes; and since then the old and young pilgrim have dwelt together in the golden city.

Bunyan died just as the day dawned on England when the second great Revolution was to make her a free nation, in which Baptists could breathe freely. Mr. Froude couples him thus with them, in his biography of Bunyan: 'In the language of the time, he became convinced of sin and joined the Baptists, the most thorough-going and consistent of all the Protestant sects. If the sacrament of baptism is not a magical form, but is a personal act in which the baptized person devotes himself to Christ's service, to baptize children at any age when they cannot understand what they are doing may seem irrational and even impious.' [Froude's *English Men of Letters*] Bunyan's ashes rest in Bunhill Fields, marked by a neat tomb, bearing simply his name. But in 1874 the Duke of Bedford, a descendant of Lord William Russell, the martyr to liberty, presented a most costly and beautiful statue to that city, in Bunyan's memory. The 10th of June in that year was one of the greatest days that Bedford ever knew. The corporation, with many thousands of distinguished persons from all parts of the Kingdom, assembled on St. Peter's green, to unveil this work of art. This was done by Lady Augusta Stanley, sister of the Earl of Elgin and wife of the Dean of Westminster. Although Bunyan's back is still turned toward St. Peter's Church, the bells rang a merry peal, and immense crowds assembled in the Corn Exchange and on the green, to listen to addresses from the Mayor, Dean Stanley, Earl Cowper and many others of great note; and a banquet at the Swan Hotel crowned the day. As was fitting, 4,000 Sunday-school children of Bedford and Elstow consumed a ton and a quarter of cake and six hundred gallons of tea, in honor of the occasion; and with bands of music made a pilgrimage to Elstow, the birthplace of their enchanting dreamer; and the press of the United Kingdom that day called Bunyan blessed. The statue is of bronze, cast of cannon and bells brought from China, weighing two and a half tons. The figure of Bunyan is taken from a painting by Sadler, and is ten feet high. The idea which Boehm, the sculptor, has striven to give, is expressed in an inscription on the pedestal, and is taken from the picture of 'a very grave person.' which Bunyan saw hung in the Interpreter's house:

Baptists of Great Britain

'It had eyes uplifted to heaven;
The best of books in his hand;
The law of truth was written
Upon his lips...
It stood as if it pleaded
With men.'

A broken fetter at his feet represents his long imprisonment, and on a tablet beneath is a facsimile of his autograph in his will, 'John Bunyan.' Three sides of the pedestal contain scenes from '*Pilgrim's Progress*,' in, bold relief: Evangelist pointing Christian to the wicket gate; Christian's fight with Apollyon; Pilgrim released from his load and the three shining ones pointing him to the Celestial City. The monument stands where four roads meet, but, like its original, it only faces one way and is full of repose, the ideal of that lofty spirituality, which claims the right to look to heaven without a license from the established Church.

Bunyan's figure is thus described: 'He was tall of stature, strong-browed, with sparkling eyes, wearing his hair on his upper lip after the old British fashion; his hair reddish, but in his latter days sprinkled with gray; his nose well cut, his mouth moderately large, his forehead something high, and his habit always plain and modest.'

That Bunyan was an open communion Baptist has never been seriously doubted until the recent publication of his life, by Rev. John Brown, A.M., minister of the bunyan meeting at Bedford.. This work throws new light on many points in his history and is ably written, but because of certain pariah records which it publishes, and which seem to imply that Bunyan's children were christened, after he had united with the Bedford Church, it is needful to examine that subject candidly and carefully. Whether Mr. Brown intended to convey this impression or not, his book is well adapted to place Bunyan's practice in direct contradiction with many of his own utterances, and to render his conduct irreconcilable with the universal testimony of history as to his union with the Baptists. Yet Mr. Brown carefully avoids saying that he was not a Baptist. He quotes Bunyan's words: 'Do not have too much company with some Anabaptists, *though I go under that name myself*;' and then adds: 'This is plain enough. The only difficulty is how to reconcile his practice with his declaration; for he seems to have had three of his children baptized at church in their infancy, as we gather from the register of the parishes of Elstow and St. Cuthbert's.' These words cannot be misunderstood, and their sense is re-affirmed thus: 'There can be little doubt, therefore, that the year after John Bunyan joined the Bedford brotherhood his second daughter, like his first, was baptized at Elstow Church. The third case, that of his son Joseph, is the most remarkable of all, for this child, according to the register, was baptized at St. Cuthbert's Church after Bunyan's twelve years' imprisonment for conscience' sake, and during the time he was conducting the controversy on open communion with D'Anvers and Paul. The fact is curious, and can only be accounted for on the supposition that upon the question of baptism he had no very strong feeling any way.' [Brown's *Life of Bunyan*, pp. 238,239]

On this question and others growing out of it, the writer opened a respectful correspondence with Mr. Brown, to which he responded in that manner and spirit which always prompt the high-minded investigator. Under date of May 1st, 1886, Mr. Brown writes concerning Bunyan's own baptism: 'There is no evidence that Bunyan was not immersed. Looking at what he says of himself (*vide my 'life of Bunyan*, p. 238, line 6), I should say he was immersed though there is no record of the fact.'

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

These quotations are sufficient to show that Mr. Brown is not to be considered as saying that Bunyan was not a Baptist, but simply that he could not reconcile his position as a Baptist with the christening of his children. Before examining these records it may be a favor to the American reader, who is not familiar with the vicinity of Bedford in England, to say, that Elstow, Bunyan's birthplace, is a village about a mile and a half from Bedford, and that he continued to reside there probably till about A.D. 1685-56, when he removed to Bedford. At that time this town numbered less than 2,000 inhabitants, and for ecclesiastical purposes, was then and is now divided into four parishes, known respectively as St. John's, St. Peter's, St. Paul's and St. Cuthbert's. The first record to be examined is that of Elstow, which reads thus:

Elstow: 'Mary, the daughter of John Bonion, baptized July 20th, 1650.'

As Bunyan did not unite with Gifford's Church till 1653, three years after this record was made, it has no bearing on the question whether he was a Baptist or not. When Mary was christened, he was, as he tells us himself, leading a wicked life, having no church connection aside from a nominal one in the Church of England. It may, therefore, be dismissed with the remark, that as it leaves nothing to 'reconcile' in his practice, it needs no further consideration.

The second entry was made at Elstow, the year after his union with Gifford's Church, and reads as follows: 'Elizabeth, the daughter of John Bonyon, was borne 14th day of April, 1654.'

Taking all things into the account and in the order of their dates, with a full knowledge of the circumstances of the case, we shall find this record Bunyan's second public protest against infant baptism, which he pronounced an infirmity of the weak. In his controversy with his strict communion brethren, they charged him with indulging Baptists, in disobedience to the requirements of truth, when he communed with those who had never been baptized upon their faith in Christ. To this he replied: 'But what acts of disobedience do we indulge in? "In the *sin* of infant baptism?" We indulge them not, but being commanded to bear with the infirmities of the weak, suffer it; *it being in our eyes such*, but in theirs, they say, a duty, till God persuade them.' [*Works*, I, p. 450]

It matters not at this point whether, when Bunyan went with Gifford into the river Ouse, he was immersed or not, though Mr. Brown, judging by what Bunyan writes, '*though I go under that name myself*' ('Anabaptist'), says, 'I should say he was immersed.' This much, however, is clear, that whatever was done to Bunyan in the Ouse, he did there publicly repudiate his own infant baptism.

Mr. Brown tells us (page 36) that he finds John Bunyan's name 'in the list of nineteen christenings at Elstow Church in the following form: "1628. John the sonne of Thomas Bounionn, Junr. the 30th of Novemb.'" But as Bunyan could not go under the name of 'Anabaptist' on that christening, it follows that when he went with Gifford into the river he deliberately repudiated the infant baptism which his father had imposed upon him in 1628, in the discharge of what he regarded as his parental 'duty,' as a member of the Church of England. It remains to be seen, whether or not, a year after this repudiation, he fell into what he calls the weakness of infant baptism, and which he said was such in his eyes, by taking his own daughter to that same Church of England to christen her, in 'duty, till God persuaded' him otherwise. This, of course, would imply that he recalled his protest against his own infant baptism made a year earlier, and in turn repudiated his believer's baptism, after he had solemnly taken it upon himself as an 'Anabaptist.' This conduct would show any thing but that he had no strong feeling on the question of baptism, for with his very tender conscience he must have had terrible feelings on the subject, if he backed and filled in that way. No; this entry evinces the deepest feeling on the question of infant baptism and is his second public

Baptists of Great Britain

protest against its practice, the first being in himself by his own baptism as a believer, the second in his beloved daughter and her simple birth record.

The difference between these two entries, the baptismal record of Mary and the birth record of Elizabeth, shows that between the years 1650 and 1654 a well-defined change had taken place in their father's mind on the subject of christening. Had he chosen he could have had Elizabeth christened and her christening entered in the same form as that of Mary. but he chose not to do that; and limiting the record to her birth, it simply says that Elizabeth was '*borne*' on the 14th day of April, 1654. The following facts throw a flood of light upon this record, as they prove, that in 1645 Parliament put the recording of births into the hands of the clergy, that in 1653 this registration was taken out of their hands, and that under William and Mary it was restored to them again, and all this for the best of reasons.

1. In 1645 Parliament had banished the use of the Prayer-book in every place of worship in England and Wales, and had substituted a form of worship called the Directory. This law required all Prayer-books to be given up, and fined any who used one in any place of worship, church or chapel, £5 for the first offense, £10 for the second, 'and for the third offense one whole year's imprisonment without bail or mainprise.' It had also enacted, that 'There shall be provided at the charge of every parish or chapelry in the realm of England and dominion of Wales, a fair register book of vellum, to be kept by the *minister* and officers of the church, and that the names of all children baptized, and of their parents and of the time of their birth *and baptizing*, shall be written and set down by the minister therein.'

This act provided for the registration of *both* births and baptisms, and was careful not to confound the two as one. [Act. 1645, chap. 57. Acts and Ordinances of Parliament, 1640- 56]

2. Down to A.D. 1653, the year in which Bunyan united with Grifford's Church, Quakers, Baptists and all who rejected infant baptism, were subjected to every sort of annoyance for neglecting to go to the recording clergy as thus required, to have their children christened and a record of their birth *and* baptism made in the 'book of vellum' at the parish church, the Church of England. The same was true also of their marriages and burials.

3. Having in view their relief, not only in the matter of baptism, but also in that of marriages and burials, Cromwell's short Parliament took this whole matter out of the hands of the clergy, making marriage a purely secular act, stripping birth, marriage and burial of subjection to all ecclesiastical usages, and put the entire keeping of the parish records into secular hands for civil purposes alone. Of course, Baptists, Quakers and all other such subjects loyal to the civil power were delighted to be freed from ecclesiastical contempt in this way, and to comply with a mere civil provision, which in no way conflicted with their convictions of right; and they cheerfully complied with a law which simply required them to record the birth of their children as in duty to the State.

4. It is of this Act that Gobbet speaks in his *Parliamentary History*, under date of August 25th, 1653. He writes: 'Great part of this month had been taken up in canvassing a bill concerning marriages and the registering thereof, and also of *births* and burials. This day it passed the house on this question, and was ordered to be printed and published. This extraordinary Act entirely took marriages out of the hands of the clergy, and put them into those of the Justices of the Peace.' [Vol. iii, (1642-1660), p. 1414]

The writer has carefully examined this Act and would copy it entire, but as it covers many folios it is too long. It is found in the 'Acts and Ordinances of Parliament, examined by the original record

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

and printed by special order of Parliament, by Henry Hills and John Field, printers to his Highness the Lord Protector, 1658; by Henry Scobell, the clerk of Parliament.'

For some reason, the Acts of the Commonwealth are not printed with the continuous laws of the realm, but are put in this special collection by themselves, and at the risk of a little tediousness, as this book is very scarce, a brief analysis of the Act may here be given. It directs 'how marriages shall be solemnized and registered, as also a register for births and burials,' but says nothing of baptisms.

It was extended to Ireland 'from and after December 1st, 1653.' It specially provides for the election of a Registrar by popular suffrage in the parish thus:

I. 'The Inhabitants and Householders of every Parish chargeable to the relief of the poor, or the greater part of them present, shall on or before the 22d day of September, 1653, make choice of some able and honest person (such as shall be sworn and approved by one Justice of the Peace in that Parish, Division or County, and so signified under his hand in the said Register-book), to have the keeping of said book, who shall therein fully enter in writing all such Publications, Marriages, *Births* of children and Burials of all sorts of persons, and the names of every of them, and the days of the month and year of Publications, Marriages, Births and Burials. And the Register in each Parish shall attend the said Justice of the Peace to subscribe the entry of each such Marriage; and the person so selected, approved and sworn, shall be called the Parish-Register and shall continue three years in such place of Register.'

II. This Act further provides, that 'All Register-books for Marriages, Births and Burials shall be delivered into the hands of the respective Registers appointed by this Act to be kept as Records.' Thus the clergy were not only stripped of the recorder's office, but the old books of register made previous to 1653 were taken out of their custody and put into secular hands: 'Any law, statute, custom or usage to the contrary notwithstanding,' as the Act states.

III. The use of the Prayer-book and all religious services at marriages and burials was done away with, and as the Act knew nothing of christenings, of course, the registration of births called for no provision against such services. The parties to be married were to choose whether the Register should publish their intended marriage three Sundays in the church or chapel, or in the market-place next to the said church or chapel, on three market-days in the three several weeks next following.' On the day of marriage, in the presence of the Justice, the man was to take the woman by the hand and distinctly pronounce the following words: 'I, A.B., do here in the presence of God, the searcher of all hearts, take thee, C.D, for my wedded wife. I do, also, in the presence of God and before these witnesses, promise to be unto thee a loving and faithful husband.' When the woman had gone through the same form, the Justice declared them husband and wife. The Act then strips the clergy of all power to marry in these sweeping words:

'From and after such consent so expressed and such declaration made, the same, as to the form of marriage, shall be good and effectual in law. *And no other marriage whatever within the Commonwealth of England, after the twenty-ninth of September, shall be held or accounted a marriage according to the laws of England.*'

IV. The Act made a number of curious minor provisions which may be named, simply for the gratification of the reader, such as these:

The 'fee for Publications and certificates thereof 1s.; for marriages 1s.' 'From those who live upon alms nothing shall be taken.' The Justice 'in case of dumb persons may dispense with pronouncing the words; and with joining hands in case of persons that have no hands.' After the 29th of Sep. 1653, the age of a man to consent to marriage shall be sixteen years, and the age of the woman fourteen years.' All disputes as to the lawfulness of marriage were referred to Justices at the Quarter Sessions.

Under the well-settled rule in law, that the legislative intent can best be readied by examining all Acts on the same subject-matter and weighing them together, these Acts have been here

Baptists of Great Britain

presented, and so we cannot miss the intent of this particular Act of 1653. As the Act of 1645 had expressly put registration of births and baptisms into the hands of the clergy, and the Act of 1653 had put the registration of births into secular hands and said nothing about records for baptism or christening, taking all public registration out of clerical hands, the entry of baptisms was legally dropped from the public records, under the provisions of the last Act. That this was both the intention and practice under that law is more clearly seen in the further fact, that Acts VI and VII under William and Mary restored registration to the clergy, and made special provision for the record of christenings by those in Holy Orders. This legislation was known as 'An Act for granting his Majesty certain rates and duties upon Marriages, Births and Burials, and upon Batchelors and Widowers, for the term of five years, for carrying on the war against France with vigor.' This Act once more made it the duty of those in Holy Orders: 'Deans, Parsons, Deacons, Vicars, Curates,' to keep 'a true and exact register in writing of all and every person or persons married, buried, *christened or born* in their respective parishes or precincts.'

These Acts taken together show how thoroughly discriminating and secularizing the Act of August 25th, 1653, was intended to be, and what a radical change it made both in the public practices and their records. Of course, it aroused the wrath of the State clergy to the hottest indignation. They treated it with every form of contempt which they could devise. When the Directory had pushed the Prayer-book out of use, many hundreds of them, some say thousands, either resigned their livings or were ejected for setting the law at defiance. It absolutely forbade them to use the Prayer-book for the burial of the dead, as well as in their churches. It enjoined that,

'When any person departed this life, let the dead body upon the day of burial be decently attended from the house to the place appointed for public burial, and then interred *without any ceremony* For that praying, reading and singing, both in going to and at the grave, have been grossly abused, and are no more beneficial to the dead and have proved hurtful to the living; therefore, let all such things be laid aside.'

Surely, this was all that the clerical flesh and blood of that day could bear. But now, to follow up that revolution with another, which eight years later not only took marriage entirely out of their hands, but denied them the right to record the births which honored those secular marriages, was unendurable to them. If any body wanted them to christen their infants, the law did not forbid their doing so, in the exercise of their religious rights. But the law would not have their christenings entered on the public records as acts of any civil interest or concern. Then, the way in which their former prerogatives were taken from them, was more exasperating still. The new Registrars were to be selected by the popular vote of their own parishioners, over whom they had so unconscionably domineered, and that without regard to the religion of either candidate or voter. Besides, his record of the marriages entered was to be purely secular and to be attested before a Justice of the Peace and not by a priest. And, worse than all, in the eyes of the priest, this Act of August 25th, 1653, left all who rejected the superstition of christening at liberty to enjoy the full rights of Englishmen by recording the 'birth' of their children, and of securing to them all the legal advantages which such a civil entry secured in property rights and courts of justice, without compromising their principles by a forced submission to infant baptism. Their children could now prove their lineage and derive all the political rights which such entry entitled them to while they lived, and when they died they could be buried decently in ground either 'consecrated' or unconsecrated without anyhow consulting the whimsical dictations of an arrogant priesthood. Such a state of things would suit Bunyan's ideas

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

of liberty exactly.

Such a right had never been enjoyed by dissenting Englishmen before, and Cobbet well characterizes the Act as 'extraordinary.' Its passage was stubbornly resisted as a bold innovation; and he says that it held Parliament to discussion for a great part of the entire month, which 'canvassing' must have stirred the feeling of the entire realm. Especially must all Baptists and Quakers have been interested, as it took their marriages and burials out of the hands of an oppressive and offensive clergy, and left them at liberty to record the '*birth*' of their children and to stop there, as far as christening was concerned; so that they now stood before the law on an equality with their neighbors, free from all ecclesiastical proscription because they refused to have their children baptized. With this legal shield thrown over his head, we can easily understand why honest John Bunyan, who spoke so freely in his writings against infant baptism, as we shall see, felt it his duty as an English freeman to obey the law by entering the *birth* of his babe on the public records, when English law at last stepped forth sacredly to guard the rights of his conscience while discharging his duty as a citizen. Thus the entry of his child's *birth* without any entry of her christening stands to the end of time on the Elstow parish Register with the force of his public protest against the superstition of infant baptism enforced by the State. Then was Elizabeth Bunyan christened as a matter of fact? Certainly not. Mr. Brown quotes the entry in the Elstow parish Register and concedes that it certifies only to her birth. He also refers to the law of 1653 in the following words:

'It will be pointed out, perhaps, that the register notes that Elizabeth Bunyan was *born* on the 14th day of April, and says nothing about her baptism. But it must be remembered that the previous year an Act of Parliament had been passed requiring the date of birth to be inserted in the register instead of that of baptism.'

It is a matter of some surprise that the learned biographer has cited this Act in support of his theory. According to his idea, the object of Parliament in passing it was merely to change the form of words to be entered on the register. Upon analysis it is apparent that his claim must be that, although the record says *born*, she was in reality *christened* on that day, and that the fact was misstated in order that the law might be technically complied with. The improbability of this supposition is clear from its simple statement, and it, moreover, betrays an entire misconception of the purpose of the statute. It was not enacted simply to alter the verbal formulary used in the records, but to entirely secularize the department of vital statistics, and to allow marriages and births to be publicly recorded, though the clergy had not solemnized the nuptials or christened the children or buried the dead.

Mr. Brown in furtherance of his argument proceeds as follows:

'To show further that this Act of 1653 sufficiently accounts for the form of entry in 1654, it may be mentioned that in the Transcript Register from Elstow parish that year the name of Elizabeth Bunyan occurs in a list of twenty-three children, all returned under the head of "Christenings," and that the word "borne" and not "baptized" is used in every case.'

Of course, the writer, on this side of the Atlantic, not being able to inspect and compare these documents must rely on an inspection and comparison made by others. Hence he requested a gentleman of known accuracy in the employ of Her Majesty's government to examine both the original and the transcript registers. He writes July 29th, 1886:

Baptists of Great Britain

'In the Parish Register at Elstow for April 14th, 1654, I find Elizabeth Bunyan recorded as "*borne*" without any mention of her christening. In all the entries down to the year 1662 each child is so entered. After 1662 the word "Christened" is substituted and the word "borne" drops out. The Register is without headings, only the year and day of the month are entered, then the entries follow to the end of the year, when the same process is repeated. In the archives of the Archdeanery at Bedford, I find the Transcript Registers, and they give Elizabeth Bunyan, daughter of John, as "christened" April 14th, 1654. This stands along with 23 others, total 24. From that date the word "borne" does not occur again. Then as to the headings: as I said, the Elstow Register is without headings, and this order is continued in the Transcripts, which for the whole ten years are not only *without headings* but *without signatures*. I had omitted to count the number of entries at Elstow for 1653-54, and was obliged to write the vicar for the information which he kindly supplied in the enclosed letter:

"Bedford, July 26th, 1886: Dear Sir: You ask how many were entered on the Register as "borne" during the years 1653 and 1654. In the former year only six were entered as born and in the latter twenty-four. The discrepancy between the original Register and the Transcript is curious. The Canons of 1604 ordered that copies of the Register should be sent annually to the Registry of the Diocese. I suspect this was discontinued during the Commonwealth, and that copies were not made again until after the time of the Restoration, when christenings were inserted and not births. Yours faithfully. James Copner."

The discrepancy referred to by Mr. Copner (whose own valuable work of Bunyan is elsewhere cited in these pages) is simply that of the use of 'borne' in the original and 'christened' in the transcript. Otherwise it appears that the documents correspond. The investigation reduces itself to the inquiry, which shall be believed, the original register which says that Elizabeth was born on April 14th, 1654, or the transcript which states that she was christened on that day? It is to the last degree improbable that she was both born and christened on the same day, and therefore both records cannot be true. Born in her father's house on the 14th of April, even if he had wished her christened, she could not be taken to the parish church on the day of her birth. But if she was christened on the 14th of April and born at some other time, then the original entry is made a piece of confusion. It was never the custom of the English, or even of the Romish Church, to christen children on the very day of their birth, unless it was feared that the child would die immediately after coming into the world, and so its body was sprinkled to save its soul. Furthermore, it is not claimed that these transcript registers were independent records of facts outside of those contained in the originals. The transcripts were annual copies of the Parish Register sent up on parchment to the Archdeacon by the vicar or rector of the parish in compliance with the canons of 1603. They gave the names of all persons married, baptized, or buried the previous year copied from the Register, and forwarded each Easter. This was to provide for the existence of a duplicate copy in case the parish register should be lost.

The transcripts, therefore, always purported to be exact copies of the originals and, in case of discrepancy, the originals would of course govern. We are thus brought to the question, which is entitled to credence: a public record kept and prepared under direction of the law of the land, with prescribed formalities by a duly elected civil officer, or the inconsistent statement contained in an extra-official document, without date or signature, which purports to be a copy of the original and is not a true copy thereof? Here again the mere statement of the proposition makes only one answer possible. It is a trite rule of the law that, for the purpose of evidence, a copy is not allowable in the presence of the original, and it is not easy to see why Mr. Brown should have brought in a professed copy with the original, especially as the original says one thing and the so-called copy another. In a letter dated May 21st, 1886, he says:

Chapter 4 - British Baptists – John Bunyan

'This Transcript for 1654 is at Bedford in the Archives of the Archdeanery along with those from all the parishes of Bedfordshire. Those for the Commonwealth Period were sent up for the whole ten years at once [1650-1660] after the Restoration by the vicar, Christopher Hall, and are complete.'

It is difficult to imagine any motive for the continuation of the custom of sending an annual transcript during the Commonwealth. The whole department of public records was taken out of the hands of the clergy and made secular, and they could have no reason for adding purely secular records to their canonical archives.

But with the Restoration the Church was re-established, and the civil function of the priests as registrars restored. Then in the nature of things a new motive would arise – the desire to obliterate as far as possible all traces of the interregnum, and to have the ancient order of things go on apparently as if it had not been interrupted. This statement of Mr. Brown is fortified by the fact that these transcripts are not signed, or in any other manner formally authenticated. All that seems to have been done was to make copies of the Parish Registers, carefully substituting, however, the word 'christened' for 'born' in every case, and file them at the Archdeanery to fill the hiatus in the ecclesiastical records. The ecclesiastical motive for this substitution is apparent, but the civil record must stand unquestioned.

More than enough has been said to dismiss the entry in this transcript register from further consideration, but fortunately Mr. Brown has furnished us with a unique entry which throws additional light upon the general subject and the temper of the clergy in regard to this Act. Nothing better illustrates the peevish resentment of the priests to the Act of August, 1653, than the following note, taken from the Register of Maid's Moreton Parish, in Buckinghamshire:

'A.D. 1653. Now came in force a goodly Act made by the Usurper Cromwell's little Parliament, who ordered not the baptism, but the birth of children, to be recorded in the Parish Register. And though the baptism of some be not expressed here, yet these are to certify all whom it may concern, and that on the word of a priest, that there is no person hereafter mentioned by the then Register of the parish, but was duly and orderly baptized!'

The *animus* of the man who boldly foisted this extra-judicial note of interpretation into this Register, is evinced on its face. The legally appointed Register did not write it in 1653; it was smuggled in at a much later date, and for a purpose. It speaks of him as 'the *then*' Register of the parish, and of Cromwell as the 'Usurper,' forms of expression which the lawful Registrar of 1653 could not have used. The writer of this note understood the Act of 1653 to make a broad distinction between birth and baptism, and says that it 'ordered not the *baptism* but the *birth* of children, to be recorded in the Parish Register,' and this distinction the interpolator of the note did not relish. Hence the record at Maid's Moreton expressed just what the Act honestly required: the record of the birth of the children and not of their baptism. He says that the baptism of 'some' was not expressed in the record. And why? Simply because the law did not allow the word baptism in the Register. But as he dared not to alter the record itself, and yet wanted to spite the memory of the 'Usurper,' he must needs bring outside testimony to corrupt the sense of the document. However, he could find no one in Maid's Moreton to serve as his witness but a priest, who was sadly disgruntled because marriage, the registration in parish records, and the right to force christening on all babes, whether their parents wanted it or not, had been taken from him. So, without giving his name or permitting his

Baptists of Great Britain

cross-examination, he is called in to give his 'word.' Contrary to the letter and spirit of the Act of 1653, a gloss must be introduced into an official register, and the 'word of a priest' must certify that at Maid's Moreton the 'Usurper' had been cheated, and that, in exact harmony with the priestly wishes of the witness, and to his great delectation these particular children had been 'duly and orderly baptized,' law or no law. This absurd note awakens the suspicion that it might possibly have been written by the 'priest' himself. Yet it serves to show with what accuracy all the provisions of the Act had been enforced, and that, for this reason, the 'priest' wanted to take off the sharp edge of the record itself.

In plain English, this 'priest' was piqued by the provisions of the Act, and intended to falsify the record, and so far as he could, in his helplessness, to nullify its effect. However, as this is not the record at Elstow, and that attempts no such shameless perversion of the law, the exact truth stands with the Elstow entry, as Bunyan intended it to stand, when it affirms that his daughter, Elizabeth, was 'borne' April 14th, 1654. John Bunyan himself is responsible for this entry, and not a 'priest.' Whoever foisted the word 'christened' into the transcript at Bedford, made at least six years afterward, might have strongly desired that she had been christened, but her father had no hand in making the copy, and, having good reasons for not christening her, simply certifies to the birth of his babe, in the form provided by the then existing law. In view of this original entry at Elstow, Bunyan may consistently ask, 'What acts of disobedience do we indulge in? "In the sin of infant baptism?"'

The record that he made leaves nothing in his conduct to 'reconcile' with his professions as a Baptist, nor can he be held responsible for the substitution of a word in the professed copy which he never put into the original. This record leaves the great writer where he put himself and where his brethren have always put him. Douglas says of the English Baptists: 'As to the ordinances of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, they confined these to persons who had made a scriptural and credible profession of their faith in Christ; and with reference to the former, they regarded it as the great line of demarkation between the Church and the world. Such were the views of Bunyan, and the generality of the Baptists in former days.' [Douglas, *Hist. Northern Baptist Churches*, p. 306]

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

The third Record to be examined reads thus: 'St. Cuthbert's, Bedford, 1672. Baptized Joseph Bunyan, ye son of John Bunyan, Nov. 16th.'

The name of John Bunyan is found here. But what John Bunyan? The author of 'Pilgrim's Progress'? No; but of his son, John, Jr. And what of this particular Joseph Bunyan? was he the son of the Dreamer? No; but his grandson. If Mr. Brown had submitted one line of reliable evidence, each as would be accepted by any judge and jury in England, to prove the identity of the Bedford pastor with the 'John' of this record, it would utter a much more decisive voice. In the absence of all direct documentary evidence, outside of the name 'John Bunyan,' found in the record itself, we are thrown back upon circumstantial evidence to interpret the record. Mr. Brown reasons thus, to give his own words, as they lie before the writer, dated May 1st, 1886:

'Joseph Bunyan is described in the St. Cuthbert's Register as the son of John. We are absolutely certain that John Bunyan, the writer of the "Pilgrim's Progress," lived in St. Cuthbert's Parish in 1672. We have a complete list of every householder in the parish for the purpose of the Hearth Tax of 1673-74. There were only forty-seven, and there is only one John Bunyan in the list.'

Amazed that so calm and talented an author should predicate so grave a conclusion in history on so slight a premise, for his book took the same ground, it was suggested to him that as John Bunyan, Jr., was himself a grandfather somewhere about 1694, he must have been a father in 1672, and who was so likely to be his son as the Joseph who was christened in that year? The further question was also asked him as to where John Bunyan, Jr., lived in 1672? This reply was given: 'We have evidence in the Corporation Records, that John Bunyan, Jr., leased a house in the parish of St. Paul's, and would not therefore be at liberty to have a child baptized at the church of another parish.' On reminding Mr. Brown that this lease in St. Paul's was not given to John Bunyan, Jr., by the corporation until May 11th, 1705, when his father had been dead seventeen years, there seemed less difficulty than ever in believing that the John Bunyan, whose son was baptized in St. Cuthbert's in 1672, was the junior John Bunyan, and that he lived in that parish at that time, especially as there is not one line of proof that the senior John Bunyan was a householder in that parish until 1681. In a later letter, bearing date May 21, 1886, Mr. Brown most kindly and truly says:

'In the absence of documents we are left to conjectural probability. Bunyan's will describes him as of the parish of St. Cuthbert's in 1685, the Hearth Tax-list of 1673-74 gives one John Bunyan and only one in the same tax. So does the Hearth Tax-list of 1670-71, which I have found since I last wrote to you. The entry of his name as a householder even while he was still in prison would seem to indicate that he was living in the same house at the time of his arrest.'

Now Bunyan came out of prison in May, 1672, and as his so-called will locates him in St. Cuthbert's in 1685, thirteen years afterward, it can have no bearing whatever upon the whereabouts of his family in 1672. As the name of a John Bunyan is found on the Tax-list of 1670-71, two years before the John Bunyan came out of prison, as well as on that of 1673-74, two years after he came out of prison, the fair conclusion is that the name on the Tax-list was that of the same person for the entire four years, without yielding the slightest 'conjectural probability' that it identified the Dreamer in any of those years. Least of all do these lists prove that from 1661 to 1672, the years of his imprisonment, he was paying Hearth Tax to the government, when from other sources we know that he was supporting himself and his family, during those years, by making tagged laces to supplement

Baptists of Great Britain

what charity gave to keep them from starvation. More of the Hearth Tax however, hereafter.

Mr. Brown's principle is a sound one; namely, 'That in the absence of documents we are left to conjectural probability;' and, as such probability can only be based upon circumstantial evidence in this case, the patience of the reader is asked to a calm investigation of the confusion in which history has left Bunyan's immediate household and place of residence as an aid to the understanding of this record. This process calls for a moderately clear idea of his two marriages, and the number of his children, together with their names and the time and order of their birth. We have seen that John Bunyan, Sr, was born in 1628. When he was first married is not known, but an almost universal tradition places this event in his eighteenth year. He was about seventeen when he returned from the army, and he himself tells us that 'Presently after this I changed my condition into a married state,' which, allowing several months' interval, justifies Mr. Copner, the present vicar of Elstow and its incumbent for the last eighteen years, in saying, in his recently published 'Life of Bunyan:' 'Not later, I think, than the spring of 1647 he married...He left his father's house, and took up his abode as a married man in a cottage in Elstow. For the next seven or eight years he lived in the village...He was only eighteen – perhaps not more than seventeen – when he married. Some have thought that he may have married at a considerably later date. This, however, is impossible, since it is inconsistent altogether with what he says of himself in "Grace Abounding."...In 1658 he lost his wife.'

This cannot be far from correct, for when his second wife went to the Court of Assize, at Bedford, to plead for his liberation from prison, in August, 1661, she said, while under examination, that she had four children to provide for, and had nothing to live upon but the charity of friends. Sir Matthew Hale, the judge, asked: 'Hast thou four children? thou art but a young woman to have four children!' She replied: 'My lord, I am but mother-in-law to them (stepmother) not having been married to him full two years.' This would bring his second marriage to 1659, and should settle the fact that in 1661 he had four children living, by his first wife, all of whom were born between 1647 and 1658. Subsequent facts warrant the reasonable probability that they were born in this order; namely, John, Mary, Elizabeth and Thomas. Mary was christened in July, 1650, more than three years after his marriage; Elizabeth was born in April, 1654; and we have no birth record or baptismal record of either John or Thomas. As all the four were born within eleven years, it is not natural to suppose that his two daughters were the only children born to him within the first seven years of the eleven; nor is it likely that he remained childless for more than three years after his marriage, when Mary was born. But John, conceded to be his eldest son, was himself the grandfather of Hannah Bunyan, at the latest, by 1698, when he would be but about fifty years of age. We have no knowledge of any great-grandchildren of Pastor Bunyan's but Hannah, and we know that she was the granddaughter of John Bunyan, Jr.; it is, therefore, reasonable to account John, Jr., as the first-born of the four, and to fix his birth in 1648 – or 1649, at the latest.

Now, in returning to the St. Cuthbert record, the first thing to note is its date, November 16th, 1672, the year of Bunyan's release from prison. It is generally conceded that a Joseph was the son of Bunyan's second wife, although Mr. Copner, who has access to the same records with Mr. Brown, thinks that Bunyan's own son Joseph was the son of his first wife, and that the only child of his second wife, who grew up, was Sarah. Be this as it may, November, 1672, brings us to the thirteenth year after Bunyan's second marriage. But, outside of this record, there is not one line of evidence to prove that he had a son born to him under these circumstances. Bunyan died in 1688, and a son born to him in 1672 would make him leave a fatherless youth between fifteen and sixteen years of

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

age at the time of his death, after he had been married to that boy's mother for nine and twenty years; that is, from 1659 to 1688. We have not one iota of data as to when Sarah or Joseph was born, nor as to which was the youngest, nor is it reasonable to suppose that either of them was born thirteen years after the marriage of their parents; when the first babe of those parents, who died at birth, was born within two years of their marriage, as the mother herself told Judge Hale in 1661. If it be objected that Bunyan and his wife lived apart while he was in prison, and so these two children, Sarah and Joseph, were born after his release; it may be answered that he not only visited his church frequently and went to London and other places during the time of his imprisonment, but that on 'mainprize' he spent considerable time with his family, wherever they lived. Besides, if Joseph was born in 1672, after his father's term of imprisonment, then must Sarah have been born after Joseph, and so, when he died at the age of sixty, he must have left a little girl as well as a young boy, for his second wife had no living children of her own when she appeared before Sir Matthew Hale in 1661. Either both of her children were born while he was a prisoner or both afterward, and as the reasonable conclusion is, that they were born between 1661 and 1672, the Joseph who was christened in the last of these years was not his son, but his grandson and the son of John Bunyan, Jr., who, at that time, would be little, if any thing, less than twenty-four years of age, and every way likely to have a son, and to be living at that time in the parish of St. Cuthbert's.

One step more in this investigation. HANNAH BUNYAN'S history throws a strong light upon this record, and by the highest probability connects it with the household of John Bunyan, Jr., her grandfather. The following is his last will and testament. This document is dated December 13th, 1728, and was proved a month later:

'In the name of God, Amen. I, John Bunyan, of Bedford, Bracier, being well in body and of sound mind and memory, Praised be God! do make and ordain my last Will and Testament in manner following. That is to say, I give, devise and bequeath to my granddaughter, Hannah Bunyan, whom I have brought up from a child, and who now lives with me, my house in the parish of St. Cuthbert's, wherein Joseph Simonds, the younger, now lives, with the outhouses, yard, garden and all the appurtenances thereto belonging, to her and her heirs forever. Item, I give to her, my said granddaughter, the lease of the house I live in and all the rest of my personal estate, goods and chattels, ready money, debt, household goods and the implements or utensils of trade and all my stock in trade. All these I give to my said granddaughter, Hannah Bunyan, she paying all my just debts and funeral expenses. And I constitute and appoint the said Hannah Bunyan whole and sole executrix of this my last Will and Testament.'

Religiously, John Bunyan, Jr., appears to have belonged to the Church of England, until he united with his father's Church, June 27th, 1693, about five years after the death of his father, and remained a member thereof until his own death, in 1728. Hannah Bunyan was the daughter of John Jr.'s son, whose name is not positively known, a point to be considered immediately. She lived and died a maiden lady, retaining her father's name, Bunyan. She became a member of her great-grandfather's Church, and a tablet to her memory now stands in the vestibule of the Bunyan Meeting-house at Bedford, which reads thus:

'In memory of Hannah Bunyan, who departed this life 15th Feb., 1770, aged 76. N.B. She was great-granddaughter to the Reverend and justly celebrated Mr. John Bunyan, who died at London, 31st August, 1688, aged 60 years, and was buried in Bunhill Fields, where there is a stone erected to his memory. He was a minister of the Gospel here 32 years, and during that period suffered 12 years imprisonment. The righteous shall be in everlasting remembrance.'

Baptists of Great Britain

If she was 76 years old in 1770, she must have been born in 1694, and the question arises, Whether any son of John Bunyan, Jr., lived at that time, who was likely to be her father? The parish register of St. Paul's, Bedford, has these entries: '1694, Dec. Married Joseph Bunyan and Mary Charnock.' Oct. 6, 1695, records the christening of 'Charnock, ye son' of this couple, and Oct., 1696, that of Ann, their daughter, with her burial a month later. All the circumstances tend to show, that the same Joseph Bunyan who was christened in 1672 was married in 1694, at the age of twenty-two, and Mr. Brown says, that after Nov., 1696, 'all further trace of Joseph Bunyan disappears,' which is equally true of his wife and children so far as direct record goes. John Bunyan, Jr., says, that, as Hannah's grandfather, he had brought 'her up from a child,' and that she 'still lived with' him in 1728. Who then was his son and her father? All reasonable probability points to Joseph Bunyan; to Hannah's birth about 1697, and to her father's death in the same year. This likelihood furnishes a sufficient reason why her grandfather should have brought her up and why she had always lived with him. It is not likely that he would have taken her as a helpless babe had her own father lived. We have no record of the exact year of her birth, although her monument states that she was 76 years old in the year 1770; leaving abundant room for a mistake of three years in her age, which would make her 73 instead of 76 at her death. Joseph was clearly a State-churchman and had his two children Charnock and Ann christened. But we have no record either of the birth or christening of Hannah, and if she was his daughter, born after his death and brought up in the house of her grandfather, this is a sufficient reason why we have no record of her christening, for he had joined the Bedford Church in 1693, and would not have had her christened in the Church of England. Put all these dates and facts together, with the leading fact, that she was great-granddaughter to Pastor Bunyan, and granddaughter to his son John, and there is large room for reasonable conjecture that the Joseph Bunyan who was christened in 1672 became her father somewhere between his marriage in 1694 and 1697. As to the question of her exact age at the time of her death, it is universally known that persons living over seventy years, and in the absence of all family or other records, are very likely to make a mistake of several years in computing their age. But we have no record of Hannah Bunyan's birth, and considering that she is reputed to have been 76 at the time of her death, a deduction of three years would make this long list of dates agree, and still leave her 73 years of age when she died. This would bring her alleged age as near to accuracy as we generally find reckoning where memory and family tradition are relied upon entirely to determine a birth-date. So far as appears, these were all the data that were depended on in deciding what age she was at her death. All her immediate household seem to have passed away, for she appears to have been the only heir left when her grandfather made his will, in 1728. It is the more difficult to get at her exact age for the reason that she left no children; having at the time of her death neither father nor mother, brother nor sister, so far as appears, and her grandfather who brought her up having been dead for forty-two years when she died. Strangers only were left to erect her tablet in the Bunyan Meeting-house, for it does not appear by whom it was erected, nor even when. As she inherited her grandfather's property, the reasonable inference is, that it was paid for out of the money which she left, and in the absence of all exact and reliable data. those who put it up were obliged to determine her age as best they could: an every-day occurrence in such cases.

Really, all that is definitely known of Hannah Bunyan is, that she was the child of a son of John Bunyan, Jr., that her father's father had brought her up as his own child, that after his death she became a member of the Bunyan Church, and that she died in 1770, at more than seventy years of

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

age. Who then is so likely to have been her father as the Joseph who was christened in 1672 and married in 1694? This would allow her the age ascribed to her on her tablet, aside from the ordinary mistakes of memory where nothing is written, and would utterly avoid all the inconsistencies involved in the theory that her great-grandfather had a son who was her great-uncle when he was but a young man of twenty-two. Which is the most likely, that Joseph Bunyan was her great-uncle or her father when he was that age? It is certain that he was either the one or the other; and reasonable conjecture ought not to halt long in deciding which. Certainly there were two John Bunyans, married men, father and son, living in Bedford in 1672, to have made the one a grandfather and the other a great-grandfather in 1694-97, and somebody must have been Hannah Bunyan's father, to whom she held the relation of child at that time. This makes her relationship complete, child to Joseph, grandchild to John, Jr., and great-grandchild to the Bedford pastor, not earlier than 1694, nor later than 1697. This line of conjectural probability finds a strong confirmation in the Registers of St. Paul's and St. Cuthbert's, and more than both in the will of John Bunyan, Jr., together with the age of his granddaughter. But what is of vastly more consequence, it redeems the name of honest John Bunyan from an injustice and a series of inconsistencies from which he cannot be redeemed by the supposition that he had a son Joseph christened in the Church of England almost immediately after his release from prison. Why had he been in prison for nearly thirteen years? Let him answer that question himself:

'I was indicted for an upholder and maintainer of unlawful assemblies and conventicles, and for not conforming to the Church of England. There was a bill of indictment preferred against me. The extent thereof was as followeth: "That John Bunyan of the town of Bedford, laborer, being a person of such and such conditions, he hath (since such a time) devilishly and perniciously abstained from coming to church to hear divine service, and is a common upholder of several unlawful meetings and conventicles, to the great disturbance and distraction of the good subjects of this kingdom, contrary to the laws of our sovereign lord the king.'"

Queen Elizabeth had passed a sanguinary Act 'For the punishment of persons refusing to come to church.' It provided, that any person above sixteen years of age who refused to attend the reading of Common-prayer in some church, should be first imprisoned, then if he refused to sign a declaration of conformity within three months he should be banished, and if he returned to England he should suffer death without benefit of clergy. It was under this brutal Act that Bunyan was charged with 'devilishly' abstaining from coming to church. Besides, shortly after he was put in prison, the Act of Conformity (1662) made the Prayer-book the national standard of faith, enforced by the penal laws of all preceding reigns. But why did he stay away from church, after telling us that when a boy he almost worshiped the parson and his vestments and the Prayer-book, looking upon them all with the most holy awe? Because he had become convinced that the clergy were corrupt and he now looked upon them with supreme contempt. In his 'Justification by Faith,' signed 'John Bunyan, From Prison, the 27th of the 12th month, 1671,' he says to Fowler, a clergyman of the Church of England, who had vilified him: 'What you say about "doubtful opinion, alterable modes, rites, and circumstances in religion" (p. 239), I know none so wedded thereto as yourselves, even the whole gang of your rabbling, counterfeit clergy; who generally, like the ape you speak of, lie blowing up the applause and glory of your trumpery.' Yet, now we are asked to believe that within a year of writing this blast against the clergy, he went to this 'counterfeit, rabbling gang' to get his

Baptists of Great Britain

baby christened! And why would he not listen to the Prayer-book? 'It is none of God's institution,' he said. His contempt for the Prayer-book lay at the bottom of all his sufferings. When Judge Keeling, in a towering passion, at his trial, asked why he stayed away from church, he calmly answered: 'The word of God does not command me to pray by the Common Prayer-book.' Keeling learnedly told him that this book had come down from the Apostles! This, the Bedford laborer ventured to doubt, saying: 'Show me the place in the Epistles where the Common Prayer-book is written, or one text in Scripture that commands me to read it and I will read it.' Again, he tells us, that when he was out of prison for a short time, in 1661-62, he took every occasion 'to visit the people of God, exhorting them to be steadfast in the faith of Jesus Christ, and to take heed that they touched not the Prayer-book.' In his work on Prayer, written as his second work in prison (1662), he says of those whom the Act of Conformity forced to use the Prayer-book, and whom he designates:

'Every cursed whoremaster, thief, and drunkard, swearer and perjured person,...with their blasphemous throats and hypocritical hearts, they will come to church and say, "Our Father." Nay, further, these men, though every time they say to God, "Our Father," do most abominably blaspheme, yet they must be compelled thus to do. And because others that are of more sober principles scruple the truth of such vain traditions; therefore they must be looked upon to be the only enemies of God and the nation; when as it is their own cursed superstition that doth set the great God against them, and cause them to count them for his enemies.'

Then did he detest the Prayer-book purely because wicked men were compelled to use it, and its use made them hypocrites? Not at all; but because of its intrinsic demerits, as he regarded them. He denounces it as an 'invention of men,' and writes:

'It is evident also that by the silencing of God's dear ministers, though never so powerfully enabled by the spirit of prayer, if they in conscience cannot admit that form of Common-prayer. If this be not an exalting the Common Prayer-book, above either praying by the Spirit or preaching the word, I have taken my mark amiss...It is a sad sign that that which is one of the most eminent parts of the pretended worship of God is antichristian when it hath nothing but the tradition of men and the strength of persecution to uphold or plead for it.'

More than denouncing it as 'antichristian,' he says that it 'muzzles up prayer in a form,' and calls it a work of 'scraps and fragments devised by popes and friars.' Yet, the intolerant demanded that he should use it or surrender all his rights of citizenship. Because he flung it to the winds and would pray without it, the Justices sent Cobb, the clerk of the court, after he had been in prison three months, to persuade him to submit, by coming to some church in Bedford to hear it read. Bunyan told him: 'I will stand by the truth to the last drop of my blood.' He tells us, that at the beginning of his imprisonment he expected to suffer martyrdom on the gallows: 'This, therefore, lay with great trouble upon me, for methought I was ashamed to die with a pale face and tottering knees for such a cause as this.' And he resisted the Prayer-book to the bitter end. Near the close of his imprisonment he writes:

'If nothing will do unless I make my conscience a continual butchery and slaughter-shop, unless, putting out my own eyes, I commit me to the blind to lead me, as I doubt not is desired by some, I have determined, the Almighty God being my helper and shield, yet to suffer if frail life may continue so long, even till the moss shall grow on mine eyebrows, rather than thus to violate my faith and principles.'

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

And still again, in the Preface to his 'Confession of Faith,' published in 1672, the year of his release from prison, but written two years before, he declares:

'I have not been so sordid as to stand to a doctrine, right or wrong, when so weighty an argument as above eleven years' imprisonment is continually flogging of me to weigh and pause, and pause again, the grounds and foundation of those principles for which I thus have suffered. But having, not only at my trial asserted them, but also since, even all this tedious tract of time, by the word of God, examined them and found them good, I cannot, I dare not now revolt or deny the same, on pain of eternal damnation. The mere suggestion is simply shocking to every sensitive mind, that John Bunyan, who had thus denounced the clergy and the Church of England with the Prayer-book, and who had suffered for more than twelve long years after this fashion, should leave his 'Den,' take charge of a Dissenting Church as its pastor, and then make straight for that National Church, turn his back upon his whole past life and pretensions, and ask the very men who in that very year he had publicly denounced as a 'gang of rabbling counterfeit clergy,' to christen his child by reading over it this same 'antichristian' Prayer-book! Then take into account his pronounced convictions against infant baptism, and the very suggestion becomes an imposition. Southey well says, that he differed from the doctrines of the Church of England 'on the point of infant baptism.' How could he say any thing else with these declarations of Bunyan before his eyes? In his 'Come and Welcome' he lays great stress on the word 'him' that cometh to Christ saying:

'Christ shows also hereby that no lineage, kindred, or relation can at all be profited by any outward or carnal union with the person that the Father hath given to Christ. It is only him, the given him, the coming him that he intends absolutely to secure. Men make a great ado with the children of believers; and Oh the children of believers! But if the child of the believer is not the him concerned in this absolute promise, it is not these great men's cry, nor yet what the parent or child can do, that can interest him in this promise of the Lord Jesus, this absolute promise.'

These words were first published in 1678, six years after this alleged christening of Joseph. But in 1673, only one year after this alleged christening, when Kiffin, already quoted in part, asked him why he indulged 'the Baptists (that is, the members of the Bedford Church) in many acts of disobedience? For to come unprepared into the church is an act of disobedience; to come unprepared to the Supper is an act of disobedience.' Bunyan resented the charge with great spirit demanding: 'But what acts of disobedience do we indulge them in? "In the sin of infant baptism?" We indulge them not; but being commanded to bear with the infirmities of each other, suffer it; it being indeed in our eyes such; but in theirs they say a duty, till God shall otherwise persuade them.' On the same page he says, that he cannot 'press baptism in our notion, on those that cannot bear it.' Here, to say the least, he regards infant baptism as the 'infirmity' of those who practiced it, which he could 'suffer' 'till God shall otherwise persuade them.'

If Bunyan had had no such scruples on infant baptism as are here stated, if he had a babe born to him in 1672 and he desired him christened, he could have done this himself as pastor of the Bedford Church, or any Pedobaptist dissenting minister in England would have cheerfully done it for him. But the supreme absurdity of sending him off to the National Church to have this done, bears its contradiction on its face. What must he have done in such a case purely as a matter-of-fact in order to meet the demands of the Rubric itself? This certainly it required:

'There shall be for every male-child to be baptized two godfathers and one godmother. . .

The godfathers and godmothers, and the people with the children must be ready at the Font, either immediately after the last Lesson at Morning-Prayer, or else immediately after the last Lesson

Baptists of Great Britain

at Evening Prayer, as the Curate by his discretion shall appoint.' The Church of England had been trying to crush out Bunyan's congregation for about nineteen years, and Mr. Brown shows us that the Bedford Church was not able to hold its meetings for live years and a half, from 1663 to 1668. The Conventicle Act almost ground it to powder. Yet, by the light of St. Cuthbert's Register, we are now to believe that four years later, its new pastor, John Bunyan, fresh from his 'Den,' did without either making a wry face or laughing, pick out two godfathers and a godmother, and with his loving wife Elizabeth carrying the babe, plodded through the streets of Bedford, taking this heroic band at his heels, to St. Cuthbert's, to have the Prayer-book read over his child by a priest of the Church of England and that babe christened into its fellowship! The ordeal must have been very trying to one of his principles; for the Rubric further required that the priest should say to the godfathers and godmothers:

'The infant must also faithfully for his part promise by you that are his sureties, until he come of age to take it upon himself, that he will renounce the devil and all his works, and constantly believe God's holy word, and obediently keep his commandments.'

The priest was then required to ask Joseph, through these godparents, if he renounced the 'devil and all his works, the vain pomp and glory of the world, with all covetous desires of the same and the carnal desires of the flesh.' Then the little one was to reply, in the hearing of John, his half-martyred father, through his godparents of course: 'I renounce them all.' Again, he was asked if he believed the Apostles' Creed, and it was solemnly read to him that he might understand what he was doing, when he meekly answered: 'All this I steadfastly believe.' The priest at St. Cuthbert's finally put the question to him: 'Wilt thou be baptized in This faith?' and he eagerly answered: 'This is my desire.' When the priest had made 'a cross upon the child's forehead' and had otherwise christened him he said, seeing 'That this child is regenerate and grafted into the body of Christ's Church, let us give thanks unto Almighty God for these benefits.' Then he gave thanks in these words: 'We yield thee hearty thanks, most merciful Father, that it hath pleased thee to regenerate this infant with the Holy Spirit, to receive him for thine own child by adoption, and to incorporate him into thy holy Church.'

After exhorting the godfathers and godmothers to teach the babe 'The Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments, in the vulgar tongue,' he then gave them this solemn charge: 'Ye are to take care that this child he brought to the Bishop to be confirmed;' when they went out, that Bunyan the Dreamer might prepare Joseph to be 'bishopt.'

Scarcely can any thing be imagined less in harmony with the stern convictions of Bunyan on 'vain traditions' than his 'Amen' to such a scene. And of this all may be assured, that if he ever went on such a pilgrimage he did not take his book of 1663, 'Praying in the Spirit,' under one arm, and his 'Defense of Justification,' his work of 1672, under the other; for these would not have entirely agreed with the Prayer-book which the priest read for him that day. The Register tells us that a John Bunyan went through this foolish ceremony, but this could not well have been the author of these works. There was too little Slough of Despond, heavy burden on the back, Wicket Gate, and falling of the load into the Redeemer's Tomb, in the whole farce to suit him; and altogether too much Prayer-book, sponsor, priesthood and signing of the cross, to secure that regeneration, adoption and incorporation into Christ's holy Church which he sought for his children. If he really did submit this child to this process he must have coveted for him some fancied good thereby, which he withheld from John and

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

Elizabeth Thomas and Sarah. Or if he withheld these from christening because of its apprehended evils, none can divine why he exposed Joseph to these evils and not his brethren. Then these two remarkable filings follow; namely, that the Church of England should have kept his recantation a profound secret, and that, if it were not secret, his own Church should have taken no exception to his conduct. He tells us that he was indicted and imprisoned 'For not conforming to the Church of England.' he had been denouncing its clergy and Prayer- book for nineteen years, for which crime he had been kept in his 'Den' for more than twelve years. And now he had taken himself 'home' to this very Church, begging for its ordinance and membership therein for his child through the agency of that clergy and Prayer-book. Nay, he put his recantation on the public record of St. Cuthbert's Parish, and neither Cobb, nor Keeling, nor Fowler ever heard a word about it, nor was the news of his recantation rung from one end of the kingdom to the other, nor have we any knowledge that Charles II ever told John Owen that his favorite 'tinker,' whom he so much loved to hear 'prate,' had down on his knees and conformed at last. The best interpreters of Bunyan tell us that Win. Swinton, the spy who had dogged the steps of Bunyan and the Baptists for years, was the Mr. Badman of Bunyan's pen and the sexton of St. Cuthbert's Church, where he and Feckman plotted their destruction; yet Swinton prudently said nothing about this recantation. Bunyan was the most public man in Bedford, and with this thing known to two godfathers and one godmother, the priest, Swinton and Bunyan, six in all, it could not have been much of a secret, to say nothing of the public Register open to the inspection of all. Yet that Church which Bunyan had warned for twenty-three years against 'touching the Prayer-book,' and which never had touched it, took no exception whatever to its pastor's new adhesion to the Prayer-book! Its members had been fined and distressed because they would not conform, and now its pastor had conformed and promised to bring his child to the 'Bishop to be confirmed;' and still his Church was as much delighted with him as ever. Hereby, however, hangs an interesting story of Bunyan and his Church, and the action which they took in somewhat similar cases. On the 13th of November, 1668, Bunyan's Church appointed himself and 'Harrington a committee to admonish Brother Merrill concerning his withdrawing from the Church and his conformity to ye world's way of worship.' They were instructed to 'endeavor his conviction for his sin in his withdrawal.' Brother Merrill had compromised his brethren, in placing himself under the instruction of an episcopally ordained ministry, whose offices and functions they rejected, and had united with them in the use of the Prayer-book, which they despised as tartly as Bunyan himself. On October 14th, 1669, William Man and John Crocker reported, that they also had visited Brother Merrill, and 'though their words and carriage were so winning and full of bowels that he could not well breake out into that impatiency as he had sometimes done,' yet he told them that he 'would have no more to do with them, bidding them to do their worst.' The Church then sent Brother Bunyan and Brother Breeden once more to admonish him. But on the 14th of January, 1670, Bunyan and six other brethren signed a written report, stating, that as Humphrey Merrill had 'openly recanted his profession,' they recommended that he be 'cut off from and cast out of this Church of Christ,' which, 'in full assembly,' the Church adopted. A year later, April 21st, 1671, on Bunyan's recommendation again, and after patient labor, the Church excluded Robert Nelson, because 'in a great assembly of the Church of England he was openly and profanely bishoped after the Anti-Christian order of that Generation; to ye great profanation of God's order and heart-breaking of his Christian brethren.' Now, to be 'bishopt ' was to be blessed or confirmed by the Bishop, and this action shows that Nelson had never before been a communicant of the National Church, as

Baptists of Great Britain

confirmation is a condition precedent to the Supper in that Church. It may be remarked in passing, that this word is very old. Richard of Gloucester, Piers and Wickliff all used it, and Grose tells us that in very ancient times, when the Bishop passed through a town or village, the women ran to receive his blessing, and often left the milk on the fire till it was burnt; hence, in Yorkshire, burnt milk is called 'bishoped' to this day. Thomas Edwards complained grievously, in 1645, that formerly 'we had bishoping of children: now we have bishoping of men and women by strange laying on of hands.'

Here, then, we have the Church at Bedford excluding Merrill for the double 'sin' of speaking contemptuously of that body and for worshipping with the Church of England 'in the world's way;' then Nelson is cut off for being confirmed 'profanely, after the Anti- Christian order of that Generation.' And now we are asked to believe that the pastor and committee-man of that Church, who recommended and secured the exclusion of these, his brethren, did one year thereafter take his own son to be christened by this same 'Anti- Christian Generation,' the necessary act preparatory to being 'bishopt;' and after all this, that he promised there 'to take care that this child be brought to the Bishop to be confirmed,' without 'ye great profanation of God's order, and heart-breaking to his Christian brethren.' That is to say, he compromised his own ordination and that of all the dissenting ministers in Great Britain, by seeking baptism at the hands of an Episcopal minister, and yet either that his Church never knew any thing about it, or that his conduct in doing so 'never so much as ruffled the spirit' of the Bedford Church!

This is about where the St. Cuthbert's record lands all the parties concerned, when it is forced into a service which reflects upon John Bunyan's character for consistency and casts a slur upon his spotless memory. In the series of records of the Bedford Church, it is shown that that Church was sensitive in the extreme on all points which carried the appearance of fellowship with the Church of England, and to have had his child christened in that Church preparatory to 'bishoping' would have rent his own flock to pieces. Froude had the right estimate of Bunyan's intense character and spirit when he said of him that this was his aim: 'Be true to yourself whatever comes. Better hell with an honest heart than heaven with cowardice and insincerity.' Mr. Brown's eloquent address delivered at the unveiling of the Bunyan statue at Bedford, June 10th, 1874, better illustrates Bunyan's consistency than the doubt thrown upon it by an unnatural interpretation of the St. Cuthbert's record. The statue stands with its back to St. Peter's Church, on which fact Mr. Brown remarked: 'Bunyan seems to be repeating his old offense of turning his back on the parish Church...It is not an easy thing for men of his metal to face about at the word of command.' By a singular coincidence the birth-year of Bunyan witnessed the Bill of Eights, and the year of his death entire deliverance from popish tyranny. But if we must believe that the Register of St. Cuthbert's refers to him, then, after all his protests and sufferings, November 16th, 1672, demonstrates that, having left his 'Den' in May, six short months sufficed him to turn his back upon the consistency and integrity of his religious life-time. For two centuries history has written him as firm in spirit as his own Delectable Mountains, and now we are told that, after all, 'the moss on his eyebrows' did grow so long and thick in his dank prison, that when he came out, a la Rip Van Winkle, he neither knew himself nor did any body else know him. He said to Fowler, in that year: 'Let all men know that I quarrel not with him about things wherein I dissent from the Church of England;' and yet we are now to be thought incredulous for refusing to believe that he conformed to that Church in that year, though to believe that he did, might turn his bones in the 'Baptist Corner' of Bunhill Fields, where

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

he now sleeps.

It has been suggested in various quarters that this matter can be reconciled by supposing that Bunyan's wife might have had the child christened without his knowledge, as several mothers of noted Baptists, who were not Baptists themselves, have had their children christened without the consent of their husbands. No. These women were conscientiously connected with other Churches, and differing with their husbands in their religious views, they felt it incumbent on them, as in others, to do what they esteemed a religious duty. Besides, the ministers to whom they took their children treated them and their households kindly. But whether Elizabeth Bunyan were a Baptist or not, she was not likely to go to her husband's open persecutors, who had brought all her sorrows upon her head and had treated her husband like a brute and had left her children to starve, to seek their blessing upon a child whom they despised for his father's sake; indeed, she was not a woman of that stamp. She loved her husband too dearly to compromise him in that way. Besides, if the Joseph who was christened was her son, and she had him christened by stealth, on religious conviction, why was she not consistent with herself in doing the same for her daughter, Sarah? and in putting her christening on the same record, if Sarah was born in the same parish? While she almost idolized her husband, he, in turn, almost idolized her. She believed in him and in his view of the Church of England. She pleaded for him before the bench of judges and went to London to pray for his liberty through Lord Barkwood and the House of Lords. And when Sir Matthew Hale pitied her, and asked of her husband's calling, a chorus of the other judges cried out: 'A tinker, my lord!' 'Yes,' said the poor and dauntless woman, 'and because he is a tinker and a poor man, therefore he is despised and cannot have justice.' One of the judges responded in great anger: 'My lord, he will preach and do what he lists.' His noble wife replied: 'He preacheth nothing but the word of God!' The angry judge cried out: 'His doctrine is the doctrine of the devil!' 'My lord,' the true Elizabeth replied, 'when the righteous Judge shall appear, it will be known that his doctrine is not the doctrine of the devil!' Made of that sort of metal, would she yet smuggle her husband's son into the State Church against all his father's preaching, writing and suffering? Could she thus trifle with his religious principles and with her own oppressions in the bargain? Bunyan's teaching to her was that the wife must look upon her husband:

'As her head and lord. The head of the woman is the man...It is an unseemly thing so much as once in all her life-time to offer to overstep her husband, she ought in every thing to be in subjection to him, and to do all that she doeth, as having her warrant, license and authority from him...The wife is master next her husband, and is to rule all in his absence; yea, in his presence she is to guide the house, to bring up the children; provided, she so do it as the adversary have "no occasion to speak reproachfully." ...Therefore, act and do still; as being under the power of the husband.'

The fact is, according to his biographer of 1700: 'In his family he kept up a very strict discipline, in prayer and exhortations.' Hence, there is not the slightest probability that Elizabeth took her child to 'St. Cuthbert's to be christened, nor is the intimation that she did at all to the honor of her name. Mr. Brown's reason for thinking that Bunyan removed his family from Elstow to Bedford about 1655 is, that there is no birth-record of his children at Elstow after 1654; also, he thinks that his sons, John and Thomas, may have been born at Bedford between 1654 and 1658, although there is no more record of their birth at Bedford than at Elstow. He admits that they might both have been born at Elstow between 1650 and 1654, while conjectural probability points to the birth of John by 1648

Baptists of Great Britain

or 1649. From this premise he infers that Bunyan's wife and children lived not only in Bedford, but in the parish of St. Cuthbert's there, all through her husband's imprisonment. There is no date whatever to determine clearly when he removed to Bedford; all that we know is, that his indictment says that he was of Bedford in 1661. But in what part of the town he lived then, or his family afterward, till 1681, we know absolutely nothing, the drift of circumstances simply points to the fact, that during his imprisonment his family lived somewhere in the town, at least a part of that time. Dr. Stebbing, no mean authority on Bunyan, writes: 'On his being finally committed to jail, his poor family must, at first, have found some humble lodging in one of the lanes or back streets of the town. The little blind girl could not have visited him, day after day, through the long winter, and stayed till night-fall, had she been obliged to walk to and from Elstow, nearly two miles of harsh, bleak road.' Mr. Copner, the present vicar of Elstow, thinks that he removed to Bedford about 1654. He says:

'What the precise site of his humble home in Bedford at this time may have been, it were vain to inquire. Nothing whatever is known about it, and no ground exists on which to found a supposition. It is likely enough, of course, that it stood somewhere near his Church, but in what particular street or locality, is absolutely problematical.' And what he says of 1654 is just as true of the location of his family until 1681. Because Mr. Brown finds a John Bunyan on the Hearth Tax-list of St. Cuthbert's Parish for the years 1670-71, 'while the John Bunyan was still in prison, and the same name occurs again in 1673-74, when he was out of prison, he draws the unwarrantable conclusion that the prisoner Bunyan was a householder in Bedford all through his imprisonment, that he was one of the forty-seven tax-payers in the parish of St. Cuthbert's, and that his family lived in the same house from the time of his arrest in 1661, to the time of his release in May, 1672! This is, indeed, one of his chief grounds for the attempt to identify the author of 'Pilgrim's Progress' with the John Bunyan of the Register of 1672.

This matter of the Hearth-Tax is interesting. Blackstone says, that mention is made of it in Doomsday-book as early as the conquest, by the name of 'fumage,' vulgarly called 'smoke farthings;' paid by custom to the king for every chimney in the house. Under Charles II, 1662, a tax of two shillings a year was levied on every housekeeper who kept a fire on the hearth. As the value of English money in this reign was at least six times more than it is in the reign of Victoria, this sum would now amount to about twelve shillings sterling, a sum which Bunyan's family could hardly pay out of their deep penury. But what evidence is there that from 1662 to 1672 this law held the imprisoned Bunyan a housekeeper in Bedford, and put his name on the Tax-list in St. Cuthbert's parish? John Bunyan, Sr., had become a housekeeper when he was eighteen, and if his son John was born in 1648, as seems reasonable, he would be twenty-two years of age in 1670; the year in which his name appears on this Tax-list, and every-way likely to be a housekeeper, especially in view of the then poverty of his father's family. Truly, there were two adult John Bunyans in Bedford in 1670, one in prison and one out; and the fact that the Senior Bunyan lived in this particular parish from 1681 onward, and that his son owned a house in that parish afterward, suggests the reasonable thought that this son probably lived there and helped his mother to take care of her children when his father was in prison. This is about all that square candor can claim in the case, either way.

Mr. Brown, however, thinks that the following fact is a strong incident to show, that while Bunyan was in prison he was a 'parishioner,' and the only one of his name in St. Cuthbert's parish. In the month of October, 1670, a contribution of seven shillings was made in that parish, by fifteen contributors, for the relief of certain captive Christians in Algiers. Amongst these is found the name

Chapter 5 - British Baptists – John Bunyan – Continued

of a 'John Bunnian,' who subscribed sixpence. At that time John Bunyan, the preacher, was in prison, a captive himself, probably as destitute as those in the captivity of Algeria. It seems that this appeal 'was read in church' when he was in bonds at the 'Den;' albeit, he would not have been at that church if he had been out of jail. Still, Mr. Brown thinks that though he was not there; the sixpence 'was probably contributed by his family on his behalf,' as 'a fine stroke of irony.' It must have been very 'fine.' The Conventicle Act attempted to stamp out his own Church from 1664 to 1668, so that if it met 'for any religious purpose not in conformity with the Church of England,' each person was subject to a fine from ,9 to ,100, and from three years' imprisonment to seven years' transportation, as he attended from one to three times. Then came the Five Mile Act, in 1665, which fined every minister ,40 for preaching within five miles of any city or corporate town, and yet in order to get Joseph Bunyan christened in 1672, we have the Dreamer trying to keep himself and children from starvation by making tagged laces, carefully sending his sixpence to that seven and sixpenny parish, to keep it in good repute for liberality to captured Christians! John Bunyan, Jr., seems to have been moderately prosperous, and judging from the apparent christening of his son two years after, may have given his sixpence. His poor mother had no sixpence to send past the gate of the county jail to Algeria. And one of Bunyan's earliest biographers said, in 1693, that when he 'Came abroad out of prison, he found his temporal affairs were gone to wreck, and he had as to them, to begin again, as if he had newly come into the world...His friends had all along supported him with necessaries, and had been very good to his family'...He did not 'Eat the bread of idleness, for I have been witness that his own hands have ministered to his and his family's necessities, making many hundred gross of long tagged laces.'

When much stronger evidence than this can be adduced that John Bunyan was a 'parishoner' of St. Cuthbert's Church while he was a confessor in Bedford Jail, and that the Joseph christened there in 1672 was his son, the nineteenth century may lend its ear to the story, but it must be much stronger indeed to challenge its confidence.

Nor is there the slightest evidence that John Bunyan ever was the real owner of the house that he lived in, in St. Cuthbert's parish from 1681 to 1688, either under a leasehold claim or in fee. It is more likely that he lived in it under some tenure from his son John. In his deed, he simply gives the 'premises' to his wife, Elizabeth, as an item in the same sentence with other items, thus: 'To have and to hold all and singular the said goods, chattels, debts, and all other the aforesaid premises.' This instrument is not a will but a deed of gift, of chattels and chattel interests, and does not indicate that he had fee in any real estate; it holds only the form of conveying personal property. But when John Bunyan, Jr. bequeaths the same premises to his granddaughter, he says, in a will proper: 'I give, devise and bequeath' to her, 'my house in the parish of St. Cuthbert's, wherein Joseph Simonds the younger now lives, with the outhouses, yard, garden and all the appurtenances thereto belonging, to her and her heirs forever.' Having disposed of his real estate, he then proceeds to speak of his leasehold and personal estate. Thus, the instrument which he executes is obviously and specifically a will, devising real estate as well as bequeathing personal property. Yet, whether Bunyan, the author, had owned the house that he died in is immaterial, so long as there is no substantial proof that he lived in it between 1670 and 1674, or that he was a householder at that time subject to the Hearth Tax. The fact is cited, that Mr. Bagford once visited Bunyan at his home, where he saw a Bible with a few other books on a shelf, amongst them 'Pilgrim's Progress.' Still, as no date is given to his visit, this signifies nothing. Nor does he give us the edition of 'Pilgrim,' the first of which was

Baptists of Great Britain

published as late as 1677. As to the lease given by the Corporation of Bedford to John Bunyan, Jr., in 1705, that had better not be mentioned in an honest attempt to determine where he lived in 1672, seventeen years before the lease was given. Taking every thing into the account connected with his special and personal household, we have simply this chain of circumstances: He bequeathed his house in St. Cuthbert's parish to his granddaughter in 1728, in which house his father had lived from 1681 to 1688; it is more in keeping with the natural order of things to infer that it was his name which appeared on the Tax-list of that parish from 1670 to 1674, rather than the name of his father who was in prison till 1672. And, taking all things into consideration on the Senior Bunyan's side of the house, his imprisonment from 1661 to 1671, his abject poverty during those years, the partial dependence of his family on friends for their bread, and the absolute absence of proof as to where they lived while he was in prison; all reasonable conjecture points to the supposition that the Joseph of the baptismal register of 1672 was the son of John Bunyan, Jr. and the grandson of John Bunyan, Sr. The name in the record still stands 'John,' but it must be proven that the John was responsible for its creation, before men of sound judgment can be convinced that it is the record of his Conformity to what he branded as an 'Anti-Christian' body.

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

The anonymous author who took up and finished the narrative of Bunyan's life from the point at which Bunyan stopped, calls himself 'his true friend and long acquaintance;' he says: 'I have taken upon me from my knowledge, and the best account given by other of his friends, to piece this to the thread too soon broke off.' He then tells us, that when Bunyan was converted 'he was baptized into the congregation' at Bedford, 'and admitted a member thereof' Charles Doe, who was a firm Baptist, the author of a work against infant baptism, and who edited an edition of Bunyan's works immediately after his death, writes, that he was acquainted with him about two years and had heard him preach while in prison. Further he adds: 'He did not take up religion upon trust, but grace in him continually struggling with himself and others, took all advantages he lit on to ripen his understanding in religion, and so he lit on the dissenting congregation of Christians at Bedford, and was upon confession of faith baptized.' Offer tells us that the reputed spot where he was baptized is still pointed out in a small stream running up from the river Ouse, near Bedford bridge. This creek was then called, in derision of the Baptists, the 'Ducking-place,' and is still known in Bedford as the mill stream in Duck-mill Lane. Almost all biographers agree in these statements of his two early acquaintances; and Philip, late of Maberley Chapel, London, who was a thoroughly good hater of strict Baptists, writes that Bunyan 'shrunk back from baptism and the sacrament for years, lest he should presume.' Doe is uncertain about the time of his baptism, placing it between 1651 and 1653, a fact which hints at less a halting as Philip mentions. The unbroken testimony is that Gifford immersed him. though there is no entry thereof on the record, and for the best of reasons, as we shall see. All are agreed that Gifford, the pastor of the Bedford Church, did something to him in the Ouse which was called baptism, so that on entering that church both Bunyan and Clifford cast aside as worthless the christening which Bunyan had received when a babe, in 1628, at the Elstow Parish Church.

The ablest disinterested investigators, with remarkable unanimity, state that Bunyan was a Baptist. Froude calls Gifford 'the head of the Baptist community' in Bedford, and adds that Bunyan 'being convinced of sin joined the Baptists.' Scott, the commentator, says that he was admitted a member of the Baptist Church at Bedford. This Church was organized by Gifford in 1650, and consisted at the time of four men and eight women. Copner says: 'Bunyan was now a constant adherent of a small and humble congregation of Baptists in the town of Bedford, and "sat under" the teaching of "holy Mr. Gifford."' Again, he speaks of this body as 'the Baptist communion in Bedford.' Dr. Stebbing, the rector of St. Mary Mounthaw, London, edited and published all Bunyan's works, in 4 vol. imperial octavo, 1859, and dedicated his work to the Bishop of London. This edition is adopted for all references to Bunyan's works in this book. Stebbing was a thorough Bunyanian scholar and pronounces Mr. Gifford 'a humble Baptist minister.' Green in his 'History of the English People' writes of Bunyan, 'He joined a Baptist Church at Bedford.' Dean Stanley calls him 'a Baptist preacher and the preacher of the Baptist

Meeting-house at Bedford.' Macaulay states, that 'he joined the Baptists and became a preacher.' The 'Britannica,' the most weighty of the Encyclopaedias, says, 'He joined the Baptist society at Bedford.' This has been the uniform testimony of careful investigators, because the general principles and practices of the Church were Baptist in its early history, and because Bunyan himself was decidedly Baptist after the open-communion order. Robert Philip and Dr. Stoughton more accurately define the exact status of the Church in ecclesiastical terms. Philip says: 'I do not forget

Baptists of Great Britain

that the Church at Bedford was not wholly a Baptist Church. Its pastor, however, was a Baptist; and the majority seem to have been the same. But they were not strict Baptists.' Stoughton calls it a 'unique society' made up of a number of godly people who seceded from the parish churches at Bedford and chose Gifford for their pastor, and adds: 'The Church he founded was neither exclusively Baptist nor Pedobaptist; members of both kinds were admitted on the same terms...Bunyan was a Baptist.' Dr. Stoughton's presentation of the case is probably the most exact that has been given by any weighty authority; provided, that by the term 'Pedobaptist' he means simply that some of the constituent members had been christened in their infancy and were received into the new body without immersion. But if he means by that word, that infants were christened in that church, through the pastorates of Gifford, Burton, or Bunyan, its first three pastors, then it is not correct, for there is not the least vestige of evidence that infant baptism was practiced in that body till the time of Ebenezer Chandler, Bunyan's first successor, about forty years after the Church was formed. Chandler's letter marks the introduction of the practice, bearing date Feb. 23, 1691, two years after his settlement. Gifford was so far a Baptist as that he administered immersion to all who wished it, and possibly sprinkled those who wished that, though this is not shown, but christened no children as pastor of this Church; whilst Bunyan was a pronounced Baptist in all things, excepting that he differed with all Christians, Baptist and Pedobaptist, in rejecting baptism as a necessary precedent to the Supper, because he held that baptism was a personal act, and not a Church act. Because Bunyan was a Baptist of this school and his Church never practiced infant baptism till 1691, but practiced the baptism of believers only, as we shall see, it was called a Baptist Church then and ever since, and properly so. The peculiar constitution and history of the Church with which he was united as member, deacon, pastor and writer for thirty-five years, throw a mutual interpretation upon his views and practices and their own. As we shall see, few churches in Great Britain have been so agitated, disturbed and divided on all the vital questions which have disquieted its Baptist Churches in the same period of time. In 1774 a Trust Deed was adopted by which the Church is legally known today as a 'Congregation or society of Protestants dissenting from the Church of England, commonly called Independents or Congregationalists, holding mixed communion, with those who scruple the baptizing of infants, commonly called Baptists.' That corporate title itself implies something peculiar in its history, and the marked effects of that history have not been produced without a cause. There are good reasons why the best investigators have always pronounced Gifford, Bunyan and this Church Baptist. Let us now look at the reasons, and at the forces which have rendered this name necessary and true.

As already stated, this Church was formed in 1650, and Bunyan united with it in 1653. For six years after its organization it kept no record which can now be found; but one was kept from 1656, which has been copied, partially at least, and is preserved in the present Church-book. Baptist principles and practices took root in and around Bedford long before this Church existed, they entered into its constituent elements, and appear in the struggles and triumphs of the body for fully a century and a half. These records justify Thomas Scott in saying, that he takes certain facts 'from the entries in the Baptist Church-book' at Bedford. A free congregation was formed at Bedford, under the ministerial labors of Benjamin Coxe, about 1643, seven years before Gifford's congregation was formed and ten years before Bunyan was baptized, he was the son of Bishop Coxe, of the reign of Elizabeth, and a graduate of one of the universities, being at one time a disciple of Laud. Baxter says that he held a controversy at Coventry, and Wilson states that he was sent to

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

prison there in 1643, 'for disputing against infant baptism.' Edward denounces him as 'one Mr. Coxe who came out of Devonshire, an innovator.' This was the Benjamin Coxe who wrote an Appendix to the London Baptist Confession of 1646. This document suggests the doctrine which he preached in Bedford in 1643. He says, page 9:

'Although a true believer, whether baptized or unbaptized, be in a state of salvation, and shall certainly be saved, yet in obedience to the command of Christ every believer ought to desire baptism, and to yield himself to be baptized according to the rule of Christ in his word. And where this obedience is in faith performed, there Christ makes this his ordinance a mean of unspeakable benefit to the believing soul. Acts 2:38. And a true believer that here sees the command of Christ lying upon him, cannot allow himself in disobedience thereto.'

Again, page II:

'Though a believer's right to the use of the Lord's Supper do immediately flow from Jesus Christ, apprehended and received by faith, yet inasmuch as all things ought to be done not only decently but also in order, and the word holds forth this order, that disciples should be baptized, and then be taught to observe all things (that is to say, all other things) that Christ demanded of the apostles; and accordingly the apostles first baptized disciples and then admitted them to the use of the Supper, we therefore do not admit any to the use of the Supper, nor communicate with any in the use of this ordinance, but disciples baptized, lest we should have fellowship with them in their doing contrary to order.'

The congregation which he formed at Bedford in 1643 would naturally take his views on this subject. How long it continued does not appear; but it seems to have merged into the company that formed Gifford's Church in 1650. William Dell, rector of Yelden, Bedfordshire, took strong ground against the establishment of religion by law, and his doctrine also filled the air of Bedford some few years later. Most of his views were in common with Baptists and some in common with the Quakers, who came to Bedford in 1656. Edwards says of him, in 1646, that he preached at Marston Church, near Oxford, June 7, 1646, from the last seven verses in Isaiah, in which sermon he said: that only those in the kingdom who had the Spirit of God, were the Church of God; that the New Testament never held a whole nation to be a Church; and that the saints were those now styled 'Anabaptists' and other sectaries. This was his doctrine concerning a Gospel Church. He said: 'All Churches are equal as well as all Christians, all being sisters of one another, beams of one sun, branches of one vine, streams of one fountain, members of one body, brandies of one golden candlestick, and so equal in all things.' Dell was one of the ejected ministers, and he lost the mastership of Cains College, Cambridge, with his living. He held the same views of religious liberty that Bunyan held. In a powerful sermon preached before the House of Commons, November 28, 1646, on 'Eight Reformation,' he said:

'It causes disturbances and tumults in the world, when men are forced by outward power to act against their inward principles in the things of God...A man when he sins not against the State, may justly stand for his State-freedom, and to deprive a man of his State-liberty for the kingdom of Christ's sake, as it causes disturbances in the world, so let any man show me any such thing in the Gospel...We exalt Christ Jesus alone in the spiritual Church; and attribute to the magistrate his full power in the world. But they (the Presbyterians) exalt themselves in Christ's stead in the Church, and set under their feet the magistrate's power in the world...As Christ's kingdom and the kingdoms of the world are distinct, so you would be pleased to keep them so. Not mingle them together yourselves, nor suffer others to do it to the great prejudice and disturbance of both...But would you have no law? No laws in Gods kingdom but God's laws, and they are these three: the

Baptists of Great Britain

law of a new nature; the law of the spirit of life that is in Christ; the law of love.'

In this Antipedobaptist atmosphere the Church at Bedford was founded. The introduction to its records, commencing, as we have seen, in 1656, states that there had long been persons in Bedford and its vicinity who had 'by purse and presence' sought to edify each other according to the New Testament; and who were 'enabled of God to adventure farre in shewing their detestation of ye bishops and their superstitions.' Further, this introduction says, that after they had 'conferred with members of other societies,' most likely that gathered by Coxe being amongst them, they formed a Church of twelve members, and chose John Gifford 'for their minister in Jesus Christ, and to be their pastor and bishop.' Here we see that in all likelihood, Coxe and Dell had first introduced the Baptist leaven into Bedford, and how, thereby, so many of the twelve came to be Baptists as well as Gifford himself. They adopted this principle as the foundation of their fellowship, in the words of the record. 'Now the principle upon which they thus entered into fellowship one with another, and upon which they did afterwards receive those that were added to their body and fellowship, was faith in Christ and Holiness in life, without respect to this or that circumstantiall things. By which meanes grace and faith was encouraged, Love and Amity maintained, disputings and occasion to janglings and unprofitable questions avoyded, and many that were weake in the faith confirmed in the blessing of eternall life.' The fundamental requisition that those who were added to their body and fellowship 'should have faith in Christ and Holiness of life,' precluded the possibility of adding any by infant baptism, and their nonrespect to 'opinion in outward things' left all who should unite with them at liberty to choose their own method of baptism. They thought by this course to avoid 'unprofitable questions,' 'disputings and occasion to janglings,' and so, as is common with those who fear the expression of free thought, they created the surest mode of engendering these evils, and suffer from them as few Churches have in the same length of time. Nothing is clearer than that they were not Quakers, and that at first water-baptism was practiced amongst them in such way as satisfied themselves individually. While we have no exact information of Gifford's personal views concerning the ordinances, we do not need any, for his official position as pastor of such a Church sufficiently defines what they were. After organizing a Church under this compact and accepting its pastorship, it became his duty to sprinkle all who wished to be sprinkled, and to immerse all who wished to be immersed upon their faith in Christ; and his refusal to do so would have repudiated the principle on which his own Church was established. The point to be aimed at, therefore, in this examination is, not what were Gifford's personal views of baptism, not what the personal views of other members were, but what were the views of John Bunyan, and what he held as Gospel baptism, a matter which he could determine for himself.

Theodore Crowley was ejected from St. John's, at Bedford, for refusing to use the Directory, and the corporation to its rectory and hospital appointed Gifford to fill his place in 1653, three years after his Church was formed, but in September, 1655, he died, and was succeeded in his pastorate by John Burton. Gifford had three daughters and a son born to him between his marriage in 1648, and his death in 1655; or, rather, the last daughter was born after he died. The burial of John, his son, is registered in St. Paul's Parish in 1651; that of Elizabeth, his second daughter, is recorded in the same register for 1665; and Mary, his eldest daughter, is known to have married in 1696. Various other entries relating to him and his family are found in Bedford, but not a line of record has been found anywhere to show that any of his children were christened, which is a fact of great significance; for,

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

as Southey says, a number of those who preached in the parish churches, while the Directory and not the Prayer-book was in force, were Baptists. Hence Gifford, clearly a Baptist in that he cast aside infant baptism, as his baptism of Bunyan attests, was filling the pulpit of St. John's; and Bunyan himself preached more than once in the parish churches.

It is simply idle to reject Bunyan's immersion by Gifford because his name does not appear on the Church record as an immersed member. For the same reason the immersion of Hanserd Knollys, John Clark and Obadiah Holmes may be rejected, because no record of their baptism is known to exist. But in Bunyan's case there are special reasons why no such register is found. Doe says that he was baptized on 'his confession of Christ' between 1651 and 1653, but the Church has no record of any thing that was done at that time as a specific act of its proceedings in receiving any individual members. In 1653 it has a list of members simply, among whose names Bunyan's is found as the nineteenth. Besides this, of set purpose, all baptisms in the body were left unrecorded; Mr. Brown informing us that the word 'baptism' only occurs twice between 1650 and 1690, both cases being in 1656. Under the circumstances it was a matter of absolute necessity that no record of baptisms should be kept. For the Church to have voted on such a question in ordering baptisms, or to have approved their record, would have kept it in a perpetual commotion, instead of promoting its perfect blending, as a body made up of diverse elements. Two lists of members, one of the immersed part of the Church and another of the unimmersed, would have drawn a line directly through the Church, which was the very thing that they, a mixed body, wished to avoid; hence such a record was most studiously discarded. The fact that they were mixed kept them on the alert perpetually against strife and still failed, without attempting to make up separate records of the Baptists and Pedobaptists amongst them, to heat up their controversies withal.

Almost the last act of Pastor Gifford, on his death-bed, was to draw up a remarkable letter to his Church, then numbering not more than thirty members, in which he most solemnly charges them concerning the future. After exhorting them to be constant in their assemblies he comes to the fundamental principle on which the Church stood, saying: 'After you are satisfied about the work of grace in the party you are to join with, the said party do solemnly declare before some of the Church that union with Christ is the foundation of all saints' communion, and not merely your agreement concerning any ordinances of Christ, or any judgment or opinion about externals. And said party ought to declare, whether a brother or sister, that through grace they will walk in love with the Church though there should happen any difference about other things.' He gives no hint that an infant could be baptized amongst them. The candidate must be a 'brother or sister,' who declares his faith, and about whose personal grace the Church was to be satisfied; for he insisted on a regenerate membership. Gifford gives his Church just such a charge as any thoughtful Baptist pastor, when dying, would give his Church in that day, in view of the controversies that were then rending the Baptist Churches; such a charge as none but a Baptist Church needed, and such as none but a Baptist pastor would have thought of giving to his Church. He says: 'Concerning separation from the Church about baptism, laying on of hands, anointing with oil, psalms or any externals, I charge every one of you respectively, as you will give an account of it to our Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge both quick and dead at his coming, that none of you be found guilty of this great evil.' This serious document, signed in the presence of two brethren as witnesses, and still read to the body once a year, not only evinces the apprehensions of the good man that his little flock might be rent after his death, but also it shows us the material of which it was composed, and the questions on which it stood in

Baptists of Great Britain

jeopardy. He implies that up to that time his personal influence had held them together on these points, for he also affectionately exhorts them to maintain their unity and walk in the ordinances of Christ, by reminding them that they 'were not joined to the ministry, but to Christ and the Church.'

Let us look at these four questions of Gifford's dying charge.

I. THE QUESTION OF SINGING PSALMS IN PUBLIC WORSHIP. This was not absolutely a Baptist question, for some few Independents refused to allow singing; but the Baptist Churches were agitated by this controversy to their very center, and numbers of them were divided into fragments in consequence. The Bedford Church never had singing in their worship during Gifford's or Bunyan's ministry. It was not till 1690 that it was introduced, and then it was confined to the afternoon service. On October 20th, in that year, at a meeting of the Church, 'it was debated and agreed that Public Singing of Psalms be practiced by the Church, with a caushion [caution] that none others perform it but such as can sing with grace in their hearts according to the Command of Christ' (the Baptist doctrine at that time was that none but the saints should sing); eighteen brethren voted for the change, with two dissenting. Seven years later, June 7th, 1697, the Church consented that 'Brother Chandler (its pastor), and those of his principle, might have Lybertie to sing the praises of God in the morning of the Lord's day as well as the Afternoon.' By the year 1700, three years later, the Church had wrought itself up to the conclusion, 'that there should be liberty to sing at every meeting of preaching, week days as well as Lord's days.' This squeamishness on the question of 'psalms' shows the need of Gifford's dying charge, and that the proportion of Baptist element in the Church was large at the time of his death and the division of his Church imminent on the 'psalm' question. Jukes, afterward pastor of the Church, gives us Chandler's letter on the subject to the members who lived at Gamlingay, in which he says: 'Our brethren have determined that those that are persuaded in their conscience that public singing is an ordinance of God shall practice it on the Lord's day in our meeting at Bedford. Those that are of different judgment have their liberty whether they sing there or no, or whether they be present while we sing, so that they don't turn their backs on other parts of God's worship. Neither is it at all designed to be imposed or proposed to any other meeting, of the Church.' So singing was introduced after a hard struggle.

II. As TO BAPTISM, the Church record shows that there was equal need of the dying pastor's charge on this subject. At that time this question had ceased to disturb the congregations of other Christian denominations, but amongst Baptist Churches its relation to communion had already 'separated' many of them; and twice afterward the question of baptism divided the Bedford Church itself. He very strongly hints, however, in his charge, that at that time some in his Church wanted to make baptism an 'ordinance of Christ,' a test of 'communion' in that Church, and he wanted all who came into its fellowship thereafter 'to solemnly declare' that it should not be made such a test as far as they were concerned. In other words, he called it an 'external' and laid down the very principle for governing the 'communion' of the Church, which Bunyan enforced afterward, showing that he drank in his open-communion principles from Gifford. Indeed; it required little less than a miracle to preserve the peace of such a mixed body. Although Gifford had died only in September, 1655, yet in 1656 we have these entries on the Church record: 'Our sister Linford having, upon the account of Baptism (as she pretended), withdrawn from the congregation, was required to be at the meeting to render a reason for her so doing;' and a month later Brother Crompe, who had been proposed for membership, 'desires to stay still upon the account of baptism.' These records are about as blind as they can well be made, and were probably made blind for a purpose, but they show that

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

Gifford had good reason for his charge, as the little Church was not by any means united on this subject, more than on that of psalms. In some way, which does not appear precisely, they were in serious trouble about baptism.

III. As TO 'ANOINTING WITH OIL;' this was exclusively another Baptist subject, so far as now appears. no other Churches in England but theirs were rent about anointing the sick; but hot debates on this point greatly disturbed many of our Churches there. Several Baptist writers of that day lay great stress upon the anointing with oil, from James 5:14, for the healing of the sick, notably amongst them Grantham, in his 'Ancient Christianity' (Part II, p. 31). Thomas Edwards says that at a meeting in Aldgate, in 1646, Knollys and Jessey anointed a blind woman with oil, and earnestly prayed over her that God would bless this ordinance and restore her sight. Again he says that another woman, named Palmer, living in Smithfield, was visited by William Kiffin and Thomas Patient, when very ill; that they anointed her with oil and prayed for her, when she suddenly recovered, and, going to the meeting, 'proclaimed that she was healed.' He told these stories in his usually exaggerated way and Kiffin called some of his statements in question, but seems not to have denied the substance of them. And certain it is that some Baptists made the anointing of the sick with oil for their recovery, with prayer by the elders, an ordinance to be observed by Church members. Gifford clearly saw that his Church was threatened with division on this subject, and was alarmed accordingly; and D'Anvers wrote a strong treatise against this practice as popish, for the purpose of saving Baptist Churches from destruction thereon.

IV. THE 'LAYING ON OF HANDS' was another burning question in Baptist Churches which troubled Gifford in the hour of death. It arose about the interpretation of Hebrews 6:1,2, in regard to the imposition of hands upon the heads of the immersed between their baptism and their admittance to the Supper; many urging it as an ordinance of Christ in which both ordinary and extraordinary gifts of the Spirit were granted. D'Anvers gives an account of what he considers its introduction amongst Baptists, from an eyewitness, in 1646. Mr. Cornwell preached at Bishopsgate from this passage, when many fell on their knees and were put 'under hands,' as in ordination; this act made a division not only in that Church, but 'amongst many others in the nation, ever since, who have kept that distance from their brethren, not owning the same, as not esteeming or communicating with them as the true Church of God, because defective in one of the beginning principles or foundations of the Christian religion.' Its great defenders were Cornwell, Fisher, Griffith, Rider, Jessey and Grantham; while D'Anvers and others opposed it as unscriptural. Grantham was of the ancient family by that name, in Lincolnshire, of great influence as a scholar, and the Churches in that county readily adopted his views. He says: 'God hath in these days begun to revive this neglected truth in the baptized Churches of this nation.' But the Churches were divided in every direction, especially in Wales and the midland counties in England; and the agitation finally gave rise to the Six Principle Baptist Association in 1690, only two years after Bunyan's death. D'Anvers says that 'some of eminency amongst us have lately so had this conviction, as to plead reformation therein with their brethren, and who, I doubt not, from the true sense of the bitter fruit, even the gall and wormwood that have been brought forth therefrom, will naturally be led to consider the root.'

According to Adam Taylor, Churches broke fellowship with each other on this point, and the storm raged most violently in the region round about Bedford. In 1653, only two years before Gifford's death, the Baptist Church at Westby, Lincolnshire, demanded of the Baptist Church at

Baptists of Great Britain

Fenstanton, in Huntingdonshire, about twenty miles north-east of Bedford, their scriptural authority for admitting any to the Supper who had not submitted to the laying on of hands. Other Churches than Baptist knew nothing whatever of this contest, but their Churches, both open and strict communion alike, were violently rent by it, especially the open Churches, like those of Westby and Fenstanton. If, then; the larger number in Gifford's Church were not Baptists, as Philips avows the majority to have been, why did this issue plant a thorn in his pillow when dying? and how, if he had neither immersed Bunyan nor others in the Ouse, came so many Baptists into his Church? The question concerned none in any Church but those that were immersed. Then it is very significant, too, that this troublesome tenet was bequeathed to Bunyan's term of office as pastor, as we see by his 'Exhortation to Peace and Unity.'

But before quoting him on this point a word may be necessary on the authenticity of this book, as some doubt its genuineness because of its learning and general style, and more because, by insisting upon baptism as indispensable to Church fellowship, it seems to contradict him in other places. Yet the date of its publication, 1688, the very year of his death, indicates the use of his maturest attainments in its composition, while some of these 'learned' features, so called, are found in several of his later works. The fact that Doe did not include it in his edition proves nothing, as several of Bunyan's productions were not found for years after his death, notably amongst them his 'Spiritual Poems,' which did not come to light till twelve years after; even his 'will,' which was left in the house where he died, was not discovered for more than a hundred years afterward. Dr. Stebbins says of the 'Exhortation:' 'We know of no protests uttered by any of his friends tending to deny that it proceeded from his pen...The learning which it is supposed to display is far too slight and accidental to be properly urged as a proof that he did not write it...None, indeed, of the common objections urged against its authenticity seem of much weight.' No one has done fuller justice to Bunyan on the score of intelligence than Copner, the present vicar of the Church at Elstow, where Bunyan rang the bells. He thinks that:

'Before his school days were over, besides the ability to read, write and do sums in elementary arithmetic, he had gained a respectable smattering of Latin, if not also of Greek, and I am not at all sure that in later life he did not somehow or other pick up in addition some small acquaintance with Hebrew, for the sake of obtaining a clearer insight into the meaning of the Jewish Scriptures, which, to judge from his extraordinary knowledge of them, he, without doubt, must have most constantly and industriously studied. It is true that he says in one of his religious treatises, "The Law and Grace Unfolded," that he "never went to school to Aristotle or Plato." He plainly states, however, that he was at a grammar school; and, if so, what grammar school could he have been at but the grammar school at Bedford?...Bunyan, I take it, was for a short time at this Latin school; and certainly he frequently uses Latin words and expressions in his works. For instance, he employs the expression *primum mobile* for the soul, and "old Mors" for death, and speaking of "the river of life," in the book of the Revelation, he calls it *aqua vita*. Again, in his "Divine Emblems," he names the sun *Sol*, and makes use elsewhere in several places of such Latin expressions as *probatum est*, *nolens volens*, *caveat*, and *verbatim*.'

Bunyan uses no more learned terms in his 'Exhortation' than he does in several of his other works; even in his rude verses he uses the word 'Machiavel,' as well as in his 'Exhortation.' But while in that work he makes more than eighty citations from the Scriptures, he uses the phrase 'divide et impera' – divide and rule – once, and *terra incognita* twice. Besides, he refers to classical stories three times, but he refers to Bible history as many scores of times.

These considerations, taken in connection with the general Bunyanian style of the work, seen

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

in such extracts as the following, give strong internal evidence of its genuineness. After speaking fully of faith, baptism and holiness of life, Bunyan writes on this very subject of laying on of hands and its necessity, that there 'Are such things as relate to the well-being and not to the being of the Churches: as laying on of hands in the primitive times upon believers, by which they did receive the gifts of the Spirit; this, I say, was for the increase and edifying of the body, and not that thereby they might become of the body of Christ, for that they were before. And do not think that I believe laying on of hands was no apostolical institution, because I say men are not thereby made members of Christ's body, or because I say that it is not essential to Church communion. Why should I be thought to be against a tire in the chimney, because I say it must not be in the thatch of the house? Consider then how pernicious a thing it is to make every doctrine, though true, the bond of communion. This is that which destroys unity, and by this rule all men must be perfect before they can be at peace...Let me appeal to such, and demand of them, if there was not a time, since they believed and were baptized, wherein they did not believe laying on of hands a duty? and did they not then believe, and do they not still believe, they are members of the body of Christ?' There is not a more marked Bunyanesque passage in his writings than this; and in so far as that it disallows the imposition of hands on the baptized as a bond of communion, it agrees precisely with Gifford's charge, for Bunyan put it just where he puts baptism in that respect. While at the same time he holds it as an 'apostolical institution' for the 'edifying' of the Church, which carries the implication that the Bedford Church practiced it on the immersed. This accounts for the further fact, that Gifford did not charge the body to eschew it or to put it away, but only not to 'separate' from the Church on that account; a great evil, he says, 'which some have committed – and that through a zeal for God, yet not according to knowledge.' Even under his ministry it seems that some had separated from his Church on these questions. If Gifford and Bunyan were not Baptists, and a large part of the Bedford Church with them, they were strange human anachronisms, to be perplexed in this way with these four burning Baptist questions; and Gifford would have had as much reason for charging them in death not to choose a Pope as to give the charge that he did, for the one would have been as opposite as the other, had they not been in danger on these four disputed points.

Jessey appears to have been Bunyan's ideal of a true Baptist, and it is not a little singular that their views on this subject should have been precisely alike. In a letter which he and his Church, in London, wrote to the Church at Hexham, in October, 1653, they say:

'We are not wanting to propound these six things, that should once be laid down, they are spoke of in Heb.6:1,2, and we endeavour to inform all therein we judge faithful being propounded to us. But if some cannot receive what is held out about baptism, laying on of bands, or singing, etc., and yet show forth teachableness and peaceableness, we dare not exclude such from this visible kingdom of God merely for weaknesse' sake. Some grounds for such practice are laid down in that book (written by Jessey) called Storehouse.'

Another set of facts bear as directly upon this subject as the truth of history can make them. For five years, from 1663 to 1668, there is another significant break in the records of the Bedford Church. After 1662, under the Act of Uniformity, the line between the Conformists and Non-conformists became broader than ever, and the latter were to be furiously stamped out by the former. During these five years and a half, persecution had compelled the Church to hold its meetings when and where it could, but in October, 1668, the record begins again. Under this stress some of the

Baptists of Great Britain

members had quailed, and the after processes of discipline show the pain which the Church endured in consequence and the causes thereof. The Conventicle Act expired March 2, 1668, but was re-enacted

April 11, 1670, about which time the Church of England had a hard struggle for life in and around Bedford. Foster, the Commissary of the Archdeacon's Court, had all he could do to resist the innovations upon the Episcopal Church; in a year and a half he held four courts at Ampthill and four at Bedford, in which he punished his opponents. His courts were crowded with persons who were

'Tried, excommunicated, or imprisoned for refusing to pay church rates, dues or tithes; for refusing to come to church for more than a month, FOR NOT HAVING THEIR CHILDREN BAPTIZED, for being present at the burial of an excommunicated person, for being at and keeping a conventicle, for refusing to receive the sacrament at Easter, for not being church-ed, for being absent from church six months, etc.'

Even the under-jailer at Bedford, who had charge of Bunyan in prison, refused to pay his own church-rate; and Foster passed judgment in two years upon 1,400 cases of these sorts in the County of Bedford. Bedford was in the diocese of Lincoln, the records of which See show, that in 1669-70 there was a conventicle there, in the parish of St. Paul's, numbering about thirty, and it calls four members of the Bunyan meeting by name.

The same record reports for those years in Bedford and its vicinity, a numbering of the Lord's people, with this result: At Pavenham, 40 Baptists; at Stevington, 30; at Blunham, 50; at Edworth, 20; at Northill, 12; at Caddington, 40; and at HoughtonRegis, 30. The total returns in the diocesan records showing, of Independents, 220; of Quakers, 390; and of Baptists, 277, there being 57 more Baptists than Independents.

No sooner does the Bedford Church-record fairly re-open, but we find the question of baptism all alive again, as a practical question. In 1669 the Church, open communion as it was, felt obliged to solemnly guard its ordinances. Under date of January 14, a Mr. Sewster being crooked on the subject of communion, the Church ordered that 'Brother Bunyan and Brother Man should reason with Mr. Sewster about his desire of breaking bread with this congregation without sitting down as a member with us.' This clearly indicates that at that time membership in the Church was necessary to a place at its table, and that in some shape baptism entered into the question of communion with the Church. Notwithstanding, this must have been a hard job for 'Brother Bunyan,' he and 'Brother Man' brought Mr. Sewster to his sober senses on this subject, for several times thereafter the records speak of Sewster as a useful member of the Church, and the inference is that he had been a pretty stubborn strict communist till Brother Bunyan straightened him out. At the same meeting it was voted that 'Brother Bunyan should discourse with Sister Landy about those scruples that lye upon her conscience about breaking bread with this congregation.' All must regret that these 'scruples' are not more fully stated; but on Feb. 25th, Bunyan reported her to the Church 'as willing to receive instruction,' and his labors as a committee were continued to endeavor her further satisfaction.' The same case came up again June 18th, when 'Was our Sister Landy withdrawn from. The causes were for that she had withdrawn communion from the saints, had despised gifts from the Church, had taught her children to play at cards, and remained impenitent after several admonitions.' Taken altogether, this case looks much as if her trump card was that terrible notion of 'Close Communion.' She had 'withdrawn from communion,' they had 'endeavored' her satisfaction, on professing her willingness to be instructed, but she had withdrawn communion with the Church, and 'had despised

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

gifts in the Church,' which expression smacks strongly of opposition on her part to the laying on of hands, which Bunyan says he believed was an 'apostolic institution.' The record of the meeting also contains a very suggestive form of nomenclature seldom found outside of Baptist Churches, saying: 'The congregation also having taken into consideration the desire of Gamlingay friends to joyne with us, did agree that next meeting they should come over and give in their experience,' and those friends came fifteen miles to pass that Baptist ordeal.

Rev. John Jukes, a predecessor of Rev. John Brown, says in his 'History of the Church,' that John Burton, pastor between Grifford and Bunyan, 'like his predecessor, was a Baptist.' Bunyan was a deacon under his ministry, and on the death of Burton the Church offered the pastorate to Rev. Mr. Wheeler, who declined. But in October, 1663, 'Rev. Samuel Fenn and Rev. John Whiteman, both ministers of their own body and of the Baptist denomination, were ordained joint pastors.' The meeting at which Bunyan was called to the pastorate was held Jan. 21st, 1672, and at that meeting seven others were examined and called to the work of the ministry, after the Church had solemnly approved their gifts. One of these was Rev. NEHEMIAH COXE, D.D., whose history throws much light upon the character of the Bedford Church. He was a native of Bedford and was received into the fellowship of this Church June 14th, 1669, while Bunyan was one of its preachers, but nearly two years before he became its pastor. There is every reason for believing that he was immersed, and probably by Bunyan himself, as he became a Baptist minister of great note, without any change of ecclesiastical or doctrinal sentiments, so far as is known. Hence, a brief sketch of him will be acceptable here, for showing what sort of men the Bedford Church raised up at that time. Wilson, no mean judge of men, pronounces him 'an excellent and judicious divine.' In April, 1673, he was called to the pastoral office at Hitchin, near Bedford, but declined the invitation. Scott says: 'The Baptist congregation at Hitchin, in Hertfordshire, is supposed to have been founded by Bunyan;' and he calls 'John Wilson, the first pastor of the Baptist flock at Hitchin.' Jukes says, that 'Nehemiah Coxe is said to have been imprisoned at Bedford for preaching the Gospel.' The Bedford Church records tell us, that on May 7th, 1674, when Bunyan was pastor, Coxe was brought before the Church for 'several words and practices that might justly be censured, as having a tendency to make rents and divisions in the congregation, for which he expressed himself as repentant and sorry.' With their usual kindness in cases of this sort, the records leave us in the dark as to the nature of his offense, yet they imply that it related to some point of faith or practice about which there were differences of opinion in the body, and as he was a stout Baptist, they, most likely, had reference to some Baptist differences. Afterward, he settled as pastor of the Baptist Church at Cranfield, in Bedfordshire, and then, in 1675, as assistant pastor in London, to the Church in Petty France, which he served till his death, in 1688. He was an able writer, and published a reply to Dr. Whiston's defense of infant baptism, also several other works. Sutcliff says that he was a cordwainer at Craufield, and when brought to trial at the Bedford Assizes, he pleaded his cause first in Greek and then in Hebrew. The judge expressed his surprise, remarking that none there could answer him. Coxe claimed the right to plead in what language he pleased. The judge dismissed him, saying to the bar 'Well, the cordwainer has wound us all up, gentlemen.' This story is told also by Dr. Stoughton, in his 'Life of John Howard.'

The following cases present the meaning of Bunyan, when he said that 'some were rent and dismembered from us' on the communion issue, and also demonstrates that these were not handled with overweening tenderness. So fixed did he and his Church become, that they refused to give their

Baptists of Great Britain

immersed members letters of dismission to strict Baptist Churches. In 1672, Mrs. Tilney, a lady of high standing in Bedford and a member of the Church, who had suffered much for Christ before her removal to London, asked for a letter to the Church there, where her son-in-law, Mr. Blakey, was pastor. They refused it on the ground that the London Church made immersion an indispensable condition of membership. This shows that she was immersed as a member in Bedford, or a letter would not have taken her into Blakey's Church, albeit she could have been received into his Church on her experience and baptized without a letter. In writing to her under date of July 19th, Bunyan tells her that the Bedford Church required her to 'forbear to sit down at the table with any without the consent of our brethren...Weshall consent to your sitting down with Brother Cockain, Brother Griffith, or Brother Palmer. So that the Bedford Church, in Bunyan's time, was open communion to all but the members of strict communion Baptist Churches. After Bunyan's death, these Baptist questions kept this Church in perpetual excitement. Henry Mann desired a letter to an immersed Church, which was denied him, Jan. 6th, 1695. 'Sister Stover, December, 1700, desired a letter of dismission to the General Baptist Church in Hart Street, London, John Piggott pastor; which was denied, because of the 'received principles and practices of this Church.' Ann Tutzell was refused a letter, March 1, 1720, to the Particular Baptist Church meeting in Currier's Hall, London, John Skepp, pastor: 'Because he and his people were for communion with baptized believers only, and that by immersion.' She was evidently an immersed member of the Bedford Church.

Ebenezer Chandler was Bunyan's first successor, and Samuel Sanderson his second, who, personally, were Pedobaptists. It is of the first of these that Jukes says, it appears that the principle of this Church was 'defined by Gifford. its practice as conformed to that principle was determined by Chandler...All Bunyan's teaching had, no doubt, served to increase the attachment between his brethren to Gifford's principle, and to prepare them for Chandler's practice.' And what was Chandler's practice but the introduction of infant baptism into the body. Jukes gives us this letter from Chandler, written Feb. 23d, 1691, to those members who lived at Gamlingay and formed a branch Church there:

'With respect to infant baptism, I have my liberty to baptize infants without making it my business to promote it among others, and every member is to have his liberty in regard to believer's baptism; only to forbear discourse and debate on it, that may have a tendency to break the peace of the Church. When thought expedient the Church doth design to choose an administrator of believer's baptism. We do not mean to make baptism, whether of believers or infants, a bar to communion. Only the Church hath promised that none shall hereafter, to my grief, or trouble, or dissatisfaction, be admitted.'

This letter tells its own story, namely: that heretofore the Church had not christened infants, but now Chandler had got from the Church 'liberty' to do so; and that he had been troubled and grieved to administer 'believer's baptism,' but now another administrator was to be chosen to that end. In reply, the Gamlingay brethren answered: 'We only desire to have liberty to speak or preach believer's baptism, if the Lord shall set it upon our hearts. Yet, with that tenderness as being far from any such designs as do tend in the least to the breaking the peace of the Church, and do heartily grant our Brother Chandler the same liberty to speak or preach infant baptism, provided with equal tenderness.'

Down to that time, Gifford, Burton, Banyan and Chandler had administered 'believer's baptism.' It had grieved, troubled and dissatisfied Chandler to do such a thing, but now he was bent on lugging

Chapter 6 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Relations to the Baptists

in infant baptism, to the exclusion of believer's baptism so far as he was concerned, for he would baptize no more believers. He says, however, that the Church would choose an administrator to do that, etc. Thomas Cooper, 'a private member of the Church,' says Mr. Brown was chosen for this work. This evinces their firm determination not to be brow-beaten out of the practice. In an appendix to a Funeral Sermon for Rev. Joshua Symonds, another pastor of the Church, John Ryland, Jr. says:

'One, Mr. Cooper, baptized the adults in Mr. Chandler's time.' Wilson says, that under Sanderson's ministry.

'Peace and harmony were preserved in the society notwithstanding some diversity of sentiment, particularly about baptism, a subject which he never brought forward for discussion, nor did he ever baptize any children in public; through fear of moving that controversy. He always dreaded a division, and studied the things that made for peace. By his prudence and good temper he preserved the congregation from those animosities which took place after his death.'

Sanderson understood the metal of the Church too well to force the high-handed measures of Chandler. We have already noticed what those 'animosities' were. Joshua Symonds became their pastor in 1765, he also being a Pedobaptist at the time. But the old Baptist leaven, which had been in the Church from its foundation, kept fermenting, and in February, 1772, he asked the Church to relieve him from the necessity of baptizing infants or sprinkling adults, avowed himself a Baptist, and immersed his wife in the river Ouse. The Church agreed to consider his wishes for a year, but in less time a minority of the congregation left and formed a distinctly Pedobaptist congregation, which chose Thomas Smith as its pastor. John Howard, the philanthropist, who at that time was living near Bedford, went with the new body. The Baptist majority remained with Symonds, the Church numbering 127 members, a baptistery was built in the chapel, and for some years infant baptism was again banished from the congregation. The Church also sent out several pastors to other Churches amongst the Baptists, two being Mr. Read, of Chichester, and John Nichols, of Kimbolton. Jukes says that after the death of Symonds, who served the Church for many years, it was supplied by two Baptists and one Pedobaptist, but it could unite on neither of them for pastor, and when it gave up both of them, it settled Mr. Hillyard, after a year's trial. The old contest on baptism still waged, however, and in process of time a second division took place, and a new Baptist Church went out, formed upon the strict communion principle, which it maintained for many years. It is now known as the Mill Street Church, and numbers 154 members. Its present practice is after the open communion order, but receiving only immersed believers into Church fellowship. The Bunyan Meeting, which owes its primitive vigor to him and bears his name, has always had very strong feeling on the subject of baptism and is not entirely free from it today, as is evinced by the fact, that it still retains its old baptistery, which is occasionally used for the immersion of believers still, although it now ranks as a Congregational Church, but is returned in the *Baptist Handbook* for 1886 as in membership with the Baptist Union of Great Britain and Ireland, and is marked under the 'Union Churches,' a term that denotes 'a Church in which Baptists and Pedobaptists are united.'

Baptisteries were not common in English dissenting chapels in the seventeenth century, especially if a running stream was near, as at Bedford; even in London they were not known until late in the eighteenth century. The baptisms that took place all through the early history of this Church, from Grifford down, were celebrated in the river Ouse, where Bunyan himself was dipped.

Baptists of Great Britain

In a letter dated May 21, 1886, Mr. Brown has kindly furnished the following facts:

'The Baptistery in the old chapel, pulled down in 1849, was fixed there about 1796, as may be inferred from a letter from Thomas Kilpin to Dr. Rippon, dated Jan. 29th, 1796: "My father, after many years' deliberation, has at length made up his mind on the Ordinance of Baptism, and was a few months since, with my sister (about eighteen years) and Mr. Alien, baptized in our new Baptistery" (Dr. Rippon's Correspondence Additional MSS. British Museum, No. 25,387, fol. 376). I have seen it mentioned elsewhere that John Kilpin, the person here referred to, was the first baptized in this baptistery. In Mr. Symond's time, as he mentions in a MS. Diary, the baptisms took place in the river. He says that his wife was the first person baptized thus after his change of view (421), and that as the river was new to him for this purpose, she was carried away and nearly drowned. This would be about twenty years earlier than 1796.' The Rev. John Jukes tells us that he wrote his history of the Church in 1849, to aid in procuring money for the erection of the new chapel; when this second baptistery, prepared by the old Bunyan congregation, was put into the new building, for as late as that time this Church would not dispense with a baptistery. In a letter from Rev. Thomas Watts, present pastor of the Mill Street Church, dated Bedford, May 31st, 1886, he says: 'There is a baptistery in the Bunyan Meeting-house. I baptized two persons in it three years ago.' It seems, then, that the Bedford Baptists go to get the good old- fashioned immersion from the Bunyan center yet. It is, however, of the old baptistery that Robert Philip spake thus in 1839: 'I have been unable to identify the spot in the lilled Ouse, where Bunyan was baptized. It may have been the well-known spot where his successors administered baptism, until a baptistery was introduced into the chapel. The old table over that baptistery is an extraordinary piece of furniture, which for size and strength might have been the banquet-table of a baronial hall.'

Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles

Aside from all expression of Bunyan's principles on his own part, it is readily seen why the universal decision of history accounts him a Baptist. But aside from this, there is a certain philosophy about the genius of Bunyan which allies his life so closely and openly with Baptist principles, that it has not escaped the eye of even casual observers. With all Philip's unfriendliness to Baptists, he discovers this at a glance, becomes enamored of Bunyan as a Baptist, and says:

'No one surely can regret that he was baptized by immersion. That was just the mode calculated to impress him – practiced as it usually then was in rivers. He felt the sublimity of the whole scene at the Ouse, as well as its solemnity. Gifford's eye may have realized nothing on the occasion but the meaning of the ordinance, but Bunyan saw Jordan in the liliated Ouse, and John the Baptist in the holy minister, and almost the Dove in the passing birds; while the sun-struck waters flushed around and over him, as if the Shekinah had descended upon them. For let it not be thought that he was indifferent about his baptism because he was indignant against Strict Baptists, and laid more stress upon the doctrine it taught than upon its symbolic significancy. He loved immersion, although he hated the close communion of the Baptist Churches...Bunyan could not look back upon his baptism in infancy (if he was baptized then) with either our emotions or convictions. We think, therefore, that he did wisely in being re-baptized. I think he did right in preferring immersion to sprinkling, not, however, that I believe immersion to be right, or sprinkling wrong, according to any scriptural rule, for there is none, but because the former suited his temperament best, inasmuch as it gave him most to do, and thus most to think of and feel. For that is the best mode of baptism to any man which most absorbs his own mind with its meaning and design.'

With an eye quite as clear and sharp, this writer discovers an intimate connection between his immersion and the after thoughts and actions of his life, which he expresses thus: 'Had he not been a Baptist, he would have written little more than his 'Pilgrim's Progress' and 'Holy War;' because he knew that profounder theologians than he ever pretended to be, were publishing quite enough, both doctrinal and practical, for every nation to read; but he knew also that the Baptists, as a body, would take a lesson from him more readily, than from an Episcopalian, a Presbyterian, or an Independent; or at least that he would be read by many who would not read Owen or Baxter. In like manner, had he not been more than a Baptist, he would have written less than he did.' 'Bunyan's adherence,' he continues, 'and attachments to the Baptists, notwithstanding the attacks made upon him, did him great credit. He was also a loser by identifying himself with their name and cause at the Restoration. But he never flinched nor repented. And in this he truly did them justice. Their cause was good and their name bad only by misrepresentation.'

Southey seems to sympathize with this view, in the words: 'Both the world and the Church are indebted to the Baptists for the ministry of Banyan. But for them he might have lived and died a tinker.' And Dean Stanley unites with them both, when he says: 'Neither amongst the dead nor the living who have adorned the Baptist name, is there any before whom other Churches bow their heads so reverently as he who in this place derived his chief spiritual inspiration from them.' But Cheever, who has not been equaled as an interpreter of Bunyan, unless by Offer, goes further than this. He sees a direct act of divine Providence in Bunyan's association with the Baptists and writes:

'To make the highest jewel of the day as a Christian, a minister and a writer, Divine Providence selected a member of the then obscure, persecuted and despised sect of the Baptists. He took John Bunyan: but he did not remove him from the Baptist Church of Christ into what men said was the only true Church; he kept him shining in that Baptist candlestick all his life-time...All gorgeous and prelatical establishments God passed by, and selected the greatest marvel of grace and genius in all the modern age from the Baptist Church in

Baptists of Great Britain

Bedford.'

More than one passage in Bunyan's writings confirm the view of Philip concerning the deep influence of immersion upon his mind, but one will suffice, in which, far beyond the common conception, he puts forth the opinion, that the Lord's Supper as well as baptism symbolizes Christ's overwhelming agony. This he finds implied in his own words: 'Ye shall indeed endure the baptism [immersion in suffering] which I endure.' Hence, Bunyan exclaims: 'That Scripture, "Do this in remembrance of me," was made a very precious word unto me, when I thought of that blessed ordinance, the Lord's Supper, for by it the Lord did come down upon my conscience with the discovery of his death for my sins; and as I then felt, plunged me in the virtue of the same.' Philip says: 'There seems to me in this passage an intended use of terms which should express the views of both classes in his Church on the mode of baptism;' and this may be implied in his words. But Bunyan found his full type of baptism in the Deluge. He says: 'The Flood was a type of three things. First, of the enemies of the Church. Second, a type of the water-baptism under the New Testament. Third, of the last overthrow of the world.' Again, in his 'Exposition of the First Ten Chapters of Genesis,' he remarks: 'That was the time then that God had appointed to try his servant Noah by the waters of the flood: in which time he was so effectually crucified to the things of this world, that he was as if he was never more to enjoy the same. Wherefore Peter maketh mention of this estate of his; he tells us, it was even like unto our baptism; wherein we profess ourselves dead to the world, and alive to God by Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 3:21.'

As Mr. Brown simply gives voice to a vague and loose notion which is afloat concerning Bunyan's fixed views of baptism when he says that 'he had no very strong feeling any way' on that subject, it is but just to allow him to say for himself what he did believe, and then all can judge whether or not he treated that subject as a matter of indifference. In a 'Reason for My Practice' Bunyan writes of ordinances: 'I believe that Christ hath ordained but two in his Church, namely, water baptism and the Supper of the Lord; both which are of excellent use to the Church in this world, they being to us representations of the death and resurrection of Christ, and are, as God shall make them, helps to our faith therein. But I count them not the fundamentals of Christianity nor grounds or rule to communion with saints.' Great injustice is done to him in the heedlessness which applies these words only to baptism and not to the Supper. What he says here of one ordinance he says of the other; namely, that they stand on a ground of equal excellency, and that he did not count either of them a fundamental of Christianity. He neither idolized the Supper nor treated baptism with indifference, that is the work of his interpreters; but he says that Jesus ordained the two equally; and to say that he had strong feeling about one of Christ's ordinances and no strong feeling about the other, is to put words into his mouth which he never uttered. In his 'Divine Emblems' he says, that he put the two ordinances of the Gospel upon a parity as to authority, and revered them equally. Two sacraments I do believe there be, Baptism and the Supper of the Lord. Both mysteries divine, which do to me, by God's appointment, benefit afford.'

He never held the popularly current Quaker view, ascribed to him, that immersion is unimportant and so showed that baptism sat loosely upon him; that is simply what those who misrepresent him hold themselves and wish to find in his writings. But it is not there. He held that immersion on a man's personal faith in Christ is the duty of every man who believes in Christ; that when men receive 'water-baptism' they should be immersed, because there is no other water-baptism but

Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles

immersion; but he also held that 'water-baptism is not a precedent to the Lord's Supper.' He says as plainly as his use of terse English could, that neither baptism nor the Supper form a 'rule to communion with saints,' and this proposition cannot be taken by halves, without the grossest injustice to him. As it regards baptism and the Supper, there was not the least shade of difference between him and the strict communion Baptists, excepting, that he did not hold baptism to be an act precedent to the breaking of bread at the Lord's table, while they did. He constantly uses the phrases 'water baptism' and 'those of the baptized way,' and the construction is forced upon his words that this form of expression puts a slight upon the immersion of believers. But the strictest of strict Baptists of his day, Kiffin amongst them, used the same phraseology as freely as he did. What other could any of them use? The Quakers all over England, and especially about Bedford, where they abounded, compelled the Baptists to use these forms of utterance in order to make themselves understood. The Friends were constantly using the terms 'spirit-baptism,' and 'baptism of the Spirit,' and the Baptists had no choice left but to use these chosen phrases. Bunyan said to the Quakers most significantly: 'The Kanters are neither for the ordinance of baptism with water, nor breaking of bread, and are not you the same?' In regard to what constituted 'water-baptism,' he had no difficulty, for he held that it was dipping and only dipping, and so, only those who had been immersed he called 'of the baptized way.' He says of the Baptists and not of the Pedobaptists, that he would 'persuade my brethren of the baptized way not to hold too much thereupon,' and again: 'I put a difference between my brethren of the baptized way. I know some are more moderate than some;' that is, he drew a line between the strict and open communionists. But there is not a passage in the sixty books which he wrote, in which he says that the Pedobaptists are of the 'baptized way,' and protests: 'I would not teach men to break the least of the commandments of God.' So far from laxity, this is his pungent teaching on this point: 'God never ordained significative ordinances, such as baptism and the Lord's Supper or the like, for the sake of water or of bread and wine; nor yet because he takes any delight that we are dipped in water or eat that bread; but they are ordained to minister to us by the aptness of the elements through our sincere partaking of them, further knowledge of the death, burial and resurrection of Christ, and of our death and resurrection by him to newness of life. Wherefore, he that eateth and believeth not, and he that is baptized and is not dead to sin and walketh not in newness of life, neither keepeth these ordinances nor pleaseth God.'

Again, no Baptist ever insisted more earnestly than Bunyan, that faith and regeneration must precede baptism. In his 'Reason for My Practice,' he says that a visible saint 'Is not made so by baptism; for he must be a visible saint before, else he ought not to be baptized. Acts 8:37; 9:17; 16:33.' Then he gives this answer to the question. Why the New Testament saints were baptized? 'That their faith by that figure might be strengthened in the death and resurrection of Christ, and that themselves might see that they have professed themselves dead, and buried, and risen with him to newness of life...He should know by that circumstance that he hath received forgiveness of sin, if his faith be as true as his being baptized is felt by him.' Yet again he says, that he who has not the doctrine of baptism 'ought to have it before he be convicted it is his duty to be baptized, or else he playeth the hypocrite. There is, therefore, no difference between that believer that is and he that is not yet baptized with water, but only his going down into the water, there to perform an outward ceremony the substance of which he hath already.' Still further he writes: 'That our denomination of believers, and of our receiving the doctrine of the Lord Jesus, is not to be reckoned from our baptism is evident, because according to our notion of it, they only that have before received the

Baptists of Great Britain

doctrine of the Gospel, and so show it us by their profession of faith, they only ought to be baptized.' And finally on this point he writes: 'The Scriptures have declared that this faith gives the professors of it a right to baptism, as in the case of the eunuch (Acts 8) when he demanded why he might not be baptized? Philip answereth if he believed with all his heart he might; the eunuch thereupon professing Christ was baptized.' Then he sums up all in these words: 'It is one thing for him that administereth to baptize in the name of Jesus, another thing for him that is the subject by that to be baptized into Jesus. Baptizing into Christ is rather the act of the faith of him that is baptized, than his going into water and coming out again.'

This is the way in which disinterested and broad-minded interpreters understand Bunyan's Baptist principles. The learned Dr. Stebbing, unwilling either to conceal, to add to, or to accept Bunyan's positions, says in the round frankness of a man who has no ends to serve but those of the truth:

'Bunyan belonged to a sect peculiarly strict on the subject of communion. He honestly kept him faithful to its principles; his charity made him inconsistent with its severity. Baptism was regarded by his associates as furnishing a bond of union indispensable to Christian brotherhood, and unattainable by other means...It was the baptism of adults, capable of repentance and faith, and actually repenting and believing, which alone could fulfill these conditions...He had, therefore, first to defend himself against the charge of unfaithfulness to his party, and then to state the principles, which he thought might form a safer and broader groundwork of Christian communion. In the former part of his task he had only to prove that neither his practice nor his profession had altered from the time of his conversion; that he had ever spoken with all plainness and sincerity on the topics in dispute, and had shown himself as little willing to indulge error among his brethren, as to let truth suffer from his own fear of an enemy. No one could gainsay the defense of his integrity.'

Dr. Stebbing had no sympathy with Bunyan in rejecting baptism as a necessary precedent to the reception of the Supper, because in this he thought his teaching contrary to the New Testament. He holds him at fault for speaking in his writings 'with unhappy violence,' but says that 'he shared largely in the prejudices of the party to which he belonged,' and excuses him therefore on the ground that 'the whole of England was convulsed with a controversy on baptism.'

That history has accorded to Bunyan his proper ecclesiastical place in numbering him with the Baptists is clear, from the place which he assigns to himself in their ranks, and from the place which his most intimate friends as well as his sturdiest opponents amongst the Baptists assigned him. The 'Britannica' says that he had a dispute with some of the chiefs in the sect to which he belonged, and that 'they loudly pronounced him a false brother.' A great controversy on communion was rife amongst the Baptists, about the time that Bunyan took the pastoral charge of the Bedford Church, the leaders being Henry Jessey and Bunyan on one side, and William Kiffin, Henry Denne, Thomas Paul and Henry D'Anvers on the other side; this whole dispute, from one end to the other, was a family quarrel amongst the English Baptists, and none but Baptists took part therein. As nearly as can be ascertained, Bunyan published his 'Confession of Faith' in 1672, in which he first fully printed his views on open communion. In 1673 D'Anvers, in his work on baptism, adds a postscript answering this Confession, and refers to Thomas Paul's 'Serious Reflections' thereon, also published in 1673, and written jointly by Paul and Kiffin. These Reflections apparently indulged in serious personalities upon Bunyan as one of themselves, whose novel doctrines threatened to destroy Baptist Churches, and threw blame on Bunyan as a Baptist; to which he takes serious exception in his reply, known as 'Difference of Judgment,' 1673. This was followed by Kiffin's 'Sober Discourse of Right

Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles

to Church Communion,' proving that no un-baptized person may be regularly admitted to the Lord's Supper.' The earliest edition of the *Reflections* and the *Serious Discourse* now known to exist, bear date 1681, both of them bearing some marks of being second editions, and the only copy of Paul and Kiffin's joint work, known to exist, is in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. In the 'Preface to the Reflections, signed by W. K.,' who uses these words:

'I suppose the Author of the Confession,...who himself is against the baptizing of children and for the baptizing of believers upon their profession of faith in Christ, makes it none of the least of his arguments, why he is against children's baptism, than this – namely, that there being no president [precedent] or example in the Scriptures for children's baptism, therefore children ought not to be baptized.'

The writer then proceeds to argue from the admitted facts of Bunyan's principles and practices, that he should apply the same tests to the communion of non-baptized persons, namely, there being no Scripture "president" [precedent] or example of such custom. Could the writers of this book have said this, if he had gone to St. Cuthbert's one year before, to have his child christened? Rather they had branded him as an apostate, instead of claiming him as one of their own denomination but in error. In the body of the book there is the amplest evidence that Bunyan is treated by them as a Baptist. Part of the grief which they express is, that a Baptist should reason as he had done, after his long standing in the Baptist ministry. In his reply, 'Difference of Judgment about Water Baptism no Bar to Communion,' he accepts their alleged facts with their reasonings and makes the following defense of his new position as a Baptist:

'That I deny the ordinance of baptism, or that I have placed one piece of an argument against it (though they feign it), is quite without color of truth. All I say is, that the Church of Christ hath not warrant to keep out of the communion the Christian that is discovered to be a visible saint of the word, the Christian that walketh according to his light with God...I own water baptism to be God's ordinance, but I make no idol of it.'

The London brethren charged Bunyan with stirring up strife in their Churches there on the communion question, to which he replies: 'Next, you tell us of your "goodly harmony in London;" or of the amicable Christian correspondency betwixt those of divers persuasions there, until my turbulent and mutineering spirit got up.' Then he charges, that they had no 'Church communion' with their brethren, but only such as they 'were commanded to have with every brother that walketh disorderly...Touching Mr. Jessey's judgment in the case in hand, you know it condemneth your practice...For your insinuating my abusive and unworthy behavior as the cause of the brethren's attempting to break our Christian communion, it is not only false but ridiculous; false, for they have attempted to make me also one of their disciples, and sent to me and for me for that purpose. (This attempt began above sixteen years ago.) Besides, it is ridiculous. Surely their pretended order, and as they call it, our disorder was the cause; or they must render themselves very malicious, to seek the overthrow of a whole congregation, for, if it had been so, the unworthy behavior of one.' Again and again he alleges, that his strict brethren had tried to divide his Church and to separate him from it, and so to seek 'the overthrow of a whole congregation.' Whether this charge were correct or not, it would have been simply ridiculous for Kiffin and Paul to have made the attempt or to have thought of it, in the case of a man who was not esteemed by them as a Baptist. On this subject he says, that 'it is one of the things which the Lord hateth, to sow discord among brethren. Yet many

Baptists of Great Britain

years' experience we have had of these mischievous attempts, as also have others in other places, as may be instanced, if occasion require it, and that especially by those of the rigid way of our brethren, the Baptists, so called...Therefore, when I could no longer forbear, I thought good to present to public view the warrantableness of our holy communion, and the unreasonableness of their seeking to break us to pieces.' In another place he says: 'Mine own self they have endeavored to persuade to forsake the Church; some they have sent quite off from us, others they have attempted and attempted to divide and break off from us, but by the mercy of God, have been hitherto prevented.' Admitting this full charge, is it reasonable to suppose that they tried to get a Pedobaptist minister to leave a Pedobaptist congregation and to unite with them, on the ground that they were strict communionists, and that some open communion Pedobaptists did leave and go to the strict Baptists on that issue?

Kiffin and others put several inconvenient questions to Bunyan which it would have been impertinent in the highest degree to have put to him had they not understood that they were reasoning with one of their own sect. As for example: 'I ask your heart whether popularity and applause of variety of professors be not in the bottom of what you have said; that hath been your snare to pervert the right ways of the Lord, and to lead others into a path wherein we can find none of the footsteps of the flock of the first ages?' Bunyan replies: 'I have been tempted to do what I have done by a provocation of sixteen long years.' 2d Quest. 'Have you dealt brotherly, or like a Christian, to throw so much dirt upon your brethren, in print, in the face of the world, when you had opportunity to converse with them of reputation amongst us before printing, being allowed the liberty by them at the same time for you to speak among them?' He answers that he had 'thrown no dirt,' and 'as to book, it was printed before I spake with any of you, or knew whether I might be accepted of you. As to them of reputation among you, I know others not one whit inferior to them, and have my liberty to consult with whom I like best.' In 1674 the Bedford Church-record shows, that his Church consulted with Jessey's old Church on the communion question, 'that we may the better know what to do as to our Sister Martha Cumberland.' 3d Quest. 'Doth your carriage answer the law of love or civility, when the brethren used means to send for you for a conference, and their letter was received by you, that you should go out again from the city (London), after knowledge of their desires, and not vouchsafe a meeting with them, when the glory of God and the vindication of so many Churches is concerned?' Bunyan's answer: 'The reason why I came not amongst you was partly because I consulted mine own weakness, and counted not myself, being a dull-headed man, able to engage so many of the chief of you, as I was then informed, intended to meet me. I also feared, in personal disputes, heats and bitter contentions might arise, a thing my spirit hath not pleasure in. I feared also that both myself and words might be misrepresented.' 4th Quest. 'Is it not the spirit of Diotrephes of old in you, who loved to have the pre-eminence, that you are so bold to keep out all the brethren that are not of your mind in this matter, from having any entertainment in the churches or meetings to which you belong, though you yourself have not been denied the like liberty among them that are contrary-minded to you. Is this the way of your retaliation? Or are you afraid lest the truth should invade your quarters?' Bunyan answered by asking where Diotrephes was, 'in those days that our brethren of the baptized way would not recognize those who were as good as themselves;' as to allowing the strict brethren 'to preach in our assemblies, the reason is, because we cannot yet prevail with them to repent of their Church rending principles.'

The entire ground and spirit of these questions and answers show that the combatants were of

Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles

one sect, and so understood themselves to be, and this fact is confirmed when Kiffin suggests that Bunyan's principles and practices were against 'Episcopalians, Presbyterians, and Independents,' as well as Baptists, and asks: 'Do you delight to have your hand against every man?'

In a word, his Baptist brethren treated him throughout the whole dispute on the communion question as a Baptist who was inconsistent in his positions, and who was playing into the hands of the Pedobaptists, whether he designed this or not. They charged him with using the very arguments of the Pedobaptists. But if he was a Pedobaptist already, what pertinency was there in such a reflection? In his 'Difference of Judgment' he complains that Kiffin reflects upon him seriously for his freedom to communicate with those 'who differ from me about water-baptism.' He complains that these Baptist brethren had tried to win him and his Church to their views, saying: 'Yea, myself they have sent for and endeavored to persuade me to break communion with my brethren...Some they did rend and dismember from us...To settle the brethren of our community, and to prevent such disorders among others, was the cause of my publishing my papers.' Then, in his 'Reasons for my Practice,' he writes: 'I can communicate with those visible saints that differ about water-baptism.' But that went without saying, if he were not a Baptist. And finally, as to the allegation that he used the arguments of the Pede-baptists, he resents the charge with warmth thus: 'I ingenuously tell you, I know not what Paedo means, and how then should I know his arguments?' Which answer is of a piece with the retort to Kiffin, 'You seek thus to scandalize me,' because he demanded concerning Bunyan, 'Wherein lies the force of this man's argument against baptism, as to its place, worth, and continuance?'

That Bunyan and Kiffin stood shoulder to shoulder as Baptists on every point, excepting communion, is as clear as it can be from their own statements. Under the head of 'The Question Stated,' Kiffin says in his 'Sober Discourse:' 'It may be necessary to examine how far we disagree and whether we disagree with our dissenting brethren, because that would prevent much useless discourse, and lead us to debate the matter in dispute only...' 'The professors of the Christian religion are distinguished,' says he, 'by certain terms, invented by their opposites to know them by, as Prelatical, Presbyterians, Independents, Anabaptists, etc. And it were well if such names were laid aside and the title of Christian brother resumed, because they agree in fundamentals. Now of all these our controversy in the case in hand is only with some of the last who are (though not rightly) called Anabaptists. As for others, their avowed principle is to admit none to Church-fellowship or communion that are unbaptized...The Church of England receives no member into communion without baptism, neither do Presbyterians, Independents, nor, indeed, any sort of Christians that own ordinances, admit any as a Church-member without baptism. We shall, therefore, direct this discourse to our dissenting brethren of the baptized way only.' He adds, 'Under the term (unbaptized) we comprehend all persons that either were never baptized at all, or such as have been (as they call it) christened or baptized (more properly sprinkled) in their infancy. .Now our dissenting brethren, with whom we have to do, look upon this way to be absolutely invalid and so no baptism (else they would not be baptized themselves), and consequently esteem all such as unbaptized; so that we need not prove what is granted.' (Kiffin's 'Sober Discourse,' pp. 2, 9.)

On pages 13,14, he defines what he means by those of 'the baptized way,' calls them 'Baptists,' and says that they are 'reproached' and 'derided' 'for being dipt.' It had been impossible for Kiffin to have addressed Bunyan in such terms had they not recognized each other as Baptists. And Bunyan in his reply not only admits that he and Kiffin saw these things alike, but felt hurt that Kiffin should

Baptists of Great Britain

even venture to hint that he was defective in the views of baptism held by Baptists. He says: 'That the brethren which refuse to be baptized as you and I would have them, refuse it for want of pretended light, becomes you not to imagine...Their conscience may be better than either yours or mine; yet God, for purposes best known to himself, may forbear to give them conviction of their duty in this particular...I advise you again to consider that a man may find baptism to be commanded, may be informed who ought to administer it, may also know the proper subject, and that the manner of baptizing is dipping, and may desire to practice it because it is commanded, and yet know nothing of what water-baptism preacheth, or of the mystery baptism showeth to faith.' He then complains bitterly that Kiffin does not treat persons who were not baptized as it 'is commanded' by the 'manner of dipping' as they should be treated, for he avows that 'they cannot without light be driven into water baptism, I mean after our notion of it...Far better than ourselves, that have not, according to our notion, been baptized with water.' In the same paper he speaks of the godly of the land 'who are not of our persuasion,' and insists that he does not plead 'for a despising of baptism, but a bearing with our brother who cannot do it for want of light.' If he were not a Baptist and supposed himself enlightened in their views, it were absurd for him to be perpetually complaining to Baptists that those who were not dipped after his notion and theirs, failed of this duty for want of light. In his 'Practice and Differences of Judgment' he repeats this from a dozen to twenty times, and then, with an air of injured feeling on their behalf, demands: 'Must all the children of God, that are not baptized for want of light, be still stigmatized for want of serious inquiry after God's mind in it?'

Much needless speculation has been had on Bunyan's status as a Baptist, simply because, in his 'Heavenly Footman,' he says: 'Do not have too much company with some Anabaptists, though I go under that name myself;' and, in his 'Peaceable Principles,' adds: 'As for those factious titles of Anabaptists, Independents, Presbyterians, or the like, I conclude that they came neither from Jerusalem nor Antioch, but rather from hell and Babylon, for they naturally tend to divisions.' With good reason Mr. Brown says of Bunyan's affiliation with the Baptists, 'This is plain enough,' when Bunyan calls himself an 'Anabaptist.' Like many other Baptists he did not like to be called by that hateful name, 'Anabaptist,' nor did he like denominational names at all; he preferred to be called a 'Christian,' an honorable feeling that is shared by many in all Christian sects, and yet they fail to suggest better names than those they answer to. Dr. Southey, with his usual clearness of perception, says of Bunyan: 'Though circumstances had made him a sectarian, he liked not to be called by the denomination of his sect;' yes, and especially when it was perverted to Anabaptist. It is said that even Dr. Samuel Johnson hated this word so mortally, that he refused to put it into the first edition of his Dictionary in 1755. If it was not a simple omission, he must have left it out on other grounds than that of Bunyan's; but, at any rate, it occurs for the first time in Johnson's Lexicon in Todd's edition of 1827. Neither did it seem to distress Bunyan to be called simply a Baptist. When Kiffin asked him, 'Why do you indulge the Baptists in many acts of disobedience?' he showed no resentment. D'Anvers demanded of him, because he thought that his published views of communion impeached the thoroughness of his Baptist position, how long it was since he ceased to be a Baptist? This home-thrust touched Bunyan in a tender spot, for it seemed to reflect upon him for the rejection of his old Baptist principles, and he resented it with his usually high spirit: 'You ask me next how long it is since I was a Baptist?' and then adds, "It is an ill bird that bewrays his own nest." I must tell you, avoiding your slovingly language, I know none to whom this title is so proper as to the

Chapter 7 - British Baptists – Bunyan's Principles

disciples of John.' That he was not an Independent is very clear, for D'Anvers tells him that some of the 'sober Independents' had showed dislike to his written notions that baptism did not precede communion. 'What then?' Bunyan replies. 'If I should also say, as I can without lying, that several of the Baptists had wished yours burnt before it had come to light, is your book ever the worse for that?' No Independent could have conducted this controversy on this line of things; and no passage in all his writings bears with more direct force upon this subject than this taken from his 'Differences in Judgment,' published in the very year that the St. Cuthbert's Register says of some John Bunyan that his baby was christened. In that very year he wrote to his Baptist opponent: 'What if I should also send you to answer those expositors that expound certain Scriptures for infant baptism, and that by them brand us for Pedobaptists, must this drive you from your belief of the truth?'

It has been any thing but a pleasant task to attempt the rescue of this honored historical name from such a brand of inconsistency as the wrong use of the St. Cuthbert's Register must fix upon it, by applying to him an act which it was morally impossible for him to perpetrate without infamy to all the other acts of his religious life and being. A dozen such records, so perverted in their application, can never gainsay the universal voice of history as to the man's principles and character. And outside of these nothing is more notorious than that all his chief friendships were sought by himself amongst Baptists, as in the case of Jessey, who was more the father of open communion views in England than was Bunyan. Nothing seemed more to delight that sturdy Baptist 'friend and acquaintance' of his, Charles Doc, than to speak of him as 'Our Bunyan,' which he does until the repetition wearies. Francis Smith, who published the most, if not all the works which Bunyan wrote while he was in prison, was one of the most thorough Baptists. He was a brave and true character, who set the censor of the press at defiance and was imprisoned again and again as a 'fanatic' because he would, publish 'dangerous books.' He was called 'Elephant Smith,' because he did business at the Elephant and Castle, near Temple Bar, but he was better known as 'Anabaptist Smith;' and would have published Bunyan's 'Grace Abounding,' but he happened to be in prison when it was issued. Many of Bunyan's books were seized at his place in 1666, because he published them without a license; and the Baptist press has been loaded with his writings ever since. And, last of all, says Philip: 'He was interred at first in the back part of that ground (Bunhill Fields) now known as Baptist Corner.'

While these considerations serve as slight collateral evidences of his denominational connections, the great proof is found in his own words and works, both of which follow him. Although his own Church has forsaken the faith and practice which he taught, there are still many Churches left which received his impress, and have retained it through two hundred years. His labors outside of Bedford, in that and other counties, were abundant: and a number of Baptist Churches therein, which still exist, were then gathered as the result. Philip says: 'Not a few of the Baptist Churches in the county (Bedford) trace their origin to Bishop Bunyan's itineracies, as do some also in the adjoining counties of Cambridge, Hertford, Huntingdon, Buckingham and Northampton.' Alluding to these labors, the 'Britannica' states that 'he had so great an authority among the Baptists that he was popularly called Bishop Bunyan.' This article, written by Macaulay, adds: 'Great as was the authority of Bunyan with the Baptists, that of William Kiffin was still greater.' The present status of these Churches show the model on which he formed them, as an open communion Baptist. Mr. Brown's Church at Northampton, the Union Chapel at Luton, and some others, can elect either a Baptist or a Pedobaptist minister for pastor, though their ministers are now and have been generally

Baptists of Great Britain

Baptists. The Park Street Church at Luton claims Bunyan as its founder, also that at Hitchin and Hurst-Hempstead. Rev. Mr. Watts, the present pastor of Mill Street Baptist Church, Bedford, says: 'Stagsden, Goldington, Elstow and Kempston are all branches of Bunyan's Meeting. Josiah Couder says in "Life and Writings of Bunyan:" 'Reading, in Berkshire, was another place which he frequently visited, and a tradition has been preserved by the Baptist congregation there that he sometimes went through that town dressed like a carter, with a long whip in his hand, to avoid detection. The house in which the Baptists met for worship stood in a lane, and from the back door they had a bridge over a branch of the river Kennett, whereby, in case of alarm, they might escape. In a visit to that place, prompted by his characteristic kindness of heart, he contracted the disease which brought him to his grave.'

Rev. Thomas Watts adds:

'There are very few Congregational Churches in Bedfordshire, and these are mostly of modern formation. It seems certain that John Bunyan was remarkably useful throughout the county, and that his converts either became members of Baptist or Union Churches. We have several Union Churches, but, with the exception of Bunyan Meeting, the minister in every case is a Baptist. The trust-deed at Cotton-End requires the Church to choose a Baptist for their pastor.'

Clearly Bunyan was an open communion Baptist, but as to christening his child in the parish church in 1672; we may well use the Scripture exclamation: 'Go to!'

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

JOHN MILTON, the apostle of liberty and monarch of song, demands our notice, because, whether he was a Baptist or not, he expounded and defended certain elementary Baptist principles as few others have done. Milton was born in 1608, and educated at Cambridge. He was of a serious spirit, full of purity and courage and very modest withal. This soul dwelt in a temple as fair as Apollo's, the picture of beauty and delicacy; so fine, indeed, that the coarser students nicknamed him 'the lady of Christ's College.' As a liberator, he did for England what no man had yet done. He lived when all religions and political traditions were called in question, and all old institutions were being remodeled. Although his early design was to enter the Episcopal ministry, and his preparation was thorough, after examining the claims of Episcopacy, he said that to take orders he 'must subscribe slave,' and this he would do for no man. After seven years' study he took his master's degree, 1632; then retired for five years, studying the Bible, Greek and Roman writers, philosophy and literature, and laying plans for his great life-work. On the death of his mother, in 1638, he went to the Continent, intending to spend some years there. In Paris he became thoroughly acquainted with Grotius, and at Florence had much conversation with Galileo, in the Inquisition. When he heard of the disturbances in England, his patriotism was so stirred that he resolved to return, saying, 'I considered it dishonorable to be enjoying myself at my ease in foreign lands, while my countrymen were striking a blow for freedom.'

At home, he was soon drawn into the front rank as a publicist, dealing with every fundamental principle of the English Constitution. Twenty-five controversial and political works were soon issued from his pen touching great practical questions of statesmanship; the rights of the people, of rulers, the freedom of the commonwealth, the relations of the Church to the State, of religious liberty, popular education, the laws of marriage and the freedom of the press. These aroused the whole nation as a giant from slumber. He spoke on all subjects with a deep conviction and an honest boldness worthy of a doctinaire and philosophical civilian. Every point was presented with the clearness of a sunbeam; all could see that the love of liberty dominated him like an inspiration. His principles embodied a new and radical order of things, and a new set of political institutions must spring therefrom, so primal were they. In themselves they were a new creation, so to speak, which appealed to reason and conscience; in a word, the embryo of a free republic. Mark Pattison, no indulgent critic of Milton, is compelled to admit that these works were 'all written on the side of liberty.' He defended religious liberty against the prelates, civil liberty against the crown, the liberty of the press against the executive, liberty of conscience against the Presbyterians, and domestic liberty against the tyranny of canon law. Milton's pamphlets might have been stamped with the motto which Seldon inscribed (in Greek) in all his books: 'Liberty before every thing.' In the depth of his nature he revered God, and used that reverence to ennoble England. While the seething excitement of his times marks his style, which is often rasping, even withering, and betrays that metallic spirit which will neither brook imposition nor cant; yet there was a light and refreshing newness in his temper, which told his foes that he knew what he was talking about, whether they did or not, and which brushed away their impudent assumptions and abuses like dust. His exact calmness of thought and clearness of language made his foes resentful. He was a perfect master of stinging candor, and his nervous invective made his vehemence calm by the truth which it couched.

The second marked period of his life brought his knowledge of the learned languages into great service. He honored his mother-tongue as a language of ideas, and his prose works will ever remain

Baptists of Great Britain

a monument to its terse greatness. But he wrote Latin as fluently as English, and was chosen Latin secretary to the government soon after the death of Charles I. This was the language of diplomacy at the time, and he filled this station till the reign of Charles II. His office brought him into daily contact with the forty-one who composed the Council of State, especially with the Committee for Foreign Affairs, amongst whom were Vane and Whitelock, Lords Denbigh and Lisle. In company with Cromwell, Fairfax and others, his daily task was to frame difficult dispatches to all nations, in harmony with the new state of things in England, to which, practically, the world was a stranger. In April, 1655, the Duke of Savoy horrified all Europe by the fiendish atrocities which made the valleys of Piedmont run with blood. When news of this savagery reached Protestant England she stood appalled, decreed it high time to stop such insane brutality, and sent Moreland to take the cut-throat of Savoy in hand. As representing a republic, Cromwell had omitted the title of his Royal Highness in the dispatches sent by Moreland to the duke, who proposed to return the demand of England under color of affront. The sober second thought, however, aided by a little common sense and Cardinal Mazarin, brought the butcher to his senses. France was required to stop this cowardly reign of fury, rape and murder. The correspondence which Milton conducted on this subject with the nations of Europe was so just, humane and simple, that it stands an honor to humanity. Its tone is severely moderate, becoming a Christian republic in diplomacy; firm, equitable, manly to deliciousness, and its effect is felt on the liberties of Europe to this day.

Milton's perpetual labor in the cause of humanity cost him his eyesight. He said that his physicians predicted this when he took up his pen to write against the tyrannies of Charles, 'yet, nothing terrified by their premonition, I did not long balance whether my duty should be preferred to my eyes.' In 1650 the sight of his left eye was gone, and by 1652 the sight of his right eye was also quenched; so that at the age of forty-three he was totally blind, remaining so till his death, twenty-two years after. In another touching passage, which expresses his unyielding sense of responsibility, he says: 'The choice lay before me, between dereliction of a supreme duty and loss of eyesight. In such a case I could not listen to the physician, not if Esculapius himself had spoken from his sanctuary; I could but obey that inward monitor, I know not what, that spoke to me from heaven. I considered with myself that many had purchased less good with worse ill, as they who give their lives to reap only glory; and I thereupon concluded to employ the little remaining eyesight I was to enjoy in doing this, the greatest service to the common weal it was in my power to render.'

The third period of his life drew forth his highest and holiest genius. From 1660 to 1674 he produced his matchless 'Paradise Lost' and 'Paradise Regained,' and his 'Samson Agonistes.' He addressed himself to these as a prophet would devote himself to his holy office. Five and twenty years had been spent in the sternest self-culture and sacred purpose, so that he thought his epic ideal a schooling from God. He had conceived the first plan of his 'Paradise Lost' under the flush and daring imaginations of youth, but dared not touch the work without the chaste and ripe judgment of fifty, and then considered himself poorly equipped for its execution. He was not content to create an epic fiction, much less a romance, but would deal only in real poetic truth on foundations as firm as the eternal throne. But for all this he implored the help of heaven, as he believed that only close walk with God could give life and history to the imagery and feeling treasured in his soul. He said: 'This is not to be obtained but by devout prayer to that eternal Spirit that can enrich with all utterance and knowledge, and sends forth his seraphim with the hallowed lire of his altar, to touch and purify the life of whom he pleases. To this must be added industrious and select reading, steady

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

observation, and insight into all seemly and gracious acts and affairs; till which in some measure compact, I refuse not to sustain this expectation.' His blindness abandoned him to a sublime loneliness. Every thing material was banished from his fervid soul, while he sang to God the story of creation as 'the morning stars' sung it at first, and the greater story of redemption as it was sung by the advent angels. His soul was rapt because it breathed the air of a spiritual gospel and took the nourishment which a personal Christ imparts. His genius was overpowered by the sense of God's help, and this inspired his grace of movement, his glow of adoration. One of His most careful biographers writes that 'the horizon of "Paradise Lost" is not narrower than all space, its chronology not shorter than eternity; the globe of our earth a mere spot in the physical universe, and that universe itself a drop suspended in the infinite empyrean.' Butler says: 'It runs up into infinity.' The gorgeous embroidery which adorns 'Paradise Lost' is wanting in 'Paradise Regained,' clearly because he curbed his imagination in deference to evangelic truth. He could not gild the atoning cross without making the Gospel blush for the artist. The supernatural existences of 'Paradise Lost' are made visible in their darkness by the aid of superhuman lights; but 'Paradise Regained' shines in the native splendor of plain gospel fact, it lives in the simplicity of Christ without bedecking, it extols the reign of grace without pomp. Christ is so fully its high art and argument, that Wordsworth pronounces it 'the most perfect in execution of any thing written by Milton,' and Coleridge, 'the most perfect poem extant' of its kind.

Milton's religious views were Non-conformist, but there is no decisive proof that he was a communicant of any Church. He said, 1642, that he was 'a member incorporate into that truth whereof I was persuaded, and whereof I had declared myself openly to be the partaker.' Again, in his 'Treatise on Christian Doctrine:' 'For my own part, I adhere to the Holy Scriptures alone. I follow no other heresy or sect. I had not even read any of the works of heretics, so called, when the mistakes of those who are reckoned for orthodox, and their incautious handling of Scripture, first taught me to agree with their opponents, whenever those opponents agree with Scripture.' A State religion was abhorrent to him, and he demanded equal rights for all sects, except Roman Catholics. These he would not tolerate in England, on the ground that Catholicism was a political machine, which had destroyed the liberties of England once, and, he believed, would destroy them again if it recovered ascendancy. He did not regard it as a religious but as a political system in a religious guise, directly opposed to civil freedom and, therefore, intolerable. Also, he was extremely jealous lest any sect should trench a hair's-breadth upon his personal rights of conscience; hence, he chose to follow his own individual lines. He adopted the same course in his literary, political, and official life, holding no close intimacy with leading literary men or republicans, not even with Cromwell. He said, in 1657: 'I have very little acquaintance with those in power, inasmuch as I keep very much to my own house, and prefer to do so.' In this self-contained reserve he appears to have had no intercourse with the literati of the times, Waller, Herrick, Shirley, Davenant, Cowley, Gataker, Seldon, Usher or Butler, and seems not to have met most of them. The purely literary did not suit him, and with many of these he was in warm controversy.

Bishop Sumner states, that 'during every period of his life, his Sundays were wholly devoted to theology.' This was not merely a private exercise, for Buch shows that on Sundays he read a chapter of the Greek Testament, and gave an exposition of it to his pupils; and then, at his dictation, they wrote on divinity. This course not only nourished his own religious life, but made him a religious teacher to others, and he followed this order as well before he became blind as after. After 1660 he

Baptists of Great Britain

was so hated that the iron entered his soul, and he preferred to dwell in darkness; or as Macaulay forcibly expresses it: 'After experiencing every calamity which is incident to our nature, old, poor, sightless and disgraced, he retired to his hovel to die.'

And still it stands good, that he defended roundly, openly and with his might every distinctive principle which the Baptists hold, and his foes ranked him with them. In his youth he held Trinitarian views and in his 'Ode on Christ's Nativity' speaks of our Lord as, 'Wont at heaven's high council-table, To sit the midst of Trinal Unity.' In later life he was tainted with Arianism; yet, with a strange inconsistency, he constructed his 'Paradise Lost' on the fundamental principle of Christ's vicarious sacrifice, and maintains this truth without the least ambiguity or equivocation in his 'Treatise on Doctrine,' together with the co-related tenets of original sin, justification and regeneration. These were not distinctive Baptist doctrines in his day more than now; they were held in common by Baptist and Pedobaptist. He held views on divorce which the Baptists of his day did not hold, growing out of his conviction that while marriage itself is an appointment of God, it should be known in human law only as a civil contract, a sentiment which is now incorporated into the statute law of the American States. But on all the doctrines which distinguish Baptists from other religious bodies, he stands an open and firm Baptist writer.

1. As to the Rule of Faith. Usher, the most learned prelate of his day in all that concerned religious tradition, was seriously perplexed and compelled to abandon some of his positions in his controversy with Milton. Milton swept away all his patristic arguments at a stroke, charging that the archbishop was not 'contented with the plentiful and wholesome fountains of the Gospel, as if the divine Scriptures wanted a supplement, and were to be eked out...by that indigested heap and fry of authors called antiquity.' He then avows: 'That neither traditions, councils, nor canons of any visible Church, much less edicts of any magistrate or civil session, but the Scripture only, can be the final judge or rule in matters of religion, and that only in the conscience of every Christian to himself.' For this reason he refused to appeal to any authority but the Bible in his 'Treatise on Doctrine.' So rigidly did he adhere to his rule to 'discard reason in sacred matters,' that Bishop Sumner complains thus: 'Milton has shown a partiality in all his works, even on subjects not immediately connected with religion, for supporting his argument by the authority of Scripture;' and so the Bible was the mother of his prose and poetic literature. He took the exact Baptist ground of his day and ours, when he said: 'I enroll myself among the number of those who acknowledge the word of God alone as the rule of faith.'

2. He took the highest Baptist ground on the constitution and government of a Gospel Church. He demanded that it must be a 'communion of saints,' a 'brotherhood professing the faith,' and that 'such only are to be accounted of that number as are well taught in Scripture doctrine, and capable of trying by the rule of Scripture and the Spirit any teacher whatever, or even the whole collective body of teachers.' Such a Church, he says, 'however small its numbers,' is an independent body: 'In itself an integral and perfect Church, so far as regards its religious rights nor has it any superior on earth, whether individual or assembly or convention, to whom it can be lawfully required to render submission.' Its offices, he held, are presbyters and deacons, and 'the choice of ministers belongs to the people.' This excludes all infant membership, on any plea. He protests of infants, that 'they are not to be baptized; inasmuch as they are incompetent to receive instruction, or to believe, or to enter into a covenant, or to promise or answer for themselves, or even to hear the word. For how can infants, who understand not the word, be purified thereby, any more than adults can receive

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

edification by hearing an unknown language? For it is not that outward baptism, which purifies only the filth of the flesh, that saves us, but the answer of a good conscience, as Peter testifies, of which infants are incapable...Baptism is also a vow, and as such can neither be pronounced by infants nor be required of them.' No Baptist writer, of any period, more thoroughly refutes the doctrine of infant baptism than does Milton.

3. As to the order of baptism itself, he holds it to be an ordinance under the Gospel: 'Wherein the bodies of believers, who engage themselves to pureness of life, are immersed in running water, to signify their regeneration by the Holy Spirit, and their union with Christ, in his death, burial and resurrection.' It is in vain: alleged by those, who, on the authority of Mark 7:4, Luke 11:38, have introduced the practice of affusion in baptism instead of immersion, that to dip and to sprinkle mean the same thing; since in washing we do not sprinkle the hands, but immerse them.' His writings abound in this sentiment. In 'Paradise Lost' (Book xii) he teaches that after Christ's resurrection he commissioned his Apostles 'To teach all nations what of him they learned, And his salvation; them who shall believe Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign Of washing them from guilt of sin to life Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall, For death like that which the Redeemer died.'

4. As we have already seen, he was a thorough Baptist on all that related to soul liberty, excepting in the case of the Roman Catholics. His 'Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes' teaches: 'That for belief or practice in religion, no man ought to be punished or molested by any outward force upon earth whatsoever.' Again, in his 'Christian Doctrine:' 'The civil power has dominion only over the body and external faculties of man; the ecclesiastical is exercised exclusively on the faculties of the mind, which acknowledge no other jurisdiction.' He went further than Locke, who excluded atheists from toleration; for while he repudiated all union of Church and State, he held to a union between the State and religion, as such. With this one abatement of Catholic toleration, Milton stood with the Baptists on the liberty of conscience. Dr. Stoughton writes: 'The Baptists multiplied after the Revolution, and continued what they had been before, often obscure, but always stanch supporters of independence and voluntaryism. In this respect they differed from Presbyterians, and often went beyond Independents.'

For these reasons, many of Milton's biographers have classed him with Baptists. Mark Pattison tells us, that 'every Philistine leveled the contemptuous epithet of Anabaptist against Milton most freely. He says of himself, that he now lived in a world of disesteem. Nor was there wanting to complete his discomfiture the practical parody of the doctrine of divorce. A Mistress Attaway, lace-woman in Bell Alley and she-preacher in Coleman Street, had been reading Master Milton's book, and remembered that she had an unsanctified husband, who did not speak the language of Canaan. She further reflected that Mr. Attaway was not only unsanctified, but was also absent with the army, while William Jenney was on the spot, and, like herself, also a preacher.' This slant of the modern author accords exactly with the abuse of Milton by Featley, on the same subject, in 1644. In his 'Dippers Dipt,' he first attends to the case of Roger Williams, who had just issued his 'Bloody Tenet,' ranking him with the 'Anabaptists,' because he taught that 'it is the will and command of God, that since the coming of his Son, the Lord Jesus, a permission of the most Paganish, Jewish, Turkish, or antichristian consciences and worships be granted to all men in all nations and countries. That civil States with their officers of justice are not governors or defenders of the spiritual and Christian state and worship. That the doctrine of persecution in case of conscience, maintained by Master Calvin, Beza, Cotton and the ministers of the New England Churches, is guilty of the blood of the souls

Baptists of Great Britain

crying for vengeance under the altar.' On the same page, and in the next sentence, he couples Milton with Williams as an 'Anabaptist' by the title of his book, saying: 'Witness a "Tractate of Divorce," in which the bonds of marriage are let loose to inordinate lust, and putting away wives for many other causes besides that which our Saviour only approveth, namely, in cases of adultery.'

Featley's design was to lampoon the Baptists, and if Milton was not understood to stand on their distinctive principles as well as Williams, why did he run the risk of classing them all together and denouncing them in the same breath as Baptists? This furious writer hated both of them as well as their doctrine of soul-liberty, and the law of association led him to denounce them both as symbolizing with those who held this as a divine truth. Other men, whom he hated as much as these, had written books as distasteful to him, but he did not, therefore, class them with Baptists, merely to throw additional contempt upon them as a body; for even Featley had some sense. Milton's widow was a Baptist and a member of the Church at Nantwich, Cheshire, but it is not known when she entered its fellowship. Her body rests in the meeting-house of that Church, and she appointed Samuel Creton, its pastor, her 'loving friend,' as one of her executors. Perhaps this sketch cannot better be finished than by giving the following from John Tolland, who wrote the first 'Life of Milton,' published in London, 1699: 'Thus lived and died John Milton, a person of the best accomplishments, the happiest genius and the vastest learning which this nation, so renowned for producing excellent writers, could ever yet show...In his early days he was a favorer of those Protestants then opprobriously called by the name of Puritans. In his middle years he was best pleased with the Independents and Anabaptists, as allowing of more liberty than others and coming the nearest to his opinion to the primitive practice. But in the latter part of his life he was not a professed member of any particular sect among Christians; he frequented none of their assemblies, nor made use of their peculiar rites in his family. Whether this proceeded from a dislike of their uncharitable and endless disputes, and that love of dominion or inclination to persecution, which, he said, was a piece of popery inseparable from all Churches, or whether he thought one might be a good man without subscribing to any party, and that they had all in some things corrupted the institutions of Jesus Christ, I will by no means adventure to determine; for conjectures on such occasions are very uncertain, and I have never met with any of his acquaintance who could be positive in assigning the true reasons for his conduct.'

Few men amongst the Baptists ranked higher at this period than BENJAMIN KEACH. He was born in 1640, was immersed on his faith in Christ at the age of fifteen, and began to preach at eighteen; then, in 1668, at the age of twenty-eight, he became pastor of the Baptist Church in Horsleydown, London. For the high crime of publishing a small work on fundamental Baptist principles he was indicted in 1664, and brought before Chief-Justice Hyde. This judge descended to the meanness of browbeating his prisoner. The indictment being long, Keach asked for a copy, that he might confer with counsel. This right of every English man was refused; and the judge, in a towering passion, demanded that he should first plead, or he would take his silence as confession, and so pronounce judgment. He pleaded 'Not Guilty,' when the judge gave him a copy and an hour's time to consider objections. This he declined as insufficient. When he proceeded to his defense the Court said: 'You shall not speak any thing here, except to say whether you wrote the book or not.' The jury found a technical error in the indictment, but the Court forced a verdict of guilty, despite the law. The judge then sentenced him to prison for two weeks, and to stand in the pillory in the market-place at Aylesbury, with a paper upon his head inscribed: 'For writing, printing and

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

publishing a schismatical book, entitled "The Child's Instructor; or, A New and Easy Primmer." At the same time he was to pay a fine of £20, to give sureties for his appearance at the next assize, to recant his doctrines, and his book was to be burnt before his eyes in the pillory by the hangman. When in the pillory the crowd treated him with great respect, and, instead of hooting and pelting him with eggs, as was common, listened eagerly to his exhortations. The sheriff, in a great rage, threatened to gag him, but he exhorted the people out of the Bible. On the following Saturday he stood in the pillory at Winslow and his book was burnt. He was often in prison for preaching the Gospel, and had great contests with Baxter, Burkitt and Flavel on Baptist peculiarities. For many years his Church was compelled to meet in private houses but under the Declaration of Indulgence, 1672, they built their first house of worship, which was frequently enlarged until it held a thousand hearers.

Various controversies were rife amongst the Baptists of his day, this with others: Whether or not they should sing in public worship? Many Churches were much distracted on this subject. The Presbyterians sung certain cast-iron botches, called the translation of Sternhold and Hopkins, but these were denounced as 'human composures;' a self-evident truth. Even Beza's translation of David's Psalms was irreverently called, by both Baptists and Independents, 'Geneva Jiggs.' The Broadmead Records tell us that in 1675 it was proposed that Gifford's Church, at Bristol, with the Presbyterians and Independents, should all meet together for worship in trying times; but some of Gifford's flock, to show their dislike of metrical versions, reserved the right to 'keep on their hatts, or going forth' during this part of the service. Their brethren, however, would not sanction such disorder, and agreed that those who 'would not keep off their hatts and sitt still, should be desired to stay away.' The press groaned with pamphlets and books on this controversy. The contest was not as to whether the congregation should sing instead of a choir, but, at first, whether they would have any singing at all; and, secondly, if yes, whether the saints should do it alone or the wicked should join in and help them. Keach was drawn into this controversy, and in 1691 published a book on the subject. He demonstrated his gravity of character by keeping a straight face while he solemnly proceeded to show 'that there are various kinds of voices; namely, (1) a shouting noise of the tongue; (2) a crying noise; (3) a preaching voice, or noise made that way; (4) a praying or praising voice; and (5) a singing voice.' He then declares in downright earnest that 'singing is not a simple heart singing, or mental singing; but a musical, melodious modulation or tuning of the voice... That singing is a duty performed always with the voice, and cannot be done without the tongue, etc.' He resolved to introduce singing into his Church, cost what it might. But he met with great opposition; and as his was the first Church amongst the Baptists to introduce singing, so far as now appears, it is interesting to know that it was first used at the Lord's Supper about 1673, and confined to communion occasions for about six years. Then the practice was extended to days of public thanksgiving, which practice continued about fourteen years. After about twenty years the Church, with some dissent, was persuaded to sing every Lord's day. But even then the brethren agreed only to sing at the close of the prayer after the sermon; and so tender were they of the consciences of the minority, that they passed a vote not to censure those who went out and stood in the chapel-yard, if they could not conscientiously stay in and hear the singing. Yet all this care made no matter. The anti-singing party left the Church, and established another body in every respect like the old Church, except as to singing. This was known then, and is now, as the Maze Pond Church. February 9th, 1693, Luke Leader, living in Tooley Street, Southwark, with six brethren and thirteen sisters,

Baptists of Great Britain

met to spend the day in fasting and prayer without a song in their mouth, 'and to settle themselves in a Church state.' When they were gone Keach and his Church resolved to 'let their songs abound,' and on the 1st of March actually passed a vote 'that they who are for singing may sing as above said.' This new congregation continued songless until 1739, when Abraham West refused to become their pastor unless they would introduce singing into public worship, which they did. And now few congregations in London sing better or more lusty songs of praise than that on Old Kent Road, when a thousand people lift their voices high, in their new edifice, which cost them £13,000, and was dedicated by Dr. Landels. Other London Churches had hot conflicts on this singing question, the custom being, according to Taylor, 'for a long time,' for the discontented to go out of the congregation 'when the singing commenced.' And Dr. Russell says of the practice, in 1696: 'This way of singing has a tendency to your ruin, having begun already to diminish your numbers, and for two congregations to unite into one, to keep up their reputation and supply that deficiency which singing in rhyme has made in their numbers. Nay, further, a great part of your members that remain are so dissatisfied, that, as soon as you begin to tune your pipes, they immediately depart like men affrighted.' Possibly, with good reason, too.

This controversy caused most unlovely bickerings in the Churches, some few of them Independent, as well as Baptist. Concealed worship had first made silence necessary, to avoid persecution, till about 1680. The contest was prosecuted through numbers of books and pamphlets with great fierceness, the whole question turning on the one point, whether or not there was scriptural precept or example for the whole congregation, converted and unconverted, to join in the singing as a part of divine worship. Yet they all believed that such persons as God had gifted to sing might do so, one by one; and in this form of solo all the Churches had singing, but only as the heart dictated the 'melody,' and not by the use of rhyme or written note.

Mr. Keach was a prolific author, having published forty-three different works, some of them large. He had great faith in God, and was the subject of many marked interpositions of his goodness. One striking fact is related of his later years. He was so ill in 1689 that life was despaired of, even by his physicians. Mr. Knollys, who greatly loved him, knelt at his bedside, and after fervently praying that God would add to his life the time granted to Hezekiah; on rising, said, 'Brother Keach, I shall be in heaven before you.' Both the prayer and prediction were honored to the letter; Knollys died two years afterward and Keach lived fifteen years.

For three generations the Giffords were noted Baptist preachers. ANDREW was the head of the family, and was highly esteemed in the west of England. He was born at Bristol, and entered the ministry in 1661, when persecution began to be very fierce. Many thrilling stories tell of his adventures and perils, some of which he escaped by boldness and ready wit, as well as by gentleness of spirit. While he was preaching at Bristol the mayor and aldermen came with the sword and other official regalia, and commanded him to come down. He told them that as he was about his Master's business, they would oblige him to wait until he was through, then he would go with them. They complied, sat down and listened with close attention; when he went with them to the council-house, where they gave him 'a soft reproof and caution,' and dismissed him. He was thrice imprisoned in Newgate, then a loathsome dungeon, and in many other ways suffered for the truth. He was drawn into the uprising of the ill-fated Duke of Moilmouth, but escaped the legal consequences of his course; while Elizabeth Gaunt, a noble Baptist, was burned at Tyburn for giving refuge to a rebel of whom she had no knowledge, being prompted by humanity. But Jeffrys, whose meat and drink

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

it was to sentence a Baptist to death, sent her to the stake on the oath of the outlaw whom she had ignorantly succored, and burnt her October 23d, 1685.

A second ANDREW GIFFORD, D.D grandson of the above, was born at Bristol in 1700. He was baptized at the age of fifteen. In 1729 he removed to London and formed the Eagle Street Church, which he served for fifty years. He was very learned and a powerful preacher. For the last thirty years of his life he was Assistant Librarian of the British Museum, a post which he filled with great honor.

The Hollis family was noted also for its preaching ability, although Thomas and John, its most distinguished members, remained in business while they preached. Thomas, the younger, was one of the most liberal supporters of Harvard College, Mass. In 1720 he founded a professorship of theology there, and in 1726 a professorship of mathematics and experimental philosophy, and sent over apparatus that cost £150. The first of these was endowed with a salary of £80 a year, with £10 each to ten scholars, four of whom were to be Baptists; the second professorship was to have the same salary, £80.

Probably the most learned man amongst the General Baptists at this period was Thomas Grantham. He became a pastor when very young, and was early called to suffer for conscience' sake in Lincoln jail. There he wrote a tract called 'The Prisoner against the Prelate,' in which he gave his reasons for separation from the Established Church. It is supposed that he wrote the Address or Confession which he put into the hand of Charles II, and which is chiefly of value for our purpose because it sets forth that it was adopted by many representatives of the London Churches, and 'owned and approved by more than twenty thousand;' which shows the number of General Baptists at that time, and gives us an idea of their proportionate strength. If the Particular Baptists numbered ten thousand in 1662, as is supposed, this would give the entire Baptist strength of England at thirty thousand; which, together with their sympathizers, shows a strong element in the population, estimated at that time at three hundred thousand in London and from three to five millions in England. This fair estimate throws light upon the question of fear and hatred toward them in the State Church.

In the reign of Charles II the Rev. FRANCIS BAMPFIELD founded the body known as the Seventh-Day Baptists. He was a graduate of Oxford and a prebend of Exeter Cathedral, but in 1653 subscribed to the commonwealth, and took the Scriptures as his sole religious guide. The Act of Conformity in 1662 expelled him from his living, and, continuing to preach, he was cast into prison. But he preached in the jail-yard, then, being released, he was re-arrested and was imprisoned for eight years. Still he not only preached, but formed a Church within the prison walls. On his release he founded the first Sabbatarian Church in London, and became its pastor in 1676. Here he was declared out of the protection of his majesty, was condemned to jail during life or the king's pleasure, all his goods were forfeited, and he died in Newgate, February, 1684. This body of Baptists never was numerous in England, but a bequest having been left to the Church in Whitechapel, the property has now become very valuable. On the death of Dr. Black, its late learned pastor, the membership was reduced to about half a dozen old people, and the property was likely to revert to the crown by the conditions of the bequest. A Seventh-Day Baptist pastor could not be found in Europe, and the vice-chancellor decided that, if the Seventh-Day brethren could not fill the place, the property would be lost to the Baptists. It was the happiness of the writer to open negotiations whereby an American was sent over to fill the place, and the Church is more prosperous today under

Baptists of Great Britain

the labors of Mr. Jones than it has been probably for a century.

The formation of the Society of Friends, commonly called Quakers, was a movement in which the Baptists had some interest. The Continental and some of the English Baptists held peculiar views in regard to the lawfulness of judicial oaths, the bearing of arms – even in self-defense – the severance of Christians from the civil magistracy, simplicity of manners and plainness of dress. One by one they dropped these peculiarities, and the views adopted by George Fox were little more in the origin of the society than a modification of these austere Baptist positions. The principal point, however, on which Fox separated from the Baptists was the question of the 'inner light' by which a believer could discern between truth and error without the letter of Scripture. The Baptists admitted the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, whose function it was to interpret the written word, but to the Friends 'the leading of the Spirit' was the infallible authority, because the voice of God in the soul. It is an unquestionable historical fact that but for the Baptists of the two hundred years preceding, the Society of Friends would not have come into existence in 1648.

We have many traditions, but little written history of very early Baptist Churches in England, especially touching the date of their origin, their line of pastors, the Number of their members, or the notable events of their history. We have some data, however, concerning a few Churches in the west of England. In Cornwall there were Baptist Churches as early as 1650. Forty ministers were ejected in Cornwall, in 1662, and a Baptist Church was gathered at East Looe, and another at Trelevah. The last, from which sprang the Church at Falmouth, was founded by Tregoss. He was educated at Oxford and settled at St. Ives, was ejected and suffered frequent imprisonment, until the king released him in 1671. We are more highly favored in the case of the Broadmead and Fenstanton Churches, the records of which are preserved, and other records may one day come to light. John Canne formed the Bristol Church in 1641, a body noted as the field of Robert Hall's labors in later years. Canne published the first English Bible with references, and it is worthy of his fame for learning and consecration to Christ, as well as for his labor in planting This living Church.

With the death of that faithless monarch, Charles II, in 1685, a brighter day dawned for the Baptists. On his deathbed he received the last rites of the Roman Catholic Church, though he had professed loyalty to the Church of England during his life. His disgraceful persecution of the Non-conformists had concealed his secret love for Rome; but when his brother, James II, ascended the throne, he avowed himself a Romanist, and the severity of persecution was relaxed. In the theory of the law, the Catholic was in the same category with the Independent and the Baptist as a Non-conformist. And as the Catholics must be treated with lenity, so must the others be, to make this lenity more easy to them. However much Protestants might oppress each other, they were a unit against Rome. Accordingly, when James issued his Declaration of Indulgence, in 1687, dispensing with penalties against dissenters, he was surprised to meet with remonstrance on all sides, and especially from Non-conformists, because they could not purchase religious liberty at the price of their civil freedom as Englishmen. The king had assumed to do away with all the religious penalties on his own prerogative without law, and the dissenting bodies would not accept his toleration without law and contrary to law. James could not hoodwink them by his crafty policy, for they saw clearly enough, that when once the Catholics should gain sufficient power, the toleration which the king had granted to his own faith for a purpose would be withdrawn from others, and Protestant England would see sorrowful times. The Baptists joined the other Non-conformists in protesting against the illegal means by which their general liberty had been granted, while they used it freely

Chapter 8 - British Baptists – Commonwealth and Restoration

as a right in spreading their faith. And they continued to resist James until the day that he was compelled to fly and William of Orange became the ruler of England.

Both by training and conviction William was opposed to all persecution for religion, and the alliance of all but Catholics against James made his new policy easy. The continuous and determined efforts of Baptists, Quakers and some of the Independents for complete religious liberty had, by this time, been aided by the pen of Chillingworth, and even some of the English clergy were friendly thereto. But, perhaps, the fact that the policy of legal repression had been thoroughly tried and failed was the most potent consideration in the public mind. The land was sick and disgusted with the fiendish attempt to manacle conviction to men's souls by chains, and to fry heresy out of their consciences by flames.

Toleration was forced in England by the two branches into which the Independent Churches divided. They both agreed in the statement of the principle, but they differed in regard to its vigorous enforcement. Philip Nye and Thomas Goodwin suffered severely for toleration of a certain order, but Hanserd Knollys and Roger Williams suffered for absolute religious freedom, without any toleration or qualification whatever. Their ideal was that God has directly granted to man in his birth and nature the individual right of a free conscience, and no toleration of his conscience can be rightfully claimed or defended by his fellowman. Yet, the best defenders of toleration as against absolute religious freedom, such as Jeremy Taylor, Chillingworth and Locke, were obliged to base their pleas for toleration on the ground of a free conscience, but they stopped short of its full demand. And the result of the radical ground taken by the seventeenth and eighteenth century Baptists was not only the creation of new impulses in the struggles of religious liberty and a new type of human legislation, but the creation of a new conscience itself, which asserts to each man his right from God to this freedom.

The Toleration Act of 1689 is one of the great landmarks of English history, incomplete and mutilated as it appears to us now. It failed to place all Englishmen on an equality, and left many suffering civil disabilities for religious belief, but it was a long step forward, and substantially ended active persecution. The Baptists now gave the fullest and freest information of their faith and practices in three notable Confessions, two respecting the General and one respecting the Particular Baptists. The General brethren issued the so called 'Orthodox Creed' in 1678, approved by their Churches in Bucks, Hereford, Bedford and Oxford, signed by fifty-four 'messengers, elders and brethren.' Its Arminianism is mild, and approaches moderate Calvinism. The Calvinistic Confession issued in 1677 and again in 1689, is decided, though not extreme in its doctrinal positions. Aside from distinctive Baptist principles, it is practically the Westminster Confession. Yet; in many things the Baptists stood entirely alone. Curteis calls them 'Puritans, pure and simple, the only really consistent and logically unassailable Puritans. If Puritanism is true, the Baptist system is right...For the maintenance of more strictly Calvinistic doctrines, for the exercise of a more rigorous and exclusive discipline, for the practice of a more literally scriptural ritual;' they were justified in standing alone.

Baptists of Great Britain

Chapter 9 - British Baptists – Liberty of Conscience – Associations – The Stennetts – Irish Baptists

It has been stated that several 'Anabaptists' of London made a declaration against universal toleration in 1659, but the value of this statement is light as testimony because, even if the declaration is authentic, the names and number of its supporters are not known. Possibly, a few Baptists might have sided with Milton. in proscribing the Catholics, but the weight of large treatises and several Confessions of large bodies of Churches put them, as a people, on unquestionable record to the contrary. With gratitude it may be written, that down to this day, no known Baptist has penned a sentence favoring the infliction of bodily pain or material penalty by civil government for the belief or practice of a purely religious tenet. On the contrary, with amazing unity Baptists have demanded the right for all men of absolute liberty of conscience in matters of duty to God, without any interference whatever. They stand so radically on the cardinal principle of personal responsibility to God, that to deny this absolute liberty would be to destroy themselves. Locke only chronicled their inner life in saying, that 'the Baptists were from the beginning friends and advocates of absolute liberty – just and true liberty – equal and impartial liberty.'

In 1609 certain Puritans petitioned for toleration, but disclaimed all 'way for toleration unto Papists, our suit being of a different nature from theirs,' and the English Independents asked for little more. Stoughton, in his late *Ecclesiastical History of England*, entirely agrees with Masson, in Baptist lead here. He writes: 'The Baptists were foremost in the advocacy of religious freedom, and perhaps, to one of them, LEONARD BASHER, citizen of London, belongs the honor of presenting, in this country, the first distinct and broad plea for liberty of conscience.' This comprehensive book, indeed, covers the subject so forcefully, that scarcely a new thought has been added to its treatment since 1614. It maintains that it is 'lawful for every person or persons, yea, Jews and Papists, to write, dispute, confer, and reason, print and publish any matter touching religion, either for or against whomsoever;' that 'it is irrational to persecute any man for religion, because faith is the gift of God to each man, which neither bishop nor king can command, to make Christians by force.' He pronounces it 'unnatural and abominable, yea, monstrous for one Christian to destroy another for difference and questions of religion.' So ringingly does this book present the doctrine of the nineteenth century, that Masson says, 'It cannot be read now without a throb;' and speaking of Helwys's Church, with which he as well as Barclay connects Basher, he uses this strong language: 'His Baptist congregation maintained itself in London side by side with Jacob's congregation of Independents, established in 1616.' As if to signalize still further the discrepancy of the two sets of sectaries on the toleration point, there was put forth in that very year, by Jacob and the Congregationalists, a 'Confession of Faith,' containing this article: 'We believe that we, and all true visible Churches, ought to be overseen, and kept in good order and peace, and ought to be governed under Christ, both supremely and also subordinately, by the civil magistrate; yea, in causes of religion, when need is.' 'A most humble supplication' from the Baptists to Charles I, 1620, opposes all kinds of religious persecution. Still, when Chillingworth sided with the Baptists on soul- liberty, in 1637, he stood alone in the Church of England. The eight Churches, 1643, laid down this doctrine with the clearness and fullness of an American Bill of Rights today, in Article XLVII of their Confession. Featley's wrath boiled over at its radical utterances, and devout Baxter protested: 'I abhor unlimited liberty and toleration of all, and think myself easily able to prove the wickedness of it.' 'But the Baptist idea spread against all resistance. Treatise after treatise came from the Baptist

Baptists of Great Britain

press in its defense, until one hundred 'baptized congregations' formulated it in Article XXI, of what is now known as the Confession of 1689, although Crosby claims that it was only republished in that year, and that the first edition was issued in 1677. It says: 'God alone is Lord of the conscience, and hath left it free from the doctrines and commandments of men, which are in any thing contrary to his word or not contained in it. So that, to believe such doctrines, or to obey such commands, out of conscience, is to betray true liberty of conscience; and the requiring of an implicit faith and absolute and blind obedience is to destroy liberty of conscience and reason also.'

Nor were the General Baptists a whit behind their Calvinistic brethren on this subject. They issued their belief in 'An Orthodox Creed or a Protestant Confession of Faith,' 1678, in which Article XLV says: 'Subjection in the Lord ought to be yielded to the magistrates in all lawful things commanded by them, for conscience' sake, with prayers for them for a blessing upon them, paying all lawful and reasonable customs and tribute to them, for the assisting of them against foreign, domestical and potent enemies.' Then, the next Article, after fully setting forth that Christ is the only King of conscience, and that no man can hold it in 'usurpation,' declares: 'Therefore, the obedience to any demand or decree, that is not revealed in, or (is) consonant to his word, in the holy oracles of Scripture, is a betraying of the true liberty of conscience. And the requiring of an implicit faith and a blind obedience destroys liberty of conscience and reason also, it being repugnant to both.' The 'Westminster Confession,' 1648, Chapter XX, says in substance the same thing; but in the same chapter it maintains that as matters 'concerning faith, worship...or such erroneous opinions or practices, as either in their own nature, or in the manner of publishing and maintaining them, are destructive to the external peace and order which Christ hath established in the Church; they may be lawfully called to account, and proceeded against by the censures of the Church, and by the power of the civil magistrate.' Then, of the duty of the civil magistrate himself, Chapter XXIII says: 'It is his duty to take order, that unity and peace be preserved in the Church, that the truth of God be kept pure and entire, that all blasphemies and heresies be suppressed, all corruptions and abuses in worship and discipline be prevented or reformed, and all the ordinances of God duly settled, administered and observed.' Such hybrid liberty of conscience as this may account for the fact, that when the Presbyterians had the ascendancy in the Assembly and Parliament, 1648, a statute was passed inflicting imprisonment upon those who held 'that the baptism of infants is unlawful and void, and that such persons ought to be baptized again.' The same ordinance inflicted 'the pains of death,' 'without benefit of clergy,' upon other heretics therein mentioned. Keal pronounces this law 'one of the most shocking laws I have met with in restraint of religious liberty,' and shows, 'that the governing Presbyterians would have made a terrible use of their power, had they been supported by the sword of the civil magistrate.' Whatever else this contradictory teaching of the Westminster Confession may prove; it fully supports Professor Masson in saying, that neither the Presbyterians nor the Independents of that period had any proper notion of absolute or universal toleration, much less of perfect liberty, that they were mere learners in that school, and were far behind 'the old Baptists in their views.' He is not choice of his words here, but says squarely:

'As a body, the Presbyterians of 1644 were absolute Anti-tolerationists. The proofs are so abundant, collectively they make such an ocean, that it passes comprehension how the contrary could ever have been asserted. From the first appearance of the Presbyterians in force, after the opening of the Long Parliament, it was their anxiety to beat down the rising idea of Toleration; and after the meeting of the Westminster Assembly, and the publication of the "Apologetical Narration" of the Independents, the one aim of the

Chapter 9 - British Baptists – Liberty of Conscience – Associations – The Stennetts – Irish Baptists

Presbyterians was to tie Toleration around the neck of Independency, stuff the two struggling monsters into one sack, and sink them to the bottom of the sea.'

In 1648 Cradock, the Independent, used language quite as strong, saying: 'I know also by the way that there are a company of people that would arrogate the name of Presbyterie though improperly. The name doth not beseem them, that is, those that have been the Bishop's creatures and are all for fire and fagot; there are some such among us and they would arrogate the name of Presbytery; I would not have them do it, it doth not befit them.' When we come to trace the effects of Toleration on the English Baptists, after it was procured, we see at once the paralyzing result of false doctrine, and their decline in spiritual power. This is nowhere more distinctly visible than in their Associations and General Assemblies. The insidious leaven of centralization had even worked itself into the later notions of Smyth, and the fifth charge on which Minton and Helwys expelled him in Holland was his teaching, 'that an elder in one Church is an elder of all Churches in the world.' A tinge of interchurch authority crept into the Confession of the eight Churches, 1643, in these words: 'Although the particular congregations be distinct and several bodies...they are to have counsel and keep one of another, if necessity require it, as members of one body in the common faith, under Christ their head.' The paternal principle of Associations was laid down here, with a slight margin for its abuse also. An Association was formed in 1653, when the Somerset Churches, with those of Wilts, Devon, Gloucester and Dorset, met at Wells, 'on the sixth and seventeenth days of the month.' This body of Particular Baptists published the 'Somerset Confession' in 1656, which is not to be confounded with the 'Somerset Confession' issued by the General Baptists in 1691. The Midland Association of Particular Baptists was formed in 1655, at Warwick, but was reconstructed in 1690, and still exists; its original record books, however, are lost.

The Associations very early encroached on the rights of the Churches. Adam Taylor describes their business thus: 1. The reformation of inconsistent and immoral conduct, in ministers and private Christians; 2. The suppression of heresy; 3. Reconciling of differences between members and Churches; 4. Giving advice in difficult cases to individuals and Churches; 5. Proposing plans of usefulness; 6. Recommending cases requiring pecuniary support; 7. Devising means to spread the Gospel in the world at large, but especially in their own Churches. The first four of these would not be tolerated amongst us, and the desire for a stronger bond than that of mutual love soon brought them into serious trouble. The General Baptists experienced this, first, by establishing a 'General Assembly,' it is not certain at what precise date, but before 1671. It met only on 'emergent occasions,' on an average, once in two years. Article XXXIX of the 'Orthodox Creed' claims that it had 'divine authority, and is the best means under heaven to preserve unity, to prevent heresy, and superintendence among, or in any congregation whatsoever, within its limits of jurisdiction.' Appeals were made to this assembly 'in case any injustice be done, or heresy and schism is countenanced in any particular congregation of Christ,...and such General Assemblies have lawful powers to hear and determine, and also to excommunicate.' Here, the independent polity of Baptist Churches was merged into a form of presbytery, and its disastrous effects soon became apparent.

The first 'General Assembly' of the Particular Baptists was held in 1689, on a call from the London Churches, signed by Kiffin, Knollys and Keach, with three others. The request was for 'a general meeting here in London of two principal brethren, of every Church of the same faith...in every county respectively.' This body is merely what is now known as an 'Association,' and it 'disclaimed all manner of superiority or superintendency over the Churches,' on the ground, that it

Baptists of Great Britain

had 'no authority or power to prescribe or impose any thing upon the faith and practice of any of the Churches of Christ, their whole intendment being to be helpers together of one another, by way of counsel and advice.' At its fourth meeting in May, 1692, there were one hundred and seven associated Churches, and the Assembly voted: 'That no Churches make appeals to them to determine matters of faith or fact; but propose, or query for advice.' At this time, the General Baptists had fallen into great trouble by making their Assembly a court of appeals, and the Particular Baptists resolved to take warning and escape that fate. For some cause, which does not appear, the London Churches dropped out of the Assembly after 1694, but the country Churches continued to meet, down to 1730, and the records of their meetings are still preserved.

Another body, called indifferently the 'London Association' and 'Assembly.' was organized in 1704, by delegates from thirteen Churches. At its first meeting it gave a most decided condemnation to Antinomianism. The doctrine of Tobias Crisp disturbed the Baptists at that time, as well as the Presbyterians and Independents; which doctrine was in substance, that God could lay nothing to the charge of an elect person, on the ground of Christ's righteousness imputed to him; hence, he lived in complete sanctification, although he committed much sin. On this subject the Assembly said: 'That the doctrine of sanctification by the imputation of the holiness of Christ's nature, does, in its consequences, render inherent holiness by the Holy Spirit unnecessary, and tends to overthrow natural as well as revealed religion.' This was in no sense, however, a judicial decision to be followed by discipline, in case it were rejected, but as 'the opinion of the Assembly.' The supposed strong government of the General Baptist Assembly brought them into conflict with an eminent Sussex pastor, of learning and piety, concerning his views of the nature of Christ; one Matthew Caffyn. Mr. Wright charged him with defective views touching our Lord's divinity, and he satisfied the Assembly that he was sound on that subject, and also on the doctrine of the Trinity. But Wright saw an implied rebuke in the Assembly's exoneration of Caffyn, and withdrawing from the Assembly, he began to agitate the matter amongst the Churches. Caffyn was led into public controversy, and after a while, ran into teachings substantially Arian. Thus two parties sprang up, and four times the Assembly was disturbed with contention until, in 1698, Caffyn's doctrines were declared heretical, in consequence of which some Churches seceded and formed another General Association. This breach was never healed. Thus, the Presbyterian powers assumed by the Assembly failed to prevent either heresy or schism; as might have been expected, and by 1750 a majority of the General Baptists became Anti-Trinitarians. The Assembly continues to this day, meets every Whitsuntide, the shadow of its former self, and is still Anti-Trinitarian.

But, decline amongst the Particular Baptists was very marked also. Antinomianism and hyper-Calvinism struck the Churches with a blight that was fatal not only to their growth, but often to their existence. Calvinism had taken a most repulsive form, which presented God in a severe and magisterial light only, and which led men to look upon him with distrust, as oppressive and unjust. True, all England was in a state of religious stagnation. Worldliness characterized the Church and infidelity was rampant; the Stuart period was bearing its natural fruit, and the Baptists went down in the scale with the rest. Under persecution they multiplied on every side, and for a time toleration almost killed them. Yet, even then there were found amongst them men of consecration, learning and zeal.

Dr. JOHN GALE was one of these, whose name has come down to us with great honor. Though an Englishman by birth, he was educated at Leyden, possibly because Dissenters could not then take

degrees at the English Universities. At the age of nineteen he became a Doctor in Philosophy, and after studying at Amsterdam, under Limborch, in 1705 he became assistant pastor of the Church in Paul's Alley, Barbican. With his accomplishments in Latin, Greek, Hebrew, history and divinity, he was a powerful preacher, who possessed great refinement of religious feeling. Wilson says: 'His voice was clear and melodious; his style perspicuous, easy and strong; his method exact; his reasoning clear and convincing; and his deportment in the pulpit easy, yet accompanied with a seriousness and solemnity becoming the work in which he was engaged. He had an almost irresistible power over the passions, which he ever used agreeably to reason, and directed to the profit and advantage of his hearers.' But he died in his forty-first year. He is best known to us by his 'Reply to Dr. Wall's History of Infant Baptism.' This reply is a specimen of candid scholarship seldom met with in the annals of religious controversy.

But the man who made the deepest mark upon the Baptists of his time was JOHN GILL, a native of Kettering, Northamptonshire, born in 1697. Very early in life he gave evidence of exceptional gifts, and his friends tried in vain to secure his admission to one of the Universities; but under private teachers he became a superior scholar in Latin, Greek and logic. He was baptized when nineteen and entered the ministry at twenty three. After the death of Benjamin Stinton, successor to Keach, in Horsleydown, John Gill was proposed as Stinton's successor, but on putting the question to vote a majority rejected him, when his friends withdrew and formed the Church afterward located in Carter Lane, Tooley Street, March 22, 1719, and on the same day he became its pastor. Gill's party worshiped for some years in the school-room of Thomas Crosby, the historian, until Reach's Church, which they had left, built a new chapel in Unicorn Yard, when they went to the old chapel in Goat Street, which Keach's people had ceased to use. Here the doctor preached until 1757, when they built for him a new meeting-house in Carter Lane, where he continued until his death in 1771. After many years of study he became a profound scholar in the Rabbinical Hebrew and a master of the Targum, Talmuds, the Rabboth and the book Zohar, with their ancient commentaries. He largely assisted Dr. Kennicottm his collation, and published a dissertation concerning the antiquity of the Hebrew language, etc. He was a prolific author, producing amongst many other weighty works, his 'Cause of God and Truth;' his 'Body of Divinity;' and his learned 'Commentary on the Bible.' Toplady, his intimate friend, says of him, that 'If any man can be supposed to have trod the whole circle of human learning, it was Dr. Gill...It would, perhaps, try the constitutions of half the literati in England, only to read with care and attention the whole of what he said. As deeply as human sagacity enlightened by grace could penetrate, he went to the bottom of every thing he engaged in...Perhaps no man, since the days of St. Austin, has written so largely in defense of the system of grace, and, certainly, no man has treated that momentous subject, in all its brandies, more closely, judiciously and successfully.'

He was also a great controversialist as well as a scholar. On this subject Toplady adds: 'What was said of Edward the Black Prince, that he never fought a battle that he did not win; what has been remarked of the great Duke of Marlborough, that he never undertook a siege which he did not carry, may be justly accommodated to our great philosopher and divine.' And yet, with all his ability, he was so high a supralapsarian, that it is hard to distinguish him from an Antinomian. For example, he could not invite sinners to the Saviour, while he declared their guilt and condemnation, their need of the new birth; and held that God would convert such as he had elected to be saved, and so man must not interfere with his purposes by inviting men to Christ. under this preaching his Church

Baptists of Great Britain

steadily declined, and after half a century's work he left but a mere handful. He did not mean to teach Antinomianism, and yet, in 1755, he republished Dr. Crisp's works, which had given rise to so much contention, with explanatory notes, defending Crisp from the charge of Antinomianism, although his doctrines had fallen like a mildew upon the Churches of the land, and none now pretend that Crisp was a safe teacher.

JOHN RIPPON succeeded Dr. Gill as pastor at Carter Lane. He was born in Tiverton, Devonshire, April, 1751, and at sixteen became a servant of Christ. At seventeen he entered Bristol Academy, and at twenty-one became pastor in London, filling the same pastorate sixty-three years, or till 1836. Not so learned or profound as Gill, his preaching was fuller of life and affection, so that for years his Church was the largest of the Baptist faith in the metropolis, numbering four hundred members. He was extremely judicious and popular. He prepared a selection of one thousand one hundred and seventy-four hymns, which were used in his congregation to the day of Mr. Spurgeon, his successor, who revised and uses it still. Rippon also established and conducted the 'Baptist Register,' a monthly, from 1790 to 1802. He founded almshouses in Carter Lane, but when London Bridge was erected in 1832, they were removed to make way for its approaches. He died in 1836, aged eighty-five, and sleeps in Bunhill Fields.

This period is noteworthy for the STENNETT FAMILY. Dr. Edward was a physician, born A.D. 1663. In the reign of Charles II he dwelt in the castle at Wallingford, Berkshire. Regardless of danger he preached regularly, and his great ability as a physician led the gentlemen of the neighborhood to shield him from calamity. His son; JOSEPH STENNETT, became a Christian early in life under the instructions of his parents. They gave him a good education in philosophy, the liberal sciences and languages, as French, Italian, the Hebrew and other tongues. In 1690 he became pastor of the Seventh-Day Baptist Church, meeting in Pinner's Hall, London, and labored there until his death, 1713. He ranked as a leader in the ministry for piety, eloquence and authorship. When William III escaped assassination, Mr. Stennett drew up an able address of congratulation for the Baptists, and presented it to the king; and Queen Anne sent him a present in acknowledgment of his thanksgiving sermon for the victory of Hochstedt. He published three octavo volumes of sermons, a version of Solomon's Song, a translation from the French of the 'Discoveries by the Spaniards in America,' with many hymns on the ordinances and other subjects. Tate, the poet laureate, commended his poetry; and Sharp, Archbishop of York, desired him to revise the English version of the Psalms. Promotion was tendered him in the English Church, which he declined, for he was a sincere Baptist and remained amongst his own people. In 1702 David Russen wrote a little book against the Baptists, which attack Mr. Stennett answered, with uncommon dignity and learning. He took the measure of his foe from the start, and something of his style may be seen in the opening paragraph of his preface. 'If the author of the book to which this is an answer (who always affects to be thought very learned and sometimes abundantly witty) had only looked down upon the Anabaptists with that contempt with which they are used to be treated, and had barely diverted himself with the ignorance and folly he pretends to find among them, I should scarcely have given him or myself the trouble of an answer; for this treatment would have rendered them not so much the object of hatred as of compassion. But when his divertisement is cruel, and while he throws firebrands, arrows and death, he seems to be mightily satisfied with the sport. I hope none can justly blame me for endeavoring to turn aside the edge of his reproaches by a modest defense. For as little sense as the "Anabaptists" have, they can feel when their reputation is wounded; and as ignorant as

they are, they have learned of the wisest of men to value a good name more than precious ointment, especially when they believe that to be the truth which is struck at through their sides under the character of a fundamental error.'

This frank courtesy and urbanity never forsook him in the discussion, while he vindicated the truth with a giant's hand. So sweet was his spirit and so dignified his manner, that when his grandson proceeded to a similar work, many years afterward, he begged that his grandfather's mantle might fall upon him, saying: 'The example of a much honored ancestor, who has not only done singular justice to the argument itself, but, in the management of it, has shown a noble superiority to the rudest and most indecent invectives, that were, perhaps, ever thrown out against any set of men professing Christianity.' Joseph Stennett's work on Baptism had great influence in its day. It was of him that Dan ton wrote the doggerel: 'Stennett the patron and the rule of wit, The pulpit's honor and the saint's delight.'

The second JOSEPH STENNTETT, and the third preacher in the family, was the son of the above-named, and was also a Seventh-Day Baptist. He was born in London in 1692, and died in 1758. He was thoroughly educated, united with the Church at sixteen, and became pastor of the Church at Exeter at the age of twenty-two. When he was forty-five he succeeded his father as pastor of the Church in Little Wild Street, London, a Church which attained great note in the denomination. He was highly honored in the metropolis as a man of large attainments and many graces of character. The Duke of Cumberland submitted his name to the University of Edinburgh, in 1754, for the degree of Doctor of Divinity, which honor was granted. Onslow, the Speaker of Parliament, Gibson, the Bishop of London, and several of the ministry of George II, numbered him amongst their personal friends; and he enjoyed the full confidence of the Baptist, Presbyterian and Independent pastors of London, in whose behalf he submitted an address to the king. He had two sons, members of his Church, and in turn both of them became his assistants in the pastorate. The eldest, the third Joseph Stennett, and the fourth preacher in the line, became his father's assistant April 2, 1740, and served in that capacity for two years and a half, when he settled as pastor of the Baptist Church of Coate, Oxfordshire. Little is known of him beyond this.

SAMUEL STENNETT, his brother, was the fifth and most famous in this preaching family. He was born in Exeter in 1727, was educated under all the advantages of the day and became eminent for his knowledge of the Greek, Latin and Oriental languages, and of sacred literature in general. This ability, with great consecration to God, suavity of manner, cheerfulness of spirit and purity of heart, secured for him the universal love of his brethren. The degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by the University of Aberdeen, in 1763. He had been immersed by his father at Exeter before he came to London, and became a member of the Church in Little Wild Street. In order to avoid perplexity, it may be desirable to give a brief sketch of this Church. It was one of a community of branches forming but one Church and meeting in various places. Prior to 1691 they were all Arminian, but in that year this branch declared itself independent and Calvinistic, and bought the chapel in Little Wild Street. This building had a curious history. The Portuguese had first occupied it for Roman Catholic worship, and the Spanish ambassador for the same purpose, after which it fell into the hands of the Baptists; but it was rebuilt in 1788. The Baptist Church worshiping here was never a Seventh-Day body, although it was served so long by the Stennetts, who were Sabbatarians in their personal faith. Sometimes a Sabbatarian Church used an ordinary Baptist chapel on Saturday, and oftener a non-Sabbatarian minister took the morning or afternoon service

Baptists of Great Britain

at a Sabbatarian place, and also at an ordinary Baptist church on Sunday. On this plan Samuel Stennett, who was invited to become pastor of the Seventh- Day Church which his father and grandfather had served, but who did not accept the office, yet preached and administered the ordinances to that Church for many years.

The minutes of this Church say, that at a meeting held July 30, 1747, 'having had several trials of the gifts of Brother Samuel Stennett, and having heard him preach this evening, it is agreed that he be called out into the public service of the ministry.' A year later he was chosen assistant pastor, and ten years after this, being then thirty-one years of age, he was ordained to succeed his father as pastor. On entering the pastorate he said to his Church, 'I tremble at the thought.' Dr. Gill and Mr. Walling preached at his ordination, June 1, 1758, and he remained as pastor for forty-seven years, during which he was eminent for zeal, discretion, and learning. He also stood foremost amongst the champions of religions liberty. On this subject William Jones, the historian, says: 'He wisely concluded that whilst oppressive statutes were suffered to remain as part of the law of the land, there could be no security against their proving at some future time a handle for persecution. The doctor's judicious publications upon these subjects cannot fail to keep alive a grateful recollection of his talents, and to endear his name to posterity.' Allusion is here made to his two works, appealing to Parliament for the repeal of all persecuting laws. Dr. Winter said of him: 'To be able in the line of his ancestry to trace some, who, for the cause of liberty and religion, had quitted their native country, and their temporal possessions at the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, he accounted a far higher honor than to be the offspring of nobles or of monarchs.'

We have his non-controversial works in three octavo volumes, together with a large number of his well-known hymns; such as, 'What wisdom, majesty and grace,' 'To Christ, the Lord, let every tongue' (altered in modern versions so as to begin with the third verse, 'Majestic sweetness,' etc.), and 'On Jordan's stormy banks I stand.' This last hymn appeared to have been written in 1787, the year in which Rippon commenced his 'Selections.' Rippon was personally acquainted with Stennett, for they were Baptist pastors together in London from 1773 to 1795, and in the fourth edition of his 'Selections,' published about the last-named year, this hymn is found in its original form, 'On Jordan's stormy banks,' as it is found in all the English editions down to our day. The first variation therefrom, so far as the writer is aware, is found in an American edition of the 'Christian Psalmist,' New York, 1850. Forgetting that Stennett alluded to the Jordan at Jericho, described in Josh. 3, its compilers mistook him as describing its literal banks, instead of using a bold metonymy, which speaks of the banks for what they contain; namely, waters in vehement commotion; and so they tamed him down to their own conceptions, and to 'rugged banks.' About half a dozen American compilers have retained this namby-pamby innovation, for which they might as well have used stony banks or muddy banks; for the inner and outer banks of the Jordan at that spot are both. But Spurgeon, Rippon's successor, in re-editing the old hymn book (under the name of 'Our Own Hymn-Book') which has been used in Rippon's congregation from his day, says (1866): 'The hymns have been drawn from the original works of their authors, and are given, as far as practicable, just as they were written;' and so he retains Stennett's original form, 'stormy banks,' and with it his inspiring figure. Will the reader pardon this digression, for Baptists should be the last to slaughter their own hymnists in their singing. The ministry of Samuel Stennett in Little Wild Street was peculiarly fascinating to large minds. There he immersed the renowned Dr. Joseph Jenkins, Caleb Evans, afterward President of Bristol College, and Rev. Joseph Hughes, the founder of the British and

Foreign Bible Society. Halloway, the noted engraver, sat under his ministry also; and John Howard, the immortal philanthropist, was a member of his congregation for many of the last years of his life. When Howard was young he met with an Independent congregation at Stoke Newington. But in 1756 or 1757 he took up his residence at Cardington, about three miles southeast of Bedford, and the same distance from Elstow, Bunyan's birthplace. For a considerable time he worshiped in the congregation where Gifford and Bunyan had been pastors, then under the pastoral charge of Joshua Symonds, with whom he became intimate. At that time this Church had a rupture, in which the Pedo-baptist portion of the congregation withdrew and formed a new one, Howard going with them, and contributing liberally to the erection of a new meeting-house. In 1777 Howard's sister died and bequeathed to him a house in London, and from that time he spent much of his life in that city, and attached himself to Dr. Stennett's congregation, aiding largely in rebuilding the chapel. In Stennett's funeral sermon for the great philanthropist, he quotes from a letter which Howard had written to him in Smyrna, in which he says: 'The principal reason of my writing is most sincerely to thank you for the many pleasant hours I have had in reviewing the notes I have taken of the sermons I have had the happiness to hear under your ministry. These, sir, with many of your petitions in prayer, have been and are my songs in the house of my pilgrimage. With unabated pleasure I have attended your ministry; no man ever entered more into my religious sentiments, or more happily expressed them. It was some little disappointment when any one else entered the pulpit. How many Sabbaths have I ardently longed to spend in Wild Street; on these days I generally rest, or, if at sea, keep retired in my little cabin. It is you that preach, and, I bless God, I attend with renewed pleasure.'

In the funeral sermon preached for him by Stennett, he avows that Howard 'was not ashamed of those truths he heard stated, explained and enforced in this place; he had made up his mind, as he said, upon his religious sentiments, and was not to be moved from his steadfastness by novel opinions obtruded on the world...You know, my friends, with what seriousness and devotion he attended, for a long course of years, on the worship of God among us.' Howard alludes to the character of the truths enforced by Stennett, saying: 'No man ever entered more into my religious sentiments, or more happily expressed them.' In addition to the foundation principles of the Gospel held by Howard, Stennett preached the distinctive principles of the Baptists, in their roundest form, and to these Howard listened 'for a long course of years,' truths very distasteful to others. Dr. Winter says, that Stennett had none of that 'cool indifference to religious principles, which under the specious names of candor and liberality has too much prevailed amongst many modern Christians.' Stennett also speaks of Howard's great 'candor,' and of his 'having met with difficulties in his inquiries after truth.' Concerning the subjects of this struggle in Howard's mind, neither of them informs us, but as Howard had always been an orthodox Dissenter on principle, and that Stennett 'happily expressed' his own religious sentiments, the fair inference is, that he had adopted Stennett's Baptist views.

Many of the ablest Independent pastors preached the common doctrines held by Stennett, and notably amongst them Dr. Addington, of Miles Lane. He forced Stennett into a controversy with him on Baptism, by violently attacking his principles. The latter's masterly reply filled two volumes, and if Howard did not sympathize in these sentiments, it is hard to understand the bearing of his own words, or why he listened to Stennett 'for a long course of years.' When Howard lived at Stoke Newington, his only son was christened as a babe, and at Bedford he left Symond's congregation because he would not baptize babes, giving £400 toward building a new meeting-house there, where

Baptists of Great Britain

infant baptism should be practiced, all of which shows that he had a stout conscience on the subject at that time. But when he removed to London, he not only contributed liberally to build a Baptist chapel for a man who all his life repudiated infant baptism, with all his heart, as a radical element of popery, but 'for a long course of years' he stately turned his back on places of worship where it was practiced, helping to build up those of the contrary order. On this subject Stennett says: 'With what cheerfulness he assisted in the building of this house (Little Wild Street) you need not be told. He accounted it an honor, he said, to join his name with yours.' All this indicates a serious change in Howard's mind on the subject in question, and possibly, the shameful wickedness of his only son had shaken his confidence in infant baptism as a divine institution. Without some such change, Stennett would scarcely have used this strong language: 'He was not ashamed of those truths he heard stated, explained and enforced in this place.' We have already seen that the Baptists of this period had much in common with the Society of Friends of our own times, while they had many quaint customs peculiar to themselves. In public worship the men and women sat on opposite sides of the house, the exhorting and 'prophesying' being prompted as the 'Spirit moved.' The Baptists, however, held to an ordained ministry and the need of the ordinances. Ordination was made a serious matter, and was accompanied with the laying on of hands, fasting and prayer, and the power to confer it was lodged in the individual Church. They knew nothing of our modern Councils for Ordination, but commonly, as a mere matter of courtesy, invited neighboring pastors, not as representatives of other Churches, but on their personal kindness, to take part in the public recognition services. This is still the English practice, the American Council representing other Churches being unknown there.

The marriage service amongst them was similar to that of the 'Friends' of today. They rejected the rites of the Prayer-Book and the Established clergy refused to marry them. They devised a public service of their own, therefore, in which the parties took each other by mutual consent, without the aid of a minister. After due notice the couple stood up before the congregation, holding each other's hand, and publicly took each other for husband and wife. They then drew up a contract, or certificate of marriage, and signed it, and the persons present attested it as witnesses. An exhortation was given, a prayer was offered, and the solemnity was ended. Such marriages were legal until the Marriage Act of 1753, which exempted them only in the case of Quakers and Jews, while Baptists were compelled to seek legal marriage in the Episcopal Church.

THE IMPOSITION OF HANDS was practiced in the election of deacons, and quite generally in connection with baptism, especially amongst the General Baptists, this question being a disturbing element in many congregations. Fasting also was esteemed a religious duty, but no set times were appointed for its performance. The question of feet-washing was a dividing question, and for a time this usage was practiced in some of the Churches, generally meeting stout resistance; it soon disappeared. The anointing of the sick was quite common, being approved by the example of Kiffin and Knollys, but physicians were not pushed aside, while prayer and oil were used for the recovery of the sick.

As with the Friends, 'marrying out of the Society' was strictly forbidden, and was followed by excommunication. The AMUSEMENTS OF CHURCH MEMBERS were carefully supervised. The old records give numerous instances of discipline for card-playing, dancing, cock-fighting and playing at foot-ball. A 'flouting apparel' was condemned, and what is now known as the Quaker costume was worn by the Baptists, and borrowed by the Friends. Some matters in domestic life, as

between husbands and wives, servants and masters, were subjects of discipline. Borrowing and lending, 'idleness in their calling,' 'covetousness,' 'lying and slandering,' 'obstinacy of temper,' 'negligence and extravagance,' came under disciplinary offenses.

They also fell into other customs of doubtful Bible authority. We learn from several sources that it was not uncommon to choose deacons and even pastors by the CASTING OF LOTS. The Warboys Church elected both a deacon and elder in this way in the year 1647. But a more curious instance occurred in 1682, when Bampfield and his people wished to select a site for a chapel. They could not agree which to take out of three places. Therefore they laid aside their own prudential determinings, and after they had sought the Lord to choose for them, did refer the determining of it wholly unto him. Lots were prepared, one for each place, 'and that they might not limit the sovereign will of the All-wise, a fourth blank. Having agreed upon one to draw the lot, they all looked up to the God of heaven, expecting his allotment. The lot, being opened, spoke Pinner's Hall.' This custom was common amongst various Puritan sects in the seventeenth century.

Many of the Churches observed LOVE-FEASTS before the Lord's Supper, but as this early practice was not held to be obligatory and perpetual, it never became general, nor was it recognized in their Confessions. But great stress was laid upon the CARE OF THE POOR in the Churches, and for this there was especial need in consequence of persecution. Heavy fines and long imprisonments despoiled their substance, tore husbands and wives apart, and brought starvation to their children, besides disinheriting them for their father's religious views when he was dead. This drove them to consider themselves as one great family, in which the strong should help the weak, and created a sort of voluntary communism amongst them. It was a standing rule in some Churches for each member to make his contribution to the treasury every Sunday, and so by plainness and economy each lived for the other, and in times of calamity all gave a willing response to the needy.

MINISTERIAL CLUBS became a curious feature amongst the Baptists. One, composed of Calvinistic ministers, was organized as early as 1714, and met weekly at a London coffee-house. The rent of a room in which one club had been held was four guineas a year, but it was raised sixteen shillings 'in consideration of the rise of tobacco,' a side-light on the doings of the club. Their weekly meetings were more than social gatherings, for they carried through so many local plans that at one time there was danger that one club would arrogate to itself and exercise the authority of a synod of elders. Country Churches, seeking pecuniary aid, must first appeal to this club for its sanction. It gave advice concerning the establishment of new Churches and the relations of pastors to their flocks, settled Church difficulties, kept close watch over the lives and opinions of its own members, and exclusions were frequent for heresy and ill-conduct. The London Baptist Board is the lineal descendant and survivor of one of these clubs, though the character of its meetings and the nature of its functions are so changed as scarcely to be recognizable.

The Six-Principle Baptists established a General Assembly in March, 1690, but part of them dissented from all the Confessions of their brethren, as savoring of human creeds. Some of them were Calvinistic and some Arminian, but all accepted and laid special stress upon the six principles enumerated in Heb. 6:1,2; namely, Repentance, faith, baptism, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal life. John Griffeth was their principal writer, and many of the Welsh Churches practiced the laying on of hands in receiving members. At their best estate they numbered but eleven 'Churches in England, which gradually united with the other Baptists, and vanished as a distinct people. A few of them, however, are still found in Rhode Island.

Baptists of Great Britain

ABRAHAM BOOTH wielded great influence amongst the Baptists at this time. He was born in Derbyshire, 1734, and at twenty-one united with the General Baptists, and soon became pastor of a Church at Kirby-Woodhouse. His doctrinal views were stoutly Arminian, and he wrote a 'Poem on Absolute Predestination,' in which he handled the doctrines of Calvinism with such great severity as to excite doubt in his own mind; so that, on a fuller investigation, he 'renounced' his poem as 'detestable' in his own sight. He wrote his most able work on 'The Reign of Grace,' and submitted it to the saintly Venn, who not only persuaded him to publish it, but took enough copies of it himself to pay for the printing. It passed through many editions, and made its author famous. He left the General Baptists about 1765, and became pastor of the Little Prescott Street, Particular Baptist Church, London, where he remained for thirty-seven years. Here he was very active and useful, being the author of eight distinct works, amongst them his 'Pedobaptism Examined,' which is characterized by great research, and has never been fairly answered. He had much to do with founding Stepney College; and for his candor, purity and consecration to Christ became one of the brightest lights in London. He died in 1806, in his seventy-third year.

A few words about THE IRISH BAPTISTS may properly close this chapter. We have already seen that, in the introduction of Christianity, Ireland abounded in those large baptismal occasions wherein many thousands were baptized in a day. For hundreds of years this practice was continued, as Irish ecclesiastical history shows, and as is attested by the ruins of several elaborate baptisteries still extant, amongst which is that of Mellifont. In the early Middle Ages the Irish Christians were amongst the first scholars in Europe, but the Danish and English conquests reduced that fair land to gross ignorance. It was then, as now, largely Catholic, but Protestantism grew under Henry and Edward, his son. Mary attempted to frustrate it by persecution but Elizabeth protected it, and under James I the province of Ulster was filled with colonists from Scotland, who laid the foundations of Irish Presbyterianism. Under the treachery of Charles I, who hoped for the support of Catholics, the vile insurrection of Catholics and massacre of Protestants took place in 1641. As the strength of Cromwell's army consisted of Baptists and Independents; when he overran Ireland, 1649, Baptists abounded in his forces, and they organized Churches as opportunity served. It is reported by Thomas Harrison, in writing to Thurloe, 1655, that there were twelve governors of towns and cities who were Baptists, with ten colonels, three or four lieutenant-colonels, ten majors, nineteen or twenty captains, and twenty-three officers, on the civil list. Fleetwood, the governor, Colonel Jones and a majority of the Council which governed Ireland, are said to have been Baptists. Both the Independents and the Presbyterians complained of their preponderance in official places, and Richard Baxter bluntly said, 'In Ireland the Anabaptists are grown so high that many of the soldiers were rebaptized as the way to preferment.'

Probably the first Irish Baptist Church since the Reformation was formed in Dublin by Thomas Patience, assistant pastor to Kiffin in London. The date is not clear, but in 1653 a Church was found there, with others in Waterford, Clonmel, Kilkenny, Cork, Limerick, Wexford, Carrickfergus and Kerry. It is most likely that these were largely English, and their republican principles were so staunch that they opposed Cromwell's Lord Protectorate, and he sent over his son, Henry, to watch and influence them. After the Restoration, 1660, their feeble Churches began to decline, though a few of them continued; and after a hard struggle, we have but 23 Churches and 1,639 communicants in Ireland at this day. They deserved to decline, for, as they came in with the conquering army, they so far forgot their principles as to accept State pay with the Independents and Presbyterians. Their

course was severely condemned by the Welsh and English Baptists as a sacrifice of their principles, but in 1660, by a special inquiry, they were deprived of this State support, to the gratitude of their British brethren.

The most illustrious of the Irish Baptists is Dr. ALEXANDER CARSON. Born in the north of Ireland in 1776, he became, perhaps, the first scholar in the University of Glasgow, and settled, as a Presbyterian pastor, at Tubbermore, 1798, where he received £100 per year from the government. He was a Greek scholar of the first order, and might have become Professor of Greek in the University of Glasgow on signing the 'Standards' of the Church of Scotland. But he gradually adopted Baptist views, gave up his living, and gathered a little band of Baptists about him in a Church without a meeting-house, and, with himself, enduring deep poverty. In his day he was probably the leading scholar in the Baptist ranks in Britain, and was a voluminous writer and profound reasoner. His work on Baptism has no superior and few equals. Some have called him the 'Jonathan Edwards of Ireland,' and with reason; for it is doubtful whether Ireland has produced his equal since the death of Archbishop Usher. He died in 1844, after nearly half a century spent in the ministry; but his name is fragrant wherever his works are known.

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

There are distinct pre-Reformation traces of Baptist principles and practices in Scotland. Councils were held at Perth in the years 1242 and 1296, the canons of which require that in baptism, 'Before the immersion the aforesaid words should be pronounced.' In Holyrood Chapel was a brazen font in which the children of the Scotch monarchs were 'dipped,' which was removed by the English in 1544, and destroyed in the time of Cromwell. The *Edinburgh Encyclopaedia* states, that sprinkling was never practiced in Scotland in ordinary cases till 1559, when it was introduced from Geneva. Many of Cromwell's army, which went to Scotland in 1650 under command of Monk, were Baptists, who kept up religious worship in their camps and immersed the converted soldiers. When Monk left the army, in the beginning of 1653, to command the fleet against the Dutch, he left Major-General Robert Lilburn in command of the troops in Scotland. Monk had been opposed to the Baptists, but Lilburn, being a stout Baptist himself, afforded his soldiery every facility for the spread of their principles. He was anxious to employ Baptist chaplains, for he said that there 'were divers honest Scotch people that longed to be gathered into the same gospel order with themselves.' When some of the troops were garrisoned at Leith and Edinburgh, they formed Baptist Churches; and we are told that many persons were immersed in the water of Leith, which passes Edinburgh on the north and falls into the Frith of Forth at the town of Leith. Amongst these was Lady Wallace of Craigie. Troops were stationed also at Cupar in Fife, where a Mr. Brown preached, and immersed several persons in the river Eden. In 1653 the fourth edition of the Confession of Faith, framed by the London Churches, was published in Edinburgh. It was accompanied by a Preface, signed by Thomas Spencer, Abraham Holmes, Thomas Powell and John Brady, by appointment of the Churches in Leith and Edinburgh. The army remained in Scotland from 1650 to 1659, but Lilburn was in command only about a year, when Monk resumed command.

Baptist principles spread so rapidly in Scotland, that Presbyterians became alarmed, and at a meeting held in Edinburgh, October 1651, some of the elders expressed the opinion that children should not receive baptism until they made confession of faith. Some ministers also were complained of, as Alexander Cornell, of Linlithgow, and Thomas Charteris, of Stenhouse, because they 'baptized old people, maintained Anabaptism and would not baptize infants.' Whitlock writes,

Baptists of Great Britain

that, in 1652, Parliament issued a declaration against the Scotch Dippers; and in 1653, George Fox complains of the firm resistance which he met from the Baptists of Carlisle, Leith and 'Edenbro,' but claims a great victory over them. John Knox, afraid of 'their poison,' plied his powerful pen to write them down. They were also bitterly persecuted, for on January 24th, 1654, they presented to Monk, the 'commander-in-chief of all the forces in Scotland, the humble address of the baptized Churches, consisting of officers, soldiers *and others*, walking together in gospel order, at St. Johnston's, Leith and Edinburgh, for toleration or freedom quietly to worship God; which freedom we conceive is a fruit of the purchase of our dear Redeemer.' But when Heath reached Leith, 1659, he shut up Colonel Holmes and all the other Baptist officers there, first in Timplallan Castle, and then on Basse Island. The fact, that Baptists had become so numerous, both in the army and navy, and were taking such high ground against the assumptions of Cromwell. excited the fear of the rulers that they would rise, seize the government and proclaim freedom of conscience for all. Guizot writes: 'The king's interest is also supported by the Presbyterians, although they are republicans in principle; and it is only the fear that the Anabaptists and other sectaries may obtain the government, which leads them to oppose the present authorities.'

Baptist opposition to Cromwell's aggressions cost him much trouble, and, broad as he was, he began to persecute them, as is clearly shown in a letter sent to him and preserved by Thurloe, his secretary, which puts some very troublesome questions to him. After saying that Baptists had 'filled' his 'towns, cities, provinces, castles, navies, tents and armies,' the writer asks him whether, '1. You had come to that height you are now in if the Anabaptists had been as much your enemies as they were your friends? 2. Whether the Anabaptists were ever unfaithful either to the Commonwealth, etc., in general, or to your highness in particular? 3. Whether Anabaptists are not to be commended for their integrity, which had rather kept good faith and a good conscience, although it may lose them their employment, than to keep their employment with the loss of both?' Then the writer asks: 'Whether one hundred of the old Anabaptists, such as marched under your command in 1648, 1649, and 1650, etc., be not as good as two hundred of your new courtiers, if you were in such a condition as you were at Dunbar?' This last allusion is to the battle which Cromwell won near Edinburgh, with ten thousand troops, many of whom were Baptists, over thirty thousand Scotch soldiers.

All record of Baptists, however, in Scotland, is lost, from 1660 to something beyond 1700. Sir William Sinclair, of Keiss, Caithness, was immersed in England, and returned to Scotland to preach there; he immersed his candidates, and formed a Baptist Church upon his own estate, but suffered much. The Baptist Church at Keiss was formed about 1750, and is now the oldest in Scotland. The next, in point of age, is the Bristo Place Church, Edinburgh, which came into existence on this wise: Rev. ROBERT CARMICHAEL, who had been pastor of a Glassite Church in Glasgow, and of a Scots Independent Church in Edinburgh, came to reject infant baptism, and went to London, where he was immersed by Dr. Gill, October 9th, 1765. On returning to Edinburgh, he baptized five members of his former Church, and formed a Baptist Church, which met in St. Cecilia's Hall, Niddry Street. Archibald McLean, had been a member of Carmichael's Church in Glasgow, and came to Edinburgh, where he was also baptized. He organized what is now the John Street Baptist Church in Glasgow, baptizing its first members in the Clyde, near Glasgow Green. In about a year, McLean became colleague to Carmichael, who removed to Dundee in 1769, when McLean was left as pastor proper, with Dr. Robert Walker, a well-known surgeon, as joint elder. McLean was born at East Kilbride, 1733, but early in life resided in the Island of Mull, where he acquired the Gaelic language.

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

At school he became a fair Latin scholar, and afterward studied Greek and Hebrew. When young, he heard Whitefield preach and was largely influenced thereby. In 1746, he became a successful printer at Glasgow, where he remained till 1767, when he removed to Edinburgh. While pastor in Edinburgh he wrote much; as, a work on Christ's Commission, a 'Commentary on the Epistle to the Hebrews,' and a 'Review of Wardlaw's Abrahamic Covenant.' His works were collected and published in seven volumes, 1805; he died December 21st, 1812, at the age of about eighty, his life having been wonderfully blessed of God. Although not the first Scotch Baptist in point of time, yet his labors and writings exerted so much influence, that in this respect he may be called their founder.

ROBERT HALDANE was born in London, 1764, being a babe there when Gill baptized Carmichael. He studied at the High School and University of Edinburgh and removed to Airthrey in 1786, where he inherited a large estate. He became a great writer and philanthropist, giving \$350,000 for charitable purposes within fifteen years, and during his life educating three hundred ministers of the Gospel at an expense of \$100,000. Amongst these was Dr. Bogue, of Gosport, and Mr. Ewing, of Edinburgh. At Geneva he lectured to the students on the Epistle to the Romans, who, with D'Aubigne, Malan, and Gaussen, were delighted listeners. He published his 'Exposition of Romans,' also his 'Evidence and Authority of Revelation,' and his work on 'The Inspiration of Scripture.' He died in Edinburgh in 1842.

JAMES ALEXANDEER HALDANE, his brother, was born at Dundee, 1768. He entered the navy, as Robert had also. But early in life he became a devout Christian, and traveled all through Scotland and the Orkney Islands, preaching to great multitudes. In 1799 he was ordained pastor of an Independent congregation in Edinburgh, where he labored for nearly fifty years, with great success. His brother, Robert, built for him a large Tabernacle in 1801, and in 1808 the brothers became Baptists. Wilson gives an interesting account of their conversion. After speaking of their 'zeal in behalf of primitive Christianity,' and of the erection by them of many 'meeting-houses of large dimensions,' he relates that several persons from Scotland, in connection with them, settled in London, 1806, and formed a Church in Cateaton Street. William Ballantine, formerly of the University of Edinburgh, a man of good classical and theological attainments, was their leader. He says that 'the Messrs. Haldane, and the societies in their connection, were hitherto Pedito-baptist.' But after about two years...several persons, suspecting that they were in an error upon this point, began to study the controversy, were convinced of their mistake, and received baptism by immersion. This put the Messrs. Haldane themselves upon an examination of the subject, and the result was that they also became convinced, and were baptized, though at some interval from each other. The report of these changes reaching London, Mr. Ballantine was necessarily put upon a more careful examination of the subject, and the result was that he also renounced his former sentiments, and was baptized by immersion. But this occasioned a convulsion in the society. Mr. Ballantine relinquished his station and joined the Scotch Baptists in Redcross Street. Most of the members of this Church gradually renounced their former notions, and, we believe, they are now (1808) entirely Baptists. But they allow of mixed communion, and in this respect differ from all the other Particular Baptist Churches of London.'

During the first half of the present century REV. CHRISTOPHER ANDERSON was the foremost man among the Baptists of Scotland. He was a native of Edinburgh, born in 1782. He was converted in 1799, under the ministry of the Rev. James Haldane, when he was still a Congregationalist. Intercourse with English Baptist students at the University reawakened his

Baptists of Great Britain

interest in the subject of baptism. He had previously held that believers only should be baptized, but, not agreeing with the Scotch Baptists in their views of the ministry and church government, had not regarded the matter as a personal duty. He was immersed by one of the English students, and was promptly excluded from Mr. Haldane's Church. A few years after this Mr. Haldane himself, and his distinguished brother, Robert, committed the same offense and became Baptists. A visit of Andrew Fuller to Edinburgh awakened a desire in young Anderson to give himself to the work of the ministry amongst the heathen, and Mr. Fuller encouraged him. He entered the University of Edinburgh, and subsequently continued his studies with Rev. John Sutcliff, of Olney, one of the founders of the Baptist Missionary Society, and the originator of the Monthly Concert of Prayer for Missions. Much to the disappointment of Mr. Anderson, he found that his feeble health would not permit him to live in India. His great ability as a preacher had been already recognized, and he declined numerous calls from London and other cities, that he might found a regular Baptist Church in his native city. He began his work in 1806, and in a few years his Church had erected a spacious house of worship, which was thronged with worshipers for more than thirty years, the doors being generally besieged long before the hour of opening. Rev. Dr. Cheever, who visited Scotland in 1840, gave some vivid sketches of his character and discourses in letters to the *New York Observer*, which he concluded by saying: 'Mr. Anderson is one of the most interesting expository preachers I ever heard. His sermons are most simple, affectionate, conversational, but rich with thought and Christian feeling, and dropped from the lips of the preacher like the droppings of a full honey-comb.'

Mr. Anderson was the intimate and confidential friend of Andrew Fuller, and the chief helper in Scotland to the support of Carey, Marshman and Ward in India. After Fuller's death, and the unfortunate disagreement between the Serampore brethren and the Missionary Society, he succeeded Fuller, serving gratuitously as secretary of the Serampore Mission until the reunion, a period of twenty years. He was the leader in the Home Mission work in the north of Scotland and in Ireland, especially in the work of giving the Bible in the original native dialect. Abundant as were his pulpit and other labors; he was a diligent student and an author of great distinction. His work on 'The Domestic Constitution; or, The Family Circle the Source of rational Stability,' had a wide circulation in Europe, and several editions of it have appeared in America. But the crowning work of his life was 'The Annals of the English Bible.' It cost him fourteen years of toil, involving repeated journeys to the Continent, and to the homes of Tyndale and Coverdale in England, in order that the work might be trustworthy in the utmost degree. The story of the suffering fathers, who sought to give the people the word of God in their mother-tongue, is simply and eloquently told, and the work is a monument of erudition. Mr. Anderson was one of the most popular of Scottish preachers, ranking with Wardlaw, Chalmers, Guthrie and Candlish, until his voice became impaired by sickness. His Church was called an English Baptist Church, to distinguish it from those Churches which had a plurality of elders. It was composed entirely of believers immersed upon confession of Christ, and practiced restricted communion. Mr. Anderson died in 1852. His funeral sermon was preached by his friend for more than fifty years, Dr. Wardlaw, of Glasgow. Dr. Cheever says of him: 'Mr. Anderson's conversation in private was in the same interesting familiar, rich and instructive style as his preaching in public. Altogether he was one of the most heavenly minded and delightful men with whom I became acquainted in Great Britain.'

The Baptists have never been numerous in Scotland, but at this time they number 96 churches, 10,905 communicants and 86 pastors. They flourish chiefly in Edinburgh, Glasgow, Montrose and

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

Dundee. They are decidedly Calvinistic, are marked for the purity of their lives and their great missionary zeal. Their Church organizations are purely Congregational, with a plurality of elders in each Church. They observe the Supper weekly, but have been somewhat divided as to whether it should be administered when a minister is not present. In discipline they are very strict, use great plainness of apparel, and aim honestly in all things to keep the apostolic injunction to the letter: 'Stand fast in the faith.' In view of their warm discussions and many divisions on minor subjects, the question will fairly arise in inquiring minds, whether or not they understand as well the secret of keeping 'the unity of the Spirit in the bonds of peace.' Past divisions have been the fruitful source of their present weakness, but generally they have now adopted a wiser course in this respect, and their prospects are much more inviting for the future. Their ministry has been marked by many men of rare ability, notably amongst them the late Dr. James Paterson, for forty-six years pastor of the Hope Street Church, in Glasgow; Dr. Landels, late of London, now of Edinburgh; and Dr. Culross, President of the Baptist College, Bristol, England.

ALEXANDER MACLAREN, D.D., the present pastor of the Union Chapel, Manchester, is probably the most powerful pulpit orator that the Baptists of Scotland have ever produced. He was born in Glasgow in 1825, where his father was long the pastor of a Baptist Church. At fifteen Alexander was baptized by Dr. Paterson, and when little more than sixteen he entered Stepney as a student for the ministry. So thorough was his course that at its close he took his bachelor's degree at the London University with the prize for proficiency in the Greek and Hebrew Scriptures. He is a great and original thinker, who bows in the utmost veneration before the inspired word, and breathes its atmosphere. His imagination kindles much after the order of the Hebrew prophets; he holds his subject with the ease and grip of a giant; his voice is flexible and full of sympathy; his gesticulation is abundant and impressive, though often ungraceful; and his love for Christ melts his whole soul. He is nervous, abstracted, self-sacrificing, a model of rich, ornate transparency; and many who are pulpit masters themselves rank him without hesitation as the first preacher in Great Britain after the intellectual order. He has filled but two pastorates, that of Portland Place, Southampton, and his present charge in Manchester. The honorary degree of D.D. was conferred upon him by the University of Edinburgh, 1878, and lately he declined the Hebrew lectureship at Regent's Park College.

Our Scotch brethren are not wanting in distinguished laymen who honor their Churches. THOMAS SPENCER BAYNES, LL.D., stands notably amongst them. He is Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in the University of St. Andrew's, and the son of a noted Baptist minister of Somersetshire, England. He was born in 1823, converted early in life, and became a student in Bristol College with a view to entering the ministry, obtaining the Ward Scholarship in the Edinburgh University. This is a prize of ,100 per annum for three years for Baptist students. It has proved of great service, Dr. Angus, Rev. C.M. Birrell and others having obtained this honor. He was connected in Edinburgh with Christopher Anderson's Church, and frequently supplied the pulpit while his pastor was preparing his 'Annals of the English Bible.' When in the University his extraordinary, not to say phenomenal, ability and scholarship attracted the attention of the faculty, especially of Professor John Wilson, otherwise known as 'Christopher North,' and Sir William Hamilton. He was elected assistant to Sir William Hamilton, serving with popularity and distinction from 1849 to 1855. During this time he filled many Baptist pulpits as occasional and stated supply, and was a most attractive preacher. In the year 1851 he translated the 'Port Royal Logic,' adding

Baptists of Great Britain

copious notes. This work was republished in America by Lamport & Co. In 1852 he published an 'Essay on the New Analytic of Logical Forms, with Notes and Historical Appendix.' This is an exposition of the system of Sir William Hamilton. In 1857 he was appointed assistant editor of the London *Daily News*, in which position he remained for seven years. His articles on the American Civil War attracted great admiration. During this time he was also Examiner in Logic and Mental Philosophy in the University of London, and was constantly engaged in delivering lectures on his favorite studies before colleges and other public institutions. In 1864 he was elected to his present position in the University of St. Andrew's. He is a constant contributor to the *Edinburgh Review*, *Eraser's Magazine* and the *Saturday Review*, and has been for ten years past the editor of the last edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, now in process of publication. His honorary degree of doctor of laws was conferred by the University of Edinburgh.

The ENGLISH BAPTISTS were greatly reduced in numbers by certain undermining influences in the early part of the eighteenth century, but since then the current has greatly changed, and they are now stimulated with new life. Andrew Fuller's 'Gospel Worthy of all Acceptation' has had much to do in awakening this zeal. This treatise was aimed directly against that hyper-Calvinism which denies all duty to God in the unregenerate, and refuses to call them to repentance and Christ. Fuller's book kept him in warm controversy for twenty years, but moderate Calvinism triumphed completely, and was followed by an awakening of the missionary spirit; chiefly under the labors of William Carey and Andrew Fuller. The first Baptist movement in foreign missions was made at a meeting of the Northampton Association in 1784. WILLIAM CAREY was born August 17th, 1761, at Paulersbury. His father was a weaver (a descendant of James Carey, curate of that parish from 1624 to 1630), also parish clerk and village schoolmaster, so that William had a fair common-school education. At fourteen he was bound an apprentice to a shoemaker, but his thirst for knowledge was so quenchless that he habitually worked with a book before him. Finding many Greek words which he could not understand, in a Commentary, he sought help of Tom Jones, a weaver, who had abused a classical education. He became familiar with the works of Jeremy Taylor and such other authors as he could command; and Thomas Scott, the commentator, predicted that this 'plodder' would prove no ordinary man. William Manning, a Dissenter, his shopmate, led him to Christ, and at twenty-two he was immersed in the river New, near Dr. Doddridge's chapel, Northampton, by John Ryland, Jr. The baptism of a poor journeyman shoemaker excited little interest, but Ryland chanced on a prophetic text that day: 'The last shall be first.' Carey's chief desire, after his conversion, was to qualify himself for usefulness, and his remarkable gift for acquiring languages soon made him master of the Latin, Greek, Hebrew, German and French. He began to keep school, but could not govern; he said, 'The boys kept me,' and so he did not succeed well. Soon he removed to Moulton, and, under the advice of Mr. Sutcliff, applied to the Church at Olney for admission to the ministry. That high and mighty body condescended to take him into its membership, and, on hearing him preach, 'Resolved' that he be 'allowed' to preach elsewhere in small places, and that 'he should engage again on suitable occasions for some time before us, in order that further trial be made of his ministerial gifts.'

A year after this, June 16th, 1785, 'the case of Brother Carey was considered, and unanimous satisfaction with his ministerial abilities being expressed, a vote was passed to call him to the ministry *at a proper time*.' 'Call,' as here used, would mean license with us, and as the brother rather grew upon them, they licensed him to preach August 10th 'wherever the providence of God might

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

open his way.' That way was opened first at Moulton, where he became pastor, working at his trade to prevent starvation, the Church being able 'to raise enough to pay for the clothes worn-out in their service.' While teaching school, he reveled in Cook's 'Voyages Around the World,' and closely studied geography. He made a globe of leather, and traced the outlines of the earth upon it for his classes. Then the thought flashed upon him that four hundred millions of people had never heard of Christ, and that moment, surrounded by a handful of Northamptonshire urchins, with his eye on that russet globe, the great Baptist missionary enterprise was born. As is generally the case with Churches who pay their ministers next to nothing, certain cantankerous members made him much trouble. The records of the Church say that one sister 'neglected coming to hear,' and was excluded. Old Madame Britain was charged with 'excessive passion, tattling and tale-bearing, by which the peace of the Church was much broken.' They 'suspended and admonished her' to keep the unruly member under better subjection, and seem at last to have saved her, tongue and all. John and Ann Law kept the 'Workhouse,' and were charged with 'cruelty to the poor,' a charge found 'too true.' They were advised to resign their office, and were 'suspended till they do so.'

Carey removed to Leicester, where he served as pastor and predecessor to Robert Hall. There he determined to do something for the heathen and wrote on the subject. His 'Inquiry into the Obligations of Christians to use means for the Conversion of the Heathen' was published in 1792, but found few readers and produced little effect. To most of the Baptists his views were visionary and even wild, in open conflict with God's sovereignty. At a meeting of ministers, where the senior Ryland presided, Carey proposed that at the next meeting they discuss the duty of attempting to spread the Gospel amongst the heathen. Fuller was present, but the audacity of the proposition made him hold his breath, while Ryland, shocked, sprang to his feet and ordered Carey to sit down, saying: 'When God pleases to convert the heathen, he will do it without your aid or mine!' Nothing daunted, Carey continued to preach in Harvey Lane, Leicester, to teach school, work on the bench, and pursue his studies. He gave Monday to languages, Tuesday to science and history, Wednesday to lecturing, Thursday to visiting, Friday and Saturday to preparation for the pulpit, and on Sunday he preached three times. At this period Dr. Arnold gave him the use of his superior library. What Ryland called the 'Antinomian Devil' made such havoc of his Church, however, that he was obliged to dissolve it and form a new one of better materials. Soon he was cheered on finding that Fuller, Sutcliff, Pearce and young Ryland held his views on foreign missions, although Stennett and Booth stood aloof. At the October meeting of ministers, 1791, Sutcliff preached on being 'Very jealous for the Lord of Hosts,' and Fuller on the 'Pernicious Influences of Delay,' when the meeting resolved that 'something should be done.'

The Association met at Nottingham, May 31st, 1792, when Carey preached his great sermon from Isa. 54:2,3; representing the Church as a poor widow living in a cottage by herself. The voice, 'Thy Maker is thy Husband,' told her to look for an increase of family; therefore, she must enlarge her tent, and 'expect great things from God, and attempt great things for God.' This appeal settled the question. The Churches were seized with a sense of criminal neglect; but even then they were about to adjourn without doing any thing but weep, when Carey seizing Fuller's hand, demanded that the first step be taken on the spot. His heart was breaking, and his sobs compelled the assembly to stop. It was resolved, 'That a plan be prepared against the next ministers' meeting at Kettering, for the establishment of a society for propagating the Gospel among the heathen.' Such a meeting was held October 2d, 1792, and at its close twelve men met in the parlor of Mrs. Wallis, a widow, and

Baptists of Great Britain

formed the first Baptist Missionary Society. Andrew Fuller was made Secretary, Reynold Hogg, Treasurer; with Ryland, Sutcliff, Carey and afterward Pearce, as the Committee of management. They then made a subscription out of their penury of ,13 2s. 6d. Pearce preached on the subject at home, and soon sent 'the surprising sum of ,70 to the Society.'

In April, 1793, Carey and Thomas started for India, despite the opposition of the East India Company, the indifference of their own brethren, and the disdain of the public; and did such missionary work there as has not been known since the Apostolic Age. For years, however, it was doubtful whether the mission would not result in disastrous failure. The Anglo-Indian government would not allow it to be established in their territory, and the missionaries found shelter in Serampore, under the Danish governor. Here Carey printed the New Testament in Bengali, the first translation into a heathen tongue in modern times. Dr. Thomas, Carey's fellow-laborer, had given surgical attention to Krishna Pal, and in December, 1800, Dr. Carey immersed this native, together with his own son, Felix, in the Ganges, in the presence of a great multitude; soon after a second son was baptized. This faithful Hindu is the only converted heathen who has added an inspiring hymn to the songs of Christendom. He wrote the lines beginning with: 'O thou, my soul, forget no more.' In his conversion we have the first-fruits of the great Indian harvest which has followed. Since then, Christianity has wrought wonders in India, in the abolition of superstitious rites, the decline of caste and the elevation of morals.

Carey did not long engage in the active work of an evangelist. His support was light, he must master the Eastern languages, and for a time he earned his daily bread in an indigo factory. But when the Marquis of Wellesley founded a college at Fort William, in 1801, he found no man in India so fitted to fill the chair of Oriental languages as this despised missionary, who had been driven for refuge under an alien flag. He offered the post to Carey, it was accepted, and he became the leader of his age in Oriental literature and philosophy. He prepared grammars and lexicons in the Mahrata, Sanskrit, Punjabi, Telagu, Bengali and Bhotanta dialects. Wellesley pronounced his Sanskrit Grammar 'the source and root of the principal dialects throughout India.' He translated no fewer than twenty-four different versions of the Scriptures, with little aid from others, into the tongues spoken by one third of our race. [Note from Brother Cloud of Way of Life Literature: Carey actually hired many Hindu pundits to assist him in the translation work.] This was practically new work, the execution of which has enabled the Max Mullers of our day to add completeness to first attempts, by ripe scholarship. A child learns now what only the intellect of a Kepler and a Newton discovered. Well did Wilberforce say of Carey: 'A sublimer thought cannot be conceived than when a poor cobbler formed the resolution to give to the millions of Hindus the Bible in their own language.'

While Carey was quietly doing his work in India. Great Britain was kept in a ferment by war on the mission, which drew many of its ablest pens into the conflict, not only in the Reviews, but by the pamphlet and newspaper press. The *Edinburgh Review* constantly ridiculed the mission, denouncing the missionaries as 'fools,' 'madmen,' 'tinkers' and 'cobblers;' and many public men sided with that periodical. But the 'Quarterly' came to their defense, through noble men not Baptists, not the least amongst them being Dr. Adam Clark. In addition to much that the 'Quarterly' said was this: 'Only fourteen years have elapsed since Thomas and Carey set foot in India, and in that time have these missionaries acquired this gift of tongues. In fourteen years these "low-born and low-bred mechanics" have done more toward spreading the knowledge of the Scriptures among the heathen than has been accomplished, or even attempted, by all the world besides.' Carey had constant

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

struggles to maintain his health, but he had great consolation in his family, for his three sons were all converted and consecrated to the missionary work by baptism and the laying on of his own hands.' But he was oppressed by sad trouble in England, in what is now known as the 'Serampore Controversy.' While in the employ of the British government he had received about ,80,000, all of which he had devoted, beyond a bare subsistence, to the establishment of churches, schools and the support of his fellow missionaries. This was no shield, however, against the most fiery and shameful attacks of some of his own brethren in England upon him and his work. In 1825 they rabidly accused the 'Serampore College' of possessing immense wealth, of extravagant living and the assumption of unwarranted power. For a time, excitement and abuse ran wild, and men in high position condescended to disgrace themselves in these unfounded assaults. The result was that the College stood aloof from the Society from 1827 to 1837, during which time Carey fell asleep in Jesus; for he died June 9th, 1834, the greatest missionary since the Apostle Paul. His dust reposes in the mission grounds which his own toil had secured for Christ, and his missionary work never stood more firmly than today.

Carey's two colleagues were to him what Luke and Barnabas were to Paul. JOSHUA MARSHMAN received a common village education in Wiltshire, and was bred a weaver. By devotion to hard study he so improved his education that in 1794 he took charge of a school for the Broadmead Baptist Church at Bristol. Shortly afterward he was converted and baptized into that Church, and determined to become a missionary. He sailed for India in 1799, where he studied the Bengali and Sanskrit with such energy that his Oriental attainments were second only to those of Carey. For fifteen years he toiled over the first translation of the Bible into Chinese, and published it at the Serampore press. He also published a Chinese grammar and a translation of Confucius, and was joint editor with Carey of his Sanskrit grammar and Bengali dictionary. He was a lovely spirit, and was drawn to that other Israelite in whom was no guile, Henry Martyn; they often walked arm and arm together on the banks of the Hooghly, like brothers, longing to bless all about them. In 1811 Brown University conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Divinity, and in 1837 he followed Carey to his rest.

WILLIAM WARD was Carey's second colleague. He was born at Derby, in 1769, and became a printer. While still a young man he rose to be editor of the *Daily Mercury*, and subsequently of other papers in Stafford and Hull. At the latter place he was baptized, and soon began to study for the ministry; but when the Missionary Society needed a printer, he went to Serampore, took a press with him, and printed Carey's Bengali New Testament. He was a scholar of no mean attainments, and his book on the life of the Hindus, published in 1811, was long the standard work on that subject. In 1819 he visited England and the United States, and returned to his field in 1821, carrying with him \$10,000 which he had collected for the education of the native ministry in the Serampore College. Soon his health broke, and he died in 1823.

ANDREW FULLER was; however, the most important coadjutor of Carey. They had an understanding from the first, that while Carey 'went down into the well, Fuller should hold the rope;' and he held it firmly with a giant's grip, for he remained the secretary of the Society to the day of his death. Fuller was born in 1754; and while witnessing a baptism in 1770, was so deeply moved that he became a Christian, being baptized at Soham into the Church of which he became pastor in 1775. He removed to Kettering in 1782, and became an eloquent, original and successful preacher, while in theology he was one of the lights and leaders of the world. He loved to see the Churches

Baptists of Great Britain

shake off the shackles of hyper-Calvinism, for he said, in his strong language, that 'had matters gone on but a few years the Baptists would have become a perfect dunghill in society.' In 1785 he published his great essay on the 'Gospel Worthy of all Acceptation,' which divided the stagnant waters, as would a blow from the rod of Moses. Immediately he was attacked on every side, and he followed in vigorous defense, as a profound thinker and a ready debater. His 'Calvinistic and Socinian Systems Examined and Compared,' and the 'Gospel its own Witness,' did much to bring about a reform, although the contest was severe indeed. His extraordinary power in controversy and exposition presented the truth in a new light. The most complicated questions opened themselves to his massive understanding, and not only seeing them clearly himself, he possessed the power to make others see them. He had an unbiased judgment, an unconquerable resolution, a regal conscience, and a heart as tender as love could make any heart. Withal, he had a powerful body, great courage and rare sagacity. He put a new phase upon Calvinism, which has not only molded his own denomination, but has spread its leaven through all other Calvinistic bodies. Princeton and Yale both honored him with the doctorate, which, however he, declined.

Carey appears to have first seen Fuller at an associational meeting at Olney, June, 1782, where he heard 'a round-headed, rustic-looking' young minister preach 'On being men in Understanding,' and heard him read a circular letter on 'The grace of Hope.' Carey had fasted all that day, 'because he had not a penny to buy his dinner,' but, though hungry, he seems to have relished Fuller's words mightily.

Their intimacy began at a ministers' meeting in Northampton when Carey was unexpectedly called to preach. As he left the pulpit Fuller grasped his hand, and the two men, in understanding and in hope, became one for life. We have also an account of a visit which Fuller made to Carey's workshop, where he saw a rude map of several sheets of paper pasted together, on which the lines of the nations were traced, hung upon the wall. This Carey studied while he plied the hammer, the lap-stone and the awl. After they had entered the mission work together, Fuller traversed Great Britain again and again as the champion of missions, and did more to keep the Churches alive to the subject than any half-dozen men in his times. For more than twenty years his holy integrity guided the Society through all its straits, including a fierce struggle with Parliament to keep India open to the Gospel, the chief bond that has held it to the scepter of its 'empress' to this day. Before he died (1815) he saw over seven hundred natives baptized, ten thousand heathen children educated in the schools, and translations of the Bible proceeding in twenty-seven languages, and he wrote to Carey: 'The spark which God stirred you up to strike has kindled a great fire!' The late Dr. W.B. Williams expresses his conception of Fuller's might by denominating him a 'Shamgar,' 'entering the battlefield with but an ox-goad, against the mailed errorists of his island.'...'The man who encountered him in argument generally bore the marks of a bludgeon from the encounter.' Pendergast, a member of Parliament, and a great duelist, demanded of Wilberforce who this Fuller was. He seemed to have stirred that body to its center in behalf of Indian missions, and this member would challenge him to a duel. 'Wilberforce smilingly assured him that he knew Fuller, but that he was not a man who would be moved to such a conference.' His missionary correspondence was extraordinary for its amount and character, and Legh Richmond said of his public papers that they seemed to him 'like specimens from the midst of heaven by the angel in his flight, with the Gospel in his hand.' He pleaded for missions as long as he could hold a pen, having written twelve hours a day as a common thing. On May 7th, 1815, he declared his work ended, and entered into the presence of his Lord at

the age of sixty-one.

The establishment of missions in India involved THE TRANSLATION OF THE SCRIPTURES in the native tongues, and naturally this suggested the need of a society for Bible circulation. In 1804, the British and Foreign Bible Society was formed; Joseph Hughes, a Baptist minister, bore a prominent part in that work. He was appointed one of its secretaries, and became, as it has been expressed, 'the hands and feet, as he had been the head of the institution.' Its Constitution provided that its 'sole object shall be to encourage a wider circulation of the Holy Scriptures without note or comment.' Baptists were large contributors to its treasury, in some cases, being specially urged to co-operate with the Society, instead of sending their money directly to India for the printing of the Scriptures; and the missionaries cordially accepted invitations of co-operation also. In 1809 a grant of ,1,000 was made for the printing of Carey's Bengali New Testament. From the beginning Baptist missionaries were faithful to the principle of translating into the heathen languages, every word of the New Testament Greek, for which they could find equivalents. Common honesty required this, to say nothing of responsibility to God, and they made no concealment of their action, but widely avowed it in their official and printed letters. For many years the Bible Society found no fault with this rule of translation, but made numerous grants for the printing of these versions. In them, the Greek word *baptizo* was rendered by a native word which signified to immerse, because it could not in fidelity be translated otherwise. But in 1835 the Pedobaptists in the Society affected a sudden discovery that the word *baptizo* was translated by a word signifying to immerse, and began a hot controversy at once on the subject. They accused the Baptists of obtaining money under false pretenses, and of concealing the true character of the versions which the Society had been openly circulating through India for twenty-six years! By this time the final revision of the Bengali Bible, by Drs. Yates and Pearce, was ready for the press, but the Society refused to make any grant for its circulation, unless the missionaries would either transfer the Greek word, *baptiso*, as it is transferred in the common English version, or render it by some word that did not mean to immerse. That is to say, they demanded that it should be rendered 'by such terms as may be considered unobjectionable by other denominations composing the Bible Society.' These requirements made the English version the standard by which translations should be made from the Greek, instead of faithfulness to the Greek sense; and it made the wishes of 'denominations' the test of translations, instead of fidelity to the mind of the Holy Spirit who inspired the Bible.

Of course, this left the missionaries no choice of duty to God in the matter as translators. They must either leave the word untranslated, or mistranslate it, against their scholarship and conscience. The latter could not be thought of in any case, and the former would have been cowardly and traitorous to the inspiring Spirit. The translation which they did make was the only one that they could make in the Bengali dialect. It had already been commended by the Home Society, its scholarly accuracy had been approved by the Calcutta Auxiliary Society ; and up to this time the Pedobaptist missionaries had followed the same rule of fidelity and used similar words in the Persian and Hindustani versions. The Baptists said, therefore: 'If it is now proposed to set aside the original principles of the Society, and all its former work on the mission field; in order to gratify the denominational feelings of some in the Society, we will not listen to the proposition to sanction sectarian versions. The Greek original is not sectarian, and to give any version a different sense from that original, for the gratification of "denominations," is; to make a translation for sectarian ends, a thing that we cannot consent to do.' Reasonings, memorials and protests were made to the Society,

Baptists of Great Britain

but all to no effect. Accordingly, in order that the translators might do their work faithfully and preserve their honor and self-respect, the Bible Translation Society was formed, March 24th, 1840. It has been in vigorous operation ever since, having printed and distributed 4,095,000 copies of the Scriptures, at a cost of \$1,000,000. It is gratifying that the best scholarship has ever justified these translations, and at the 79th Anniversary of the British and Foreign Bible Society, Archbishop Benson took occasion 'to thank the committee very much for having put the word *immerse* in the margin of the translations. I must say that I think they were justified in this step; and I do not doubt that this conciliation, based upon the real root-meaning of the word, will have its effect.' The 'translations' to which the archbishop refers are the Indian versions under the patronage of the above Society.

The General Baptists, who had not co-operated as a body with the Baptist Missionary Society formed in 1792, formed one of their own in 1816, its chief field being Orissa, India, amongst a population of 9,000,000, principally worshipers of Juggernaut. This Society has done a blessed work. It maintains sixteen missionaries, twenty-two native preachers, and has nearly two thousand native converts in its churches. Activity in foreign missions naturally stimulated the Baptists to home mission work, and an Irish Mission Society was formed in 1814, and in 1816 another for Scotland. Considerable home work has been done through these Societies, but a much larger amount through the Associations.

Our English brethren have produced several able historians; as Crosby, Orchard, Mann, Robinson, Evans, Stokes, Jones and Ivimey. Not having room to speak of them all, a word may be said of JOSEPH IVIMEY, by no means the least in the list. He was born in Hampshire in 1773, and became pastor of the Eagle Street Church, London, in 1805. As a defender of the truth he was fearless, and won many souls to Christ, amongst whom was the late Dr. John Bowling, of New York. He baptized both his mother and father, the last at the age of seventy. His 'Life of Milton,' and 'History of the English Baptists' (four volumes), are very valuable works. His name is fragrant in all the English Churches. He died in 1830.

The strongest bond of oneness amongst the Baptists of Great Britain and Ireland has been the BAPTIST UNION. This body was originally formed in 1813, but its present Constitution was adopted in 1882. The following is its declaration of principles: 'In this Union it is fully recognized that every separate Church has liberty to interpret and administer the laws of Christ, and that the immersion of believers is the only Christian baptism.' It is practically a home missionary society, and most of the Churches and Associations are affiliated with it; but its scope of operations includes also an Annuity Fund for ministers, an Augmentation Fund (to increase the income of ill-paid pastors), and an Education Society. The last Report of the Union shows that there are in England, 1,998 churches, 2,817 chapels, 229,311 communicants. Sunday-school scholars, 386,726, and pastors, 1,416. [Note from Brother Cloud of Way of Life Literature: The Baptist Union was infected with theological modernism by the latter half of the 19th century, and Charles Spurgeon wisely separated himself from it in obedience to the Scriptures.]

MINISTERIAL EDUCATION has been earnestly fostered by our British brethren. During the first century of their history, the greater part of their leading ministers had been educated for the pulpits of the Episcopal Church, and were graduates of Universities. Others, like Gill and Carey, self-taught, were the peers of the best scholars of their times. The necessity for some plan of systematic training of ministers was early felt, and nearly two hundred years ago the academy at

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

Bristol was founded, but in 1770 the Education Society was formed in aid of that academy. Numerous ministers had been trained here before, but then the work took on the character of permanence and a wider scope of study. The institution still exists under the name of Bristol College. Besides this, Rawdon College was established in Yorkshire in 1804, which still flourishes. In 1810 the famous school at Stepney was established, but in 1856 it was removed, and is now known as the Regent's Park College, London. The Strict Baptists have a promising college at Manchester, which was founded in 1866, and is now under the presidency of Rev. Edward Barker. Besides these, there are the institutions of Haverfordwest, Llan-gollenand Pontypool, the College in Scotland and that founded by Mr. Spurgeon. Without the last named, there are about two hundred and fifty students for the ministry in these various schools. In view of these and many similar facts, Dr. Chalmers felt called upon to say of the English Baptists: 'That they have enriched the Christian literature of our country with authorship of the most exalted piety, as well as the first talent and the first eloquence... That, perhaps, there is not a more intellectual community of ministers in our island, or who have put forth to their number a greater amount of mental power and mental activity in the defense and illustration of our common faith.'

Our English brethren have produced many notable educators, but none more eminent THAN DR. ANGUS, the principal of Regent's Park College, London. He was born at Bolam in 1816; entered King's College, London; but went to Edinburgh, and in 1837 took his Master's Degree there, after competing successfully for the first prize in mathematics, logic and belles-lettres; besides taking the gold medal in moral and political philosophy. At the close of his course he gained the students' prize, open to the whole University, on the influence of the writings of Lord Bacon. He began to preach early, and before he was twenty-one became pastor of the Church so long presided over by Dr. Gill and Dr. Rippon. In 1838 Dr. Chalmers delivered a course of lectures in 'Defense of Church Establishments.' A prize of one hundred guineas was offered for an answer. Dr. Angus replied to his renowned tutor in divinity, and the examiners, Drs. Baffles, J. Pye Smith and Mr. William Tooke, unanimously awarded him the prize. For nearly ten years, 1840-49, he was Secretary of the Baptist Missionary Society; during which time there was a large increase in its funds. In 1847 he visited the West Indian Stations, to complete the independence of the Churches there. In 1839 he became Principal of the College at Stepney, now Regent's Park, which has become a powerful institution under his management. Within the last twenty years a fund of ,12,000 has been raised as a fund for the support of students, besides a sum of ,30,000 for supporting professorships of Biblical Literature at the college. A Lectureship has also been founded to bear his name. He is a finished and prolific author. His series of 'Hand-Books on the Bible,' the 'English Tongue,' 'English Literature,' etc., are most valuable productions, being widely known and used, as are his many other works. He was a member for nearly ten years of the London School Board, and for an equal term he was an examiner in the University of London. He also served as one of the late revisers of the New Testament, made for the Convocation of Canterbury. Few men are more accomplished or exert greater influence amongst the *literati* of Great Britain.

JOHN FOSTER, the great essayist, was an honor to the English Baptists. He was born at Halifax in 1770; at seventeen he became a pupil at Bristol College, having been baptized by Dr. Fawcett, and was pastor first at Newcastle. His sanctity and originality in the pulpit were very marked, as his 'Broadmead Discourses' show, yet he was never a preacher of note, being singularly subdued, and peculiarly eccentric in his delivery, and so, seldom preached to more than a handful of people. The

Baptists of Great Britain

late Rev. William Jay, of Bath, who knew him well, thus speaks of him: 'In preaching, his delivery all through was in a low and equable voice, with a kind of surly tone, and a frequent repetition of a word at the beginning of a sentence. He had a little fierceness occasionally in his eye; otherwise his face was set, and his arms perfectly motionless. He despised all gesticulation, and also all attempts to render any thing emphatical in announcement; looking for the effect in the bare sentiment itself, unhelped by any thing in the delivery, which he professed to despise.' He writes thus of himself to Mr. Horsfall: 'I have involuntarily caught a habit of looking too much on the right side of the meeting. 'Tis on account of about half a dozen sensible fellows who sit together there. I cannot keep myself from looking at them. I sometimes almost forget that I have any other auditors. They have so many significant looks, pay such particular and minute attention, and so instantaneously catch any thing curious, that they become a kind of mirror in which the preacher may see himself. Sometimes, whether you will believe it or not, I say humorous things. Some of these men perceive it and smile. I, observing, am almost betrayed into a smile myself.' He was pastor also in Dublin, Chichester, Dowend and Frome. His wonderful essays on character, romance, taste and popular ignorance, rank him amongst the first literary men of England. His thought is profound, his eloquence massive and his style very lucid. He died October 15th, 1843.

A race of singularly INFLUENTIAL LAYMEN have been raised in the British Baptist Churches, amongst whom may be mentioned Wm. B. Gurney, for his great missionary enterprise; Sir Samuel Morton Peto, for his rare piety and benevolence; Sir Robert Lush, late Lord-Justice of the High Court of Appeals, for his simplicity of heart and his professional eminence; and MAJOR-GENERAL HAVELOCK, for his skillful patriotism and consecration to Christ. His name has become so historic in connection with the late Sepoy Rebellion, that a fuller notice of him is desirable. This Christian hero was born April 5th, 1795, at Bishop-Wearmouth. His father was wealthy, and his mother was a very devout Christian, who daily gathered her seven children about her for prayer and the study of the Scriptures. He was educated at the Charterhouse, and read law under Chitty, at the Middle Temple. In 1815 he entered the army, and eight years afterward was sent to India. On the sea he consecrated himself to Christ, became a lowly follower of the Lamb, and at once made his Christianity felt upon all around him by preaching the Gospel to his fellow soldiers. He served with great distinction in Burma and Afghanistan from 1824 to 1851, when he became adjutant-general of the queen's troops in India. He had been immersed on his trust in Christ at Serampore in 1830, and had married a daughter of Dr. Marshman, the great missionary there. His custom was to spend two hours alone with God every morning, whether in camp or campaign, and, as often as he could find time, to read and expound the Scriptures to his men. His biographer gives a touching account of an officer hearing hymns floating around a heathen pagoda, and on entering, finding Havelock, with about a hundred soldiers, reading the Scriptures to them by the light of the dim lamps burning before the idols. No wonder that the troops of this splendid Christian soldier were renowned for their prudence and bravery, even to daring, or that their invincibility was ascribed to the fact that they were 'Havelock's Saints.' The general spent 1856-57 in Persia, but immediately, on the breaking out of the Sepoy Rebellion, hastened to the front, and gained many brilliant victories over Nana-Sahib, at Cawnpore, Lucknow and other places, subduing 50,000 drilled troops with 2,500 men. Parliament created him a major-general and a baronet, and gave him a pension of £1,000 a year. This thoughtful and pure servant of God died in India, November 22d, 1859, saying to Sir James Outram: 'For more than forty years I have so ruled my life that when death

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

came I might face it without fear. I am not in the least afraid; to die is gain. I die happy and contented. 'Then calling his eldest son to his side, he lovingly said to him: 'Come, my son, and see how a Christian can die!'

HUGH STOWELL BROWN stood prominent amongst the most able and useful pastors of England. His father was a clergyman of the English Church, and Hugh was born in the Isle of Man, August 10th, 1823. The following interesting statement is taken from 'Men of the Time;' he was 'nephew of the Rev. Hugh Stowell, of Manchester. He was educated partly at home and partly at the Douglas Grammar School, until he reached the age of fifteen, when he came to England to learn land-surveying. After spending about two years in mastering the drudgery and details of that business, his views underwent a change, and he repaired to Wolverton for the purpose of learning the profession of an engineer. This occupation he followed until he became of age, and he drove a locomotive engine on the London and Northwestern Railway for six months. It was his custom, after his day's work at Wolverton was done, to spend four or five hours in reading and in meditating on what he had read; and his first classical exercises were written with a piece of chalk inside the fire-box of a locomotive engine. Resolving to become a clergyman of the Church of England, he entered as a student at King's College, in his native town of Douglas, and studied there for three years. Doubts, however, came over his mind respecting the truth of the doctrines in the Liturgy and Occasional Services and Catechism of the Church of England. These doubts ultimately produced in his mind the conviction that the baptismal doctrines of the Establishment were at variance with Holy Scripture, and he accordingly became a member of the Baptist denomination. Having acted for a short time as a city missionary in Liverpool, he was appointed minister of Myrtle Street Chapel,' as assistant to Rev. James Lister. In 1848 he became sole pastor, following this venerable man, who had served the Church above forty years. Mr. Brown's ministry in the same congregation lasted for nearly the same period, and was wonderfully successful. No man in Liverpool possessed the confidence and affection of that great city more fully than he, and no man has done more to honor and bless it in all its forms of religious and benevolent life. His Church wielded a wide influence, and had grown under his pastoral labors from about three hundred communicants to almost a thousand, besides planting several branch churches and many Sunday-schools. As a preacher, Mr. Brown was strong, full of freshness and force and evangelical to the core. He was a sturdy Baptist, lovable, hospitable, generous to a fault, and without a tittle of cant in his nature. It would be hard to find a broader or truer man on earth, in all that makes true Christian manliness, than Hugh Stowell Brown. He died very suddenly at his home, February 24th, 1886, in the fullness of his strength. In person, he was large, very genial in his manner, racy as a conversationalist, true as a friend and eloquent as a preacher. His brethren loved to honor him, and in 1878 elected him President of the Baptist Union. His 'Lectures for the People,' which open all the elements of his character and genius, have reached a circulation of more than forty thousand, and it is in contemplation to erect a monument to his memory in the city which he so largely blessed.

ROBERT HALL, not the greatest scholar, theologian, or leader of the Baptists, stands probably at the head of the British pulpit as a rhetorician and orator. His father was pastor of the Baptist Church at Arnsby, near Leicester, where Robert was born in 1764, being the youngest in a family of fourteen. From his birth to his death he was feeble in body, sensitive and nervous; at the age of two years he could neither talk nor walk, and near the close of his life he said that he remembered few hours when he had not been in pain amounting to agony. But so precocious was he mentally

Baptists of Great Britain

'that his nurse taught him the alphabet from the tombstones of a neighboring' church-yard before he could talk plainly. As a boy, he displayed a passion for books, and at the age of ten is said to have read 'Edwards on the Will' and 'Butler's Analogy,' with a clear comprehension of their contents. At fifteen he entered Bristol College, where he made rapid progress and remained for three years. While there he made several attempts at oratory, with perfect and humiliating failure. In 1781 he entered the University of Aberdeen, where he remained for four years. Sir James Mackintosh was a fellow-student, but Hall outstripped all his fellows in the classics, philosophy and mathematics. He took his Master's Degree in 1785, and spent three years as classical tutor at Bristol, as well as assistant to Dr. Caleb Evans, pastor of Broadmead Chapel.

His eloquence won him fame, and the leading minds in that city were drawn around him in crowds, but his orthodoxy soon fell into question and not without reason. Consciously or unconsciously he was affected all his life by Socinian principles, not only on the Trinity and the personality of the Spirit, but on correlated doctrines. His admiration of Socinus was enthusiastic, as is seen on various points, and on none more clearly than in his novel views on baptism and communion, their relations to each other and to Apostolic Christianity. He not only rejected the federal headship of Adam, but he held the semi-materialistic view that 'Man's thinking powers and faculties are the result of a certain organization of matter, and that after death he ceases to be conscious till the resurrection.' In 1790 he became pastor at Cambridge, successor to the distinguished Robert Robinson, where he remained fifteen years. There he stirred men of the highest mental powers and culture, and under the shadow of the University, with the reputation of 'Prince of the Pulpit,' he was stimulated to his highest efforts. In 1793 he published his great 'Apology for the Freedom of the Press,' which moved the whole country. Partial insanity overtook him, with entire bodily prostration, and he was compelled to resign his charge in 1806, not, however, before he had published his 'Modern Infidelity' (1801) and his 'Sentiments Proper to the Present Crisis' (1803), productions which, for their eloquence, carried his fame through the realm.

Recovering, from 1806 to 1819 he was pastor at Leicester. Here he published his 'Terms of Communion' in 1815, but in 1819 accepted the pastorate of Broadmead at Bristol, where he remained till his death, in 1831; when a post-mortem examination showed that his aggravated disease had made the last twenty years one slow martyrdom. His moral character and private life were delightfully attractive, but he was fond of controversy, in which he was extremely pertinacious and much given to the use of polished but keen satire. God had endowed him with all the native qualities of a great pulpit orator, and he had faithfully cultivated these as gifts from God. Though his health was so uncertain he had a powerful frame, which gave him that imposing presence which prepares the auditor to attach meaning to every word and action of a true orator. His voice was not remarkable for volume, but it was fitted by sweetness and flexibility to express every emotion. His style in spoken discourse was easy and graceful, every thought being clothed in its appropriate language, and, as is natural, was without that smell of the lamp which marks his published works. His attempt there to be always labored and dignified often falls into the pompous, stilted and artificial. His private conversation is said to have been adorned by brilliant wit and other forms of relief, but he never allows one stroke of this to appear in his writings; yet, inadequately as they represent his genius, they are full of splendid rhetoric and thrilling eloquence. His bias toward what is known as philosophical Socinianism was less apparent in his later life, and he even denied that it existed, with some show of reason, especially on the atonement. But in his view of the constitution

Chapter 10 - The Scotch and English Baptists – Missions – Men of Note

of a Christian Church he is one with Socinus through and through, in that he confounds Church organization with personal Christian life, and sinks the first in the last for all practical purposes. Socinus, an Italian, born 1539, went into Poland, and in 1580 published his treatise on the question, 'Whether it is lawful for a Christian to be without water baptism?' He wrote other works on this and kindred subjects, making two Latin folio volumes of over 800 pages each; and this work occupies 30 pages, beginning at page 708, vol. i. He adopted a new position on the terms of communion, not only in opposition to all Christendom as it then existed, and had existed in all Christian history, but as it exists still; namely, that baptism is not a term of Church fellowship, and, therefore, that those who wish to enter the Church and share its privileges may do so in 'perfect union' without baptism at all. Socinus did not, with the Friends, reject both the ordinances, but held that the Supper is binding on the Christian, while baptism is not. This not only places the Supper in a false position, by making it of more consequence than baptism, but it forces him to deny that baptism is an appointment of Christ. Mr. Hall did not agree with him in denying that baptism is a New Testament institution, but, on the contrary, he held that it is and that it is only properly administered to a believer by his immersion; but they were entirely one in teaching that baptism was not essential to the reception of the Supper; therefore, that Churches should admit to the Lord's table those who are not baptized, and whom they know to be unbaptized.

Any person who carefully compares Socinus and Hall, page by page and proposition by proposition, will be struck by the step-to-step movement which leads them to the same conclusion, and in many cases with an almost exact form of expressing the sentiment, as well as with the oneness of the sentiment itself. They both deny that baptism is necessary to full membership in the Church, and to participation in its discipline and government; they teach that there are essential and non-essential truths in Christianity, and that baptism, *per se*, ranks with the non-essential; they both maintain that Paul, the apostle, required Churches to tolerate the neglect of baptism, as an exercise of Christian liberty; they both deny that an external act, such as baptism, is to be exacted of a Christian in order to membership in the Church and a place at the Supper, for that true Christianity is governed only by the internal and spiritual, as if the Supper had no external character; they both claim that love and liberality demand the reception at the Table of the baptized and unbaptized alike; and they both insist on sincerity as the chief qualification for the Supper, in keeping with the altered 'genius' of Christianity and 'the age.' Hall's position -in so far as they differ on the enforcement of baptism as an apostolic injunction – is more dangerous than the assumption of Socinus, that the Scriptures do not enjoin it at all; because it leaves the individual Christian as the supreme judge in the matter, as against the voice of the New Testament. It is this which makes his novel position so untraceable and yet beguiling. He tells us that '*the letter*' of Scripture requires men to be baptized, and he holds that all who are not immersed are not baptized, and yet, that it is displeasing to God and uncharitable to require them to obey Christ to '*the letter*.' He denies that baptism is necessary to salvation, but implies that the Supper is; and it is a matter for gratitude that no body of Christians has yet adopted his ground, either in theory or practice, excepting those who follow him in the English Baptist Churches.

CHARLES HADDON SPURGEON, whose name is a household word the world over, is the most remarkable minister of Christ now living, taking all things into the account. He was born at Kelvedon, Essex, June 19th, 1834. His father and grandfather were Congregational pastors. and his mother was an uncommonly earnest Christian, who took great pains to form the character and seek

Baptists of Great Britain

the salvation of her children. Charles's aunt, whom he named 'Mother Ann,' loved him tenderly and fostered him as her own child. Early he had a passion for books and pictures, and at the age of six delighted in Bunyan. The likeness of Bishop Bonner, whom he called 'OldBonner,' stirred his dislike because of his cruelty; and as a child he manifested great self-possession, decision, strong passions and will. His education was limited, being confined chiefly to a private academy at Colchester, kept by Mr. Leeding, a Baptist, and to a year in an agricultural school at Maidstone. His parents pressed him to enter Cambridge, but he refused, on the conviction that duty called him to active life. At fifteen he became deeply interested in his salvation, and was converted on hearing a sermon preached from Isa.45:22, by an unlettered Primitive Methodist local preacher, in a little country chapel. He then became deeply interested in Bible baptism, and laid the matter before his father. Becoming convinced that it was his duty to be immersed on a confession of Christ, he walked from New Market to Isleham, seven miles, on May 3th, 1850, where Rev. Mr. Cantlow buried him with Christ in baptism. His mother mourned his loss to the Independents; and told him that she had prayed earnestly for his conversion, but not that he should be a Baptist. He replied: 'Well, dear mother, you know that the Lord is so good, that he always gives us more than we can ask or think.'

At this time, he was a tutor in Mr. Leeding's school at New Market, which school was removed to Cambridge, and young Spurgeon accompanied it there, becoming a member of the Baptist Church in St. Andrew's Street, where Robert Hall had so long been pastor. That Church had a 'Lay Preachers' Association,' for the supply of thirteen neighboring villages with preaching. Of this he became a member, preaching his first sermon in a cottage at Teversham. From the first crowds flocked to hear the 'Boy Preacher,' and at eighteen he became pastor of the Baptist Church at Waterbeach, a village of about 1,300 people. His fame soon reached London, and he was invited to preach at the New Park Street Chapel in 1853, where, by a unanimous call, he became successor to Gill, Rippon and other worthies. His success was immediate and wonderful; without parallel he sprang to the highest rank, but not without theseverest trials. He possessed some youthful eccentricities, which to the eyes of many staid folk savored of boldness and self-conceit. On this plea, every sort of indecent attack was made upon him; he was denounced as a 'young clown,' 'mountebank,' etc., without stint, and the writer well remembers the time, when but two or three ministers in London treated him with common respect, to say nothing of Christian courtesy. But God was with him, and that was enough; his ministry has simply been a marvel, all the solemn nobodies notwithstanding. His talent for organization and administration is very large; his heart is all tenderness for destitute children, hence his orphanages; is all sympathy for poor young ministers, hence his college; and his head is a miracle amongst heads for common sense, hence his magnetic influence. Without starch, self-conceit or sanctimonious clap-trap, he acts on living conviction. As a preacher, he deals only in what Christ and his apostles thought worthy of their attention; tells what he knows about God and man, sin and holiness, time and eternity, in pure ringing Saxon; uses voice enough to make people hear, speaks out like a man to men, lodging his words in their ears and hearts, instead of making his own throat or nose their living sepulcher. He fills his mind with old Gospel truth, and his memory with old Puritanic thought, calls the fertility of his imagination into use, believes in Jesus Christ with all the power of his being, loves the souls of men with all his heart and acts accordingly. He carries the least amount of religion possible in the whites of his eyes, but a living well of it in the depth of his soul ; and the real wonder is not that God has put such honor upon him, for if his life had been very different from what it has been, even partial failure in the

hands of such a man of God would have been a new and unsolvable mystery in the reign of a faithful Christ.

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

The works of Welsh bards form the best annals of Wales down to the fourteenth century, but as they trace no line of 'heretics,' it is difficult to tell what isolated lights shone there through the Dark Ages. Nowhere in Europe was the moral night darker than in Wales in those ages. The ignorance and depravity of the Welsh clergy were shocking. Even as late as 1560 Meyrick, Bishop of Bangor, said that in all his diocese there were but two clergymen who preached. At that time the clergy were allowed to marry, but by paying a pension they could keep concubines, and a large number of his clergy kept them. Strype, in his 'Life of Archbishop Parker,' says that in 1565 two Welsh Bishops were to be appointed for the sees of Bangor and Llandaff. The queen left the archbishop to name the men for these vacancies, but he found it difficult to secure honest clergymen to fill them, and he was earnestly pressed to appoint a man to Bangor who openly kept three concubines. The primate found it necessary to commission Dr. Yale to visit that bishopric before he ventured to appoint any one. Besides, there was no Bible there and the Reformation itself scarcely affected Wales for nearly a century. For thirty years after Elizabeth had established Protestantism by law there was no Bible in the Welsh tongue. Portions of the Scriptures were translated into manuscript before the Reformation, but some of them were lost. Taliesin, a bard of note in the sixth century, gave a paraphrase in verse of a few passages, and it is said that there was a manuscript translation of the Gospels in the library of St. Asaph's Cathedral. In the latter part of the thirteenth century it was already looked upon as old, and the Archbishop of Canterbury allowed the priests to exhibit it as a sacred thing. Bishop Goldwell, of St. Asaph, was deprived of his see on the accession of Elizabeth, because he refused to become a Protestant and went to Rome, taking the manuscript with him. He died there, and possibly it is in the Vatican today. Dafydd Ddu, another bard, wrote a poetical paraphrase in the fourteenth century on a part of the Psalms, the song of Zacharias, the angel's greeting to Mary and the song of Simeon, found in Luke's Gospel. Some other fragments of Scripture were given by others. But Dr. Llewelyn says, in his 'History of Welsh Versions,' that 'for upward of seventy years from the settlement of the Reformation by Queen Elizabeth, for near one hundred years from Britain's separation from the Church of Rome, there were no Bibles in Wales, but only in the cathedrals or in the parish churches and chapels.' The first Welsh New Testament, made chiefly by Salesbury, was printed in London in 1567, and dedicated to Elizabeth. It was published at the expense of Humphrey Toy. The whole Bible, translated by William Morgan, was first printed in Welsh in 1588.

Davis, Bishop of Monmouth, finds a wide difference between the Christianity of the ancient Britons and that of Austin in 596. The first followed the word of God, the other was mixed with human tradition. Dr. Fulk denied that Austin was the apostle of England, and charges him with corrupting the true Christianity which he found in Britain, by Romish admixture. Fabian, himself a Catholic, shows that he imposed sundry things upon the Britons, which were refused as contrary to the doctrine that they had at first received. Bede says that the Culdees followed the Bible only and opposed the superstitions of Rome. Culdee, from Culdu, is a compound Welsh word, cul, thin, du, black; and means a thin, dark man, as their mountaineers, who were noted for their godliness. The monks got possession of the Culdee colleges by degrees, and continued to preach without forming churches. Some claim that the Welsh Baptists sprang from this sturdy stock; for individuals are

Baptists of Great Britain

found in Glamorgan, the Black Mountains, Hereford and Brecon Counties, who walked apart from Rome before the Reformation. Stephens, the late antiquarian of Merthyr, thought that the bards of the Chavi of Glamorgan kept up a secret intercourse with the Albigenses. This is probable, as some of them were conversant with the Italian poets. 'Holy Rhys,' famous in 1390, was learned, and his wife was of the 'new faith' (Lollard), for his son, Iueun, was expelled from Margam Monastery for holding their opinions, or 'on account of his mother's religion.' His grandson also was imprisoned by Sir Matthew Cradoc for being of the 'new faith.' Another bard and 'prophet,' Thomas Llewelyn, was, according to an old manuscript, the first preacher to a congregation of dissenters in Wales, or, rather, he had three congregations. Sion Kent, otherwise Dr. John Gwent, a poet-priest of about that time, wrote a satirical poem, called 'An Ode to Another Book,' in which he charges said book with fifteen dangerous heresies, and warns it to remember the fall of Oldcastle. This seems to have been a highly-prized Lollard book, known as the 'Lantern of Light,' for possessing a copy of which Cleydon, of London, was burnt. The Lollards swarmed in Wales, where Oldcastle hid for four years after escaping from the Tower. He was a native of the Welsh Cottian Alps, the Black Mountains, having been born at Old Castle about 1360. It is in dispute as to when and where Baptists first appeared in Wales. There are presumptive evidences that individuals held their views from the opening of the seventeenth century, and some have thought that the first Baptist Church was formed at Olchon, 1633. Joshua Thomas, of Leominster, perhaps the most reliable authority on the subject, doubts this. He leans to the belief that there were Baptists there at that date, but says: 'The first Baptist Church in Wales, after the Reformation, was formed at Ilsten, near Swansea, in Glamorganshire, in 1649.' Howell Vaughan preached at Olchon, 1633, and it is a curious fact that the first Non-conformists of Wales sprang up in the little valley, near Old Castle, embosomed in these Black Mountains, where this noble old 'heretic' lived.

The vale of Olchon is difficult of access, and there the first Welsh dissidents found the most ready converts, who sheltered themselves in its rocks and dens. The Darren Ddu, or Black Rock, is a terribly steep and rough place, in which the Baptists took refuge, rich and poor, young and old, huddled together. It was under the Commonwealth that Vavasor Powell, Jenkin Jones and Hugh Evans formed the first Open Communion Baptist Churches in Wales, and that John Miles formed the first Strict Communion Baptist Churches there. The first Welsh Baptist Association was organized in 1651. John Miles is first mentioned February 23d, 1649, in an 'Act of Parliament for the better propagation of the Gospel in Wales.' He is named with Powell, Jones and twenty-two others, as 'approvers,' to superintend preaching in the principality. He left the clergy of the State Church and became a Baptist leader, marked for his learning and piety. He went to America and we shall meet him there.

VAVASOR POWELL was one of the strongest characters of his age. He was born of one of the best families in Wales, 1617; was graduated at Jesus College, Oxford, and entered the Established Church, as curate to his uncle, in Shropshire. One day a Puritan reproved him for breaking the Sabbath by taking part in the 'Sports,' and this led to his conversion after two years of mental agony for his sins. In 1641 he began to preach the Gospel in earnest, but, his life being threatened, he fled to London in 1642, and joined the Parliamentary army as chaplain. After preaching two years in Kent he returned to Wales, bearing a certificate from the Assembly of Divines as an accredited preacher. It bore date September 11th, 1646, and was signed by the proclator, the marshal and fifteen others, amongst whom were Christopher Love and Joseph Caryl. In Wales he preached as

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

an itinerant, a prevailing system there, for the Churches were made up of many branches, far apart. The 'Committee for Plundered Ministers' paid him a salary of ,66 10.s. per annum. They supported many such itinerants, but for learning, energy and success he excelled them all. He was constantly in the pulpit and the saddle, preaching two or three times a day, in two or three places, riding more than a hundred miles a week. There was scarcely a place in Wales where he did not preach, in church, chapel, market-place or field, during the fourteen years of liberty, 1646 to 1660; yet at that time there was not a Dissenting place of worship in Wales. Some say that the first built by the Baptists was at Hay, near Olchon, 1649; but, according to Thomas, the first was at Llanwenarth, in 1695. Powell was immersed and became a Baptist in 1656. In his 'Confession of Faith' he teaches that baptism is immersion, and believers its only subjects; but he did not hold it as the boundary of Church communion, nor were his Churches in the Baptist Association. Notwithstanding this no man fired the hatred of the Church party as he did, and no man's character was more aspersed than his, till death relieved him, October 27th, 1671. It is said that by 1660 he had formed twenty-two Churches in Wales, and had twenty thousand followers, most likely an exaggerated statement. Many of his troubles sprang from his resistance of Cromwell's later assumptions. He had denounced him from the pulpit in Blackfriars, for which cause he was arrested, he suffered every kind of persecution for preaching, and spent eight years in thirteen prisons, dying in the Fleet. His 'Confession' of thirty articles is given in a treatise, entitled 'The Bird in the Cage, Chirping.' In this he gives the faith of the Welsh Churches which he founded.

JENKIN JONES, commonly called 'captain,' was another grand sample of this early Welsh independence and suffering for Christ. He was a gentleman of property and education, who had been in the army of the Commonwealth. He raised a troop of a hundred and twenty horse for Cromwell, arming and equipping them himself. With these he kept the king's friends in Breckonshire under subjection, often appearing with the sword in one hand and the Bible in the other. Walker says that he was incumbent in his native parish, and Calamy, that he was rejected from his living, so the Church party berated him as a 'violent Anabaptist.' His presence and address were majestic; and once when going to preach in Monmouthshire, a soldier of the royal army waylaid him to kill him, but was so struck with his comeliness and bearing, that his heart failed; he heard him preach and was converted. After the Restoration his estates were confiscated, and he was imprisoned at Caermarthen. We have no account of his death.

These sketches of the real founders of the Baptist denomination in Wales will help us the better to understand the following facts. Before the death of Powell the Open Communion Baptists were much the most numerous in Wales, but after that they gradually declined. The Ilsten Church records give the following account of the organization of that Church. A Baptist Church was meeting in the Glasshouse; Broad Street, London, of which William Consett and Edward Draper were members. Miles and Thomas Proud visited this Church just when they were praying God to send more laborers into the vineyard, and these two were sent back to Wales as missionaries. On the 1st of October, 1649, they formed a regular Baptist Church at Ilsten as the result. This book claims that this was the first Church of baptized believers in the principality. It says: 'When there had been no company or society of people holding forth and professing the doctrine, worship, order, and discipline of the Gospel, according to the primitive institution, that ever we heard of in all Wales, since the apostasy, it pleased the Lord to choose this dark corner to place his name in, and honor us, undeserving creatures, with the happiness of being the first in all these parts, among whom was practiced the

Baptists of Great Britain

glorious ordinance of baptism, and here to gather the first Church of baptized believers.' Jane Lloyd and Elizabeth Proud were the first converts baptized here, but in eleven years the Church grew to two hundred and sixty members under the ministry of Miles. He also preached with great success in all the region round about, and various Churches were formed in that part of Wales. A very bitter controversy sprang up between the Strict Communion and Open Churches, and Thomas Proud was expelled for laxity on that subject by the strict brethren. After a time the Open Churches dwindled away, or fell into Pedobaptist bodies, a natural tendency. Some Baptist ministers even went so far as to accept State payment by church tithes, under the act of 1649, for the propagation of the Gospel in Wales. These were itinerants who traveled at large, and were paid by the 'Committee of the Sequestered Livings.' It may be interesting to give a copy of the certificate issued to Thomas Evans, great-grandfather of Dr. Caleb Evans:

'By the Commission for the Propagation of the Gospel in Wales. Whereas, five of the ministers, in the Act of Parliament named, bearing date the 25th of February, 1649, and entitled "An Act for the better Propagation of the Gospel in Wales," have, according to the tenors of the said act, approved of Mr. Thomas Evans the younger, to be a person qualified for the work of the ministry, and recommended him with their advice to us, that he be encouraged in the work of the ministry; we do, according to an order to us directed by the committee of five at Neath, therefore order that Mr. John Pryce, Treasurer, shall forthwith pay unto the said Thomas Evans the sum of £30, which we have thought fit to allow him towards his salary and encouragement in the work of the ministry. And this our order, together with his acquittance, shall be a sufficient discharge for the said Treasurer. Dated under our hands, the 16th of May, in the year of our Lord 1653. John Williams, Secretary.'

As soon as the Baptists saw that they had compromised their principles by this blunder, they retreated from their false position, and Powell says that he and many of his brethren 'did not take any salary at all, nor any other maintenance whatever since the year 1653.' Powell published a severe attack upon Cromwell's policy in 1655, under the title 'Word for God,' signed by three hundred and twenty-one Welshmen, most of whom were Baptists. This was a solemn protest against the 'new modeling of ministers' as 'antichristian,' and against the 'keeping up of parishes and tithes, as a popish invention.' The Llanwenarth Church felt so deeply on this matter that they entered the following on their church book: 'Whether Gospel ministers may receive payment from the magistrates.' Mr. William Pritchard (their minister) was advised to reject the offer of State money, and this record was agreed to on 'the 11th day of the 5th month, 1655, and also, that they (the Church) do withdraw from all such ministers that do receive maintenance from the magistrates, and from all such as consent not to wholesome doctrine, or teach otherwise.' As this was a branch of the Abergavenny Church and a member of the Association, it is fair to suppose that this was the general sentiment on the subject of State ministers and their reception of State money for ministerial services.

The distinctive tenets of the Baptists, their zeal and rapid progress in the principality, stirred up a formidable opposition, which took the honorable form of public debate. One such discussion took place in St. Mary's Parish Church, Abergavenny, September 5th, 1653. The subject was 'Believer's Baptism,' and John Tombes disputed first with Henry Vaughan, then with John Cragge. Their arguments were afterward published. Wood says of Tombes: 'He showed himself a most excellent disputant, a person of incomparable parts, well versed in the Hebrew and Greek languages.' He also speaks of a similar debate with Baxter, thus: 'All scholars there and then present, who knew the way

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

of disputing and managing arguments, did conclude that Tombes got the better of Baxter by far.' Probably this was the first debate on baptism in Wales, and Joshua Thomas says that more than forty persons were immersed into the Church in Abergavenny that year. But in proportion as the Baptists grew, they were assailed by pen and tongue from all quarters, and in 1656 the elders and messengers of eight Churches met at Brecon and published 'An Antidote against the Times,' in self-defense. This was probably the first Welsh Baptist book. They speak with the greatest gratitude 'of thousands of poor, ignorant, straying people' brought to Christ, and of three editions of the New Testament, and 'six thousand copies of the whole Bible,' circulated in fourteen years, since some religious liberty was enjoyed in Wales. At this time, eight Churches belonged to the Association, besides the 'Powell Baptists,' and the 'Evans' people who did not belong to it; and Thomas mentions the names of thirty Baptist ministers in Wales under the Commonwealth. But from the ascent of Charles II, May 29th, 1660, we hear no more of the Association for eight and twenty years. Persecution raged furiously against all Nonconformists in Wales, and the Baptists became, as usual, the special subjects of hate, storm and chains; prisons and doom became their gloomy fate. Before the end of June, the king's wrath burst upon the Non-conformists of Wales, followed by a series of the most iniquitous ordinances that despotism could desire. The year 1662 brought the Act of Uniformity; 1664, the Conventicle Act; 1665, the Five Mile Act; and 1673, the Test Act. Under one pretense or another, butchery held high carnival for these years. Yet, thousands would not bow the knee, and amongst them, some of the noblest Baptists that ever Wales produced. During this hot persecution the Welsh Baptists sent a petition to the king, which was presented to him personally by a member of Parliament from Caermarthen. They say: 'We dare not walk the streets, and are abused even in our own houses. If we pray to God with our families, we are threatened to be hung. Some of us are stoned almost to death, and others imprisoned for worshiping God according to the dictates of our consciences and the rule of his word.' The king, with characteristic heartlessness, sent them a polite answer, full of fair promises, but paid no more attention to the matter, and their sufferings increased day by day.

Excommunication carried with it the denial of burial in the parish church-yards, so that the Baptists were obliged to bury their dead in their own gardens, or where they could, generally in secret and at night. A godly woman in Radnorshire had been excommunicated for not attending that parish church, but had been secretly buried in its burying-ground. The enraged parson, however, had her body taken from its grave and dragged to the cross-roads, to be buried as a malefactor. There her friends erected a stone to mark the spot, but it was demolished.

Yet, even in this period of fiery persecution, we have the history of a new Baptist Church, formed under singular circumstances of persecution and hatred. WILLIAM JONES, a Presbyterian, was ejected from his parish in 1660, and imprisoned for three years in Caermarthen Castle. During that time he became a Baptist, and when liberated he went to Olchon to be immersed. On returning home he preached his new faith and, on the 4th of August, 1661, baptized Griffith Howells and five others. Howells was wealthy and educated, and on the 25th, five more persons were immersed. By July 12th, 1668, the number had increased to thirty-one, who were organized into a Church, of which Jones and Howells were elected joint elders. In 1777, one century afterward, this Church had so branched out into the counties of Pembroke, Caermarthen and Cardigan that it numbered 1767 members. Interesting accounts might be given of the local Churches of the several counties, but they are all much the same: a history of oppression, decadence, division and providential intervention.

Baptists of Great Britain

Sometimes cases of excessive barbarity are put on record, and others of wonderful deliverance.

The Welsh Baptists found relief in the TOLERATION ACT OF 1689, which protects them in their worship to this day, and under its provisions they left the rocks and other hiding places. Their brethren in London invited them to a conference in October of that year, where about a hundred Churches were represented; seven ministers went up from Wales and the Assembly set forth a Confession of Faith. The Welsh Association, consisting of ten Churches, reassembled at Llanwenarth, May 6th, 1700, and continued to grow, so that almost every county has now an Association of its own. At first, the official language of these bodies was English, but since 1708, the vernacular has been used. The annual meeting of the first Association was held in Whitsun-week, the first day being spent in prayer and fasting. The 'Associational Sermon' was introduced in 1703, and in time, preaching became the chief feature of the meetings, until now, from ten to fifteen sermons are preached at such gatherings. Our brethren resorted much to fasting and prayer at their associational meetings, especially when heresy and contention crept in, or where two Churches were at variance. In such cases, all the Churches were called upon to hold a day of prayer and fasting; and in 1723, when two Churches were in a fight, 'the first Wednesday in each month, for half a year, was appointed for fasting and prayer, on account of this distressing affair.' Then when the contest ended, 'the Churches were desired to observe days of thanks-giving for what was done.' Prayer and fasting form an excellent remedy for that 'demon;' would that all church fighters would take a vow neither to eat nor drink till their fight was ended; this would happily rid us of most of them within forty days.

The death of Queen Anne and the accession of George I, 1714, prevented the passage of the 'Schism Bill,' and the Welsh Baptists kept the anniversary of that day with thanksgiving for many years. At the time of the Revolution, so-called (1688), there were eleven Baptist Churches in Wales, ten of which are named by Joshua Thomas, the eleventh being a very strong Church, under the pastoral care of William Jones, in the counties of Pembroke and Caermarthen, formed in that year. By the year 1735 these had increased to sixteen. But this statement is misleading, unless we bear in mind that each Church, so-called, was made up of many congregations, all under one pastor, who had many assistants, in some cases six or eight, and in one case eleven. The Churches did not report the number of members to the Association, but the separate Church records, which have been preserved, show, that there were several hundred communicants in a number of these Churches, and the names of forty-two ministers are given who labored in them between 1700 and 1736; all Strict Communionists, many of them men of might. Besides those who remained in Wales, large numbers of Baptists migrated to America, and took a leading part in establishing the denomination here, as we shall find.

About 1692, Baptist sentiments had taken such a strong hold in the western part of the principality, that warm controversies arose with the Pedobaptists, especially the Independents. Several debates were had; then both sides agreed to preach on baptism at Penlan. John Thomas, an Independent, preached on infant baptism, and John Jenkins, a Baptist, on believer's baptism. The result was, that so many Independents were immersed as rendered it desirable for them to ask Samuel Jones, a Presbyterian, and a fine scholar, to write in defense of infant baptism; but, as he declined, James Owen, of Oswestry, undertook that work. In 1693 he published 'Infant Baptism from Heaven,' perhaps the first book in the Welsh tongue on that subject. In answer, Benjamin Keach published 'Light broke forth in Wales.' Another controversy of the same sort took place about 1726,

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

between Miles Harris for the Baptists and Edmund Jones for the Pedobaptists. These combatants belabored each other full soundly and kept the country in a turmoil until a convention was called of leaders from both sides, in which they agreed to respect each other for the future, and try to behave decently. This agreement was duly signed by three Baptists and six Pedobaptists, properly attested by five other ministers and printed in 1728. But, alas for the weakness of Welsh Pedobaptist nature! Fowler Walker, the Independent minister of Abergavenny; the first attestor to this awful document, could not keep his pen still, but in 1732 published a tract on 'Infant Baptism;' and then, alas for the Baptist Association! in response it published 'Doe's Tract of Forty Texts from the New Testament on Believer's Baptism.' And, as if this were not enough, Brother David Rees, of London, sent a letter to Brother Walker, promising that his book should be further considered at leisure. Accordingly, in 1734, he published his 'Infant Baptism no Institution of Christ's; and the Rejection of it Justified by Scripture and Antiquity.' Whereupon, thereafter, Brother Walker found it comfortable to keep still.

After this the Welsh Baptists, who were principally firm, hyper-Calvinists holding the quinquarticular points, had a warm controversy amongst themselves on Arminianism. The 'Arminian Heresy,' as it was called, was creeping in, however, and at least three ministers were affected thereby. The chief point in dispute was whether it was the duty of sinners to turn to God, because of their obligations to the moral law. But in 1733 Enoch Francis had the good sense to publish his 'Word in Season,' in which he took the moderate Calvinistic ground, so ably presented afterward by Andrew Fuller, namely: That the atonement of Christ is sufficient for all mankind, but that its efficacy is confined to the elect only, and that the offer of salvation is, therefore, to be made to all who hear the Gospel. This position softened the controversy, but it continued down to the present century, and made great trouble in Churches which had more than one minister, who disagreed on the subject. At Hengoed, Morgan Griffith was a stanch Calvinist, but Charles Winter, his co-pastor, was a thorough Arminian, and they debated the matter warmly. It was arranged that Winter should not preach anything contrary, to Griffith, which arrangement held good till Griffith's death in 1738, when the Church expelled Winter and twenty-four others with him, who formed an Arminian Baptist Church, near Merthyr Tydvil, which, however, soon became extinct. Other Churches had similar troubles.

It is interesting to trace the history of ministerial education amongst the Welsh Baptists. The Pembrokeshire Church at a very early date was called 'The College,' because of the many ministers whom it sent forth; and probably it had some system of training peculiar to itself. Young Baptist ministers were trained at Samuel Jones's private Presbyterian Seminary for a while, but about 1732 the Baptists established one of their own near Pontypool. This school was founded chiefly by Morgan Griffith and Miles Harris, two most enterprising and liberal spirits, and was of immense service to the Baptist ministry until 1770, when the Bristol College was established and this Seminary was given up. One of its best-known students out of a list of forty powerful names was DR. THOS. LLEWELYN, a descendant of the Welsh Bible translator. He finished his studies in London and became president of a Baptist Academy there, which prepared men for the ministry. In 1696 he raised subscriptions for and induced the 'Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge' to issue twenty thousand Welsh Bibles. He also wrote a 'History of Welsh Versions,' and a work on 'The British Tongue' in its relation to other languages, and to the 'Welsh Bible.' Dr. Rippon says that Gibbon remarked to him, when speaking of linguists: 'I think, my young friend, that Dr. Llewelyn is the first scholar we have among the Protestant Dissenters.'

Baptists of Great Britain

If space permitted, it would be a pleasant task to give the narrative of large numbers of the Welsh Baptist fathers, with their notable sayings and doings, many of them being amongst the most eminent of their day; learned, zealous for the truth and its able defenders, whose Gospel ministry was marked by great power from above in the salvation of men. In this list would stand prominent the names of Lewis Thomas, William Pritchard, Enoch Francis, Morgan Griffith, Caleb Evans of Pentre and his ten illustrious descendants in the ministry, with John Harris. These and many others fought the good fight for toleration and conquered; for by 1715 one eighth of the Welsh were Non-conformists, and a much larger proportion by 1736. In 1794 the number of Baptist Churches in Wales was fifty-six, with 7,050 members; but in 1798, the churches numbered eighty-four, with 9,000 members, divided for convenience into the Northern, Eastern and Western Associations. They had passed through many contentions, on the Sandemanian, Socinian and Arian questions, as well as on the subject of Communion. For a time Sandemanianism wrought great mischief amongst the Welsh Churches, many of the pastors, amongst them Christmas Evans, being almost blinded by its pretensions. In the opening of the nineteenth century, the leading men of the denomination became involved in a warm controversy concerning the Atonement and Redemption; and Christmas Evans published a book in 1811, in which he gave what was called 'a commercial aspect' to the Atonement. He set forth that the atoning death of Christ is of equal weight with the sins of the elect; while others took the ground that its effects were twofold, bearing on the sins of the world in general, and on those of the elect in particular. At that point in the controversy Richard Foulkes, the Baptist pastor at Newbridge, and John Phillips Davies, the pastor at Tredegar, who had embraced the doctrines of Andrew Fuller, came to their defense, many others joined them. and the debate ran high. The result was that the Welsh Baptists became more distinguished from that period for biblical teaching than for systematic theology; and today no Churches hail truth in its simplicity, freedom, amplitude and warmth, in the form given to it by the divine Oracles, more heartily than do the Baptists of Wales. They hold the doctrines of grace and the responsibility of man by a strong and clear grasp which honors them amongst the Churches of Christ, and they unhesitatingly maintain every other principle which is vital to Bible Baptists. The number of public debates held on Baptism, and the works published on that subject by our Welsh brethren, has been endless. But the most able production of all is 'The Act of Baptism,' from the pen of the late Dr. Hugh Jones, published in 1882. It will long remain a standard work. We have already seen that the Baptists of Wales became interested early in educational plans, and we find Morgan Griffith, of Hengoed, establishing the Troisant Academy as early as 1732-34. Joshua Thomas kept a school also at Leominster for many years, and prepared students for the Bristol Academy; but his successor, Samuel Kilpin, opened a regular academy there in 1805, from which sprang some of the first men in the denomination. The Abergavenny College was founded in the year 1807, with Micah Thomas for its president, who sent forth six hundred and six ministers of such character that he won for the institution the confidence and support of all the Churches. Thomas was a noble and indefatigable worker and a fine scholar, he baptized over 400 persons, and preached about 5,500 sermons, besides doing his pastoral work at Abergavenny and his presidential duties. He died in 1853, aged seventy-five.

Pontypool College is a continuation of this. Its buildings were erected in 1836, and have since been enlarged, making them very inviting. Dr. Thomas was president for forty-one years, then was succeeded by William Lewis, A.M., who died in 1880, the chair being filled at present by William Edwards, B.A., assisted by David Thomas, B.A., as classical tutor. Haverfordwest College was

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

established in 1839, David Davis being its first president, who filled the place till his death, in 1856. Thos. Davis succeeded him and still retains his place, with T.W. Davis, B.A., as classical tutor. Llangollen College dates from 1862, Drs. John Fritchard and Hugh Jones having served it as presidents, but since the death of the latter, G. Davis is the sole tutor. In order that the Churches may secure all possible advantages from the Universities of the principality, the managers of the above-named three colleges have affiliated them more closely with those institutions; the students of Pontypool now obtain their classical training at Cardiff, those of Havorfordwest at Aberystwyth, and those of Llangollen at Bangor.

The Baptist Building Fund for Wales, organized in 1862, with a capital of ,6,932 11s., for the purpose of making free loans to the Churches, payable in annual installments of ten per cent, is doing a grand work. The Welsh Baptist Union, formed in 1866, now representing the whole of the Welsh Churches, is a useful body. It meets annually in August or September, publishes a quarterly magazine, and an Annual Hand-Book for the denomination. Besides these, the Baptists publish three monthlies and two weeklies. According to the returns for the year 1886, their numerical strength in Wales is: Churches, 590; members, 73,828; attendance on Sunday-schools, 74,830. The denomination is thoroughly united, marches boldly forward upholding God's word as the only rule of faith, against all human ritual and tradition; with a very bright future in view.

This chapter cannot be completed without a few sketches of some of the fathers and leaders in Welsh Baptist history, but these must be limited to a few representative men of their several classes.

JOSHUA THOMAS is celebrated as their leading historian. He was born at Caio, 1719, but at the age of twenty resided at Hereford. At that time he did not profess religion, but yet walked thirteen miles to Leominster to worship with the Baptists every other Sunday. He was baptized there in 1740, and entered the ministry in 1746; he afterward became pastor at Leominster, where he remained for fifty years. He wrote a 'History of the Welsh Baptists,' also a 'History of the Baptist Association in Wales,' being better acquainted with these subjects than any man of his day.

WILLIAM WILLIAMS, justice of the peace and a deputy lieutenant of the counties of Cardigan and Pembroke. Born, 1732; died, 1799. His parents were wealthy Episcopalians, but, leaving him an orphan at the age of six, he was educated in the best manner under trustees. He married young but lost his wife, and was led to Christ by this affliction, entering the ministry. In Cardigan he built a commodious chapel and filled it with devout hearers. He labored under the odious Test and Corporation Acts, but yet was appointed to civil office under the government. The law required him to qualify by taking the Lord's Supper in the Established Church within a year of his appointment, and annually thereafter, but he filled his office for many years without submission to this test of conformity. He moved in the higher classes of society, and for a long period served as Chairman of the Quarter Sessions, and when he died his loss as a magistrate was mourned as national.

MORGAN JOHN RHEES was the Welsh Baptist hero of religious liberty. Born at Graddfa, 1760; after his baptism at Hengoed he went to the Bristol Academy, and entered the ministry in 1787. Before going to Bristol he established night-schools and Sunday-schools, far and near, teaching the pupils himself gratis, in chapels, barns and other places, and supplying them with books. When he became a pastor he aroused the denomination to the need of Sunday-schools before any other denomination had taken them up in Wales. Aided by others he founded a society in 1792 for the circulation of the Bible in France, believing that the Revolution had prepared that people for the Gospel. But this work was arrested by the war of 1793. This is the first attempt known to form

Baptists of Great Britain

a Bible Society for purely missionary purposes, as he connected with it a mission to Bologne. This failing, he left France and threw himself into the effort to maintain the doctrine of political liberty and religious equality in Wales. He established the 'Cylchgrawn,' a magazine, which eulogized the American Constitution, and demanded that religious support in Wales should be patterned by that in the United States. Spies were put upon his track, and an officer from London appeared at Caermarthen for his arrest. His landlord misled the officer, and gave Rhees a hint that he had better make for Liverpool, whence he left for America, where he was welcomed by Dr. Rogers, of Philadelphia. There he took a band of Welsh emigrants into the Allegheny Mountains in 1797, and organized them into a Church at Beulah, Cambria County, Pa. He died at Somerset, December 7th, 1804.

JOSEPH HARRIS (Gomer), pastor at Swansea, was born 1773. So great was his thirst for knowledge, that, without any early educational advantages, he became one of the chief men of letters in the nation and wielded great influence. He first made his mark as a controversial theologian in various pamphlets, and in his work on 'The Proper Divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ,' published in 1816. Bishop Burgess and other eminent members of the English clergy pronounced high eulogies upon this book. At that time no magazine or weekly was published in Welsh, and in 1814 Harris established the 'Star of Gomer,' a weekly; in that language. As a weekly this enterprise failed, but in 1818 he started a monthly under the same name, which met with great success. It was so broad and thorough in its discussions that it attained national celebrity, and earned for him the title 'Father of Welsh Journalism.' He also published a Welsh and English Bible; and a hymn book for his own denomination, which is yet in use. He came to his grave in sorrow, some say of a broken heart, for the loss of his favorite son, whose memoirs he wrote in grief and tears, making its composition one of the most touching productions in the Welsh tongue.

CHRISTMAS EVANS, the prince of Welsh preachers, was born on the 25th of December, 1766, and named after that day. His father was very poor, and died when Christmas was about the age of nine, leaving him in such neglect that he could not read when he was fifteen. Mourning this ignorance he resolved to learn, and soon plodded through 'Pilgrim's Progress.' At eighteen he was converted and united with the Arminian Presbyterians. Soon he held religious services in cottages, having memorized one of Bishop Beveridge's sermons and one of Mr. Roland's. These were delivered in such a wonderful manner, that when a hearer knew them to be mere recitations, he remarked that 'there must be something in that unlettered boy, for the prayer was as good as the sermon.' Alas! master, that also was taken from a book. Evans went to school for a time to Rev. Mr. Davis, but, having no means to prosecute his studies, started for England to labor as a farmer in the harvestfield. Discouraged, he nearly abandoned the idea of entering the ministry, and, in fact, became almost indifferent to religion. Just then he fell into the hands of a mob, and received a blow which left him insensible, and his right eye blind for life. His narrow escape aroused him to new diligence, and shortly after he was immersed on his faith in Christ in the river Duar, by Rev. Timothy Thomas, and united with the Baptist Church at Aberduar. At the age of twenty-two he was ordained at Lleyn as the pastor of five small Baptist Churches there. Frequently he walked twenty miles and preached four or five times on the Sabbath with marked results, he was captivated by the preaching of Robert Roberts, a hunch-backed Calvinistic Methodist, of marked eccentricities, and said that from him he had 'obtained the keys of the level,' whatever that may be. In a short time Evans evinced remarkable preaching powers. He traveled on foot through town and village, crowds

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

gathering into chapels and burying-grounds, on week-days and in the midst of harvest, while many were converted and immersed. His fame spread on the wings of the winds, and multitudes followed him from place to place.

In 1791 he removed to the isle of Anglesea, taking charge of the two Baptist Churches there, on a salary of ,17 per annum. Besides the two chapels, he had eight preaching stations and no other Baptist minister near him. The Churches were in a cold and distracted state, but his labors were soon followed by powerful religious revivals. In 1794 he went far to attend the meetings of the Association, which met at Velin Voel, in the open air and in the hottest of weather. Two ministers had preached in a tedious way and the heat had almost stupefied the people, when Evans commenced the third sermon. In a few minutes the people began to weep and praise God, to leap and clap their hands for joy, and the greatest excitement continued through the entire day and night, the crowd saying to each other: 'The one-eyed man of Anglesea is a prophet sent from God!' For years he attended the meetings of this body, and here he preached his famous sermon on the demoniac of Gadara. That sermon held the vast throng spell-bound for three hours; for Christinas drew such a picture before them as even Jean Paul Richter never drew. The vast throng was beside itself, numbers threw themselves on the ground, as if an earthquake rocked beneath them. They had a clear vision of the naked maniac, full of burning anger and wild gesture, with fiend's eyes, fierce and full of flame. They saw his paroxysms which broke the chains that held him, as threads of tow, when he bounded away like a wild beast, to leap upon harmless men. He lived in rocks, slept in tombs with the dead, haunted these dismal abodes like a midnight ghost and made them echo with loud blasphemies. All feared him as a demon and none dared approach him. His wife was broken-hearted, and his children desolate. In lucid moments he was gentle, then he roared like a lion, howled like a wolf, raved like a tiger, the terror of Gadara; until Jesus came, quelled the storm, restored the tortured mind and filled the land with joy. Then came his picture of the swine wallowing in destruction, the punishment of their selfish owners and great doctrinal truths, which produced an effect scarcely credible, but for full and clear testimony.

In 1826, when the preaching stations in Anglesea had increased to scores and the preachers to twenty-eight, he left that island and settled as pastor at Caerphilly, where he soon added one hundred and forty members to his Church by baptism. He remained here but two years when he removed to Cardiff, and in two years more to Caernarvon, where he contended with great difficulties from church debts and dissension. When on a collecting tour for that Church he died suddenly at Swansea, July 19th, 1838, in the seventy-second year of his age and the fifty-fourth of his wonderful ministry. As he passed from earth he said: 'I am leaving you; I have labored in the sanctuary fifty-three years, and this is my comfort, that I have never labored without blood in the basin!' With his last breath he referred to a verse in an old Welsh hymn, then waved his hand as if with Elijah in the chariot of fire, and cried: 'Wheel about, coachman; drive on!'

He had preached one hundred and sixty-three times before Baptist Associations and paid forty visits to South Wales, so that he held front rank in the Welsh ministry for more than half a century without a stain on his moral character. In person he stood about six feet high, with an athletic frame – a very Anakim – and his head covered with thick, coarse, black hair. His bearing was dignified, notwithstanding an unwieldy gait, arising from an inequality of limbs, inducing an able writer to say that 'he appeared like one composed on the day after a great battle out of the scattered members of the slain;' or as a Yorkshire man expressed it to the writer, 'like a book taken in numbers, with some

Baptists of Great Britain

wanting.' His face betokened great intelligence and amiability, his eyebrows were dark and heavily arched. and his one, large, dreamy eye was very brilliant. Robert Hall said of him that he was 'the tallest, stoutest, greatest man he ever saw; that he had but one eye, if it could be called an eye; it was more properly a brilliant star; it shined like Venus! and would light an army through a forest on a dark night.' This evangelical seraph of one eye, like all seraphs, had a warm and quick temperament, held under perfect control; and though his sustained power of imagination was astonishing, he was very dignified in debate. His piety was simple, modest and ardent. The writer thinks that one of the best tests of true power in a preacher is the character of his public prayers, and once asked an old and intelligent Welshman who had often heard Evans, to describe these. He replied: 'They were commonly short, but he seldom stopped until the tears rolled down his cheeks from his one eye and the empty socket of the other, while pleading for the special influences of the Holy Spirit that day.' Here was a secret of his eloquence which cannot be described more than the warm breathings of seraphim can be depicted. His voice had great compass and melody, his gestures were easy and forceful, and his composition crowded with metaphor and allegory. His style was more than original, it was unique, bearing the stamp of high genius, as every sentence carried his own spirit and its expression to others in the nicest shadings of fervent thought. The press has given us two hundred of his sermons, which were methodical and strong in their unity. The Bible was as real to him as his own life, and hence, he drew the history and doctrine of the cross in true lines. He was more luminous in exposition, and fuller of imagery than Whitefield. His descriptions were pure inspirations of the imagination, and his sentences were the joint language of feeling and logic. After the ideal of Horace, men wept when he shed real tears. He breathed that vehement thought and passion into his speech which Longinus called 'a divine frenzy.' But his preaching was governed by a sense of obligation to God and the grandeur of love to man. These took his own soul by storm and stormed the souls of others. His one theme was Christ, his one aim to save guilty men, pulling them out of the fire, and so his pulpit power increased to the last. God put honor upon him, as he always has upon such men, 'and much people was added unto the Lord.'

JOHN JERKINS was another splendid specimen, of self-educated ministers in Wales. His parents were very lowly and he never spent a day in school. At the age of fourteen he found one of John Rhee's evening-school books and learned to read the Welsh Bible. The next year he was baptized at Llanwenarth, and became a pastor at the age of twenty-one on a salary of £3 per year. Thus humbling himself, in 1808 he was exalted to a salary of £16 per annum as pastor at Hengoed. There he built up one of the strongest Churches in the principality, and became a leading writer in the denomination. In 1811 he published a body of divinity under the title of the 'Silver Palace,' and followed it, in 1831, by a Commentary of the whole Bible. The Lewisburg University conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Divinity in 1852; and he died in Clirist on June 5, 1853, aged seventy-four years.

TIMOTHY THOMAS, of Aberduar, was a most robust, servant of Christ; the son of the 'Thunderer' of the same name. He was rough and ready, loved to ride the best horse in Wales, and made the whole country his parish. He celebrated his baptismal services in the open air, and would smite into the dust any disturber of his services, holding up his license in one hand and his Bible in the other, demanding 'order' by virtue of two warrants, one from the King of England and the other from the King of Heaven. When he was fourteen years of age his father died, but his father's mantle fell upon him. On returning from his funeral his mother mourned, saying, that the family altar had

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

fallen and there was no one to build it up.' Timothy replied: 'Mother, it shall not fall;' and that night he conducted worship in the stricken home. After his ordination, in 1772-73, he went everywhere preaching the word. During his ministry he baptized about 2,000 converts, and with a touch of honest pride he loved to name amongst them Christmas Evans. He died in 1840, aged eighty-six years, protesting that there was nothing in his life worth recording for another generation.

JOHN WILLIAMS was the thorough scholar and translator of the New Testament into modern Welsh, he was born at Waen in 1806, and his youth was characterized by many eccentricities, one of which was that he constantly hid himself in the hedges and woods with his books, and at the age of twenty, without a master, had acquired a good knowledge of English and Latin, with considerable attainments in Greek, Hebrew and mathematics. At twenty-one he published an English grammar in Welsh and English, which brought him pressing invitations to enter the Episcopal ministry; but he was ordained a home missionary amongst the Baptists in 1834. He devoted himself, however, to the translation of the New Testament and finished the task in four years. To reach the simple sense of the original by the best texts was his first aim, and his next, its faithful translation into his mother-tongue. Conviction obliged him to give an immersionist version, and while nobody pretended that his renderings were unfaithful, the cry was raised that he had made a 'Baptist Bible.' He expressed the act of baptism by the word *trochi*, which has no ecclesiastical meaning, and answers to dip, or immerse, in English, instead of retaining the word *bedydd*, which by ecclesiastical use has come to mean many things in Welsh, as the word *baptize* does in English. He suffered the greatest possible abuse, as if he were a God-fearing criminal. Wales produced few harder workers or more diligent inquirers after the truth. But the coarse abuse of men who could not understand how an honest scholar can hold himself responsible to God only deeply wounded his loyal soul. He was retiring, modest, unobtrusive, and his health sank under the cruel calumny of many of his own brethren. He died in 1856, at the age of but fifty years.

THOMAS REES DAVIES was a character, known amongst the irreverent as 'Old Black Cap,' because he wore a velvet cap in the pulpit. For years he stood second to Christmas Evans in popularity. He itinerated, and so great was his work that he said there were few rivers, brooks, or tanks in Wales in which he had not baptized. His wife being wealthy, he sustained himself. Some disagreement with the Baptists led to his expulsion in 1818, and he spent about seven years amongst the Wesleyans, with whom he was very useful: but he delighted in telling them that he was 'a Baptist dyed in the wool.' At one of their great missionary meetings he said: 'The Baptists think much of themselves, but they cannot do all the work in the world. We Wesleyans must be in the field, too; but as to that, we shall all be Baptists in the end.' When he returned to the Baptists he said to his Methodist brethren: 'Good-bye, I am going home.' He was welcomed back and labored successfully. During forty-seven years he preached 13,145 sermons, averaging above five a week and left a minute record of the time, place and text of each sermon. He preached the same sermon over and over again for twenty times, and the people were newly delighted each time, and each discourse came to be known by some peculiar name. His sermons were so natural that they seemed to have been born with him, and he said they would 'always go, because he kept them in a safe place.' They were quaint productions and antithetic, but clear and-pointed. Then he flavored them with homely mother-wit and delivered them in an easy oratory, which made them impressive, despite a slight impediment in his speech, so that there was a great mystery about his eloquence. He best describes himself when about visiting London. Writing to a deacon there, who did not know him, but was to

Baptists of Great Britain

meet him, he says: 'At Euston Station, December 3d, 1847, and about nine o'clock in the evening, expect the arrival by train of a gray-headed old man; very tall, like the ancient Britons, and without an outward blemish, like a Jewish high-priest. Like Elijah, he will wear a blue mantle, not shaggy, but superfine, and like Jacob, he will have a staff in his hand, but will not be lame, it is hoped. But most especially, he will have a white string to his hat, fastened to his coat button. There will be many there with black strings, but his will be white. Let the friend ask, "Are you Davies?" and his answer will be, "Yes." He started on a preaching tour through South Wales in 1859, but told his friends that he was going there to die, and to be buried in the same grave with Christmas Evans. On the 22d of July he preached his last sermon at Morristown, near Swansea, when he was taken sick. He said: 'I am very ill. Let me die in the bed where Christmas Evans died.' That was impracticable. But on the following Sunday he fell asleep, and was buried in Evans's grave!

ROBERT ELLIS was a prodigy, after his order. Although nine months' training under John Williams was all the schooling that he ever had, he excelled as an antiquarian, hard, lecturer, preacher and biblical interpreter. He came to be regarded as an authority in almost every branch of Welsh literature, and was one of the most idiomatic Welsh writers of his day. He was the author of many poems, and of 'Five Lectures on Baptism,' but his greatest work was his 'Commentary of the New Testament,' in three volumes. Born, 1812; died, 1875.

WILLIAM MORGAN, D.D., one of the ablest ministers of North Wales, devoted his life to the interests of the Baptists at Holyhead, from the year 1825. He was the first biographer of Christmas Evans, and published three volumes of sermons. The Georgetown College, Kentucky, honored him with the title of D.D. After a very useful ministry, he died in 1873.

JOHN EMLYN JONES, M.A., LL.D., was born in 1820. He was pastor of Baptist Churches at Nebo, Cardiff, Merthyr, Tydvil and Llandudno. He was a very eloquent preacher, and distinguished himself as an author in works of theology, history and general literature; also as the translator of Gill's Commentary into Welsh. He was a poet of eminence, attaining the honor of Chair-Bard, B.B.D., by winning a chair at Denbigh, and another at Llanerchymedd. He prepared a Topographical Dictionary of the whole world, but left it incomplete. He died in 1873. His Doctor's degree was conferred by the University of Glasgow.

HUGH JONES, D.D., was born at Anglesea, July 10th, 1831. His parents possessed unusual talents, especially his mother. He was baptized at Llanfachreth by Rev. R.D. Roberts at the age of fourteen, and preached his first sermon in what the Welsh call 'Gyfeillach,' the weekly experience meeting, which is greatly prized in their Churches. His first public discourse was preached in 1851, and he entered the college at Haverfordwest in 1853. There he remained for four years, and became proficient in mathematics, the classics and Hebrew. He wished to enter the foreign mission work, but was prevented by ill health. In 1857 he became associate pastor to Mr. Griffiths at Llandudno, and remained there for two years, when he took the same service for Dr. Pritchard at Llangollen. The Baptist College was established there in 1862, and these co-pastors were appointed co-tutors, Mr. Jones being classical tutor. Dr. Pritchard resigned his connection both with the Church and the College in 1866, and Mr. Jones became principal of the College, resigning his pastoral relation. Under his labors the institution attained great prosperity, but he overworked himself, and in 1877 was obliged to seek relief and health on the Continent, where he appeared to improve and returned to his post. In 1883 his health suddenly failed again, and on the 28th of May he was unexpectedly called to his reward above. He left a widow and eleven children to mourn their loss, and in about

Chapter 11 - British Baptists – The Welsh Baptists

two years his children became full orphans, for their mother died and was buried in the same grave with their father. In every respect Dr. Jones was a man of rare mark. His intellect was keen, his will strong, his heart large and his application close. His pure character and quiet courage, his simple habits and genial manliness, endeared him to all who knew him, and he has left a deep impression on the Baptist interests of the principality. His thorough consecration to Christ and profound biblical scholarship are abundantly seen in his works, 'The Bible and its Interpretation,' and the 'Act of Baptism.'

These sketches of Welsh Baptists might be continued at great length, but a long list of illustrious names must be passed in silence, as well as all that relates to the influence of Welsh Baptists in other parts of Great Britain, for their laymen and ministers have filled the highest posts of influence and usefulness in all parts of the United Kingdom. The above are sufficient to show the strong elements which our principles have developed in Welsh character. They bring out its vigor of intellect, its heroic courage, its high moral sentiment, its glow of holy feeling and its benevolent zeal. When we take into account the soft and liquid flow of the Welsh language, the patriotism of the Welsh people, their devotion to civil and religious liberty, and their enthusiastic religious emotion, we are not astonished at their success; nor can we wonder at the great molding influence which they have exerted upon the Baptist Churches of the New World.

The statistics of the United Kingdom, including the Channel Islands, shows 2,713 churches, 315,939 members, with 1,893 pastors.

The Baptist Churches in Wales were never in a more prosperous condition than at the present time. They not only stand firmly by the truth, but year by year they are resisting that anomaly of the nineteenth century, the incubus of a State Church. Since the disestablishment and disendowment of the Irish Church the Welsh people feel more and more the galling yoke, and are attempting to shake it off with greater spirit. Recently, not only the Baptists, but the Independents and Calvinistic Methodists have arisen with almost one accord to resist the enforcement of tithes in behalf of the Established Church. The 'tithe-war' as it is called, broke out recently in the parish of Llanarmon, and distraint upon the goods of the farmers there has aroused the resistance of all Non-conformists. It is strange that this blot upon Christianity should have remained unwiped out so long, but this relic of barbarism must soon disappear in Wales. At this moment the auctioneer is selling confiscated property in all directions, and every fall of his hammer drives a new nail into the coffin of the politico-ecclesiastical State Church, but not before its time to fall. In 1868 compulsory church rates were abolished, 1880 the Burial Act was passed, relieving Dissenters from abominable annoyances in burying their dead, and it is not meet that the twentieth century should be disgraced by one vestige of Welsh oppression in this direction. It is strange that the Welsh have endured this yoke so long, and the sooner they rise in their strength and shake it off the better.

Baptists of Great Britain

THE AMERICAN BAPTISTS

Chapter 1 - The Colonial Period – Pilgrims and Puritans

The passage of the Mayflower over the Atlantic was long and rough. Often before its bosom had been torn by keels seeking the golden fleece for kings, but now the kings themselves were on board this frail craft, bringing the golden fleece with them; and the old deep had all that she could do to bear this load of royalty safely over. Stern as she was, the men borne on her waves were sterner. More than a new empire was intrusted to her care, a new freedom. 'What ailed thee, O sea?' When this historic ship came to her moorings, not unlike the vessel tossed on Galilee, she was freighted with principles, convictions, institutions and laws. These should first govern a quarter of the globe here, and then go back to the Old World to effect its regeneration and shape its future. THE PILGRIMS knew not that the King of all men was so signally with them in the bark, and would send them forth as the fishers of Gennesaret were sent, on an errand of revolution. In intellect, conscience and true soul-greatness, these quiet founders of a new nation were highly gifted, so that song and story will send their names down to the end of time on the bead-roll of fame. The monarchs of the earth have already raised their crowns in reverence to their greatness, and they are canonized in the moral forces which impelled and followed them.

Imperial bombast in James I had chuckled over this band of strong-souled ones. He 'had peppered them soundly,' as he loved to boast, and 'harried them' out of his land in the bitterness of their grief; but when their sturdy feet pressed Plymouth Rock they had a conscience void of offense toward Holland, England and God. An invisible hand had guided the helm of the Mayflower to a rock from which, in a wintry storm, a group of simple-hearted heroes, with bare heads, could proclaim a Church without a bishop and a State without a king. Next to their adoration of the Lord of Hosts, their great religious thought at that moment was English Separatism. This thought had bearings in embryo upon the future births of time, in the genesis of such truths as only mature in the throes of ages. The founders of Plymouth were not Puritans, or Non-conformists, but Separatists, who had paid a great price for their freedom, and had come from an independent congregation in Leyden. Their great germinal idea was deep-seated, for their love of liberty had been nourished with the blood of a suffering brotherhood. They ranked with the most advanced thinkers and lovers of the radical principles of their age, and yet, though they were honestly feeling their way to those principles in all their primal simplicity, they had not already attained to their full use. They intended to be as honest and as honorable as the skies above them. History has laid the charge of rigid sternness at their door, but they evidently established their new colony in love to God and man.

Fuller, Collier, and several other old writers show that the Brownists, from whom they sprang, caught their idea of absolute Church independency from the Dutch Baptists. Weingarten makes this strong statement: 'The perfect agreement between the views of Brown and those of the Baptists as far as the nature of a Church is concerned, is certainly proof enough that he borrowed this idea from them; though in his "True Declaration" of 1584 he did not deem it advisable to acknowledge the fact, lest he should receive in addition to all the opprobrious names heaped upon him, that of Anabaptist. In 1571 there were no less than 3,925 Dutchmen in Norwich.' Also Scheffer says: 'That Brown's new ideas concerning the nature of the Church opened to him in the circle of the Dutch Baptists in Norwich. Brandt, in his "Reformation in the Low Countries," shows that when Brown's Church was dissolved by dissensions at Middleburg, in the Netherlands, where the Baptists were

The American Baptists

very numerous, some of his people fell in with the Baptists.' And Johnson, pastor of the Separatist Church at Amsterdam, wrote, in 1606 that 'divers' of that Church who had been driven from England 'fell into the errors of the Anabaptists, which were too common in those countries.'

Bishop Sanderson wrote, in 1681, that Whitgift and Hooker did 'long foresee and declare their fear that if Puritanism should prevail amongst us, it would soon draw in Anabaptism after it. These good men judged right; they only considered, as prudent men, that Anabaptism had its rise from the same principles the Puritans held, and its growth from the same courses they took, together with the natural tendency of their principles and practices toward it.' He then says that if the ground be taken that the Scriptures are the only rule so as 'nothing might lawfully be done without express warrant, either from some command or example therein contained, the clew thereof, if followed as far as it would lead, would certainly in time carry them as far as the Anabaptists were then gone.'

This clear-minded prelate perfectly understood the logical and legitimate result of Baptist principles, and this result the Plymouth men had readied on the question of Church independency, but they were still learners on the question of full liberty of conscience aside from the will of magistrates.

The permanent landing of the pilgrims at Plymouth began Dec. 20th, 1620 (O. S.), but on the 11th of November they had entered into a solemn 'compact,' thus: 'Having undertaken, for the glory of God, and advancement of the Christian faith, and the honor of our king and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof do enact, constitute, and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and officers, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.' For about a month after founding the settlement their government took something of the patriarchal form, with the governor, John Carver, as the head of the family. Soon seven assistants were given to him, who in time became his council. In 1623 trial by jury was established in case of trespass between man and man, and of crime. Then laws were passed fixing the age of freemen at twenty-one years, provided, that they were sober, peaceful and orthodox in religion. To secure the last, membership in the Church was made a test of citizenship, and so they fell into the blunder of making their civil and ecclesiastical polity one, a strange combination of iron and clay, intended to be inexorable after the pattern of the ancient Hebrew Commonwealth, although that exact form of government had perished two thousand years before, and long before the Church of Christ with its spiritual laws existed.

They themselves had first tasted the sweets of civil and religious liberty in the Netherlands, under the advanced Christian idea of government for man as such. They had availed themselves of that liberty which Christian patriots, and amongst them the Dutch Baptists, had suffered so much to purchase; and yet they had failed to learn the primary lesson of full liberty of conscience in civil government, as the first right of each man in the State. Their mistake was inexcusable on the popular plea that this idea was in advance of their age. But for that idea and its practical use they would not have founded Plymouth; for without its shield they could not have found an asylum in Holland, when they were driven from their own home in England. Their liberty in Holland, while; in fact, the greatest possible reality to them, was treated in Plymouth as a mere impractical ideal, when they came to found a 'civil body politic' of their own. And this is rendered the more remarkable from the

Chapter 1 - The Colonial Period – Pilgrims and Puritans

fact, that they were placed under no chartered religious restriction themselves. When they applied to England for a charter in 1618, Sir John Worsingham asked: 'Who shall make your ministers?' Their representative ('S.B.') answered: 'The power of making [them] was in the Church, to be ordained by the imposition of hands, by the fittest instruments they have; it must be either in the Church or from the pope; and the pope is Anti-christ.' That point was waived, therefore, and Felt says that S.B. 'asked his worship what good news he had for me to write tomorrow' (to Robinson and Brewster). 'He told me good news, for both the king's majesty and the bishops have consented.' The patent which was given them was taken in the name of John Wincob, a Christian gentleman who intended to accompany them, but who failed to do so, hence they could not legally avail themselves of its benefits, and really came without a patent. The petulance of the king would give them none, and they left without his authority, saying: 'If there is a settled purpose to do us wrong, it is easy to break a seal, though it be as broad as a house floor.' Felt says again: 'The Pilgrims are aware that their invalid patent does not privilege them to be located so far north, and grants them "only the general leave of his majesty for the free exercise of the liberty of conscience in the public worship of God."'

In any case, therefore, with the patent or without it, they were left untrammelled in the exercise of their liberty of conscience, both as it 'regards the form of religion which any citizen might choose, and his right to citizenship without any order of religion, after the Holland pattern. Under their own 'compact' then, they first formed a 'civil body politic,' and then a Church, the colony to be jointly governed by the officers of both. In some aspects of this union the State was rather absorbed into the Church than united to it, but the elders and magistrates were so united that together they enforced the duties both of the first and second tables of the Ten Commandments. The elders did not always consult the civil functionary in Church matters, but the civil functionary did not act in important public affairs without consulting the elders.

THE PURITANS, who settled the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1628, eight years after the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth, were another people entirely. They had paid a less price for their religious freedom and were less tolerant in spirit; while in regard to the separation of the Church from the State they stood substantially with the Pilgrims. The Plymouth men had separated from the Church of England as a corrupt and fallen body, but the Puritans continued in communion with that Church, although they refused to conform to many of its practices and denounced them warmly; and hence were known as Non-conformists or Puritans. They believed firmly in the union of the Church and State as a political necessity, while the Pilgrims believed in it as a spiritual necessity, and in turn they were denounced by the Puritans as 'schismatics.' While the men of Massachusetts Bay were on shipboard, they sent an address to their friends in England calling the Established Church there their 'dear mother,' from whose bosom they had 'sucked' the hope of salvation. When the Atlantic stretched between them, however, they organized Congregational Churches and established them by law, limiting political suffrage to membership therein, obliging all citizens to pay for their support, coercing all into conformity therewith, forbidding all dissenting Churches, and enforcing these prohibitions and requirements by penalties of disfranchisement, fine, imprisonment, scourging and banishment, the same as in cases of civil crime. All is substantially summed up in this decree, passed May 18, 1631, by the general court: 'No man shall be admitted to the body politic but such as are members of some of the Churches within the limits of the same,' that is, the Colony.

The Puritans having equal aversion to the Separatists of Leyden and to the assumptions of the Church of England, they aimed at working out a third way; but when they came to put their theory

The American Baptists

into practice the logic of events brought them to substantially the Plymouth position, and as the two colonies came to know each other, their prejudices and misunderstandings almost vanished. The agreement, however, between the men of the 'Bay' and those of 'Plymouth' concerning the constitution and polity of a Church was never perfect. The Plymouth Church order, at first, contained a trace of aristocracy in the ruling eldership, but this only continued during the lives of three men: Brewster, chosen in 1609; Cushman, in 1649; and Faunce, 1657. After that the vital hold of the eldership was broken, the constant tendency being toward a pure democracy, giving to every member an equal voice. The 'Bay' Churches, on the contrary, gravitated toward what was called Barrowism, which placed Church power in the hands of the elders. But in 1648 the Cambridge platform gave the elders 'the power of office,' defined to be the right of ruling and directing the Church. After that the eldership became the ruling power in the Churches of New England, although this aristocratic tendency was less hearty in the Plymouth colony. The leaders in the Churches generally were from the higher walks of life, and were not prepared to admit the principle of a pure democracy in Church or State. They stood with Milton, Locke and Lightfoot in intelligence and literature, with Cromwell, Hampden and Pym in statesmanship. It is computed that the 21,000 persons who came into New England between 1630-40 brought with them £500,000 – £2,500,000, which, reckoning money as worth then six times more than it is today, they brought property to the value of £15,000,000, and with this all the conservatism which wealth implied in those days. The most of this money was brought by the Puritans, as the Pilgrims were very poor. So long as the 'body politic' was one with the Church, their joint polity must be more rigorous and concentrated than the democratic form allowed, and so in a very short time proscription, bigotry and intolerance asserted themselves bravely. Bishop Peck, an admirer of the Puritans, who is ready to excuse their faults whenever he can, is compelled to say: 'It is both curious and lamentable to see the extreme spirit of Protestantism reaching the very proscriptive bigotry of Romanism, and the brave assertion of Puritan rights resulting in the bitter persecuting tolerance of prelacy; and yet historical fidelity compels the admission. We must confess, however reluctantly, that the spirit of proscription and intolerance in New England is exactly identical with the same spirit which we found in Virginia.'

Still it is a pure mockery of historical truth, and an unjust reflection upon the Puritans themselves, to put in the special plea of modern discovery that the Massachusetts Bay Company was a mere business company, a body of 'mercenary adventurers,' as their worst enemies loved to brand them. The charter which they first received of James, and which Charles enlarged, made them a 'body politic,' so far as a colony could be, under which they both asserted and exercised the right of self-government in home affairs for more than half a century. Their charter endowed them with power to make laws, to choose civil officers, to administer allegiance to new citizens, to exact oaths, to support military officers from the public treasury, and to make defensive war, all independent of the crown. Nay, they made some offences capital, which were not capital in England. So thoroughly did they understand these rights and determine to defend them, that in 1634, when England appointed the archbishops and ten members of the Privy Council, with power to call in all patents of the plantations, to make laws, raise tithes for ministers, to remove governors, and inflict punishment even to death, Massachusetts Bay flew to arms, and rightly; too, as a Commonwealth, and not as a business corporation. All the pastors were convened with the civil officers of the colony to answer the question: 'What we ought to do if a general governor shall be sent out of England?' Their unanimous answer was: 'We ought not to accept him, but defend our lawful possessions, if we

Chapter 1 - The Colonial Period – Pilgrims and Puritans

are able; otherwise to avoid or protract.' And with the spirit, not of traders and mercenaries, but of patriots, they began to collect arms and ammunition, to drill and discipline their men, and to fortify Castle Island, Charlestown and Dorchester Heights. The General Court forbade the circulation of farthings, made bullets a legal tender for a farthing each, appointed a military commission, established a strict military discipline, and erected a beacon on 'Beacon Hill,' to alarm the country in case of English invasion. More than this, the Military Commission was empowered 'to do whatever may be further behooveful for the good of this plantation, in case of any war that may befall us.' They also required every male resident of sixteen years and over to take the 'Freeman's Oath,' and intrusted the Commission with the power of the death penalty.

A facetious writer may be allowed to say that the Puritans came to this country 'to worship God according to their own consciences, and to prevent other people from worshiping him according to theirs,' and we can pardon his playful way of putting this matter. But it is unpardonable in a grave historian to impose upon his readers, by belittling these grand men, and underrating their virtues by ranking them with those who came here in search of religious liberty for themselves alone. To say that they looked upon their charter only as the title-deed of a grasping community holding their possessions by right of fee simple rather than as their only country which they had sworn to protect, is to do them the grossest wrong. They came for another purpose, of the highest and holiest order that liberty and the love of God could inspire. They sought this land not only as an asylum where they could be free themselves, but as a home for the oppressed who were strangers to them, else why did they enfranchise all refugees who took the oath and make them freemen, too? According to Felt, Styles, and many others, they founded a Christian 'State.' President Styles well said, in 1783: 'It is certain that civil dominion was but the second motive, religion the primary one, with our ancestors in coming hither and settling this land. It was not so much their design to establish religion for the benefit of the State, as civil government for the benefit of religion, and as subservient, and even necessary, for the peaceable enjoyment and unmolested exercise of religion – of that religion for which they fled to these ends of the earth.' Their charter under Charles left them on the basis pointed out by Matthew Cradock, governor of the company; July 28th, 1629, namely, with 'the transfer of the government of the plantation to those who shall inhabit there,' as well as with liberty of conscience, so that they could be as liberal as they pleased in religious matters.

They neither were nor could be chartered as a purely civil nor as a purely spiritual body, but all that related to the rights of man, body and soul, was claimed and enjoyed by them under their charter.

John Cotton understood that the colony possessed all the rights of a 'body politic,' with its attendant responsibilities. In his reply to Williams, he says:

'By the patent certain select men, as magistrates and freemen, have power to make laws, and the magistrates to execute justice and judgment amongst the people according to such laws. By the patent we have power to erect such a government of the Church as is most agreeable to the word, to the estate of the people, and to the gaining of natives, in God's time, first to civility, and then to Christianity. To this authority established by this patent. Englishmen do readily submit themselves; and foreign plantations, the French, the Dutch, the Swedish, do willingly transact their negotiations with us, as with a colony established by the royal authority of the State of England.'

No fault, therefore, is to be found with the Massachusetts Bay authorities for the punishment of

The American Baptists

civil and political offenders, even with banishment and death, as in the case of Frost, who was banished for crime in 1632, under the sentence: 'He shall be put to death,' if he returned. In 1633 the same thing was repeated in the case of Stone, this Commonwealth assuming the highest prerogative that any civil power can claim, that over life and death. Twenty distinct cases of banishment from the colony are on record within the first seven years of its settlement, fourteen of them occurring within the first year. Their wrong lay not in these and similar acts for criminal and political causes, but in that they punished men for religious opinions and practices; under the plea, that to hold and express such opinions was a political offense by their laws, although the charter made no such demand of them; but permitted them, had they chosen, to extend equal religious rights to all the Christian colonists, with those which they exercised themselves. The simple fact is, that they wielded the old justification of persecution used by all persecutors from the days of Jesus down: 'We have a law, and by our law he ought to die,' without once stopping to ask by what right we have such a law. With all their high aims and personal goodness, they repeated the old blunder of law-makers, that those who were not one with them in religious faith should not exercise the rights of men in the body politic, because they must be and were its enemies. There can be but little doubt that with all their high aspirations after civil and religious liberty, the late Dr. Geo. E. Ellis, of Boston, stated then case with what Dr. Dexter pronounces 'admirable accuracy,' thus:

'To assume, as some carelessly do, that when Roger Williams and others asserted the right and safety of liberty of conscience, they announced a novelty that was alarming, because it was a novelty, to the authorities of Massachusetts, is a great error. Our fathers were fully informed as to what it was, what it meant; and they were familiar with such results as it wrought in their day. They knew it well, and what must come of it; and they did not like it; rather they feared and hated it. They did not mean to live where it was indulged; and in the full exercise of their intelligence and prudence, they resolved not to tolerate it among them. They identified freedom of conscience only with the objectionable and mischievous results which came of it. They might have met all around them in England, in city and country, all sorts of wild, crude, extravagant and fanatical spirits. They had reason to fear that many whimsical and factious persons would come over hither, expecting to find an unsettled state of things, in which they would have the freest range for their eccentricities. They were prepared to stand on the defensive.' This frank and manly statement of the case is truly historical, because it tells the exact truth; although, perhaps, it never occurred to the men of the Bay, that Elizabeth and James had ranked them and their Plymouth brethren with the 'wild, crude, extravagant and fanatical spirits' of their realm. Spencer, Bishop of Norwich, had boasted that he would drive every Lollard out of his diocese, or 'Make them hop headless, or fry a fagot;" and what better had the Puritans been treated in English 'city and country?' The barbarous cruelties which had failed to reduce their consciences to submission should have suggested to them at least, as incurables themselves, that it might not be their special and bounden duty as magistrates, to crush out all eccentric religionists who happened to be 'crude,' 'extravagant' and 'fanatical,' as enemies of good civil government. Whether they were justified in so treating those who asserted the right and safety of liberty of conscience, is hardly an open question now. So far as appears, the first resistance made to the politico-religious law of the colony came from two brothers, John and Samuel Brown, members of the Church of England. In 1629 they set up worship in Salem according to the book of Common Prayer, alleging that the governor and ministers were already 'Separatists, and would be Anabaptists.' Upon the complaint of the ministers and by the authority of the governor they were sent back to England. Endicott says that their conduct in the matter engendered faction and mutiny. The ministers declared that they had 'come away from the Common Prayer and ceremonies,' and 'neither could nor would use them, because they judged the imposition of these things to be sinful corruptions in the worship of God.' The first false step of the Puritans of the Bay compelled them to take the second or retreat; but they now proceeded to narrow all admittance into the Commonwealth by the test of religious belief, a step which opened a struggle for liberty of conscience, lasting for more than two hundred years in Massachusetts.

Chapter 1 - The Colonial Period – Pilgrims and Puritans

This statement of the civil and religious status of the two colonies of Plymouth and the Bay seems necessary to a proper understanding of the state of things under which Roger Williams, the great apostle of religious liberty, opened the contest, which compelled these great and good men to take that last step, which now protects every man's conscience in America. The chosen teacher who was to show these two bands 'the way of the Lord more perfectly,' as usual, at the cost of great suffering, was now brought unexpectedly to their doors. The old record says:

'The ship Lyon, Mr. William Pierce master, arrived at Nantasket; she brought Mr. Williams, a godly minister, with his wife, Mr. Throgmorton, and others with their wives and children, about twenty passengers, and about two hundred tons of goods.'

The American Baptists

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

The first Baptist of America., like the first of Asia, was the herald of a new reign; hence it was fitting that he should have a wilderness education, should increase for a time and then decrease, that the truth might be glorified. Roger Williams, according to the general belief, was born of Welsh parentage about the year 1600. While young he went to London and, by his skill in reporting, attracted the attention of Sir Edward Coke, the great lawyer who framed the Bill of Rights and defended the Commons in their contest with the crown. By his advice and patronage Williams entered the famous 'Charter House School,' and afterward the University at Cambridge, where Coke himself had been educated, and which was decidedly Puritan in its tone. He was matriculated a pensioner of Pembroke College July 7th, 1625, and took his degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1627. For a time he is supposed to have studied law, and this legal training undoubtedly prepared him for his after legislative career. His bent, however, was toward theology, and he finally took orders in the Church of England, together with a parish, probably in Lincolnshire, under the liberal John Williams, afterward Archbishop of York.

Roger was a stern Puritan, opposed to the liturgy and hierarchy as Laud represented them, and being acquainted with John Cotton and other emigrants to America, he determined to make his home in Massachusetts. He left Bristol December 1st, 1630, and reached Boston February 5th, 1631. His ample fortune, learning and godly character commended him, and he was invited to become teacher in the church there, under the pastoral care of John Wilson. He was a sturdy Puritan when he left England, but when he reached Boston he had become a Separatist, and declared openly that he would not unite with the Church there, as he 'durst not officiate to an unseparated people.' The Puritans held the Church of England to be corrupt in its government, ceremonies and persecuting spirit, and having discarded episcopacy and the ritual, had formed Congregational churches in Massachusetts, and therefore he thought that they should not hold fellowship with that Church. After a great struggle he had cut loose from that Church, and says: 'Truly it was as bitter as death to me when Bishop Laud pursued me out of this land, and my conscience was persuaded against the national Church.' He denounced that Church in strong language, but not a whit stronger than every Puritan had used, and this would have given no offense had he rested there. But he administered sharp rebuke of their inconsistency in stopping short of full separation. Others shared his views in this respect, and denounced them as 'semi-Separatists,' insisting that as the principal end of the new plantation was to enjoy a pure religion, the separation should be complete. When Williams found in his refuge a semifellowship with the English Church and the Congregational Churches put under the control of the magistrates, he foresaw at a glance, that corruption and persecution must work out in America the same results that they had wrought in England. At once, therefore, he protested, as a sound-minded man, that the magistrate might not punish a breach of the first table of the law, comprised in the first four of the Ten Commandments.

This was the rebuke that stung the authorities of Massachusetts Bay, and from that moment he had little rest until his banishment. In April, 1631, he was invited to become teacher to the Church at Salem, the eldest Church in the colony, organized August 6, 1629. At once, six members of the court in Boston wrote to Endicott at Salem, warning the Salem people against him as a dangerous man, for broaching the foregoing novel opinions, and asking the Church there to confer with the Boston Council in regard to his case. Upham, who wrote the history of this Church, reports that it was organized 'On principles of perfect and entire independence of every other ecclesiastical body.'

The American Baptists

Hence, it acted independently of this advice from Boston and received Williams as its minister on the 12th of April. Felt says: 'Here we have an indication that the Salem Church, by calling Williams, coincided with his opinions, just specified, and thus differed with the Church in Boston.' 'This fact accounts for the long struggle between the Salem Church and the colonial government in relation to Williams. That Church and the Church at Plymouth refused communion with members of the Church of England. The first ministers of the Salem Church were Skelton as pastor and Higginson as teacher. Higginson drew up its Articles of Faith, which Hubbard pronounces 'a little discrepant from theirs of Plymouth,' yet not so different but that Governor Bradford, the Separatist 'delegate' from Plymouth, gave the hand of fellowship when the Salem Church was recognized. For a considerable time the other Churches of the Bay looked askance at the Salem Church. Winthrop arrived at Salem from England, in the Arbella, on Saturday, June 12th, 1630, where he and others went ashore, but returned to the ship for Sunday, because, as Cotton says, Skelton could not 'Conscientiously admit them to his communion, nor allow any of their children to be baptized. The reason of such scruple is, that they are not members of the Reformed Churches, like those of Salem and Plymouth.'

This treatment of Winthrop drew forth a severe letter from Cotton to Skelton, dated October 2d, 1630, in which he says that he is 'not a little troubled' 'That you should deny the Lord's Supper to such godly and faithful servants of Christ as Mr. Governor, Mr. Johnson, Mr. Dudley, and Mr. Coddington...My grief increased upon me when I heard you denied baptism to Mr. Coddington's child, and that upon a reason worse than the fact,' namely, that he was not a member of one of the Reformed Churches. He then argues that both Skelton and John Robinson were wrong in taking such ground. Robinson and Brewster had taken this position in their letter to Sir John Worsingham, January 27th, 1618: 'We do administer baptism only to such infants as whereof the one parent at the least is of some Church.' Coddington was a member of a National Church, and not one of 'saints by calling,' as Robinson's in Leyden and Skelton's in Salem; and therefore, the latter would neither christen his child nor allow him at communion. Truly had Robinson said: 'The Lord has more truth yet to break forth out of his holy word,' which light was beginning to gleam in Salem. These facts greatly assist us in understanding the animus of resistance to Williams at every step, and why Morton says that in one year's time he had filled Salem 'with principles of rigid separation, and tending to Anabaptistry.' The soil had been prepared to his hands under the ministry of Skelton and Higginson, who despite themselves had drifted to the verge of Baptist principles without intending to be Baptists.

Williams was not permitted an undisturbed life at Salem, although his services were greatly blessed in that community. The Massachusetts Court could not forget its unheeded advice to that Church, and he had no rest. In his magnanimity, rather than contend with them, he withdrew at the end of the summer to Plymouth, beyond the jurisdiction of the Bay Company, where he found warm friends, and employed his high attainments in assisting Ralph Smith, pastor of the Mayflower Church. The Bay men spared no efforts to make the Plymouth Church restless under its new teacher, and even kindhearted Brewster, the ruling elder of that Church, became set against him, stern Separatist as he was and had been from Scrooby down. He saw something in Roger which reminded him of John Smyth. 'Anabaptistry' had always acted on the good old elder's nerves like a red flag on the masculine head amongst cattle, and Williams's principles raised his honest fear that Roger would actually 'Run the same course of rigid separation and ana-baptistry which Mr. John Smyth,

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

the Se-Baptist at Amsterdam, had done.' At this time Skelton's health failed, in August, 1634, he died, and Williams was called back to Salem, first as supply then as his successor. He returned, accompanied by members of the Plymouth Church, who could not forego the 'more light' which was breaking in upon them through his ministry. He was made a great blessing to the Church, but outsiders could not let him alone, and their constant interference tried his patience to the uttermost. Upham says: 'He was faithfully and resolutely protected by the people of Salem, through years of persecution from without, and it was only by the persevering and combined efforts of all the other towns and Churches that his separation and banishment were finally effected.'

In December, 1633, the General Court convened to consult upon a treatise of his, in which he disputed the right of the colonies to their lands under their patent. This work is not extant, and we can only judge of it from the account given by Winthrop and Cotton, aided by his own statement that he had a troubled conscience that 'Christian kings (so-called) are invested with a right by virtue of their Christianity to take and give away the lands and countries of other men.' Winthrop himself says, that when the treatise was examined, it was found to be 'written in very obscure and implicative phrases,' of uncertain interpretation. It seems to have been a mere theoretical speculation, was submitted to the Court at Winthrop's request, in manuscript and unpublished; and it was agreed to pass over his offense on retraction, or taking an oath of allegiance to the king. The practical importance which Williams attached to it is seen in the fact, that he offered to burn the treatise, and that he wrote the Court 'submissively' and 'penitently.' They took his offer to burn his manuscript as the abandonment of his honest principles; with him it had done its work. So, this terrible affair in which James I was charged with public blasphemy and falsehood, and that other delectable character, Charles I, was likened to the 'frogs' and 'dragon' of Revelations, came to an end and still Massachusetts lived. After this, he was cited to appear before the Court on three different occasions, once to account for further remarks made in a sermon in regard to the patent, once to answer for his opposition to the Freeman's Oath, and finally, to meet the charges on which he was banished in October, 1635. The following is his sentence:

'Whereas Mr. Roger Williams, one of the elders of the Church of Salem, hath broached and divulged divers new and dangerous opinions, against the authority of magistrates, as also writ letters of defamation, both of the magistrates and Churches here, and that before any conviction, and yet maintaineth the same without retraction, it is therefore ordered, that the said Mr. Williams shall depart out of this jurisdiction within six weeks now next ensuing, which if he neglect to perform, it shall be lawful for the governor and two of the magistrates to send him to some place out of this jurisdiction, not to return any more without license of the Court.'

A clear view of the case may be gathered from the specifications as summed up before the Court by the governor, who said: 'Mr. Williams holds forth these four particulars: 1st. That we have not our land by patent from the king, but that the natives are the true owners of it, and that we ought to repent of such a receiving it by patent, 2d. That it is not lawful to call a wicked person to swear, to pray, as being actions of God's worship, 3d. That it is not lawful to hear any of the ministers of the parish assemblies in England, 4th. That the civil magistrate's power extends only to the bodies and goods, and outward state of men, etc.' In his letter to Endicott, Williams explains the bearings of the 4th point in the governor's summing, in these words: 'The point is that of the civil magistrate's dealing in matters of conscience and religion, as also of persecuting and hunting any for any matter

The American Baptists

merely spiritual and religious.'

As partisanship has greatly distorted this historical event, it is needful to examine it carefully and somewhat at length, with due regard to the exact facts: 1st. Touching the then existing form of government.; 2d. The records of the case ; and, 3d. The representations of the several parties who were concerned in the decision. Viewed within these limits, it is folly to claim that either the authorities or Williams can be justified in all that they did. One extreme position assumes that Massachusetts Bay was purely a business corporation, and so its Court might exercise as arbitrary a power of expulsion as that of a commercial association; which interpretation in view of the legislative, executive and judicial prerogatives, exercised by the colony, is a very flimsy absurdity. It is especially so in view of the warlike preparations of the colony for rebellion against English power, and the setting up of an independent sovereignty if necessary. On the other hand, this primitive government was necessarily crude, and did many things which were summary and arbitrary, as judged by present standards. Its acts were frequently directed to accomplish particular objects then in view, as political necessities, without much regard to the general and primary principles of law.

As to Williams himself: It is clear that he was carefully feeling his way to the stand which he took so grandly in after life, our modern conception of the proper relation of Church and State; namely, that each is absolute in its own sphere and without mutual interference. It is quite as clear also, that during his Salem troubles he had not yet arrived at this full conception. While under citation to appear before the General Court, to answer charges which it deemed heretical, the Salem people petitioned that Court to grant and assign to them certain lands on Marblehead Neck, which petition was refused. This was a purely civil matter, which the Court only could control. But Williams made a Church matter of it, and availing himself of what was known amongst the Churches as the 'Way of Admonition,' induced his Church to send a general letter to the other Churches of which the magistrates who had refused the Salem petition were members, asking them to 'admonish' these magistrates, and 'require them to grant without delay such petitions, or else to proceed against them in a Church way;' or as Cotton expresses it: 'That they might admonish the magistrates of scandalous injustice of denying this petition.' If this account can be relied upon, as the letter itself does not seem to be in existence, then the spiritual power of the Salem Church was used to influence the magistrates to do a political act. Probably, this is the letter of 'defamation' of magistrates referred to in his sentence.

In the matter of the test oath blame lodges against Williams, but this is not so clear as in the matter of the Salem petition. The General Court had ordered that each man above twenty-one years of age, who resided in the colony, should take the Resident's Oath of obedience to the laws, to promote the peace and welfare of the colony, and to reveal all plots against it coming to their knowledge. This was a fair and wise requirement, provided, that it contravened no previous legal act or right of the citizen. In May, 1634, the General Assembly, meeting in Boston, revoked the former oath of a freeman, which required his obedience to laws that should be made 'lawfully,' and substituted for it an oath of obedience to 'wholesome' laws. By many the change was unnoticed, it was so slight; but it was made, as Cotton says, to guard against 'Some Episcopal and malignant practices,' and this left it very loose. There is little room for doubt that the real reason was, that in case of necessity the new oath might be interpreted to transfer allegiance from the English crown to the local government, and to make it one step in that series of shrewd movements by which the

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

colony finally became independent. Williams's mistake lay in that he began to preach against it earnestly from a religious point of view. The old oath was an oath, and was administered to 'unregenerate men,' and the new oath did not affect him personally as an unregenerate man, so that he need not to have preached about it at all. To him the oath was an act of worship, and he might have left the unregenerate man to judge for himself as to whether or not it were an act of worship to him also. His view of the civil oath was clearly a mistake, yet it is unfair to judge either him or the Court by the practice of the present day, in the use of the oath. Until recent years, men have been excluded from testifying in courts of justice because their religious belief or unbelief failed to qualify them to take certain oaths or forms of oath. Inasmuch as he was not an 'unregenerate' man he could have taken the new oath or not, as an act of worship, and have left other men to follow their own consciences. But both he and the Court had come to that point of contest where each stickled stubbornly for little things and magnified them to a wondrous importance.

A charge is also made that Williams instigated Endicott to cut the red cross out of the flag of England, on the ground that it was given to the king by the pope as an ensign of victory, and so was a superstitious thing and a relic of antichrist. Whoever did this committed a grievous political offense against the crown, but Williams is not conclusively identified therewith, nor is it even charged against him by the Court, so that if this charge were a mere report, and yet was allowed to weigh in his condemnation, to that extent the Court treated him unjustly. Endicott was tried and punished for cutting out the red cross. He pleaded that he did this not from any motives of treason to the crown, but from his hatred of idolatry, whereupon he was excluded from the magistracy for one year, a light punishment, because as the examining Committee of the Court reported: 'He did it out of tenderness of conscience, and not of any evil intention.' Roger Williams might have held the same opinion, but in this he was not singular, nor has it been alleged that he was suspected of treason on any point. If however, as Hubbard affirms, he 'Inspired some persons of great interest that the cross ought to be taken away,' he only shared a very popular opinion in the colony at the time. The governor himself had called a meeting of all the clergy of the colony, in Boston, January 19th, 1635, and submitted to them this question: 'Whether it be lawful for us to carry the cross in our banners?' They warmly discussed this query, all the pastors being present, except Mr. Ward, of Ipswich, and 'For the matter of the cross,' says Winthrop, 'they were divided, and so deferred it to another meeting.' Felt treats fully of the affair, saying: 'Some of the congress, though not large in number, yet of vital consequences in their advice, approve the display of such a sign, and others think it should be laid aside. Both parties are fully aware that its omission is calculated to bring on the colonists a charge of treason against regal supremacy.'

When Endicott was called to account, the authorities were obliged to defer the question to the next session, because they were undecided 'Whether the ensigns should be laid by in regard that many refused to follow them.' Meanwhile, the Board of War required 'That all the ensigns should be laid aside;' and in May, 1635, a motion was made to exchange the red cross for the red and white rose, being a symbol of union between the houses of York and Lancaster. They recommended that an attempt be made to 'Still their minds, who stood stiff for the cross,' until harmony should ensue concerning the matter. It appears that this cross in the banner was a subject of universal agitation amongst the colonists, that the Court and pastors were divided about it, that Hooker had sent forth a treatise on the subject, and that the 'assembled freemen' seriously proposed to supplant it by the 'roses,' while the 'Board of War' had actually laid it aside for the time being. Still, Roger Williams,

The American Baptists

who did not cut it out, is made the greatest sinner of all in the 'Bay,' perhaps, for not doing this. Joseph Felt, no friend to Williams, artlessly shows with what light seriousness this grave Court took the punishment of Endicott for his high crime: 'While many of the colonists entertained an opinion like his own about the cross, he expressed his in the overt act of cutting it from the standard, and therefore was made an example. State policy rendered it needful for him thus to suffer in order to appease the resentment of the court party in London, for such a seeming denial of the royal supremacy. But for this, there is reason to believe that he would have received applause rather than blame. As evidence that the same body, while so dealing with him by constraint for the sake of keeping the commonwealth from a far greater evil, sympathized with him in his affliction, they place him on a board of surveyors to run the line between Ipswich and Newbury...The ministers had engaged to correspond with their friends in England for advisement in the controversy.'

Of course it was essential to the very existence of the colony that the loyalty of the colonists should not be suspected in England, lest the charter might be revoked, as already the Privy Council had issued an order for its production. But who had done the most to create ill-feeling between the crown and the colony, Roger Williams or the magistrates? He had insisted that they must break fellowship with the English Church; they had driven its members out of the country with the Prayer-Book in their hands, and had made membership in Congregational Churches the test of citizenship in the Bay. He declared, that neither the king nor the Court, in Massachusetts, had any control over the First Table of the Law of God, their power extending only to the body, goods and outward state of men. They had formally resolved, that if the king sent a general governor to rule over them and their goods, they ought not to accept him, but would defend their lawful possessions against him, and they fortified their strongholds to that end. He had an inchoate conception that a separation between Church and State should take place both in England and America; they had a settled conviction and policy that they would be separate from the control of the English Church, with bishops and a king at its head, cost what it might; yet, that he should be compelled at like cost, to submit to the Congregational Churches of Massachusetts, with a governor and Council at their head. Which party was the most exasperating to the crown does not appear; nor does it appear that England ever suspected Roger Williams of disloyalty. On the contrary, it threatened the colony with the withdrawal of the patent and the appointment of a governor; whereas, it gave him a new patent for Rhode Island, without question.

The third and fourth offenses charged against Williams were purely on religious subjects. It was quite severe in him to refuse to listen to the parish priest of England, when in England, and quite likely to give offense there; but was it soothing in the extreme to the English government to be told by these Congregational authorities, that its Episcopal ordination was scouted and cast aside in Massachusetts Bay, that its churches were not allowed there at all, much less that its own Episcopal colonists were not allowed to hear their own ministers preach on this side of the water, 'lawful' or unlawful? Both these were religious opinions, 'Broached and divulged' equally, but why Roger should be banished for refusing a hearing to the Episcopal clergy in England, from their own pulpits, and the Massachusetts Court should not banish itself for refusing them even a Prayer-Book or a pulpit to preach from in that colony, is not easily seen.

So candid man acquainted with the subject can doubt that the Church and State were blended in Massachusetts Bay, that the magistrates there were expected to punish 'breaches of the First Table,' and that every man's religious convictions with their free expression were understood to be

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

within the purview of the civil authorities. So skillfully mixed were the charges against Williams, that under such a government they could scarcely be separated. It is apparent that both his political and spiritual offenses entered into the considerations for his banishment and were intended to enter into it, so that it is impossible to say, whether one set of the charges would have been sufficient to secure this end without the other. The common understanding of their own times and of after times has been, that the chief reasons for his banishment were of the religious character. This is suggested in the undeniable fact, that to hold and utter Christian sentiments opposed to theirs was a crime with them, both before and after the banishment of Williams. The manner in which they sentenced others to banishment, purely for their religious 'opinions,' with the stress laid upon his religious positions, shows conclusively, that the *gravamen* of his offense was not political but religious. They had determined from the time of banishing the Browns, that all should conform to their form of religion or leave the colony. Early in 1635 the Court entreated: 'The brethren and elders of every Church within this jurisdiction, that they will consult and advise of one uniform order of discipline in the Churches, and then to consider how far the magistrates are bound to interpose for the preservation of that uniformity and peace of the Churches.' The Court, at the time of Williams's banishment, pronounced the same sentence upon John Smyth, a Dorchester miller: 'For divers dangerous opinions, which he holdeth and hath divulged.' The fair inference is, that they were the same opinions with those of Williams, as Smyth became one of the founders of Providence, and of whom Williams himself says: 'I consented to John Smyth, miller at Dorchester (banished also), to go with me.' Whatever his 'opinions' were, they were merely 'opinions;' and no overt acts of civil wrong are alleged against him. Smyth and Williams were banished October, 1635; and on March 3d, 1636, the General Assembly ordered that it would not thereafter 'Approve of any companies of men, as shall henceforth join in any pretended way of Church fellowship, without they shall first acquaint the magistrates and the elders of the greater part of the Churches in this jurisdiction with their intentions, and have their approbation therein...No person being a member of any Church which shall hereafter be gathered without the approbation of the magistrates and the greater part of said Churches, shall be admitted to the freedom of this commonwealth.'

The animus of all this is clearly seen in their subsequent acts, as well as in the wording of these laws. On the '30th of the 3d month, 1636,' the Council sent a command from Boston, 'to the constable of Salem,' to inform 'divers persons' there, that their 'course is very offensive to the government here and may no longer be suffered.' What had they done?

They do 'within your town' 'disorderly assemble themselves both on the Lord's day and at other times, contemptuously refusing to come to the solemn meetings of the Church there, (or being some of them justly cast out) do obstinately refuse to submit themselves, that they might be again received; but do make conventions, and seduce divers persons of weak capacity, and have already withdrawn some of them from the Church, and hereby have caused much (not only disturbance to the Church, but also) disorders and damage in the civil State.'

Here we see that they regarded disorder and damage to the State, to consist in withdrawing from the Church, 'hereby' they have 'caused' the 'damage.' And what should be done with these transgressors? The constable must command them to 'Refrain all such disorderly assemblies, and pretended Church-meetings; and either to conform themselves to the laws and orders of this government, being established according to the rule of God's word; or else let them be assured that we shall by God's assistance take some such strict and speedy course for the reformation of these

The American Baptists

disorders, and preventing the evils which may otherwise ensue, as our duty to God and charge over his people do call for from us.'

This document is signed by Vane, governor, Winthrop, deputy, and Dudley.

What they found it their duty to do with these wicked folk, who would worship God elsewhere in Salem than at the State Church, is stated in the records of the General Court of 1638, thus: 'Ezekiel Holliman appeared upon summons, because he did not frequent the public assemblies, and for seducing many, he was referred by the Court to the ministers for conviction.' Holliman, as we shall see, was another of the founders of Providence and the person who baptized Williams there. When in Salem neither of them were Baptists on the subject of ordinances, which leaves the implication that their views were one on the question of liberty of conscience and the power of the magistrates to interfere with religion. And the conduct of the magistrates themselves, in punishing the Salem Church, shows that they were actuated chiefly by religious considerations in the whole transaction. That Church had neither denounced the patent, nor cut out the cross, nor denied the oath to unregenerate men, much less had it incurred the wrath of England. It had, however, alleged its rights as a Church to choose its own pastor without consulting the civil authorities, and had protested against the right of the Court to disturb its pastoral relations with him, for which it must be chastised. This unpardonable offense entered even into the Marblehead land affair, whatever mistake the Salem Church fell into, in writing to the other Churches concerning the Church discipline of their members in the Court. Concerning the petition of the 'Salem men,' which Winthrop says: 'They did challenge as belonging to that town,' he also bluntly adds: 'Because they had chosen Mr. Williams their teacher while he stood under question of authority, and so offered contempt to the magistracy, etc., their petition was refused,' Again he says, that the act of the Salem Church in calling him to the office of a teacher 'at that time was judged a great contempt of authority. So in fine there was given to him and the Church of Salem to consider of these things till the next General Court, and then either to give satisfaction to the Court, or else to expect the sentence.' Nor is this all, but he writes that the Court and ministers were of this mind, namely: 'That they who should obstinately maintain such opinions 'would run the Church' into heresy, apostasy or tyranny, and yet the civil magistrates could not intermeddle.' This shows that Williams had struck a blow at the authority of the civil officers to interfere in Church matters, which they felt keenly, as well as the fact that the Court reached this result on the 'advice' of the ministers. What had the ministers to do with the case if it only concerned civil authorities? The correspondence of the Salem Church conducted by Williams and Elder Sharpe, with the Boston and other Churches, was between purely religious bodies, though it involved a political subject. But the Court must needs meddle with the matter, declare Salem 'rebellious' and 'insubordinate,' and their three deputies were sent home, leaving that town without representation, and requiring them to report what citizens of Salem had indorsed these steps there. It decreed that: 'If the major part of the freemen of Salem shall disclaim the letters sent lately from the Church of Salem to several Churches, it shall then be lawful for them to send deputies to the General Court.' Williams was expelled in the absence of the Salem deputies, and then Elder Sharpe was required to report whether Salem acknowledged its offense or not. Salem was thus brought to humble submission, and Williams was excluded from the Church there; not for 'sedition,' but because he denied the 'Churches of the Bay to be true Churches;' so says Hugh Peter, his successor.

Soon after Williams's banishment a controversy excited the colony concerning the preaching of

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

a Mr. Wheelwright, at Braintree, about a covenant of grace and a covenant of works, involving antinomianism and he was banished. Winthrop in justifying the Court in his case, 1637, against those who complained said: 'If we find his opinions such as will cause divisions, and make people look to their magistrates, ministers and brethren as enemies to Christ, antichrists, etc, were it not sin and unfaithfulness in us to receive more of their opinions which we already find the evil fruit of? Nay, why do not those, who now complain join us in keeping out such, as well as formerly they did in expelling Mr. Williams FOR THE LIKE though less dangerous.' Here the governor tells us, in his honest bluntness, that Williams was 'expelled' for his opinions on religious subjects, which were less dangerous than those of Wheelwright. The plea of all persecutors has ever been that they persecuted no man for his religion, but for 'sedition' and 'disturbance of the public peace.' This was the pretense of the pagans when they tormented the early Christians, of the Catholics in the case of the Waldensians, the Hollanders and the Lollards, and now the apologists of the Puritans put in that plea for them. When the Browns and their Prayer-Books were packed off to England, Endicott said that they 'endangered faction and mutiny;' and when Thomas Painter of Bingham was whipped in July, 1644, for refusing to have his child christened, his judges said, that it was 'not for his opinions, but for reproaching the Lord's ordinance;' as if his opinion of infant baptism was not the very reproach which he threw upon it and for which he was punished.

The same pretense is now set up against Roger Williams, in the allegation that he was banished for civil cause alone, directly in the face of his sentence, which charges upon him: 'New and dangerous opinions against the authority of the magistrates.' Yet, in no instance did he dispute their right to civil office, or charge them with civil usurpation, nor did he refuse to obey them in purely civil matters; but he dared to question their assumption of religious authority outside of their proper sphere as civil officers. Joseph Felt bewails his sentence, as disturbing 'the benevolent feelings of every heart,' and regrets it, 'as a serious impediment to the prosperous progress of the commonwealth, and a dark omen that its hopes of spirituality and duration may be soon scattered.' Then he says of the authorities: 'Believing themselves bound to exclude persons who, they suppose, entertain principles subversive of their civil and ecclesiastical polity, the General Court engage in so unpleasant a service.' Neither did the Court itself proceed against him as against a civil criminal. Trial by jury is more than once insisted upon in Magna Charta, as the principal bulwark of an Englishman's liberty, but especially does Chap. xxix insist that no freeman shall be hurt in his person or property 'except by the legal judgment of his peers and the law of the land.' Hence, the royal charter granted to Massachusetts could not abridge the great rights of British freemen which had been secured by Magna Charta, nor could it deprive a colonist of the right of trial by jury; a right which had been a vital part of the British Constitution from the time of King John. Neither could the charter authorize the governor and company of Massachusetts Bay to inflict unusual penalties in punishment of sedition, or the disturbance of the public peace, without the form of a public trial. On the contrary, all the rights of Englishmen were secured to the colonists by the charter, but Roger Williams was simply persecuted out of the colony, without the due observance of even this form. In a word, there is no precedent for this trial, no authority for it in common law or the chartered rights of the colony. A new process or procedure appears to have been invented on the spot and at the time for his case, the effect of which was, that he suffered under an *ex post facto* law. Instead of proceeding as a court of civil jurisprudence to produce and examine witnesses, about the first step which they took was to appoint Hooker, the pastor at Newtown, to 'dispute' with him. This he did,

The American Baptists

but found it impossible 'to seduce him from any of his errors' (not crimes), for that he 'maintained all his opinions.' Dr. Dexter says of Williams: 'They asked him whether he would take the whole subject into still further consideration; proposing that he employ another month in reflection, and then come and argue the matter before them.' Again, he says, that the Court 'appointed Thomas Hooker (a brother pastor) to go over these points in argument with him; on the spot, in the endeavor to make him see his errors. One single glimpse of this debate is afforded us by Mr. Cotton.' This last word expresses the bearings of the whole proceeding. It was a 'debate,' an argument concerning certain alleged religious errors, and not a trial in any proper legal sense of the word. Winthrop says that Williams maintained 'all his opinions;' and Williams understood the same thing, for he says, that he was not only ready to be 'banished, but to die also in New England, as for most holy truths of God in Christ Jesus'

Barry, in his 'History of Massachusetts,' says (p. 239): 'Meanwhile the elders continued to deal with him for his errors and to labor for his conversion; and Mr. Cotton spent the great part of the summer in seeking, by word and writing, to satisfy his scruples. Informing the magistrates of their desire to proceed with him in a Church way before civil prosecution was urged, the governor replied: "You are deceived in him if you think he will condescend to learn of any of you."'

The first element of a trial for civil wrong-doing does not appear in the whole process, nor can a like case be found in the records of civil trials under English law, outside of the Star Chamber. Not a witness was examined, no counsel was heard, and none of the forms of law invariably observed in sedition or disturbance of the public peace, were had. His banishment was a religious and not a State necessity, which Williams well characterized, when he declares it to have been 'Most lamentably contrary to the doctrine of Jesus Christ.'

The apologists of the Puritans make a great outcry against Williams for saying that the king had no right to grant the lands to the colonists, because they belonged to the natives. And was he singular in this opinion? No. Cotton writes: 'There be many, if not most, that hold, that we have not our land merely by right of patent from the king, but that the natives are true owners of all that they possess or improve. Neither do I know any amongst us that either then were, or now are, of another mind.' Yet, he says that these freemen 'Are tolerated to enjoy both civil and religious liberties amongst us.' Then, why was Williams banished for believing what Cotton says every body else believed? Cotton tells us that he was guilty of these two things, he was 'violent' in preaching against the patent, and he presented the matter unfairly, for they had not taken the lands on the king's patent. Cotton claims that the lands were 'void places,' made so 'by pestilence, which had swept away thousands of the natives' 'a little before our coming.' They therefore took nothing from the king or the natives, but inhabited the country by the 'law of nature.' Williams somehow got it into his head, that if the small-pox had swept away thousands of the Indian fathers 'a little before our coming,' the land on which their bones fell might possibly belong to their children; and so he had religious scruples on the point, and ventured to state them vehemently in the pulpit, when he ought to have held his tongue; and for which he was banished. It had been better for Cotton to be quiet than to disgrace the magistrates by such petty special pleading as this. He calls Williams 'violent' and 'vehement:' but Winthrop who knew him intimately pronounces him 'A man lovely in his carriage.'

Our best historians find his banishment as purely a religious affair as it could be under that union of Church and State which Massachusetts has now repudiated as unworthy of retention.

Bradford holds the magistrates 'Inexcusable in their treatment of Roger Williams...merely for

Chapter 2 - Banishment of Roger Williams

his honest independence of opinion.' Peck thinks him 'A very troublesome man for bigotry to manage... When he entered Massachusetts, he was in advance of the general sentiment of the Puritans on the question of religious liberty... Roger Williams was more than a Puritan. He was the great mind ordained of Providence to advance beyond the position of indignant protest against oppression, to the revelation that the highest right must itself be the result of a freedom which might be abused by consenting to the deepest wrong. He was the first true type of the American freeman, conceding fully to others the highborn rights which he claimed for himself. This was further than Puritanism could lead the race; and, for the present, it was not ready to follow. He denied the right to coerce a man to take a freeman's oath; but would not he himself be compelled to take it? No, he refused: and such was the firm dignity of his bearing, that the government was forced to desist from that proceeding. But he was living under a religion established by law, not Prelacy, but Puritanism, in which intolerance was just as vile to him, and just as determined against a Non-conformist.'

The unvarnished fact seems to be, that like honest Saul of Tarsus they meant to be men of God, but like him allowed all their religion to run into personal conscience, without much regard to the consciences of others. " Their primary blunder lay in overlooking the spiritual laws of the Church of Christ, and applying both to Church and State the judicial enactments of Moses, which were made for the government of a civil nation 1,500 years before the Christian Church existed. Roger Williams himself well expresses their mistake in these words: 'Although they professed to be bound by such judicials only as contained in them moral equity, yet they extended this moral equity to so many particulars as to make it the whole judicial law.' But the Christian law for the government of the commonwealth leaves all punishment to be governed under the sway of the natural rights of man and the highest good of the States where they are used. Hence, in adopting the Mosaic penalties they not only cast aside, in some cases, what was known as 'crown law,' but with it the common law of England. Barry puts the case forcibly, saying: 'Puritans as well as Episcopalians assumed their own infallibility; and, as Church and State were one and inseparable in Old England, they were bound together in New England; and the purity of the former was deemed indispensable to the safety of the latter. This policy was resolutely adhered to, and the laws which sanctioned it were as inflexible as the laws of the Medes and Persians.' Governor Winthrop saw his mistake when it was too late. Barry says: 'He regretted the harshness with which Roger Williams was treated; and though a zealous opponent of Mrs. Hutchinson and the enthusiastic Gorton, as he advanced in life his spirit became more catholic and he lamented the errors of the past; so that, when urged by Mr. Dudley to sign an order for the banishment of one deemed heterodox, he replied, "I have done enough of that work already.'"

Since Jesus was sentenced to death in Asia, on the cool verdict that he was a 'just man' in whom no 'fault' was found, a sublimer sight has not appeared to man than that revealed in America on that crisp October morning in 1635. This master in Israel looms up head and shoulders above his Puritan judges. Without a stammer or a blush he reaches the full height of manhood; whereupon the Bay sentences him to a new leadership. In Salem God threw the mantle of William the Silent upon the shoulders of the brave Welshman. What, if Massachusetts did lay her political sins on his head, and send her scapegoat to bear them into the desert? He was strong to carry the burden of her congregation and elders. He remembered Pilate, and quietly held the bowl for this ancient Court of the Bay to sink its sins in the shallows of a basin. He watched the experiment in the simplicity of a child's faith, in the firmness of a martyr's will, in the resignation of a cavalier, in the calmness of

The American Baptists

a hero; for God was with him.

For that hour God brought him into the world. The persecution of two worlds inspired him to discover a third, where the wicked should cease from troubling, in that sort. A veteran before his sun had readied noon, nerved with a judicial love of liberty, fired with a hallowed zeal to liberate all the conscience-bound, he is now ready to give life to a new age. Roger, get thee gone into the woods to thy work! And when alone with God may he work his will in thee!

'Speak, History. Who are life's victors? Unroll thy long annals and say, Are they those whom the world called victors, who won the success of a day? The martyrs, or Nero? The Spartans who fell at Thermopylae's tryst, Or the Persians and Xerxes? His judges or Socrates? Pilate or Christ?'

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

Salem was filled with excitement and grief when Williams was banished, and asked what its good pastor had done to merit this cruelty at the hands of his fellow-disciples in Christ? John Cotton, snugly housed in his Boston home, severely discontended on Williams's exile as any thing but 'banishment.' In that dreary New England winter, as his brother plunged into the depths of the forests, he spoke of it as a 'large and fruitful' land, in which he enjoyed simple 'enlargement.' But Cotton was careful not to break the command by coveting that 'enlargement' for himself, nor did he so hanker after the delicious fruits of the wilderness as to follow his brother, to rejoice with him in his tribulation. Indeed, he queries whether it was a 'punishment at all,' and one would rather catch the impression from his showing, that the Court had simply sent him on a restful excursion, in absolute dereliction of its duty to punish crime. The illustrious hero himself thought that Cotton might have seen the matter in another light, 'Had his soul been in my soul's case, exposed to the miseries, poverties, necessities, debts and hardships,' which he endured. The weak people of Salem also wept as if their hearts would break, that he was driven they knew not where, 'for they were much taken with the apprehension of his godliness.' Neal says, that the whole town was in an uproar, that they raised the 'cry of persecution,' and 'that he would have carried off the greater part of the inhabitants of the town, if the ministers of Boston had not interfered.' These admonished the Church at Salem for sympathizing with one who had been driven out of civilization as a felon.

Upham, the careful historian of the Salem Church, says: 'They adhered to him long and faithfully, and sheltered him from all assaults. And when at last he was sentenced by the General Court to banishment from the colony on account of his principles, we cannot but admire the fidelity of that friendship which prompted many of his congregation to accompany him in his exile, and partake of his fortunes when an outcast upon the earth.' Thanks to Salem, its loss was the world's gain. That day, out of the weak came forth strength, and out of the bitter came forth sweetness. Good old Puritan city of witchcraft and halts, out of thee, as from Salem of old, went forth an illustrious exile: the first to redeem the souls of men, and the other to give fifty millions of them soul liberty. Men intended only evil in both cases, but God overruled their aims for good. His eye rested on this wanderer in the New World, and his voice told him what to do and where to go.

We now follow Roger Williams into those wild tracts of nature where the wolf, the bear and the panther roamed in all their voracity. Perpetual hardships had given the wild tribes of that region compact and well-knit bodies, which could subsist for days on a handful of corn. Aside from this, with their fish and game, they had little food in the depth of winter, knowing nothing of salted meats, and often they were sorely pinched with hunger. So far as appears, Williams entered the desert without a weapon, bow or arrow, spear or club, hatchet or gun, to hunt for bird or beast, and every esculent root was frozen in the ground and buried in the snow. That winter was signally bitter and he felt its keen severity. It seems to have haunted his mind in 1652, when he dedicated his 'Hireling Ministry' to Charles II, in the epistle to which, he calls New England a 'miserable, cold, howling wilderness.' Without bread or bed for fourteen weeks, and the first white man who had ever wandered in those mazes, he regarded himself cared for of God as miraculously as was Elijah, and he sang this song in his desolate pilgrimage: 'God's Providence is rich to his, Let some distrustful be; In wilderness in great distress, These ravens have fed me!'

The bronzed barbarians through whose lands he passed were superstitious, ferocious and often treacherous. He would not have been safe for an hour, had not his kind acts toward them been noised

The American Baptists

through their tribes. While at Plymouth he had gone forth amongst them, had visited their wigwams, learned their language and preached to them the good news of the kingdom; and now his love governed the wild element in their bosoms when he had no power over fierce winter storms. He knew their chiefs or sachems, and on reaching their settlements on Narraganset Bay, his sufferings touched the savage heart. They remembered his former kindness, welcomed him to Indian hospitality, and Massasoit took him to his cabin as he would a brother. Here he bought a tract of land, pitched his tent, and with the opening spring began to plant and build on the east bank of the Seekonk River. Immediately, however, he received a friendly letter from Winslow, Governor of Plymouth, advising him to cross the river and push farther into the wilderness, as he was too near the boundary line of that colony. Seeking and pursuing peace, he and his companions took a canoe, shot into the stream and made their way down to a little cove near India Point, when a company of Indians hailed them with a friendly salutation which they had caught from the English: 'What cheer?' There they tarried for a time, but kept on round the Point to the mouth of the Moshassuck River, where a delicious spring of water invited them to land. Casting around for a resting-place in the dense forest, where wild beasts and savages hemmed them in from their Christian brethren, and where they were far enough from persecuting Christians to give Christianity fair play, they stood on holy ground. Under a bright June sky, with a soil around them which was unpolluted by the foot of oppression and a virgin fountain laughing at their feet, for the first time in life their bosoms swelled full free to worship God. There he said of his harsh brethren: 'I had the country before me, and might be as free as themselves, and we should be loving neighbors together.' He built an altar there, and called the name of that place Providence; for he said, 'God has been merciful to me in my distress!'

There he bought land of the Indians for the Providence plantations, and in June, 1636, laid the foundation-stone of the freest city and State on earth; a republic of true liberty, a perpetual memorial to the unseen Finger that pointed out the hallowed spot. To this day that virgin stream remains unmingled with a tear drawn from the eye by Christian cruelty, nor has religious despotism yet forced a drop of blood there from the veins of God's elect. The first concern of its illustrious founder was, that this new home should be 'a shelter to persons distressed for conscience.' The compact drawn reads thus: 'We whose names are here underwritten, being desirous to inhabit in the town of Providence, do promise to submit ourselves in active and passive obedience, to all such orders or agencies as shall be made for public good of the body in an orderly way, by the major consent of the present inhabitants, masters of families, incorporated together into a township, and such others whom they shall admit into the same, only in civil things.' Here we find the first germ of that great modern doctrine which he afterward avowed in his 'Bloody Tenet' in these words: 'The sovereign power of all civil authority is founded in the consent of the people.' Also, this simple compact sweeps away at a stroke every allegation that he was banished for civil wrongs, and that the religious aspects of his case were an after-thought. Those who make that allegation are bound by self-respect as well as historic justice to show on what line of human motive Williams, exiled for faction and sedition, should, in organizing a new government, first exact the bond that no man under that government should ever be 'molested for his conscience.' How do the antecedents of such alleged civil crime express themselves in such a sequence? No; here, as elsewhere, human nature was true to itself. That which had been cruelly denied in Massachusetts and for which he had suffered the loss of all things, should now be secured at all hazard. Each man reserved to himself the rights of

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

conscience, which no number of the 'major' part might touch, and that at once was made an inalienable right; all else in 'civil things' could be risked as of minor consequence.

We have already seen that from the Swiss Baptists of 1527, the Dutch Baptists, the Confessions of 1611 and others, this doctrine had gone forth to do its work and had been a cardinal principle with all Baptists. Also, that William of Orange was the first of rulers in the old governments who embodied it in an existing constitution ; but the honor was reserved for Roger Williams of making it the foundation-stone on which human government should stand; because conscience is the regnant power to which all obligation appeals in the individual man. This demanded from Bancroft, our great historian, that memorable utterance which has been sneered at as 'rhetoric,' by men who are unworthy to untie the latchet of his shoe; although as an honest chronicler he could not withhold this testimony concerning Roger Williams:

'He was the first person in modern Christendom to assert in its plenitude the doctrine of the liberty of conscience, the equality of opinions before the law...Williams would permit persecution of no opinion, no religion, leaving heresy unharmed by law, and orthodoxy unprotected by the terrors of penal statutes...We praise the man who first analyzed the air, or resolved water into its elements, or drew the lightning from the clouds, even though the discoveries may have been as much the fruits of time as of genius. A moral principle has a much wider and nearer influence on human happiness; nor can any discovery of truth be of more direct benefit of society, than that which establishes a perpetual religious peace, and spreads tranquillity through every community and every bosom. If Copernicus is held in perpetual reverence, because, on his death-bed, he published to the world that the sun is the center of our system; if the name of Kepler is preserved in the annals of human excellence for his sagacity in detecting the laws of the planetary motion; if the genius of Newton has been almost adored for dissecting a ray of light and weighing heavenly bodies in a balance – let there be for the name of Roger Williams at least some humble place among those who have advanced moral science and made themselves the benefactors of mankind.'

In 1872 the Congress of the United States had placed a memorial of Roger Williams in the National Capitol, and Senator Anthony, January 9, delivered a eulogy of great justice and beauty, in which he paid the following tribute to the immortal defender of soul liberty:

'In all our history no name shines with a purer light than his whose memorial we have lately placed in the Capitol. In the history of all the world there is no more striking example of a man grasping a grand idea, at once, in its full proportions, in all its completeness, and carrying it out, unflinchingly, to its remotest legitimate results. Roger Williams did not merely lay the foundations of religious freedom, he constructed the whole edifice, in all its impregnable strength, and in all its imperishable beauty. Those who have followed him in the same spirit have not been able to add any thing to the grand and simple words in which he enunciated the principle, nor to surpass him in the exact fidelity with which he reduced it to the practical business of government. Religious freedom, which now, by general consent, underlies the foundation principles of civilized government, was, at that time, looked upon as a wilder theory than any proposition, moral, political, or religious, that has since engaged the serious attention of mankind. It was regarded as impracticable, disorganizing, impious, and, if not utterly subversive of social order, it was not so only because its manifest absurdity would prevent any serious effort to enforce it. The lightest punishment deemed due to its confessor was to drive him out into the howling wilderness. Had he not met with more Christian treatment from the savage children of the forest than he had found from "the Lord's anointed," he would have perished in the beginning of his experiment...Such a man was Roger Williams. No thought of himself, no idea of recompense or of praise, interfered to sully the perfect purity of his motives, the perfect disinterestedness of his conduct. Laboring for the highest benefit of his fellow-men, he was entirely indifferent to their praises. He knew (for God, whose prophet he was, revealed it to him) that the great principle for which he contended, and for which he suffered, founded in the eternal fitness of things, would endure forever. He did not inquire

The American Baptists

if his name would survive a generation. In his vision of the future, he saw mankind emancipated from the thralldom of priestcraft, from the blindness of bigotry, from the cruelties of intolerance. He saw the nations walking forth in the liberty wherewith Christ had made them free.'

Yet this statement expresses no more than the general conviction of the American public. Recently, a leading New York daily of weighty influence said: 'Baptists have solved a great problem. They combine the most resolute conviction, the most stubborn belief in their own special doctrines, with the most admirable tolerance of the faith of other Christians. And this combination of sturdy faith with graceful tolerance makes it easy to recognize them as the followers of Roger Williams.' Indeed, the best thinkers in Europe begin to unite in this sentiment. Long since Gervinus, the profound German, said of Williams, that he founded a 'New society in Rhode Island upon the principles of entire liberty of conscience and the uncontrolled power of the majority in secular concerns,...which principles have not only maintained themselves here, but have spread over the whole Union...and given laws to one quarter of the globe, and, dreaded for their moral influence, they stand in the background of every democratic struggle in Europe.' Williams had the choice before him of direct hostility between the Church and State, as in the pagan days of early Christianity; an alliance between them as in Constantine's day; a supremacy of the Church over the State, as in the Middle Ages: or entire independence of each other, earnest, friendly, helpful in the common weal. Cavour wished for 'Free Churches in a free State,' having borrowed the ideal of Roger Williams. The first publicists of our age are the most ready to credit him and his coadjutors with linking liberty to law, and with proving that a voluntary religion is the determined foe of license on the one hand and of tyranny on the other, when they exercise their free life independently of each other.

This point he set forth fully not only in its practical bearings, but he defined and defended it unmistakably in his works. When in London, in 1644, he published his 'Bloody Tenet of Persecution for Cause of Conscience;' in 1647 John Cotton replied in his 'Bloody Tenet Washed and Made White; and Williams rejoined in his 'Bloody Tenet yet more Bloody,' in 1652. Williams took the broad ground throughout that no man can be held responsible to his fellow-man for his religious belief. Cotton attempted to take new ground, but failed, and was obliged to fall back upon the old Catholic view. He denied the right to persecute men 'for conscience rightly informed.' But if a man's conscience is 'erroneous and blind in fundamental and weighty matters,' then the magistrate may admonish him on the subject; and if he remains 'willfully blind and criminally obstinate,' then the magistrate may punish him. This makes the civil power the sole judge of fundamental error, willful blindness and cruel obstinacy, and covers all that the Catholic powers ever claimed on the subject. When the principles of Williams were distorted and he was charged with sustaining anarchy to the destruction of civil government, he wrote his immortal letter on the question, which has been denominated a 'classic,' and will scarcely perish for ages. Amongst other things he said:

'There goes many a ship to sea, with many hundred souls on one ship, whose weal or woe is common, and is a true picture of a commonwealth, or a human combination or society. It hath fallen out sometimes that both Papists and Protestants, Jews and Turks, may be embarked in one ship; upon which supposal I affirm, that all the liberty of conscience, that ever I pleaded for, turns upon these two binges: that none of the Papists, Protestants, Jews or Turks be forced to come to the ship's prayers or worship, nor compelled from their own particular prayers or worship if they practice any. I further add, that I never denied, that notwithstanding this liberty, the commander of this ship ought to command the ship's course, yea, and also command that justice,

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

peace and sobriety be kept and practiced both among the seamen and all the passengers. If any of the seamen refuse to perform their service, or passengers to pay their freight; if any refuse to help, in person or purse, toward the common charges or defense; if any refuse to obey the common laws and order of the ship concerning their common peace or preservation; if any shall mutiny and rise up against their commanders and officers; if any should preach or write that there ought to be no commanders or officers because all are equal Christ, therefore, no masters or officers, no laws or orders, no corrections or punishments; I say, I never denied, but in such cases, whatever is pretended, the commander or commanders may judge, resist, compel and punish such transgressors, according to their deserts and merits. This, if seriously and honestly minded, may, if it please the Father of lights, let in some light to such as willingly shut not their eyes.' It would be interesting to trace the further history of his life and of Rhode Island in their defense and application of the liberty of conscience, but it must suffice to say, that during the rest of his days Williams remained its faithful exponent and defender, he had followed his convictions on that subject from the Episcopalians to the Congregationalists, from them to the Baptists, and from them to the Seekers.

But in these changes his personal religious character remained without a spot; he gave the same large liberty to all others which he took for himself, he respected their motives and convictions, and in his controversies with them left no trace of acerbity. His personal services to all the New England colonies, by skillful negotiations with the Indians, which twice saved them from a general war that might have exterminated them, can hardly be overestimated. Bancroft justly characterizes his exertions in breaking the Pequod league as 'a most intrepid and successful achievement,' 'an action as perilous in its execution as it was fortunate in its issue.'

The youthful reader will be grateful for a fuller detail of these facts, which is here attempted in brief. In the fall of 1636, only six months after the flight of Williams into the wilderness, he found that the Indian tribes were forming a league for the destruction of the English, and at once informed the Governor of Massachusetts of the plot in order to save them. Passion ran high on the part of that colony and on the part of the red men, and the Massachusetts government asked him to step in as mediator between them. This was the exile's prompt reply:

'The Lord helped me immediately to put my life into my hand, and, scarce acquainting my wife, to ship myself alone, in a poor canoe, and to cut through a stormy wind, with great seas, every minute in hazard of life, to the sachems' house. Three days and nights my business forced me to lodge and mix with the bloody Pequod ambassadors, whose hands and arms, me thought, reeked with the blood of my countrymen, murdered and massacred by them on Connecticut River, and from whom I could not but nightly look for their bloody knives at my own throat also. God wonderously preserved me, and helped me to break to pieces the Pequods' negotiation and design; and to make and finish, by many travels and charges, the English league with the Narragansetts and Mohegans against the Pequods.'

This resulted in a lasting treaty of peace, which was written in English, which language the Indians could not understand, and a copy was sent by Massachusetts to Williams, with the request that he would interpret it to them. Thus, the illustrious exile served and saved the country from whence he was banished, while his bones were yet aching with the hardships of his journey, in beautiful illustration of his Master's words, Luke 6:22,23,27,28. With the artless simplicity of a child, he tells Winthrop of his interview with Canonicus, the great chief, in the interests of Massachusetts.

He says of this warrior that he 'was very sour, and accused the English and myself for sending the plague amongst them, and threatening to kill him especially. Such tidings it seems were lately brought to his ears by some of his flatterers and our ill-willers. I discerned cause of bestirring myself

The American Baptists

and stayed the longer, and at last, through the mercy of the Most High, I not only sweetened his spirit, but possessed him, that the plague and other sicknesses were alone in the hand of the one God, who made him and us, who being displeased with the English for lying, stealing, idleness and uncleanness, the natives' epidemical sins, smote many thousands of us ourselves with general and late mortalities.'

And how did Massachusetts treat him, when he heaped these glowing coals of Christian love on her head? Let us see. He went to England to procure a charter, being obliged to take a ship from the Dutch settlement, and when he returned, in 1644, with the instrument which gave his people an independent government, in order that he might land in Boston, several nobles and Parliament men gave him a gracious letter commending him to the authorities of Massachusetts, but they treated him rudely and as still a banished man. Hubbard says, in their defense (p. 349), that 'They saw no reason to condemn themselves for any former proceedings against Mr. Williams; but for any offices of Christian love and duties of humanity they were willing to maintain a mutual correspondence with him. But as to his dangerous principles of separation, unless he can be brought to lay them down, they see no reason why to concede to him, or any so persuaded, free liberty of ingress and egress lest any of their people should be drawn away from his erroneous principles.' Well may John Callender, 'that disciple whom Jesus loved,' say of him in his own manly manner: 'Mr. Williams appears, by the whole course and tenor of his life and conduct here, to have been one of the most disinterested men that ever lived, a most pious and heavenly-minded soul.' (Hist. Dis., p. 17.) And this judgment of his wisdom, magnanimity and goodness, is shared by the great everywhere. Southey called him the 'best and greatest of the Welshmen,' and Archbishop Whately, who venerated his memory as a great benefactor of mankind, paid him well-merited praise, for he never corrupted any man by pen or tongue, but devoted his long life to the blessing of his race.

The exact date of his death is not known; it was early in 1683, when about eighty-four years of age, and he was buried with all the honors that the colony could show. In 1860 his dust was exhumed by one of his descendants and removed from the orchard, where it had reposed so long, to the North Burial Ground, Providence. Dr. A. J. Gordon, of Boston, a graduate of Brown University, says: 'While a student in that goodly city I saw the bones of Roger Williams disinterred, and, strange to relate, it was discovered that the tap-root of an apple-tree had struck down and followed the whole length of the stubborn Baptist's spinal column, appropriating and absorbing its substance till not a vestige of the vertebrae remained. And thus, that invincible backbone of Roger Williams, whom a critical Massachusetts statesman stigmatized as "contentiously conscientious," was "spread throughout the world dispersed" in the fruit of the tree that grew above his grave. Blessed are they who are so fortunate as to have their theology enriched by such strong phosphites.' The late Dr. W. R. Williams, alluding to the heavy burden of fruit which Roger Williams's apple-tree had produced year by year and scattered by its seed, says of the 'curious fidelity' of this root in following the outline of the skeleton: 'It was as if to say, that the righteous are fruitful of good even in the dust of their moldering. And over a broad republic – every day widening its territory and the sweep of its influence, political, literary and religious – it seems today impossible to say how much of the national order and happiness is traceable to the memory and example of the man there entombed; is the fruitage, under God's benediction, of the sufferings and sacrifices of the weary pilgrim and exile who there found repose.'

The works of Roger Williams have been collected and reprinted in six quarto volumes, under

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

the care of the Narragansett Club, making about 2,000 pages. Of these Professor Tyler says:

'Roger Williams, never in any thing addicted to concealments, has put himself, without reserve, into his writings. There he still remains. There, if anywhere, we may get well acquainted with him. Searching for him along the two thousand printed pages upon which he has stamped his own portrait, we seem to see a very human and fallible man, with a large head, a warm heart, a healthy body, an eloquent and imprudent tongue; not a symmetrical person, poised, cool, accurate, circumspect; a man very anxious to be genuine and to get at the truth, but impatient of slow methods, trusting gallantly to his own intuitions, easily deluded by his own hopes; an imaginative, sympathetic, affluent, impulsive man; an optimist; his master-passion benevolence,...lovely in his carriage,...of a hearty and sociable turn,...in truth a clubbable person; a man whose dignity would not have petrified us, nor his saintliness have given us a chill...from early manhood even down to late old age,...in New England a mighty and benignant form, always pleading for some magnanimous idea, some tender charity, the rectification of some wrong, the exercise of some sort of forbearance toward men's bodies or souls.'

As to his person, no genuine portrait of him is known to exist, or it would have appeared in this volume. Some years ago one was supposed to have been found, but Dr. Guild, the librarian of Brown University, and others pronounce it spurious. A monument, twenty-seven feet high, crowned by a statue seven and a half feet in height, was erected to his memory in 1877 in Roger Williams Park, Providence, but as a likeness of the great apostle it is purely ideal.

Most sacredly has Rhode Island guarded the hallowed trust committed to her charge, for no man has ever been persecuted in that sovereignty for his religious opinions and practices from its first settlement in 1636. Williams obtained the first charter in 1643-44, and the first body of laws was drawn under it in 1647. Under the town legislation of the several towns, which had sprung up before the charter was granted, absolute religious liberty was secured to each inhabitant; in 1647, at the close of the civil enactments made under this charter, these words were added: 'And otherwise than this what is herein, forbidden, all men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God. And let the lambs of the Most High walk in this colony without molestation in the name of Jehovah their God forever.' At the first, all the functions of government were exercised by the whole body of citizens in town-meeting. Two deputies were chosen to preserve the peace, call the meeting and execute its decisions.

The same spirit animated the two colonies of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations. In fact, the first declaration of democracy formulated in America dates from the island of Rhode Island, March 16, 1641, when 'It was ordered and unanimously agreed upon, that the government which this body politic doth attend unto in this island and the jurisdiction thereof, in favor of our prince, is a DEMOCRACY, or popular government; that is to say, it is in the power of the body of freemen, orderly assembled, or major part of them, to make or constitute just laws, by which they will be regulated, and to depute from among themselves such ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between man and man.' And the following acts secured religious liberty there: 'It was further ordered, by the authority of this present Court, that none be accounted a delinquent for doctrine, provided, it be not directly repugnant to the government or laws established.' On September, 1641, it was ordered, 'That the law of the last Court, made concerning liberty of conscience in point of doctrine, be perpetuated.' It was decreed at Providence in 1647 that since 'Our charter gives us power to govern ourselves, and such other as come among us; and by such a form of civil government as by the voluntary consent, etc., shall be found most suitable to our estate and condition; It is agreed

The American Baptists

by this present Assembly thus incorporate, and by this present act declared, that the form of government established in Providence Plantations is DEMOCRATICAL; that is to say, a government held by the free and voluntary consent of all or the greater part of the free inhabitants.'

At Providence, May, 1638, a citizen who had molested the rights of his wife's conscience by refusing to let her attend public worship, when she desired to do so, was disfranchised, in these words: 'Joshua Verin, for breach of covenant in restraining liberty of conscience, shall be withheld the liberty of voting, till he declare the contrary.' Arnold, another citizen, attempted to hoodwink the freemen of the plantation, by pretending that Verin restrained her 'out of the free exercise of his conscience' as her husband. But the freemen saw through the wool with which he attempted to veil their eyes. Williams states the case thus to Winthrop:

'Sir, we have been long afflicted by a young man, boisterous and desperate, Philip Verin's son, of Salem, who, as he hath refused to hear the word with us (which we molested him not for) this twelve month, so because he could not draw his wife, a gracious and modest woman, to the same ungodliness with him, he hath trodden her underfoot tyrannically and brutishly; which she and we long bearing, though with his furious blows she went in danger of life, at last the major vote of us discard him from our civil freedom, or disfranchise, etc.: he will have justice, as he clamors, in other courts, etc.'

This blustering wife-beater had come from Salem, and because he could not thrash his wife at pleasure, and continue to put her life 'in danger,' and tread 'her underfoot tyrannically and brutishly' in deference to his own sweetly 'seared' conscience, he was 'dissatisfied with his position' and 'returned to Salem.' Possibly, as Hooker said to Shephard, he concluded that that 'coast was most meet for his opinion and practice,' as well as for his sort of conscience. So, because conscientious wife-whipping was not popular at Providence, Joshua shook off the dust of his feet against that plantation, and being mindful of the country from whence he came out, its freemen, as it seems, gave him opportunity to return thither, fists, conscience and all.

In 1745 there was printed a revision or compilation of all the laws of the colony since its first charter, which was called the 'Revision of 1745.' This makes reference to a law said to have been passed in 1663-64 to the effect, that 'All men professing Christianity, and of competent estates and civil conversation (Roman Catholics only excepted), shall be admitted freemen, or may choose or be chosen colonial officers.' This alleged act is referred to by Chalmers, an English author, in his 'Political Annals,' London (1780). Judge Samuel Eddy, a man of great learning and scrupulous veracity, who was Secretary of State in Rhode Island from 1797 to 1819, and had all the records at command, says that he carefully investigated all the laws of the colony from the first Charter (1643-44) to 1719, and that 'there is not a word on record of the act referred to by Chalmers' and contained in the 'Revision of 1745' prior to that year. This he shows conclusively,

1. By citing the First Charter, in which liberty is granted the colonists to make their own laws, and the consequent passage in 1647 of a body of colonial laws, providing that 'All men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God.' 2. He cites the Second Charter (1663), which provides that 'No person within said colony at any time hereafter shall be any wise molested, punished, disquieted, or called in question for any differences in opinion in matters of religion.' That they may 'freely and fully have and enjoy their own judgments and consciences in matters of religious concernments.' 3. He cites an expression of the Assembly, of May, 1665 that 'It hath been a principle held forth and maintained in this colony from the beginning thereof, so it

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

is much in their hearts to procure the same liberty to all persons within this colony forever as to the worship of God therein.' A military law, passed May, 1677, is to the same effect. 4. In 1680, the Assembly said: 'We leave every man to walk as God shall persuade their hearts and do actively and passively yield obedience to the civil magistrate.'

Judge Eddy says: 'Thus you have positive and indubitable evidence that the law excluding Roman Catholics from the privileges of freemen was not passed in 1663-64, but that at that time and long after they were entitled to all the privileges of other citizens.' He adds, that his search was had 'with a particular view to this law excluding Roman Catholics from the privileges of freemen, and can find nothing that has any reference to it, nor any thing that gives any preference or privileges to men of one set of religious opinions over those of another till the Revision of 1745.' Roger Williams was a member of the Upper House, 1664, 1670-71, and of the Lower House in 1667, and died 1683. Eddy says: 'That such a law could have been passed in the life-time of the first settlers is hardly credible,' and that the statement in the Revision of 1745 is plainly an error.

It was twenty years after the appointment of the Committee on Revision that their report was printed, 1745, there being no printing-press in the colony till that year, and no newspaper till 1758. The existence of this law against Catholics in 1745 does not necessarily show that the law was passed at that time, but Eddy does show that it must have been enacted between 1719 and 1745, the Revision being the only record of the law. Exactly in what year it passed does not anywhere appear, but it existed as an unrepealed statute in 1745, amongst the laws then officially printed by the colony, while Eddy proves that the date 1663-64 is plainly a mistake. The universal reputation of Rhode Island in the neighboring colonies, for the largest freedom in religion, is well sustained by these laws, which completely deny that any were persecuted therefor, much less Roman Catholics. Cotton Mather says, that there were no Roman Catholics in the colony in 1695, and Chalmers says the same of 1680. Seeing, then, that this anticatholic, parenthesis clause is not to be found in any manuscript law of the colony either before 1663-64, or after, and so long as no date can be fixed upon for its enactment, the fair presumption follows that it is an interpolation. This presumption is strengthened also by the additional facts, that although 'all men' had from the founding of the colony walked 'as their consciences persuade' them, yet, for twenty-seven years no Roman Catholic had come to the colony, or been notified that he could not come, nor has any Catholic ever been refused his full rights there to this day. The law of May 19th, 1647, made express provision for the liberty of all to walk unmolested in the name of his God, and yet, according to Chalmers, it was thirty-three years after that enactment, namely, in 1680, before any Catholic availed himself of this freedom. So, then, there was nothing in 1663-64 to call for the legislative insertion of such a clause changing the law from what it had been since the founding of the colony. The general supposition of the best historians of Rhode Island is, that it was introduced into a mixed and irregular digest of the laws of that colony, which appeared in England, by some timid person, who feared that the English Protestants would complain that Rhode Island gave too much liberty to Catholics, and so that her charter would be revoked, hence, he ventured to make the interpolation to save difficulty. In 1676 England was thrown into an intense excitement by the general belief in a 'Popish plot' for the assassination of William III. The popular idea was that the Protestants were to be given over to a British St. Bartholomew; the Duke of York, a bigoted Catholic, was to usurp the throne, and all were ready for a bloody civil war. Some friend of Rhode Island may have shared in this panic, but there is not the slightest evidence that its legislators did, especially as they repealed the smuggled clause

The American Baptists

on discovery. The following appears as the law in 1798:

'Whereas a principal object of our venerable ancestors, in their migration to this country and settlement in this State, was, as they expressed it, to hold forth a lively experiment, that a most flourishing civil State may stand and be best maintained with a full liberty in religious concerns: Be it therefore enacted by the General Assembly, and by the authority thereof it is enacted, that no man shall be compelled to frequent or support any religious worship, place or ministry whatsoever, nor shall he be enforced, restrained or burdened in his body or goods, nor shall otherwise suffer on account of his religious opinions or belief, but that all men shall be free to profess and by argument to maintain their opinions in matters of religion, and that the same shall in nowise diminish, enlarge or affect their civil capacities.'

This whole legal presentation is found in Robert Walsh's 'Appeal,' an octavo, published in Philadelphia, 1819, pp. 429-435. Religious liberty for Jews in Rhode Island must be referred to here. At the opening of the seventeenth century, Holland was the only country where they enjoyed this blessing. Their largest European congregation was in Amsterdam, also their TalmudTora, or school for Hebrew youth. Leonard Busher made the first plea for their liberty in England, in 1614, saying: 'The king and Parliament may please to permit all Christians, yea, Jews, Turks and pagans, so long as they are peaceable and no malefactors.' A second plea was made by Roger Williams, in three passages of his 'Bloody Tenet,' published in London, 1644, one of which reads thus, and the others are of the same tenor: 'It is the will and command of God, that since the coming of his Son, the Lord Jesus, a permission of the most paganish, Jewish, Turkish or antichristian consciences and worships, be granted to men in all nations and all countries. That civil States with their officers of justice are not governors or defenders of the spiritual and Christian state and worship.' Drs. Featley, Baillie and others charged him with the most shocking blasphemy for this doctrine, and popular indignation was so savage that his book was burned. Samuel Richardson demands, in his work on the 'Necessity of Toleration,' published 1647 (p. 270): 'Whether the priests were not the cause of the burning of the book entitled "The Bloody Tenet," because it was against persecution? And whether their consciences would not have dispensed with the burning of the author of it?' Baillie himself said: 'Liberty of conscience, and toleration of all or any religion, is so prodigious an impiety, that this religious Parliament cannot but abhor the very naming of it. Whatever may be the opinions of John Goodwin, Mr. Williams and some of that stamp,...yet Mr. Burroughs explodes that abomination.'

The Jews had been driven from England in 1290, and after banishment for 364 years, they petitioned Cromwell and Parliament for permission to return, that they might trade in the realm and follow their religion. What influence Williams's book had exerted in favor of their return does not appear, but about six years after its publication their request was granted, and in 1665 they built their first synagogue in King Street, London. This controversy was soon transferred to America. Edward Winslow wrote to Winthrop, under date of November 24th, 1645, saying that at a late session of the Legislature they had had a violent contest over the proposition: 'To allow and maintain full and free toleration of religion to all men that would preserve the civil peace, and submit unto government, and there was no limitation or exception against Turk, Jew, Papist, Arian, Socinian, Nicholayton, Familist, or any other, etc.' Mr. Winslow says that the mover submitted it to him, and 'having read it, I told him I utterly abhorred it as such as would make us odious to all Christian commonweals...But our governor and divers of us having expressed that sad consequences would follow, especially myself and Mr. Prence, yet, notwithstanding, it was required according to order

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

to be voted. But the governor would not suffer it to come to vote, as being that indeed would eat out the power of godliness, etc...By this you may see that all the troubles of New England are not at the Massachusetts. The Lord in mercy look upon us and allay this spirit of division that is creeping in amongst us.' In direct opposition to this teaching and in harmony with the teaching of Roger Williams, the General Assembly of Rhode Island decreed, in 1647, three years after his publication of the 'Bloody Tenet,' and three years before England permitted Jews to return to the realm, that in this colony, 'ALL men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God.' In 1649 Edward Winslow published his 'Danger of Tolerating Levelers in a Civil State,' and in 1652 Roger Williams published his letter to Endicott, Governor of Massachusetts, with an Appendix addressed to four classes of the clergy, 'Popish, Prelatical, Presbyterian and Independent,' in which he says of those who refuse to be Christians: 'Yea, if they refuse, deny, oppose the doctrine of Jesus Christ, whether Jews or Gentiles, why should you call for fire from heaven, which suits not with Jesus Christ, his Spirit and ends. Why should you compel them to come in, with any other sword but that of the Spirit of God?'

At that time there was no organized Jewish congregation in Great Britain or any of her American Colonies. As early as 1650 a few Portuguese Jews from Holland had found their way to New York against the protest of Peter Stuyvesant, made to the West India Company at Amsterdam in 1654; but as the Jews were large stockholders in that company, they insisted on certain privileges being granted to their co-religionists. The citizens of New Amsterdam would not train with them in the Burgher Company, and the Jews were exempted from military duty on condition of paying sixty-five stivers per month. In 1655 a special Act permitted them to live and trade there, provided that they would support their own poor. On the 27th of July, 1655, they petitioned for a burying ground, but were refused on the pretext that they had 'no need of it yet;' one of their number dying, on the 14th of February, 1656, they were granted a lot 'for a, place of interment,' outside the city. On the 13th of March, 1656, Stuyvesant; director of the Company, was instructed that they should enjoy the same civil and political privileges that they enjoyed in Holland, but that 'they should not presume to exercise religious worship in synagogues or meetings, and when they requested that privilege,' he was 'to refer the petition to his superiors.' Still they were not allowed' to exercise any handicraft or to keep any open retail store,' but they were at liberty to 'exercise their religious worship in all quietness within their houses. To which end they will, doubtless, seek to build their dwellings together in a more convenient place, on the one or the other side of New Amsterdam.' In the spring of 1657 they were admitted to the right of citizenship, but the learned Rabbi Lyons, possibly the highest Hebrew authority on the subject, says in his 'Jewish Calendar' (page 160), that their 'first minutes of congregational affairs, written in Spanish and English, are dated Tishree 20th, 5489-1728,' and that these refer to 'rules and regulations adopted, 5466-1706, twenty years previous.' Their first synagogue was not dedicated 'till 1696, when Samuel Brown was their rabbi.

On the same high authority we find that the Jewish congregation, Teshuat Israel, was organized in Newport, Rhode island, in 1658, under the broad provision of 1647, that 'ALL MEN,' in that Colony 'may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God.' Such liberty they had not elsewhere on this globe at that time, Holland not excepted, for even there they were forbidden to 'speak or to write disparagingly of the Christian religion; to make converts to their own faith; to exercise any handicraft or carry on retail trade; and marriages between Christians and Jews were strictly prohibited.' They labored under none of these restrictions in Rhode Island, but in

The American Baptists

all these respects stood upon a perfect equality with Baptists, Quakers and other religionists, and that congregation has remained undisturbed to this day, a period of two hundred and twenty-eight years, and is but fourteen years younger than the first Baptist Church of that city. Arnold says that they did much to build up the commercial interests of Newport. Some of them rose in public favor for their services to the State, and on August 20th, 1750, 'Moses Lopez, of Newport, was excused at his own request from all other civil duties, on account of his gratuitous services to the government in translating Spanish documents.' This indicates that he had done all the civil duties of a freeman up to that time. By the year 1763, the little Jewish congregation at Newport had increased to sixty families, their necessities demanding the erection of a synagogue, which they began to build in 1762, and which their rabbi, Isaac Touro, dedicated to Jehovah in 1763, with 'great pomp and ceremony.' This large increase in their number was due chiefly to the great earthquake of 1755, the center of which was in Spain and Portugal; it swallowed up fifty thousand inhabitants of Lisbon alone. Many of the Jews, who fled for safety from more cruel foes than the yawning earth, came to Rhode Island, where their own brethren had worshiped God in peace and safety for one hundred and eight years. These facts entirely disprove the alleged fact that in 1663-64 Rhode Island passed a law restricting religious liberty to those 'professing Christianity.'

Some writers have fallen into singular confusion in treating of this subject, making Roger Williams and Rhode Island identical on the one hand, by holding them responsible for each other's acts. and on the other by confounding the civil and religious liberties of that Colony as if they were one. A noted case cited under this groundless assumption is that of Aaron Lopez and Isaac Elizur. These two Hebrews petitioned the Superior Court of Rhode Island, at its March term, in 1762, for naturalization under an Act of Parliament, and were rejected on the ground, that to naturalize them would violate the spirit of the charter; that none could be made citizens but Christians; and that the Colony was too full of people already. The last of these reasons throws suspicion on the other two given for the decision, as it was simply ridiculous; yet it serves to show that the Court was moved by other considerations than those of guarding high chartered rights. But, whatever its motive might have been, the question before it was a purely civil question. involving only the naturalization of a foreigner, and not his right to religious liberty under the laws of Rhode Island. There are millions of people in the United States today who enjoy all the religious rights of its native-born citizens, but not being citizens they seek naturalization, at the courts; which, as in the case of Chinamen, is often denied. So these two men were, without doubt, members of the Jewish congregation which at that moment was building a synagogue under the protection of Rhode Island law, and now they wished to add citizenship to religious right. Mr. Charles Deane has written with a discriminating pen on this point. He complains of a misapprehension on this question of refusing to admit to the franchise those who were not Christians, and says:

'The charter of Rhode Island declared that no one should be "molested"...or called in question for any difference of opinion in matters of religion. The law in question does not relate to religious liberty, but to the franchise. Rhode Island has always granted liberty to persons of every religious opinion, but has placed a hedge about the franchise; and this clause does it. Was it not natural for the founders of Rhode Island to keep the government in the hands of its friends, while working out their experiment, rather than to put it into the hands of the enemies of religious liberty? How many ship-loads of Roman Catholics would it have taken to swamp the little Colony in the days of its weakness?' The 'clause' to which he refers is the so-called 'Catholic exclusion,' which has already been considered, but this distinction between the civil and religious questions

Chapter 3 - Settlement of Rhode Island

involved here is precisely as clear in the case of the Jews as of the Catholics.

Arnold well says: 'The right to be admitted a freeman, or even to be naturalized, was purely a civil one, dependent upon the view that the town councils might take of the merits of each individual case. The right to reject was absolute,' as well in the case of a Baptist as a Jew. 'Freemen,' he continues, 'were admitted into the Colony by the Assembly, to whom the application should have been made, if freemanship was what these Jews wanted...Naturalization was granted properly by the Courts, but usually by the Assembly, who exercised judicial prerogatives in this matter as in many others...The decision in the case of Lopez appears to be irregular in every respect. It subverts an Act of Parliament, violates the spirit of the charter, enunciates principles never acted upon in the Colony, and finally dismisses the case on a false issue...The reasons assigned for the rejection, in the decree above given, were false...If that had been the fundamental law from the beginning, no one could have been admitted a freeman who was not a Christian; but Jews were admitted to freemanship again and again by the Assembly...The charter of Rhode Island guaranteed, and the action of the Colony uniformly secured, to all people perfect religious freedom. It did not confer civil privileges as a part of that right upon any one, such only were entitled to those whom the freemen saw fit to admit.'

At the time that the Superior Court gave this decision, Rhode Island was passing through a scene of high political excitement, and Arnold attributes its decision to 'the strife then existing between Chief-Justice Ward and Governor Hopkins...For many years prior to that time there was scarcely a session of the Assembly, when one or more cases of the kind (naturalization) did not occur, in which the names and nationalities of the parties show them to be either Roman Catholics or Jews.' Amongst these, he mentions the case of Stephen Decatur (1753), a Genoese, the father of the celebrated Commodore, and that of Lucerna, a Portuguese Jew, in 1761.

No class of people more earnestly and gratefully recognize Roger Williams as the apostle of their liberties than do the American Jews. One of their ablest writers says in a recent work:

'The earliest champion of religious freedom, or "soul liberty," as he designated that most precious jewel of all liberties, was Roger Williams...To him rightfully belongs the immortal fame of having been the first person in modern times to assert and maintain in its fullest plenitude the absolute right of every man to "a full liberty in religious concerns," and to found a State wherein this doctrine was the key-stone of its organic laws...Roger Williams, the first pure type of an American freeman, proclaimed the laws of civil and religious liberty, that "the people were the origin of all free power in government," that God has given to men no power over conscience, nor can men grant this power to each other; that the regulation of the conscience is not one of the purposes for which men combine in civil society. For uttering such heresies; this great founder of our liberties was banished out of the jurisdiction of the Puritans in America...In grateful remembrance of God's merciful providence to him in his distress, he gave to it (the new town) the name of Providence. "I desired," said he, "it might be a shelter for persons distressed for conscience."...The infant community at Providence at once set about to frame laws for government, in strict accord with the spirit of the settlement. "Masters of families incorporated together into a township, and such others as they shall admit into the same, only in civil things." This simple instrument is the earliest constitution of government whereof we have any record, which not only tolerated all religions, but recognized as a right, absolute liberty of conscience.'

The American Baptists

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

ROGER WILLIAMS, having adopted the old Baptist principle of absolute soul-liberty and given it practical effect in the civil provisions which he had devised, could not stop there. This deep moral truth carried with it certain logical outworkings concerning human duty as well as its rights, and as his doctrine could not stand alone in his thought, he was compelled to take another step forward. Relieved from all outside authority in matters of conscience, to which he had formerly submitted, he was now directly responsible to God for the correctness of his faith and practice, and by all that he had suffered he was bound to walk in an enlightened conscience. This compelled him to inquire what obedience God demanded of him personally, and threw him directly back upon his word as to his personal duty in the matter of baptism. While an infant he had been christened, but having now put himself under the supreme Headship of Christ, without the intervention of human authority, he found himself at a step on pure Baptist ground, and determined to be baptized on his own faith.

Williams with five others had settled Providence in June, 1636, and their numbers soon grew, so that in about three years there appear to have been about thirty families in the colony. In the main, the Christian portion of them had been Congregationalists, but in their trying position they seem to have been left unsettled religiously, especially regarding Church organization. Winthrop says that they met both on week-days and the Sabbath for the worship of God; but the first sign of a Church is found sometime previous to March, 1639, when Williams and eleven others were baptized, and a Baptist Church was formed under his lead. Hubbard tells us that he was baptized 'by one Holliman, then Mr. Williams re-baptized him and some ten more.' Ezekiel Holliman had been a member of Williams's Church at Salem, which Church, March 12th, 1638, charged him with 'neglect of public worship, and for drawing many over to his persuasion.' For this he 'is referred to the elders, that they may endeavor to convince and bring him from his principle and practice.' [Felt, *Ecc. Hist.* I, p. 334] Through its pastor, Hugh Peters, the Salem Church wrote to the Dorchester Church July 1st, 1639, informing them that 'the great censure' had been passed upon 'Roger Williams and his wife, Thomas Olney and his wife, Stukley Westcot and his wife, Mary Holliman, with widow Reeves,' and that 'these wholly refused to hear the Church, denying it and all the Churches of the Bay to be the true Churches, and (except two) all are *re-baptized*.' [Felt, I, 379,380]

In the baptism of these twelve we find a case of peculiar necessity, such as that in which the validity of 'lay-baptism' has never been denied. Tertullian, Ambrose, Augustine and Jerome, all held that in cases of necessity 'laymen' should baptize and the Synod of Elvira so decreed. Mosheim writes: 'At first, all who were engaged in propagating Christianity, administered this rite; nor can it be called in question, that whoever persuaded any person to embrace Christianity, could baptize his own disciple.' [Ecc. Hist. I, pp. 105,106] Some, amongst whom we find Winthrop, have thought that Williams became a Baptist under the influence of a sister of Mrs. Hutchinson; others, that John Clarke, then of Aquidneck, was very likely the instrument of influencing him to this choice. But Clarke makes no reference in his writings to the baptism of his intimate friend, as he probably would have done had he led him to this step. So far as appears, there was not a Baptist minister in the colony at the time. Williams was an ordained minister in the English Episcopal Church and had been re-ordained at Salem, May, 1635, after the Congregational order, so that no one could question his right to immerse on the ground of non-ordination. He has left no account of his baptism, and some have questioned whether he was immersed, a point that we may now examine.

Under date of March 16th, 1639, Felt says: 'Williams, as stated by Winthrop, was lately

The American Baptists

immersed;' [*Ecc. Hist.*, I, p. 402] and that he was immersed has never been questioned by any historian down from Winthrop to Bancroft, until recently. In 1879 this question was raised, but only then on the assumption that immersion was not practiced by the English Baptists until 1641, and so, that in America, Williams must have been 'affused' in March, 1639! Richard Scott, who was a Baptist with Williams at Providence, but who afterward became a Quaker, writing against Williams thirty-eight years afterward, says: 'I walked with him in the Baptists' way about three or four months,...in which time he broke from his society, and declared at large the ground and reason for it; that their baptism could not be right because it was not administered by an apostle. After that he set upon a way of seeking, with two or three of them that had dissented with him, by way of preaching and praying; and there he continued a year or two till two of the three left him...After his society and he in a Church way were parted, he then went to England.' [Appendix to Fox's *Fire-band Quenched*, p. 247] Here he gives no hint that 'the Baptists' way differed in any respect in 1639 from what it was when he wrote. Hooker's letter to Shepard, November 2d, 1640, shows clearly that immersion was practiced at Providence at that time. When speaking of Humphrey inviting Chauncey from Plymouth to Providence, on account of his immersionist notions, Hooker says: 'That coast is more meet for his opinion and practice.' And Coddington, Governor of Rhode Island, a determined enemy of Williams, put this point unmistakably, thus: 'I have known him about fifty years; a mere weathercock, constant only in inconstancy...One time for water baptism, men and women must be plunged into the water, and then threw it all down again.' [Letter to Fox, 1677]

But Williams's own opinion of Scripture baptism, given in a letter to Winthrop, November 10th, 1649, should set this point at rest. Speaking of Clarke, the founder of the Baptist Church at Newport, he writes: 'At Seekonk a great many have lately concurred with Mr. Clarke and our Providence men about the point of a new baptism and the manner of dipping, and Mr. Clarke hath been there lately, and Mr. Lucar, and hath dipped them. I believe their practice comes nearer the first practice of our great founder, Jesus Christ, than other practices of religion do, and yet I have not satisfaction neither in the authority by which it is done, nor in the manner.' These words were written ten years after he repudiated his Providence baptism by Holliman, and after he had cast aside baptism altogether, both as to 'authority' and 'manner.' As to the legitimate use of the phrase 'new baptism' by him, its sense in this case would relate to an institution administered afresh to the candidates at Seekonk in addition to their infant baptism, and to the recent introduction of that practice on this continent, as contrary to the entire previous practice here, and not to the creation of a new rite, or the revival of an old one; for even in 1649 he thought it nearer the practice of Jesus Christ. There can be no doubt as to what these elders, Clarke and Lucar, did in administering baptism at Seekonk, for Clarke's Confession of Faith, found in the records of his Church (No. 32), says: 'I believe that the true baptism of the Gospel is a visible believer with his own consent to be baptized in common water, by dying, or, as it were, drowning, to hold forth death, burial and resurrection, by a messenger of Jesus, into the name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit.' [Backus, I, 208] Williams says here, that 'our Providence men' 'concurred' with Clark and the converts at Seekonk, and gives no intimation that the Providence Baptists had ever differed from his own views concerning dipping as 'nearer the first practice of our great founder, Jesus Christ, than other practices of religion do.'

The hand of God appears to have led Roger Williams to plant the good seed of the kingdom in that colony, and then to step aside, lest any flesh should glory in his presence. In that day there was a very respectable class of men, both in England and the older colonies, nicknamed 'Seekers,' simply

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

because they were earnest inquirers after truth; and, concluding that it was impossible to find it then on earth, they looked for its new manifestation from heaven. They sought a visible and apostolic line of purely spiritual character, something after the order of the late Edward Irving, and not finding this, they waited for a renewal of Apostles with special gifts of the Spirit to attest their credentials.

When Williams withdrew from the Baptists he was classed with these. His theory of the apostolate seems to have been the cause of his withdrawal, and of his doubt concerning the validity of his baptism. A few years later, in his 'Bloody Tenet' and his 'Hireling Ministry,' he denied that a ministry existed which was capable of administering the ordinances, for in 'the rule of Antichrist the true ministry was lost, and he waited for its restoration, much after John Smyth's view, in a new order of succession. Of course he looked upon his baptism as defective, and withdrew from the Baptists. His was not an unusual case at that period.

Walter Cradock tells us, in 1648, of 'a man that was a member of a Church and, because he saw infants baptized and himself was not, he broke off from them, and said that there was no Church, and all the streams did run for two months together on baptism; there was nothing talked of but that, and concluded the Anabaptists and all were Antichristian, and there was no Church nor any thing till we had Apostles again. As I told you, that any that hold that principle and follow it closely and rationally, they will infallibly come to Apostles, and miracles, and signs from heaven.' [*Gospel Liberty*, p. 144]

The withdrawal of Williams from the Baptists did not disrupt brotherly love between them to the end of his life, and he did not prize this brotherly fellowship lightly.

In reply to Fox, 1672, he says: 'After all my search and examinations and considerations, I do profess to believe that some come nearer to the first primitive Churches and the institutions and appointments of Jesus Christ than others; as in many respects, so in that gallant and heavenly and fundamental principle of the true matter of a Christian congregation, flock, or society; namely, actual believers, true disciples and converts, living stones, such as can give some account how the grace of God hath appeared unto them.'

It will be in order here to say a few words concerning the Church which he planted at Providence.

The advanced views of Williams in regard to the need of personal regeneration in a Christian and his utter rejection of infant baptism, views radically distinctive of Baptists both in his day and ours, and the direct opposite of those held by the standing order in the New England colonies of his time, show clearly the grounds of his baptism by Holliman. Of his personal regeneration he says: 'From my childhood, now above three-score years, the Father of Lights and Mercies touched my soul with a love to himself, to the only begotten, the true Lord Jesus, to his Holy Scriptures.' [*Address to the Quakers*, March 10, 1673] Three years after making this statement, he states to George Fox that a Gospel Church must be made up of such regenerate men, and calls them actual believers, true disciples and converts, living stones, such as can give some account how the grace of God hath appeared unto them and wrought that heavenly change in them.' This change he calls 'that gallant and heavenly and fundamental principle of the true matter of a Christian congregation, flock or society.' [*Reply to Fox*, 1676] And as these were the views which he held in 1675, thirty-six years after his own baptism, it is only fair to credit him with them at the time of his baptism. His tractate, 'Christenings make not Christians,' published in London, 1645, gives a full exposition of his radical views on this subject, in language so full and round as to make them worthy of the best

The American Baptists

teachers of Baptist theology in the present century. This rare book, which was supposed to be lost, but which has recently been found amongst the enormous accumulations of the British Museum and republished in Rider's *Rhode Island Historical Tracts*, must speak here. On page 5 he says:

'To be a Christian implies two things, to be a follower of that anointed One in all his offices, second to partake of his anointings.' On page 7 he deplores departure from the true kingdom of God as shown by the marks of a 'false conversion and a false constitution or framing of national Churches, in false ministries, the ministrations of baptism, Supper of the lord,' etc. He charges, on pages 10,11, that false Christians had made amongst the heathen monstrous and 'most inhuman conversions, yea, ten thousands of the poor natives, sometimes by wiles and subtile devices, sometimes by force, compelling them to submit to that which they understood not, neither before nor after such their monstrous christening of them. Thirdly, for our New England parts, I can speak uprightly and confidently. I know it to have been easy for myself, long ere this, to have brought many thousands of these natives, yea, the whole country, to a far greater antichristian conversion than ever was yet heard of in America. I have reported something in the chapter of their religion [in his Key] how readily I could have brought the whole country to have observed one day in seven; I add to have received a baptism (or washing), though it were in rivers (as the first Christians and the Lord Jesus himself did), to have come to a stated Church meeting, maintained priests and forms of prayer, and the whole form of antichristian worship in life and death.'

After repeating that he could so have converted the Indians, he asks:

'Why have I not brought them to such a conversion? I answer: Woe be to me, if I call light darkness, or darkness light; sweet bitter, or bitter sweet; woe to me, if I call that conversion unto God, which is, indeed, subversion of the souls of millions in Christendom, from one worship to another, and the profanation of the holy name of God, his holy Son and blessed ordinances...It is not a suit of crimson satin will make a dead man live; take off and change his crimson into white, he is dead still. Off with that, and shift him into cloth of gold, and from that to cloth of diamonds, he is but a dead man still. For it is not a form, nor the change of one form into another, a finer and a finer and yet more fine, that makes a man a convert – I mean such a convert as is acceptable to God in Jesus Christ according to the visible rule of his last will and testament. I speak not of hypocrites, which may but glitter, and be no solid gold, as Simon Magus, Judas, etc. But of a true external conversion [probably a misprint for eternal] I say, then, woe be to me! if intending to catch men, as the Lord Jesus said to Peter, I should pretend conversion, and the bringing of men, as mystical fish, into a Church estate, that is, a converted estate, and so build them up with ordinances as a converted Christian people, and yet afterward still pretend to catch them by an after conversion.'

On pages 17,18, he thus more fully defines what he held repentance and conversion to be:

'First, it must be by the free proclaiming and preaching of repentance and forgiveness of sins (Luke 14) by such messengers as can prove their lawful sending and commission from the Lord Jesus to make disciples out of all nations; and so to baptize or wash them, into the name or profession of the Holy Trinity. Matt. 28:19; Rom. 10:14,15. Secondly, such a conversion, so far as man's judgment can reach, which is fallible, as was the judgment of the first messengers, as in Simon Magus, etc., as in the turning of the whole man from the power of Satan unto God. Acts 16. Such a change, as if an old man became a new babe (John 4); yea, as amounts to God's new creation in the soul. Eph. 2:10.'

In view of the fact that Williams remained with the Baptists but three or four months, some have seriously doubted whether he formed a Church there after that order at all, and amongst these, at one time, was the thoughtful and accurate Callender; but he seems at last to have concluded otherwise. Scott's words appear to settle this point, for he not only says that he walked with Williams in the Baptists' way, but that Williams 'broke from his society, and declared at large his reasons for doing

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

so;' that two or three 'dissented with him;' and that he parted with 'his society' 'in a Church way.' What became of 'his society' after he left it is not very clear. Cotton Mather says: 'Whereupon his Church dissolved themselves;' and Neal, that 'his Church hereupon crumbled to pieces.' [*Magnalia*, ii, 432; Neal's *Hist. Diss.*, p. 111] It is difficult to know how far the so-called 'Records' of the Providence Church may be relied upon, as we shall see, but they say that 'Mr. Holliman was chosen assistant to Mr. Williams;' and it is probable that upon this authority Professor Knowles says, in his 'Life of Williams,' that Holliman 'became a preacher,' and fostered the society [page 168]. Scott's account carries the implication throughout that the main body held together as Baptists when Williams left them. Great blame has been thrown upon Roger Williams for leaving the 'society' in Providence, and his conduct can be accounted for in part by his preconceived notions of a succession in the ministry, as is indicated in the expression already quoted, from his pen: 'By such messengers as can prove their lawful sending and commission.' But this accounts for it only in part. We may suppose that the affairs of the colony demanded the greater part of his time and energies. And moreover, we are not without indications that he found it about as hard to get along with compeers in that 'society' as they found it to get along with him; for none of them were made of the most supple material in human nature, as their after contentions and divisions about psalm-singing, laying on of hands, and other things show. Also the following shows that he did not regard some of them as any more orthodox in some doctrinal matters than they needed to be. He says, in a letter to John Whipple, dated Providence, August 24th, 1669: 'I am sorry that you venture to play with the fire, and W. Wickenden is toasting himself in it, and my want of tongs to rake him out without burning my fingers, etc. You know who it is that counts you and us as fools for believing the Scriptures; namely, that there shall be any hell at all, or punishment for sin after this life. But I am content to be a fool with Jesus Christ, who tells us of an account for every idle word in the day of judgment.' This rather indicates that some of the Providence brethren were tinctured with 'new theology,' while Roger stood squarely with Christ Jesus on the doctrine of future retribution, and had his own trials with the rather peculiar people of that old First Church for fully half a century.

From this time on the early history of the Church becomes a perplexing confusion, from the absence of records; if any minutes were kept they cannot be found. In fact, during the so-called King Philip's War, in 1676, most if not all the houses in Providence were destroyed by the Indians, and the records, if there were any, of course, perished in the flames. About a century ago Rev. John Stanford preached for a year to the First Baptist Church in Providence, and made an honest attempt to collect the most reliable information that he could command, and formulated a *Book of Records*. Stanford's original manuscript of twenty pages folio has been preserved in the archives of the society, and also copied into the first volume of the Church records, which begin only in April, 1775. His history of the Church was published by Rippon in the 'Baptist Annual Register' for 1801-2. The doctor possessed unusual ability, and was not supposed to misrepresent in the slightest degree; but it was impossible for him to construct a reliable history without authentic material. All that he had was tradition and a few fragments, and he complains thus of his scanty supply: 'No attention to this necessary article has been paid;' and he further says that he attempted this collection 'under almost every discouraging circumstance.' After doing the best that he could, his supposed facts are so fragmentary as to leave long gaps unfilled, with their value so impaired that few careful writers feel at liberty to follow them entirely. Then they contain some few contradictions which the doctor was not able to explain, and which perplex all calm investigators; for example, they state that

The American Baptists

Williams was pastor of the Church for four years instead of four months; that it is not known when Thomas Olney was baptized or ordained, and that he came to Providence in 1654; whereas, in another place, they state that he was in the canoe with Williams when the Indians saluted him with 'What cheer?' and his name always appears in the list of members baptized by Williams, and amongst the thirteen original proprietors of Providence. Professor Knowles complains of these errors; also Dr. Caldwell, a most candid and careful writer, says in his history of this Church, that this record 'contains many errors, which have been repeated by later writers, and sometimes as if they had the authority of original records.' Of the above contradictions he remarks: 'Mr. Stanford, in the Records, confounding Mr. Olney with his son, makes the following statement, which is an almost unaccountable mixture of errors.'

Where such serious defects abound in any records, it is clear that little firm reliance can be placed upon their testimony, and this without reflection on the compiler, who stated only what he found, and attempted no manufacture of facts to complete his story. We are obliged, therefore, to consult side lights and outside testimony, and take it for what it is worth, according to the means of information enjoyed by contemporaneous and immediately succeeding witnesses. These are not numerous in this case, nor are they very satisfactory, because their testimony does not always agree, nor had they equal means of knowing whereof they spoke. Hence several different theories have been put forth on the subject, in the friendly discussions of those who have cherished them, and so far without a solution of the difficulties.

In 1850 Rev. Samuel Adlam, then pastor of the First Church at Newport, wrote a pamphlet in which he attempted to show that if Roger Williams established a Church, and it did not fall to pieces after he withdrew from it, that his successor was Thomas Olney, Sr.; and that, in 1652-53, the Church divided on the subject of laying on of hands. Then that Wickenden went out with the new body, while Olney remained with the old body, which he continued to serve as pastor until his death, in 1682, after which that Church existed until 1715, when it died; and so that the present Church at Providence dates back only to 1652-53. He founds this claim on the statement of John Comer, who left a diary in manuscript, and, writing about 1726-31, said: 'Mr. William Vaughn finding a number of Baptists in the town of Providence, lately joined together in special Church covenant, in the faith and practice, under the inspection of Mr. Wiggington [Wickenden], being heretofore members of the Church under Mr. Thomas Olney, of that town, he, that is, Mr. William Vaughn, went thither in the month of October, 1652, and submitted thereto (the laying on of hands), whereupon he returned to Newport, accompanied with Mr. William Wiggington and Mr. Gregory Dexter.'

For the above reason, JOHN COMER believed that the Newport and not the Providence Church was the first in what is now Rhode Island, and the first in America. Backus, who wrote in 1777, and Staples, in his 'Annals of Providence' (1843), both accept Comer's statement in relation to Olney as correct, Backus stating that Thomas Olney, Sr., 'was next to Mr. Williams in the pastoral office, and continued so to his death, over that part of the Church who were called Five Principle Baptists, in distinction from those who parted from their brethren about the year 1653, under the leading of elder Wickenden, holding to the laying on of hands upon every Church member.' This he repeats, and adds that when Williams 'put a stop to his further travel with' the First Church in Providence, 'Thomas Olney was their next minister,' after which he laments that darkness fell 'over their affairs.' [*Hist. Baptists*, I, p. 405; ii, pp. 490,491,285, Weston's ed.] Comer's testimony carried great weight with these authors, and justly; for he was a most painstaking man, possessing a clear and strong

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

mind under high culture, ranking with the first men of his day. He was born in Boston, was nephew to Rev. Elisha Callender, pastor of the First Baptist Church there, and was baptized by him in 1725. His parents had been Presbyterians, but on reading Stennett's reply to Russell, became Baptists. They educated their son at Yale, and he was chosen colleague to Peckham at Newport. Morgan Edwards says of him: 'He was curious in making minutes of very remarkable events, which swelled at last into two volumes...To this manuscript am I beholden for many chronologies and facts in this my third volume. He had conceived a design of writing a history of the American Baptists, but death broke his purpose at the age of thirty years, and left that for others to execute.' [*Materials for Hist. of R.I. Baptists*] This manuscript is now in possession of the Rhode Island Historical Society at Providence, and in writing it he gathered many facts from Samuel Hubbard and Edward Smith, both contemporary with the events which they related to him.

Those who do not accept the positions taken by Comer in this matter, and they constitute the great majority, claim that Rev. Chad Brown was the immediate pastoral successor of Williams; that when the division took place, in 1652-53, it was Olney who went out from the old Church with a new interest, and not Wickenden; that the Olney interest ceased to exist in 1715, and so, that the present First Church at Providence is the veritable Church which Williams formed in 1639. All admit that there was a division in the Church in 1652-53, but it seems impossible on present evidence to determine fully which was the seceding party. John Callender, another nephew of Elisha Callender, born 1706, graduated at Harvard, and settled as successor to Peckham at Newport, a man of wonderful attainments and accuracy, preached a great Historical Sermon in 1738 on 'The History of Rhode Island' covering its first century, which document has become standard authority; he states the case with the widest difference from Comer. He says:

'About the year 1653 there was a division in the Baptist Church at Providence about the rite of 'laying on of hands, which some pleaded for as essentially necessary to Church communion, and the others would leave indifferent. Hereupon they walked in two Churches, one under Mr. C. Brown, Wickenden, etc., the other under Mr. Thomas Olney, but laying on of hands at length generally prevailed.' On page 61, in the first edition of his sermon, he has this foot-note: 'This last continued till about twenty years since, when, becoming destitute of an elder, the members united with other Churches.'

Stephen Hopkins, in his 'History of Providence,' published in 1765, says, with both Comer and Callender before him:

'The first Church formed at Providence by Mr. Williams and others seems to have been on the model of the Congregational Churches in the other New England colonies. But it did not continue long in this form; for most of its members very soon embraced the principles and practices of the Baptists, and some time earlier than 1639 gathered and formed a Church at Providence of that society...This first Church of Baptists at Providence hath from the beginning kept itself in repute, and maintained its discipline, so as to avoid scandal, or schism, to this day; hath always been, and still is, a numerous congregation, and in which I have with pleasure observed very lately sundry descendants from each of the above-mentioned founders, except Holliman.' [*Providence Gazette*, 1765]

When Williams published his 'Bloody Tenet' in 1643-44, he held the doctrine of laying on of hands, for he says therein:

'Concerning baptism and laying on of hands, God's people will be found to be ignorant for many hundred years, and I cannot yet see it proved that light is risen, I mean the light of the first institution, in practice.'

The American Baptists

He repeats the same sentiment in the 'Bloody Tenet, yet More Bloody,' 1652, and in his 'Hireling Ministry,' 1652 [page 21]. This throws a ray of light upon the statement of Morgan Edwards, made in 1770:

'At first laying on of hands was held in a lax manner, so that they who had no faith in the rite were received without it, and such (saith Joseph Jenks) was the opinion of the Baptists in the first constitution of their Churches throughout this colony.' Again he says: 'Some divisions have taken place in this Church. The first was about the year 1654, on account of laying on of hands. Some were for banishing it entirely, among which Rev. Thomas Olney was the chief, who, with a few more withdrew and formed themselves into a distinct Church, distinguished by the name of Five Point Baptists, and the first of the name in the province; it continued in being to 1715, when Mr. Olney resigned the care of it, and soon after it ceased to exist.' Mr. Olney, to whom Edwards refers as having resigned in 1715, could not have been the Rev. Thomas Olney who was one of the constituent members of the Church, and an assistant to Rev. Chad Brown. He died in 1682. His son, Thomas Olney, Jr., who is said also to have been an elder, died in 1722, at the advanced age of ninety-one. He was the town clerk until his death.

It seems clear from the statements of the most reliable historians that the first warm contention on the subject at Providence was between Wickenden and Olney, as to whether the point of being 'under hands' should be made a test of fellowship; that Olney went out, that Wickenden and Brown remained with the old Church, and that in that body, according to Callender, laying on of hands prevailed, and held its own till the days of Manning, when it ceased to be a test of membership, and gradually died out. The absence of records and contradictory statements from various sources, as to a succession of pastors until the coming of Dr. Manning, render it next to impossible to follow a regular thread here, and the tangle is made worse by the statements of all, that in its early history the Church had three or four elders at once. Dr. Barrows says, of the first Newport Church, that it had elders 'besides a pastor,' and mentions three by name; and Dr. Caldwell says, that the Providence Church had 'two or three elders' at the same time. At the time of the division, 1652-53, there were four elders in this Church – Brown, Wickenden, Olney and Dexter. From Williams onward they were a glorious body of men. Some of them were Five and some Six Principle men; but there was not one Seventh Principle Baptist amongst them, who held to the 'five barley loaves and two small fishes.' For two generations they served the Church without salaries, a practice which must have ruined it without special grace. Their course in this direction induced Morgan Edwards to say: 'The ministry of this Church has been a very expensive one to the ministers, and a very cheap one to the Church.'

There is abundant cause for gratitude that DR. MANNING found his way to Providence as pastor in 1771. From that day it began to write a new history, but not without a struggle. He came first as a visitor and was invited to preach. But,

'Being Communion day, Mr. Winsor invited Mr. Manning to partake with them, which the president cordially accepted. After this several members were dissatisfied with Mr. Manning's partaking of the Lord's Supper with them; but at a Church meeting, appointed for the purpose, Mr. Manning was admitted to communion by vote of the Church. Notwithstanding this, some of the members remained dissatisfied at the privilege of transient communion being allowed Mr. Manning; whereupon another meeting was called previous to the next communion day, in order to reconcile the difficulty. At said meeting Mr. Manning was confirmed in his privilege by a much larger majority. At the next Church meeting Mr. Winsor appeared with an unusual number of members from the country, and moved to have Mr. Manning displaced, but to no purpose. The ostensible reason of Mr. Winsor and of those with him for objecting against President Manning

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

was, that he did not make imposition of hands a bar to communion, though he himself had received it, and administered it to those who desired it. Mr. Winsor and the Church knew. Mr. Manning's sentiments and practice for more than six years at Warren, those, therefore, who were well-informed attributed the opposition to the president's holding to singing in public worship, which was highly disgusting to Mr. Winsor. The difficulty increasing, it was resolved to refer the business to the next Association at Swansea. But when the case was presented, the Association, after a full hearing on both sides, agreed that they had no right to determine, and that the Church must act for themselves. The next Church meeting, which was in October, was uncommonly full. All matters relative to the president were fully debated, and by a much larger majority were determined in his favor. It was then agreed all should sit down at the Lord's Table the next Sabbath, which was accordingly done. But at the subsequent communion season, Mr. Winsor declined administering the ordinance, assigning for a reason, that a number of the brethren were dissatisfied. April 18, 1771, being Church meeting, Mr. Winsor appeared and produced a paper, signed by a number of members living out of town, dated Jonston, February 27. 1771. These parties withdrew on the issue, and formed a Six Principle Church.' [Providence Church Records]

On June 10th, 1771, the first Church sent to Swansea, inviting elders Job and Russel Mason to come and break bread to them after Samuel Winsor had left them to form a new Church. They replied, June 28th: 'Whereas, you have sent a request for one of us to break bread among you, we laid your request before our Church meeting; and there being but few present, and we not being able to know what the event of such a proceeding might be at this time, think it not expedient for us to come and break bread with you' [Providence Church Records]. Before Manning accepted the pastorate permanently, the Church appointed him to break bread, and he acted as pastor *pro tem*. After the Church got through with all its quiddities and contentions, and came to labor earnestly for the salvation of men, the Holy Spirit was graciously outpoured upon it, and its prosperity became marked. In 1774 a young man named Biggilo was accidentally killed in Providence, and his death stirred the whole city. Tamer Clemons and Venus Arnold, two colored women, gave themselves to Christ, were converted and baptized; and the record says, 'The sacred flame of the Gospel began to spread. In fifteen months one hundred and four confessed the power of the Spirit of Christ, in the conversion of their souls, and entered the gates of Zion with joy.' They had no meeting-house for nearly sixty years, but met in groves or private houses, till noble elder Tillinghast built one, at his own expense, in 1700. Under the ministry of Dr. Manning, this, however ceased to meet their necessities, and in 1774 the present beautiful edifice was erected at a cost of £7,000, and dedicated to God on May 28th, 1775. Our fathers delighted greatly in its tall steeple, 196 feet in height, and in their new bell, which weighed 2,515 pounds, bearing this motto: 'For freedom of conscience, the town was first planted; Persuasion, not force, was used by the people; This church is the eldest, and has not recanted, Enjoying and granting bell, temple, and steeple.'

Mind you, reader, this was one year before the clang of that grand old sister bell at Philadelphia which rang in our independence. But, alas for the vanity of noisy metal, the Baptist bell split its sides in 1787, and that at Independence Hall followed its example, since which time the Providence people have kept their best bell in the pulpit, without a crack, from Manning to T. Edwin Crown, not the son of Chad, but his last worthy successor. Few bodies on earth have been honored with such a line of pastors for two and a half centuries, and few Churches have been so faithful to the great, first principles of the Gospel, without wavering for an hour. These she has maintained, too, without any written creed or human declaration of faith, standing firmly on the text and spirit of the Bible, as her only rule of faith and practice; notwithstanding that for a time her organization was followed by a set of crude notions and practices which do not characterize the Baptists of today, and which

The American Baptists

do not entitle her founders to canonization by any means. Taking Roger's Romish quiddity about apostolic succession and his thesis about some other things into account, they were a fair match for each other.

The First Church at NEWPORT and its founder now invite our attention. JOHN CLARKE, M.D., has few peers in any respect amongst the founders of New England, and, except in point of time, is more properly the father of the Baptists there than Roger Williams, who must ever remain its great apostle of religious liberty. Clarke was born in Suffolk, England, in 1609; was liberally educated and practiced as a physician in London for a time; but seems to have been equally versed in law and theology, with medicine. His religions and political principles led him to cast in his lot with the New World and he arrived in Boston in November, 1637. There is no evidence that he was a Baptist at this time, but rather he seems to have been a Puritan, much like Roger Williams when he landed there; and as Clarke expected to practice medicine in Boston, he would scarcely have been tolerated there at all as a Baptist. At that moment the Congregational Churches of Boston and vicinity were in a warm controversy with Mrs. Hutchinson and her brother-in-law, Mr. Wheelwright, touching their doctrines. After they were banished, November 20th, 1637, excitement ran high, and a number of persons who had more or less sympathy with them, either on account of their views or their banishment, determined to retire from the colony and found one of their own, where they could have peace. Clarke went with this band, it is supposed to New Hampshire, where they spent the winter of 1637-38 at or near Dover. Finding the climate too severe, in the spring they determined to make either for Long Island or Delaware. When they reached Cape Cod, they left their vessel to go overland and make for Providence, where Roger Williams welcomed them warmly, from which time the names of Clarke and Williams become inseparable in the political and religious history of our country.

Williams suggested that they remain in that region, and after deliberate consideration, Clarke purchased of the Indians, through the agency of Williams, Aquidneck, otherwise and now called the island of Rhode Island, whose chief city is Newport. "Their first settlement was at the north end of the island, at what is now Portsmouth. Here, March 7th, 1638, their first step was to form a civil government, declaring themselves a 'body- politic,' submitting themselves to Christ and his holy 'truth, to be guided and judged thereby,' much after the form of the Pilgrims at Plymouth. They then chose Coddington as judge or magistrate, appointed civil officers, and voted a whipping-post, a jail and a pair of stocks. At one time, it was supposed that this was a religious compact, because they appointed 'three elders,' January 2d, 1639. These, however, were civil officers, or associate judges in the Hebrew sense. They were to assist Coddington 'in the execution of justice and judgment, for the regulating and ordering of all offenses and offenders,' and they were to report to the freemen quarterly. They also determined that in laying out the town, two civil commissioners should locate the meeting-house for Portsmouth. These settlers numbered eighteen, most of them being Congregationalists and members of Cotton's Church in Boston, but some of them were under its censure and that of the Court of Massachusetts for imbibing certain peculiar views of Christian doctrine. Whether Anne Hutchinson was with them at the moment does not appear, but her husband was. So far as appears none of them were Baptists, but sympathized with her in theological sentiments, as John Cotton and Sir Henry Vane did at one time, and now determined to enjoy the freedom of their consciences. It is not clear whether Clarke was at this time a Congregationalist, but they formed a Church, to which he was the preacher, whether or not he was the pastor. Winthrop's

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

Journal implies that there were no Baptists amongst them. Indeed, why should the State Church at Boston send a deputation to a Baptist Church at Portsmouth? He says that they 'gathered a Church in a very disorderly way; for they took some excommunicated persons, and others who were members of the Church in Boston and were not dismissed.'...That 'many of Boston and others, who were of Mrs. Hutchinson's judgment and partly removed to the isle of Aquiday; and others who were of the rigid separation, and savored of anabaptism, removed to Providence.' Had he known of a Baptist at Portsmouth, he would have been likely to say so, and would not have contented himself with mentioning that this Church was gathered in a disorderly way.

In February, 1640, the Boston Church sent three of its members 'to understand their judgments in divers points of religion formerly maintained by all or divers of them.' This committee of discipline reported to that Church, March 16th, 1640, that the new Church at Portsmouth was irregular in that they followed the unwarrantable practice of taking the Lord's Supper with excommunicated persons; but the deputation gives no hint that any of them were Baptists. The Portsmouth Church refused to hear these messengers, demanding: 'What power one Church hath over another?' When they reported to Cotton's Church: 'The elders and most of the Churches would have cast them out, as refusing to hear the Church, but all not being agreed it was deferred.' In 1638 Newport was settled, at the south end of the island, where a Church was formed in 1641, of which Clarke was pastor, probably another Congregational Church, for we have no sign that even then he held Baptist views of the ordinances. Lechford, who visited the Rhode Island colonies, and speaks freely of them (1637-41) says: 'At Providence, which is twenty miles from the said island (R.I.), lives Master Williams, and his company, of divers opinions; most are Anabaptists.' But of Newport, which he also visited, he says: 'At the island called Acquedney are about two hundred families. There was a Church where one Master Clarke was elder. The place where the Church was is called Newport. But that Church, I hear, is now dissolved.'

The next most reliable account of Clarke is from John Callender, the sixth successor to Clarke, as pastor of the First Baptist Church at Newport, who preached the Century Sermon at Newport, March 24th, 1738. In his discourse he uses this language: 'It is said that in 1644 Mr. John Clarke and some others formed a Church on the scheme and principles of the Baptists. It is certain that in 1648 there were fifteen members in full communion.' In 1730 Comer, an earlier successor of Clarke, says that this body maintained 'the doctrine of efficacious grace, and professed the baptizing of only visible believers upon personal profession by a total immersion in water, though the first certain record of this Church is October 12th, 1648.' An interesting item may be mentioned here, namely: That Samuel Hubbard and his wife, of Fairfield, held to the baptism of believers, and she being arraigned twice for this faith, they removed to Newport and united with Clarke's Church November 3d, 1648.

These things taken together lead to the highly probable conclusion, that Clarke became a Baptist somewhere between 1640 and 1644, but we have no record of the time of his baptism, or that of his Church. A long train of circumstances indicate that his steps had led in the same path with those of Williams in the main; through Puritanism, love of religious liberty, disgust at the intolerance of Massachusetts, and so into full Baptist positions. Williams was not a Baptist when he first met Clarke, early in 1638, nor was he immersed till March, 1639, a year afterward. With the brotherly affection which subsisted, between them, the intervention of Williams in securing the island of Rhode Island to Clarke, and their common views on soul-liberty, is it reasonable to suppose that

The American Baptists

Williams would have sought baptism at the hands of an immersed layman, if Clarke, his next neighbor, was then a Baptist? True, Williams had ceased to be a Baptist when the Baptist Church of which Clarke became pastor was formed, so that he could not have baptized Clarke. But other elders had taken the Church that Williams had left, and Clarke could have received baptism of one of them at Providence, as easily as William Vaughn, of the First Baptist Church at Newport, could go to Providence and receive imposition of hands from Wickenden in 1652. Be this as it may, however, there is nothing to show that Clarke was a Baptist in England, but much to indicate that his love for liberty of conscience led him to embrace Baptist principles and practices in Rhode Island. Morgan Edwards writes of the Newport Church:

'It is said to have been a daughter of Providence Church, which was constituted about six years before. And it is not at all unlikely that they might be enlightened, in the affair of believer's baptism, by Roger Williams and his company, for whom they had the greatest kindness...Clarke, its first minister, 1644, remained pastor till 1676, when he died...Tradition says that he was a preacher before he left Boston, but that he became a Baptist after his settlement in Rhode Island, by means of Roger Williams.' [*Materials for Hist. of Baptists in R.I.*]

His services in the cause of God and liberty were a marvel. In 1651 the colony sent him and Williams to obtain a new charter, which would set aside Coddington's. Williams returned in 1654, leaving Clarke alone to manage the affair, which he did during the Protectorate, and in 1663 he secured from Charles II that remarkable document which was held as fundamental law in Rhode Island till 1842. It was an immense triumph of diplomacy to obtain a charter from Charles II, which declared that 'no person within the said colony, at any time hereafter, shall be anywise molested, punished, disquieted, or called in question for any differences of opinion or matters of religion.' No wonder that he was hailed with delight on his return to Rhode Island in 1664, after an absence of twelve long years on this high mission.

He served the public in the General Assembly as Deputy Governor, and in other capacities, requiring strength of judgment and versatility of talents. His 'News from New England,' 'Narrative of New England Persecutions,' with several other works, bear the marks of a powerful pen. Callender said of him: 'No character in New England is of purer fame than John Clarke.' The Historian of Rhode Island says that 'to him Rhode Island was chiefly indebted for the extension of her territory on each side of the bay, as well as for her royal charter.' And Roger Williams bears this testimony: 'The grand motive which turned the scale of his life was the truth of God – a just liberty to all men's spirits in spiritual matters, together with the peace and prosperity of the whole colony.' As a consistent Baptist, he displayed a healthy comprehension of all our principles and gave a beautiful unity to our infant cause in the colonies. And it is equally beautiful to see how he accepted from Williams all that related to liberty of conscience, although Williams did not agree with him in regard to Church life. Williams, at Providence, made the distinction between Church and State, radical and complete from the first. Clarke at first took the Bible as the code of the civil State, so that in Providence Church and State were distinct, but in Aquidneck they were confounded, and only after severe experience did that colony come to adopt the Providence doctrine. When this was done, Baptist Churches sprang up in different directions, under the missionary influences of the Newport Church, and people came from many places to unite in its fellowship.

These two Baptists shaped the early history of the present State of Rhode Island, and her

Chapter 4 - The Providence and Newport Churches

religious policy has since shaped that of all the States. After the Providence Plantations and the people of Narraganset Bay became united under one charter, an old writer said of them: 'They are much like their neighbors, only they have one vice less and one virtue more than they; for they never persecuted any; but have ever maintained a perfect liberty of conscience.' After quoting these words, Edwards remarks:

'In 1656 the Colonies of Plymouth, Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Haven pressed them hard to give up the point, and join the confederates to crush the Quakers, and prevent any more from coming to New England. This they refused, saying: "We shall strictly adhere to the foundation principle on which this colony was first settled, to wit: That every man who submits peaceably to the civil authority, may peaceably worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience without molestation." This answer made the said colonies hate them the more, and meditate their ruin by slanderous words and violent actions. They had to resist Old England as well as New England. Sir Henry Vane admonished them in a letter. Williams says: "I spent almost five years' time with the State of England to keep off the rage of the English against us." Letter-writers calumniated them as the scum and runaways of other countries which, in time, would bring a heavy burden on the land – as sunk into barbarity, that they could speak neither good English nor good sense, as libertines, antinomians, and every thing except what is good, as despisers of God's worship, and without order or government. In their address to the Lord Protector, 1659, they say: "We bear with the several judgments and consciences of each other in all the towns of our colony, the which our neighbor colonies do not; which is the only cause of their great offense against us." [*Materials for Hist. of Baptists in R.I.*]

Mr. Clarke passed through several severe controversies. One, on the 'inner-light' question, with those who claimed to be led entirely thereby. Many of them were called 'Seekers,' and some became 'Friends.' Against this doctrine Clarke contended manfully for the Baptist claim of the sufficiency of the Bible as the rule of faith and practice, and carried the public sentiment with him. In 1652, while he was in England, the question of 'laying on of hands' as a test of membership arose. A number withdrew from his Church in 1656, on this issue, and formed a 'Six Principle' Baptist Church in Newport; then, in 1671, another body went out and formed a 'Seventh Day' Church, on the persuasion that the seventh day is the divinely appointed Sabbath. The first successor of Clarke as pastor was Obadiah Holmes, 1676-82; the second Richard Dingley, 1689-94; then William Peckham, 1711-32; John Comer, 1726-29, a colleague to Peckham. John Callender became pastor in 1731, died in 1748, and from him the pastoral succession has gone on in a line of worthies which would honor the history of any Church, while many of its deacons have been known as the first men in the commonwealth. The Church has always been Calvinistic, and has practiced singing as a part of public worship, excepting for a time, in the early part of the eighteenth century. In 1726 it voted to take 'a weekly contribution for the support of the ministry.' It has been a living, working band of Christians from its organization, and stands on the old platform where it has stood for nearly two and a half centuries as prominent and healthful as a city on a hill.

The American Baptists

Chapter 5 - Chauncey – Knollys – Miles and the Swansea Church

Several hints are found in the early colonial writings, that an individual here and there amongst the colonists inclined to Baptist views in relation to infant baptism and immersion before the immersion of Williams. Governor Winslow wrote of the Baptists, in 1646: 'We have some living amongst us, nay, some of our Churches, of that judgment;' and Mather states that 'many of the first settlers of Massachusetts were Baptists, and they were as holy and watchful and faithful and heavenly a people as any, perhaps, in the world.' [*Hypocrisy Unmasked*, Magnalia, ii, 459] We have seen that when Williams was banished he was not a Baptist, nor does it appear that there was then one immersed believer in America. There is no evidence that he expressed any difference with his Pedobaptist brethren as to the proper subjects and method of baptism before he found himself in the wilderness. Yet we have seen that while he was teacher at Plymouth, Elder Brewster read his Baptist tendencies in his preaching, and predicted that he would run into 'Anabaptistry.' It is, therefore, a singular fact that Rev. Charles Chauncey who had been an Episcopal clergyman in England, and who arrived in Boston in 1638, should have brought the doctrine of immersion with him, and made directly for that same Plymouth, where somehow there was an 'Anabaptist' taint in the air, to the scant edification of Brewster. Felt writes that Chauncey arrived at Plymouth 'a few days before the great earthquake on the 1st of June,' 1638. At that time Mr. Reyner was teacher to the Church at Plymouth, and Morton's manuscript reports this:

'After Mr. Reyner had been in place a considerable time it was desired that Mr. Charles Chauncey should be invited, who, being a very godly and learned man, they intended upon trial to choose him pastor of the Church here for the more comfortable performance of the ministry with Mr. John Reyner, the teacher of the same; but there fell out some difference about baptizing, he holding it ought only to be by dipping and putting the whole body under water, and that sprinkling was unlawful. The Church yielded that immersion or dipping was lawful, but in this cold country not so convenient. But they could not and durst not yield to him in this – that sprinkling, which all the Churches of Christ, for the most part, at this day practice, was unlawful and a human invention, as the same was pressed; but they were willing to yield to him as far as they could and to the utmost, and were contented to suffer him to practice as he was persuaded, and when he came to minister that ordinance he might do it to any that did desire it in that way; provided, he could peaceably suffer Mr. Reyner and such as desired it to have theirs otherwise baptized by him, by sprinkling or pouring on of water upon them, so as there might be no disturbance in the Church thereabouts. But he said he could not yield thereunto, upon which the Church procured some other ministers to dispute the point with him publicly, as Mr. Ralph Patrick, of Duxburrow, who did it sundry times, ably and sufficiently, as also some other ministers within this government; but he was not satisfied; so the Church sent to many other Churches to crave their help and advice in this matter, and, with his will and consent, sent them his arguments written under his own hand. They sent them to the Church of Boston, in the Bay of Massachusetts, to be communicated with other Churches there; also they sent the same to the Churches of Connecticut and New Haven, with sundry others, and received very able and sufficient answers, as they conceived, from them and their learned ministers, who all concluded against him. But himself was not satisfied therewith. Their answers were too large here to relate. They conceived the Church had done what was meet in the thing.'

While this Baptist principle was planting itself, by the hands of one who was not a Baptist, in the very Mayflower Church – and possibly Chauncey practiced immersion from the very rock on which the Pilgrims landed – the same leaven was working its way into the heart of the Plymouth colony, at Scituate. In Chap. II, of the British Baptists, we have seen that Spilsbury's Church, London, came out of the Church of which Lathrop, the Separatist, was pastor, in 1633. In 1634 Lathrop himself left London, with about thirty of his members, and settled at Scituate, Mass. Dean, the Scituate historian, agreeing entirely with Wilson about the troubles of that Church in regard to

The American Baptists

baptism, says: 'Controversy respecting the mode of baptism had been agitated in Mr. Lathrop's Church before he left England, and a part had separated from him, and established the first Baptist (Calvinistic) Church in England in 1633. Those that came seem not all to have been settled on this point, and they found others in Scituate ready to sympathize with them.'

Lathrop remained in Scituate as pastor until 1639, when he and a majority of his Church removed to Barnstable, and Chauncey became pastor at Scituate. Dean further says that a majority of those left at Scituate believed in immersion, but 'nearly half the Church were resolute in not submitting to that mode.' One party held to 'infant sprinkling; another to adult immersion exclusively; and a third, of which was Mr. Chauncey, to immersion of infants as well as of adults.' Winthrop shows that down to June, 1640, Chauncey was still at Plymouth, though not as pastor, and considerable excitement arose there about his views on baptism. On November 2d, 1640, Hooker, Williams's opponent, wrote to Shepherd, his son-in-law, thus:

'I have of late had intelligence from Plymouth. Mr. Chauncey and the Church are to part, he to provide for himself, and they for themselves. At the day of fast, when a full conclusion of the business should have been made, he openly professed he did as verily believe the truth of his opinion as that there was a God in heaven, and that he was as settled in it as that the earth was upon the center. If ever such confidence find success I miss my mark. Mr. Humphrey, I hear, invites him to Providence, and that coast is most meet for his opinions and practice.' [Felt, *Ecc. Hist.*, I, p. 443]

He seems to have been greatly beloved at Plymouth, for Winthrop writes that the Church there 'were loath to part with him;' and Bradford that he 'removed to Scituate, against the earnest wishes of the Plymouth Church to retain him.' He continued his ministry at Scituate till 1654, and, the minority of his Church there having formed a new Church, February 2d, 1642, those that were left seem to have been a unit on the subject of immersion. [Dean, *Hist. Scit.*, p. 60] Some of the records in this case are interestingly quaint, such as this: 'Cotton answers Chauncey's arguments,' and the 'Church at Plymouth dissents from Chauncey's views, one of the reasons being 'that immersion would endanger the lives of infants in winter, and to keep all baptisms till summer hath no warrant in God's word.' [Felt, I, 442] It does not appear, however, that he or his congregation became Baptists, for they retained infant baptism.

Felt says of him, July 7th, 1642: 'Chauncey at Scituate still adheres to his practice of immersion. He had baptized two of his own children in this way. A woman of his congregation who had a child of three years old, and wished it to receive such an ordinance, was fearful that it might be too much frightened by being dipped, as some had been. She desired a letter from him, recommending her to the Boston Church, so that she might have the child sprinkled. He complied, and the rite was accordingly administered.' [Felt, I, 497] November 27th, 1654, he became President of Harvard College.

HANSERD KNOLLYS had avowed himself a Non-conformist in England, and had been made a prisoner at Boston, in Lincolnshire, but his keeper allowed him to escape, and with his wife he arrived at Boston, Mass., July, 1638. There he was looked upon with suspicion, and reported to the authorities as an Antinomian. Two men in Piscataqua (Dover, N.H.) came and invited him there to preach, and in August he went. He remained there and formed a Church, to which he preached till September, 1641, when he removed, with certain of his congregation, to Long Island, N.Y. where Forrett, agent of the Duke of York, protested against his remaining; and he arrived in London,

December 24th, 1641. While in Dover he had trouble into which baptism entered as an element, although Knollys was not a Baptist at that time. Lechford, an Episcopalian, who visited Dover in 1641, speaks of him as then engaged in a controversy about baptism and Church membership. The baptismal point appears to have concerned infant baptism, and on this wise. Another Church sprang up in Dover, whether *denovo* or as a split from Knollys's, does not appear, but a majority of the people went to the other Church, under the lead of a Mr. Larkham, an English Puritan and a graduate of Cambridge, who could not agree with the Congregationalists here. At Dover Larkham 'received all into his Church, even immoral persons, who promised amendment, he baptized any children offered, and introduced the Episcopal service at funerals'

Knollys and his Church excommunicated Larkham and his adherents, and a tumult arose in the community that brought no great honor to either side. One of the things that drove Knollys out of the English Church, says Wilson, was his scruple against 'the cross in baptism, etc., and he objected to the admission of notoriously wicked persons to the Lord's Supper.' His refusal to take immoral persons into the Church, and to baptize children, 'any offered' as Larkham did, implies that he believed in personal regeneration as a qualification for membership, but not necessarily that he rejected infant baptism entirely, as he might have thought, with John Robinson, that the children of believers only should be christened. Indeed, it is quite probable that he did not then reject infant baptism altogether, for on March 23d, 1640, we find him bearing letters from the Dover to the Boston Church, asking advice about the scruples of the former Church as to whether they should have any fellowship with excommunicated persons, 'except in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper?' In their answer the Boston Church calls them 'godly brethren, who came from the Church of Dover,' and tells them that the excommunicated might be present at preaching or prayers, and other ordinances of the Church, but not at the Supper. To this Knollys replied: 'It is desired by our Church that the elders of this Church would certify their judgments by letter.' All of which is inconsistent with the idea that either he or his Church were Baptists at that time, while seeking the advice of a Congregational Church. Nor, had they been Baptists, should we have found Knollys first writing from Dover to friends in London, complaining that the government of the Bay was 'worse than a high commission,' and then sending, July, 1639, a retraction to Winthrop, and afterward, February 20th, 1640, making a public confession, in a lecture delivered before the elders and magistrates of New Hampshire, that he had slandered the Bay government. In fact, this body would not have heard a lecture from a Baptist. [Felt, ii, pp. 449,399,448] All the power of England could not have compelled him to humble himself thus ten years later. Baptist principles had clearly begun to work their way into his mind in Dover, and on his return to London the work was completed. For a time he kept school in his own house on Great Tower Hill; then he was chosen master of a free school in St. Mary Axe, where in one year he had one hundred and fifty-six scholars; after which he went into the Parliament army to preach to the soldiers. When Episcopacy was laid aside he preached again in the parish churches, till the Presbyterians began to persecute him. This brought out his Baptist sentiments, which he avowed with great boldness when preaching one day in Bow Church, Cheapside. There his attack on infant baptism was so strong that, on a warrant, he was thrown into prison. As in the case of Clarke and Holmes. we have no account of his baptism, but we find him immersing Henry Jesse in June, 1645, and in the same year he formed a Baptist Church at Great St. Helenas, London, where he preached to a thousand people, and became one of the noblest heroes that ever proclaimed the Baptist faith; probably New England having more to do in making him

The American Baptists

what he was as a Baptist than Old England. [Wilson, *Hist. Dissenting Chs*; Evans's *Eng. Baptists*, ii, 131] This agrees with Evans, who, speaking of Knollys becoming a Baptist, says of him: 'Knollys, some years before, had fled from the fierce anger of the hierarchy to the wilds of the New World, but had now returned.'

By some means a little Baptist leaven had found its way to Weymouth, Mass., in 1639. Robert Lenthal was to be settled there as pastor, when it was discovered that he held that 'all the requisite for Church membership should be baptism,' whatever this might mean. He, therefore, with several others, attempted to collect a Church, and got many subscribers to a paper with this in view. They were summoned before the Court in Boston, March 13th, 1639, when John Smith was fined twenty pounds, and committed during the pleasure of the Court; Richard Sylvester was disfranchised, and fined forty shillings; Ambrose Morion was fined ten pounds; John Spur, twenty pounds; James Brittane was sentenced to be whipped eleven stripes, because he could not pay his fine; and Lenthal was required to appear at the next Court. He went to Rhode Island, and we find him there with Clarke. It is hard to understand exactly what his views were, but the 'Massachusetts Records' say he held 'that only baptism was the door of entrance into the visible Church,' such a Church 'as all baptized ones might communicate in,' which looks like adult baptism.

JOHN MILES AND THE BAPTIST CHURCH AT SWANSEA, MASS. So far as is known Miles was the first Welsh Baptist minister who ever crossed the Atlantic. He was born in 1621, at Newton, near the junction of the historic rivers, Olchon and Esclé. He matriculated at Brasenose College, Oxford, March 11th, 1636, and is on record as 'a minister of the Gospel' in 1649, in which year he formed the first Strict Communion Church at Ilsten, near Swansea, Wales (so spelled at that time, according to Thomas), now Swansea. His love of truth, his art in organization, together with his perseverance and courage, soon made him a leader in the denomination; and in 1651 we find him representing the Welsh Baptists at the Minister's Meeting in London. Persecution soon selected him as one of its first victims, and when the cruel Act of Uniformity, 1662, ejected two thousand ministers, and opened all sorts of new sufferings to God's servants, he, with a large number of his Church, removed to America, carrying their Church records with them, which are still preserved. They settled at Wannamoiset, then within the bounds of Rehoboth, but afterward, 1667, called Swansea, and but ten miles from Providence, though in the Plymouth Colony.

The finger of God guided them to this as a field prepared for Baptist culture, and a fruitful one it became. In 1646 Obadiah Holmes had removed there from Salem, of which Church he had been a member and united with the Congregational Church, under the pastoral charge of Mr. Newman. But, in some way he and eight others had imbibed Baptist principles, possibly from Williams, and in 1649 they established a separate meeting of their own. For this they were excommunicated and punished by the civil authority. The whole commonwealth of Plymouth was stirred and petitions against them came pouring in, one signed by all the clergy of the colony except two, and one from the government of Massachusetts itself. In June, 1650, Holmes and Joseph Torrey were bound to appear at the next court, and in October they, with eight others, were indicted by the Grand Jury. It is difficult to find what penalty was inflicted on them, but, suffice it, their meeting was broken up, and Holmes, with most of his brethren, removed to Newport, where, in due time, he became the pastor of the Baptist Church. The following is the presentment by the grand inquest: 'October the 2d, 1650. We, whose names are heer under written, being the grand inquest, doe present to this Court, John Hazael, Mr. Edward Smith and wife, Obadiah Holmes, Joseph Tory and his wife, and

Chapter 5 - Chauncey – Knollys – Miles and the Swansea Church

the wife of James Man, William Deuell and his wife, of the town of Rehoboth, for continueing of a meeting uppon the Lord's day from house to house, contrary to the order of this Court enacted June 12th, 1650.' [*Plymouth Records*, ii, p. 162]

Things were in this condition when Miles and his brethren arrived on the ground, and in 1663, soon after their arrival, they formed the first Baptist Church in what is now the State of Massachusetts. Seven men, whose names have come down to us with that of 'John Miles' at their head (the names of the females are not given), formed a Church covenant in the house of John Butterworth, and a noble band they were. From the first, Miles was a favorite in the community, and on March 13th, 1666, the people of Rehoboth voted that he should lecture for them on the Sabbath and once in two weeks on the week- day. After the death of Mr. Newman, who opposed Miles earnestly, Mr. Symmes had preached for several years in the Pedobaptist Church, and still preached there. Hence this action made great disturbance. So, May 23d, the town agreed: 'That a third man alone for the work of the ministry should be forthwith looked for, and such an one as may preach to the satisfaction of the whole, if it be the will of God, for the settling of peace amongst us.' Richard Bullock protested against this act 'as the sole work of the Church.' This infant Church suffered various legal difficulties, and the Court at Plymouth fined Miles five pounds, July 2d, 1667, for setting up a public meeting without the knowledge and approbation of the Court. They were ordered to stop the meeting where it was then held, but if they would remove to another point, and behaved well there, perhaps they might be permitted to remain in the colony.

Soon after, this Church was brought face to face With a new and great danger. Finding that they were decent citizens after all their heterodoxy, the colony was disposed to give them a grant of land, and did so: to 'Captain Thomas Willet, Mr. Paine, Sr., Mr. Brown, John Alien, and John Butterworth,' as trustees for a new town. Willet and Paine were not Baptists, the others were, and amongst other things Willet proposed: 'That no erroneous persons be admitted into the township.' This tried the metal of the Welsh brethren on the tenet of soul-liberty, of which subject they knew but little, and well-nigh tripped. Glad to find a place where they could worship God in peace, they 'gathered and assembled' as a Church, and addressed an 'explication' to the trustees, in which they conceded, that 'Such as hold damnable heresies, inconsistent with the faith of the Gospel; as, to deny the Trinity, or any person therein; the deity or sinless humanity of Christ. or the union of both natures in him, or his full satisfaction to the divine justice of all his elect, by his active and passive obedience, or his resurrection, ascension into heaven, intercession, or his second coming personally to judgment; or else to deny the truth or divine authority of the Scriptures, or the resurrection of the dead, or to maintain any merit of works, consubstantiation, transubstantiation, giving divine adoration to any creature, or any other antichristian doctrine, directly opposing the priestly, prophetic, or kingly offices of Christ, or any part thereof; or such as hold such opinions as are inconsistent with the well-being of the place, as to deny the magistrates power to punish evil doers, as well as to encourage those that do well, or to deny the first day of the week to be observed by divine institution as the Lord's day or Christian Sabbath, or to deny the giving of honor to whom honor is due, or to oppose those civil respects that are usually performed according to the laudable customs of our nation each to other, as bowing the knee or body, etc., or else to deny the office, use, or authority of the ministry, or a comfortable maintenance to be due to them from such as partake of their teachings, or to speak reproachfully of any of the Churches of Christ in the country, or of any such other Churches of Christ in the country, or of any such other Churches as are of the same

The American Baptists

common faith with us or them; all such might be excluded!' [Backus, I, 285,286; Weston's ed.]

What were those Welshmen thinking about? Clearly, they had not been to school at Salem yet, and we may be thankful that they were corresponding with a militia officer and not forming a new State, or, in a short time, Swansea would have been as bad as Glamorganshire, from which they had fled. They remind one of birds in the stress of storm, who make for the first bright light, and in their joy dash themselves against it to destruction, rather than use it as a guide. But their folly is more apparent still when we find them drawing a distinction between essential and non-essential Christian doctrines thus:

'We desire that it be also understood and declare that this is not understood of any holding any opinion different from others in any disputable point, yet in controversy among the godly learned, the belief thereof not being essentially necessary to salvation; such as pedobaptisin, antipedobaptism, church discipline or the like; but that the minister or ministers of the said town may take their liberty to baptize infants or grown persons as the Lord shall persuade their consciences, and so also the inhabitants take their liberty to bring their children to baptism or to forbear.'

It is slightly comforting that they were so far in advance of the neighboring colonies as to allow their neighbors to christen their children, if 'the Lord shall persuade their consciences,' while their neighbors would not allow them to be immersed on their faith in Christ, whether the Lord had persuaded their consciences thereto or not. Still, as Baptists, they were far enough from hard-pan at that time, on the subject of religious liberty. A little of Roger Williams's back-bone would not have hurt them at all, or even a bit of honest John Price's old Welsh obstinacy. He was a Baptist minister at Dolan, who endured great persecution, and died at Nantmel, 1673. He would not conform to the Church of England in any thing, and as that Church always buried its dead with the head toward the west, he ordered his buried toward the east. Then, a brass plate was to be put on his grave-stone to certify that he would not conform to their whims dead or alive.

John Miles soon became a power in all the region round about. December 19th, 1674, the town appointed him master of a school, at a salary of forty pounds per annum, 'for teaching grammar, rhetoric, arithmetic, and the tongues of Latin, Greek and Hebrew, also to read English and to write.' His house was made the garrison for the military forces when the town was assaulted in the Indian War under King Philip, June 24th, 1675. The Church multiplied and became strong, taking deep root in the colony. They built their first meeting-house about three miles north-east of Warren, and in 1679 a new one at Kelley's Bridge, with a parsonage for Miles. But they were stoutly opposed, until the whole region became Baptist. It is reported of their pastor, that once when brought before the magistrates for preaching, he asked for a Bible, and turning to Job 19:28, read: 'Ye should say, Why persecute we him, seeing the root of the matter is found in me?' He said no more, but sat down and the Court so felt the power of the passage that, instead of cruelty, he was treated with kindness. He died at Tyler's Point, February 3d, 1683.

We have seen that the authorities of Massachusetts were sorely tried with the leniency of Plymouth in the case of Holmes and his compeers at Rehoboth, but as they could do nothing further in that direction, they proceeded at once to make things as stringent as possible for the persecution of Baptists in their own jurisdiction. Judging by their excited condition, a plague broke out in the colony which might be designated the 'anabaptistical-phobia,' and fright seized them as if some one had been bitten by a live Baptist. The General Court caught the disease badly, and on the 13th of

Chapter 5 - Chauncey – Knollys – Miles and the Swansea Church

November, 1644, decreed:

'It is ordered and decreed, that if any person or persons, within this jurisdiction, shall either openly condemn or oppose the baptizing of infants, or go about secretly to seduce others from the approbation or use thereof, or shall purposely depart the congregation at the ministration of the ordinance, or shall deny the ordinance of magistracy, or the lawful right and authority to make war, or to punish the outward breakers of the first table, and shall appear to the Court willfully and obstinately to continue therein after due time and means of conviction, every such person or persons shall be sentenced to banishment.'

But the reasons which they give in the preamble, are, if possible, more expressive of their unhappy condition than the law itself; hence, they use these words to introduce the enactment:

'Forasmuch as experience hath plentifully and often proved that, since the first arising of the Anabaptists, about one hundred years since, they have been the incendiaries of the commonwealths and the infectors of persons in many matters of religion, and the troubles of Churches in all places where they have been, and that they who have held the baptizing of infants unlawful have usually held other errors or heresies together therewith, though they have, as other heretics used to do, concealed the name till they spied out a fit advantage and opportunity to vent them by way of question or scruple; and whereas divers of this kind have, since our coming into New England, appeared amongst ourselves, some whereof have, as others before them, denied the ordinance of magistracy, and the lawfulness of making war, and others the lawfulness of magistrates and their inspection into any breach of the first table; which opinions, if they should be connived at by us, are like to be increased amongst us, and so must necessarily bring guilt upon us, infection and trouble to the Churches, and hazard to the whole commonwealth.'

This state of high fever brought the patient to a crisis, and left him extremely weak when the black train of his dreams and horrible bugbears had passed away. In other words, it was the beginning of the end with religious tyranny in Massachusetts, and under the ruling of divine Wisdom this was the best day's work that its Court ever did for that present glorious State. Men of conscience and common sense felt it a sorry time when their common brethren in Christ Jesus had come to be 'banished' as 'heretics' in a free land, for opposing the baptism of infants, or leaving a congregation where it was practiced, as hazarding the existence of a Christian commonwealth, and bringing 'guilt' upon the venerable heads of those who could not keep their hands off the 'first table' of God's law. As might have been expected, this abuse of power awakened a heart-felt indignation all over the colony, for it touched the consciences of men, and without guise or pretense, assumed control over them. Remonstrance and petition soon found expression; many petitions against the law and others for its continuance came in from various sources, some in March, 1645, others in May, 1646. Yet the Court not only refused to repeal the law, bill even to alter or explain it, although Samuel Maverick, Dr. Child and five others of great influence, not Baptists, threatened to appeal to Parliament on this and other subjects of grievance. The Court was compelled to issue a 'Declaration' to the people in its own defense, in which they were weak enough to confess that the Baptists were 'peaceable' citizens amongst them. They say, November 4th, 1646, to those that 'Are offended also at our law against Anabaptists. The truth is, the great trouble we have been put unto and hazard also, by familistical and anabaptistical spirits, whose conscience and religion hath been only to set forth themselves and raise contentions in the country, did provoke us to provide for our safety by a law, that all such should take notice how unwelcome they should be unto us, either coming or staying. But for such as differ from us only in judgment, in point of baptism, or some other points of less consequence, and live peaceably amongst us, without occasioning disturbance, etc., such have no

The American Baptists

cause to complain, for it hath never been as yet put in execution against any of them, although some are known to live amongst us.'

Why could they not leave Pilate alone in history, to wash his hands in innocency? That business belonged to the Old, not the New, World. Every syllable here shows their misgivings and counter consciousness touching their own Law. They begin by depreciating their enactment into a 'notice' the law itself says that it is a provision for banishment.' They say that the Baptist 'conscience and religion' have raised 'contentions in the country; 'their law itself says that they were 'incendiaries of the commonwealth.' Here, they taper down the Baptist offense to a difference 'from us only in judgment in point of baptism;' the law calls them 'heretics' and 'troublers of Churches.' Their Declaration says that those Baptists who 'live peaceably amongst us, without occasioning disturbance, shall have no cause to complain;' but their law also says that it is disturbance of itself, 'to openly condemn or oppose the baptizing of infants, or go about secretly to seduce others from the approbation or use thereof, or shall purposely depart the congregation at the ministration of the ordinance.' And finally, their appeal to the public says that 'some of the Baptists were known to live peaceably amongst us,' but to deny the right of the magistrates' authority to punish the outward breakers of the first table, is a just reason why they should 'be sentenced to banishment,' and this the most 'peaceful' of them denied. It is a sure thing that both their 'Tenet' and its commentary need washing again thoroughly. Complaints went over to England, and as there was now no chance to glory over this matter under the pretense of civil wrong-doing, as in the case of Roger Williams, the thing must be met there on its naked merits, as a square act of religious tyranny. Hence, Governor Winslow was sent to England to answer this charge. [Mass. Col. Records, ii, p. 162]

Brought to an account before the home government, it was demanded of him: 'You have a severe law against Anabaptists, yea, one was whipt at Massachusetts for his religion? And your law banisheth them?' To which the gracious old governor meekly answered: "Tis true, the Massachusetts government have such a law as to banish, but not to whip in that kind. And certain men desiring some mitigation of it; it was answered in my hearing: 'Tis true, we have a severe law, but we never did, or will, execute the rigor of it upon any, and have men living amongst us, nay, some in our Churches of that judgment, and as long as they carry themselves peacefully as hitherto they do, we will leave them to God, ourselves having performed the duty of brethren to them. And whereas, there was one whipt amongst us, 'tis true we knew his judgment what it was; but had he not carried himself so contemptuously toward the authority God hath entrusted us with in an high exemplary measure, we had never so censured him; and, therefore, he may thank himself who suffered as an evil doer in that respect. But the reason whereof we are loath either to repeal or alter the law is, because we would have it remain in force to bear witness against their judgment and practice, which we conceive them to be erroneous.' [*Hypocrisy Unmasked*, 101]

The person reported by the governor as whipped here was Thomas Painter, of Hingham, whose contemptuous crime against the 'authority' of the magistrates consisted in refusing to have his child christened. True, the governor said, they had no law 'to whip in that kind,' which only aggravates their crime against humanity, for they did whip him, law or no law, and for what the governor says, they knew to be simply his 'judgment.' But from the mild manner in which he speaks of this harmless law, as a mere verbal 'witness' against 'erroneous' 'judgment and practice' on the part of the Baptists, they wished the British government to understand and treat it as a dead-letter. Indeed, he gives the promise in the name of Massachusetts, whose representative he was, that although the law

is severe, 'we never did, or will, execute the rigor of it upon any.' How did Massachusetts keep this sacred promise? We shall see.

The feeling engendered in England by this new crusade against 'heretics' in America, 1645, was very deep. Some, who had persecuted the Baptists there, supported the colony in its rigor, and some condemned it severely. Richard Hollingworth said: 'Our belief of New England is, that they would suffer the godly and peaceable to live amongst them, though they differ in point of Church government from them.' And another author, a member of John Goodwill's congregation, 'J.P.' wrote in as cool a strain: 'Why do not our Congregational divines write to the brethren of New England, and convince them of their error, who give, as some say, the civil magistrate a power to question doctrines, censure errors? Sure we are some have been imprisoned, some banished, that pleaded religion and mere conscience, and were no otherwise disturbers of the civil peace than the Congregational way is like to be here. If Old England be said to persecute for suppressing sects and opinions because threatening the truth and civil peace, why may not the same name be put upon New England, who are found in the same work and way?' Another thing which deepened the intense feeling on the subject was, that works on infant baptism, pro and con, began to flood the colony, and the people eagerly inquired what all these terribly blighting opinions of the 'Anabaptists' were; and when they found that the bugaboo lodged in the right of a man to keep his conscience whole in choosing to baptize his child or not, like reasonable beings they began also to think whether or not it were rather desirable to exercise such freedom where Jehovah had exacted no such service. Discussion was all that the Baptists needed to arrest this tyranny, and the law of 1644 had unintentionally thrown the door wide open for such discussion, Hulbard speaks of 'many books coming out of England in the year 1645, some in defense of Anabaptism and other errors, and for liberty of conscience, as a shelter for a general toleration of all opinions'

As far back as 1643 Lady Deborah Moody, who had bought a farm of 400 acres at Swampscott, was obliged to remove to Gravesend, Long Island, 'for denying infant baptism.' Winthrop says of her: 'The Lady Moody, a wise and amiable religious woman, being taken with the errors of denying infant baptism, was dealt withal by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the Church at Salem...To avoid further trouble, she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of her friends. Many others infested with Anabaptism removed thither also. She was after excommunicated.' [*Journal*, ii, pp. 123,124] True, she was a member of the Salem Church, which she united with April 5th, 1640, but lived in the Bay Colony, and left it 'to avoid further trouble.' Salem had become disturbed also on this Baptist issue, for July 8th, 1645, Townsend Bishop, a prominent man there, was 'presented,' Bays Felt, for 'turning his back on the ceremony of infant baptism.' He adds with significance, 'he soon left the town.'

But the authorities began to punish Baptists in Massachusetts Bay, under the law of 1644. William Witter, of Lynn, was arraigned before the Essex Quarterly Court, February, 1646, for saying that 'they who stayed while a child is baptized do worship the devil.' Martha West and Henry Collense testify that he charged such persons with breaking the Sabbath and taking the name of the Trinity in vain. Brother Witter certainly did give very free use to his tongue, but the Court had an effectual cure for all 'heretics' who did that. The law would not connive at such 'opinions,' they were a 'hazard to the whole commonwealth;' he had openly condemned infant baptism, and had 'purposely' departed 'the congregation at the ministration of the ordinance,' and for such wickedness he must be recompensed. He was sentenced to make a public confession before the congregation at

The American Baptists

Lynn? on the next Sabbath, or be censured at the next General Court. John Wood was arraigned the next day before the same Court 'for professing Anabaptist sentiments and withholding his children from baptism,' and John Spur was bound to pay a fine of ,20. On July 13th, 1651, Spur was expelled from the Boston Church, 'because he ceased to commune with them, on the belief that their baptism, singing of psalms and covenant, were human inventions.'

By this time a spirit of general discontent was settling down upon the public mind, and persons in various places were beginning to express their sympathy for the Baptists and to adopt their sentiments on the subject of infant baptism; a state of things which the magistrates found it difficult to repress, and which at last forced not only resistance, but direct aggression, as the surest method of self-defense. Relief was found only in assuming a firm position and a determined stand against such grinding tyranny. If these Baptists stayed away from Congregational Churches, where they were unhappy, those Churches forced them to attend and treated them shamefully for not coming; then, if they went at their command, their presence made these Churches equally unhappy. They were disturbers of the peace when they kept away, and they were contentious when they went; a contradictory state of things which must cure itself, being a slander on the Lamb of God and a disgrace to the seventeenth century.

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

Fierce bigotry and intolerance did much for the ancient Baptists in Jerusalem of old, and this history repeated itself in Boston during the year 1651. The story is very simple. William Witter, a plain old farmer, lived at Swampscott, near Lynn, and was a member of the Congregational Church there. As far back as February 28th, 1643, he renounced infant baptism, and was brought before the Court, charged with speaking indecently of that ordinance. But having made some sort of an apology, he was arraigned a second time, February 18th, 1646, and was formally excommunicated July 24th, 1651, 'for absenting himself from the public ordinances nine months or more and for being rebaptized.' [Ms. Rec. Essex Court, 25, 9 mo., 1651] Meanwhile he had become a member of Clarke's Church at Newport; at what time does not appear, but evidently some time before, as he had not attended the Church at Lynn for more than nine months. Having become blind as well as old, and living little, if any thing, less than seventy-five miles from his Church, he was unable to attend its communion or to share its Christian sympathy and fellowship, all his surroundings being hostile to him. Whether he had invited a visit from representatives of the Newport Church, or they were prompted to visit him in his affliction, is not stated, but the Church records say: 'Three of the brethren, namely, Mr. John Clarke, pastor, Obadiah Holmes and James Crandall, were taken upon the Lord's day, July 20th, 1651, at the house of one of the brethren whom they went to visit; namely, William Witter, in the 'town of Lyn.' But it is clear from the record itself that he was a 'brother' in that Church, as Backus calls him; also Arnold, in his *History of Rhode Island* calls him 'an aged member' and Dr. Palfrey mentions him as a 'brother in the Church of Baptists.'

The above named three started on this mission of love worthy of Jesus himself and an honor to his servants. They passed quietly on their long journey, possibly through Boston, and reached Witter's home on Saturday night, hoping for a quiet Sabbath under a Christian roof. But this was criminal, much as Peter and John sinned against Jerusalem by helping a poor cripple there. When the Sabbath dawned they thought that they would 'worship God in their own way on the Lord's day' in Witter's family. Yes; but what right had they to think any such things Did they not know that it was a crime to worship God 'in your own way' even under your own roof, in Massachusetts? Not withstanding this Clarke began to preach God's word, from Rev. 3:10, to Witter's family, his two traveling companions, and, as 'he says, to 'four or live strangers that came in unexpected' after I had begun. Quite likely those sinners, of the Gentiles, John Wood, Joseph Bednap and Roger Scott, were all present. Wood had been tried, February 19th, 1646, for 'professing Anabaptist sentiments and withholding his children from baptism;' Rednap had broken the law in usually 'departing from the congregation at the time of administering the seal of baptism;' [Felt, *Ecc. Hist.*, ii, p. 46] and 'Scott was that drowsy sinner who was tried by the Court, February 28th, 1643, for common sleeping at the public exercise upon the Lord's day, and for striking him that waked him and was 'severely whipped' for the same in the ensuing December. This deponent saith not whether he really was at Witter's, or, if so, whether he wanted a quiet nap unaroused by a pugnacious Puritan Dogberry; perhaps he thought that a stirring Baptist sermon was just the novelty to keep him wide awake on that Sunday and in that particular place.

But no matter who was there, Clarke had begun to preach powerfully on the faithfulness of God to his people in the hour of temptation, when two constables invaded the farm- house, rushing in with a warrant from Robert Bridges, the 'ordinary;' and the Newport brethren were brought before this officer of justice as prisoners. Bridges insisted that they should attend service at the State

The American Baptists

Church, and they insisted that they would not. Clarke said: 'If thou forcest us into your assembly we cannot hold communion with them.' Clarke was very clear-headed, but he mistook the squire, for it was not 'communion' that he was aiming at. The law required all to attend the State Church; and, therefore, them; and go they should anyhow, so they were forced into the assembly. Clarke says that when he was taken in he removed his hat and 'civilly saluted them,' but when he had been conducted to a seat he put on his hat, 'opened my book and fell to reading.' This troubled the 'ordinary,' and he commanded the constable to 'pluck off our hats, which he did, and where he laid mine there I let it lie.' When the service closed Clarke desired to speak to the congregation, but silence was commanded and the prisoners were removed. Some liberty was granted them on Monday, which they used, as Paul and Silas used theirs at Philippi, when they entered into the house of Lydia and exhorted the brethren. So here, Clarke and his brethren entered the house of Witter and actually shocked the magistrates by commemorating the love of Jesus together in observing the Lord's Supper. This act filled the cup of their iniquity to the brim, and it was probably the main object of their visit.

On Monday they were removed to Boston and cast into prison, the charges against them being, for 'disturbing the congregation in the afternoon, for drawing aside others after their erroneous judgments and practices, and for suspicion of rebaptizing one or more amongst us.' Clarke was fined ,20, Holmes,30, Crandall ,5, and on refusal to pay they were 'to be well whipped,' although Winthrop had told the English government that they had no law 'to whip in that kind.' Edwards says that while 'Mr. Clarke stood stripped at the whipping-post some humane person was so affected with the sight of a scholar, a gentleman and reverend divine, in such a situation, that he, with a sum of money, redeemed him from his bloody tormentors.' Before this he had asked the Court: 'What law of God or man had he broken, that his back must be given to the tormentors for it, or he be despoiled of his goods to the amount of ,20?' To which Endicott replied: 'You have denied infant baptism and deserve death, going up and down, and secretly insinuating into them that be weak, but cannot maintain it before our ministers' Clarke tells us 'that indulgent and tender-hearted friends, without my consent and contrary to my judgment, paid the fine.' [*Materials for Hist. R.I. Baptists*] Thus some one paid the fine of Clarke and Crandall, and proposed to pay that of Holmes. The first two were released, whether they assented or not, but Holmes who was a man of learning, and who afterward succeeded Dr. Clarke as pastor of the Newport Church, would not consent to the paying of his fine, and because he refused he was whipped thirty stripes, September 6th, 1651. He said that he 'durst not accept of deliverance in such a way.' He was found guilty of 'hearing a sermon in a private manner,' or, as the *mittimus* issued by Robert Bridges expresses it,

'For being taken by the constable at a private meeting at Lin, upon the Lord's day, exercising among themselves, to whom divers of the town repaired and joined with them, and that in time of public exercise of the worship of God; as also for offensively disturbing the peace of the congregation, at their coming into the public meeting in the time of prayer, in the afternoon, and for saying and manifesting that the Church in Lin was not constituted according to the order of our Lord...And for suspicion of their having their hands in rebaptizing of one or more.'

Bancroft says that he was whipped 'unmercifully,' and Governor Jenks, 'that for many days, if not some weeks, he could take no rest but upon his knees and elbows, not being able to suffer any part of his body to touch the bed whereon he lay.' While enduring this torture, he joined his Lord on

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

the cross and Stephen, in praying that this sin might not be laid to the charge of his persecutors; and when his lacerated flesh quivered and blood streamed from his body, so powerfully did the grace of the Crucified sustain him that he cheerfully said to his tormentors: 'You have struck me with roses!'

His remarkable words call to mind the superhuman saying of another noted Baptist, James Bainham, the learned Barrister of the Middle Temple, who was martyred in the days of Henry VIII. Fox shows (ii, p. 246) that he repudiated the baptism of infants. Sir Thomas More lashed him to the whipping-post in his own house at Chelsea, and the whip drew blood copiously from his back; then, when he was burning at the stake, his legs and arms being half-consumed, he exclaimed in triumph: 'O, ye Papists! behold ye look for miracles, and here you may see a miracle. In this fire I feel no more pain than if I were in a bed of down; it is to me as a bed of roses!' Holmes had much of this noble martyr's spirit. Most touchingly he himself wrote: 'I said to the people, though my flesh should fail and my spirit should fail, yet God will not fail; so it pleased the Lord to come in and so to fill my heart and tongue as a vessel full, and with an audible voice I break forth, praying unto the Lord not to lay this sin to their charge, and telling the people that now I found he did not fail me, and, therefore, now I should trust him forever who failed me not. For, in truth, as the strokes fell upon me I had such a spiritual manifestation of God's presence as the like thereof I never had, nor can with fleshy tongue express, and the outward pain was so removed from me, that, indeed, I am not able to declare it to you. It was so easy to me that I could well bear it; yea, and in a manner felt it not, although it was grievous, as the spectators said, the man striking with all his strength – yea, spitting on his hands three times, as many affirmed – with a three-corded whip, giving me therewith thirty strokes. When he had loosened me from the post, having joyfulness in my heart and cheerfulness in my countenance, as the spectators observed, I told the magistrates, you have struck me as with roses, and said, moreover, although the Lord hath made it easy to me, yet I pray God it may not be laid to your charged.'

The vengeful feeling of the authorities toward these harmless men illustrates the severity which was intended. During their examination, Governor Endicott charged them with being 'Anabaptists,' said they 'deserved death,' and that 'they would not have such trash brought into their dominion.' The Court lost its temper, and even John Wilson, a clergyman of a very gentle spirit, struck Holmes, and said: 'The curse of God go with thee;' to which the sufferer replied: 'I bless God I am counted worthy to suffer for the name of Jesus.' After the whipping of Holmes, thirteen persons suffered in one way or another for the sympathy which they manifested for him and were unable to repress. John Spur and John Hazel were sentenced to receive ten lashes, or a fine of forty shillings each. Their crime was, that they had taken the holy confessor by the hand when he was led to the whipping-post by the executioner. This fine was paid by their friends without their consent. The story which they both tell in detail, of their arrest under warrants issued by Increase Nowel, as well as of their trial and sufferings for greeting their abused brother, are most affecting. Hazel being about sixty years of age and infirm, had come fifty miles to comfort his friend Holmes in prison. Professor Knowles tells us that this old Simeon from Rehoboth died before he reached his home. The saint paid a severe penalty for allowing his soft old heart to pity a poor lacerated brother, who had left his noble wife and eight children to visit the blind in his affliction.

This outrage aroused the most bitter resentment everywhere, and to his honor it should be known to the end of the world, that Richard Saltonstall, one of the first magistrates of Massachusetts, who

The American Baptists

was then in England, sent a dignified and indignant letter, dated April 25th, 1652, to Rev. Messrs. Cotton and Wilson, in which he wrote:

'It doth not a little grieve my spirit to hear what sad things are reported daily of your tyranny and persecutions in New England, as that you fine, whip, and imprison men for their consciences. First, you compel such to come into your assemblies as you know will not join with you in worship, and when they show their dislike thereof, and witness against it, then you stir up your magistrates to punish them for such as you conceive their public affronts...These rigid ways have laid you very low in the hearts of the saints. I do assure you that I have heard them pray in the public assemblies that the Lord would give you meek and humble spirits, not to strive so much for uniformity as to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. When I was in Holland, about the beginning of our wars, I remember some Christians there, that then had serious thoughts of planting in New England, desired me to write to the governor thereof, to know if those that differ from you in opinion, yet holding the same foundation in religion, as Anabaptists, Seekers, Antinomians, and the like, might be permitted to live among you, to which I received this short answer from your then governor, Mr. Dudley: "God forbid," said he, "our love for the truth should be grown so cold that we should tolerate errors." I hope you do not assume to yourselves infallibility of judgment... We pray for you and wish you prosperity every way; hoped the Lord would have given you so much light and love there, that you might have been eyes to God's people here, and not to practice these courses in the wilderness which you went so far to prevent.' [Hutchinson's Col. Original Papers, pp. 401,3-8]

Cotton undertook in reply to justify the dark deed, and made as shameful a failure as ever an inquisitor made in defense of the Inquisition. He saw nothing in Holmes's conduct but willful obstinacy, and if a citizen is obstinate in his opinions is it not the bounden duty of the magistrates to whip it out? And so he threw the entire responsibility upon the victim himself. These are his words:

'As for his whipping, it was more voluntarily chosen by him than inflicted on him. His censure by the Court was to have paid, as I know, thirty pounds or else be whipped; his fine was offered to be paid by friends for him freely; but he chose rather to be whipped; in which case, if his suffering of stripes was any worship of God at all, surely it could be accounted no better than will-worship.'

So obtuse was his conscience in all that related to the freedom of man's soul in the worship of God, that he could not see the base injustice of fining a man for his convictions of duty to God, and then whipping him because he would not consent to recognize the righteousness of his own punishment by paying an unjust fine. Governor Jenks, of Rhode Island, understood the matter as Holmes understood it, and in writing, early in the eighteenth century, said:

'The paying of a fine seems to be but a small thing in comparison of a man's parting with his religion, yet the paying of a fine is the acknowledgment of a transgression; and for a man to acknowledge that he has transgressed, when his conscience tells him he has not, is but little, if any thing at all, short of parting with his religion.'

But, with the heartlessness of a stone, Cotton says: 'The imprisonment of either of them was no detriment. I believe they fared neither of them better at home, and I am sure Holmes had not been so well clad in many years before.' He evidently respected Holmes's coat more than the shoulders which it covered. He continues:

'We believe there is a vast difference between men's inventions and God's institutions. We fled from men's inventions, to which we else should have been compelled; we compel none to men's inventions. If our

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

ways, rigid ways as you call them, have laid us low in the hearts of God's people, yea, and of the saints, as you style them, we do not believe it is any part of their saintship.' [Mas. Hist., iii, pp. 403-6]

All this is rendered the more humiliating, when we keep in mind that the entire transaction was unlawful. The statute of November 13th, 1644, called for the 'banishment' of Baptists, but Winslow said that they had no law 'to whip in that kind;' hence, the wanton cruelty of the whole case, without even the show or pretense of law. Possibly this may account for the fact that so many able historians have passed it by in silence. Johnson does not refer to it in his History of 1654, nor Morton in his Memorial of 1669, nor Hubbard in his History of 1680, nor Mather in his of 1702. Others, who did make the record, generally palliated the conduct of the persecutors as best they could. But it was left for Dr. Palfrey, in the latter half of the nineteenth century, to make light of this helpless confessor's suffering, by expressing his suspicion that the magistrates sought 'to vindicate what they thought the majesty of the law, at little cost to the delinquent.' It is difficult to understand how a grave historian can, with any show of seriousness, maintain that the majesty of law was jeopardized by refusing to attend a State Church, and by taking the Lord's Supper elsewhere without disturbing any one; or if it were, that it could be vindicated by plowing furrows amongst the muscles and nerves of a Christian's back till it was raw. Besides, there was no law to be vindicated in this case. The statutes against the Baptists, as we see, provided that they should be banished, not flogged. If this brutal beating were a mere perfunctory farce, why was it necessary to deal out upon the quivering flesh of Holmes the last lash up to thirty? Increase Nowel was a ruling elder in the Church, the judges sat in its chief seats, and should have remembered the cruel scourging of their Saviour by a heartless judge. Instead, as Edwards says, 'with a whip of three cords belaboring his back till poor Holmes's flesh was reduced to jelly,' so they recollected their Redeemer in his servant. The thirty lashes with the three-corded whip counted ninety strokes in all; though others, whipped at the same time for rape and counterfeiting money, received but ten! And what does it count to the honor of his tormentors that the patient sufferer said: 'You have struck me as with roses.' The spiritual exaltation of martyrs in all ages has asserted itself by lifting them above physical sufferings, which, in themselves, have been most excruciating. Can it be pretended that because poor Bainham cried that the flames were like a bed of down, they therefore did not reduce his body to a cinder? Neither can it be claimed that what Holmes called 'a whip of roses' did not almost flay him alive. He, himself, tells us that his pangs were so 'grievous' that with strong crying and tears he prayed to him who was able to save him, so that neither his flesh nor spirit 'failed,' but like his Master he was heard and strengthened to endure what he feared. Surely, Dr. Palfrey's notions of law and its 'majesty' needed as much revision as did his suspicions and tender mercies. This whipping of Holmes was as grievous a piece of tyranny as ever was inflicted at the hands of Christian men, and it can find no palliation in the divine grace vouchsafed to his spiritual support. Often when the body of a holy man is the most severely racked, his spirit seems consciously to glance aside and, as it were, stand apart from the body to exult in its own superiority to his suffering flesh. But all cynical pooh-poohment of their agonies is unworthy of a man who pretends to human consciousness. That soullessness which excuses the whipping of Holmes would justify the burning of Latimer and Ridley.

It was sufficiently painful that Dr. Palfrey should tinge the cheek of the nineteenth century by a gratuitous fling at Holmes's stripes as harmless; but it was reserved for a learned and aged minister of that lowly One who said, 'Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me,' to select for himself the distinction of sneering at this bleeding child of

The American Baptists

God. In 1876 Rev. Dr. Dexter, in his work on Roger Williams, not only cites Palfrey's unworthy remark with approval, but on page 145 reveals an unlovely animus in doing so, by the sneer: 'Holmes whipped – having insisted upon it.' Palfrey might well have spared the sensibilities of Christ-like men despite the studied finish of his sentence, but much less was it needful for this venerable scholar of three-score years to wound refined humanity by studied coarseness. Though thrust out of the text, in contrast with Palfrey's words and carefully veiled in his Index, no charitable man can persuade himself that the red sores on Holmes's back would have suited the doctor's gloating better had such flowers glowed in a heap at the sufferer's feet, as in the case of Bainham. Palfrey knew that his ground was delicate and trod lightly, but to use Paul's words of Isaiah, Dr. Dexter 'is very bold,' and rushes where Palfrey 'suspected' that he would like to tread softly.

Without honor to Massachusetts history, and without throwing one ray of light upon this dark blot on its pages, Dr. Dexter has offered himself as the apologist of this barbarity toward his Baptist brethren, and for this purpose adopts and elaborates a most astounding theory from Dr. Palfrey. He claims that the object of this pilgrimage to Swampscott was not to administer spiritual consolation to Witter, but as he puts it, to float 'the red flag of the anabaptistical fanaticism' 'full in the face of the Bay bull.' In other words, taken from his Index again, 'Clarke and his party leave Newport to obtain a little persecution in Massachusetts,' and that to accomplish a purely political end. His statement of the case is briefly this. Some time before, Coddington, of Rhode Island, had gone to London to obtain leave from England to institute a separate government for the islands of Rhode Island and Canonicut, he to be the governor. Dr. Dexter's words are:

'In the autumn of 1650 it was understood that he was on his way home with this new instrument, and it was further understood that it was Mr. Coddington's desire and intention to bring about under it, if possible, the introduction of Rhode Island into the confederacy then existing of the other colonies, if not absolutely to prevent its annexation to Massachusetts.' Clarke and Coddington were not on good terms, and the 'Anabaptist pastor was bitterly opposed to the new-coming order of things.' 'When the crisis approached, he seems to have felt that a little persecution of the Anabaptists – if such a thing could be managed – by Massachusetts, might serve an important purpose in prejudicing the Rhode Island mind against Coddington's scheme.'

Accordingly, the visit to Witter was carefully planned and executed as a means of enraging the 'Bay bull!' [As to Roger Williams, p. 19.]

Possibly, Coddington had the above project in view, and he may have been opposed by Clarke; but certainly and naturally, this cruelty to Holmes raised a storm of indignation against its perpetrators. These are the only facts in addition to those of the journey itself which Dr. Dexter adduces in support of his proposition. It is one of the cardinal principles of jurisprudence that a man is to be held innocent until proved to be guilty, and that his motives are to be presumed good until shown to be evil. A Christian historian is bound to observe, at least, the same measure of just judgment that obtains in ordinary tribunals. And, no candid man will conclude that the facts recounted here are inconsistent with good intentions, or that they point to the conclusion that Holmes and his associates went to Massachusetts to carry out a political plot. One who will read Dr. Dexter's own account of this transaction with care, will see that the alleged ulterior designs are not even inferences from facts. They are supplied entirely by the writer himself, and are artfully worked into the thread of the narrative. Outside of the common presumption of innocence, the actual occurrences tend distinctly to show that the real reason of the visit to Swampscott was the one openly avowed.

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

The conduct of the three visitors was that of men who shunned rather than courted publicity. If their purpose had been to flaunt the 'red flag full in the face of the Bay bull,' they would not have gone quietly to Witter's house and held religious service there, almost in secret. They would have made their presence and their infraction of the local law as conspicuous as possible. As it was, they were dragged from their quiet and seclusion, and forced into a public congregation against their will and remonstrance, by a constable. Then, pre-eminent amongst the three, the behavior of Holmes after the arrest was simply that of strong convictions and heroic consistency.

Whatever may be said in extenuation of the action of the Puritans of Massachusetts in this case, and it is little at the most, they were intolerant and inquisitorial. They had come to New England not to establish religious freedom, but a religious absolutism of their own. As Dr. Dexter naively puts it, they had determined 'to make their company spiritually homogeneous.' Give them the credit of being children of their age for what it is worth; but the case is entirely different with a minister of Jesus, who has breathed the air of New England for half a century, and is writing in the last quarter of the nineteenth century; who instead of asking for a charitable verdict upon their faults, seeks to justify them, in the warp and in the web, and to that end sets himself systematically to revile the dead who suffered their tyranny. His strictures show him to be so obviously the committed advocate of an untenable theory, that with all his acuteness, his dogmatizing is not even plausible. Upon him must rest the stain of having imputed to these confessors, without the slightest foundation, only wicked intentions in the performance of an act of Christian mercy. Bancroft is not alone in saying that Holmes was 'whipped unmercifully,' nor Arnold, that he was 'cruelly whipped.' Oliver, in his *Puritan Commonwealth* says that he was 'livid with the bruises from the lash,' and Gay writes in Bryant's *History of the United States*: 'Such was his spiritual exaltation that when the ghastly spectacle was over, and his clothes were restored to him to cover his scored and bloody back, he turned to the magistrates standing by, and said, "You have struck me with roses."'

A writer of the present day is no more responsible for this treatment of Baptists by the Massachusetts authorities, than were their victims, and it is honorable to the historic pen to hear men who have no special interest in those victims, beyond that of common humanity, express their honest convictions, as Mr. Winsor, Librarian of Harvard, does in his *Memorial History of Boston*. He says that the

'Anabaptists' received 'grievous treatment from the magistrates of the Puritan commonwealth...Our rulers were most perplexed and dismayed by the experience already referred to, namely, the alarming increase in the colony of unbaptized, because their parents were not members of the Church...It is a sad story. Most pure and excellent and otherwise inoffensive persons were the sufferers, and generally patient ones. But the struggle was a brief one. The Baptists conquered in it and came to equal esteem and love with their brethren. Their fidelity was one of the needful and effective influences in reducing the equally needful but effective intolerance of the Puritan commonwealth.' [I. pp. 171-9, Boston, 1880]

There is, however, a sadly ludicrous side to Dr. Dexter's showing which few care to follow. He counts Massachusetts out of his theory entirely, for he fails to show that she was in such a lovable frame of mind as to court union with Rhode Island and with her frightful 'red flag.' Whether a public proposition for the wholesale importation of vipers into the Bay Colony, or a confederation with the 'Anabaptistical fanaticism' of Rhode Island, would have most alarmed that commonwealth, it is hard to say. Bryant thinks that 'These Rhode Island people grew, from the beginning, more and more

The American Baptists

intolerable to the Boston brethren. It was bad enough that they should obstinately maintain the rights of independent thought and private conscience; it was unpardonable that they should assume to be none the less sincere Christians and good citizens, and should succeed in establishing a government of their own on principles which the Massachusetts General Court declared was criminal. Even in a common peril the Massachusetts magistrates could recognize no tie of old friendship – hardly, indeed, of human sympathy – that should bind them to such men.' [*Hist. U.S.*, ii, pp. 47-49]

Another aspect of this very cheap persecution theory is the jocose assumption that the Rhode Island people were obtuse and slow to learn that the 'Bay bull' ever did froth at the mouth and tear the turf in violence when he snuffed fresh breezes from the Providence plantations and Aquidneck. Sundry occasions had arisen in the schooling of the 'fanatical' colony to educate her, touching the temper of this rampant bull of Bashan. Some of her best colonists had been driven out of Massachusetts, from Williams down; and Rhode Island must have been a dull scholar indeed to have needed a 'little' new persecution to awaken her, after the lesson of November 13th, 1644.

Last of all, this theory of managing to get up 'a little persecution of the Anabaptists' to order does not accord with Clarke's acknowledged ability as a politician. To be sure he knew that old farmer Witter had been up before the Courts on the charge of being an 'Anabaptist' on two occasions – eight years before this visit and five years before – and that he had not been to the Established Church for more than 'nine months,' all of which should have shown him that the 'Bay bull' was not nearly as furious on that particular farm as in some other places. If this crafty elder had wanted to fire the Baptist heart of Rhode Island to some effect, why did he not make directly for Boston, instead of leaving it quietly; and, as he was there on Saturday, too, why did he not stay over Sunday, go to Cotton's Church, and 'flout' the flag there? Cotton would have known it in a moment, and by Monday night the roaring of the 'bull' would have traveled on the wings of the wind from Plymouth to Providence, from Boston to the horn of Cape Cod. But instead of that, he hides himself on Sunday in a Baptist family on an obscure farm two miles from a Congregational Church, will not show his face till two constables drag him out, will not go to a Congregational Church till dragged into it, and does not act at all like a child of his generation, but altogether like an unsophisticated 'child of light.' What could the plotter be thinking of to let Mr. Cotton have peace when he was within ten miles of him, and when one wave of the 'flag' would have turned Boston into Bedlam?

Still, these three Newport evangelists might not have been so verdant, after all, as they seemed. These things appear clear to Dr. Dexter, namely: 1. They knew that the 'Bay' kept a persecuting 'bull,' with very long horns, on which to toss defense-less Baptists. 2. That it was very excitable, and a 'red' Baptist flag 'flouted full in its face' was sure to disabuse all minds that had been soothed into the dangerous belief of its loving and lamb-like disposition; but, 3. They could hardly know that it was kept on that Swampscott farm, or that it would make all Bashan tremble, by tearing up the turf generally, even when the 'red flag' was not 'flouted full in its face.' The meshes of Clarke's net are very open if these were his notions, and form an extremely thin veil for the eyes of the quick-sighted 'Bay bull.'

The entire chain of circumstances render it much more rational to interpret this visit as having in view the administration of the Lord's Supper to Witter by the authority of the Newport Church. This service, on Monday morning, throws a strong light upon the entire transaction. Backus, quoting from the Newport Church record, says that the three were 'representatives of the Church in Newport,' and that Witter 'being a brother in the Church, by reason of his advanced age, could not take so great

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

a journey as to visit the Church.' Arnold, the Rhode Island historian, says that 'they were deputed by the Church to visit him, for he 'had requested an interview with some of his brethren,' and Holmes himself, in his letter to Spilsbury and Kiffin, gives this account: 'I came upon occasion of business into the colony of Massachusetts with two other brethren.' On what 'business' so natural as that of their Lord and his Church, being sent as a deputation to 'break bread' with this infirm old brother, who for nearly a year had not been to the Congregational Church at Lynn, and could not get to his own at Newport.

Very early in the history of the English Reformation strong ground was taken against 'hawking about' the Lord's Supper, as an act of superstition. Bingham, in harmony with all Christian antiquity, says that in the Primitive Church, the Eucharist was not offered in a corner 'for the intention or at the cost of some particular persons, but for a communion to the whole Church, as the primitive Church always used it; and there is not an example to be found of the contrary practice.' [*Antiq. b. xv.*, ch. 4, Sec. 4] But so far was this custom cast aside when the Church became corrupt, that the elements were commonly taken to the dying. According to Limborch, in Spain, soldiers and a bellman attended the procession through the streets, and when the bell gave three strokes all the people fell on their knees, even the actors and dancers on the stage, if it passed a theater [page 533]. Many reformers, therefore, deprecated the use of the Supper amongst the sick and dying, as savoring of the worst superstition. None, however, opposed this practice more resolutely than the Baptists, because they held that the Church, as a body, had control of the Supper, and should partake thereof only in its Church capacity.

In John Smyth's confession, (13) he says: 'The Church of Christ has power delegated to themselves of announcing the word, administering the sacraments,' and (15) that the Supper is the 'sign of the communion of the faithful amongst themselves.' Article XXXII, of the Baptist Confession of 1689, takes the ground that it is 'to be observed in the Churches,' and is a 'pledge of their communion.' The Philadelphia Confession, 1742, says (Art. XXXII) that the Supper is 'to be observed in the Churches,' and deprecates 'the reserving of the elements for any pretended religious use, as contrary to the institution of Christ.' Baptists have always held that the Supper is a purely Church ordinance, the whole body partaking of the 'one loaf,' when the Church 'has come together into one place.' They have regarded it as the family feast, to indicate family relationships, and hence have always kept it strictly under the custody of the Church, their pastors celebrating it only when and where the Church appoints it to be held; the body itself determining who shall or shall not partake of it in the fraternity; as it is the Lord's table, they have ever gathered about it as a family of the Lord. In 1641 the Boston Congregational Church guarded the table so closely in this respect, that 'if any member of another Church be present, and wishes to commune, he mentions it to one of the ruling elders, "who propounds his name to the congregation," who, if having no objection, grant him the privilege.' [Felt, *Ecc. Hist.*, I, 433] Gill gives a clear statement of the Baptist position in this matter. He says of the place where it is to be celebrated:

'Not in private houses, unless when the Churches are obliged to meet there in time of persecution; but in the public place of worship, where and when the Church convened; so the disciples at Troas came together to break bread; and the Church at Corinth came together in one place to eat the Lord's Supper. Acts 20:7; 1 Cor. 11:18-33. For this, being a Church ordinance, is not to be administered privately to single persons; but to the Church in a body assembled for that purpose.' [*Body of Div.*, iii, p. 327]

The American Baptists

We have no reason for believing that the Church at Newport differed from the Baptists in general on this subject, and Clarke would scarcely so far compromise his Church as to celebrate the Supper in Witter's house, if his Church had not exercised its right to control its administration by deputing him to do so, in its name and as its pastor, and by sending two laymen to accompany him as 'representatives' of the Church on the occasion; 'deputed by the Church to visit an aged member,' as Arnold expresses himself. Such a delegated authority would give weight to the expression used by Holmes also, that he went to Lynn 'upon occasion of business,' and that of importance too, being sent on the 'King's business' by the Church. So far as we have information in the case, every hint which the known facts give point in this direction, and justify Clarke in observing the Supper in Witter's house by the authority of the Church of which they were all members, and not on his own assumption.

The reaction from this cruel persecution was immediate and strongly marked. Thoughtful minds raised the universal inquiry: 'What evil have these men done?' Every man's conscience answered promptly: 'None at all, they have but obeyed God as they believed duty demanded; many, who had not before thought on the subject, found their attention called to the same line of duty, and, as usual, many were added to the Lord. Holmes says, that so far from his bonds and imprisonments hindering the Gospel, 'some submitted to the Lord and were baptized, and divers were put upon the way of inquiry.' Upon this state of things his second arrest was attempted, but he escaped. HENRY DUNSTER, the President of Cambridge College (now Harvard), was so stirred in his mind, that he turned his attention to the subject of infant baptism, and soon rejected it altogether. A brief sketch of his life may be acceptable here.

He was born in England about 1612, and was educated at Cambridge, with Cudworth, Milton and Jeremy Taylor. He embraced Puritan principles and came to Boston in 1640, four years after Cambridge College, New England, was established. Of course, at that time it was a mere seminary, but, being one of the most learned men of his times, he was put at its head. He devoted his great powers to its up-building, collected large sums of money for it, giving to it a hundred acres of land himself, and his success in furthering its interests was marvelous. After a scholarly and thorough examination of the question of baptism, he began to preach against infant baptism in the Church at Cambridge, 1653, to the great alarm of the whole community. For this crime he was indicted by the grand jury, was sentenced to a public admonition, put under bonds for better behavior, and compelled to resign his presidency, after a faithful service of fourteen years. Prince pronounced him 'one of the greatest masters of the Oriental languages that hath been known in those ends of the earth,' but he laid aside all his honors and positions in obedience to his convictions. His testimony against infant baptism was very strong. When forbidden to speak, he said, according to the Middlesex Court records: 'The subjects of baptism were visible penitent believers and they only.' After protesting against the christening of a child in the congregation, he said:

'There is an action now to be done which is not according to the institution of Christ. That the exposition as it had been set forth was not the mind of Christ. That the covenant of Abraham is not a ground of baptism, no, not after the institution thereof. That there were such corruptions stealing into the Church, which every faithful Christian ought to bear witness against.'

So masterly were his arguments, that Mr. Mitchel, pastor of the Church, went to labor with him, and he says that Dunster's reasons were so 'hurrying and pressing' that he had 'a strange experience.'

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

They were 'darted in with some impression, and left a strange confusion and sickliness upon my spirit.' So thoroughly was Mitchel shaken, that he fell back 'on Mr. Hooper's principle, that I would have an argument able to remove a mountain before I would recede from, or appear against, a truth or practice received amongst the faithful.' [*Life of Mitchel*, pp. 49-70] After Dunster had resigned his presidency, April 7th, 1657, he was arraigned before the Middlesex Court for refusing to have his child baptized. But he was firm, and gave bonds to appear before the Court of Assistants, he removed to Scituate, in the Plymouth Colony, where he maintained his manly protest. Cudworth says of him there:

'Through mercy, we have yet amongst us the worthy Mr. Dunster, whom the Lord hath made boldly to bear testimony against the spirit of persecution.'

He died February 27th, 1659, after great suffering and eminence, and in that magnanimous spirit which a man of holy conviction knows how to foster. Cotton Mather says of him, that he fell asleep

'In such harmony of affection with the good men who had been the authors of his removal from Cambridge, that he by his will ordered his body to be carried there for its burial, and bequeathed legacies to these very persons.' [*Magnalia*, b. iii, p. 367]

There is abundant proof that, in many thoughtful minds, serious doubts had arisen concerning the scriptural authority of infant baptism and the right of the secular power to interfere in religious affairs. Dunster had done much to bring about this thoughtfulness, and others went further than he seems to have gone. It was obvious to all that the rejection of infant baptism and its enforcement by law must lead to a free Church and a free State, to the casting aside of infant baptism itself as a nullity, and the assertion of the rights of conscience and private judgment in submitting to Gospel baptism. Hence, in the very heart of the Puritan commonwealth, Dunster had planted seed which was indestructible. Cambridge and the adjoining town of Charlestown had been filled with these principles, and out of that center of influence came the first Baptist Church of Massachusetts Bay proper. For more than a generation Baptists had been struggling for a footing there, and at last it was secured. As noble a company of men as ever lived now banded together to withstand all the tyranny of the Puritan inquisition, come what might; and no body of magistrates on earth had their hands fuller of work to suppress the rights of man, than had those of that colony. The struggle was long and hard, but the triumph of manhood was complete at last. The first record on the books of the First Baptist Church in Boston reads thus:

'The 28th of the third month, 1665, in Charlestown, Massachusetts, the Church of Christ, commonly, though falsely, called Anabaptists, were gathered together, and entered into fellowship and communion with each other; engaged to walk together in all the appointments of our Lord and Master, the Lord Jesus Christ, as far as he should be pleased to make known his mind and will unto them by his word and Spirit, and then were baptized, Thomas Gould, Thomas Osborne, Edward Drinker, John George, and joined with Richard Goodall, William Turner, Robert Lambert, Mary Goodall and Mary Newell, who had walked in that order in Old England, and to whom God hath since joined Isaac Hull, John Farnham, Jacob Barney, John Russell, Jr., John Johnson, George Farley, Benjamin Sweetzer, Mrs. Sweetzer, and Ellis Callender, all before 1669.'

This step, however, was not taken until the heroic band had paid a great price for their freedom, for their vexations and sufferings ran through a course of years, before the final organization was effected. Justice to the memory of these blessed ones demands further notice of several of them.

The American Baptists

Next after the influence of Dunster on the mind of Thomas Gould, of Charleston, & member of the Congregational Church there, the Boston Church may trace its origin to the birth of a child in Gould's family in 1655. When this little John the Baptist of Charlestown raised his first cry in that home, like Zacharias of old, its godly father called his neighbors together to unite with him in thanks to God for the precious gift. But he withheld it from baptism, and was summoned to appear before the Church to answer therefor, when still refusing to have it baptized, he was suspended from communion, December 30th, 1656. The Middlesex Court record says that he was then brought before that body 'for denying infant baptism to his child, and thus putting himself and his descendants in peril of the Lord's displeasure, as in the case of Moses.' He was brought before the same Court with Dunster, April 7th, 1657; and, worse and worse, before the Charlestown Church, February 28th, 1664, for having a meeting of 'Anabaptists' in his house on the preceding 8th of November. October 11th, 1665, he was before the Court of Assistants, charged with 'schismatical rending from the communion of the churches here, and setting up a public meeting in opposition to the ordinance of Christ.' Several other persons were tried with him for the same offense, and as they all professed their resolution yet further to proceed in such their irregular practices; thereby as well contemning the authority and laws here established for the maintenance of godliness and honesty, as continuing in the profanation of God's holy ordinances: Gould, Osborne, Drinker, Turner and George were 'disfranchised,' and threatened with imprisonment if they continued in this 'high presumption against the Lord and his holy appointments.' Zechariah Rhodes, a Rhode Island Baptist, being in Court at the time and hearing this decision, said publicly, that 'they had not to do in matters of religion,' and was committed, but afterward admonished and dismissed.

On April 17th, 1666, Gould, Osborne and George were presented to the grand jury at Cambridge, for absence from the Congregational Church 'for one whole year.' They pleaded that they were members of a Gospel Church, and attended scriptural worship regularly. They were convicted of high presumption against the Lord and his holy appointments,' were fined ,4 each, and put under bonds of ,20 each; but as they would not pay their fines, they were thrown into prison. On the 18th of August, 1666, according to the General Court papers of Massachusetts, the Assistant's Court decided that Gould and Osborne might be released from prison if they would pay the fine and costs, but if not they should be banished; they also continued the injunction against the assembling of Baptists for worship. March 3d, 1668, Gould was brought before the Court of Assistants in Boston, on an appeal from the County Court of Middlesex, when the previous judgment was confirmed and he was recommitted to prison. Then, on the 7th of the same month, concluding that fines and imprisonments did nothing to win him, and having a wholesome dread of repeating the Holmes's whipping experiment, the governor and council deciding to reduce him and his brethren 'from the error of their way, and their return to the Lord,...do judge meet to grant unto Thomas Gould, John Farnham, Thomas Osborne and company yet further an opportunity of a full and free debate of the grounds for their practice.' They also appointed Rev. Messrs. Allen, Cobbett, Higginson, Danforth, Mitchel and Shepard to meet with them on the 14th of April 'in the meeting- house at Boston at nine in the morning.' The Baptist and Pedobaptist brethren were then and there to publicly debate the following question: 'Whether it be justifiable by the word of God for these persons and their company to depart from the communion of these Churches, and to set up an assembly here in the way of Anabaptism, and whether such a practice is to be allowed by the government of this jurisdiction?' Now, who was flouting the 'red flag of the Anabaptistical fanaticism full in the face

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

of the Bay bull?' Gould was required to inform his Baptist brethren to appear, and the Baptist Church at Newport sent a delegation of three to help their brethren in the debate. A great concourse of people assembled and Mitchel took the laboring oar in behalf of the Pedobaptists, aided stoutly by others, but after two days' denunciation of the Baptists, they were not allowed to reply. The authorities, however, claimed the victory and berated them soundly as 'schismatics' but as this did not convert them, they returned at once to the old argument of fine and imprisonment, notwithstanding many remonstrances were sent from England by such men as Drs. Goodwin and Owen, and Messrs. Mascall, Nye and Caryl. Mitchel gave this sentence against them, and that ended the matter: 'The man that will do presumptuously, and will not hearken unto the priest that standeth to minister there before the Lord thy God, or unto the judge, even that man shall die, and thou shalt put away the evil from Israel.' That sentence had been pronounced in Rome a hundred times, without half the noise about it which these new-fledged inquisitors made.

It may be well to add a few words in regard to Gould's companions in this holy war. Thomas Osborne appears to have been to Gould what Silas was to Paul. As far back as November 18th, 1603, the Charlestown Church records say that he, 'being leavened with principles of Anabaptism, and his wife leavened with the principles, of Quakerism,' that Church admonished them. But the admonition appears to have done no good, for July 9th, 1665, they were up before the Church again, with other 'Anabaptists' on the charge that they had embodied themselves in a pretended Church way.' Osborne refused to have his babe baptized, and his wife said that she could not 'conscientiously attend on ordinances with us,' and they were excommunicated on the 30th 'for their impenitency;' and on May 15th, 1675, he was fined because he worshiped with the Baptist Society, now in Boston. Edward Drinker, another of these worthies, is first heard of at Charlestown, but was not a member of the Congregational Church there, yet the Roxbury Church records say that when the Baptist Church was formed, its brethren 'prophesied in turn, some one administered the Lord's Supper, and that they held a lecture at Drinker's house once a fortnight.' This good man was baptized into the fellowship of the new Church, but was disfranchised by the Court when he became a Baptist, and was imprisoned for worshiping with his Church, 1669. He suffered much for his conscience, and we find him writing to Clarke, at Newport, as late as November 30th, 1670, in respect to the trials of the Church, which at that time had left Charlestown, and met at Noddle's Island, now East Boston. In this letter he tells Clarke that Boston and its vicinity were 'troubled,' much as Herod was at the coming of the King to Bethlehem, and especially the old Church in Boston and their elders. Indeed, he adds, that many 'gentlemen and solid Christians are for our brother's (Turner) deliverance, but it cannot be had; a very great trouble to the town; and they had gotten six magistrates' hands for his deliverance, but could not get the governor's hand to it. Some say one end is that they may prevent others coming out of England; therefore, they would discourage them by dealing with us.' He then states that they had received several additions to the Church at Noddle's Island, that one of their elders, John Russell, lived at Woburn, where already five brethren met with him, and others in that town were embracing their opinions. William Turner and Robert Lambert were from Dartmouth, England, and were members of Mr. Stead's Church there, but became freemen in Massachusetts Bay, and were disfranchised for becoming Baptists, and when, on May 7th, 1668, the Court demanded whether Lambert would cease attending the Baptist worship, he answered that he was bound to continue in that way, and was 'ready to seal it with his blood;' he was sentenced to banishment, with Gould, Turner and Farnham. November 7th, 1669, inhabitants of Boston and Charlestown offered a petition

The American Baptists

to the Court in their favor, when ten persons were arrested for daring to sign this petition for mercy in their behalf. Most of them apologized for appearing to reflect upon the Court, but Sweetzer was fined, 10, and Atwater, 5. March 2d, 1669, the magistrates liberated Gould and Turner from prison, for three days, that they might 'apply themselves' to the 'orthodox' for the 'further convincement of their many irregularities in those practices for which they were sentenced.' But in order to enjoy this chance at 'convincement' they must give good security to the prison keepers for their return to confinement. They were imprisoned because they would not move away. In November, 1671, Sweetzer writes: 'Brother Turner has been near to death, but through mercy is revived, and so has our pastor Gould. The persecuting spirit begins to stir again.' He afterward became a captain, and in a fight with the Indians on the Connecticut River. May 19th 1676, being ill, he led his troops into battle and fell at their head. He was a devout Christian, and beloved greatly in Boston.

These and other Baptists were forbidden again and again to hold any meetings, to which measure the General Court was moved by an address from the ciders in convention, April 30th, 1668. They say: 'Touching the case of those that set up an assembly herein the way of Anabaptism,' that it belongs to the civil magistrates to restrain and suppress these open 'enormities in religion,' and for these reasons. 'The way of Anabaptism is a known and irreconcilable enemy to the orthodox and orderly Churches of Christ.' They make 'infant baptism a nullity, and so making us all to be unbaptized persons...by rejecting the true covenant of God (Gen. 17:7-14) whereby the Church is constituted and continued, and cutting off from the Churches half the members that belong to them. Hence, they solemnly conclude that 'an assembly in the way of Anabaptism would be among us as an antitemple, an enemy in this habitation of the Lord; an anti-New England in New England, manifestly tending to the disturbance and destruction of those Churches, which their nursing fathers ought not to allow...To set up such an assembly is to set up a free school of seduction, wherein false teachers may have open liberty to seduce the people into ways of error, which may not be suffered. At the same door may all sorts of abominations come in among us, should this be allowed, for a few persons may, without the consent of our ecclesiastical and civil order, set up a society in the name of a Church, themselves being their sole judges therein; then the vilest of men and deceivers may do the like, and we have no fence nor bar to keep them out. Moreover, if this assembly be tolerated, where shall we stop? Why may we not, by the same reason, tolerate an assembly of Familists, Socinians, Quakers, Papists? yea, 'tis known that all these have elsewhere crept in under the mask of Anabaptism.'

They say that 'if this one assembly be allowed, by the same reason may a second, third, etc.; schools of them will soon be swarming hither. If once that party become numerous and prevailing, this country is undone, the work of reformation being ruined, and the good ends and enjoyments which this people have adventured and expended so much for, utterly lost. The people of this place have a clear right to the way of religion and order that is here established, and to a freedom from all that may be disturbing and destructive thereunto.' [The Rowley Ch. Records]

After a long contest, the infant Church which had first been organized in Charlestown, and then removed to Noddle's Island, ventured to remove to Boston, and as by stealth, Philip Squire and Ellis Callender built a small meeting-house in 1679 'at the foot of an open lot running down from Salem Street to the mill-pond, and on the north side of what is now Stillman Street;' and Thomas Gould became the first pastor. This building was so small, plain and unpretending, that it did not disturb the 'Bay bull' until it was completed, and the Church entered it for worship, February 15th. Then that

Chapter 6 - The Boston Baptists

amiable animal awoke and played very violent antics, without the aid of Clarke's 'red flag.' In May, the General Court passed a law forbidding a house for public worship without the consent of the Court or a town-meeting, on forfeiture of the house and land. Under this post facto law the Baptists declined to occupy their own church edifice until the king, Charles II, required the authorities to allow liberty of conscience to all Protestants. Then the Baptists went back again, for which the Court arraigned them, and March 8th, 1680, ordered the marshal to nail up the doors, which he did, posting the following notice on the door:

'All persons are to take notice that, by order of the Court, the doors of this house are shut up, and that they are inhibited to hold any meetings therein, or to open the doors thereof, without license from authority, till the Court take further order, as they will answer the contrary to their peril. EDWARD RAWSON, Secretary.'

The Baptists quietly petitioned in May, asking the right to eat their own bread, and the Court gave them this stone, prohibiting them, 'as a society by themselves, or joined with others, to meet in that public place they have built, or any public place except such as are allowed by lawful authority.' The Baptists did not break open the door, but held their public Sunday services on the first Sabbath in the yard, and then prepared a shed for that on the second Sabbath. But when they came together they found the doors open! Never stopping to ask whether the marshal had opened them or the angel which threw back the iron gate to Peter, they went in boldly and said: 'The Court had not done it legally, and that we were denied a copy of the constable's order and marshal's warrant, we concluded to go into our house, it being our own, having a civil right to it.' Since that day there has always been a 'great door and effectual' opened to Boston Baptists.

The American Baptists

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

As a wrathful tempest scatters seed over a continent, so persecution has always forced Baptists where their wisdom had not led them. The first American Baptist that we hear of, out of Rhode Island and Massachusetts, is in a letter which Humphrey Churchwood, a resident of what is now Kittery, MAINE, addressed January 3d, 1682, to the Baptist Church in Boston, of which he was a member. He states that there were at Kittery 'a competent number of well-established people, whose heart the Lord had opened, who desired to follow Christ and to partake of all his holy ordinances.' They asked, therefore, that a Baptist Church should be established there, with William Screven as pastor, who went to Boston and was ordained. Before he returned to Kittery, Churchwood and others of the little band were summoned before the magistrates and threatened with fines if they continued to hold meetings. A Church was organized, however, September 25th, 1682. So bitterly did the Standing Order oppose this Baptist movement, that Mr. Screven and his associates resolved to seek an asylum elsewhere, and a promise to this effect was given to the magistrates. It is supposed that they left Kittery not long after the organization of the Church, but it is certain from the province records, that this 'Baptist Company' were at Kittery as late as October 9th, 1683; for under that date in the records of a Court occurs an entry from which it appears that Mr. Screven was brought before the Court for 'not departing this province according to a former confession of Court and his own choice.'

At the Court held at Wells, May 27th, 1684, this action was taken: 'An order to be sent for William Screven to appear before ye General Assembly in June next.' As no further record in reference to Mr. Screven appears, it is probable that he and his company were on their way to their new home in South Carolina before the General Assembly met. They settled on the Cooper River, not far from the present city of Charleston. Some of the early colonists of South Carolina were Baptists from the west of England, and it is very likely that these two bands from New and Old England formed a new Church, as it is certain that, in 1685, both parties became one Church on the west bank of the Cooper River, which was removed to Charleston by the year 1693, and which was the first Baptist Church in the South. In 1699 this congregation became strong enough to erect a brick meetinghouse and a parsonage on Church Street, upon a lot of ground which had been given to the body. It is not known whether the church at Kittery was dissolved or whether it was transferred to South Carolina. Certainly no church organization intractable there after the departure of Mr. Screven and his company.

Nearly a century passed before we find another Baptist church within the limits of what is now the State of Maine. Then, as the result of the labors of Rev. Hezekiah Smith, of Haverhill, Mass., a Baptist church was organized in Berwick and another in Gorham. Four years later, in Sanford, still another church was organized. In April, 1776, William Hooper was ordained pastor of the church in Berwick. This was the first ordination of a Baptist minister in the District of Maine. In Wells, in 1780, a fourth church was organized, of which Nathaniel Lord was ordained pastor. All of these churches were in the south-western part of Maine and became connected with the New Hampshire Baptist Association.

In 1782 Rev. Job Macomber, of Middleboro, Mass., visited the District of Maine. Hearing of a religious interest in Lincoln County, he made his way thither in December and engaged in the work. In January, 1783, he wrote a letter to Rev. Isaac Backus of Middleboro, in which he gave an account

The American Baptists

of his labors. This letter Mr. Backus read to Mr. Isaac Case, who was so impressed with the need of more laborers in that destitute field, that in the autumn of 1783, after having been ordained, he made his way into the District of Maine, he preached awhile in the vicinity of Brunswick and then visited Thomaston, where, May 27, 1784, as a result of his labors, there was organized a church, of which he became pastor. Three days earlier a church was organized in Bowdoinham, and Rev. Job Macomber was soon after called to the pastorate. January 19, 1785, a church was organized in Harpswell, and Mr. James Potter, who had labored in that place with Rev. Isaac Case, was ordained as its pastor. May 24, 1787, these three pastors, with delegates from their churches, organized the Bowdoinham Association in the house of Mr. Macomber, at Bowdoinham. Mr. Case was made moderator of the association, and Mr. Potter preached the first sermon. In 1789 three more churches and one ordained minister had been added to the association. In 1790 the number of Baptist churches in the District of Maine was 11, with about 500 members. In 1797, ten years after its organization, Bowdoinham Association comprised 26 churches, 17 ordained ministers and 1,088 members. The Lincoln Association, embracing 18 churches, chiefly east of the Kennebec River, was organized in 1805.

It was during this year that Rev. Daniel Merrill, pastor of the Congregationalist church in Sedgwick, became a Baptist, together with a large number of his former parishioners. He was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1789, and his church was one of the largest in the District of Maine, he thought he would write a book against the Baptists, but his study of the Scriptures convinced him that they were right and that he was wrong. He at length called the members of his church together for consultation, and they asked him to give them the results of his investigations. He preached seven sermons on baptism, and not long after a Baptist church was organized of which Mr. Merrill became pastor. His sermons on baptism were published and in successive editions were extensively circulated. Mr. Merrill performed valuable missionary service also, and in various ways greatly advanced the Baptist cause in Maine.

The Cumberland Association was organized in 1811, York Association in 1819, and the Eastern Maine Association in 1819. In 1826 there were in Maine 199 churches, 126 ordained ministers, and 12,120 members. That year the Penobscot Association was organized. Waldo and Oxford followed in 1829; Kennebec in 1830; Hancock in 1835; Washington in 1836; Piscataquis in 1839; Saco River in 1842; and Damariscotta in 1843. No new associations have been formed since that time. There are now in Maine 247 Baptist churches, 144 ordained ministers, and 19,871 members.

The Baptists of Maine have at Waterville a flourishing college – Colby University, with an endowment of over \$550,000, and also three endowed preparatory schools, namely, Gubern Classical Institute, at Waterville; Hebron Academy, at Hebron, and Ricker Classical Institute, at Moulton. The Maine Baptist Missionary Convention, the Maine Baptist Education Society, and the Maine Baptist Charitable Society are strong and efficient organizations.

It now fell to the lot of Rhode Island to send forth new Baptist influence into the then distant colony of PENNSYLVANIA. In 1684, three years after William Penn obtained his charter from Charles II, Thomas Dungan, an aged and zealous Baptist minister, removed from Rhode Island to Cold Spring, Bucks County, Pa., on the Delaware River, and gathered a Church there, which maintained a feeble life until 1702. Thomas Dungan came from Ireland to Newport, in consequence of the persecution of the Baptists there under Charles II, and appears to have been a most lovable man, whom Keach characterizes as 'an ancient disciple and teacher amongst the Baptists.' He

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

attracted a number of influential families around him, and it is believed that the father of the noted Dr. Benjamin Rush, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, was a member of his Church at Cold Spring. William Penn, it is supposed, caught his liberal views from Algernon Sidney; he had suffered much for Christ's sake, and had adopted quite broad views of religious liberty; for at the very inception of legislation in Pennsylvania, the Assembly had passed the 'Great Law,' the first section of which provides that in that jurisdiction no person shall

'At any time be compelled to frequent or maintain any religious worship, place or ministry whatever, contrary to his or her mind, but shall freely and fully enjoy his or her Christian liberty in that respect, without any interruption or reflection; and, if any person shall abuse or deride any other for his or her different persuasion and practice, in matter of religion, such shall be looked upon as a disturber of the peace, and be punished accordingly.' [Janney's *Life of Penn*, p. 211]

This provision scarcely matched, however, the radical position of Rhode Island, which provided for the absolute non-interference of government in religion. Hepworth Dixon tells us that the first Pennsylvania Legislature, at Chester, 1682, decided That 'every Christian man of twenty-one years of age, unstained by crime, should be eligible to elect or be elected a member of the Colonial Parliament.' Here, to begin, was a religious test of office and even of the popular franchise, for no one but Christians could either vote for public officers or serve in the Legislature. The laws agreed upon in England by Penn, and the freemen who came with him, restricted toleration to 'all persons who confess and acknowledge the one Almighty and Eternal God to be the Creator, Upholder and 'Ruler of the world.' The Church at Cold Spring, located between Bristol and Trenton, was protected under these laws, but it seems to have died with Mr. Dungan in 1688, or rather to have lived at a dying rate, for in 1702 it disbanded, and Morgan Edwards, writing in 1770, says That nothing was left there in his day but a grave- yard bearing the names of the Dungans, Gardners, Woods, Doyls and others, who were members of this Church.

In 1687 a company of Welsh and Irish Baptists crossed the Atlantic and settled at Lower Dublin, Pa., otherwise called Pemmepeka, Pennepek or Pennypack, a word of the Delaware Indians which signifies, according to Heckewelder, a 'pond, lake or bay; water not having a current.'" This company organized a Baptist Church, built a meeting-house near the water bearing this name, and sent forth its influence all through Pennsylvania, also into New Jersey and New York, Delaware and Maryland, as its pastors preached in these colonies. Its records were kept with care from the first, and are still preserved in a large folio. We are indebted to Hon. Horatio Gates Jones for the following and many other interesting tenets. The records state:

'By the good providence of God, there came certain persons out of Radnorshire, in Wales, over into tills Province of Pennsylvania, and settled in the township of Dublin, in the County of Philadelphia, namely, John Eaton, George Eaton and Jane, his wife, Samuel Jones and Sarah Eaton, who had all been baptized upon confession of faith, and received into the communion of the Church of Christ meeting in the parishes of Llandewi and Nantmel, in Radnorshire, Henry Gregory being chief pastor. Also John Baker, who had been baptized, and a member of a congregation of baptized believers in Kilkenny, in Ireland, Christopher Blackwell pastor, was, by the providence of God, settled in the township aforesaid. In the year 1687 there came one Samuel Vans out of England, and settled near the aforesaid township and went under the denomination of a Baptist, and was so taken to be.' These, with Sarah Eaton, 'Joseph Ashton and Jane, his wife, William Fisher, John Watts' and Rev. Elias Keach, formed the Church. Samuel Vans was chosen

The American Baptists

deacon. and was 'with laying on of hands ordained 'by Elias Keach, who 'was accepted and received for our pastor, and we sat down in communion at the Lord's table.'

Ashton and his wife, with Fisher and Watts, had been baptized by Keach at Pennepek, November, 1687, and 'in the month of January, 1687-88 (O. S.), the Church was organized, 198 years ago, and remains to this day.' Hereby hangs a very interesting story concerning Keach, showing who and what he was.

ELIAS KEACH came to this country in 1686, a year before this Church was formed. He was the son of Benjamin Keach, of noble memory, for endurance of the pillory, and for the authorship of a key to Scripture metaphors and an exposition of all the parables. When Elias arrived in Pennsylvania, he was a wild scamp of nineteen, and for sport dressed like a clergyman. His name and appearance soon obtained invitations for him to preach, as a young divine from London. A crowd of people came to hear him, and concluding to brave the thing out he began to preach, but suddenly stopped short in his sermon. There was a stronger muttering than he had counted on in the heart which had caught its life from its honored father and mother, despite the black coat and white bands under which it beat. He was alarmed at his own boldness, stopped short, and the little flock at Lower Dublin thought him seized with sudden illness. When asked for the cause of his fear he burst into tears, confessed his imposture and threw himself upon the mercy of God for the pardon of all his sins. Immediately he made for Cold Spring to ask the counsel of Thomas Dungan, who took him lovingly by the hand, led him to Christ, and when they were both satisfied of his thorough conversion he baptized him; and his Church sent the young evangelist forth to preach Jesus and the resurrection. Here we see how our loving God had brought a congregation of holy influences together from Ireland and Wales, Rhode Island and England, apparently for the purpose of forming the ministry of the first great pastor in our key-stone State. Keach made his way back to Pennepek, where he began to preach with great power. The four already named were baptized as the first-fruits of his ministry, then he organized the Church and threw himself into his Gospel work with consuming zeal. He traveled at large, preaching at Trenton, Philadelphia, Middletown, Cohansey, Salem and many other places, and baptized his converts into the fellowship of the Church at Pennepek, so that all the Baptists of New Jersey and Pennsylvania were connected with that body, except the little band at Cold Spring.

Morgan Edwards tells us that twice a year, May and October, they held 'General Meetings' for preaching and the Lord's Supper, at Salem in the spring and at Dublin or Burlington in the autumn, for the accommodation of distant members and the spread of the Gospel, until separate Churches were formed in several places. When Mr. Keach was away, the Church held meetings at Pennepek, and each brother exercised what gifts he possessed, the leading speakers generally being Samuel Jones and John Watts. Keach married Mary, the daughter of Chief-Justice Moore, of Pennsylvania, and the Church prospered until 1689, when they must needs fall into a pious jangle about 'laying on of hands in the reception of members after baptism, predestination and other matters.' Soon after, Keach brought his pastoral work to a close in 1689, and returned to London, where he organized a Church in Ayles Street, Goodman's Fields, preached to great crowds of people, and in nine months baptized 130 into its fellowship. He published several works, amongst them one on the 'Grace of Patience' and died in 1701, at the age of thirty-four. The Pennepek Church, after some contentions, built its first meeting-house in 1707, on ground presented by Rev. Samuel Jones, who became one of its early pastors; for many years it was the center of denominational operations west of the

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

Connecticut River, and from its labors sprang the Philadelphia Association, in 1707. It was natural that the several Baptist companies formed in different communities by this Church should soon take steps for the organization of new Churches in their several localities, and this was first done in New Jersey, in Middletown in 1688, Piscataqua in 1689, and Cohansey in 1690.

Next to Rhode Island, NEW JERSEY had peculiar attractions for Baptists. It had been ceded to Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, by the Duke of York, in 1664, and in honor of Sir George, who had held the Isle of Jersey as a Royalist Governor of Charles II, it was called New Jersey.

In the 'Grants and Concessions of New Jersey,' made by Berkeley and Carteret, published in 1665, religious freedom was guaranteed thus: >No person at any time shall be any ways molested, punished, disquieted or called in question for any difference in opinion or practice in matters of religious concernments.' [Leaming and Spicer, p. 14, 1664-1702] The religious freedom of Rhode Island seemed to be as broad as possible, yet, because that colony required all its citizens to bear arms, some Quakers were unwilling to become freemen there, but under these grants they went to New Jersey and became citizens. From the first, therefore, New Jersey was pre-eminent for its religious liberty, so that Baptists, Quakers and Scotch Covenanters became the permanent inhabitants of the new colony. Many of them came from Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island and New York, for the two lords' proprietors dispatched messengers to all the colonies proclaiming the liberal terms of the grants.

Richard Stout, with five others, had settled in Middletown as early as 1648, and Obadiah Holmes, the confessor at Boston, had become one of the patentees of Monmouth County. It is certain that some of the Middletown settlers emigrated from Rhode Island and Long Island as early as 1665. Amongst the original patentees, James Ashton, John Bowne, Richard Stout, Jonathan Holmes, James Grover and others were Baptists. There is some evidence That John Bowne was an unordained preacher, the first preacher to the new colony. Obadiah Holmes was one of the patentees of the Monmouth tract, 1665, owning house lot No. 20 and hill lot No. 6. He never lived in East Jersey, but his son Jonathan did from 1667-80. Obadiah Jr., was on Staten Island in 1689, but in 1690 he resided in Salem County, West Jersey. Jonathan was a member of the Assembly of East Jersey in 1668, and lived in Middletown for about ten years. About 1680 he returned to Rhode Island. His will, made in 1705, is on record at Newport, R.I., under date of November 5th, 1713, and is also recorded at Newton, N.J. He died in 1715. His sons, Obadiah and Jonathan, grandsons of the Boston sufferer, were members of the Middletown Baptist Church, and their descendants are still numerous in Monmouth County. It is very likely that these early Baptists had first taken refuge at Gravesend, Long Island, N.Y. Public worship was early observed in Middletown, and some of them had connected themselves with the Pennepek Church, because, after consultation with that body, they 'settled themselves into a Church state' in 1688. About 1690 Elias Keach lived and preached amongst them for nearly a year. This interest prospered until the close of the century, when they fell into a quarrel, divided into two factions, which mutually excluded each other and silenced their pastors, John Bray and John Okison. After a good round fight about doctrine, as set forth in their Confession and Covenant, they called a council of Churches May 25th, 1711, which advised them to 'continue the silence imposed on the two brethren the preceding year,' 'to sign a covenant relative to their future conduct,' and 'to bury their proceedings in oblivion and erase the record of them.' Twenty-six would not do this, but forty-two signed the covenant, and, as four leaves are torn out of

The American Baptists

the Church book, we take it that they went into the 'oblivion' of fire. What became of the twenty-six nobody seemed to care enough to tell us; it may be lovingly hoped that, quarrelsome as they were, they escaped the fate of the four leaves, both in this world and in that which is to come.

A most interesting Church was organized in 1689 at Piscataqua. This settlement was named after a settlement in New Hampshire (now Dover), which at that time was in the Province of Maine. We have seen that Hanserd Knollys preached there in 1638-41, and had his controversy with Larkham respecting receiving all into the Church (Congregational), and the baptizing of any infants offered. Although Knollys was not a Baptist at that time, his discussions on these subjects proved to be the seed which yielded fruit after many years. In 1648, ten years after he began his ministry at Dover, under date of October 18th, the authorities of the day were informed that the profession of 'Anabaptistry' there by Edward Starbuck had excited much trouble, and they appointed Thomas Wiggin and George Smith to try his case. Starbuck was one of the assistants in the Congregational Church there, possibly the same people to whom Knollys had preached; but the results of the trial, if he had one, are not given. The Colonial records of Massachusetts make the authorities say(iii, p. 173):

'We have heard heretofore of divers Anabaptists risen up in your jurisdiction and connived at. Being but few, we well hoped that it might have pleased God, by the endeavors of yourselves and the faithful elders with you, to have reduced such erring men again into the right way. But now, to our great grief, we are credibly informed that your patient bearing with such men hath produced another effect, namely, the multiplying and increasing of the same errors, and we fear may be of other errors also if timely care be not taken to suppress the same. Particularly we understand that within these few weeks there have been at Seckonk thirteen or fourteen persons rebaptized (a swift progress in one town), yet we hear not if any effectual restriction is intended thereabouts.'

When Knollys left, in 1641, a number of those who sympathized with his Baptist tendencies left with him, and when he returned to London they settled on Long Island, and remained there until that territory fell under the power of English Episcopacy, when they removed to the vicinity of New Brunswick, N.J. There they formed the settlement of Piscataqua (afterward Piscataway, near Stelton) and organized a Baptist Church, which has exerted a powerful influence down to this time, being now under the pastoral care of John Wesley Sarles, D.D. The constituent members of this Church form an interesting study. It is certain that amongst the original patentees, in 1666, Hugh Dunn and John Martin were Baptists, and amongst their associates admitted in 1668 the Drakes, Dunhams, Smalleys, Bonhams, Fitz Randolphs, Mannings, Runyons, Stelles and others were of the same faith. About the time of organizing the Baptist Church at 'New Piscataqua,' as they called the place, the township confined about 80 families, embodying a population of about 400 persons. From the earliest information this settlement was popularly known as the 'Anabaptist Town,' and from 1675 downward the names of members of the Baptist Church are found amongst the law-makers and other public officials, both in the town and the colony, showing that they were prominent and influential citizens. Their connection with Pennepek was slight, yet some of the families of the old Church may have been in the new. Amongst them were John Drake, Hugh Dunn and Edmund Dunham, unordained ministers, who had labored for several years in that region as itinerants. About six years before the formation of the Church – 1685-90 – a company of Irish Baptists, members of a Church in Tipperary, had landed at Perth Amboy and made a settlement at Cohansey, some of whom went farther into the interior. It is quite probable that Dunn and Dunham – were both of that company,

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

and quite as likely that Mr. Drake was from Dover, N.H., where it is believed that his father had settled many years before from Devonshire, England. Thomas Killingsworth also was present at the organization of this Church, but John Drake, whose family claims kindred with Sir Francis Drake, the great navigator, was ordained its pastor at its constitution, and served it in that capacity for about fifty years.

Another Church was established at COHANSEY. The records of this Church for the first hundred years of its existence were burned, but, according to Asplund's Register, the Church was organized in 1691. Keach had baptized three persons there in 1688, and the Church was served for many years by Thomas Killingsworth, who was also a judge on the bench. He was an ordained minister from Norfolk, England, of much literary ability, eminent for his gravity and sound judgment, and so was deemed fit to serve as Judge of the County Court of Salem. About 1687 a company had come from John Myles's Church, at Swansea, near Providence, which for twenty-three years kept themselves as a separate Church, on the questions of laying on of hands, singing of psalms and predestination, until, with Timothy Brooks, their pastor they united with their brethren at Cohansey.

It was meet that before this remarkable century closed the nucleus of Baptist principles should be formed in the great Quaker city of Philadelphia, and this was done in 1696. John Fanner and his wife, from Knolly's Church in London, landed there in that year, and were joined in 1697 by John Todd and Rebecca Woosencroft, from the Church at Leamington, England. A little congregation was held in Philadelphia by the preaching of Keach and Killingsworth and slowly increased. The meetings were held irregularly in a store-house on what was known as the 'Barbadoes Lot,' at the corner of what are now called Second and Chestnut Streets, and formed a sort of out-station to Pennepek. In 1697 John Watts baptized four persons, who, with five others, amongst them John Hohne, formed a Church on the second Sabbath in December, 1698. They continued to meet in the store-house till 1707, when they were compelled to leave under protest, and then they worshiped, according to Edwards, at a place 'near the draw-bridge, known by the name of Anthony Morris's New House.' They were not entirely independent of Pennepek till 1723, when they had a dispute with the Church there about certain legacies, in which the old Church wanted to share; May 15th, 1746, this contest resulted in the formation of an entirely independent Church of fifty-six members in Philadelphia.

This rapid review of the Baptist sentiment which had shaped into organization in these colonies at the close of the seventeenth century, together with a few small bodies in Rhode Island, besides the Churches at Providence and Newport, Swansea, South Carolina and New Jersey, give us the results of more than half a century's struggle for a foothold in the New World. The new century, however, opened with the emigration of sixteen Baptists, from the counties of Pembroke and Carmarthen, Wales, under the leadership of Rev. Thomas Griffith, whose coming introduced a new era in Pennsylvania and the region round about. They had organized themselves into what Morgan Edwards calls 'a Church emigrant and sailant' at Milford, June, 1701, and landed in Philadelphia in September following. They repaired immediately to the vicinity of Pennepek and settled there for a time. They insisted on the rite of laying on of hands as a matter of vital importance, and fell into sharp contention on the subject, both amongst themselves and with the Pennepek Church. In 1703 the greater part of them purchased lands containing about 30,000 acres from William Penn, in

The American Baptists

Newcastle County, Delaware. This they named the Welsh Tract and removed thither. There they prospered greatly from year to year, adding to their numbers both by emigration and conversion. But they say:

'We could not be in fellowship (at the Lord's table) with our brethren of Pennepek and Philadelphia, because they did not hold to the laying on of hands; true, some of them believed in the ordinance, but neither preached it up nor practiced it, and when we moved to Welsh Tract, and left twenty-two of our members at Pennepek, and took some of theirs with us, the difficulty increased.'

For about seventy years their ministers were Welshmen, some of them of eminence, and six Churches in Pennsylvania and Delaware trace their lineage to this Church. As early as 1736 it dismissed forty-eight members to emigrate to South Carolina, where they made a settlement on the Peedee River, and organized the Welsh Neck Church there, which during the next century became the center from which thirty-eight Baptist Churches sprang, in the immediate vicinity.

Humanly speaking, we can distinctly trace the causes of our denominational growth from the beginning of the century to the opening of the Revolutionary War. In the Churches west of the Connecticut there was an active missionary spirit. At first the New England Baptists partook somewhat of the conservatism of their Congregational brethren, but in the Churches planted chiefly by the Welsh in New Jersey and Pennsylvania, South Carolina and Virginia, the missionary spirit was vigorous and aggressive. As from a central fortress they sent out their little bands; here a missionary and there a handful of colonists, who penetrated farther into the wilderness, and extended the frontiers of the denomination. Two men are deservedly eminent in thus diffusing our principles, namely, Abel Morgan and Hezekiah Smith. These are fair types of the Baptist ministry of their day, and their work is largely representative of the labors of many others.

ABEL MORGAN was born at Welsh Tract, April 18th, 1713. To prevent confusion of names here, it may be well to state, that the first Welsh minister of this name was born in Wales in 1673, came to America and became pastor of the Pennepek Church in 1711, and died therein 1722. Enoch Morgan was his brother, born in Wales, 1676; he also came to tills country and became pastor of the Church at Welsh Tract, where he died in 1740. The Abel Morgan, therefore, of whom we now speak was Enoch Morgan's son, named after his uncle Abel, pastor at Pennepek. The subject of this sketch was one of the leading minds of his day. He was trained by Rev. Thomas Evans, at the Pencader Academy, and was familiar with the languages. He was ordained in the Welsh Tract Church, 1734, and became pastor of the Middletown Baptist Church, New Jersey, in 1739, which he served until his death, in 1785. He bequeathed his library to this Church for the use of his successors, and many notes in his hand are written upon the margins of the volumes in Welsh and Latin. Rev. Samuel Finley, who became President of Princeton College, being disturbed by the growth of the Baptists, challenged him to a discussion. Finley wrote his *Charitable Plea for the Speechless*, and Morgan replied in his 'Anti-Paedo Rantism; or, Mr. Samuel Finley's Charitable Plea for the Speechless examined and refuted, the Baptism of Believers maintained, and the mode of it by Immersion vindicated.' This treatise was printed at Philadelphia by Benjamin Franklin, 1747. He had another controversy with Rev. Samuel Harker, a Presbyterian, of Kingswood. His work exhibits careful and thorough scholarship, and the appreciation of his brethren is shown by the fact that he was the first to receive the honorary degree of M.A. from Brown University. In his disputation with Finley quite as much Welsh fire was kindled on the one side as good old Scotch obstinacy on the

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

other; and Morgan did great service in setting forth the scriptural and logical consistency of the Baptist position. In 1772 Abel Morgan served as moderator of the Philadelphia Association, James Manning being clerk. Morgan had been clerk in 1762, and in 1774 it was on his motion that the Association adopted the use of the Circular Letter.

But his great life-work is found in preaching the Gospel. During his pastorate of forty years, in a sparse population, his Church received fully 300 persons into its fellowship upon their confession of Christ. He held regular services in two Middletown meeting-houses, several miles apart, besides preaching often at Freehold, Upper Freehold, and Long Brand, making the whole of Monmouth County his parish. Besides this he made extensive circuits into Pennsylvania and Delaware, preaching the word, as a burning and shining light.

Rev. HEZEKIAH SMITH is another name to be had in everlasting remembrance. He was born on Long Island on the 21st of April, 1737, was baptized at the age of nineteen by Rev. John Gano, and in 1762 was graduated from the College of New Jersey, at Princeton. Immediately on graduating he set out on a horseback journey through the South, preaching the Gospel for fifteen months as he traveled from place to place. On the 20th of September, 1763, he was publicly ordained at Charleston, S.C., for the work of the Christian ministry. In the spring of 1764, having accompanied Manning to Rhode Island, he set out on a second missionary journey, this time to the East through Massachusetts, he arrived at Haverhill, and for a time preached in a Congregational Church in the West Parish, then without a pastor. His piety and eloquence attracted crowds of hearers, many of whom were converted, and in due time he was waited upon by a committee of the Church with a view to permanent settlement. Under these circumstances he was obliged to tell them frankly that he was a Baptist, which information not only abruptly closed his labors in that parish, but led to his persecution on the part of the Standing Order. His friends, however, including some leading citizens, pressed him to form a Baptist Church in the center of the town. After consulting with his spiritual advisers in Rhode Island, New York, and New Jersey, he finally consented, and the Church was constituted May 9th, 1765, and he remained its pastor for forty years. The memoirs of Dr. Smith, based on his journals, letters and addresses, have been prepared by Dr. Guild and recently published. They furnish a reliable history of the times in which he lived, and afford a charming insight into his daily life. Further reference will be made to him as a prominent chaplain in the army of the Revolution.

In point of self-denying and restless labor, these two men were fair representatives of scores of Baptist ministers, North and South, who served one or two Churches near their homes, but who traveled, generally on horseback, through woods and glades, mountains and plains, in search of lost men. They preached where they could, in house or barn, in forests or streets, gathering the scattered few in remote districts, leading them to Jesus, baptizing and organizing them into Churches. Generally their fame drew the people together throughout an extensive circle, in many instances persons coming from five and twenty to sixty miles to hear them, many of them never having heard any tiling that approached the warm and simple unfolding of the riches of Christ. Dwellers in log cabins, wooded mountains, the dense wilderness and the broad vales, were gathered into living Churches which still abide as monuments of grace.

The formation of Associations was another element which contributed to Baptist success. At first, in many places, these began in simple annual meetings for religious exercises simply, but they

The American Baptists

naturally drifted into organic bodies including other objects as well. The Baptists were very jealous of them, fearing that they might trench on the independency of the Churches and come in time to exercise authority after the order of presbyteries, instead of confining themselves to merely fraternal aims. This has always been the tendency in the voluntary bodies of Christian history, and for this reason Associations will bear close watching at all times, as they are simply human in their origin. The original safeguard against this tendency was found in our colonial times in the fact that, except as the Churches met in Association for the purpose of helping each other to resist the oppressions of the State, they transacted no business. The cluster of Churches grouped around Philadelphia were strongly bound together by common interests, particularly as Baptist mission work extended in that part of our land. As early as 1688 general quarterly meetings had been held at the different Churches for mutual encouragement, but there was no representation of these Churches by delegates. In 1707 the Pennepek, Middletown, Piscataqua, Cohansey and Welsh Tract Churches appointed representatives and formed the Philadelphia Association. At that time the Philadelphia congregation was a branch of the Church at Pennepek (Lower Dublin); hence its name does not appear in the list of the Churches; still the name of the largest town was chosen. The essential principles controlling this body were these, with some exception, that regulated the English Churches which met in London, September, 1689. The London body adopted thirty-two Articles as a Confession of Faith. An Appendix was also issued, but not as a part of the Articles, in which these words are used, partly in explanation of the position held by the English Churches on the subject of communion: 'Divers of us who have agreed in this Confession cannot hold Church communion with any other than baptized believers, and Churches constituted of such; yet some others of us have a greater liberty and freedom in our spirits that way; and therefore we have purposely omitted the mention of things of that nature, that we might concur in giving this evidence of our agreement, both among ourselves and with other good Christians.' Dr. Rippon gave the Minutes and Articles of the Assembly in his Register closing with 1793, but omits the Appendix, as also does Crosby, clearly not considering this a part of the Articles nor of equal authority with them, while some of the members were open communists. THE PHILADELPHIA CONFESSIO consists of thirty-four Articles, the twenty-third being in favor of singing in public worship, and the thirty-first in favor of the laying on of hands after baptism. There were some other changes, but slight, and the publication of the Confession was accompanied by a forceful Dissertation on Church Discipline. The Philadelphia Association adopted this September 25th, 1742, and it will be of interest to say that the first edition was printed by Benjamin Franklin in 1743. The foregoing extract taken from the London Appendix is not found in the Philadelphia document, as all the Churches which adopted it there were strict communion in their practice; hence they never accepted the London Appendix, but use these words on the Communion question in the XXXI, one of the new Articles: 'We believe that laying on of hands, with prayer, upon baptized believers as such, is an ordinance of Christ and ought to be submitted unto by all such persons that are admitted to partake of the Lord's Supper.' This Confession became the basis on which almost all the Associations of this country were established, until what is called the New Hampshire Confession was drawn up by the late Dr. John Newton Brown.

The value of this Association to the encouragement and maintenance of new Churches is indicated by Morgan Edwards, who says, in 1770, that from the five Churches which constituted it, it had 'so increased since as to contain thirty-four Churches, exclusive of those which have been detached to form another Association.' Its Confession, as a whole, takes the doctrinal ground

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

denominated Moderate Calvinism, as laid down by Andrew Fuller, carefully avoiding all extremes, especially that known as Hyper- Calvinism. The many subdivisions into which these were divided who practiced the immersion of believers, but created tests of fellowship not known to the Churches of the New Testament, found scant comfort in the unmistakable language of this Confession. The scriptural character of its positions, with the freedom of thought which it left to the Churches on matters not comprised in its Articles, armed it with a powerful moral influence against heterodoxy, and yet left that free scope for the exercise of conscience without which Baptists cannot exist. A like service was rendered by its Treatise of Discipline, which aided the Churches in administering their practices, with such variations as their circumstances of time and place dictated; and, without that crippling effect which Romanism has sometimes assumed in Baptist Churches under the monstrous guise of Baptist usage, which, in other words, simply meant Baptist tradition.

The establishment of this Association formed a great epoch in Baptist history, because it fostered those educational and philanthropic causes which needed the co-operation of the sisterhood of Churches, and could not be sustained by purely separate congregations. When Isaac Eaton had it upon his heart to raise an academy in connection with his Church at Hopewell, N.J., the Philadelphia Association passed the following resolution, October 5th, 1756: Concluded to raise a sum of money toward the encouragement of a Latin Grammar School, for the promotion of learning amongst us, under the care of Rev. Isaac Eaton, and the inspection of our brethren, Abel Morgan, Isaac Stelle, Abel Griffith and Peter P. Van Horn.' It is said that the first student at this academy was James Manning, afterward President of Brown University. Samuel Jones and Hezekiah Smith were also amongst the early students, as well as Samuel Stillman, John Gano, Charles Thompson, Judge Howell, Benjamin Stelle, and many others of note, both in Church and State. So many of the Churches were supplied with able pastors from this seminary that the Baptists were moved to establish a college, and the result of their effort was the founding of that noted seat of learning now known as Brown University. In a sense, the Philadelphia, aided by the Charleston and Warren Associations, gave birth to all the Baptist institutions of learning in America by nursing the enterprise at Hopewell. The encouragement and assistance which persecuted Baptists received in other States from these Associations in relation to religious freedom was very great. We have seen that the Philadelphia Association was formed in 1707; then followed the Charleston, S.C., in 1751; the Kehukee, N.C., in 1765 ; and the Warren, R.I., in 1767. When the Warren Association was formed, there were, according to Backus, fifty-five Baptist Churches in New England, but according to Morgan Edwards there were seventy. Some of them observed the Sabbath on the seventh day, some were frankly Arminian in doctrine, and a majority of them maintained the imposition of hands upon the immersed as a divine ordinance.

As early as 1729 the General or Arminian Baptists formed an Association at Newport, R.I., and in 1730 thirteen Churches of that colony and Connecticut held yearly meetings upon the Six Principles. The associational idea was thus early at work, but the Warren Association did not grow out of this previous organization. Nor was it related to the quarterly and yearly meetings, as was the Philadelphia body, the Churches which formed it each working on their own lines for a long time. The idea of an association between the Calvinistic Baptist Churches of New England probably originated with Dr. Manning. The growth of our Churches in Massachusetts and the founding of Brown University were so interblended in the formation of the Warren Association that it will be

The American Baptists

necessary to look at both in connection with that important movement.

As far back as 1656 the magistrates of Connecticut asked those of MASSACHUSETTS some questions concerning infant baptism. June 4th, 1657, a meeting of ministers was held in Boston, who adopted what is known as the Half-way Covenant, which provided 'that all persons of sober life and correct sentiments, without being examined as to a change of heart, might profess religion or become members of the Church, and have their children baptized, though they did not come to the Lord's table.' A synod of all the ministers in Massachusetts ratified this provision in the same year. It will be readily seen that such an unscriptural step opened the doors of the Congregational Churches to an immense influx of unconverted people and to a corresponding worldliness of life. The Baptists were obliged, almost single-handed, to stem this public sentiment, but they bravely stood firm for Gospel principles. The Churches increased in number and influence continually, and in a large measure they counteracted these dangerous influences upon the public mind. The Baptist Church in Boston built a new church edifice in 1680, and in 1683 John Emblem from England became their pastor; after serving them for fifteen years, he died in 1699, when Ellis Callender succeeded him. He was followed by Elisha Callender and Jeremiah Condy, until Samuel Stillman took charge in 1765. By the time that the second Callender became pastor, the spirituality of the Baptists had so commended them to the respect of the better portion of the community that the three principal clergymen in Boston, Increase Mather, Cotton Mather and John Webb, not only consented to be present at his ordination, but Mr. Mather most cheerfully preached the ordination sermon, May 21st, 1718. And what was as noble as it was remarkable, he had the manliness to select as his subject, 'Good Men United!' In the face of the whole colony he condemned 'the wretched notion of wholesale severities' These he called 'cruel wrath,' and said roundly: 'New England also has, in some former times, done something of this aspect, which would not now be so well approved of, in which, if the brethren in whose house we are now convened met with any thing too unbrotherly, they now with satisfaction hear us expressing our dislike of every thing that has looked like persecution in the days that have passed over us.' [Winsor's *Memorial Hist. of Boston*, iii, p. 422]

In 1729 the bitterness of the General Court of Massachusetts was so far relaxed against Baptists as to exempt them from paying the parish ministerial taxes if they alleged a scruple of conscience in the matter. [Winsor, ii, p. 227] This, however, by no means ended their sufferings, for in 1753 the Court required the minister and two principal members of a Baptist Church to sign a certificate that the person to be exempt was a member of that Church, and besides, the Church of which he was a member should obtain a certificate from three other Baptist Churches to prove that the Church to which he belonged really was a Baptist Church. Of course, our Churches resisted this provision and, in 1754, remonstrated with the Assembly at Boston. At once it was moved in this body, but not carried, that the signers of the remonstrance should be taken into custody. In the paper which they had sent to the Assembly they had shown how the Baptists had been thrown into jail, their cattle and goods sold at auction for a quarter of their value because they refused to pay Church rates, and they held that all this was contrary to the royal charter, which granted them liberty of conscience. Manning wrote to Dr. Samuel Stennett, June 5th, 1771, of his brethren's hard treatment in Massachusetts by imprisonment and the despoiling of their property. He says of the authorities:

'They are afraid if they relax the secular arm their tenets have not merit enough and a sufficient foundation to stand. This has been so plainly hinted by some of the committees of the General Court, upon

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

treating with our people, that I think it cannot be deemed a breach of charity to think this of them...Some of our Churches are sorely oppressed on account of religion. Their enemies continue to triumph over them, and as repeated applications have been made to the Court of Justice and to the General Courts for the redress of such grievances, but as yet have been neglected, it is now become necessary to carry the affair to England, in order to lay it before the king.'

Dr. Stennett was known personally to George III, who greatly respected him; hence he used his influence with the king, in company with Dr. Llewelyn and Mr. Wallin, to secure relief. On July 31st, 1771, his majesty 'disallowed and rejected' the act of Massachusetts in oppressing the Baptists at Ashfield; and Dr. John Ryland, in writing to Manning, says that Dr. Stennett procured that order. Three hundred and ninety-eight acres of land, belonging in part to Dr. Ebenezer Smith, a Baptist minister, and the Ashfield Baptists, had been seized and sold to build a Congregational meeting-house. On this land was a dwelling-house and orchard, and also a burying-ground, so that the Baptists found their dead taken from them as well as their property. The Warren Association met at Medfield, Sept. 7th, 1772, and refused to carry in any more certificates for exemption from ministerial taxes, because to do so implied a right on the part of the State to levy such a tax, and because it was destructive to religious liberty and the proper conduct of civil society. They demanded the right to stand on an equality before the law, not as a sect, but as citizens. Meanwhile the Baptist Churches fast multiplied everywhere. A second Baptist Church was formed in Boston itself in 1743, and others followed at various places and dates, as Middleborough, Newton, etc.; so that by 1776 there were about forty Baptist Churches in Massachusetts alone. Their cause in New England received a strong impetus from the preaching of WHITEFIELD and his colaborers, which ushered in the great awakening. While Whitefield was not a Baptist, he insisted on a spiritual Church and that none but those who had experienced the new birth should become members therein, a position which logically carried men to the Baptists in a community where the Half-way Covenant was in force. He landed at Newport in September, 1740, and for three months preached daily. Tennant, Bellamy, Wheelock, Davenport, and many others followed him, and it is estimated that within two years between thirty and forty thousand persons professed conversion to Christ. Many Churches of the Standing Order arrayed themselves against him; others were indifferent to his movements. Harvard and Yale Colleges officially took ground against him. Dr. Chauncey, of Boston, wrote a volume against him; and the General Court of Connecticut enacted laws restricting ministers to their own pulpits, unless specially invited by the minister of another parish, and making it illegal for any unsettled minister to preach at all.

It was not strange that these converts, finding such opposition or cold welcome in the Congregational Churches, should seek homes elsewhere. In many cases they formed Churches of their own and were known as Separatists, and Backus says that between September, 1746, and May, 1751, thirty-one persons were ordained as pastors of Separate Churches. These new converts were insensibly and inevitably led nearer to the Baptist position than to that taken by the great body of the Congregational State Churches. The Churches of the Standing Order were filled with unconverted persons, with many who had grown up in them from infancy, being introduced at that time by christening; and but a small proportion of their members made any claim to a spiritual regeneration. The intuitions of a converted soul recoil from Church associations with those whose only claim to membership in Christ's mystical body is a ceremony performed over an unconscious

The American Baptists

infant, for the renewed man seeks fellowship with those who, like himself, have exercised faith in Christ's saving merits, and he is likely to take the Scriptures for his guide in seeking his Church home. Whitefield himself taught his converts, when preaching on Rom.6:1-4, that their death to sin enjoined another order of duty. He says: 'It is certain that in the words of our text there is an allusion to the manner of baptism, which was by immersion, which our Church [Episcopal] allows, and insists upon it, that children should be immersed in water, unless those that bring the children to be baptized assure the minister that they cannot bear the plunging.' [*Sermons*, xiii, p. 197, Boston ed.] In these and similar words he showed his hearers that the New Testament disciples were a body of immersed believers, and when Jonathan Edwards repudiated the Half-way Covenant, numbers embraced his views; some few new Baptist Churches were formed in Massachusetts, but many Whitefieldians and Baptists attempted to build together in what were popularly known as New Light or Separatist Churches. Of course such a compromise between Baptist and Pedobaptist principles could not long be practiced, and gradually the Baptists withdrew to form their own congregations. Backus says that for the twenty years between 1760 and 1780 two new Baptist Churches were organized each year.

The life and ministry of ISAAC BACKUS himself illustrates the sweep of the Baptist movement in New England. He was converted to God during this great awakening, and with many misgivings united with the Congregational Church at Norwich, Conn., but afterward joined with fifteen others in forming a Separate Church, composed of Baptists and Pedobaptists. Two years afterward, 1748, having now reached the age of twenty-six years, he formed a Church of this mixed order at Middleborough, Mass. Soon the question of baptism began to agitate the body, and a number of his people rejected infant baptism and sprinkling as baptism. After a time Mr. Backus followed them on conviction, and in 1756 he formed the First Baptist Church at Middleborough. The story of his change of faith and denominational relations is a type of the inward and outward changes through which many earnest men passed at that time, and united with the Baptists or formed new Churches of that order and Backus acted as a leader in this direction.

We have seen that James Manning was first a student at Hopewell; after spending four years at the College of New Jersey, at Princeton, from which he was graduated in 1762 with the second highest honors of his class, he was intrusted by the Philadelphia Association with the arduous task of establishing a denominational college 'on some suitable part of this continent.' After consulting largely with friends, amongst them Gardner, the Deputy-Governor of Rhode Island, he established a Latin School at Warren, and organized a Baptist Church there in 1764. This school was subsequently removed to Providence, where it is still continued as the University Grammar School. In 1765 he was appointed President of the College of Rhode Island, and Professor of Languages and other branches of learning, with full power to act in these capacities at Warren and elsewhere. He began his work with one student, William Rogers, from Newport; three others were added within a year, and at the first commencement, in 1769, he graduated seven. A college charter was obtained from the General Assembly of Rhode Island, and \$2,000 were subscribed for building and endowing the college. He saw at once that his success depended on the interest which the Churches took in the institution, and seeing that this could only be accomplished by united effort, he and Hezekiah Smith determined on forming an Association, with the double purpose of resisting the oppressions of the Standing Order in New England and of securing an educated Baptist ministry. This was accomplished, at Warren in 1767. For six years the college remained at Warren, when a contest,

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

arose between Warren, East Greenwich, Newport and Providence for the honor of the permanent location, and in 1770 the college was removed to Providence. Manning then resigned his pastorship at Warren, accepted that of the Providence Church in 1771, and for twenty years held the twofold relation of pastor and president. The Warren Association was intimately identified with the development at the college for many years, thus making them mutual blessings. Backus tells us that a number of elders being together in consultation about the affairs of the young institution, they sent invitations to other brethren, and the result was the meeting at Warren of representatives from eleven Churches, with three ministers from the Philadelphia Association for consultation concerning the organization of the new Association. John Gano was pastor of the Baptist Church in New York at teatime and brother-in-law of President Manning. Gano presided over their delegations, and Isaac Backus acted as clerk. After full deliberation, some of the Churches, fearing that an Association might assume jurisdiction over them, faltered, and that body was formed by the representatives, of four Churches only, namely, Warren, Bellingham, Haverhill and Second Middleborough, but the latter Church withdrew at the second meeting, 1768.

President Manning then drew up a statement closely defining the objects of the Warren Association, adapted to remove misapprehensions, and in 1770 the Middleborough Church with Backus as pastor, returned, 'upon the express condition that no complaint should ever be received by the Association against any particular Church that was not of the Association, nor from any censured member of any of our Churches.' This body of Churches defined that its union was 'consistent with independency and power of particular Churches, because it pretended to being other than an advisory council, utterly, disclaiming superiority, jurisdiction, coercive right and infallibility.' On these principles the Association won its way, and in 1777 it embraced in its membership 31 churches and 1,617 communicants. The service which it rendered to Baptist interests in those days of weakness and trial was very great, for it was a missionary society as well as a fraternal body. It organized an Educational Fund for ministerial education; it appointed a committee to present serious Baptist grievances to the government of Massachusetts and Connecticut; it sent an agent to England to lay their case before the king; and it appealed for subscriptions to all the Baptist Churches of this continent, admonishing them to rally to the support of their own college as a Christian duty. Also it appointed Benjamin Foster and others to prepare a spelling-book, a good English grammar and a Baptist catechism. Foster was a graduate of Yale, was appointed to defend the Pedobaptist position in the exercises of that college, and became a Baptist on conviction as the result. The hallowed influences exerted by the Philadelphia and Warren Associations in molding the Baptist denomination in the New World can never be told.

Justice, however, demands as high a tribute to MORGAN EDWARDS as to James Manning, for his zeal and ability in establishing the college. Indeed, Dr. Guild, the present librarian of Brown University, frankly pays him this tribute. He says of Morgan:

'He was the prime mover in the enterprise of establishing the college, and in 1767 he went back to England and secured the first funds for its endowment. With him were associated the Rev. Samuel Jones, to whom in 1791 was offered the presidency; Oliver Hart and Francis Pelot, of South Carolina; John Hart, of Hopewell, the signer of the Declaration of Independence; John Stites, the mayor of Elizabethtown; Hezekiah Smith, Samuel Stillman, John Gano and others connected with the two Associations named, of kindred zeal and spirit. The final success of the movement, however, may justly be ascribed to the life-long labors of him

The American Baptists

who was appointed the first president, James Manning, D.D., of New Jersey.' [*New England Magazine*, January 1886, p. 4]

It is right to say here that he, being a Welshman, it was meet that he should be the 'prime mover' in establishing the first Baptist college in America on the very soil where Roger Williams, his countryman, had planted the first free republic of this land. There is also very much poetic lore in the thought that he should leave his Church in Philadelphia to enlist the men of Wales in the interests of the young institution. He brought back a large sum of money for this object, and had so stirred the sympathies of Dr. Richards, of South Wales, that he bequeathed his library of 1,300 volumes to its use. And now, probably, there is not such a collection of Welsh books in America as is found in the town of the brave Welshman who founded Providence. Welsh affection for Brown merits that 'poetic justice' which led its present librarian to bless the memory of the other immortal Welshman, Morgan Edwards, as the prime mover in its establishment. Mr. Edwards was thoroughly educated and became pastor of the Philadelphia Church, on the recommendation of Dr. Gill, in 1761, and remained there till 1771, when he removed to Delaware, where he died in 1795. His influence was very great, but would have been much enlarged had he identified himself with the cause of the colonies in their struggle with the mother country. His family was identified with the service of his majesty of England, and Morgan was so full of Welsh fire that he could not hold his tongue, which much afflicted his brethren and involved him in trouble with the American authorities, as we find in the following recantation: At a meeting of the Committee of White Clay Creek, at Mr. Henry Darby's, in New York, August 7th, 1775, William Patterson, Esq., being in the chair, when the Rev. Morgan Edwards attended and signed the following recantation, which was voted satisfactory, namely:

'Whereas, I have some time since frequently made use of rash and imprudent expressions with respect to the conduct of my fellow-countrymen, who are now engaged in a noble and patriotic struggle for the liberties of America, against the arbitrary measures of the British ministry; which conduct has justly raised their resentment against me, I now confess that I have spoken wrong, for which I am sorry and ask forgiveness of the public. And I do promise that for the future I will conduct myself in such a manner as to avoid giving offense, and at the same time, in Justice to myself, declare that I am a friend to the present measures pursued by the friends to American liberty, and do hereby approve of them, and, as far as in my power, will endeavor to promote them. Morgan Edwards'

How sound his conversion was to Revolutionary 'measures' is not a proper question to raise here, but as the offense was one of the tongue, he made the amend as broad as the sin, and there is no known evidence that he ever gave too free rein to the unruly member thereafter on the subject of the 'noble and patriotic struggles for the liberties of America.' It is sure, however, that when American liberties were secured he brought forth abundant fruits, 'meet for repentance,' in the labors which he devoted to the cause of American education. He also traveled many thousands of miles on horseback to collect materials for the history of the Baptist Churches in the colonies which he had done so much to build up. His purpose was to publish a history in about twelve volumes. He issued the first volume in 1770, which treated of the Pennsylvania Baptists; the second volume related to the New Jersey Baptists and was published in 1792; his treatment of the Rhode Island Baptists was not sent forth by him, but appeared in the sixth volume of the *Rhode Island Historical Collections* of 1867. He left the third volume in manuscript, concerning the Delaware Baptists, which is now in possession of the Baptist Historical Society, Philadelphia. He was as noble, refined and scholarly

Chapter 7 - New Centers of Baptist Influence – South Carolina – Maine – Pennsylvania – New Jersey

a servant of Christ as could be found in the colonies. He died in Delaware in 1795; his body, which was first buried in the Baptist meeting-house, La Grange Place, between Market and Arch Streets, Philadelphia, now rests in Mount Moriah Cemetery, and every true American Baptist blesses his memory.

The American Baptists

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

No chapter of Baptist history, European or American, fills honest hearts with warmer gratitude and thanksgiving than that of Virginia. The first settlers of this colony were cavaliers, from the upper classes of English society, profoundly loyal to the English government and zealous of religious observances. The Virginian charter of April 10th, 1606, made the Church of England the religion of the colony, and devotion to the king, its head and defender, the test of loyalty; hence all were taxed for its support. Before Plymouth Rock was known, and nearly a quarter of a century before Massachusetts Bay Colony was organized, the soil of Virginia was hallowed by praise to God in public worship. Captain John Smith tells us this beautiful story of his religious acts at Jamestown:

'When I first went to Virginia, I well remember we did hang an awning, which is an old sail, to three or four trees to shadow us from the sun. Our walls were rails of wood, our seats unhewed trees, till we cut planks, our pulpit a bar of wood nailed to two neighboring trees. In foul weather we shifted into an old rotten tent. This was our church, till we built a homely thing like a barn, set up crotchets, covered with rafts, sedge and earth, so was also the walls, the best of our houses of the like curiosity, but the most part far much worse workmanship, that could neither well defend wind or rain. Yet we had daily common prayer, morning and evening; every Sunday two sermons, and every three months the Holy Communion, till our minister, Mr. Hunt, died. But our prayers daily, with a homily on Sunday, we continued two or three years after, till more preachers came. And surely God did most mercifully hear us, till the continual inundations of mistaken directions, factions and numbers of unprovided libertines, near consumed us all, as the Israelites in the wilderness.'

Happy had it been for the colonists if this freedom and simplicity of voluntary worship had been continued amongst them, as this noble character commenced it in his rude Jamestown temple, without doubt the first ever erected in North America. The charter made withdrawal from the Episcopal Church a crime equal to revolt from the government. It further required that if any one were drawn away from the 'doctrines, rites and religion, now professed and established within our realm of England,' the person so offending should be 'arrested and imprisoned, until he shall fully and thoroughly reform him, or otherwise when the cause so requireth, that he shall with all convenient speed be sent into our realm of England, here to receive condign punishment, for his or their said offense.

Each successive Governor promulgated his own code of laws, directing his subordinate in the details of administration. That of Sir Thomas Dale, in 1611, provided that every man or woman, 'now present or hereafter to arrive' should give an account of his or their faith and religion, and repair unto the minister, that their orthodoxy might be tested. Upon refusal to do this the minister should give notice to the Governor or chief officers of the town, and for the first refusal the offender was to be whipped, for the second to be whipped twice and to acknowledge his fault on the Sabbath day in the congregation, and for the third offense he was to be whipped every day until the acknowledgment was made and forgiveness craved. The very severity of this code prevented its full execution, and succeeding Governors relaxed these provisions in their several codes. But though corporal punishment was gradually abandoned, the spirit of intolerance as to any departure from the Church of England remained the same, being quite as severe as that of Massachusetts Bay against all dissent from Congregationalism. Hening says that the General Assembly appears to have devoted itself to enforcing attendance on the services of the Church of England in the colony. In 1623 it provided that public worship should be held in every plantation according to its canons, that its ministers should be paid by a tax upon the people, and that no other ministers but those of that

The American Baptists

Church 'shall be permitted to preach or teach, publicly or privately,' and that the Governor and Council shall take care that all Non-conformists depart the colony with all conveniency.

The first nine Acts of 1661 provided for the support of the State Church; in each parish a church edifice was to be built out of the public treasury, together with a parsonage house and the purchase of a globe for the minister's use. He was to receive a salary of ,80 sterling, a provision subsequently changed to 16,000 pounds of tobacco, to be levied on the parish and collected like other taxes. Each minister must be ordained by a Bishop in England, all other preachers were to be banished; every person who wilfully avoided attendance on the parish Church for one Sunday was to be fined fifty pounds of tobacco; every Non-conformist was to be fined ,20 for a month's absence, and if he failed to attend for a year he must be apprehended and give security for his good behavior, or remain in prison till he was willing to attend Church. Much pretense has been made, that because the early settlers of the colony were cavaliers, they were less austere, more polished and of gentler blood than the Puritans of Massachusetts. But the brutal intolerance of the English Court was faithfully copied by them, and no darker or more bloody pages stain English or Massachusetts history than those that defile the early records of Virginia. White tells us of a band of men who were driven from Virginia 'for their religious opinions' in 1634. [*Annals of Annapolis*, p. 23] Bulk records the revolting barbarities inflicted on Stevenson Reek for the same cause in 1640. He 'stood in the pillory two hours with a label on his back, paid a fine of ,50, and was imprisoned at the pleasure of the Governor,' for simply saying, in a jocular manner, that his majesty was at confession with my lord of Canterbury.[*Ecc. Hist. of Va.*, ii, pp. 51-67] Holmes details, at length, that in 1648 four missionaries were sent from Massachusetts to Virginia, Messrs. James, Knollys, Thompson and Harrison. They held a few meetings there in private, but their little congregations were violently broken up and the missionaries banished, while many of their hearers were imprisoned.' [Annals, 289] James Ryland, a member of the House of Burgesses from the Isle of Wight County, prepared a Catechism which was pronounced 'blasphemous' for which he was expelled in 1652; and for some other trivial religious offense a member from Norfolk was expelled in 1663. Virginia had adhered to the king against Cromwell and the Commonwealth, and Dr. Hawks, the eloquent Episcopal historian of Virginia, tells of four of Cromwell's soldiers who were 'rudely hung, as a warning to the remainder' in 1680, for their religious opinions, under the pretense that 'their assemblages' were 'perverted from religious to treasonable purposes', 'these religious assemblages themselves being regarded as a subversion of the government.' [*Hist. of Episcopacy in Va.*, pp. 71-72]

Hening states that the 111th Act of the Grand Assembly of 1661-62 declared that, '*Whereas*, Many schismatical persons, out of their averseness to the orthodox established religion, or out of the new-fangled conceits of their own heretical inventions, refuse to have their children baptized; Be it therefore enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that all persons that in contempt of the divine sacrament of baptism, shall refuse when they may carry their child to a lawful minister in that county, to have them baptized, shall be amerced two thousand pounds of tobacco; half to the informer, half to the public.'[Statutes at large, ii, pp. 165-166]

This was a blow dealt at the Quakers, as there seem to have been no Baptists in the colony at that time. Several Acts of the Assembly in 1659, 1662 and 1693 made it a crime for parents to refuse the baptism of their children. Jefferson writes: 'If no execution took place here, as in New England, it was not owing to the moderation of the Church or the spirit of the Legislature, as may be inferred from the law itself, but to historical circumstances which have not been handed down to us.'

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

When William and Mary came to the throne, in 1689, their accession was signaled by that enactment of Parliament called the ACT OF TOLERATION. Even this, as Dr. Woolsey remarks, 'removed only the harshest restrictions upon Protestant religious worship, and was arbitrary, unequal and unsystematic in its provisions.' Still, it was the entering wedge to religious freedom, and while the Baptists of England gladly availed themselves of it and organized under it in London as a great Association for new work, a hundred and seventeen Churches being represented, the authorities of Virginia thought it inoperative in their colony. It was not until a score of years after the passage of this Act that the colonial Legislature gave to the colonists the meager liberties which it granted to the British subject. When, however, news of this Act reached Virginia, the few individual Baptists then scattered abroad there resolved on their full liberty as British subjects under its provisions. They entreated the London Meeting to send them ministers, an entreaty which was followed by a correspondence running through many years. In 1714 Robert Nordin and Thomas White were sent as ordained ministers to the colony, but White died upon the voyage. Up to this time there seems to have been no organized body of Baptists in Virginia, although there are traces of individuals in North Carolina as early as 1696, who had fled from Virginia to escape her intolerance. Semple finds the first Baptist Church of Virginia organized in association with the labors of Nordin at Burleigh, Isle of Wight County, in 1714, on the south side of the river and opposite Jamestown. Howell thinks that before the coming of Nordin there had been a gathering of citizens there, joined by others from Surry County for consultation, and that they had petitioned the London Baptists to send them help. Be this as it may, Nordin was soon followed by two other ministers, Messrs. Jones and Mintz, and under the labors of these men of God the first Church was formed in that year, and soon after one at Brandon, in the County of Surry. The first is now known as Mill Swamp; it is thought that the Otterdams Church is the second. These were General Baptists, but in a few years they embraced Calvinistic sentiments, and Nordin labored in that region till he died, in 1725.

While this movement was in progress in the southern part of Virginia, the influence of the Welsh Baptists, in Pennsylvania and Delaware, began to be felt in Berkeley, London and Rockingham Counties, which were visited by their ministers. Semple thinks that these laborers first readied the colony through Edward Hays and Thomas Yates, members of the Saters Baptist Church, in Maryland, and that Revs. Loveall, Heaton and Gerard soon followed them. Churches were then gathered at Opecon, Mill Creek, Ketocton and other points in rapid succession, which became members of the Philadelphia Association, from which they received the counsel and aid of David Thomas, John Gano and James Miller, which accounts in part for the rapid spread of Baptist principles in North Virginia. They were soon strengthened, also, by the labors of two men of great power, formerly of other denominations, who became Baptists. Shubael Steams, a native of Boston, Mass., was converted under the preaching of George Whitefield, and united himself with the revival party of the Congregationalists, called New Lights, in 1745. He continued with them for six years, when he became convinced, from an examination of the Scriptures, that infant baptism was a human institution and that it was his duty to confess Christ on his faith. Accordingly, he was immersed by Elder Palmer at Tolland, Conn., May 20th, 1751, and was ordained a Baptist minister. After continuing in New England for about three years, he longed to carry the Gospel to the regions beyond, and made for Berkeley and Hampshire Counties, Va. There God made him wonderfully successful, and his fame spread through all the region. He itinerated largely in North Carolina as well as in Virginia, and gathered an immense harvest for Christ. Morgan Edwards describes him as

The American Baptists

a marvelous preacher for moving the emotions and melting his audiences to tears. The most exciting stories are told about the piercing glance of his eye and the melting tones of his voice, while his appearance was that of a patriarch.

Tidence Lane, who afterward became a distinguished Baptist minister, says that he had the most hateful feelings toward the Baptists, but curiosity led him to hear Mr. Steams: 'Upon my arrival, I saw a venerable old man sitting under a peach-tree, with a book in his hand and the people gathering about him. He fixed his eyes upon me immediately, which made me feel in such a manner as I never had felt before. I turned to quit the place, but could not proceed far. I walked about, sometimes catching his eyes as I walked. My uneasiness increased and became intolerable. I went up to him, thinking that a salutation and shaking of hands would relieve me; but it happened otherwise. I began to think that he had an evil eye and ought to be shunned; but shunning him I could no more effect than a bird can shun the rattlesnake when it fixes its eyes upon it. When he began to preach my perturbations increased, so that nature could no longer support them and I sank to the ground.'

Rev. Daniel Marshall was brother-in-law to Steams, and had formerly been a Presbyterian minister at Windsor, Conn., but had served for some years as a missionary to the Indians on the upper Susquehanna. War between the colony of Maryland and the Indians had arrested his work, and on examining the Scriptures, he, too, became a Baptist, being immersed near Winchester, Va., in the forty-eighth year of his age. He and Steams preached in Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Churches were multiplied in every direction. Dr. Howell, in treating of this period, says that 'The fields were white to harvest. God poured out his Holy Spirit. One universal impulse pervaded, apparently, the minds of the whole people. Evidently hungering for the bread of life, they came together in vast multitudes. Everywhere the ministry of these men was attended with the most extraordinary success. Very large numbers were baptized. Churches sprang up by scores. Among the converts were many able men, who at once entered the ministry, and swelled continually the ranks of the messengers of salvation.'

So quickly did the work of God spread amongst the people in every direction, that the influence of our Churches began to be felt in shaping the political destinies of the colony; and that influence has continued to our times. Prominent amongst the causes of this rapid growth was the character of the preaching. The preachers were from the people to whom they spoke, so that they understood their necessities and difficulties. Reports of many of these early sermons are extant. They are characterized by great simplicity of thought and structure, are peculiarly adapted to arouse the conscience to the need of Christ, to present his finished work in all its gracious bearings, and to lead to immediate decision in his service. Colonial life had fostered independent thought and a willingness to meet peril in shaking off the State Church, whose ministers no longer commanded the respect of the people. Formalism had engendered license in the pulpit as well as in the pew, so that many of the clergy were not only cruel, but immoral, also. The very means which in earlier years had been taken to hinder the spread of Baptist doctrines now contributed to their dissemination, and the people hungered for the bread of life.

Persecution, as usual, over-reached itself, and the reaction was very great. John Leland says, the Baptist 'ministers were imprisoned and the disciples buffeted.' James Madison, in writing to a Philadelphia friend, in 1774, said:

'That diabolical, hell-conceived principle of persecution rages among some, and to their eternal infamy

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

the clergy can furnish their quota of imps for such purposes. There are at the present time, in the adjacent county, not less than five or six well-meaning men in close jail for proclaiming their religious sentiments, which are the main quite orthodox.' Yet this hard flint of persecution struck the true fire of soul liberty. Dr. Hawks is compelled to admit of the State clergy that they were in many cases a disgrace to their profession; and Hammond denounces them thus: 'Many came, such as wore black coats and could babble in a pulpit, roar in a tavern, exact from their parishioners and, rather, by their dissoluteness, destroy than feed their flocks.' These so embittered the spirits of the baser class against the pure and godly men who went everywhere preaching the word that, even after the Toleration Act had compelled the colony to modify her laws, and they could not legally be imprisoned for preaching the Gospel, mob law was let loose upon them everywhere, and they were thrust into prison for the sin of others in disturbing the public peace. Everywhere their congregations were disturbed and broken uup. Howe says: 'A snake and a hornet's nest were thrown into their meeting, and even in one case fire-arms were brought to disperse them.' [*Hist. Collections of Va.*, p. 379] Taylor says that the Baptist ministers were 'Fined, pelted, beaten, imprisoned, poisoned and hunted with dogs; their congregations were assaulted and dispersed; the solemn ordinance of baptism was rudely interrupted, both administrators and candidates being plunged and held beneath the water till nearly dead; they suffered mock trials, and even in courts of justice were subjected to indignities not unlike those inflicted by the infamous Jeffreys.'

Dr. Semple, actuated by the same sweet spirit and sincere honesty which moved Taylor, gives this description of the Baptist ministers: They 'were without learning, without patronage, generally very poor, very plain in their dress, unrefined in their manners and awkward in their address; all of which, by their enterprising zeal and unceasing perseverance, they either turned to advantage or prevented their ill effects.'

Yet they had the stoutest hearts, the most masculine intellects, and some of them were eloquent to a proverb; a perfect phalanx of Christian Spartans. About thirty of them were put in prison, some of them several times, but by preaching Jesus through the gates and on the high walls many were brought to Christ. Rev. Eleazar Clay, the guardian of the great statesman, Henry Clay, wrote from Chesterfield County to John Williams: 'The preaching at the prison is not attended in vain, for we hope that several are converted, while others are under great distress and made to cry out, What shall we do to be saved?' and he begged him to come down and baptize the converts. Crowds gathered around the prisons at Fredericksburg, in the counties of King and Queen, Culpepper, Middlesex and Essex, Orange and Caroline. They were preached to by Harris, Ireland, Pickett, the Craigs, of whom there were three brothers, Greenwood, Barrow, Weathersford, Ware, Tinsley, Waller, Webber and others whose names will be honored while Virginia exists. And there are some noted cases of holy triumph, as in the prison at Culpepper, whence Ireland, much after the order of Bunyan, who was 'had home to prison in the county jail of Bedford,' dated his letters, from 'my palace in Culpepper.' On the very spot where the prison stood, where powder was cast under the floor to blow him up, and brimstone was burnt to suffocate him and poison was administered to kill him; on that spot where he preached through the iron grates to the people, there the Baptist meeting-house now stands; and the Church which occupies it numbers more than 200 members. These diabolical schemes were all frustrated and, after much suffering, he barely escaped with his life; yet he says: 'My prison was a place in which I enjoyed much of the divine presence; a day seldom passed without some token of the divine goodness toward me.' Waller, a most powerful man, who before his conversion was the terror of the good, being known as the 'Devil's Adjutant and Swearing Jack,' spent 113 days in four different prisons, besides enduring all forms of abuse; but in Virginia alone he immersed 2,000 believers and helped to constitute eighteen Churches. Want of space demands silence concerning

The American Baptists

a list of most illustrious ministers and laymen, whose names will never be honored as they deserve, until some equally illustrious son of Virginia shall arrange and shape her abundant mass of Baptist material with the integrity of a Bancroft and the eloquence of a Macaulay. For three months in succession three men of God lay in the jail at Fredericksburg for the crime of preaching the glorious Gospel of the blissful God – Elders Lewis Craig, John Waller and James Childs. But their brethren stood nobly by these grand confessors. Truly, in the words of Dr. Hawks,

'No dissenters in Virginia, experienced for a time harsher treatment than did the Baptists. They were beaten and imprisoned; and cruelty taxed its ingenuity to devise new modes of punishment and annoyance. The usual consequences followed. Persecution made friends for its victims; and the men who were not permitted to speak in public found willing auditors in the sympathizing crowds who gathered around the prisons to hear them preach from the grated windows. It is not improbable that this very opposition imparted strength in another mode, inasmuch as it at last furnished the Baptists with a common ground on which to make resistance.' [*Hist. Prot. Ep. Ch. in Va.*, p. 121]

We shall see much more of their struggles for liberty to preach the Gospel when we come to consider the period of the Revolutionary War, and for the present must look at their internal affairs and growth. Although they multiplied rapidly in the latter half of the eighteenth century, they were much divided by controversies amongst themselves; first, on the question of Calvinism, and then, strangely enough, on Episcopacy. The Calvinistic controversy had been imported by the General and Particular Baptists, who had come from England.

For a time they lived happily with each other, probably held together by the cohesive power of opposition from without. But by and by, as they became stronger, they dropped the names of General and Particular and conducted their doctrinal contest under the name of Separate and Regular Baptists. Samuel Harris, John Waller and Jeremiah Walker were leaders on the Arminian side, while E. Craig, William Murphy and John Williams were leaders on the Calvinistic side; but while they conducted their debates with great freedom of utterance, they also clung to each other with brotherly love. Having suffered so much together in a common cause, the thought of separation was too painful to be endured. They, therefore, treated each other with all the cordiality of Christian gentlemen, or, as Mr. Spurgeon would say, they agreed to keep two bears in their house, 'bear and forbear;' and the result was, after a long and full discussion in 1787, they agreed to know each other, and to be known to others, as The United Baptist Churches of Christ in Virginia.

The manner in which our Virginia fathers were exercised on the question of Episcopacy would be a topic of amusement to the Baptists there in our times, if reverence for their sires did not honor all their sincere convictions. The early General Baptists of England raised the question whether Ephesians 4:11-13, did not continue the Apostolic office in the Church after the death of the Apostles; and thinking that it did, they selected an officer whose prerogatives were above those of an Elder, and for fully a century this officer visited their Churches as a Messenger or Superintendent, as they thought Timothy and Titus might have been. He was commonly elected and set apart to his work by an Association, and his chief duty was to itinerate, preach the Gospel, plant Churches and regulate their affairs. In the Confession of the General Baptists of 1678 his duties are thus laid down: 'The Bishops have the government of those Churches that had suffrage in their election, and no others ordinarily; as also to preach the word in the world.' Hook says that their work was 'to plant Churches, ordain officers, set in order things that were wanting in all the Churches, to defend the

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

Gospel against gainsayers, and to travel up and down the world for this purpose.' The Virginia Baptist fathers, wanting to observe every thing that they thought was done in the Apostolic Churches, decided by a majority vote, at the General Association of 1775, that his office was to be continued, and appointed Samuel Harris for the district lying south of the James River; shortly after which, Elijah Craig and John Waller were appointed for that on the north side. At the previous meeting of, this body, after two days' debate, they had deferred the further consideration of the subject for a year. That year was spent in warm discussion of the matter. Walker advocated the doctrine in a pamphlet, Ford opposed it in another, and the Association then unanimously elected Harris an Apostle by ballot. They observed a day of fasting before the ordination, at which Elijah Craig, Waller and Williams offered prayer, then each ordained minister present laid hands upon the head of Harris and gave him the hand of fellowship. At the autumn meeting Waller and Craig were ordained, and these three Baptist Bishops were let loose upon the Churches under this rule:

'If our Messenger, or Apostle, shall transgress in any manner, he she'll be liable to dealing in any Church where the transgression is committed; and the said Church is instructed to call helps from two or three neighboring Churches; and if by them found a transgressor, a General Conference of the Churches shall be called to excommunicate or to restore him.' [*Semple's Hist. Va. Baptists*, pp. 58-59]

As might have been expected amongst Baptists, the advocates of the measure were not chosen; the Churches put on their glasses and brought out their New Testaments to see where they could find this crotchet, and not finding it, at the next year's meeting of the Association the 'Apostles' were very chop-fallen, and reporting their cold reception and discouragements, quit their high episcopacy at once. The Association was so much mortified at this play at priests that it had not the patience to pass an act abolishing the apostolate, but let it die a natural death; afterward, however, the body took a solemn farewell of its defunct bishopric by recording on its minutes the following declaration, as a sort of epitaph: 'That the office of apostles, like that of prophets, was the effect of miraculous inspiration; and does not belong to ordinary times.' Nor since that day have Virginia Baptists seen any times extraordinary calling for the resurrection of their 'apostles.'

The primitive Baptists of Virginia were often treated with contempt because many of their ministers were not classical scholars, and yet some of them were the peers of the first men in the pulpits of the colony, no matter of what denomination; not only in all that enstamps with a high and practical manhood, but also in the higher branches of education. They were men of profound knowledge in all that relates to Gospel truth, to the true science of human government, and to that patriotism which has made the Virginia commonwealth so great a power in our land. They wrought a work which even the heroes of Rhode Island did not equal in some respects. Just as it is harder to purify a corrupted system than to originate one that is right and true, so far they excelled our brethren there. Their contest was steady, long and fiery, yet they never wavered, took no rash steps nor violent measures, but, with true loyalty to their holy convictions, pressed on against all odds, until their resistless wisdom and energy, directed by an enduring perseverance that never flagged, gave them their deserved victory. Touching the question of education, it is little less than cruel to accuse them of ignorance, in view of the fact that they were not allowed to found schools, or build places of worship, nor to be at peace in their own homes. But as soon as they had conquered the right to breathe as faithful citizens and to organize Churches, despite their grinding oppressions, they at once betook themselves to the founding of schools and colleges, which have since become an

The American Baptists

honor to the State and nation. As it was, however, with their slight classical and theological attainments, they did not fail to reach some of the first minds in Virginia. So pure were they, so biblical and so true to high conviction, that many of her first citizens openly identified themselves both with their cause and Churches. Some who stood high as statesmen and as educators felt and confessed their powerful influence.

Amongst these we find Dr. Archibald Alexander, born in 1772, and President of Hampden-Sidney College in 1796, one of the first scholars and divines in our country. In the frankest manner he unbosomed his heart thus:

'I fell into doubts respecting the authority of infant baptism. The origin of these doubts were in too rigid notions as to the purity of the Church, with a belief that receiving infants had a corrupting tendency. I communicated my doubts very freely to my friend, Mr. Lyle, and Mr. Speece, and found that they had both been troubled by the same. We talked much privately on the subject, and often conversed with others in hope of getting some new light. At length Mr. Lyle and I determined to give up the practice of baptizing infants until we should receive more light. This determination we publicly communicated to our people and left them to take such measures as they deemed expedient; but they seemed willing to admit the issue. We also communicated to the Presbytery the state of our minds, and left them to do what seemed good in the case; but as they believed that we were sincerely desirous of aiming at the truth, they took no steps and I believe made no record. Things remained in this position for more than a year. During this time I read much on both sides, and carried on a lengthened correspondence, particularly with Dr. Hoge. Two considerations kept me back from joining the Baptists. The first was, that the universal prevalence of infant baptism, as early as the fourth and fifth centuries, was unaccountable on the supposition that no such practice existed in the times of the apostles. The other was, that if the Baptists are right they are the only Christian Church on earth, and all other denominations are out of the visible [Catholic] Church.'

The soundness of the conclusions reached by this great head of the Alexander family, in the Presbyterian Church, will be differently estimated by different minds; but, at the least, he shows the spreading influence of the Virginia Baptists at the close of the last century. His objections to the Baptists were essentially those of the Roman Catholic to our principles and practices; and, ill-founded as they were, they prevented him from following his convictions on the main point at issue.

In another chapter it will be needful to treat of the Virginia Baptists, touching their active participation in the Revolutionary War, together with their prominence in settling the State policy of the Old Dominion, and the character of the Constitution of the, United States. This chapter, therefore, must close with a reference to their alleged molding power upon THOMAS JEFFERSON, in his political career, as one of the founders of our government. Many historical writers have told us that he was in the habit of attending the business and other meetings of a Baptist Church near his residence; that he closely scrutinized its internal democratic policy and its democratic relations to its sister Churches; that he borrowed his conceptions of a free government, State and Federal, from the simplicity of Baptist Church independency and fraternity; and that, frequently, in conversation with his friends, ministers and neighbors, he confessed his indebtedness to their radical principles for his fixed convictions on the true methods of civil and religions liberty. If this popular tradition were entirely unsupported by contemporary testimony, his earnest and public co-operation with the Baptists in Virginia politics, and the close identity between our form of government, which he did so much to frame, and that of the Baptist Churches, must ever contribute to keep it alive; the strength of the coincidence being sufficient in itself to create such a tradition even if it did not already exist. Curtis says:

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

'There was a small Baptist Church which held its monthly meetings for business at a short distance from Mr. Jefferson's house, eight or ten years before the American Revolution. Mr. Jefferson attended these meetings for several months in succession. The pastor on one occasion asked him how he was pleased with their Church government. Mr. Jefferson replied, that it struck him with great force and had interested him much, that he considered it the only form of true democracy then existing in the world, and had concluded that it would be the best plan of government for the American colonies. This was several years before the Declaration of Independence.' [*Progress of Baptist Principles*, p. 356]

This author also says that he had this statement at second-hand only, from Mrs. Madison, wife of the fourth President of the United States, who herself had freely conversed with Jefferson on the subject, and that her remembrance of these conversations was 'distinct,' he 'always declaring that it was a Baptist Church from which these views were gathered.' Madison and Jefferson stood side by side with the Baptists in their contest for a free government, and they served together in the Committee of Seventeen in the Assembly of Virginia, when it was secured in 1777. 'After desperate contests in that Committee almost daily, from the 11th of October to the 5th of December,' the measure was carried; but Jefferson says of his struggle, in his autobiography, that it was 'the severest in which he was ever engaged.' No person then living had better opportunities for knowing the facts on this matter than had Mrs. Madison. Then the records of the early Baptists in Virginia show that there were Baptist Churches in Albemarle County, where Jefferson lived, which fact presents strong circumstantial evidence to the accuracy of this report. Semple mentions two such bodies, the Albemarle, founded in 1767, and the Toteer, 1775. John Asplund, in his Register for 1790, gives four Churches in that county, namely, 'Garrison's meeting, Pretey's Creek, Toteer Creek and White Sides Creek;' Garrison's having been organized in 1774; the others are given without date. He also says that these Churches had 258 members and 5 ministers, namely: William Woods, Jacob Watts, Bartlett Bonnet, Martin Dawson and Benjamin Burger. This renders it certain that besides Jefferson's intimacy with John Leland and other well-known names of our fathers, he had opportunities enough at home to become acquainted with Baptist principles and practices. Though he was skeptical on the subject of religion, he always spoke warmly of his co-operation with the Baptists in securing religious liberty. In a letter written to his neighbors, the members of the Buck Mountain Baptist Church, 1809, he says: 'We have acted together from the origin to the end of a memorable revolution, and we have contributed, each in the line allotted us, our endeavors to render its issues a permanent blessing to our country.'

It would be a pleasant task to trace the lives of some of the distinguished servants of God who filled Virginia with Baptist Churches; but their work erects for them an imperishable monument to which it is only needful to refer. We find that while the first Church was planted in the colony in 1714, in 1793 there were in the State 227 churches, 272 ministers, 22,793 communicants, and 14 Associations. Abiel Holmes says, in his *American Annals* (ii, 488 p.), that in 1793 the Baptists of the United States numbered 73,471, so that at that time Virginia contained nearly one third of the whole. In order to combine their efforts, a General Association was formed in 1771, which was dissolved in 1783 and, in 1784, a General Committee was organized to take its place, consisting of two delegates from each Association; this again was superseded in 1800 by the General Meeting of Correspondence, which was composed of delegates from all the Associations and acted as a State Board of Baptist co-operation on all subjects of general interest. The statistics of our own times,

The American Baptists

however, far eclipse the ratio of growth in the most prosperous days of the last century. At the present time, 1886, the Virginia Baptists have 42 Associations, 868 ordained ministers, 1,608 churches, into whose fellowship there were baptized last, year 12,182 persons, making a total membership in the State of 238,266; being the largest number of Baptists in any State excepting Georgia. This prosperity is the more remarkable when we take into account that within the present century the largest defection from the regular Baptist ranks that has been known in this country took place in Virginia, under the late Rev. ALEXANDER CAMPBELL. Without a brief sketch of that movement the history of the Baptists there would be very imperfect, hence it is here submitted. Alexander Campbell, a seceding minister from the North of Ireland, came to America in 1807, and became pastor of a Presbyterian Church in West Pennsylvania. Soon his father, Thomas Campbell, came to differ materially in some things with that Church, and set up worship in his own house, avowing this principle: 'When the Scriptures speak, we speak; where they are silent, we are silent.' A number adopted this doctrine and gathered at the meetings. Andrew Munro, a clearheaded seceder, said at once: 'If we adopt that as a basis, there is an end of infant baptism.' Soon both Thomas and Alexander, his son, with five others of the family rejected infant baptism, and on June 12th, 1812, were immersed on profession of their faith in Christ, in Buffalo Creek, by Elder Luce, and were received into the fellowship of the Bush Run Baptist Church. After this Alexander began to call in question the scripturalness of certain Baptist views and usages, chiefly in relation to the personal agency of the Holy Spirit in regeneration, the consequent relation of a Christian experience before baptism and the effect of baptism itself. As nearly as the writer could express Mr. Campbell's views, after much conversation with him, he held: That no man can be born of God but by the word of truth as found in the Bible; that the Scriptures, being inspired by the Holy Spirit, the only agency of the Spirit which acts on the soul is exerted through the word of Scripture; that the act of regeneration is not completed until the soul obeys Christ in the act of baptism; and that, as baptism is Christ's appointed method of confessing him, the washing away of sin is connected with that act or evinced thereby. The Baptists from whom he retired also held to the full inspiration of the Holy Scriptures, and that God addresses himself to the soul of man through that word, but that the Holy Spirit applies that word to the soul in so powerful a manner, by his direct and personal agency, as to lead it to a perfect trust on Christ for salvation and that then he is born from above, or regenerated. That when the Spirit bears witness with his spirit that he is a child of God, and he can testify of the grace of God in saving him, he has then become a fit subject for baptism; and so the act of baptism publicly attests his love for Christ, his obedience to him and the remission of his sins, as one who is dead indeed unto sin and alive unto God. The point of divergence between him and the Baptists, was so vital and radical, that every step which followed widened the distance. Mr. Campbell came to regard what is known as the relation of Christian experience, not only as savoring of mere impulse at the best, but as often running into superstition and even fanaticism; while the Baptists insisted on satisfactory testimony from the Holy Spirit to the convert's heart, and then from his own lips to the Church, that a moral renovation was wrought in his whole moral nature by the Holy Spirit himself, in which work he had used the inspired word as his divine instrument in effecting salvation.

Of course, much warm controversy ensued, the convictions of each party deepened with the progress of the contest, divisions took place in Churches and Associations, the rent ran not only through Virginia but through the entire South and Southwest, and the two bodies appear to be about as far apart as ever, with this difference, that time and circumstances have softened old asperities

Chapter 8 - Baptists of Virginia

and cooled the heat of fierce debate. The leaders in the combat were men of might on both sides. Mr. Campbell possessed a powerful intellect, which largely predominated over the emotional in his nature. He was of French descent on his mother's side; of Irish and Highland Scotch on his father's. He was very positive, unyielding, fearless and capable of wonderful endurance. Without being over-polite or ceremonious, his manners were bland and conciliating, while his mind was entirely self-directing, there was no show of vanity about him; and while not an orator in a high sense, his manner of speaking was prepossessing from the utter absence of cant in expression or whine in tone. There was a warm play of benevolence in his face and a frank open-heartedness in his speech, which was clothed in the dress of logic and armed with pointed artful sarcasm which seldom failed to influence his hearers.

Probably the nearest counterpart to himself whom he found amongst all his opponents, and who most counteracted his influence as a strong and cool reasoner, was DR. JEREMIAH B. JETER, one of the broadest and best men that Virginia ever produced either in the Baptist ministry or any other. He was a native of that State, born in 1802, and was baptized in 1821, addressing the crowd on the bank of the Otter River as he ascended from the water. He began to preach in Bedford County, and was the first missionary appointed by the General Association of Virginia, in 1823. He filled various pastorates in that State until 1835, when he became pastor of the First Church in Richmond, where he continued for fourteen years. He had baptized more than 1,000 persons before he went to Richmond, and was honored by the baptism of about the same number while in this Church. In 1849 he took charge of the Second Church in St. Louis, but returned to Richmond as the pastor of Grace Street Church in 1852. The last fourteen years of his life were spent as editor of the *Religious Herald*. As early as 1837 he had shown himself a master of the pen in his *Life of Clopton*, and this work was soon followed by the memoirs of Mrs. Schuck and of Andrew Broadus. All this had been but a training for his remarkable polemic work, in which he examined and answered the positions of Mr. Campbell. It is in this work chiefly that the fullness and roundness of his character appear. Clear, vigorous, courteous, unassuming and child-like, devoid of boastfulness, forgetful of himself and apparently unconscious of his own ability, he throws a blending of beautiful virtues into a majestic logic that no other writer has approached on that subject. He far excels Mr. Campbell in the graces of style and in suavity of spirit, while he is fully his equal in self-possession and outspoken frankness, and more than his match in that manly argumentation which carries conviction to devout men. Dr. Jeter did splendid work in the pulpit and in building up the educational and missionary interests of the South. It is right and meet that a statue of this princely man should adorn the Memorial Hall at Richmond and that his manuscripts should increase its wealth, but his truest likeness is traceable in his writings, and it will be bright and fresh there when the marble has moldered into dust. These two great men of Virginia have gone to give their account to God, and their memory is cherished by thousands of their friends, nor will either of them be soon forgotten as gladiators for the truth as they respectively saw truth. While the name of the one lives, that of the other can never be blotted out. This chapter may properly be closed by a sketch of another nobleman, who, though not a native of Virginia, is perhaps, taking him in all things, its first citizen at this time.

Jabez L. M. Curry, D.D., LL.D., was born in Lincoln County, Ga., June 5th, 1825. He was graduated from the University of Georgia in 1843, and from the Dane Law School, at Harvard University, in 1845. In 1847, '53 and '55 he served in Congress from Alabama. He was known there

The American Baptists

as an active friend of public and higher education and of internal improvements; as chairman of the proper committee he wrote a report and introduced a bill favoring geological survey. In 1856 he was chosen as Presidential Elector for Alabama, and in 1857-59 was again returned to Congress from Alabama. During the Civil War he served in the Confederate Congress and army, at its close was elected President of Howard College, in Alabama, and two years later, first Professor of English in Richmond College, then Professor of Constitutional and International Law, and also of Philosophy, in the same institution. When he resigned his professorships he was chosen President of its Board of Trustees. He was appointed General Agent of the Peabody Education Fund in 1881, and addressed every Southern Legislature, some of them two or three times, in behalf of public and normal schools. He is one of the most ardent and eloquent advocates of the education of the Negro, as the best qualification for the maintenance and exercise of his fullest civil and constitutional rights. No man in our country has written, spoken and planned more earnestly in behalf of national aid for the removal and prevention of illiteracy.

In September, 1885, President Cleveland appointed him, without application on his own part, Minister Plenipotentiary to Spain. His reception by that court has been most cordial, and his labors there for the protection of American rights and the promotion of American commerce have been successful. His brethren repose great confidence in his practical wisdom and integrity. For this reason they commonly place him in responsible places when his presence is available. He is an able debater, perfectly conversant with parliamentary law. For several years he was Clerk, then Moderator of the Coosa River Association, President of the Alabama Baptist State Convention, also of the Virginia General Association, and of the Foreign Mission Board of the Southern Convention. Dr. Curry is a powerful and enthusiastic preacher of the Gospel. He received the degree of D.D. in 1857 from the Mercer University, and has preached much; but, though often invited, he has uniformly declined to become a pastor. The address which he delivered before the Evangelical Alliance, in New York, in 1873, on the union of Church and State, excited universal attention, and the Liberation Society of Great Britain adopted and stereotyped it as one of their effective documents. The Rochester University conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Laws in 1872. He demands of all, and in himself presents, unsullied integrity in public life and the inseparableness of private and public morality.

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

In considering the introduction and spread of Baptist principles into the other colonies, it will be proper to take them up in the chronological order in which their first Churches severally were formed. First of all, then, we have Connecticut, which colony lived under the charter of Charles II, as regards religious privileges, until 1818. As early as A.D. 1674 some Baptists of Rhode Island occasionally crossed the borders and immersed converts in Connecticut, who united with their Churches in Rhode Island. These, however, were regarded as unwarrantable innovations; they attracted the attention of the Standing Order (Presbyterial-Congregational), and the secular power was invoked to suppress them. One of these invasions took place at Waterford, but they were not oft-repeated. The ministers of the State Church were supported by levying and collecting their salaries regularly with other taxes. Trumbull informs us that before 1706 the persons of the ministers were free from all taxation, but their families and estates were taxable; in that year the Legislature exempted these from taxation. The law made the State Church the lawful congregation, and subjected all persons who neglected attendance there on 'the Lord's Day' to a fine of twenty shillings. It also forbade 'separate companies in private houses,' and inflicted a fine of ten pounds, with 'corporal punishment by whipping, not exceeding thirty stripes for each offense,' on every 'person, not being a lawful minister,' who 'shall presume to profane the holy sacraments by administering or making a show of administering them to any person or persons whatever, and being thereof convicted.' Connecticut and New Haven were separate governments till the reign of Charles II, when they were united under one charter. But this basis of government did not contain a single clause authorizing the Legislature to enact any religious laws, establish any form of religion or any religious tests, and, properly speaking, the attempt to bind these on the colony was of itself a usurpation.

A few scattered Baptists in the south-eastern part of the colony humbly petitioned the General Court in 1704 for liberty to hold meetings and establish a Church in Groton. Their prayer seems not to have been noticed, but, nothing daunted, the same band sent a fraternal request to Valentine Wightman, a gifted young preacher in Rhode Island, to become their leader, and in 1705 he came and organized them into the First Baptist Church of Connecticut. This pioneer body numbered less than a score, but they were firm, united and liberal minded. They presented their brave young pastor at once with twenty acres of land, and Deacon William Stark erected upon it a suitable parsonage. It is still a flourishing Church in the village of Mystic, after a life of one hundred and eighty- one years. Wightman was a descendant of Edward, who was the last martyr under James I, and whose ashes fell amongst the fagots of Lichfield market-place in 1611. This first Baptist pastor of Connecticut was an extremely serene and quiet character, but his amiable soul flashed the fire of a true witness from his eye upon the bigots who would interfere with him. He possessed sound learning, great zeal and deep piety. A certain calm discretion made him symmetrical and consistent, and adapted him to cautious but intrepid leadership in his new and trying position. He was a close student of the Scriptures and a powerful preacher, caring tenderly for the flock of Christ. Then, he brought from his native commonwealth a mild tolerance of spirit for all men, with a love for their salvation which disarmed opposition. Yet no Church could legally exist without permission from the secular power; but it was doubly difficult to secure this tolerance for Baptists. Moreover, Wightman sought not the approbation of the neighboring clergy, for he contended that it was the right of every man to worship God as he pleased. His quiet firmness had much to do with that

The American Baptists

gradual relaxing of the law which at last permitted a man to show that he was a member in a Baptist Church and paid toward its support, and so could be furnished with a certificate of exemption from liability to distraint or imprisonment for refusing to pay the minister's tax of the State establishment.

Mr. Wightman and his flock never were so severely oppressed as were some Baptists in the colony. His sterling worth commanded the respect of the neighboring clergy from the first, and the enlightened tact by which he led his people often silenced the clamor of the Standing Order in that vicinity. But in many other places nothing could prevent seizure of the property of Non-conformists for refusing to pay the clerical tax, enforced as it often was by fiery zealots clothed with brief authority. At one time a number of Baptists, including their minister, were taken in the very act of worshipping God. They were promptly incarcerated in the New London county jail for attending a religious meeting 'contrary to law on the Sabbath day.' One of the prisoners was a babe at its mother's breast; the prison was fireless and the weather bitterly cold, yet the child lived and grew up to be a successful preacher of the Baptist faith, for which he innocently suffered.

Ebenezer Frothingham, of Middletown, wrote a book in 1767, in which he says that as a Separate he was confined in Hartford prison for nearly five months, for nothing but exhorting and warning the people after the public worship was done and the assembly dismissed. And while confined there five others were imprisoned for the same crime. He also says that 'Young Deacon Drake, of Windsor, now in Hartford prison for the ministers' rates and building their meeting-house, altho' he is a Baptist, is accounted a harmless, godly man; and he has plead the privilege of a Baptist through all the courts, and been at great expense, without relief, till at last the Assembly has given him a mark in his hand, and notwithstanding this, they have thrust him to prison for former rates, with several aggravations which I shall omit. But as to what the Constitution does to relieve the poor deacon, he may there die, and the cry of blood, blood, go up into the ears of a just God.'

In other cases, venerable ministers of the Gospel were whipped at the town-post, or at the tail of an ox-cart, as they were driven through the town. Sometimes they were placarded and placed on horseback, and otherwise ignominiously treated for preaching Christ. Nathan Jewett, of Lyme; a member of the Baptist Church there, was expelled from the Legislature because he was not of the Standing Order.

Still, one Church slowly grew up after another. In 1710 a Baptist Church was organized at Waterford; in 1735 another in Wallingford; one in Stonington, one in Lyme and one in Colchester the same year, and one at Saybrook in 1744. The first Baptist meetings were not held in Norwich till 1770, and in other large towns it was much later still before Churches were formed. When the minister's tax was to be collected, the dissenting layman's cow or the contents of his corn-crib were seized and taken to the town post to be sold, and the contumacious delinquent considered himself fortunate if he escaped the stocks, always found hard by the sign-post or the jail. Here follows one of the old forms under which these outrages were committed: 'LEVY.' To Samuel Perking, of Windham, in Windham County, a Collector of Society Taxes in the first Society in Windham: 'Greeting: By authority of the State of Connecticut, you are hereby commanded forthwith to levy and collect of the persons named in the foregoing list herewith committed to you, each one his several proportion as therein set down, of the sum total of such list, being a rate agreed upon by the inhabitants of said Society for the purpose of defraying the expenses of said Society, and to deliver and pay-over the sums which you shall collect to the Treasurer of said Society within sixty days next coming; and if any person shall neglect or refuse to pay the sum at which he is assessed; you are

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

hereby commanded to distrain the goods, chattels, or lands of such person so refusing; and the same being disposed of as the law directs, return the overplus, if any, to the respective owners; and for want of such goods, chattels, or lands whereon to make distress, you are to take the body or bodies of the persons so refusing, and them commit to the keeper of the gaol in said County of Windham within the prison, who is hereby commanded to receive and safe keep them until they pay and satisfy the aforesaid sums at which they are respectively assessed, together with your fees, unless said assessment, or any part thereof, be legally abated. Dated at Windham, this 12th day of September, 1794.'

The efforts of the Baptists to throw off this yoke are matters of well-attested history. They adopted resolutions in Churches and Associations, they carried up petitions from year to year to the law-making bodies, and sent the ablest counsel, at heavy expense, to seek the redress of grievances and demand complete equality before the law, for many years. Indeed, the 'Baptist Petition,' as it was called, came to be almost a by-word amongst the State officers, and when at last, in 1818, the rights of conscience were secured in the new constitution, it was a matter of surprise, and most of all were the Baptists themselves surprised, to find that the article which changed the fundamental law on that subject was drawn by Rev. Asahel Morse, one of their own ministers from Suffield.

As in Massachusetts, so in Connecticut, the New Light or Separate movement under Whitefield and Edwards resulted in the rapid advancement of the Baptist cause. For about twenty years, from 1740 to 1760, perpetual excitement abounded and about forty Separatist Churches were established, taking the very best elements, in many cases, out of the State Churches. In process of time a number of them became Baptist Churches bodily, and in other cases they gradually blended with the Baptists, for their cause was one in essence. They demanded deliverance from the curse of the Half-way Covenant and freedom to worship God as regenerate people. So enraged did the State Churches and the Legislature become, that they repealed a former act under which Baptists and others of 'sober consciences' had enjoyed partial liberty, and then, as Trumbull says, there was 'no relief for any person dissenting from the established mode of worship in Connecticut. The Legislature not only enacted these severe and unprecedented laws, but they proceeded to deprive of their offices such of the justices of the peace and other officers as were New Lights, as they were called, or who favored then-cause.'

The two Clevelands, students, and their tutors were expelled from Yale College by President Clapp because they attended a private meeting 'for divine worship, carried on principally by one Soloman Paine, a lay exhorter, on several Sabbaths in September and October last.' These two young men pleaded that this was the meeting where their godly father went, and for this crime of bowing before God they were excluded from that honorable institution. The same spirit prevailed in the Congregational Churches. According to Whittemore, the Church at Middletown had for some years a few members in its fellowship who entertained Baptist views. But at a meeting held August 9th, 1795, it passed the following: 'When members of this Church shall renounce infant baptism and embrace the Baptist principles and practice baptism by immersion, they shall be considered by that act as withdrawing their fellowship from this Church, and we consider our covenant obligations with them as Church members dissolved.' When it is remembered that their membership was not of choice but of law, we see the injustice of this act. 'Rev. Stephen Parsons, who had been pastor of the Church for seven years, announced one Sabbath morning that he had embraced the opinions of the Baptists and was immediately dismissed...He with a number of his brethren and sisters withdrew,

The American Baptists

were soon after baptized, and on the 29th of October, 1795, a meeting was held in the house of a Mr. Doolittle for the purpose of recognizing the Church.' The venerable Judge Wm. H. Potter, an alumnus of Yale, thus eloquently sets forth the temper of the times. He says: 'The unfortunate Separates were pursued into every calling, hunted out of every place of trust, hauled before clergy and Church, dragged before magistrates, and suffered without stint and without much complaint countless civil and ecclesiastical penalties, as heretics or felons, but oppression only confirmed their faith and thrust them into a closer union with their Baptist fellow-sufferers who, as in duty bound, joyfully espoused the cause and rights of the Separates. And why should they not fraternize?

The Baptists, upon whom persecution had well-nigh exhausted its impotent attempts, either to extirpate or seduce, were, to be sure, regarded by the hierarchy as impracticables, and had been invidiously permitted under the Act of the first year of William and Mary to organize Churches. But they were still laboring under many legal impediments and more prejudices. Their memories, if not their backs, were still smarting under the pungent discipline of the same hierarchy. Their preachers had been familiar with fines, forfeitures and prisons, and their people with distrains, odium and disfranchisement. Herein there must have been a common sympathy. Then, the soul-stirring doctrines of New Lights were already the cherished doctrines of the Baptists. The same annunciation of the rich, free and sovereign grace of God, and the doctrines of the cross which Whitefield and Wheelock made on a wider field and with such signal success, were identical with those of Wightman and the Callenders. The Separates, therefore, had little to sacrifice in coining to the Baptists.'

The law treated the Separates as malefactors and outcasts, and some of them were handled so much worse than many of the Baptists that the latter sympathized with them, succored them and threw open their doors to make them welcome as brethren in like tribulation.

At first, when a Baptist and Separate Church became one, or when large numbers of Separates united with a Baptist Church, the chief difference between the two was found in the lax views of the Separates on the subject of communion. The Supper had always been grossly perverted by the Standing Order to ecclesiastical-politico uses, and these notions the so-called New Lights brought with them to the Baptists. They could not easily rid themselves of this relic of State Church life, but in process of time they adopted healthier views and, falling into Baptist line, fully embraced their principles. While the few Baptist ministers of that day were not men of learning, they commonly possessed a fair public school education, which they used with sound sense in laying broad foundations for their free and independent Churches. They had slight salaries or none at all, which, for the general good of Baptist interests, left them free to devote a portion of their time to other fields besides their own pastorates, doing the work of evangelists and planting new Churches in many places. Wightman did much of this work, extending his labors as far as New York city. Three generations of Wightmans succeeded to the pastorate of the First Church, Groton, covering, with short intervals, a century and a quarter.

Our few and feeble Churches were thoroughly evangelical and simple in their utterances of divine truth, and their Declarations of Faith were little else than a succession of quotations from the Bible, whose text alone was their creed. Their general practice also was as consistent as their doctrines, but at one time they partook to some extent in their worship of the general excitement which attended the preaching of Whitefield, Davenport and the elder Edwards. No part of America was more deeply moved than Connecticut under the labors of these men. Whitefield's preaching,

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

especially, agitated the Churches of the Standing Order to their center. They had foolishly closed all their pulpits against him, and multitudes assembled in the open air to listen to his preaching. A fair proportion of their clergy, however, sympathized with him and went with their people, nor were they alarmed at those physical and so-called fanatical manifestations which accompanied his preaching, described by Edwards. Often a subtle but irresistible influence would fall upon his congregations, somewhat resembling a panic on a battlefield. Multitudes would surge back and forth, would raise a simultaneous cry of agony, many would fall to the earth, remaining long in a state of unconsciousness, and then awoke as from a trance-like state enraptured with an ecstatic joy.

The Baptists, with such of the Standing Order as co-operated with Whitefield and his immediate followers, all blended in his support, and wonderful things occurred through this new discipleship. It is stated on good authority that the parsonage at Center Groton was the scene of one of the most remarkable sermons of this great preacher. The upper windows of the house were removed and a platform raised in front, facing a large yard full of forest trees. When Whitefield passed through the window to this stand and cast his eye over the multitude, he saw a number of young men who, imitating Zaccheus in the sycamore, had climbed these trees and were-perched on their limbs. The kind hearted orator asked them to come down, saying: ' Sometimes the powder of God falls on these occasions and takes away the might of strong men. I wish to benefit your souls and not have your bodies fall out of these trees.' He expected to see them come down to the ground as birds that were shot; and choosing the valor of discretion they came down, only to be prostrated under the sermon. Great numbers of his hearers went home to lead new lives, and it is said that more than one of these young men became preachers of the new faith.

No Baptist Church in Connecticut fought a nobler battle for life and freedom than that at Norwich. Dr. Lord was the pastor of the State Church there, and appears to have been a very excellent man. He was inclined at first to work with the revivalists, but the breaking up of the ancient order of things amongst what were known as the Old Lights alarmed him, and the bent of circumstances forced him into ultra-conservatism. Then he began to oppress and persecute those of his congregation who took the other side, and the result was that a large secession from his Church formed a new Separatist body. In due time a Baptist Church sprang chiefly out of this and Norwich became a large source of Baptist power. Poor Parson Lord had hard times generally in these contests and, in particular, was compelled to collect his own taxes. Denison tells us that 'he called upon a Mr. Colher, who was a barber, when the following dialogue ensued:

Dr. L. "Mr. Colher, I have a small bill against you."

Mr. C. "A bill against me, Dr. Lord? for what?" Dr. L. "Why, your rate for my preaching." "

Mr. C. "For your preaching? Why, I have never heard you. I don't recollect that I ever entered your meeting-house."

Dr. L. "That's not my fault, Mr. Colher, the meeting-house was open."

Mr. C. "Very well. But, look here; I have a small bill against you, Dr. Lord." Dr. L. "A bill against me? for what?"

Mr. C. "Why, for barbering."

Dr. L. "For barbering? I never before entered your shop." Mr. C. "That's not my fault, Dr. Lord, my shop was open!"

The American Baptists

The Norwich Church prospered, and our brethren met for worship in their own houses until want of room compelled them first to gather in a rope-walk, and then to erect a meeting-house of their own. But they, as well as the Separates, were slow of heart to learn all that the Baptists taught them, and it is quite delicious to know that they burnt their own fingers in consequence. In those days, when the State Churches wanted to build a meeting-house, they commonly asked the Legislature for a Lottery Grant on which to raise money. The Norwich Baptists, thinking it no harm for them to be as ridiculous as other respectable folk, applied to the General Assembly for such a Grant. Whereupon, that August body refused: first, because the Baptists did not indorse the Ecclesiastical Laws; secondly, because they were not known in law as a denomination; thirdly, because Rev. Mr. Sterry, the Baptist pastor at Norwich, was the co-editor of a Republican paper. For these reasons, our brethren were informed that they could not be allowed to gamble like good, legal and orthodox saints. This word to the wise had a wholesome effect upon them, for although they have now built a number of excellent church edifices, and have liberally helped others to do the same, they have never once since asked for a State Lottery to help them in building houses for God. Few States in our Union can show a nobler list of pioneer Baptist pastors or a more illustrious line of successors than Connecticut. Amongst the first we have the three Wightmans, Valentine, Timothy and Gano; then follow the four Burrowses, Silas, Amos, Peleg and Roswell. The three Allens follow: Ichabod, Rufus and Stephen; and the two Bolles, David and Matthew, the Palmers and the Rathbuns: together with Backus and Baldwin and a list that cannot now be named. In later times we have had Knapp and Cushman, Swan and Hodge, Ives and Miller, Turnbull and Phelps, Palmer and Lathrop, their illustrious peers. Many of these have long since entered into their Master's joy, and over a few others the sheen of their holy Home begins to glow, falling softly on their scant locks. To these their departed brethren begin to look like shining ones sent back with lamps of Christ's trimming to escort them to the celestial gate. Heaven bless the waiting band, and when their work is done give them a triumphant entrance into the city of the great King.

The Baptists of Connecticut now number 6 Associations, 122 ordained ministers; 124 churches. and 21,666 members.

NEW YORK. *The Documentary History of New York* first mentions Baptists in 1644, and calls them 'Mnists,' Mennonists or Mennonites, but does not tell us in what part of the colony they were found. The Director and Council of New Netherland treated them harshly enough. On the 6th of June, 1641, they gave the 'free exercise of religion' to the Church of England, and October 10th, 1645, granted a special charter to the town of Flushing with the same right. They soon found, however; that sundry heretics, Independents, of Middleburg (Newtown), and Lutherans, of New Amsterdam, were using the same liberty, and they took the alarm. On February 1st, 1686, the authorities decreed that all 'conventicles and meetings' held in the province, whether public or private, should be 'absolutely and expressly forbidden;' that only the 'Reformed Divine service, as this is observed and enforced according to the Synod of Dootrecht,' should be held,

'Under the penalty of one hundred pounds Flemish, to be forfeited by all those who, being unqualified, take upon themselves, either on Sundays or other days, any office, whether of preacher, reader or singer, in such meetings differing from the customary and legal assemblies, and twenty-five like pounds to be forfeited by every one, whether man or woman, married or unmarried, who is found in such meetings.'

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

They disclaimed all intention to put any constraint of conscience in violation of 'previously granted patents,' and imprisoned some Lutherans, which act excited such indignation that they were compelled, June 14th, 1656, to permit the Lutherans to worship in their own houses. Not content with this, they threw themselves into direct collision with the town of Flushing, in violation of their patent granting religious freedom to that town. Under its charter Flushing, by resolution, claimed the right of Quakers and other sects to worship God within their jurisdiction without restraint. On the 26th of March, 1658, therefore, the New Netherland authorities passed an ordinance annulling the right of Flushing to hold town meetings, forbidding heresy in the town and requiring its magistrates to select 'a good, honest, pious and orthodox minister,' subject to the approval of the provincial authorities, and requiring each land-owner of that town to pay twelve stivers annually for his support, together with tenths if necessary, and that all who would not comply with these demands within six weeks should lose their goods, which than be sold, and they must take themselves 'out of this government.'

We have seen in a previous chapter that many of the New England colonists fled to the Dutch for liberty to worship God and keep a good conscience. Amongst these were some of the friends of Hanserd Knollys in 1641, and a little later Lady Deborah Moody, widow of Sir Henry of Garsden, in Wiltshire. She, together with Mrs. King, of Swampscott, and the wife of John Tillton, was tried at the Quarterly Court, December, 1642, 'for houldinge that the baptizing of infants is noe ordinance of God.' It does not appear that she was actually banished from Massachusetts, but having first fled from England on account of persecution, and finding herself an object of arraignment and reproach in her new home, for the free expression of her religions views, her sensitive and high spirit revolted, and she determined to abandon Massachusetts and seek peace amongst strangers. In 1643 she went to New Amsterdam, thirteen years before the New Netherland authorities issued their tyrannical decree. Governor Winthrop tells us that she did this 'against the advice of all her friends.' Many others affected with Anabaptism removed thither also. She was after excommunicated from the Salem Church. In a letter written by Endicott to Winthrop, dated Salem, the 22d of the second month, 1644, he says that Mr. Norrice had informed him that she intended to return, and he advises against her return, 'unless shee will acknowledge her ewill in opposing the Churches & leave her opinions behinde her, ffor she is a dangerous woeman. My brother Ludlow writt to mee that, by means of a booke she sent to Mrs. Eaton, shee questions her owens baptisme, it is verie doubtfull whether shee will be re-claymed, shee is so far ingaged.' On her way from Massachusetts she stopped for a time at New Haven, where she made several converts to her new views and fell into fresh difficulties in consequence. As Winthrop tells us, Mrs. Eaton, wife of the first Governor of New Haven Colony, was one of these converts. She also was a lady of high birth and culture, the daughter of an English Bishop. Davenport, her pastor, was at unwearied pains to reclaim her from the 'error' of 'imagining that pedobaptism is unlawful.' It was alleged against her, that she importuned Lady Moody 'to lend her a booke made by A.R.'" The records of the Congregational Church at New Haven show that she was severely handled for stoutly denying that 'Baptism has come in the place of circumcision, and is to be administered unto infants.' By some Lady Moody has been called a follower of George Fox, but this was three years before he began to preach in England. On the southwest coast of Long Island, near New Amsterdam, a settlement had been formed in 1643, which Governor Kieft had named Gravesend, after a Dutch town on the Maas. Lady Moody took a patent of laud there of him, December 19th, 1645, which, among other things, guaranteed 'the free

The American Baptists

libertie of conscience according to the costome of Holland, without molestation or disturbance from any madgistrate or madgistrates, or any other ecclesiastical minister that may pretend jurisdiction over them.' For a time, her religious sentiments disturbed her amicable relations with the Dutch authorities, without regard to her patent. Here she died, it is supposed, about 1659. Many others of like sentiments gathered about her, 'with liberty to constitute themselves a body politic as freemen of the Province and town of Gravesende,' according to the patent. The learned James W. Gerard says: 'The settlers at Gravesend seem to have been generally affected with Anabaptist views, and to have had no settled Church.'

Clearly, there were two Baptist ministers at Flushing in those days, the first in order of time being Rev. Francis Doughty. Mandeville, in his 'Flushing Past and Present,' says that he fled from 'the troubles in England, and found that he had got out of the frying-pan into the fire.' He preached at Lynn and Taunton, Mass., 'and denied baptism to infants.' At Taunton he was dragged out of the public assembly and brought before the magistrates, charged with saying that 'Abraham ought to have been baptized.' He then fled to Long Island and became the first pastor at Flushing, but in 1656 went to Virginia. 'He was unquestionably the first religious teacher in Flushing, and had adopted Baptist views of the ordinance of baptism.'

Aside from Lady Moody and Mr. Doughty, the first full account that we have from the records of New Motherland that there were Baptists in the colony, is found in an official paper on 'The State of Religion,' drawn up 'and signed by two clergymen of the Reformed Church, Megapolensis and Drissius. It is dated at 'Amsterdam, in N. Netherland,' the 5th of August, 1657, and is addressed to the 'Classis of Amsterdam.' They report Long Island religion as in a sad condition.

At ' Gravesend are reported Mennonites; yea, they, for the most part, reject infant baptism, the Sabbath, the office of preacher and the teachers of God's word, saying that through these have come all sorts of contention into the world. Whenever they come together the one or the other reads something for them. At Flushing they hitherto had a Presbyterian preacher who conformed to our Church, but many of them became endowed with divers opinions...They absented themselves from preaching, nor would they pay the preacher his promised stipend. The said preacher was obliged to leave the place and repair to the English Virginias...Last year a fomenter of evil came there. He was a cobbler from Rhode Island, in New England, and stated that he was commissioned by Christ. He began to preach at Flushing and then went with the people into the river and dipped them. This becoming known here, the fiscaal proceeded thither and brought him along. He was banished the province.'

The same paper states that at Middleburg (now Newtown) and at 'Heemstede' there were a number of people who were willing to listen to the preaching of Richard Denton at the Dutch Church: 'When he began to baptize the children of such parents as were not members of the Church they sometimes burst out of the church.'

'The cobbler,' a mere term of contempt, who 'dipped' his converts at Flushing 'last year,' that is, in 1656, was Rev. William Wickenden, of Providence. He was one of the first settlers of that city, resided there in 1636, signed the first compact in 1637, was a member of the Legislature in 1648, and from 1651 to 1655, again 1664, and died in 1669. In 1656 he visited Flushing, preached, immersed his converts in the river, and administered the Lord's Supper. Both Broadhead and O'Callagan give a full account of his treatment in consequence. Under date of November 8th, 1656, O'Callagan says: 'The Baptists at Flushing were the next to feel the wrath of the law. William

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

Hallett, sheriff of that place, "had dared to collect conventicles in Ills house, and to permit one William Wickendam [properly Wickenden] to explain and comment on God's Holy Word, and to administer sacraments, though not called thereto by any civil or clerical authority." He had, moreover, assisted at such meeting and afterward "accepted from the said Wickendain's hands the bread in the form and manner the Lord's Supper is usually celebrated." For this violation of the statute Hallett was removed from office and fined fifty pounds, failing to pay which he was to be banished.' On the 8th of November, 1656, the General Assembly of New Netherland 'ordained' that Wickenden should be condemned to pay a fine of one hundred pounds Flemish and be banished out of the province of New Netherland, 'the aforesaid Wickendam to remain a prisoner till the fine and cost of the process shall be paid.' The Council being informed, however, by reliable parties, that he was a very poor man, 'with a wife and many children, by profession a cobbler, which trade he neglects, so that it will be impossible to collect anything from him,' the fine and costs were remitted, and he was condemned on the 11th of November 'to immediate banishment, under condition that if ever he be seen again in the province of New Netherland he shall be arrested and kept in confinement till the fine and costs are paid in full.' Like other religious tyrants, the more the Dutch authorities persecuted the heretics the worse off they found themselves, and the more indignant they became. Hence, on September 21st, 1662, they say that because they 'Find by experience that their hitherto issued publications and edicts against conventicles and prohibited assemblies are not observed and obeyed as they ought, therefore, by these presents, they are not only renewed but enlarged in manner following. Like as they have done heretofore, so they prohibit and interdict as yet that besides the Reformed worship and service no conventicles or meetings shall be kept in this province, whether it be in houses, barns, ships, barks; nor in the woods nor fields, upon forfeiture of fifty guildens for the first time, for every person, whether man or woman or child that shall have been present at such prohibited meetings, and twice as much for every person, whether it be man or woman or child, that has exhorted or taught in such prohibited meetings, or shall have lent his house, barn, or any place to that purpose; for ye second time twice as much, for the third time four times as much, and arbitrary punishment besides.'

A further provision prohibited the importation, circulation or reception of any books, writings or letters, deemed 'erroneous,' fining the importers and circulators a hundred gulden, and the receivers fifty gulden. From this time onward there are numerous indications that many individual Baptists were found around Gravesend, Newtown and Flushing, and some signs that now and then one of the Mennonites from Long Island had crossed the river into what are now New York and Westchester Counties, but it is not likely that they had any visible Church existence.

The next trace of Baptist life that we find in New York came also from the East. Nicholas Eyers, supposed to have been a native-born citizen, a brewer, residing 'in the broad street of this city, between the house of John Michel Eyers and Mr. John Spratt,' invited Valentine Wightman, of Groton, Conn., to come and preach in his house. Eyers shows in his petition to the Governor that in February, 1715, his house had been registered by the Quarter Sessions 'for an Anabaptist meetinghouse,' and 'that he had been a public preacher to a Baptist congregation within this city for four years.' There is a perplexity of dates here, as between 1711, when he is said to have been a Baptist preacher, and 1714, when his name appears in the list of the baptized, which the writer sees no way of reconciling without further data. In 1711 or 1712 Wightman began a series of preaching visits, continuing them for about two years, and in 1714 he baptized Nicholas Eyers and eleven

The American Baptists

others. At first it was resolved that for fear of the rabble these twelve converts than be baptized in the night and the company went to the river, where the five females received the ordinance. At that point Mr. Eyers was seized with the conviction that they were doing wrong in shunning publicity, he remembered the words of the Lord Jesus: 'No man doeth any thing in secret, when he himself seeketh to be known openly.' He, therefore, consulted with the other six brethren and they agreed to postpone their baptism till morning. The next day they waited on Burnet, the Governor, with a request for protection; this he not only gave them but went to the river side with many of the most respectable citizens to witness the ordinance. All stood reverently, and at its close the Governor remarked: 'This was the ancient manner of baptizing, and is, in my opinion, much preferable to the practice of modern times.'

In 1715 the Quarter Sessions licensed Eyers' house for a Baptist meeting place. On January 1, 1720, he seems to have hired another place of meeting, and he asked the Governor to permit him to exercise the functions 'of a minister within this city to a Baptist congregation and to give him protection therein,' under the Act of Toleration. Rip Van Dam, 'one of His Majesty's Council for the Province of New York,' had rented this place to Eyers, 'only to be a publick meeting place of the Baptists wherein to worship Almighty God.' On the 13th of the same month the Mayor, Recorder and Aldermen certified 'that to the best of our knowledge and understanding he is blameless and free from any notorious and public slander and vice, has given himself the good name and reputation of his neighbors of being a sober, just and honest man, and is said to be an Anabaptist as to his profession in religion.' January 23d, 1721, Governor Burnet gave him a permit to preach under the laws of William and Mary. This curious document begins thus: 'Whereas, Mr. Nich. Eyers, brewer, a freeman and inhabitant of ye City of New York, pretending to be at present a teacher or preacher of a congregation of Anabaptists, which has had its beginning about five years ago within this city and has so continued hitherto.' "

This date implies that the congregation had taken a somewhat settled form in 1715, but Parkinson states that the Church was not constituted nor Eyers ordained till September, 1724, when Elders Valentine Wightman, of Groton, and Daniel Wightman, of Newport, conducted the services. This Church was so prospered that they bought a piece of ground on 'Golden Hill' and built a meeting-house in 1728. A map made from a survey by Wm. Bradford, dated 1728, shows that 'Golden Hill' took its rise at Queen Street (now Pearl) and continued up John Street to William, and also shows this meeting-house to have been located on the west side of Cliff, a little north of the northwest corner of Cliff, apparently on the property now occupied by Messrs. Phelps, Dodge, & Co. Benedict says that he found a letter amongst the papers of Backus, addressed by Elder James Brown to his Church in Providence, asking aid toward paying the debt on this church edifice, which had cost a considerable sum. He stated that the Rhode Island brethren had helped them the year before, but that the wealthiest member of the New York Church having left them, and the rest being poor, they were unable to discharge their debt. Mr. Brown thought that £25 or £30 would be the just proportion of the Church in Providence, and he subscribed ,1 thereof. A number of others gave 'thirteen barrels of cider' Between the brewer of New York and the cider-mills of Providence they were bound to float that church building on Golden Hill; yet the plan would not work. Eyers removed to Newport in 1731, where he died, and John Stephens took his place in New York. But he soon removed to South Carolina. Then one of the trustees claimed the church building and sold it as private property, when the Church, which had existed about eight years and consisted of

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

twenty-four members, disbanded. This closed the history of the first General Baptist Church in New York city.

That which is now the First Baptist Church in that city was organized on June 10th, 1762, and under most interesting circumstances, especially interesting because its history is indirectly connected with Roger Williams through Long Island and Block Island. In 1661 a company of sixteen Baptist emigrants from England, who found that they could not enjoy religious liberty in Massachusetts, united in purchasing Block Island and settled there. They soon applied to Roger Williams and John Clarke for aid and counsel, and through their influence, in 1663, Block Island was admitted to share the privileges of the charter which Rhode Island had secured from Charles II. In 1664 a deputation was sent from Block Island to the General Assembly of Rhode Island to ask for civil protection. Their request was referred to a committee, of which Roger Williams was chairman, who reported, that as his majesty had granted in the charter 'that no person within the said colony at any time hereafter shall be in any way molested, punished, disquieted, or called in question for any difference in opinion in matters of religion, and do not actually disturb the civil peace of the said colony,' the people of Block Island were entitled to the same rights. The islanders, therefore, organized a miniature democracy for local civil government, and, in 1665, sent their first representatives to the Rhode Island General Court. In civil polity it adopted the principles of Roger Williams, and in the exercise of its religious freedom it introduced worship after the order observed by Baptists. The sixteen original proprietors set apart a portion of land to be known as the Ministers' Lot, for the maintenance of that worship.

James Sands, one of the first settlers and the first representative from Block Island in the Rhode Island Assembly, was an 'Anabaptist,' and Niles, his grandson, the historian of the Island, says that 'he did not differ in religious belief from the other settlers.' For about ninety years lay preachers, taken from amongst themselves, continued regular worship after the Baptist order, and without the formal organization of a Church. Until that time they met in each other's houses, but then they built a meeting-house, and from that period to this they have built seven in succession. In 1759 they engaged Rev. David Sprague to preach for them: 'So long as said Sprague shall serve the inhabitants of the town by preaching to them the Gospel of Christ according to the Scriptures of truth, making them and them only the rule of his faith, doctrine and practice.' A Baptist Church was organized on Block Island October 3d, 1772, with Elder Sprague as pastor and Thomas Dodge as deacon. They adopted the ordinary articles of faith used at that time, that on the ordinances being the ninth and reading thus: 'We believe that baptism and the Lord's Supper are ordinances of Christ to be continued in his Church and practiced by believers, after his own example and in obedience to his commandments, until his second coming, and that the former is requisite to the latter.' From that day there has been a Baptist Church on the island, and none other; and now, out of a resident population of about 1,500 the Baptists number fully 500 members in communion. Livermore, a late historian, says that,

'In no part of the world, perhaps, has religious freedom been maintained so purely for two hundred years as on Block Island. Here it has never been disturbed by any civil enactments. Here no ecclesiastical authority has ever infringed upon private opinions of religious faith and practice. Here the Church has never felt the overruling power of bishops or synod. Here no religious duties have been enforced upon helpless infants. Here the ordinances have ever been administered in their primitive simplicity. Here the acts of sprinkling, pouring and signing with the cross have never been witnessed. Here the minister has no more ruling authority

The American Baptists

in the Church than the youngest member. No authority is recognized in it except that which comes from the Scriptures.'

Twelve years after the organization of this Church Thomas Dodge became its pastor, and some of the best families in New England have sprung from this settlement, especially the descendants of the Sands, Ray, Terry, Rathbone, Dodge and Niles. Roger Williams was deeply concerned in the welfare of this little republic, was intimate with its early settlers, and Simon Ray, Jr. married his granddaughter. Thomas Dodge, grandson of Tristram Dodge, one of the original settlers of Block Island, settled at Cow Neck, Long Island, about 1705-10, and was soon followed by Samuel, another grandson. Thomas, it is supposed, built the old homestead still found on Dodge Pond, and from there the family spread to Cow Bay, where we find Dodge Island, near to Sands Point, named after John Sands, who was one of Elder Sands' family from Block Island. Jeremiah Dodge, a great-grandson of the original Tristram, was born at Cow Neck, May, 1716; he was a shipbuilder, having learned his trade from his brother, Wilkie. He removed to New York to follow his business not far from the years 1737-40, and died there in 1800. He brought the old Baptist principles of the family with him, and in 1745 we find the few scattered Baptists of New York meeting in his house and that of Joseph Meeks for prayer-meetings, Dodge and Dr. Robert North, a former member of the disbanded Church, being the leaders of the little congregation. Joseph Meeks was converted in 1745, and Elder Benjamin Miller, of Scotch Plains, N. J., came to New York to baptize him. Soon John Pyne, a licentiate living at Fishkill, was invited to come to their help. In 1750 Mr. Pyne died, and Elder James Carman, of Cranberry, near Hightstown, N. J., visited them and baptized several. They numbered thirteen members in 1753, and became a branch of the Scotch Plains Church. Mr. Miller came to break bread to them once in three mouths. Their numbers increased so rapidly that they were obliged to hire a room to contain the congregation. In what is now called William Street (between Fulton and John) there was a rigging-loft, on which hung a large sign of a horse and cart, from which the street was known as Cart-and-Horse Lane. Here they met from three to four years, when its owner sold it and they returned to Mr. Meeks' house, where they met about a year longer. They then purchased ground and built the second Baptist meeting-house on Golden Hill, and entered it in March, 1760. A map in Valentine's Manuals shows the location of this building to have been in Gold Street, on the west side, just south of the south-west corner of what is now Fulton. Their membership having increased to twenty-seven, they took their letters from Scotch Plains and, with the assistance of Benjamin Miller and John Gano, were constituted a Church in 1762, adopting the London Confession of 1688. On the same day they elected Mr. Gano their pastor. As he was one of the first men of his times a brief sketch of his life may be necessary here.

John Gano was a direct descendant of the Huguenots of France, his grandfather, Francis, being obliged to fly from persecution in the Isle of Guernsey in consequence of the bloody edict revoking the Edict of Nantz. He settled in New Rochelle, in the State of New York. His son, Daniel, lived at Hopewell, N. J., and was the father of John, who was born at Hopewell, July 22d, 1727. While quite young John united with the Baptist Church there, and was ordained by that body May 29th, 1754, Isaac Eaton preaching the sermon. Before his ordination he had gone with Mr. Miller and Mr. Thomas on a tour into Virginia, and while there had followed what he believed to be a divine impulse to preach. On returning, his Church called him to account for such disorder, but before proceeding to condemn him, asked him to preach before them, hence his ordination; and at the next meeting of the Philadelphia Association he was sent on a mission to the South. There he traveled

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

extensively as far as South Carolina. While in the back settlements of Virginia he lodged with a family and overheard one of them say: 'This man talks like one of the Joneses.' On inquiry he was told that they were a family living over twenty miles thence who did nothing but pray and talk about Jesus Christ. He said: 'I determined to make it my next day's ride and see my own likeness.' He found a large family, many of whom had been lately converted, engaged in worship. The sick father was lying before the fire groaning with pain, and Gano asked him how he did? He replied: 'Oh! I am in great pain.' 'I am glad of it,' said the young preacher. The old man demanded with spirit what he meant. He answered: 'Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth,' and the sick man fell in love with him.

On reaching North Carolina, in company with another young man, they arrived at a plantation where they were invited to stay all night. The planter asked him 'if he was a trader,' to which he answered 'yes.' He then asked him how he succeeded. Gano replied, not so well as he wished. Probably the goods did not suit. The preacher said that no one had complained of that. The planter suggested that he might be holding his goods too high, to which his friend replied that any one might have them below their own price. The man said that he would trade on these terms. Gano then asked him: 'If gold tried in the fire, yea, that which was better than the fine gold, wine and milk, durable riches and righteousness, without money and without price, would suit him?' 'O' said the planter, 'I believe you are a minister,' and then he declared to him the freeness and fullness of grace.

On arriving at Charleston, he preached there for Mr. Hart; and in his account of the services Mr. Gano writes: 'When I arose to speak, the sight of so brilliant an audience, among whom were twelve ministers and one of whom was Mr. Whitefield, for a moment brought the fear of man upon me; but, blessed be the Lord! I was soon relieved from this embarrassment. The thought passed my mind, I had none to fear and obey but the lord.' On his return to North Carolina, during the French War, he was informed that he was to be seized as a spy; but when he reached the place, instead of passing through secretly, he stopped at the public house and asked the landlord whether the people would come to hear a sermon on a week-day. The man replied that shortly there was to be a general muster there for the county, and Gano sent to the colonel who was to arrest him, to know if it would be pleasant to him to have a short sermon addressed to the regiment before military duty. They all paid profound attention but one man, to whom Gano said that he was ashamed of him and wondered that his officers would bear with him. The colonel thanked the preacher, rebuked the man, and the evangelist pushed on his way. On reaching the Blue Ridge he entered a house in a storm, the owner of which was alarmed and asked him if he was 'a press-master.' He replied that he was. In great alarm the man wished to know whether he 'took married men.' Gano told him that he surely did, that his Master's service was good, with high wages, and he wanted his wife and children to enlist also. The man was very uneasy, however, while he was exhorted to volunteer for Christ. On reaching New Jersey he first settled at Morristown for two years, and then at Yadkin, N. C., whence he was obliged to flee before the Cherokee Indians in the ravages of war. Shortly after this he took the New York pastorate, in which he remained five and twenty years with the most marked success, when he removed to Kentucky; where he died at Frankfort in 1804. We shall meet him again in the Revolutionary War. It is but needful to add here that he was one of the most remarkable men in America in all the resources which native strength, sound judgment, wit, ingenuity, retentive memory, zeal and godliness furnish in times which try men's souls.

The First Church prospered so largely under Mr. Gano's ministry that the meeting-house was enlarged in 1763; crowds flocked to hear him. The late Dr. Bowen, of the Episcopal Church in New

The American Baptists

York, says that his father, who was a clergyman in the city in those days, told him that 'Mr. Gano possessed the best pulpit talents of any man that he ever heard.' Till 1763 this Church numbered only forty-one members, and two years before that it was scarcely known at all, although the little meeting-house had been built. Morgan Edwards came from Wales in 1761, and tells this pleasant anecdote:

'When I came to New York I landed in the morning and thought I would try if I could find any Baptists. I wandered up and down, looking at the place and the people, and wondering who of all the people I met might be Baptists. At length I saw an old man, with a red cap on his head, sitting in the porch of a respectable looking house. Ah, thought I, now this is one of the old inhabitants who knows all about the city; this is the man to inquire of. I approached him and said: "Good-morning, sir! Can you tell me where any Baptists live in this city?" "Baptists! Baptists!" said the old man, musing as if ransacking all the corners of his memory; "Baptists! I really don't know as I ever heard of any body of that occupation in these parts."

During the Revolutionary War the First Church was dispersed and its records suspended. No baptisms are recorded between that of Hannah Stillwell, April 28th, 1776, and that of Samuel Jones, afterward a deacon, on September 4th, 1784. The British forces occupied New York above seven years, during which time it was nearly ruined. No city in America was so long in the hands of the enemy and suffered so much. Its best inhabitants found shelter in other colonies, and the Tories made it their place of refuge. Pestilence and two great fires swept it, and the soldiery inflicted all the damage that they could. At the opening of the war there were nineteen churches in the city, but when it closed only nine of them could be used for worship. The Baptist meeting-house, having been used for a horse-stable, was almost in ruins. On his return to the city Gano found emptiness, desolation and ashes. The angels of God had not looked upon a more touching procession since that which united Calvary with Joseph's tomb, than that which solemnly moved into the wasted city from Harlem Heights. Washington and Clinton led it on horseback, followed by Knox with the remnant of the patriot army, some mounted and some on foot, with gaunt cheeks, weather-beaten, footsore and ragged, scarred and limping. Men who had left their bloody foot-prints upon the sharp frozen snows of Valley Forge were there, with the man at their head who had shivered with them through the dreariest winter of the war; the man who had carried them to God in prayer, night and morning, when anguish sat heavily on his camp and his own soul was struggling through the darkest days of life. John Gano soon followed and says: 'We collected of our Church about thirty-seven members out of upward of two hundred, some being dead, and others scattered into almost every part of the Union.' But as soon as the sanctuary could be decently cleansed, he rallied his people and preached to them from Hag. 2:3: 'Who is left among you that saw this house in her first glory? and how do ye see it now?' Under his ministry the days of prosperity soon returned until he baptized his last convert April 5th, 1788, and left for Kentucky. During his pastorate he had baptized into the Church 297, and received 23 by letter. Amongst the first Regents of the University of New York we find the name of this heroic man, with this notice: 'Rev. John Gano, a clerical scholar of rare culture, pastor of the infant Baptist Church for sixteen years prior to the war; had been a chaplain in the army, and upon returning to the city with the establishment of peace, could find but thirty-seven out of his two hundred Church members.' His family raised a beautiful monument to his memory in Cincinnati. An altar-like pedestal bears an obelisk of much grace, with deep niches on each side. In every one of these there is an allegorical figure, while angels and rich wreaths of flowers adorn the various

Chapter 9 - Baptists of Connecticut and New York

parts, the whole being crowned by an elaborate capital and a lambent urn. In the basso-relievo a shattered sepulcher is seen, from which a family has risen from the dead. Six years were spent in executing this delicate piece of workmanship.

Time fails to trace the remarkable history of this venerable Church through the striking ministry of Dr. Foster and William Colher to the close of the century. Shortly after Gano left, the question of singing disturbed them. The usage had prevailed of lining the verses of hymns sung, and now many wanted to sing from the books, whereupon fourteen persons, who wanted the hymns 'deaconed,' left and started the Second Baptist Church. 1790 this new Church got into a contention and divided, both parties claiming this name, but after a time they both dropped it, one taking the name of Bethel and the other of Fayette Street. The Bethel ceased to exist many years ago, but the Fayette Street had an illustrious history, first as the Oliver Street, and is now a noble body, known as the Baptist Church of the Epiphany, with Dr. Elder as pastor. Dr. Foster became pastor of the First Church in 1788, and before long some of the members, who could scent heresy from afar, discovered heterodoxy in his sermons. A serious disturbance followed, which resulted in the exclusion of thirteen persons in 1789. In 1790 twenty others took letters of dismission and the Second Church received the excluded, which fact probably fermented their own contentions and led to their division.

The New York Baptist Association was formed in 1791, comprising the Scotch Plains, Oyster Bay, Morris-town, Connoe-Brook [Northfield], Staten Island, with the First and Second New York Churches. So rapidly and noiselessly did the leaven of our principles and practices spread that, by the close of the century, Churches were planted in seventeen counties of New York, extending from Sag Harbor to the New Jersey line, and from Staten Island to the Canada line. In 1794, according to Asplund, the churches numbered 84, the ministers 109, and the members 5,263.

The American Baptists

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

Still following the chronological order, we note the rise of Baptists in these several colonies. We have seen that individual Baptists from Virginia were found, in NORTH CAROLINA in the middle of the seventeenth century; but the Shiloh Church, formed by Paul Palmer in Camden County, on the Chowan River, in 1727, was the first Church founded in that colony. Palmer was from the Welsh Tract, in Delaware, and was a correspondent of John Comer, according to whose Journal this Church numbered thirty-two members in 1729. Joseph Parker, probably one of Palmer's converts, formed the second Church, at Meherrin, in 1729; but it was not until 1740 that the third was formed, at Sandy Run, by members dismissed from the Meherrin Church. Emigrants from Virginia, in company with William Sojourner, formed the fourth Church, in Halifax County, in 1742; and in 1752 these had increased to sixteen Churches, all being General Baptists.

They were not thoroughly spiritual Churches. They held to the scriptural authority of the ordinances of Baptism and the Supper, but some of them did not demand faith and conversion before receiving these, and they added to them, as of about equal authority, the rites of love-feasts, laying on of hands after baptism, washing of feet, anointing the sick, the right hand of fellowship, the kiss of charity, and the public devoting of children without christening, or what John Leland called 'dry christening.' This state of things existed when that region of country was visited by Robert Williams, of South Carolina; Benjamin Miller, Peter P. Vanhorn, and John Gano, of New Jersey; with Shubael Stearnes, of Virginia. Then God raised up a spiritual people who accepted the whole truth.

It is remarkable to see what a missionary spirit pervaded our American Churches from the very first, especially put forth in practical efforts to take the Gospel into the new settlements. This subject is too interesting and vital to pass in silence, for the journey of a Baptist missionary meant the personal visitation of the scattered pioneers, who had gone to make homes for themselves in the wilderness. These men of God gathered the families in the region round about, preached to them, and frequently found members from the older settlements who, far away from the helps and restraints of Christian fellowship, had become careless about their religious life. The godless were led to Christ, the careless were reanimated by the missionary's earnest appeals, those who believed were baptized, frequently the whole community was moved religiously, and often a Baptist Church was organized. A second visit commonly resulted in the settlement of a pastor and the establishment of a branch Church in some adjacent neighborhood.

The South was particularly favored by such labors. Such men as William Tristoe, Abraham Marshall, Oliver Hort and Richard Furman caught much of the primitive, apostolic zeal and entered with all their powers into this work. An unknown correspondent of 'Rippon's Register' gives us a glimpse of such toils, in a letter of August 24th, 1790. He writes:

'In several counties of North Carolina I have preached to very numerous assemblies. At a "big meeting," as they call a convention, or when a stranger of any note visits them, it is seldom that the place of worship will contain half the congregation. If they have timely notice, hundreds think nothing of a distance of ten or twenty miles to meeting. Everyone has a horse, yes, even our poorest people have a horse to ride, and hence, when you arrive at the place appointed, you will see more horses tied all about the roads than can be seen at a fair in England, my native country. A stage, also, is erected, which you stand on to preach, and sometimes to two or three thousand hearers. I have preached, as was supposed, to three or four thousand. The meeting continues two or three days. There are frequently ten or a dozen ministers present, most of whom pray, preach, or exhort, as they find freedom. After the public service, those who live near the place of meeting,

The American Baptists

whether members or not, ask every person who comes from a distance to go home with them; and generally the greater the number who accept the invitation the better are they pleased, especially if a minister can be prevailed upon to be one of the guests. When you come to the house, they entertain you with the very best they have, both horses and men, and as soon as you have all dined, to preaching, praying, exhortation, etc. Near midnight you retire to rest; by sunrise in the morning, to prayers; then breakfast, and to public worship again, but not before your company is requested for the next night, if the meeting continues. This is the common practice in Georgia, South and North Carolina, in what we call the back part of the country. To a great many of these meetings I have been, and sometimes have seen a great deal of religion, and enjoyed the most solemn pleasures and comfortable opportunities I have ever had.' The West and Northwest in those days meant Central and Western New York, but there, many of these inspiring features of large and enthusiastic meetings were lacking. The journeys were often long and perilous, attended with much hardship. Then, sometimes, these godly men were not welcomed, and they found it necessary to shake off the dust of their feet against American settlements as Christ's Apostles did against the towns of Palestine. The missionaries were generally volunteers, but sometimes the Associations commissioned them. Messengers from the South appealed to the Philadelphia Association, in 1754, for the labors of a missionary, and they sent John Gano, who traveled as far as Charleston, lion. C. S. Todd, formerly the American Representative to Russia, draws this picture of Gano:

'He was, in person, below the middle stature, and when young, of a slender form, but of a firm, vigorous constitution, well fitted for performing active services with ease, and for suffering labors and privations with constancy...His presence was manly, open, and engaging. His voice strong and commanding, yet agreeable and capable of all those inflections which are suitable to express either the strong or tender emotions of an intelligent, feeling mind. In mental endowments and acquired abilities he appeared highly respectable; with clear conception and ready discernment, he formed readily a correct judgment of men and things. His acquaintance with the learned languages and sciences did not commence till he arrived at manhood, and was obtained chiefly by private instruction. To the refinement of learning he did not aspire; his chief object was such a competent acquaintance with its principles as would enable him to apply them with advantage to purposes of general usefulness in religion, and to the most important interests of society; and to this he attained.'

Thus endowed and armed, this holy man and his brethren of like spirit went to the Sandy Creek region in North Carolina. An Association was formed there in 1758. a monument to their fruitful labor, and by 1766 the Sandy Creek Church had aided in forming forty- two Churches. The Little River Church was another remarkable body. Formed in 1760, it increased to five hundred persons in three years and built five meeting-houses. These Churches had many contentions and alienations as Regulars and Separates for years; but these passed away when they became a thoroughly working people; they were too busy to quarrel, and now there is not a more efficient body of Baptists in the United States than those of South Carolina. Some of the mightiest names in our history have arisen in that State. Silas and Jesse Mercer, William T. Brantly, Basil Manly and a long line following, as Kerr and Howell, Poindexter and Mims, Brooks and Saunders, Emerson and Solomon, with a host of living men who would honor any Christian community. As far back as 1793, Asplund reports that they had 112 churches, 172 ministers, and 8,017 communicants. But in 1886, they have 2,177 churches, 915 ministers, and 211,984 communicants.

MARYLAND. The question of religious liberty in this colony will be noticed in another place. For the present it is only needful to note that in 1649 the Assembly enacted: 'That no persons professing to believe in Jesus Christ shall be molested in respect of their religion, or the free exercise thereof, or be compelled to the belief or practice of any other religion, against their consent, so that they be not unfaithful to the proprietary, or conspire against the civil government. That persons molesting any other in respect of his religious tenets shall pay treble damages to the party aggrieved

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

and twenty shillings to the proprietary. That the reproaching any with opprobrious epithets of religious distinctions shall forfeit ten shillings to the person aggrieved. That any one speaking reproachfully against the Blessed Virgin or the Apostles shall forfeit five pounds, but blasphemy against God shall be punished with death.'

When the first Baptist Church was founded in Maryland, it was a Roman Catholic colony, but our brethren were not persecuted in the proper sense of the term, although their protest against Rome was very strong. Henry Sator, an English General Baptist, appears to have formed the first Baptist Church in the colony, at Chestnut Ridge, near Baltimore, in 1742. Four years afterward it numbered 181 members, and, though feeble, it continues until this time. In 1754 it supplied members to form the Winter Run Church, in Harford County, and this, in turn, dismissed eleven members in 1785 to form the First Church in Baltimore. This last body has been greatly blessed, is now surrounded by many strong Churches, and has enjoyed the pastoral care of Dr. Williams for thirty-six years. The Waverly, Seventh and Leo Street Churches are all offshoots from the First. The Seventh is the Church served so long and successfully by the late Dr. Richard Fuller before he formed the Eutaw Place Church. His successor in the Seventh Church was that lovely spirit, Dr. W. T. Brantly.

From the first, Baptist growth has been very slow in Maryland. It contained only 17 churches, 13 ministers and 920 members in 1793; to-day it has 56 churches, 40 ministers, and 12,162 members. The Accomack Association of Virginia, however, was set off from the Salisbury in 1808.

There is no name which the Maryland Baptists more delight to honor than that of REV. RICHARD FULLER, D.D. He was born at Beaufort, S. G., April 22d, 1804, and was prepared to enter Harvard College by Rev. Dr. Brantly, but broken health compelled him to leave that institution when in his junior year. Able to return after an absence of five years, he was graduated in 1824 at the head of his class. He then studied law and rose to eminence in his profession. In 1831 he was converted at Beaufort, and says: 'My soul ran over with love and joy and praise; for days I could neither eat nor sleep.' He was baptized by Rev. H. O. Wyer, of Savannah, and united with the Baptist Church in his native place. He was soon chosen its pastor, was ordained in 1832 and labored in this field for fifteen years. When he left his lucrative law business to enter the ministry the Church was feeble, but under his faithful care it increased to about 200 white persons and 2,400 colored. His zeal was so great that he preached for weeks together in various parts of the South, and great numbers were brought to Christ. But in 1836 he was obliged to travel in Europe for his health. In 1847 he became pastor of the Seventh Baptist Church in Baltimore, a Church which numbered but 87 members at that time. Under his faithful toils it grew to the number of 1,200, and a body of its members retired with him to establish the new congregation, in which he remained five years, and from which, after much suffering, he was called to his reward on high, on the 20th of October, 1876.

As a preacher Dr. Fuller was appreciated throughout the nation, for he found but one answer to the question, How can a man preach with power? He believed the word of God with all his soul and walked with its Author continually. His might lay where his heart was, in his holy breathings after the Holy Spirit. Richard Fuller would have retired from the pulpit in a moment, if the balancing query of skepticism had arisen in his mind as to whether the line of Divine Inspiration ran here or there through the Book of God. He rested with all his weight on the Bible as God's book, and came to his congregations not with every kind of light and idle speculation, but fresh with holy ardor from the footstool of that throne from which that word had been spoken. To this he added the most painstaking study to ascertain by every form of help what the Scriptures required him to preach.

The American Baptists

Aside from the dutiful visitation of the sick and sorrowful, and other indispensable duties, his mind was bent upon the divine results of the coming Sabbath. Superficial men, who are total strangers to the throbbings of soul-agony and the toilsome exertions of soul-thought, flippantly attributed his great power to the absence of half a quire of paper from his pulpit, and prated about his being an extempore preacher. But neither paper nor its absence ever made preachers of them, simply because they were flippant. Dr. Fuller's printed sermons bear the attestation of noon-tide and midnight to the industry of his pen. Each sermon witnesses that it had been curiously inwrought in the depth of his soul from Monday morning till Saturday night, and when it went with him into the pulpit it was a part of himself, whether the paper which contained its words went with him or stayed at home. Hence, no offensive froth, fustian, rant, or diletanteism, found a home in his pulpit. There he found nothing unworthy of his crucified Lord and the solicitude of perishing men, because he took nothing with him but the worthy. He preached like a man of God, who had received from him a majestic personal presence, bordering on the imperial. He feared God enough to cultivate his voice and manner, framing their management on the best of rules and using them with consummate skill. Having a message from the Man of Calvary, he wished to deliver it as an accomplished pleader with men, for Jesus' sake. Believing that his body belonged to the crucified One, he gave himself no liberty to abuse it by injurious food, the use of degrading stimulants, or any other indulgence which showed that he despised the gift of God. He placed his great power of fancy, his vividness of perception, his methods of clear statement and his heart-pathos upon the altar of God's Lamb, and altogether the zeal of God's house consumed him. The writer once heard him when he showed himself to be a perfect master in the art of oratory, by denouncing the tricks of the orator in preaching. He wove one of the most fresh, vivid, and finished pieces of oratorical denunciation against dependence on pulpit oratorical effect, that man could put together. Under this spell he held his audience in breathlessness, and when they found a free breathing place men grew pale and nodded to their neighbors with a look which plainly said: 'What a horrible thing it is to be eloquent in the pulpit!' The Dr. did not intend to soar to the third heavens on the winds of inspired invective against pulpit eloquence, but he did, whether he intended it or not, and when we all returned to the earth with him, every man of us was ready to subscribe to the new litany: 'From false doctrine, heresy, and eloquence, good Lord deliver us!'

The Sator Church started with a keen zest against the Roman Catholic Communion. In what she called her 'solemn league and covenant,' her members bound themselves to 'abhor and oppose' 'Rome, Pope and popery, with all her antichristian ways,' which was all well enough, but it had been much better to have set up a strong defense against the grinding Antinomian and Anti-mission Pope, which divided and crippled the early Baptists of Maryland so sorely. A prairie fire does not desolate the plain worse than this blight crippled our people there at one time. In 1836 the Baltimore Association was rent asunder by this double curse. That year the Association met at Black Rock, and those who arrayed themselves against missionary movements, Sunday-schools, Bible and other benevolent societies, under the abominable pretense that they conflicted with the sovereignty of God in the kingdom of Christ, found themselves in a majority. They denounced these institutions as 'corruptions which were pouring in like a flood upon the Baptist Church,' and as 'cunningly devised fables.' Then they resolved that the Association could not hold fellowship with such Churches as united with such societies and encouraged others to do so, and dropped all these Churches from their minutes. Of course, the efforts of a few aggressive brethren were neutralized, and for a time all

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

missionary work was suspended, lest the Churches should be doing the Lord's work instead of their own. Instead of being left free to spread the Gospel, the faithful minority found their hands full to resist this mad tide of ultra-Calvinism, and in a small degree its influence is felt there to this day. Yet, as if to illustrate the truth that extremes meet and embrace, it is true that some of the most wise and zealous advocates of missionary work amongst Baptists have sprung from the bosom of our Maryland Churches. Amongst them we find Noah Davis, the real founder of the Publication Society, and Benjamin Griffith, its great Secretary; William Crane, William Gary Crane, Bartholomew T. Welsh, Franklin Wilson, and the present Baptist leaders there generally, who love missionary work as they love their lives. The very repression which they were obliged to oppose with all their might has only increased the intensity of these missionary advocates and supporters, and so the valiant little band of Baptists in Maryland are not a whit behind their sister Churches elsewhere in their sacrifices for Christ.

NEW HAMPSHIRE. Massachusetts claimed jurisdiction over New Hampshire in 1652, and it remained under that jurisdiction until 1679; but when the separation took place, New Hampshire retained the law which compelled all to support the Congregational Churches by public tax. The first unquestionable Baptist of that colony is found in the person of Rachel Scammon. Before her marriage she was a Miss Thurber, and lived at Rehoboth, Mass., but removed with her husband to Statham, N. H., in 1720. After entering her new home, she held to her Baptist convictions and frequently talked of them to her neighbors, but for forty years only one woman embraced her sentiments. This friend went to Boston and was immersed by Elder Bound, of the Second Church. Late in life Mrs. Scammon found Norcott's work on baptism, and went to Boston to get it printed for circulation, when the printer told her that he had one hundred copies on hand, which she bought and distributed in and around Stratham. She believed that a Baptist Church would arise in that place and her faith was honored, but not until after her death. Some years before this result of her faithfulness, independent influences were at work in the small town of Newtown, near Haverhill, Mass., which resulted in the establishment of a Baptist Church in that place, as the first in the colony. As in some other provinces, the preaching of George Whitefield had much to do with the origin of this inception of Baptist life. He had visited Ipswich, Newbury and Hampton in the autumn of 1740, and the Congregational Churches in that region were all astir, for the Half-way Covenant was in danger.

In Boston, this Covenant had been a fire-brand from the first, and twenty-eight members having seceded in consequence of its adoption formed the Old South Church. Many of the Churches of the Standing Order went to such an extreme as to vote that: 'Those who wish to offer their children in baptism, join with the Church and have a right to all the ordinances and privileges of the Church.' Dr. Dexter puts the point clearly in these words: 'Starting with the theory that some germ of true faith, in the absence of proof to the contrary, must be assumed in a child of the covenant, sufficient to transmit a right of baptism to his children, but not sufficient to entitle him to partake of the Lord's Supper; not many years passed before the inference was reached that an amount of saving faith, even in the germ, which would justify the baptism of a man's children, ought to justify his own admission to the table of the Lord.' In keeping with this idea, Stoddard, of Northampton, wrote to prove that 'the Lord's Supper is instituted to be a means of regeneration,' and that men may and ought to receive it, 'though they knew themselves to be in a natural condition.' Of course, this state of things in the membership of the Churches was succeeded by an unconverted ministry. Right here Whitefield

The American Baptists

struck his first blow. In 1741 he describes his preaching in his *New England Journal*: 'I insisted much on the necessity of a new birth, as also on the necessity of a minister's being converted before he could preach aright. Unconverted ministers are the bane of the Christian Church. I think that great and good man, Mr. Stoddard, is much to be blamed for endeavoring to prove that unconverted men might be admitted to the ministry. A sermon lately published by Gilbert Tennent, entitled "The Danger of an Unconverted Ministry" I think unanswerable.'

In this condition of things Whitefield's preaching startled the community about Newtown, where Francis and Abner Chase were converted under his ministry. They desired to hold prayer-meetings in connection with the Congregational Church at West Amesbury, of which they were members. Their minister, Paino Wingate, opposed them in this, for he and the neighboring ministers had signed a remonstrance, dated December 26th, 1744, against the admission of Whitefield into their pulpits. As the Chases could not enjoy the ministry of one whom they thought unconverted, they left his ministry and held prayer-meetings in their own houses. The records of the Amesbury Church [West Parish] show, that from 1747 to 1749 Francis Chase was under discipline in that Church 'for greatly neglecting the public worship of God.' A committee of the same body also visited Mr. Abner Chase in 1749 for 'absenting himself from public worship.' The reason that he gave for doing so was: 'A discord or contention that then was between the Church or parish and Mr. Wingate, as also the Church meeting [treated] Francis Chase, as he thought, unhandsomely.' Worth says that Mary Morse, of West Newbury, 'after Mrs. Abner Chase, experienced religion when about seven years of age, and was baptized when about sixteen, Mr. Francis Chase, of Newton, a member of the Congregational Church in Amesbury, was baptized two or three weeks previous. These are supposed to have been the first persons ever baptized in the Merrimack, which was probably in 1750. It is believed that the administrator was Rev. Mr. Hovey, who was afterward settled at Newton.' These and some of the following facts are taken from the discourse preached before the New Hampshire Baptist Convention, October, 1876, by Rev. W. H. Eaton, D.D., of Keene, who says in a private note: 'In the fall and winter of 1871-2 I spent six months in Newton, N. H., preaching to the little Church there and spending much time in searching old papers in families that descended from the earliest settlers, also the records of neighboring Churches.'

There is no doubt that the Newtown [now Newton] Church was the first of the Baptist order founded in New Hampshire, but there is a dispute as to whether it was organized in 1750 or 1755. Backus and others have fixed upon the last of these dates. But there is an old manuscript preserved amongst his unpublished papers, which appears to throw light upon this point, written by Francis Chase, who was one of the constituent members of the Church, for some years its clerk, and toward the close of life a deacon in the First Church at Haverhill. Chase writes: 'A brief account of the first incorporation of the First Baptist Church and Society in Newtown, N. H., in the year 1750, January 10th. We increased in number till the year 1755. In June 28th Elder Powers was ordained our pastor.' Dr. Eaton says that he submitted this document to Dr. Weston, the late editor of Backus's *History*, who gave the opinion as most probable: That the history of the Church in Newton is analogous to that of the Church in Bellingham; that it was formed January 10th, 1750, was weak and had no stated preaching till 1755, when it had become strong enough to settle a pastor and let its existence be known; that Backus, as in the case of the Bellingham Church, gives the date of its revival as that of its constitution, but that its seal as given by the first clerk in his sketch is 1750.' Chase's direct statement, with all the collateral evidence, renders this the most likely. No records of this Church are found earlier than October 7th, 1767, when the minutes of a meeting occur, but they reveal its severe struggle for existence. Two of its members were in the firm grip of the law, and the Church resolved that if one member suffered all would suffer with him. It was therefore 'voted' thus:

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

1. To carry on Mr. Steward's and Mr. Carter's law-suits, which are now in the law on account of rates imposed on them by the Standing Order.
2. To give Mr. Hovey for the year ensuing for his labors with us fifty pounds lawful money in such things as he wants to live on.
3. That Andrew Whittier, John Wadleigh, and Joseph Welsh be chosen to say what each man's part shall be of what we promised to give Mr. Hovey.
4. That these men shall take the province rate for their rate, and do it as light as they can.
5. That these men are to abate such men as they think are not able to pay their parts with the rest.
6. That those who will not pay their equal proportion according as these men shall tax them, their punishment is this, that they shall have no help from us to clear them from paying rates other where.'

It is as refreshing as a breeze from their own mountains to find so much human 'granite' in this little band of New Hampshire Baptists. They refuse to support a State Church by force, and they resolve to support their own chosen pastor cheerfully. This suit continued for three years, and must have been very vexatious, for at a 'meeting legally named, holden at the Antipedo-Baptist meeting-house,' they resolved to 'proportion the whole costs of these suits; to examine the account and settle what is honest and right.' Such a Church deserved to live, and it exists today.

At Stratham a young physician, Dr. Shepard, a member of the Congregational Church, chanced to be visiting a patient, and taking up Norcott's book he carefully read it, became a Baptist and one of the fathers of the denomination. Soon a Church was established in that place, and, becoming a minister, he was a burning and shining light to the whole colony. The Churches at Madbury and Weare appear to have been formed in 1768, but it was not till 1770-71 that our churches began to multiply rapidly, when we have Brentwood in 1771, Gilmanton in 1772, and a number of others by 1780. The itineracy of Whitefield and others had stimulated several men of God to visit many destitute places. Amongst the most prominent of these was Dr. Hezekiah Smith, of Massachusetts, an able preacher, full of zeal. He visited Concord in 1771 and preached there with great power. But the Standing Order resented his presence as a daring impertinence which threatened the peace of the town, and, in the absence of newspapers; Parson Walker advertised him extensively by thundering at him from the pulpit, as much exasperated as a farmer could well be to find strange cattle in his cornfield. In the same year Dr. Smith preached at Nottingham, Brentwood and Stratham, and baptized thirty eight persons, amongst whom were Dr. Shepard and Rev. Eliphalet Smith, the pastor of a Congregational Church. In Deerfield many were baptized, amongst them Joshua Smith, who afterwards became an evangelist of great power. Thirteen others were baptized with Pastor E. Smith, and on the same day were organized into a Baptist Church at Deerfield. The Brentwood Church was formed in 1771, and soon spread out into twelve branch Churches, which in 1793 numbered 443 members, with Dr. Samuel Shepard for their pastor.

Eight persons from Killingworth, Conn., in 1766, and another band from Worcester County, Mass., in 1780, settled at Newport, near Croydon. Most of them were Baptists, and their settlement was soon known as 'Baptist Hill.' The religious destitution of that region of New Hampshire was soon made known to the Warren Association, which sent Messrs. Jacobs, Ledoyt, Seamans and Ransom as missionaries. Ledoyt and Seamans followed the Connecticut Eiver as far as Woodstock, preaching mainly on the New Hampshire side, but also on the Vermont side of that stream. A Church of eight members was organized at Baptist Hill in May, 1778, called the First Church of

The American Baptists

Newport and Croydon, but was soon after known as the Newport Baptist Church. Biel Ledoyt became pastor of this body in 1791, and in 1795 it numbered eighty-nine members. Seamans established a Church in New London, of which he was pastor, which numbered about one hundred members at the close of the century. For years the Newport Church worshiped in a barn by the side of the river, which became noted chiefly because Thomas Baldwin the Good, afterwards of Boston, preached a most memorable sermon there. At that time he was the pastor at Canaan, in New Hampshire. On this great occasion the Assembly was so charmed that it was reluctant to leave, and the meeting continued to a late hour in the night, but Mr. Baldwin was obliged to return to meet an engagement at home in the morning. He mounted his horse, picked his way through the almost trackless forest as best he could by the light of the stars, and as he mused over the precious meeting in the barn his heart burned, and he began to sing. The words which sprang to his lips were those of his union hymn, which have since been sung all over the continent:

'From whence doth this union arise,
That hatred is conquered by love.'

Those who love that hymn may be glad to know that it was born at midnight in the New Hampshire wilderness, while its author was alone with God, after preaching to his despised Baptist brethren in a barn. This Church built their first meeting-house in 1798, a building forty feet square, which Dr. Baron Stow describes in 1810. He says:

'I am in that plain edifice, with a superabundance of windows, and a porch at each end; with its elevated pulpit, sky-blue in color, overhung by a sounding-board; with the deacon's seat half-way up the pulpit; with the square pews occupied by families; with a gallery containing one row of pews fronted by the singers' seats. There is the horse-shed, there is the horse-block; there are the horses with men's saddles and pillions, and a few women's saddles, but not a carriage of any description. On occasions of baptism the whole congregation would go down the hill, and, standing in a deep glen on the banks of Sugar River, would witness the ceremonies. Ehas McGregor played the bass-viol, Asa, a brother, led the choir, and his sisters, Lucy and Lois, sang soprano and alto. In the choir were Asaph Stowe, Moses Paine Durkee, Philip W. Kibbey, and more than one of the Wakefields.'

It was in this church that Baron Stow was converted and baptized, and from it he went to the Academy at Newport and the Columbian College, Washington, whence he graduated and was ordained pastor of the Church at Portsmouth, N. H. where he served five years before he removed to spend his wonderful life in Boston. He was succeeded at Portsmouth by the late Duncan Danbar, of New York. In 1820 the Newport Church introduced the system of supporting itself by assessing a tax upon its members, 'in proportion to the invoice of each member of the society, as taken by the selectmen.' For years this self-imposed tax wrought only contention and it was abandoned. This body was in the Woodstock Association till 1828, when the Newport Association was formed, which has frequently enjoyed the hospitality of the old Church. When the Woodstock Association met with it in 1826, a committee of four was appointed 'to distribute cake, cheese and cider to the members of the Association during the session.'

These were the beginnings of Baptist history in New Hampshire, from which powerful Churches and able ministers of the New Testament sprang in every direction. Our people have now increased to six Associations, eighty Churches, and 8,851 communicants. In consequence of the severity of the New Hampshire climate and the limited area of its territory, this State has sent forth a large and

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

valuable population to all the new States and Territories, especially to California, which immigration accounts in part for its small Baptist statistics. And a second reason for this is found in the fact that in 1780 Rev. Benjamin Randall, a Baptist preacher of ability and influence, established the Free-Will Baptist denomination, which absorbed a number of our Churches and became a strong body in the State. The Free Baptists differ from the old body chiefly in rejecting Calvinistic doctrine and the practice of strict communion.

The list of noble ministers which New Hampshire has given to our Churches in addition to those already named is very marked. It includes Alonzo King, the biographer of George Dana Boardman, Enoch and Elijah Hutchinson, and John Learned. Thomas Baldwin served the Church at Caanan for seven years, during which time he planted other Churches at Grafton, Hebron and Groton. In later years, one of the most noted men of the State was found in Dr. E. E. Cummings. He was one of the most faithful of men to his trusts. Born in Claremont, N. H. November 9th, 1800, he joined the Baptist Church there in 1821, graduated at Waterville College in 1828, and was that year ordained pastor of the Church in Salisbury. He became pastor of the First Church, Concord, in 1832, and remained there till 1854, when he took the pastorate of the Pleasant Street Church. After serving these two Churches for thirty-three years, he spoilt the last years of his life as a missionary in the State at large, dying February 22d, 1886. It is said that he left a manuscript on the history of our ministry for the first hundred years of its existence in New Hampshire, which certainly than be given to the world.

VERMONT. The Great Awakening, or New Light revival, had swept over Vermont quite as powerfully as it had over New Hampshire, or even more so, possibly because it was nearer the scene of the sternest conflict. JONATHAN EDWARDS had succeeded his grandfather, Solomon Stoddard, as pastor at Northampton, and had attempted to close the door of Church membership against the unconverted, when that Church, wedded to the Half-way Covenant, dismissed him, and he was obliged to go into the wilderness to preach the Gospel to the Housatonic Indians. There, though broken in health, the great metaphysician and theologian spent six years in coming nearer and nearer to the truth on all that related to the anti-sacramentarian doctrine and a regenerated Church, until on these points he stood side by side with the Baptists. His doctrine spread rapidly through Vermont; but nowhere did it take firmer hold than in the town of Shaftsbury. In 1768, the first Baptist Church of Vermont sprang from the movement in that town, chiefly under the leadership of Bliss Willoughby, the pastor of a Separatist Church, who went a step further than Edwards in the proper observance of Gospel ordinances, and became a Baptist in 1764. Three other Churches went out from this Church, in the same town, within the ensuing ten years; after which came a number of other Churches in quick succession; amongst them that at Pownal in 1773, at Woodstock in 1779, those at Guilford, Dummerston and many others, numbering 41 Churches in 1793, with 40 ministers and 2,221 members.

As these interests increased Baptist ministers were sent for from other parts of New England, and some removed to Vermont for permanent residence. More than a score are mentioned by name, amongst them Ransom and Ledoyt, Elisha Ransom becoming pastor at Woodstock in 1780. As in the rest of New England, the Vermont Baptists paid a great price for their liberty; everywhere having to fight the old battle with the Standing Order. Ransom, under date of March 23d, 1795, writes of a member of Elder Drew's Church at Hartford, Vt., who was sent to jail for refusing to pay the State Church rates, yet was obliged to pay them. He contested the case with the authorities at a cost of

The American Baptists

more than ,50, but in each trial the decision was against him. Ransom says that five petitions with more than two hundred signatures were sent up to the Assembly asking for redress; then he adds:

'I went to speak for them; and after my averment that the certificate law was contrary to the rights of man, of conscience, the first, third, fourth and seventh articles of our Constitution, and to itself, for it took away our rights and then offered to sell them back to us for a certificate, some stretched their mouths, and though no man contradicted me in one argument, yet they would shut their eyes, and say that they could not see it so. I had many great friends in the house, but not a majority.'

The Baptists of Vermont have been characterized by both ministers and laymen of signal ability. Some of our first educators have sprung from their ranks, for they have always been distinguished for their love of learning. Amongst these we have the late Irah Chase and Daniel Hascall, 'Rev. Drs. A. C. Kendrick and T. J. Conant. Laymen of note are found in Hon. Jonas Galusha, at one time Governor of Vermont; Hon. Ezra Butler, also Governor of the State, and Hon. Aaron Leland, Lieutenant-Governor; yet each of these preached the Gospel. Ephraim Sawyer and John Conant (though born in Massachusetts) were men of renown, the former as a soldier in the Revolutionary War, and the latter as a justice of the peace and a member of the Vermont Legislature for many years. But our denomination has never been strong in that State. Like New Hampshire, its people have removed West with the great tide of emigration, especially to western New York, in earlier times, and then markedly to Ohio and the still newer States. At present we have 7 Associations in Vermont, 116 churches, 104 ministers and 8,880 members.

It may be well here to note the excitement which existed in many of the Vermont Baptist Churches in the year 1843, on the question of our Lord's second advent. Deacon WILLIAM MILLER lived near Pouitney, a man of strong but uncultivated mind, who devoted most of his time to the study of the prophecies and Rollin's 'Ancient History,' making this and other such works an index to the interpretation of prophecy. Having created for himself a system of interpretations, by a method peculiarly his own, he believed that he had demonstrated that Christ would come on or about February 15th 1843. He exerted large influence on all who knew him, from his many excellencies and spotless character. He had been a captain in the War of 1812 and fought valiantly at the battle of Plattsburg; he was also a civil magistrate in his own town. In person he was large and heavily built, his head broad and his brow high, with a soft and expressive eye, and all the inflections of his voice indicated the sincerest devotion. His imagination was quite fervid, and having drawn his conclusion from a defective premise it became to him a real fact. In this state of mind he went about lecturing, using large charts illustrative of the visions of Daniel and John. Immense throngs came to hear him, a number of ministers and laymen of large mind embraced his views, and the greatest excitement prevailed over the eastern and northern parts of our country. Many Churches, especially amongst Baptists, Methodists and Congregationalists, were seriously disturbed by the controversy and some were rent to pieces. The press teemed with discourses and pamphlets on the subject, many of them absurd enough on both sides. Much ill-feeling also sprang up as is usual in such cases, and both sides arrogated to themselves a tone of plenary infallibility in the interpretation of disputed passages. The controversy surged for months around the passage, 'Of that, day and hour knoweth no man,' the anti-Adventists taking the sage ground that as they did not know that he would come, therefore he would not; and the Adventists replying, that because they did not know that he would not come, therefore he surely would. What made the excitement the

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

more furious was the sudden rush of an enormous comet upon the heavens, unannounced, early in January, which blazed for weeks, until its sword-like train divided into two blades. Then came a heavy fall of red snow, such as is often found in the Arctic regions and the Alps; and although Professor Agassiz had demonstrated, three years before, that this tinge was occasioned by the presence of animalcules in the flakes, it made no difference in the interpretation of the phenomenon, which was to the effect, that they were supernaturally impregnated with some gelatinous and chemical element, which was simply fuel for burning up the earth. The craze went so far that many made white ascension robes and stood shivering in the snow on the nights of February 14th and 15th, expecting to be caught up into the air, and meetings were held in hundreds of places of worship during those nights, while many sold all that they had and proved their sincerity by giving the money to the sick and suffering. The writer had much conversation with Mr. Miller, and has in his possession a number of books bought from the library of the late Rev. George Storrs, one of the leading advocates of Mr. Miller's doctrine, who so used his money. The same order of delusion has appeared in the earth several times during the ages, and is sure to occur again, judging from present appearances.

GEORGIA. Governor Oglethorp settled this colony in 1733, and at least two Baptists, Messrs. Campbell and Dunham, came over in the ship with him; others soon followed, amongst them Mr. Polhill. When Whitefield came, in 1751, Nicholas Bedgewood accompanied him to take charge of the Orphan House, which was soon erected near Savannah. This young man had a classical education and was a fine speaker. Five years after his arrival he was baptized by Rev. Oliver Hart, pastor of the Baptist Church at Charleston, and two years later, he was ordained, and baptized Benjamin Stirk and several other converts at the Orphan House, where many suppose that a branch Church to that at Charleston was formed; in his turn, he became a minister in 1767, preaching in his own house at Kewington above Savannah, and formed a branch Church to that at Eutaw, S. C. Edmund Botsford came from England in 1771, was converted in the Charleston Church, and went as a missionary into Georgia. Daniel Marshall also removed from South Carolina into Georgia in 1771; and Botsford falling in with Colonel Barnard, at Augusta, introduced him to Marshall at Kiokee, where he had formed the first Baptist Church proper in the colony, in 1772. Botsford was then but a licentiate, and his meeting with this veteran was very interesting. Marshall said: 'Well, sir, you are to preach for us.' 'Yes, sir, by your leave,' Botsford replied, 'but I am at a loss for a text.' 'Look to the Lord for one,' was Marshall's answer.

He preached from the words, 'Come and hear, all ye that fear God, and I will declare what he has done for my soul.' Marshall was greatly blessed under the sermon, and at its close said: 'I can take thee by the hand and call thee brother, for somehow I never heard conversion better explained in my life; but I would not have thee think thou preachest as well as Joe Reese and Philip Mulkey; however, I hope thee will go home with me.' He did, and they were like David and Jonathan to each other to the close of life.

Botsford's ministry was greatly honored of God, and he organized several Churches, amongst them the second in Georgia, called the Botsford Church, near Augusta, in 1773. Other Churches were soon formed, for in 1784 the Georgia Association was organized by five Churches, which number increased so rapidly that in 1793 there were in Georgia sixty-one Churches, with 3,227 communicants.

Baptist interests were established too late in this colony to subject our brethren there to the

The American Baptists

persecutions which they endured in many of the older colonies. Yet, on January 11th, 1758, the General Assembly, meeting at Savannah, passed a law making the Church of England the Church of the province. It established two parishes, 'Christ's Church,' at Savannah, and 'St. Paul's,' at Augusta, and provided for their support by public tax, also for the establishment of other parishes in due time. Under this law Daniel Marshall was arrested one Sabbath 'for preaching in the parish of St. Paul' contrary to the 'rites and ceremonies of the Church of England.' His congregation was assembled in a beautiful grove, under the blue sky, and he was on his knees making the opening prayer, when a hand was laid on his shoulder and a voice interrupted him saying: 'You are my prisoner!' He was then sixty-five years of age and his hair was white as snow. The man of God arose and gave security to appear for trial the next day at Augusta, and the constable, Samuel Cartledge, released him, without a word of remonstrance or rebuke from the venerable preacher.

But Mrs. Martha Marshall, a woman of a most powerful mind, and, as she demonstrated on several occasions, of remarkable eloquence, not only remonstrated stoutly, but with all the solemnity of a prophetess exhorted Cartledge to flee from the wrath to come and be saved from his sins. Dr. J. H. Campbell says that the man was so moved that he did repent and seek his salvation, that Marshall baptized him in 1777, when he first became a deacon in the Church at Kiokee, and in 1789 he was ordained a minister. He was little more than twenty-one when he was converted. and preached the Gospel for half a century, dying in 1843 at the age of ninety-three years.

The early history of the Georgia Baptists was marked by many EXTENSIVE REVIVALS of religion, sometimes adding many thousands to their Churches in a year, as in 1812-13, 1820 and in 1827, when between 15,000 and 20,000 persons were added to them. This great revival was largely promoted by the labors of Adiel Sherwood, D.D., who seemed to be endued with power from heaven. He was pastor at that time of the Churches at Milledgeville, Greeneborough, and Eatonton, at the last of which places he taught in an academy. One Sabbath in September he was preaching in the open air, before the Ocmulgee Association, at Antioch Church, in Morgan County, when the power of God fell upon the people in the most wonderful manner. At the close of his sermon he asked all who wished for the prayers of the assembly to present themselves. The first one to accept the invitation was one of the most accomplished young gentlemen in Georgia, in all that relates to grace of person, courteous manners, breadth of mind and natural eloquence. This was Dr. John E. Dawson, who afterwards became one of the most brilliant and pathetic preachers in the South. It is estimated that 4,000 persons followed him that day in asking the prayers of the congregation, and within two years about 16,000 people, according to Dr. Sherwood's private memoranda, were added to the Churches, as the fruit of that meeting more or less directly.

Dr. Sherwood was one of the most godly men in America. He was born at Fort Edward, N. Y., in 1791, and was the son of a Revolutionary soldier, a firm personal friend of General Washington. In 1817 Adiel graduated at Union College, and then passed a year at the Andover Theological Seminary, when, his health becoming somewhat impaired, he went to Georgia. He was ordained to the work of the ministry in that State, and in 1828 he preached 333 sermons in forty counties, with astonishing success. After filling many places of trust, he became the Professor of Sacred Literature in Marshall College and finally its President. In person he was large and dignified, very vehement in manner, though tender in spirit, possessing a prudent and executive mind; thoughtful and learned, he stood in the front ranks as a speaker and writer. Georgia owes much to him for its pre-eminence as a Baptist State, especially in that zeal and intelligence which have made our Churches and

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

ministry so strong within its bounds. No one else has exerted so wide and healthy an influence in advancing our cause there excepting his true yoke-fellow, Rev. Jesse Mercer, whose apostolic wisdom, zeal and spirituality have rendered him immortal. And yet, a noble army of godly men have filled their places and each done an order of work which none other could have done. This is equally true of the living and the dead. Amongst the laymen we have had Governors Rabun and Lumpkin, with the Reeveses, Wellborns and Stocks, statesmen and jurists of the first class; and the names of her ministers are held in universal reverence, as, the two Marshalls, the two Mercers, with Holcomb, Saunders, Clay, Johnson, Binney, Crawford and Dagg.

From the first our brethren there have been Calvinistic in their doctrines, strict in their communion, as well as the firm friends of educational and missionary work. Taking all things into the account, the Georgia Baptists have been characterized, and still are, for their mental vigor, their extraordinary knowledge of human nature, their deep convictions of Gospel truth, and an overpowering native eloquence in winning men to Christ. Hon. Joseph E. Brown, United States Senator from Georgia, has long been one of the leading Baptists of that State. He was born in South Carolina April 5th, 1821, but while young his father removed to Georgia. He enjoyed no educational advantages until he was nineteen years of age, when he determined to leave his father's farm to procure a collegiate education. His mother made him a suit of homespun clothes, his father gave him a pair of young oxen for his patrimony, and he started on a nine days' journey to the Calhoun Academy in South Carolina. A farmer agreed to give him eight months' board in payment for his oxen, Wesley Leverett, the principal of the school, promised his tuition on credit, and so the young hero began life. He made rapid progress with his studies, and at the end of the eight months he taught school. Having earned money enough to pay his instructor, he returned to the academy and began a new credit both for tuition and board. In two years he was ready to enter an advanced class in college, but was obliged to forego that high privilege, to teach school in Canton, Ga. While again earning money to pay his debts he became a private tutor in the family of Dr. Lewis, at Canton, and gave his spare time to the study of law. In 1845 he was admitted to the bar, after a searching examination; but not satisfied with this, by the aid of the doctor he entered the law school at Yale College, where, in 1846, he was awarded the degree of Bachelor of Laws, when he returned to Georgia and rapidly rose in his profession. He was elected to the Senate of Georgia in 1849, Judge of the Superior Court in 1855, and Governor of the State in 1857. He served in this high office for four terms, being re-elected the last time in 1863. In 1869 he was appointed Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of Georgia for the term of twelve years, but resigned his office after filling it with much ability for two years, when he accepted the presidency of the Western and Atlantic Railroad Company. He was appointed by Governor Colquitt, in 1880, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of General Gordon in the United States Senate. Since, he has been elected to the Senate, the last time with but one vote against him.

While at Calhoun Academy, and when but twenty-two years of age, he was baptized, on the profession of his faith, by Elder C. P. Dean, and has been marked for his devotion to the cause of Christ ever since, he is a man of well balanced and strong mind, but of few words. His understanding is clear, his temper calm, his will firm, and he possesses that sagacious, matter-of-fact common sense which never fails him in time of trial. Withal, being blessed with large wealth and a benevolent heart, his liberality is widely felt in supporting charitable, educational and religious plans. When the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary was passing through its most trying days,

The American Baptists

he quietly gave it \$50,000 and infused new life into its endowment. This act could not fail to reach the public ear, though he was unostentatious in his gift. Senator Brown is a trustee of the University of Georgia; and foremost in all the important movements of the Baptist denomination in that State.

The Georgia Baptists of early times firmly withstood all the aggressions of the State upon the Church until they secured their religious liberties. On the one hand they could not be forced to pay a tax for the State Church, and on the other, they could not be cajoled into the acceptance of State money for the support of their own Churches. On the 21st of February, 1785, an Act was passed by the Legislature for the support of religion, which provided that 'thirty heads of families' in any community might choose a minister 'to explain and inculcate the duties of religion,' and 'four pence on every hundred pounds valuation of property' should be taken out of the public tax for the support of such minister. The Baptists formed a large majority in many parts of the State, and could have chosen many ministers under this Act, but instead of doing so, they united in a remonstrance to the Legislature in the following May, and sent it by the hands of Silas Mercer and Peter Smith, insisting that the obnoxious law should be repealed, on the ground that the State had nothing to do with the support of religion by public tax, and it was repealed. (Pub. Bees. of Ga. MS. vol. B., p. 284, Marshall Papers.)

Yet as late as 1863 they found it necessary to fight another battle on that subject. The New Code of Georgia provided, in Section 1376, that 'it shall be unlawful for any Church, society or other body, or any persons, to grant any license or other authority to any slave or free person of color to preach, or exhort, or otherwise officiate in Church matters.' This aroused the Baptists of the State, and a very powerful paper, drawn by Dr. H. H. Tucker, and largely signed by his brethren, was sent in remonstrance and protest to the Legislature, demanding the repeal of this iniquitous provision. They denounced it 'as a seizure by force of the things that are God's, and a rendering them unto Caesar,' an 'usurpation of ecclesiastical power by civil authorities.' They resisted it as a trespass upon the rights of conscience and a violation of religious liberty. They claimed that 'it is the sacred right of the black to preach, exhort or pray, if God has called and commanded him to do either.' They protested that it was an offense against 100,000 Baptist communicants in the State, and that the Baptist Church in Columbia, 'with the new Code spread open before their eyes, and with a full knowledge and understanding of the intent and meaning of Section 1376, and after a thorough discussion of its provisions, deliberately violated the same, and ordained two negroes to officiate in Church matters in the office of deacon.' They claim that the obnoxious law 'trespasses not only on the rights of men but on the rights of God. It dictates to the Almighty what color his preachers shall be...and says to Omnipotence: "Thus far shalt Thou go and no farther." It allows Jehovah to have ministers of a certain complexion, and so exacting and rigid are these regulations imposed on the Almighty that they not only forbid his having preachers such as he may choose, but also prescribe that none shall even exhort, or in any way whatever officiate in Church matters, unless they be approved by this self-exalted and heaven-defying tribunal. Nor is there any reason to suppose that the spirit which prompted the act now under protest would stop, if unchecked, at its present point of audacity. Having prescribed color as one qualification for the pulpit, it might prescribe another qualification to-morrow.' The obnoxious section was repealed, and the State no longer imposes restrictions on the freedom of the Churches. The contests which the Georgia Baptists pushed against all that is narrow in ignorance and bigotry, especially from 1827 to 1840, in the shape of Anti-effort, has made the entire denomination their debtors. As in Maryland, the old school,

Chapter 10 - The Baptists of North Carolina, Maryland, New Hampshire, Vermont and Georgia

or Primitive Baptists, as they loved to call themselves, arose in great strength, dividing Churches and rending Associations with great bitterness. This Antinomian element assailed their brethren with bitter satire, an element not known in the New Testament. One of the periodicals of the times published a sermon intended to caricature their missionary brethren who were spending their lives in beseeching men to be reconciled to God. Its text was taken from Prov. 27:27: 'Thou shalt have goats milk enough for thy food, for the food of thy household, and for the maintenance of thy maidens.' The preacher said that those who raised money for missions were first milking the sheep of Christ's flock; then turning to the non-professing goats, they obtained goat's milk enough for their editors, agents and secretaries, who were the maidens of the household, and so the poor drained goats fattened a few sinecures. Hard pushed with such trash, they brought ridicule upon our Lord's commission to 'go into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature.' Our brethren had the wisdom and firmness to resist this blight most steadfastly; one result of which is seen in the fact that now the laborious and aggressive Baptists are left nearly alone in the field. Their success has been astonishing, so that today they have the largest Baptist population of any State in the Union. They have 102 Associations, 1,601 ministers, 2,623 Churches, and 261,314 members.

Yearly half the Baptists of Georgia are colored people, who in latter years have been greatly aided by forming separate Churches and Associations of their own, and the present prospect, both of the white and colored Baptists, is more bright and prosperous than ever before.

The American Baptists

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

As time is the only reliable interpreter of prophecy, so history best traces the hand of God in preparing men for great events. It was impossible for the Baptists of the colonies to understand why they endured so much for their principles and secured so little in return, from the settlement of New England to the time of the Revolution. The Declaration of Independence was made July 4th, 1776, and the nation's struggle for liberty lasted about seven years. As nearly as we can get at the figures, there were but 97 Baptist Churches in all the colonies in 1770, and many of these were so very small, that one pastor, where they had pastors, supplied several of them lying many miles apart and preached to them only at long intervals of time, while others were dependent entirely on occasional visits from itinerant preachers. There was a large increase of Churches during the war, although many Churches were scattered, but in 1784 our total membership in the thirteen colonies was only about 35,000, although one hundred and forty-five years had passed since the Church at Providence was constituted, and one hundred and nineteen years since the Church at Boston was gathered. Where they had houses of worship they were of the commonest character, and the most of their ministers received no salary. So common was it for the Churches to content themselves with one sermon a month, that these came to be known as 'Thirty-day Baptists,' and so ignorant or mean, or both, were many of them, that they thought it the absolute duty of their pastors to support themselves by a profession, by farming, or some other form of manual labor, and then prove their Apostolic calling by preaching for nothing. This class of Baptists took the greatest possible comfort in the thought that while the 'starved gentry' of the Standing Order peeled them by taxation, their pastors were strangers to 'filthy lucre.'

Under these conditions our ministry could not be eminent for learning. When Manning established his preparatory school at Warren, he and Hezekiah Smith, who had studied with him at Princeton, together with Jeremiah Condy and Edward Upham, graduates of Harvard, were the only liberally educated Baptist pastors in New England. Some who subsequently became known as scholars had studied with Isaac Eaton, at Hopewell. In addition to the above named, Dr. Guild mentions Samuel Jones and a number more who were students at that academy, and also in that opened at Lower Dublin in 1776. Several years later, William E. Williams, one of the first graduates of Rhode Island College, was added to the list of the educated, and opened an academy at Wrentham, Mass. Things existed much after the same order in the Middle and Southern Colonies, for down to that time the chief education of our ministry had consisted in that moral strength and fortitude which hardship and severity inspire. God, who foresaw the times which were to try men's souls, was clearly educating one class of his people to meet the high destiny for which only scourging, bonds and imprisonments can discipline men. Brown University had begun its work, and the Denomination was feeling after its future; but for the then present necessity, what our ministry lacked in the work of the schools, when compared with their Congregational brethren, was marked by a like disparity in favor of the Baptists in consecration to the saving of men. Their doctrine, that none but the regenerate should enter the Church of Christ, inspired that effort to bring men to repentance which could not spring from faith in birthright membership. The social and political forces combined against them only contributed to maintain their zeal and devotion. To falter in maintaining the truth was to be crushed out of existence.

Besides, nothing but aggressive work could keep them alive to their peculiar views of religious liberty. Others were moved to resist the aggressions of Britain, simply on the ground that they were

The American Baptists

the victims of political oppression. This the Baptists felt also, but their circumstances impelled them to seek a higher order of liberty than that sought by their fellow-citizens. Whatever oppressions England inflicted upon the colonies she seldom deprived them of their religious liberties, but from the first left them to manage these alone. Excepting in Virginia, the colonies, and not the mother government, laid the heavy yoke of religious oppression upon the Baptist neck. On several occasions they had appealed to the crown and their religious grievances had been redressed, as against their colonial oppressors. Hence, in the Revolution they were to fight a double battle; one with their political enemies on the other side of the sea, and the other with their religious tyrants on this side. The colonies were not about to begin a revolution for religious liberty; that they had; but the Baptists demanded both, and this accounts for the desperation with which they threw themselves into the struggle, so that we have no record of so much as one thorough Baptist tory.

Down to the Revolution, all the colonies, with the exception of Rhode Island, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, had a Church established either by law or custom as the rightful controller of the spiritual interests of the people, and those of Massachusetts and Virginia, were peculiarly intolerant. In these the influence of the Baptists, as the champions of religious equality, was especially felt, as they resisted the legislative, judicial and executive departments combined. They were emboldened in this resistance from the fact that they took and held a footing despite this combination against them, and by piece-meal wrenched from their foes the recognition of their rights. In 1753 a law was passed in Massachusetts exempting Baptists from taxation to support the Standing Order, on condition that they confessed and proved themselves 'Anabaptists,' by certificates from three such Churches. Meetings were called in Boston, Medfield and Bellingham, to devise methods of relief from this offensive act. John Proctor, a public-school teacher of Boston, and one of the original members of the Second Baptist Church there, was appointed to carry the case to England. He also drew up a remonstrance to the Legislature claiming that, under the charter of William and Mary, the Baptists had as good, ample and extensive a right to think and act for themselves in matters of a religious nature as any other Christians. This action somewhat lightened the execution without lessening the severity of the laws, for the last statute, passed in 1771, simply relieved the Baptist taxpayer from the necessity of presenting a certificate from three other Churches to prove him an 'Anabaptist.' The moral effect of many of the able documents drawn up by the Warren Association, Isaac Backus, and others, against these unrighteous laws, was very great on the thinking portion of the community, which compelled moderation when banishment and whipping became impossible. Virginia Baptists wrung some similar ameliorations from their Legislature which led them to throw themselves with all their hearts into the Revolutionary struggle, for they knew that if they secured full political independence religious freedom must necessarily follow.

It would furnish a splendid chapter in American Baptist History to sketch the honor-roll of the great fathers whom God was raising up from the first quarter of the eighteenth century to serve in the last, and who were to become the leaders in their contest for perfect religious emancipation. In addition to many others who had fought the first battles, he raised up a special host who were to push this conflict to its close, from Isaac Backus to John Leland; the man who saw the last vestige of religious oppression wiped off the statute-book of Massachusetts, in 1834. She. was the first of all the colonies to begin, and the last of all the States to end religious intolerance.

We have seen that ISAAC BACKUS, the Baptist historian, was born in Connecticut, January 9th, 1724, so that dying as late as November 20th, 1806, he lived through all the stages of the

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

Revolution and saw his brethren as well as his country free. When the Warren Association appointed a committee to seek redress of grievances for the Baptists, and appointed first Hezekiah Smith, and then Rev. John Davis, their agent to the Court of Great Britain, Dr. Backus was exerting himself to the utmost in this direction. In the admirable biography of Backus by Dr. Hovey we have a graphic picture of the enthusiasm with which he threw himself into the work of changing the legislation from which his own Church at Middleborough had suffered so much, as well as his brethren elsewhere, he had been schooled in suffering for conscience' sake.

His mother, Elizabeth Tracy Backus, was a descendant from the Winslow family, and became a devout Christian three years before Isaac was born; she was of a very strong character, and brought up her son in the love and fear of God. With many others she became a Separatist at Norwich, and when left a widow refused to pay the State-Church tax, for conscience' sake. On the night of October 15th, 1752, when she was ill, and seated before the fire wrapped in thick clothing to induce perspiration, the officers came, and as she says in a letter to her son, dated November 4th, 1752, 'Took me away to prison, about nine o'clock, in a dark, rainy night. Brothers Hill and Sabins were brought there the next night. We lay in prison thirteen days, and were then set at liberty, by what means I know not.' Her son Samuel lay in prison twenty days for the same crime. She evinced the essence of heroism, the genuine spirit of a confessor. The officer thought that she would yield when sick of a fever, and pay her rates rather than be cast into a doleful jail on a chill, stormy night in mid-October. Yet, hear her soul triumph, for she says: 'Oh! the condescension of heaven! Though I was bound when cast into this furnace, yet I was loosed and found Jesus in the midst of a furnace with me. Oh, then I could give up my name, estate, family, life and health freely to God. Now the prison looked like a palace to me. I could bless God for all the laughs and scoffs made at me. Oh, the love that flowed out to all mankind; then I could forgive as I would desire to be forgiven, and love my neighbor as myself. Deacon Griswold was put in prison the 8th of October, and yesterday old Brother Grover, and [they] are in pursuit of others, all which calls for humiliation. This Church has appointed the 13th of November to be spent in prayer and fasting on that account. I do remember my love to you and your wife and the dear children of God with you, begging your prayers for us in such a day of trial. We are all in tolerable health, expecting to see you. These are from your loving mother, ELIZABETH BACKUS.'

The spirit of the mother was cherished by her son to the close of his life.

The high esteem in which he is held is evinced in a private letter to Dr. Guild from Hon. George Bancroft, the historian, dated at Newport, R.I., September 25th, 1885, in which he writes: 'I look always to a Baptist historian for the ingenuousness, clear discernment, and determined accuracy which form the glory of their great historian Backus.'

SAMUEL STILLMAS, D.D., who was born in Philadelphia February 27th, 1737, and died March 12th, 1807, was another great Baptist leader during the Revolutionary period. At the age of eleven he removed with his parents to South Carolina, where he enjoyed the tuition of Mr. Hind, a classical tutor of renown. When still a youth, he was converted under the labors of Mr. Hart, by whom he was baptized and with whom he studied theology. In 1758, when he was but twenty-one years of age, he began to preach on James Island, near Charleston. Ill health compelled him to spend two years at Bordentown, N.J., when he was invited to become assistant to Rev. Mr. Bound, in the Second Church, Boston, where he spent about a year; and January 9th, 1765, he became pastor of the First Church, Boston, which he served until his death, a period of forty-two years. The

The American Baptists

distinguishing traits of his character were purity of heart, and fidelity to his convictions. He was brilliant, and sought the highest intellectual attainments, but instinctively eschewed all literary pomp and display, particularly that academical donnishness of style which many scholastic notables affect. And yet, because of his extreme taste in manners, dress and bearing, clownish folk, whose vulgarity was an annoyance to him and an offense, were ever ready to assail him, even with censoriousness. Like Dr. Baldwin, he was dignified in his bearing, observing all those points of decorum which distinguished the careful pastor of New England in former days. Elias Smith, an eccentric minister of Boston, who caused his brethren considerable trouble, complains of Drs. Stillman and Baldwin for insisting that he should dress more becomingly, and for enforcing proper order in connection with his induction into the pastoral office. Dr. Cornell says, in his 'Recollections of Ye Olden Time,' that when Smith was settled as pastor over the Baptist Church at Woburn, in 1789, they required him to be 'installed.' This he denounced as a 'new-fangled ceremony,' but they insisted and he submitted. However, he took his revenge in saying:

'Our popery was performed in the Congregational meeting-house, and it was a high day within. We made something of a splendid appearance as it respected the ignorant. We had two doctors of divinity, one or two A. M.'s, and we all wore bands. When we came out of the council chamber and walked in procession to the meeting-house, we looked as much like the cardinals coming out of the conclave after electing a pope, as our practice was like them. Dr. [Hezekiah] Smith said to me after Installation: "I advise you to wear a band on Lord's days." This was a piece of foppery I always hated, and when I walked over with it on I then thought I acted with it as a pig does when he is first yoked, and almost struck it with my knees for fear I should hit it. I should not have worn it that day but that Dr. Stillman, who was as fond of foppery as a little girl is of fine baby rags, brought one and put it on me.'

But, Elias Smith's crotchets to the contrary, Samuel Stillman was as noble a man and as holy a patriot as ever trod American soil. He read the signs of the times with a true eye, and stood in his lot to breast the Revolutionary storm as long as it was possible. He was ever delicate in health, but earnest and fearless. He was deeply stirred by the outrages inflicted upon the Baptists of Massachusetts, and especially upon those of Ashfield, and signed a powerful petition, of which he was evidently the author, to the General Court for redress. That body had already taken the ground politically 'that no taxation can be equitable where such restraint is laid upon the taxed as takes from him the liberty of giving his own money freely.' With the skill of a statesman Dr. Stillman seized this concession and used it thus: 'This being true, permit us to ask: With what equity is our property taken from us, not only without our consent, but violently, contrary to our will, and for such purposes as we cannot, in faithfulness to that stewardship with which God hath intrusted us, favor?' He, therefore, asked a repeal of their unjust laws, damages for the losses of the Baptists, and their perpetual exemption from all State Church rates thereafter. In 1766, ten years before the Declaration, he denounced the Stamp Act from his pulpit; again sustained the Colonial cause in a sermon on the general election, 1770, and did not leave his post till the British troops occupied Boston, in 1775. Then his Church was scattered and for a short time he retired to Philadelphia, but in 1776 he returned; gathered his flock anew, and kept his Church open all through the war, when nearly all others were closed at times.

His eloquence was easy, sympathetic, warm and cheerful; it was inspired with the freshness of a June morning, and it fascinated his hearers. He was nervous, kind, pure, healthful and welcome to all; his motions were all grace, his voice was as cheerful as the truth that he told, his eye was full

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

of light, and altogether he was the pulpit orator of New England. The late William Williams pronounced him 'probably the most eloquent and most universally beloved clergyman that Boston has ever seen.' Nor would he on any account swerve from the radical principles of the Gospel. The elite of Boston crowded his place of worship. Dr. Pierce, late of Brookline, said that many a time he had walked from Dorchester when a boy, to get standing room in Stillman's meeting-house. And, commonly, John Adams, John Hancock, General Knox and other dignitaries delighted to mingle with the throng and listen to his expositions of depravity, sovereignty, retribution and redemption. On one occasion his denunciation of sin was so scathing and awful that a refined gentleman on leaving the house remarked: 'The doctor makes us all out a set of rascals, but he does it so gracefully and eloquently that I am not disposed to find fault.' The forty years which he spent in Boston covered the great discussion of all that led to the war, the war itself, the birth of a new nation, and the adoption of the new Federal Constitution, together with the Presidency of Washington, Adams and Jefferson; he was a very decided Federalist in his political views. But all this time he was a leader in the councils of his brethren; and in their determined efforts to secure the sacred rights for which they suffered he never failed them.

Withal, he was everything that a Church could ask in a pastor; diligent, tender-hearted and spotless in his sanctity. His ministry brought many to the Lord, marked revivals of religion crowned his efforts, and he was the happiest of mortals in answering the question, 'What must I do to be saved?' His Church loved him with a peculiar reverence. Dr. Neale, one of his immortal successors, says of him:

'No pastor, before or since, was ever more beloved by his Church. His popularity was uninterrupted, and greater if possible in his old age than in his youth. A few individuals who sat under his ministry, and who were quite young when he was an old man, still survive and are present with us today. They never weary of talking about him, and even now speak of this as Dr. Stillman's Church. They looked at the venerable pastor not only with the profoundest respect, but with the observant eye of childhood. They noticed and remembered everything in his external appearance, his wig and gown and bands, his horse and carriage, and negro man, Jephtha; how he walked, how he talked, how he baptized; the peculiar manner in which he began his prayers: "O thou Father of mercies and God of all grace."'

He oft expressed the wish that he might not outlive his influence, and God honored his desire. His last sermon was on the ascension of Christ, and two weeks after, he died of paralysis, his last words being: 'God's government is infinitely perfect.' Dr. Baldwin preached his funeral sermon from 2 Tim. 4:7,8, and Dr. Pierce says: 'I have a distinct recollection of the funeral. All the members of the society appeared with badges of mourning, the women with black bonnets and handkerchiefs. If the pastor had been removed in the bloom of youth his people could not have been more deeply affected.'

JAMES MANNING, D.D., may be mentioned next in chronological order, as a Baptist leader at the time of the Revolution. He was born at Elizabeth, N. J., October 22d, 1738, and died July 29th, 1791, so that in 1776 he was in the prime of his days. Under His influence, the Rhode Island College had come to be an established fact, the Warren Association had become a powerful body, and his influence throughout New England was very great. The exactions of the crown upon the Colonies had become so onerous in 1774 that they determined to meet in a common Congress for the purposes of calm deliberation and resistance, if necessary, but to defend their rights under any circumstances. The delegates met in Carpenter's Hall, Philadelphia, September 5th, 1774. At the

The American Baptists

meeting of the Warren Association, held at Medfield, September 14th, they resolved to address this first Continental Congress not only upon the political wrongs inflicted on the Colonies but upon their own privations, in that they were denied their rights as men to the free worship of God, and they sent Isaac Backus to present their case. He reached Philadelphia, October 8th, and on the 12th of that month the Philadelphia Association appointed a large committee to co-operate with the agent of the Warren Association. After consulting with a number of leading Quakers, they determined to seek a conference with the Massachusetts delegates rather than to address the Congress as such. Such a meeting having been arranged, they went to Carpenter's Hall, where they met Samuel and John Adams, Thomas Gushing and Robert Treat Paine, from Massachusetts; James Kenzie, of New Jersey; Stephen Hopkins and Samuel Ward, of Rhode Island; Joseph Galloway and Thomas Mifflin, of Pennsylvania, and several other members of Congress; with many members of the Society of Friends, as Joseph Fox, Israel and James Pemberton, who sympathized with the suffering Baptists. Dr. Manning opened the case in behalf of his brethren in a brief but eloquent address, and then submitted a memorial which they had adopted. Dr. Guild says of this paper, that it 'should be written in letters of gold and preserved in lasting remembrance.'

The first sentence couches the full Baptist doctrine in these ringing words: 'It has been said by a celebrated writer in politics, that but two things are worth contending for – Religion and Liberty. For the latter we are at present nobly exerting ourselves through all this extensive continent; and surely no one whose bosom feels the patriotic glow in behalf of civil liberty can remain torpid to the more ennobling flame of RELIGIOUS FREEDOM.' They go on to declare that the inalienable rights of conscience rank too high to be subjected to fallible legislators, as that dignity belongs to God alone. Men may legislate hypocritical consciences into existence, but cannot decree their fellow-men Christians. They had come to the free soil of Pennsylvania, to plead for that inestimable blessing which every lover of mankind should desire. They then described the sufferings of their brethren in Massachusetts, amongst those who had fled from oppression because they scorned domination over conscience, and yet had become ignoble oppressors themselves. They claimed their right to the free exercise of their religion under the charter, and referred to some ameliorations which had been granted to them in Massachusetts, but showed that these were a hollow mockery. For example, in 1728 their persons were exempted from the religious tax, but not their property, if they did not live within five miles of a Baptist meeting-house; yet, in 1729, thirty persons, many of them Baptists, were confined in Bristol jail. In 1729, 1733, 1734, and 1747, under pretense of exempting their property from this tax, they had been subjected not only to all sorts of annoyances but to much severe suffering, until these systematic wrongs culminated in the outrages which robbed the Baptists at Ashfield, and sold their burying-grounds to build a Congregational meetinghouse; and they closed their appeal by pointing out the limits of human legislation, the just tenure of property, and the holy principles of Christianity, with the declaration that they were faithful citizens to all civil compacts; and hence, as Christians, they had a right to stand side by side with other Christians in the use of their consciences in religion.

This conference lasted four hours, and the Massachusetts delegation, having a hard case, tried to explain away the alleged facts as best they could, but exhibited much ill temper at the bare relation of these stinging facts. John Adams betrayed great weakness in this direction. He says that having been informed by Governors Hopkins and Ward, that President Manning and Mr. Backus wished to meet them on 'a little business,' they went to Carpenter's Hall, and there:

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

'To my great surprise found the hall almost full of people, and a great number of Quakers seated at the long table with their broad brimmed beavers on their heads. We were invited to seats among them, and informed that they had received complaints from some Anabaptists and some Friends in Massachusetts, against certain laws of that province restrictive of the liberty of conscience, and some instances were mentioned in the General Court, and in the courts of justice, in which Friends and Baptists had been grievously oppressed. I know not how my colleagues felt, but I own I was greatly surprised and somewhat indignant, being, like my friend Chase, of a temper naturally quick and warm, at seeing our State and her delegates thus summoned before a self-created tribunal, which was neither legal nor constitutional. Isaac Pemberton, a Quaker of large property and more intrigue, began to speak, and said that Congress was here endeavoring to form a union of the Colonies; but there were difficulties in the way, and none of more importance than liberty of conscience. The laws of New England, and particularly of Massachusetts, were inconsistent with it, for they not only compelled men to pay to the building of churches and the support of ministers, but to go to some known religious assembly on first days, etc., and that he and his friends were desirous of engaging us to assure them that our State would repeal all those laws, and place things as they were in Pennsylvania.'

He then goes on to call the simple Quaker 'this artful Jesuit,' and to accuse him of attempting to break up the Congress by drawing off Pennsylvania; and then he put in this flimsy plea, which none but an 'indignant' man would have submitted when he was representing a great people in deliberation, concerning the surest way to break their fetters. He says that this was the substance of his own remarks:

'That the people of Massachusetts were as religious and conscientious as the people of Pennsylvania, that their conscience dictated to them that it was their duty to preserve these laws, and, therefore, the very liberty of conscience which Mr. Pemberton invoked would demand indulgence for the tender consciences of the people of Massachusetts, and allow them to preserve their laws...They might as well turn the heavenly bodies out of their annual and diurnal courses as the people of Massachusetts at the present day from their meeting-house and Sunday laws. Pemberton made no reply but this: "O! sir, pray don't urge liberty of conscience in favor of such laws!" Old Isaac Pemberton was quite rude, and his rudeness was resented.'

Clearly it was; but not much to the honor of John Adams, by his own showing. The Baptists had less objection to the Congregationalists taxing themselves to support their own ministers for conscience sake, if their consciences were 'tender' on that subject, than they had to that tenderness of Massachusetts conscience' which compelled Baptists to support the Congregational ministry and their own too. This distinction seems to have been the rudeness in which Isaac Pemberton indulged and which Adams 'resented,' but just how 'indignant' Adams would have been if Lord North had insisted that the tender conscience of England compelled her to enforce her laws in Massachusetts does not appear. Probably he would have been more 'indignant' still.

Every kind of misrepresentation went abroad concerning this conference, and in high quarters the Baptists were accused of trying to prevent the Colonies from uniting against Britain, the effect of which was to throw stigma on them as the enemies of their country, and it is even said that Backus, their unflinching agent, was threatened with the gallows. This slander they refuted in various documents, but the answer which silenced all such empty clamor was the hearty unanimity with which the whole body threw themselves into the support of the war when independence of Britain was proclaimed. Another strange episode of hatred revealed itself in this desperate struggle. When they could obtain no justice here, they appealed for help to their own brethren in London, and Dr. Stennett appeared with a plea for them before his majesty's Commissioners for Trade and

The American Baptists

Plantations. He begged their lordships to induce the king: 'To disallow an act passed in the Province of Massachusetts Bay in June, 1767, by which the Antipedo-Baptists and Quakers are compelled to pay to the support of a minister of a different persuasion. Their lordships thereupon read and considered the said act, and it was ordered that a draught of a representation to His Majesty should be prepared, proposing that it may be disallowed.' On July 31, 1771, the King held a council, and 'His Majesty taking the same into consideration was pleased with the advice of his Privy Council to declare his disallowance of the said act, and to order that the said act be and it is hereby disallowed and rejected. Whereof the Governor, Lieutenant- Governor, or Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's said Province of Massachusetts Bay, for the time being, and all others whom it may concern, are to take notice and govern themselves accordingly.'

The loyalty of the baptists to the American cause was so clearly evinced, their appeals for equal rights were so well-balanced and reasonable, and their unyielding struggles for liberty were so open and manly, that at last they began to be felt and respected in public affairs. Schooled in conscience and scourged to unconquerable resistance to tyranny, they were driven to the use of every honorable incentive; like wise men, they organized for a long and severe contest; with Backus, Manning and Stillman at their head, and made their first attacks upon the strongholds of political Puritanism. Their powerful committee at Boston addressed a most statesmanlike document to the Congress of Massachusetts, which met at Cambridge, November 22d, 1774, in which they once more submitted their case. John Hancock, the president, presented the paper, and asked whether or not it should be read. The intolerants cried with one accord, 'No, no.' But a more considerate member rising said: 'This is very extraordinary, that we should pay no regard to a denomination who, in the place where he lived, were as good members of society as any, and were equally engaged with others in the defense of their civil liberties.' He moved that it be read, and the motion was adopted. After the reading the general disposition was to throw it out unacted upon. By that time Mr. Adams began to feel uneasy, and, rising to his feet, said that he apprehended if it were thrown out it might cause a division amongst the provinces, and he moved its reference to a committee. On consideration the Congress sent this soft and civil answer:

'IN PROVINCIAL CONGRESS', CAMBRIDGE, .December 9, 1774.

'On reading the memorial of the Rev. Isaac Backus, agent to the Baptist Churches in this government:

'Resolved, That the establishment of civil and religious liberty to each denomination in the province is the sincere wish of this Congress; but being by no means vested with powers of civil government, whereby they can redress the grievances of any person whatever, they therefore recommend to the Baptist Churches that when a General Assembly shall be convened in this colony they lay the real grievances of said Churches before the same, when and where this petition will most certainly meet with all that attention due to the memorial of a denomination of Christians so well disposed to the public weal of their country.

'By order of the Congress. JOHN HANCOCK, President. BENJAMIN LINCOLN, Secretary. A true extract from the minutes.'

The moral effect of this action on the public mind was very great, for it advised the Baptists what course to take in the matter of their 'real grievances,' and when the Assembly met, in October, 1775, a new and strong paper was sent for its consideration. Upon its presentation Major Hawley declared to the body that without doubt the Baptists had been injuriously treated, and the memorial was

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

committed to seven members for deliberate consideration. Dr. Asaph Fletcher, a Baptist, was on that committee, and after long debate it recommended redress of Baptist grievances. This caused great commotion in the House, and the memorial, with those who sent it, was severely attacked. Major Hawley defended both, and told the Assembly 'that the established religion of this colony was not worth a groat, and wished it might fall to the ground,' as Dr. Fletcher writes. After long discussion it ordered that Dr. Fletcher 'have liberty to bring in a bill for the redress of such grievances as he apprehends the Baptists labor under.' When this was passed, Mr. Gerry moved that the Baptists withdraw their memorial, for he was offended with the plain and sound manner in which it had put their wrongs on record. Hawley opposed this motion, wishing the paper to be put on file, for it was worthy; 'and he hoped it would be there till it had eaten out the present establishment.' Fletcher brought in a bill, which was read but never acted upon.

Dr. Manning was sent by the General Assembly of Rhode Island to the Continental Congress, 1786, where he served as their representative, with great honor to himself and his constituents, his voice and pen being ever ready to treat the great subjects under consideration with marked skill. He had great influence with the people of New England, and especially in Massachusetts and Rhode Island; which was felt in the most wholesome manner when the adoption of the Federal Constitution was stirringly opposed, for he cast his entire weight in its favor when it was in danger of rejection. He was far in advance of his times, both as a Baptist and an American. Broad, disinterested and self-sacrificing, his memory cannot be too sacredly cherished. He was manly and engaging in his address, spontaneous and forceful in his eloquence, symmetrical and powerful in body and mind, and, better than all besides, he was true to his holy convictions and his redeeming Lord. Another grand but very different Baptist leader of these days was:

JOHN LELAND, born May 14th, 1754, at Grafton, Mass.; died January 14th, 1841. No three great men could differ more widely than Stillman, Manning and Leland. They were all wise in council and mighty in execution, but they worked in various departments of patriotic activity and readied different classes. Leland's convictions were as clear and deep as they well could be, but his tastes and habits, as well as his early training, all ran in other channels than these of his compeers. They were drilled in classic thought and expression; his associations had been with the pure, robust and sturdy plebeians of his youth. His powers were rare and natural; theirs were molded by culture. They were polished, measured, graceful; he followed the instincts of mother-wit, quick adaptation and eccentric eloquence. They readied the grave, the conservative and thoughtful; he moved the athletic masses. They did more to begin the Baptist struggle under the Federalism of the East; he lived to finish the triumph in the radical democracy of the South. It is, therefore, wonderful to see how exactly God adapted them to their fields and made them true yokefellows in the same holy cause.

Leland was baptized by Noah Alden, of Bellingham, Mass., in 1774, only two years before the war, and after the most intense soul-agonies on account of his sins and exposure to the second death. A year afterwards he took his first journey to New Jersey and Virginia. In 1776 he united with the Baptist Church at Mount Poney, in Culpeper County, and for a time was its pastor until he removed to Orange County. He spent much of his time in traveling at large and preaching the Gospel, spending about fifteen years of his ministry in Virginia, where he baptized about 700 persons on their faith in Christ. Dr. Semple said that he was probably the most popular preacher who ever resided in Virginia. The late Dr. Cone loved to describe him as he heard him preach; in his own

The American Baptists

inimitable manner he would give the tones of his voice, his fertile genius in times of strait, his astonishing memory, especially of Scripture, and his vivacity and wit in handling an antagonist, expressed in home thrusts and cogent logic. And, withal, he always spoke of Leland's awful solemnity in addressing the Throne of Grace, and in enforcing the claims of God's justice, truth and benevolence. There was little of the sensational about him, but a tender unction often moved the crowds that followed him and led them without resistance to the atoning Lamb.

He had many struggles of mind as to the most successful way of addressing sinners and of leading them to repentance, he was a Calvinist, but would not be bound by the methods of Gill; neither did Wesley or Andrew Fuller suit him; and for practical purposes he thought that two grains of Arminianism with three of Calvinism made a good proportion in preaching. He says that one time he was preaching when his soul got 'into the trade winds,' and when the Spirit of the Lord fell upon him he paid no attention either to Gill or Fuller, and five of his hearers confessed Christ.

He was one of the bravest and most successful advocates of civil and religious liberty, and did a noble work with the Virginia Baptists in that direction. He believed that God had called him to a special mission to stand by his brethren in his adopted State; so that we find him side by side with Harris, Ford, Williams, Waller and others on every occasion where an inch of ground could be gained, he entered the State too late to suffer by persecution as a prisoner, but he was there in the thickest of the legal fight. To use his own words: 'The dragon roared with hideous peals, but was not red; the beast appeared formidable, but was not scarlet colored,' [meaning that no blood was shed] and his Virginia chronicles show that he was right.

Scarcely was the first shot fired at Lexington, when every Baptist on the continent sprung to his feet and hailed its echo as the pledge of deliverance, as well from domestic as foreign oppressors. They were amongst the 'first to suffer and to sacrifice, and then their enemies were mean enough to charge them with ingratitude to the king who had interposed for their help in Massachusetts. But nothing moved them from their steadfastness; hence, wherever the British standard was triumphant, their pastors were obliged to flee from their flocks, their meetinghouses were destroyed, and they were hated of all men. In common with all Whigs they were traitors to the crown, and the State Churches in New England and Virginia rendered it hard for them as fellow-patriots to fight comfortably at their side, because they set at naught religious exactions which these regarded in force, inflexible as laws of Media and Persia. It required plain, honest men, of Leland's will and nerve, to meet this state of things, and he never flinched, nor did his Virginia brethren.

They organized their resistance as a denomination, and in May, 1775, sixty Churches met at the Dover Church, when their representatives resolved to address the Convention which Virginia had called to consider the state of the country. The address of the Baptists is spread upon the Journal of this political body. It states that they were alarmed at the oppressions which hung over America, and had determined that war should be made with Great Britain, that many of their brethren had enlisted as soldiers, and many more were ready to do so, and that they would encourage their young ministers to serve as chaplains in the army which should resist Great Britain. Also, they declared that 'Toleration by the civil government is not sufficient; that no State religious establishment ought to exist; that all religions denominations ought to stand upon the same footing; and that to all alike the protection of the government should be extended, securing to them the peaceable enjoyment of their own religious principles and modes of worship.'

These positions they argued and fortified at length, and they sent this memorial to the

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

Convention by a Committee composed of Jeremiah Walker, John Williams and George Roberts. This Convention instructed the Virginia delegates in Congress to declare American independence on May 15th, 1776. Our brethren were wise in their generation; their deputation succeeding in enlisting Jefferson, Madison, and Patrick Henry, in their cause of full religious freedom. Dr. Hawks, in his 'History of the Episcopal Church in Virginia,' says: 'The Baptists were not slow in discovering the advantageous position in which the political troubles of the country had placed them. Their numerical strength was such as to make it important to both sides to secure their influence; they knew this, and therefore determined to turn the circumstances to their profit as a sect. Persecution had taught them not to love the establishment, and now they saw before them a reasonable prospect of overturning it entirely. In their Association they had calmly discussed the matter, and resolved on their course; in this course they were consistent to the end.'

The bitterest persecutions which they had endured ran through the twelve years between 1763 and 1775, and they gained their full freedom only point by point and inch by inch; as is evident from the fact that all which the Convention could be induced to do, under the lead of the three great statesmen named, was to return a complimentary answer to the Baptists, and to pass an order that the ministers of other denominations should be placed on the same footing as chaplains of the Virginian army with those of the Episcopal Church. But this was really the first step gained toward equality by our Baptist brethren. A second, and much more important one, was taken in 1776, when under the same influences the Virginia Declaration of Rights was adopted, June 12th, the XVIth Article of which lays the Baptist principle of soul-liberty as the corner-stone of Virginia's government. This was followed, by a general petition, that all sects should be exempted from legal taxes for the support of any one particular Church, and on October 7th, 1776, the State salaries of the Episcopal clergy were suspended. Jefferson says that: 'The first Republican Legislature which met in 1776 was crowded with petitions to abolish this spiritual tyranny. These brought on the severest contest in which I was ever engaged,' and he adds that the measure to suspend this and certain other old laws touching the established Church was carried only after 'Desperate contests' in the Committee of the whole house, 'almost daily from the 11th of October to the 5th of December.' It was not until 1779 that these salaries paid by legal taxation were abolished forever.

During the struggle to abolish the State religion there arose a fear in the minds of many devout people, that Christianity itself might fall, or be so far impaired as to endanger the safety of the State, which is founded on true morality and religion. Even Patrick Henry felt some alarm here, champion as he was for religious liberty. He looked upon the success of the Republican movement, and rightly, as depending upon the virtue of the people, without which it must miserably fail. He saw that the influence of the war would be corrupting, that the country was threatened with the destructive ideas of France, and the religious teachers of the country were so poorly supported that he was alarmed, for he had never seen the working of the voluntary system on a large scale. In common, therefore, with many others, he caught the idea that the State authorities should regulate religion by imposing a tax on all its citizens, leaving each person at liberty to appropriate his tax to the support of his own Church. This measure seemed healthful to and was supported by nearly all Christian denominations in Virginia except the Baptists, who refused to be taxed by the State even for the support of their own Churches. They took this ground on principle, namely: That the State had no jurisdiction in the matter, as the question of religion was left amongst His inalienable rights in the hands of every man, subject to his choice, and that Christianity needed no State support by compulsory measures;

The American Baptists

therefore, it was an abuse and a usurpation of power over the citizen for the State to touch the subject at all.

They said in their remonstrance: 'Who does not see that the same authority which can establish Christianity in exclusion of all other religions may establish, with the same ease, any particular sect of Christians, in exclusion of all other sects?' They argued that an established Church destroys all equality before the law, in the matter of religion, as it imposes burdens on some and exempts others. They insisted that the liberties of man and the prosperity of the Commonwealth required Virginia to renounce all interference in the religion of her citizens, in consequence of their resistance the Assessment Bill was defeated, and Dr. Hawks writes: 'The Baptists were the principal promoters of this work, and, in truth, aided more than any other denomination in its accomplishment.'

A volume would be necessary for a full detail of the service which the Baptists rendered to their country, in her civic and military departments, during the Revolutionary War. A few individual cases may serve to illustrate the general interest which they took in the issue. In Virginia, Capt. M'Clanahan, a minister of Culpeper County, raised a military company of Baptists, with whom he served on the field both as captain and chaplain. Howe says that the Legislature had invited the formation of such companies 'under officers of their own principles.' Semple tells us that Rev. David Barrow took his musket and did good service for his country in the conflict, winning great honor for himself also.

Dr. Cone slates that his grandfather, Col. Joab Houghton, while attending worship in the Baptist meeting-house at Hopewell, N. J., met a messenger out of breath with the news of the defeat at Lexington. He kept silence till the services were closed, then in the open lot before the sanctuary detailed to the congregation:

'The story of the cowardly murder at Lexington by the royal troops, the heroic vengeance following hard upon it, the retreat of Percy, and the gathering of the children of the Pilgrims around the beleaguered city of Boston. Then pausing, and looking over the silent crowd, he said slowly: "Men of New Jersey, the red coats are murdering our brethren in New England. Who follows me to Boston?" Every man in that audience stepped out into line and answered, "I!" There was not a coward nor a traitor in old Hopewell meeting-house that day.'

Col. Houghton continued in the army to the close of the war and fought valiantly. At one time a band of marauding Hessians had entered a New Jersey house at Moore's Mill, to plunder it, having stacked their arms at the door. He seized their arms and made their leader and a dozen men his prisoners, almost in sight of the British army. He was a member of the Hopewell Baptist Church, and died in 1795.

General Scriven, of Georgia, the grandson of Rev. William Scriven, was a brave soldier. After Savannah fell into the hands of the British forces, the officer in command ordered him to give up Sunbury also, and received the answer: 'Come and take it.' Afterwards he was slaughtered in an ambush of British and Tories at Laurel Hill. Colonel Mills, who commanded 1,000 riflemen with great skill at the battle of Long Island, was a deacon in the First Baptist Church, Philadelphia. Although captured with Generals Sullivan and Sterling, he was made a Brigadier-General for his valor. Colonel Loxley, who commanded the artillery at the battle of Germantown, of whom it was said, 'he was always foremost when great guns were in question,' was a member of the same Church.

John Brown, of Providence, R.I., brother to Nicholas, and a firm Baptist, owned twenty vessels

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

liable to destruction by the enemy. In 1772, when the British war vessel *Gaspee* entered Narraganset Bay, to enforce British revenue customs, she ran aground, whereupon Brown sent eight boats, armed by sixty-four men, under the command of Abraham Whipple, one of his ship-masters, to destroy her. On opening fire Lieutenant Duddington was wounded, the rest of the officers and crew left, and the *Gaspee* was blown up. It has been said that 'this was the first British blood shed in the War of Independence.'

We have another great patriot in the person of John Hart, who was a representative of New Jersey in the Continental Congress, and signed the Declaration of Independence. On the 23d of October, 1770, he had taken a leading part in passing the following resolution in the New Jersey Assembly: 'That no further provision be made for the supply of His Majesty's troops stationed in this colony.' This resolution startled the people, and the Governor threatened the Assembly so seriously that it annulled this action and voted £500 for the use of the army. Hart stood firm, voted against reconsideration, and in April, 1771, sustained the resolution, which was passed the second time. He was elected Speaker of the New Jersey Assembly after that State had declared itself free, and he was limited as an arrant traitor. The Legislature was obliged to flee from place to place, its members hiding themselves as best they could, and Governor Parker says that when Hart returned to visit his home he found it deserted; 'the health of his wife, to whom he was devotedly attached, impaired by the cares of a large family and the alarm created by the near approach of the Hessians, had given way, and she died in the absence of her husband. His children had fled, and were concealed in various places in the mountains. His crops had been consumed by the enemy, and his stock driven away. He was compelled to fly to save his life, and for weeks he was a fugitive, limited from house to house, wandering through the forests and sleeping in caves.' When Washington crossed the Delaware, in the snow and hail and rain of that immortal night, December 25th, 1776, and found himself and his little band of heroes safe in Trenton the next morning, honest John Hart came forth from his hiding place, convened the Legislature for January 22d, 1777, and held his fidelity till his death, full of years and honors. He executed a deed to the Baptist Church at Hopewell, in 1771, giving the land on which their meeting-house is built, and led in the erection of the building where he and his family worshiped God. On July 4th, 1865, the State of New Jersey erected a beautiful monument, of Quincy granite, over his bones at Hopewell. He is represented as being tall and very prepossessing in person, very kind in his disposition, and he made a great favorite of his negro servant, Jack. Jack committed larceny on some of his master's goods in his absence, and many wished Hart to punish him; but he said that, as he had confided all his movables to Jack's care, he must let the offense pass as a breach of trust. When he was secreted in the Sourland Mountains, in 1776, he rested where he could in the day-time, and slept at night in an out-house, with his companion, the family dog. A marginal note on the journal of the Legislature for 1779, and the probate of his will, show that he died in that year; the first of these being May 11th, and the last May 23d.

These few instances show the general tone of American patriotism amongst the American Baptists, for their ranks were almost unbroken on this subject. Judge Curwen was an ardent Tory; he mentions 926 persons of note who sympathized with the British, and a still more numerous array of Tories exiled by Colonial law; but, so far as is known, there is not the name of one Baptist on the list. Most of the officials of Rhode Island and about two fifths of her people were Baptists. In 1764 she formed a Committee of Correspondence, whose design it was to secure the co-operation of the

The American Baptists

other Colonies in maintaining their liberties.

This chapter may well close with a brief notice of SEVERAL BAPTIST MINISTERS WHO SERVED AS CHAPLAINS, for out of twenty-one whose names are now known, six of them, or nearly one third of the number, were our own brethren, who rendered marked service, some of them being of national reputation and influence.

Mention may be made of:

HEZEKIAH SMITH, D.D., of Haverhill, Mass. He entered the army in 1776, and so noted did he become as a patriot that he not only attracted the notice of Washington, but became his personal friend, corresponded freely with him after the war, and was visited by him at Haverhill in 1789. Smith set an example of bravery to the soldiers in battle, as well as of devotion to their country and purity of character. His recently published journal throws considerable light upon the movements of Gates in foiling Burgoyne's attempt to join Clinton, and on his overthrow at Stillwater and Saratoga. We have already spoken of

REV. JOHN GANO, who was a patriot of the best order, as well as a noble pastor. He began his services in the army in Clinton's New York Brigade, and was indefatigable in animating his regiment at the battle of Chatterton's Hill. The army was in something of a panic, and with cool courage he took his post in what seemed a forlorn hope. Many were abandoning their guns and flying without firing a shot, so that a mere handful were holding their ground when he sprang to the front. He states that he knew his station in time of action to be with the surgeons, and he half apologizes for his daring, saying: 'In this battle I somehow got to the front of the regiment, yet I durst not quit my place for fear of dampening the spirits of the soldiers or bringing on myself an imputation of cowardice.' he was at Fort Montgomery when it was taken by storm, but knew nothing of fear. Webb, Warren, Hall and Washington were all his personal friends.

An interesting incident in his chaplaincy is related by Ruttenbeer, in His 'History of Newburg.' News was 'received that hostilities had ceased and that the preliminary articles of peace were settled; and on April 19th, 1783, Washington proclaimed peace from the 'New Building,' and called on the chaplains with the several brigades to render thanks to God. Both banks of the Hudson were lined by the patriot hosts, with drum and fife, burnished arms and floating banners. At high noon thirteen guns from Fort Putnam awoke the echoes of the Highlands, and the army fired a volley. At that moment the hosts of freedom bowed before God in prayer, after which a hymn of thanksgiving; floated from all voices to the Eternal throne. This building was not Washington's headquarters, but was a large room for public assemblies, sometimes called the 'Temple,' located in New Windsor, between Newburg and West Point. Thatcher says in his 'Journal' that when this touching scene occurred the proclamation made from the steps was followed by three huzzas, then prayer was offered to the Almighty Ruler of the world by Rev. JOHN GANO, and an anthem was performed by voices and instruments. After these services the army returned to quarters and spent the day in suitable festivities. Then, at sundown, the signal gun of Fort Putnam called the soldiers to arms and another volley of joy rang all along the line. This was three times repeated, cannon discharges followed with the flashing of thousands of fire-arms, and the beacons from the hill-tops, no longer 'harbingers of danger,' lighted up the gloom and rolled on the tidings of peace through New England and shed their radiance on the blood-stained field of Lexington. Every patriotic Christian heart in the nation joined in the thanksgiving to which this patriot Baptist pastor gave expression in the presence of his immortal Commander-in- chief.

Chapter 11 - Baptists and the Revolutionary War

REV. DAVID JONES, born in Delaware, May 12th, 1736, was another eminent Baptist chaplain, he had been a student at the Hopewell Academy for three years, pastor at Freehold, N. J., and missionary to the Shawnee and Delaware Indians. At the outbreak of the war, however, he was pastor at Great Valley, Chester County, Pa. he was a bold and original thinker, and had highly offended many Tories in New Jersey by the free utterance of his Whig sentiments. The Continental Congress appointed a day of fasting and prayer in 1775, when he preached a powerful sermon in defense of the war to Colonel Dewee's regiment, which exerted a powerful influence on the public mind when printed. He became Chaplain to Colonel St. Clair's regiment in 1776, and greatly aroused the patriotism of the soldiers in a sermon just before the conflict at Ticonderoga. He served also under Gates and Wayne, and was so heroic that General Howe offered a reward for his capture, and one or more plots were laid to secure him, but failed. He preached to the army at Valley Forge, when the news came that France had recognized American independence. It seems to have been his custom to preach as often as possible before going into battle, and he remained in the army until the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown. When Wayne was sent against the Indians, in 1794-96, he accompanied him as chaplain, and again in the same capacity he went through the war with Britain in 1812, under Generals Brown and Wilkinson. He was the father of Horatio Gates Jones, D.D., and grandfather of the present Hon. Horatio Gates Jones, of Philadelphia.

REV. WILLIAM VANHORN was another Baptist chaplain of note. His education had been committed to Dr. Samuel Jones, of Lower Dublin, Pa., and for thirteen years he was pastor of the Church at Southampton, in that State. His life in the army appears to have been marked by consistency, piety and industry, rather than by stirring acts of enterprise and daring. For twenty-one years he was pastor of the Church at Scotch Plains, N. J., where he closed his useful life greatly beloved by his flock.

REV. CHARGES THOMPSON ranked equally with his fellow-chaplains as a man of culture and vigor. He was born in New Jersey in 1748, and was the valedictorian of the first class which graduated from Rhode Island College under the Presidency of Dr. Manning, numbering seven, in 1769; he also succeeded the doctor as pastor at Warren. There he baptized Dr. William Williams, one of his classmates, who afterwards established the Academy at Wrentham. In 1778 the meeting-house and parsonage at Warren were burned by the British and Hessian troops, and Thompson entered the American army as chaplain, where he served for three years. He was a thorough scholar and a finished gentleman, winning great distinction in the army. This exposed him to the special hatred of the enemy, who made him a prisoner of war and kept him on a guard-ship at Newport. He served many years as pastor at Swansea, and died of consumption in 1803.

The last, and in some respects the most noted of our chaplains, was WILLIAM ROGERS, D.D. He was born in Rhode Island in 1751, and graduated in the same class with Thompson. He was the first student received at that college, entering at the age of fourteen, and on the day of his graduation delivered an oration on benevolence. In 1773 he became pastor of the First Baptist Church at Philadelphia, and had been there three years when Pennsylvania raised her quota of soldiers for that province; he was first appointed chaplain, and afterwards Brigade Chaplain in the Continental Army. In 1778 he accompanied General Sullivan in his expedition against the Six Nations, at the head of 3,000 troops gathered at Wyoming. They marched north to Tioga Point, then on the frontier. His eminent ability and refined manners placed him on relations of intimate friendship with General Washington, and made him an ornament in our Churches. For years he served as Professor of

The American Baptists

English and Oratory in the College of Philadelphia and in the University of Pennsylvania. In battle, in camp, in hospitals or in the pulpit and the professor's chair he was alike at home, and a blessing to all around him.

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

Dr. Leonard Bacon writes of the Baptists in his 'New England Theocracy' thus: 'It has been claimed for these Churches that from the age of the Reformation onward they have been always foremost and always consistent in maintaining the doctrine of religious liberty. Let me not be understood as calling in question their right to so great an honor.' But until the American Revolution they had scant means, comparatively, to demonstrate the practical soundness of this claim. Yet when the field was open for experimental proof that it was well founded, they were not found faithless in their relations either to the free constitutions of the several States or to that of the United States. They had little to hope from most of their fellow-colonists, who had gone to the verge of their power in using all social and legal forces to persecute and destroy them as a religious body, and that phase of the question was solemnly considered by them. When Dr. Samuel Jones went as one of their committee to present their appeal to the Continental Congress he said: 'It seemed unreasonable to us that we should be called to stand up with them in defense of liberty, if, after all, it was to be a liberty for one party to oppress another.'

The little Baptist colony of Rhode Island had more to lose and less to gain by revolution than any of her twelve sister colonies. Unlike Massachusetts and Virginia, she had no Governor appointed by the Crown, who could veto her acts of legislation. Bancroft tells us that this State enjoyed after the revolution, 'a form of government under its charter so thoroughly republican that no change was required beyond a renunciation of the King's name, in the style of its public acts.' Revolution would imperil her largest liberties, while complete success in the attempt to secure independence of Britain would add little to the rights which she already possessed. But should she be conquered she must relinquish even these, for the Crown would appoint her a Governor and control her legislation, at least by the power of the veto. Yet no selfish consideration of this sort weighed with the Baptists of Rhode Island. They saw their brethren of other colonies oppressed more than they were, and as their own love of liberty was a genuine growth, they demanded it as the birthright of all. Hence, they were as ready at once to resist encroachment upon the civil liberties of all the colonies as they had been to defy the unjust exactions of a spiritual tyranny upon themselves. They, therefore, carried with them into the struggle against civil oppression the same spirit which had moved them in resisting all encroachment upon the liberties of the soul. Two months before the Declaration of Independence, and thirty-two days before Virginia renounced allegiance to the Crown, Rhode Island repudiated all allegiance to George III, May 4th, 1776; and immediately after the retreat of General Gage from Concord and Lexington, her Legislature voted to send 1,500 men to the scene of conflict. It is, therefore, a significant testimony to the character of the teaching of Williams and Clarke that the boon which they had given the Rhode Islanders, first the town-meeting and then the Colonial Assembly shorn of all power to touch the question of 'conscience' and shut up to 'civil things,' should in the next century have borne such good fruit. Nearly five generations had passed since the colony was first planted, and now it was willing to imperil its own religious freedom in order to advance the political liberties of other communities. This brought no small strain upon its unselfish patriotism.

The Baptists of Virginia took an equally resolute step in favor of independence. but though under different circumstances, not a jot less honorable. Notwithstanding their persecutions by the Colony itself, the moment that the State Convention met to determine the duty of the Colony, sixty Baptist Churches said to this civil body: Strike the blow! 'Make military resistance to Great Britain, in her

The American Baptists

unjust invasion, tyrannical oppression and repeated hostilities,' and we will sustain you, ministers and people. Virginia had no sympathy with Puritanism, and in her old devotion to the Stuarts had refused to recognize the authority of the Commonwealth. For this Massachusetts had prohibited all intercourse with her, and under the administration of George III, when Patrick Henry introduced His famous Fifth Resolution into the Virginia Legislature, containing the doctrine of revolution, denouncing the Stamp Act, and refusing taxation without representation, the leading men of that body cried with horror, 'Treason! treason!' Campbell, in his history of Virginia, says: 'Speaker Robinson, Peyton Randolph, Richard Bland, Edward Pendleton, George Wythe, and all the leaders in the House and proprietors of large estates made a strenuous resistance.' True, the wonderful eloquence of Henry secured a majority for the resolution, but the men who voted for it were so alarmed by the cry of treason which it provoked that the next day they secured its erasure from the records. One of the paradoxes of American history has been that, despite the sentiment of many of its leading men thus loyal to the Crown, Virginia should have finally taken front rank amongst the revolting colonies.

Jefferson, in his 'Notes on Virginia,' incidentally supplies the clue to this problem. He states that at the time of the Revolution two-thirds of her population had become Dissenters; for the most part they were Quakers, Presbyterians and Baptists. By the intolerable sufferings and indefatigable labors of the Baptist preachers they had cherished and diffused their own love of liberty throughout the whole colony for half a century. Their memorial to the Convention had deeper root than the feeling of the hour; it was grounded in these evangelical convictions which were shared by a majority of the people of Virginia. That Virginia cast her Royalist antecedents aside and loyally espoused the cause of the revolution was largely due to the fact that Baptist suffering, preaching and democratic practice, had educated her people for the issue. Thomas Jefferson, possibly an advanced Unitarian; Patrick Henry, a devout Presbyterian; and James Madison, thought to be a liberal Episcopalian, felt the throb of the public heart, saw that its patriotism was founded upon religious conviction, and, like wise men, instead of stemming the strong tide they gave it their leadership, under which it swept on, notwithstanding the opposition of English rectors and the entangling traditions of a grinding hierarchy.

The Baptists of Virginia, however, did not rush hastily into this struggle, nor were they without a definite purpose; they counted the cost and anticipated the legitimate result of their position. The records of the Colonial Convention, June 20th, 1776, say that:

'A petition of sundry persons of the Baptist Church, in the County of Prince William, whose names are thereunto subscribed, was presented to the Convention and read, setting forth that at a time when this colony, with the others, is contending for the civil rights of mankind, against the enslaving schemes of a powerful enemy, they are persuaded the strictest unanimity is necessary among ourselves; and that every remaining cause of division may if possible, be removed, they think it their duty to petition for the following religious privileges, which they have not yet been indulged with in this part of the world, to wit: That they be allowed to worship God in their own way, without interruption; that they be permitted to maintain their own minister's and none others; that they may be married, buried and the like without paying the clergy of other denominations; that, these things granted, they will gladly unite with their brethren, and to the utmost of their ability promote the common cause. Ordered that the said petition be referred to the Committee of Propositions and Grievances; that they inquire into the allegations thereof and report the same, with their opinions thereupon, to the Convention.'

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

The Baptists concealed nothing. For full liberty, civil and religious, they were ready to give their lives and all that they had, but for less they would risk nothing: they might as well be the civil vassals of Britain as the religious vassals of a republic in Virginia. This was understood all around, and hence they kept influential commissioners in constant attendance on the Legislature and Conventions of the State, from the beginning to the close of the struggle for perfect religious freedom; or, as Bishop Meade expresses it, when their full rights were secured: 'The warfare begun by the Baptists seven and twenty years before was now finished.' They had a great advantage in the fact that the three men who were the most prominently identified with the Revolutionary cause in Virginia espoused their cause and co-operated with them – Jefferson, Henry and Madison. This was not due, perhaps, on their part, to the same deep religious conviction which actuated the Baptists. But in their immense breadth of mind, logical adherence to conclusions drawn from those premises which justified the Revolution, brought these mighty men to the same positions.

Thomas Jefferson comprehended Baptist aims perfectly, for he was in perpetual intercourse with their leading men, and they intrusted him with the charge of their public documents. His mother was an Episcopalian, but his favorite aunt, her sister, Mrs. Woodson, was a Baptist. These two sisters were the daughters of Ishain Randolph, Mrs. Woodson residing in Goochland County. When young he loved to visit her house and accompany her to the Baptist Church, of which she and her husband were members. It is through the members of his uncle's and aunt's family, as well as through the Madisons, that the tradition has come down that he caught his first views of a democratic form of government while attending these meetings. A letter lies before the writer from Mrs. O. P. Moss, of Missouri, whose husband was a direct descendant of the Woodson family; his mother knew Jefferson intimately, and has kept the tradition alive in the family. She says that 'when grown to manhood these impressions became so fixed that upon them he formulated the plan of a free government and based the Declaration of Independence.' Jefferson himself speaks of his close intimacy with the Baptists in the following epistle, already referred to in Chapter VIII: 'To the members of the Baptist Church of Buck Mountain, in Albemarle; Monticello, April 13th, 1809:

'I thank you, my friends and neighbors, for your kind congratulations on my return to my native home, and of the opportunities it will give me of enjoying, amidst your affections, the comforts of retirement and rest. Your approbation of my conduct is the more valued as you have best known me, and is an ample reward for any services I may have rendered. We have acted together from the origin to the end of a memorable revolution, and we have contributed, each in the line allotted to us, our endeavors to render its issues a permanent blessing to our country. That our social intercourse may, to the evening of our days, be cheered and cemented by witnessing the freedom and happiness for which we have labored, will be my constant prayer. Accept the offering of my affectionate esteem and respect.'

Elder John Leland speaks of his intimacy with Jefferson. In his Address on an Elective Judiciary, he found it necessary to repel certain charges against his beau ideal statesman, and says: 'I lived in Virginia, from December 1776, until April, 1791, not far from Monticello; yet I never heard a syllable of either of these crimes.' There was a oneness of views and a mutual esteem in all that relates to religious liberty between him and the Baptists. John Leland was in constant communication with him on this subject, and he only spoke their sentiments when he said of Jefferson, that 'By his writing and administration, he has justly acquired the title of the Apostle of Liberty.' The replies of Jefferson to three Baptist Associations, and to the Baptists of Virginia in General Meeting assembled, speak of the satisfaction which the review of his times gave him, in

The American Baptists

remembering his long and earnest cooperation with them in achieving the religious freedom of America.

Early in his life Patrick Henry evinced his deep sympathy with them on the same point, for Semple says of the immortal patriot and orator and of the efforts to attain full liberty of conscience: 'It was in making these attempts that they were so fortunate as to interest in their behalf the celebrated Patrick Henry; being always the friend of liberty, he only needed to be informed of their oppression – without hesitation, he stepped forward to their relief. From that time, until the day of their complete emancipation from the shackles of tyranny, the Baptists found in Patrick Henry an unwavering friend.'

It is supposed that he drew up the noble petition of the Presbytery of Hanover, addressed to the Virginia Colonial Convention, in favor of religious liberty, Oct. 7th, 1776, and if he did, it is enough to render his name immortal, for no abler document on the subject was ever submitted to that or any other body. William Wirt Henry, his grandson, claims, that his renowned ancestor was the real author of the sixteenth section of the Virginia Bill of Rights, which guarantees perfect religious liberty. George Mason, Edmund Randolph and Patrick Henry were all members of the Committee that framed it; and Randolph says, that when Mason submitted his draft for the consideration of the Committee, he had not made proper provisions for religious liberty. Whereupon, Patrick Henry proposed the fifteenth and sixteenth sections in these words:

'That no free government, or the blessings of liberty, can be preserved to any people but by a firm adherence to Justice, moderation, temperance, frugality, and virtue, and by frequent recurrence to fundamental principles. That religion, or the duty we owe to our Creator and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, and not by force or violence; and, therefore, that all men should enjoy the fullest toleration in the exercise of religion, according to the dictates of conscience, unpunished and unrestrained by the magistrates, unless, under the color of religion, any man disturb the peace, the happiness, or the safety of society; and that it is the mutual duty of all to practice Christian forbearance, love, and charity toward each other.'

Mr. Madison, however, who was also a member of the Committee, detected serious danger lurking in the word 'toleration,' and moved this amendment, which was adopted, first by the Committee, and on May 6, 1776, by the Convention:

'That religion, or the duty which we owe to our Creator, and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, not by force or violence; and therefore all men are equally entitled to the free exercise of religion according to the dictates of conscience; and that it is the mutual duty of all to practice Christian forbearance, love and charity toward each other.'

Jefferson was not in the Convention which framed this Bill, but nine years afterwards he served on a Committee of the General Assembly to revise the laws for the new State, when he submitted the following, which was adopted, Dec. 16, 1785, and is still the fundamental law of Virginia.

'An Act to establish Religious Freedom:

'Be it enacted by the General Assembly, That no man shall be compelled to frequent or support any religious worship, place, or ministry whatsoever, nor shall be enforced, restrained, molested, or burthened in his body or goods, nor shall otherwise suffer on account of his religions opinions or belief; but that all men

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

shall be free to profess and by argument to maintain their opinions in matters of religion, and that the same shall in no wise diminish, enlarge, or affect their civil capacities.'

James Madison had as close relationship to the Baptists as his two illustrious peers, and made himself intimately acquainted with their radical views on the subject of religious equality. Honest John Leland says of him: 'From a child, he was a pattern of sobriety, sturdy and inflexible justice. From an intimate acquaintance with him, I feel satisfied that all the State of Massachusetts, for a bribe, would not buy a single vote of him. A saying of His is fresh in my memory: "It is ridiculous for a man to make use of underhand means to carry a point, although he should know the point is a good one; it would be doing evil that good might come." This saying of his better describes the man than my pen can do.' General Madison, his brother, was a member of a Baptist Church, and their family took a deep interest in the struggles of the denomination. James was one of the youngest members of the Convention which adopted the Bill of Rights, and it required no small judgment and nerve to oppose the idea of 'toleration' on abstract principles there, or to support the tenet that 'all men are entitled to the free exercise of religion, according to their own consciences.' One measure succeeded another, in opposition to the legally established religion of Virginia, in which the Baptists took the leading part at times, and on some measures stood entirely alone, until in the main, through the influence of these three great statesmen, the last step was taken in 1802; the glebes [land belonging to the state-supported churches] were ordered to be sold in payment of the public debt, on the ground that they had been purchased by a public tax, and belonged to the State. Thus ended the struggle for religious liberty in Virginia, and with the disappearance of the Established Church, the last vestige of ecclesiastical tyranny was wiped from the statute- books of that State.

The most worthy Baptist writers have never claimed that their Baptist fathers achieved this grand result alone, nor could such a claim be sustained. They were the most numerous body of dissenters in Virginia, and were a unit in this effort, but they were earnestly aided by all the Quakers and most of the Presbyterians, as lesser but influential bodies. 'Tories' and 'traitors' were held at a large discount in both these denominations, and there were few of them. Indeed, so far as appears, the twenty-seven Presbyterians who met at Charlotte, N.C., May, 1775, to represent the County of Mecklenburg in patriotic convention, were the first American body which declared itself 'a free and independent people; (who) are, and of right ought to be, a sovereign and self- governing association, under the control of no power other than that of our God and the general government of the Congress.' Besides, at that time, there were good reasons why the Quakers, Presbyterians and Baptists should stand firmly together in favor of religious liberty. From 1749, a plan had been openly pushed in England, to force an American Episcopate on all the American Colonies; it excited the deepest alarm in all the non- Episcopal Churches, and did much to fan the revolutionary flame. In 1773 the 'Quebec Act,' to prevent Canada from uniting with the thirteen colonies, had given full freedom of worship and right of property to the Roman Catholic Church there. England also enlarged that province, by extending its lines to the Mississippi on the west, and the Ohio on the south, so that the five States, now northwest of the Ohio, were then included in Canada. Most of the Protestants in the thirteen colonies regarded this as an English attempt to establish that Church. As to this Protestant Episcopate, Graham says, in His 'Colonial History of the United States.' (ii., 194):

'The most politic of all the schemes that were at this time proposed in the British Cabinet, was a project of introducing an ecclesiastical establishment, derived from the model of the Church of England, and

The American Baptists

particularly the order of the bishops, into North America. The pretext assigned for this innovation was, that many non-juring clergymen of the Episcopal persuasion, attached to the cause of the Pretender, had recently emigrated from Britain to America, and that it was desirable to create a board of ecclesiastical dignitaries for the purpose of controlling their proceedings and counteracting their influence; but doubtless it was intended, in part, at least, to answer the ends of strengthening royal prerogative in America – of giving to the State, through the Church of England, an accession of influence over the colonists – and of imparting to their institutions a greater degree of aristocratical character and tendency. The views of the statesmen by whom this design was entertained were inspired by the suggestions of Butler, Bishop of Durham, and were continued and seconded by Seeker, Archbishop of Canterbury, and the society instituted for the propagation of the Gospel. This society had received very erroneous impressions of the religious character of the colonists in general, from some worthless and incapable missionaries, which it sent to America; and Seeker, who partook of these impressions, had promulgated them from the pulpit in a strain of vehement and presumptuous invective. Such demeanor by no means tended to conciliate the favor of the Americans to the proposed ecclesiastical establishment. From the intolerance and bitterness of spirit disclosed by the chief promoters of the scheme, it was natural to forebode a total absence of moderation in the conduct of it.'

This iniquitous plan, added to all the other oppressions of Britain, alarmed New England, for, as John Adams said: 'The objection was not merely to the office of a bishop, though even that was dreaded, but to the authority of Parliament, on which it must be founded...If Parliament can erect dioceses and appoint bishops, they may introduce the whole hierarchy, establish tithes, forbid marriages and funerals, establish religion, forbid dissenters.' In 1708, the Assembly of Massachusetts appointed its Speaker, Mr. Cushing, James Otis, Mr. Adams, John Hancock and five others, a Committee on the Consideration of Public Affairs. In treating of this grievance they say to Mr. Deberdt, the agent of Massachusetts in England:

'The establishment of a Protestant episcopate in America is also very zealously contended for; and it is very alarming to a people whose fathers, from the hardships which they suffered under such an establishment, were obliged to fly their native country into a wilderness, in order peaceably to enjoy their privileges, civil and religious. Their being threatened with loss of both at once must throw them into a disagreeable situation. We hope in God such an establishment may never take place in America, and we desire you would strenuously oppose it. The revenue raised in America, for aught we can tell, may be as constitutionally applied towards the support of prelacy, as of soldiers and pensioners.'

It is not needful to quote authorities to show that Connecticut, New York, and New Jersey were specially excited on the subject, but it may be stated that Virginia resented the aggression as warmly as any of her sister colonies. Boucher, the Episcopal historian in Virginia, espoused the scheme warmly, and in a sermon on 'The American Episcopate,' preached in Caroline County, Va., in 1771, says:

'The constitution of the Church of England is approved, confirmed and adopted by our laws and interwoven with them. No other form of Church government than that of the Church of England would be compatible with the form of our civil government. No other colony has retained so large a portion of the monarchical part of the British constitution as Virginia; and between that attachment to monarchy and the government of the Church of England, there is a strong connection...A levelling republican spirit in the Church naturally leads to republicanism in the State; neither of which would hitherto have been endured in this ancient dominion...And when it is recollected that till now the opposition to an American episcopate has been contained chiefly to the demagogues and independents of the New England provinces, but that it is now espoused with much warmth by the people of Virginia, it requires no great depth of political sagacity to see what the motives and views of the former have been, or what will be the consequences of the defection of the

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

latter.'

The tobacco crop in Virginia was light in 1755 and again in 1758, and the price ran up. Debts had been paid in that staple, but the Assembly decreed that they might now be paid in money at the rate of two pence for a pound of tobacco. The salaries of sixty-five parish ministers were payable in tobacco, and at this rate they were heavy losers. Through Sherlock, Bishop of London, they induced the Council there to pronounce this law void and commenced suits to recover the difference between two pence per pound and the value of the tobacco. As a lawyer, Patrick Henry took sides against the parsons. In the case of Maury, who was to be paid in 16,000 pounds of tobacco, he raised the issue that the King in Council could not annul the law of Virginia. This was his plea in part: 'Except you are disposed yourselves to rivet the chains of bondage on your own necks, do not let slip the opportunity now offered of making such an example of the Rev. plaintiff, as shall hereafter be a warning to himself and his brothers not to have the temerity to dispute the validity of laws authenticated by the only sanction which can give force to laws for the government of this colony, the authority of its own legal representatives, with its council and governor.'

When the jury fixed the damages at one penny, the Bishop of London said that the 'rights of the clergy and the authority of the king must stand or fall together,' and so a joint constitutional and ecclesiastical question met the new question of an episcopate at the first step. This question brought the Presbyterians and Baptists to common ground, with slight exceptions. The Presbyterians had not been true to the principle of full religious liberty in the Old World more than the Congregationalists had been in the New, and thousands of them had found a home in Virginia as early as 1738, under the promise of protection from that colony. They came to have a touch of fellow-feeling with their suffering Baptist brethren, hence they were able to say in their *Hanover Memorial*, of 1777: In this enlightened age, and in a land where all of every denomination are united in the most strenuous efforts to be free, we hope and expect that our representatives will cheerfully concur in removing every species of religious as well as civil bondage. Certain it is, that every argument for civil liberty gains additional strength when applied to liberty in the concerns of religion.' 'Honor to whom honor,' the Bible demands.

While this contest was in progress, however, another, quite as warm and vastly more important, was waged in regard to the Constitution of the United States, and chiefly through the same agencies. This great civil document was adopted by the Constitutional Convention and submitted for ratification to the several States, September 17th, 1787, nine States being needed to ratify the same. Immediately it met with strong opposition from all the States, some for one reason and some for another. Its only provision on the subject of religion was found in Article VI, thus: 'No religious Test shall ever be required, as a Qualification to any office or public Trust under the United States.' Great dissatisfaction prevailed with many of its provisions, and there was serious danger of its rejection for a time. Dissatisfaction with this provision lodged with the Baptists in all the States, but Virginia became their great battlefield. On the 7th of March, 1788, the representatives of all their Churches met in their General Committee in Goochland, and the minutes of the meeting say: The first Religious Political subject that was taken up was: 'Whether the new Federal Constitution, which had now lately made its appearance in public, made sufficient provision for the secure enjoyment of religious liberty; on which it was agreed unanimously that it did not.' Many of the political and social leaders of Virginia were opposed to the Constitution, and amongst them Patrick Henry, who

The American Baptists

resisted its adoption in the Virginia Convention, because, as he phrased his difficulty, it 'squinted toward monarchy,' and gave no guarantee of religious liberty.

Here a pleasant incident may be noticed, in which John Leland figures very honorably. James Madison led the Virginia party which favored ratification, but was in Philadelphia during the election of delegates to the State Convention, engaged with John Jay and Alexander Hamilton in preparing that memorable series of political papers, written in defense of the Constitution, and known as the 'Federalist.' When he returned to Virginia, he found that Leland had been nominated in Orange, his own county, by the party opposed to ratification, against himself, as the delegate in favor of that measure. Governor George N. Briggs, of Massachusetts, says, that Leland told him that Madison called on him and carefully explained the purposes of the Constitution with his arguments in its support. The opposing candidates soon met at a political meeting, in the presence of most of the voters, when Madison mounted a hogshead of tobacco, and for two hours addressed his fellow-citizens in a calm, candid and statesmanlike manner, presenting his side of the case and meeting all the arguments of his opponents. Though he was not eloquent, the people listened with profound respect, and said Leland: 'When he left the hogshead, and my friends called for me, I took it, and went in for Mr. Madison.' 'A noble Christian patriot,' remarks Governor Briggs; 'that single act, with the motives which prompted it and the consequences which followed it, entitled him to the respect of mankind.' Leland's advocacy of Madison's claim to a seat in the Convention led directly to the adoption of the Constitution by Virginia, for at the time of his election it was confirmed by only eight States, hence, the ninth was absolutely necessary, and at the moment every thing appeared to turn on the action of Virginia. New Hampshire, however, approved the instrument on the 21st of June, but five days before Virginia, and New York followed one month later, namely, on July 26th, 1788. Up to this time, none of the other States had proposed the full expression of religious liberty in the organic law of the United States; this honor was reserved for Virginia. But the struggle was a hard one, and Madison, who at first insisted on its ratification precisely as it was, was obliged to save it by shifting his position. Henry submitted a number of amendments, demanding that they be engrafted into the instrument before it received Virginia's sanction. Amongst these was a Bill of Rights, of which the following was the 20th section, namely: 'The religion, or the duty which we owe to our Creator, and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, not by force or violence; and therefore all men have an equal, natural, and inalienable right to the free exercise of religion according to the dictates of conscience, and that no particular sect or society ought to be favored or established by law in preference to others.'

At last Mr. Madison conceded the need of amendments, but urged the danger of disunion and the jeopardy of losing the Constitution, and recommended that the Convention ratify it then, which it proceeded to do; but in connection with that act it also recommended the amendments and directed its representatives in Congress to urge their embodiment in the Constitution. On the 26th of June, 1788, Virginia ratified the great charter, but by the narrow majority of eight votes out of 168. From that moment a most exciting controversy arose in other States on the subject of so altering the Federal Constitution as to make it the fundamental law, providing for religious liberty and equality as the right of all the inhabitants of the land. The Baptists of the whole country aroused themselves and opened a simultaneous movement in that direction. Those of Virginia sent Leland to their brethren of New York, Rhode Island, Massachusetts and other States to solicit their co-operation, which was granted with but few exceptions. There seems to have been a direct union of effort

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

between the Baptists and the Virginia statesmen on this subject, although the Virginian leaders were divided on other subjects. Patrick Henry became the leader in the next State Legislature and induced that body to memorialize Congress to amend the new Constitution. But fearing that after all Mr. Madison might not heartily sustain that measure, he defeated Madison's election to the United States Senate, and secured the return of Richard Henry Lee and William Grayson, who were pledged to sustain the amendments. Madison was then elected to the Lower house of Congress from his own district, under the pledge that he would sustain them there. At this stage the Baptists consulted with Madison as to what they had better do under the circumstances, and he recommended them to address General Washington, the new President of the Republic, on the question. This suggestion they followed. They drew up a formal and well-digested presentation of the case, drafted, it is said, by Elder Leland, and sent it to General Washington by a special delegation. This paper is too long to transcribe here, but a synopsis may be given. It was entitled an "Address of the Committee of the United Baptist Churches of Virginia, assembled in the City of Richmond, 8th August, 1789, to the President of the United States of America." After a full review of the terrible conflicts and sacrifices of the Revolution, and the acknowledgment of debt on the part of the country to his great skill and leadership, they say:

"The want of efficiency in the confederation, the redundancy of laws, and their partial administration in the States, called aloud for a new arrangement of our systems. The wisdom of the States for that purpose was collected in a grand convention, over which you, sir, had the honor to preside. A national government in all its parts was recommended as the only preservation of the Union, which plan of government is now in actual operation. When the Constitution first made its appearance in Virginia, we, as a society, feared that the liberty of conscience, dearer to us than property or life, was not sufficiently secured. Perhaps our jealousies were heightened by the usage we received in Virginia, under the regal government, when mobs, fines, bonds and prisons were our frequent repast. Convinced, on the one hand, that without an effective national government the States would fall into disunion and all the subsequent evils; and, on the other hand, fearing that we should be accessory to some religious oppression, should any one society in the Union predominate over the rest; yet, amidst all these inquietudes of mind, our consolation arose from this consideration – the plan must be good, for it has the signature of a tried, trusty friend, and if religious liberty is rather insecure in the Constitution, "the Administration will certainly prevent all oppression, for a WASHINGTON will preside."...Should the horrid evils that have been so pestiferous in Asia and Europe, faction, ambition, war, perfidy, fraud and persecution for conscience' sake, ever approach the borders of our happy nation, may the name and administration of our beloved President, like the radiant source of day, scatter all those dark clouds from the American hemisphere.'

After gracefully expressing their gratitude for his 'great and unparalleled services,' and confiding him in prayer to the 'Divine Being,' the paper is signed: 'By order of the Committee, SAMUEL HARRIS, Chairman, and REUBEN FORD, Cleric.'

General Washington's reply was addressed 'To the General Committee, representing the United Baptist Churches in Virginia.' After thanking them for their congratulations, and expressing his own gratitude to 'Divine Providence' for blessing his public services, he proceeds to write thus:

'If I could have entertained the slightest apprehension that the Constitution framed by the Convention where I had the honor to preside might possibly endanger the religious rights of any ecclesiastical society, certainly I would never have placed my signature to it; and if I could now conceive that the general government might ever be so administered as to render the liberty of conscience insecure, I beg you will be persuaded that no one would be more zealous than myself to establish effectual barriers against the horrors

The American Baptists

of spiritual tyranny and every species of religious persecution. For, you doubtless remember, I have often expressed my sentiments that any man, conducting himself as a good citizen and being accountable to God alone for his religious opinions, ought to be protected in worshiping the Deity according to the dictates of his own conscience. While I recollect with satisfaction, that the religious society of which you are members have been, throughout America, uniformly and almost unanimously the firm friends to civil liberty, and the persevering promoters of our glorious revolution, I cannot hesitate to believe that they will be the faithful supporters of a free yet efficient general government. Under this pleasing expectation, I rejoice to assure them that they may rely upon my best wishes and endeavors to advance their prosperity, 'I am, gentlemen, your most obedient servant, GEORGE WASHINGTON.'

A month after this correspondence James Madison, with the approval of Washington, brought several Constitutional amendments before the House of Representatives, and amongst them moved the adoption of this:

'Article 1. Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, or abridging the freedom of speech or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.' The chief difference between the old Article VI and this amendment lay in the fact that in the first instance Congress was left at liberty to impose religious tests in other cases than those of 'office or public trust under the United States,' whereas, this amendment removed the power to make any 'law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof.' This proposition met with great opposition in Congress, but it passed that body September 23d, 1789, and was submitted to the several States for ratification. Eleven of the thirteen States adopted it between November 20th, 1789, and December 10th, 1791, New Jersey voting on the first of these dates and Virginia on the last, and all the rest between, those periods excepting Connecticut and Massachusetts. Thus, the contemned, spurned and hated old Baptist doctrine of soul- liberty, for which blood had been shed for centuries, was not only engrafted into the organic law of the United States, but for the first time in the formation of a great nation it was made its chief corner-stone. For the first time on that subject the quiet, pungent old truth asserted its right to immortality as expressed by Scripture: 'The stone which the builders rejected is become the head-stone of the corner.'

But this August event did not end the strife for religious freedom on American soil; the battle must be still pressed on the soil of New England. Drs. James Manning, Samuel Stillman and Isaac Backus had work enough left in Massachusetts. The loyalty of all classes to the full principles of the Revolution was not so easily won, because a large body of the people there were not in favor of entire separation between Church and State. Even John Adams wrote: 'I am for the most liberal toleration of all denominations, but I hope Congress will never meddle with religion further than to say their own prayers.' Yet he thought it as impossible to 'change the religious laws of Massachusetts as the movements of the heavenly bodies.' There was the same opposition in Massachusetts to the ratification of the United States Constitution that there was in Virginia, and much for the same reasons. Isaac Backus took about the same ground that Patrick Henry had taken in Virginia, because he could not see that it sufficiently guaranteed religious liberty. Manning and Stillman were wiser in their generation. Stillman had been chosen a delegate from Boston to the State Convention of Massachusetts, which was to accept or reject this instrument, a body numbering nearly 400 members. Manning hastened to Massachusetts, and for two weeks was indefatigable in argument and appeal to induce all Baptist delegates and other Baptists of influence to aid in securing first all that the unamended Constitution did secure. It was a very grave crisis, the public spirit was in a feverish state, and these two great men had their hands full to secure the full support of their own brethren. They knew that this document had not secured everything needful to them, but they also

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

knew that such a revolution could not go backward excepting through alienation between the States. The Convention was in session for a month, half of which time Stillman and Manning were at work, and when the final vote was taken the Constitution was ratified by 187 to 168 votes. Massachusetts adopted the Constitution of the United States February 6th, 1788. After the vote, in which the Baptists held the balance of power, John Hancock, the President of the Convention, invited Dr. Manning to return thanks to God, and it is said that the lofty spirit of purity and patriotism which marked his prayer filled the Convention with reverence and awe.

So far as the MASSACHUSETTS Baptists were concerned, this great opportunity was neither missed nor mismanaged, but was made an important step toward absolute freedom. Massachusetts had formed a State Constitution in 1780, and in that Convention the Baptists contended with pertinacity for their religious rights. Rev. Noah Alden, a lineal descendant of the Plymouth family, was a member of this Convention, and at that time pastor of the Baptist Church at Bellingham. He was also a member of the Convention which framed the Constitution of the United States. When the famous Massachusetts Bill of Rights was reported he moved to recommit the third article, which gave power to the rulers in religious affairs. He was made a member of a committee of seven to consider the subject, and although he could not secure equality before the law for all sects in Massachusetts, he did procure so much concession as to excite marvel at the time, it was so far in advance of anything that this State had previously known in religious liberality. It recognized the power of the civil rulers to provide for the support of religion in towns where such provision was not made voluntarily; it required attendance on public worship, if there were any religious teachers 'on whose instructions they can conscientiously and conveniently attend;' it provided that the people should 'have the exclusive right of electing their public teachers, and of contracting with them for their support and maintenance;' it gave the right of the hearer to apply his public payments of religious tax 'to the support of the public teacher or teachers of his own religions sect or denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends,' and 'every denomination of Christians, demeaning themselves peaceably and as good subjects of the commonwealth, shall be equally under the protection of the law, and no subordination of any one sect or denomination to another shall ever be established by law.' This wonderful gain in the Bill of Rights did not dis-establish the Church in Massachusetts, which was still protected under the several exceptions of the article, but it broke its tyrannical power, and in a little more than half a century it wrought the entire separation of Church and State in Massachusetts. It met with the most violent resistance in the Convention, and a leader of the opposition said: 'We believe in our consciences that the best way to serve God is to have religion protected and ministers of the Gospel supported by law, and we hope that no gentleman here will wish to wound our tender consciences.' 'The plain English of which,' says Leland, 'is, our consciences dictate that all the commonwealth of Massachusetts must submit to our judgments, and if they do not they will wound our tender consciences.' Alden was nobly sustained in this Convention by Dr. Acaph Fletcher, who was also a member, and a strong advocate of this measure. Under its provisions many ungracious acts were perpetrated, and all sorts of quibbles, pretexts and pleas that ingenious but wounded pride could invent were invoked to annoy the Baptists, but this Bill struck a death-blow at persecution proper in Massachusetts.

The new Constitution was soon put to the test, for several persons were taxed at Attleboro, in 1780, to support the parish Church, although they attended elsewhere. Elijah Balkom was seized, and having sued the assessors for damages, judgment was had against him; but, on an appeal to the

The American Baptists

County Court at Taunton, he obtained damages and costs. In 1783 a similar case, in many respects, occurred in Cambridge, where Baptists were sued to support the Standing Order, and their money extorted, but they sued for its return and it was paid back. These annoyances continued and sometimes were grievous enough. In a letter from Dr. Backus to William Richards, dated May 28th, 1796, he says: 'Though the teachers and rulers in the uppermost party in Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Hampshire and Vermont are as earnest as ever Pharaoh was to hold the Church of Christ under the taxing power of the world, yet that power is daily consuming by the spirit of God's mouth.' To meet and thwart these attempts the Warren Association kept a vigilant committee in existence. In 1797 it consisted of Drs. Stillman, Smith and Backus, with Mr. Baldwin and Mr. Grafton, to whom the oppressed Churches appealed for counsel and help, and they did good service indeed. John Leland said, 1801: 'In the year 1800 about six hundred dollars were taken from the Baptists, in Partridge-field, for the building of a meeting-house in said town for another denomination. The case is now in law, hung up, and what the event will be we know not.' Great hopes were entertained that the Convention held November 3d, 1820, to amend the Constitution, would entirely dissolve the last bond of union between Church and State in Massachusetts; but this was defeated, chiefly by the determined opposition of John Adams, who was a member of that body. Isaac Backus died in 1806, after a life of astonishing activity in the cause of religious freedom. But his survivors adopted the motto of Caesar, 'that nothing is done while anything remains undone,' and they pressed their case with new zeal, encouraged by their gains in securing a modification of the Bill of Rights. The dissatisfaction with the partial measure, however, was very great. Leland gave it voice in many addresses and in numerous articles from the press. He said:

'The late Convention, called to revise the Constitution, still retains the same principle. Strange, indeed, that Massachusetts, all alone, in opposition to all the other States, should still view religion a principle of State policy, the Church a creature of State, and ministers in the light of State pensioners! That the Legislature should have the power to clothe the majority of each town or parish with authority to compel the people, by a legal tax, to support the religious teachers among them. What a pity! When will men realize that a constitution of civil government is a charter of powers bestowed and of rights retained, and that private judgment and religious opinions are inalienable in their nature, like sight and hearing, and cannot be surrendered to society. Consequently, it must be impious usurpation for ecclesiastics or civilians to legislate about religion.'

In 1811 Judge Parsons gave a decision to the effect, that no congregation or society not incorporated by law could claim all the privileges which the dissenters claimed under the Bill of Rights, and alarm awakened them throughout the State. Petitions were circulated everywhere and sent to the Legislature, praying for a revision of the religious laws, and the people of Cheshire elected Elder Leland to that body for the purpose of pleading their cause. There he delivered that remarkable speech, in which reasoning, satire, eloquent declamation and sound statesmanship hold such equal and changeable parts. The following characteristic extracts are not familiar to the present generation of Baptists and may be reproduced:

'Mr. Speaker, according to a late decision of the bench, in the County of Cumberland, which, it is presumed, is to be a precedent for future decisions, these non-incorporated societies are nobody, can do nothing, and are never to be known except in shearing time, when their money is wanted to support teachers that they never hear. And all this must be done for the good of the State. One hundred and seventeen years ago wearing long hair was considered the crying sin of the land. A convention was called March 18 1694,

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

in Boston, to prevent it; after a long expostulation the Convention close thus: "If any man will now presume to wear long hair, let him know that God and man witnesses against him." Our pious ancestors were for bobbing the hair for the good of the Colony; but now, sir, not the hair but the purses must be bobbed for the good of the State. The petitioners pray for the right of going to heaven in that way which they believe is the most direct, and shall this be denied them. Must they be obliged to pay legal toll for walking the King's highway, which has been made free for all?...Since the Revolution, all the old States, except two or three in New England, have established religious liberty upon its true bottom, and yet they are not sunk with earthquakes or destroyed with fire and brimstone. Should this commonwealth, Mr. Speaker, proceed so far as to distribute all settlements and meeting-houses, which were procured by public taxes among all the inhabitants, without regard to denomination, it is probable that the outcry of sacrilege, profanity and infidelity would be echoed around; and yet, sir, all this has been done in a State which has given birth and education to a Henry, a Washington, a Jefferson and a Madison, each of whom contributed their aid to effect the grand event...These petitioners, sir, pay the civil list, and arm to defend their country as readily as others, and only ask for the liberty of forming their societies and paying their preachers in the only way that the Christians did for the first three centuries after Christ. Any gentleman upon this floor is invited to produce an instance that Christian societies were ever formed, Christian Sabbaths ever enjoined, Christian salaries ever levied, or Christian worship ever enforced by law before the reign of Constantine. Yet, Christianity did stand and flourish, not only without the aid of the law and the schools, but in opposition to both. We hope, therefore, Mr. Speaker, that the prayers of thirty thousand, on this occasion, will be heard, and that they will obtain the exemption for which they pray.' But their prayers were not heard, and their most strenuous efforts at reform were unavailing, until the people arose in their might and so amended the Bill of Rights in 1833 that the Church and State were forever separated, since which time what Leland called 'the felonious principle' has been banished from the statute books of all the States, and, as Leland did not die until 1841, he breathed free air for the last seven years of his life, to his great health and delectation. He lived to be eighty-seven years of age, and deserved ten years of fresh air after he had labored sixty-seven years to vindicate the civil and religious rights of all men. Rest, royal old warrior, rest on the Cheshire hills, which thou didst so much to make free!

IN VERMONT the contest was neither so long nor so severe. The lands which now form Vermont were claimed in part by New Hampshire and in part by New York, and were originally known as the New Hampshire grants. Their inhabitants applied to the Continental Congress for admission into the confederacy in 1776, but, New York opposing, they withdrew. The next year they proclaimed themselves independent and formed a Constitution, and were admitted into the Union in 1791. Dr. Asaph Fletcher had removed from Massachusetts to Cavendish, Vermont, in 1787, and was a member of the Convention which applied for the admission of the State into the Union. He was also a member of the Convention of 1793 to revise the State Constitution, when he contended for the separation of Church and State, but the contrary idea prevailed. Such a vital subject could not long rest, however, especially with Dr. Fletcher in active service as a member of the Legislature, a Judge of the County Court, a member of the Council, and a State Presidential elector. In 1789, two years after Fletcher's settlement in Vermont, he was followed by Rev. Aaron Leland, from Bellingham, Mass. His liberal political sentiments soon commended him to his fellow-citizens, and he was elected to the General Assembly. There he served as Speaker of the House for three years, and for four years he was one of the Governor's Council. For five years, also, he was Lieutenant-Governor of the State, and for eighteen he was an Assistant Justice in the County Court. He had large influence amongst the Baptists of the State, as well as with its citizens generally, and in 1828 he declined a nomination for Governor, fearing that the office would interfere too much with his pastoral duties. He was a Fellow of Middlebury College, possessed great mental power, and was a very forcible debater. While he was Speaker of the House a proposition came before it for a

The American Baptists

dissolution of Church and State, and in the discussion some one was weak enough to say that Christianity would go down if the State withdrew its support. This stirred all the fervor of his spirit. He left the chair and took part in the debate, delivering one of the strongest speeches ever heard in Vermont in favor of religious liberty, the main strength of his position being that God had founded his Church upon a rock, and that the gates of hell should not prevail against her.

A third Vermont Baptist champion of religious freedom is found in Ezra Butler, who, in 1785, removed from Claremont, N. H., to Waterbury, Vt., where, about 1800, he became a Baptist and formed a Church, which he served as pastor for more than thirty years. His talents and high character induced his fellow-citizens to intrust him with civil office, first as town clerk, justice of the peace, and then as member of the Legislature, also as Chief Justice for Washington County. In 1813-15 he served his State in Congress, and from 1826 to 1828 he was Governor of Vermont, with Aaron Leland as Lieutenant-Governor, both being Baptist ministers at the time. Under these great leaders and their compeers the public sentiment finally threw aside the union of Church and State in Vermont, distancing Massachusetts by a number of years in that race.

SOUTH CAROLINA Baptists stood firmly for religious liberty. The State formed its Constitution in 1776, and amended it in 1778 and 1790; but the Baptists were early awake to the need of securing their rights, and as early as 1779 the Charleston Association made it the duty of a standing committee to labor for the perfect equality of all religious people before the law, and for this purpose they were 'to treat with the government in behalf of the Churches.' No one contributed more to the result of civil and religious liberty in Georgia than did the noted Richard Furman, D.D., of whom a brief sketch may here be given. He was born at AESopus, N. Y., in 1755, but, while an infant, his parents removed to South Carolina and settled on the High Hills of Santee. Here, after a good early education, he became a Christian, and at the age of eighteen began to preach, with a remarkable degree of clearness, devotion and force, for a youth. The district where he labored lay to the east and north of the rivers Wateree and Santee, where wickedness abounded. He formed many Churches, which united with the Charleston Association. He was extremely modest, but his unassuming ardor, with his ripeness of judgment in interpreting Scripture, and His uncommon pungency of appeal awakened universal surprise and admiration. He was scarcely twenty-two when the Revolution commenced, and he avowed himself at once a firm Whig and threw all his powers into the American cause. When the British invaded South Carolina he was obliged to retire into North Carolina and Virginia, and afterwards Cornwallis put a price on his head. In Virginia he became intimate with Patrick Henry, who presented him with certain books, which are cherished in the Furman family to this day. In 1787 he accepted the pastoral charge of the Baptist Church in Charleston, where he remained for eight and thirty years, and became intimate with those patriot families, the Pinckneys, Rutledges and Sumpters, together with whom he labored earnestly for the Revolutionary cause. When independence was achieved, and the leading men of the State were selected to meet in convention and form a new Constitution, their suffrages made him a member of that body, in which he contended earnestly against the exclusion of Christian ministers from certain civil offices, and did much to secure soul-liberty in the State. So nobly had he blended his patriotism with the refinement and urbanity of a holy character, that on the death of Washington and Hamilton he was appointed by the Cincinnati and the Revolution Society to deliver orations in tribute to their memory.

Taken altogether, he was a most eminent servant of God and of his country. The late Dr. W. R.

Chapter 12 - The American Baptists and Constitutional Liberty

Williams said:

'Of this eminent servant of the Lord it is difficult to express what is just and proper without the appearance of excessive partiality. To represent him in the ordinary terms of eulogy, or to depict his virtues by any of the common standards of description, would be the direct way to fall short of the truth. The Providence of God gives few such men to the world as Dr. Furman...Where others were great he was transcendent, and where others were fair and consistent in character, he stood forth lovely and luminous in all the best attributes of man...In general learning he had made such progress as would have ranked him among men of the first intelligence in any country...His studies were chiefly confined to mathematics, metaphysics, belles-lettres, logic, history and theology. He cultivated also an acquaintance with the ancient classics, particularly Homer, Longinus and Quintilian, with whose beauties and precepts he was familiar. He read with sedulous attention all the writers of the Augustan age of English literature, and whatever the language possessed valuable in criticism and immortal in poetry. There are few men, it is believed, who have had their minds more richly stored with the fine passages of Milton, Young, Pope, Addison, Butler and other great authors than Dr. Furman. From them he could quote properly, and appositely for almost every occasion, what was most beautiful and eloquent. He possessed uncommon talent in discerning the utility of these studies connected with the mind, and in condensing them into such abstracts as to make them clearly intelligible to every capacity. In this way he could analyze and expound the principles of moral philosophy and logic, with a facility which could only have resulted from a ready mastery over the subjects. But that which imparted a charm to his whole life was the godly savor which pervaded and sweetened all his superior endowments and qualifications. All the vigor of his noble intellect was consecrated to God. All the matured fruit of His long experience was an oblation to the Father of Mercies. All the variety of his acquirements, and all the vastness of his well-furnished mind, were merged in one prevailing determination to know nothing save Christ crucified.'

The American Baptists

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

Scarcely had the Baptists adjusted themselves to their new circumstances in the American republic, when a fresh element was thrown into their life by enlarging their conceptions of duty to Christ both in sending the Gospel to foreign lands and in doubling their efforts to evangelize their own country. American Baptists were called to foreign mission work in 1814 on this wise. In 1812 Rev. Adoniram Judson and his wife, Ann Hasseltine Judson, with Rev. Luther Rice, were appointed by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions to establish missions in Asia. Messrs. Judson and Rice sailed in different vessels to India, and on their voyage, without consultation with each other, they re-examined the New Testament teaching on baptism. The result was that they both adopted the views of the Baptists, and, in loyalty to God's word, when they reached Calcutta, they were immersed on a personal profession of their faith in Christ. At once they made this change known to the world, and were cut off from their former denominational support.

Mr. Rice returned to the United States to awaken in the Baptist Churches a zeal for the establishment of missions in India, he was heartily welcomed, and measures were adopted for the temporary support of Mr. and Mrs. Judson. Mr. Rice traveled from Boston through the Middle and Southern States, and his addresses kindled a wide-spread enthusiasm, which resulted in the gathering of a convention, composed of thirty-six delegates from eleven States and the District of Columbia, who met in Philadelphia, May 18th, 1814, when a society was formed, called The Baptist General Convention for Foreign Missions. Dr. Furman, of South Carolina, was President of this body, Dr. Baldwin, of Massachusetts, Secretary, and Mr. and Mrs. Judson were adopted as its first missionaries. Rev. Dr. Baldwin, of Boston, was also elected President of a Board which was to conduct the operations of the Convention, which office he filled till his death in 1825, and Drs. Holcomb and Rogers were elected Vice-Presidents. Mr. John Cauldwell was chosen as Treasurer, and Rev. Dr. Staughton as Corresponding Secretary. Mr. Rice was chosen 'To continue his itinerant services in these United States for a reasonable time, with a view to excite the public mind more generally to engage in missionary exertions and to assist in organizing societies and institutions for carrying the missionary design into execution.'

The Convention itself came to be known as the 'Triennial Convention,' from the fact that it met once in three years, and the Board of the Convention was located in Boston. Mr. Rice collected a considerable amount of money, and in 1815 Mr. Hough, of New Hampshire, and Miss White, of Philadelphia, were appointed missionaries. The first triennial session of the Convention was held in Philadelphia, May, 1817, when Dr. Furman was re-elected President; and Dr. Sharp, of Boston, Secretary. At this meeting the Convention enlarged its work by appropriating a portion of its funds to domestic missionary purposes, and also by determining 'to institute a classical and theological seminary' to train young men for the ministry, which measures, as we shall see, diverted the Convention considerably from the primary intention of its founders.

Meanwhile, Mr. and Mrs. Judson were driven by the intolerance of the government from Bengal and proceeded to Rangoon, to commence missionary work in Burma, where they arrived July 13th, 1813. Rangoon was the chief sea-port of Burma, and the most important center of Buddhism. A feeble attempt to establish a mission here had been made by a son of Dr. Carey, but it had been abandoned; and Mr. and Mrs. Judson found themselves in this heathen city, without an English-speaking helper, a grammar, a dictionary or a printed book. They began the study of the language, in which, twenty-one years later, Mr. Judson was able to lay the whole Bible, faithfully translated,

The American Baptists

before the Burman people. Mr. and Mrs. Judson celebrated the Lord's Supper alone in Rangoon, September 19th, 1813; but Mr. and Mrs. Hough joined them in October, 1816, and Messrs. Wheelock and Coleman in 1819. A zayat, or shed, for the preaching of the Gospel, was opened on the way-side in April, 1819. Though they had labored much privately, this was 'their first attempt at public worship. Their first congregation numbered fifteen, but was both inattentive and disorderly. Besides the Sabbath service, the missionaries used the zayat from morning till night every day in the week, to teach the way of salvation to all who came. The first convert, Mounng Nau, was baptized June 27th, 1819; two others were immersed in November of that year.

As the laws of Burma made it a capital crime for a native to change his religion, Messrs. Judson and Coleman thought it prudent to visit the Emperor at the capital, that they might, if possible, secure toleration for the converts who had become Christians. They went up on this errand to Amarapura in December, carrying to the Emperor an elegant Bible in six volumes, enveloped, according to Burman taste, in a beautiful wrapper. A tract, also, was prepared and presented, containing a brief summary of Christianity. The Emperor read but two sentences of the tract and threw it from him in displeasure; he also declined to accept the Bible.

The missionaries returned to Rangoon to report their failure to the converts, dreading its possible effect upon their minds; but, to their surprise, these remained steadfast to their profession, and begged their teachers to abide with them until there should be eight or ten converts, at least. If then they should depart, one of the converts would be appointed to teach the rest, and so the new religion might spread itself. Mr. Coleman went to Chittagong, a part of India which had been ceded to the English Crown, to provide a refuge for the converts in case they should be driven by persecution to seek the protection of the British government, and he died while on this mission of love. Mrs. Judson visited England, Scotland, and the United States and awakened a deep interest in the work. Mr. and Mrs. Wade joined the mission; but, just as prosperity began to dawn on the missionaries' labors, the first Burmese war broke out, suspending their operations for nearly three years, and subjecting them to the gravest apprehensions for their own lives. The Burmans did not understand the difference between Englishmen and Americans, and arrested indiscriminately every person wearing a hat. An executioner was placed over Messrs. Judson and Wade, who, with bent heads and bared necks, awaited the fatal blow, the order having been given that the Burman executioner should strike off their heads the moment that a British shot should be fired upon Rangoon. The shot was fired, but the executioner fled in terror, and the two men of God escaped. After this, Judson was confined in various prisons for two years and three months, the victim of agonizing sufferings. Meanwhile, his precious manuscript of the New Testament was for a season buried in the earth under a floor, and afterwards sewed up in an old pillow, which was tossed about from hand to hand till the close of the war, too hard to tempt the head of the poorest by the thought that it was worth destruction.

During the war a native preacher remained in Rangoon; yet the converts were scattered, and the pastor suffered scourging, the stocks and imprisonment, for the name of Christ. In a short time after the war, however, the Church numbered twenty members, nearly all baptized by him. The terms of peace annexed a large portion of Burman territory to British India, and from that time the mission fell under British protection.

Not far from this period the KARENS first received the Gospel. They had long been oppressed by their Burman neighbors, and lived hidden in the hills and forests. It was, therefore, a thrilling scene when thirty-four of that people were baptized by Mr. Mason, in the presence of Mr.

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

Boardman, their apostle. Up to that time there had been but twenty-two converts in fifteen years including the capital of Burma, Amherst and Tavoy. At the close of this baptismal scene, the first-fruits of Mr. Boardman's labor amongst the Karens, his joyful spirit ascended to its rest. This people seemed ripe for the Gospel from the beginning, while the prouder Burman race have received the Gospel slowly, only about 1,200 having become members of our churches down to this date; about 30,000 Karens have become Christians, and are now gathered into Gospel churches. For the general convenience of our Burman missions, the printing department, the Karen College, and the Theological Seminary are located in Rangoon. Mr. Bennett first established the press and had charge of it for more than half a century, accomplishing incalculable good thereby to all Burma. The Karen College was opened in 1872, with seventeen students, under the Presidency of Ray, Dr. Binney, in buildings endowed by the late Professor Ruggles, of Washington. The Theological Seminary was established by Dr. Binney, in 1859, though instruction had been previously given, at different times and places, by Dr. Wade and others, to candidates for the ministry. Rev. D. A. W. Smith, D.D., has presided over the seminary since the death of Dr. Binney, aided by four native Karen teachers, educated men, prepared for their office. It numbers about sixty students, and yearly graduates about one fourth of that number to preach to their own people. Dr. Smith has nearly finished a complete commentary of the Bible in Karen, and prepared and issued for the use of Karen students an elementary treatise on logic and Wayland's 'Elements of Moral Science,' and for several years he has put into Karen the 'International Sunday- School Lessons' for Karen Sabbath-schools. Besides superintending the Burman work in and around Rangoon, Dr. Stevens has instructed several Burman assistants. The first female convert in Burmah, Mah Menia, was baptized by torch-light, on the night of July 18th, 1820. Such has been the growth of the Burman missions that amongst the various peoples of the empire there are 98 missionaries, male and female, 118 ordained native preachers, and 25,371 members. The war of 1826 was followed by the death of the heroic Mrs. Judson, in Amherst, where she now sleeps in Jesus. After her death, her husband transferred most of his personal property to the missionary treasury.

MAULMAIN, the chief station of the British power in Burma, was thenceforward made the head-quarters of the mission. Work was begun there in 1827, between which time and September, 1828, twenty-one converts were baptized and a native Church was formed, numbering thirty members. In 1834 Dr. Judson completed the revision of the New Testament and finished the translation of the Old. A mission press was set up in Maulmain by Mr. Bennett in 1830, which was followed within a brief interval by three others. The printing of the Bible in four or five languages and dialects, besides tracts, school-books and other works, has kept the press – which in 1862 was transferred to Rangoon – constantly busy. Maulmain was the first seat of the Karen Theological Seminary and of Miss Haswell's school for native girls, established in 1867; which in five years numbered 103 pupils. Here also Dr. Haswell translated the New Testament into Peguan, and here he rests in hope of a blessed resurrection. A Baptist Church was formed here, in connection with the British army, and many English soldiers became the disciples of Christ. The native Christians are well trained in the art of giving for religious purposes. In seven years they gave over \$5,000 in gold for the support of the Gospel and mission schools. In connection with the station at Maulmain there were reported in 1886 about twenty Churches and more than 1,100 members.

Dr. Judson did His last work at Maulmain. He had spent ten years at Rangoon, two at Ava, and a brief time at Amherst, after which he removed to Maulmain and continued there to the close of

The American Baptists

life, chiefly pursuing the work of translation; though he kept the oversight of the Burmese Church there. The last leaf of his translation of the Scriptures was finished on January 31st, 1831, and he put his revised translation to press in 1810. When His health became thoroughly broken, he left this place under the advice of his physician, on board the French bark *Aristide Marie*, bound for the Island of Bourbon, in the hope that the voyage might prolong his life. But nine days after his embarkment, when scarcely three days out of sight of the Burmese mountains, he began to sink rapidly. All that love and skill could do for him were done, but at fifteen minutes past four o'clock P. M., on the 12th of April, 1850, he passed to the bosom of Jesus, as peacefully as a child would drop asleep in its mother's arms. At eight o'clock the same evening, the crew, his two broken-hearted Burman assistants and Mr. Ranney assembled on the larboard part of the ship, and in reverent silence committed his body to the keeping of the Indian Ocean. No eye now rests upon the spot that closed over him but that of the true God. In latitude 13 degrees north, longitude 93 degrees east, God found a grave for one of His noblest sons on this globe. None can drop a tear or raise a shaft there, but His eternal monument lives in redeemed Burma. She glorifies God in him who to her was made the savor of life unto life.

TAVOY was the third of the Burman missions: its establishment being due to a suggestion of the first native Burman preacher, who proposed to make a missionary journey there in 1827. Here that great work amongst the Karens commenced; here the first Karen preacher was baptized, and near Tavoy Mr. Mason performed his first official act as a missionary in baptizing thirty-four Karens. It is nearly two hundred miles distant from Maulmain and thirty-five miles from the sea, on Tavoy River. Its population at the opening of the mission, April 18th, 1828, was about 6,000; it is in British Burma and a stronghold, of idolatry. Two converts soon formed the nucleus of the Church, and a missionary spirit possessed the converts, who visited many villages far and near with the word of life. The Karens of the vicinity held a tradition that at some time messengers from the West would bring to them a revelation from God. Hence, they were prepared to receive our missionaries with open arms and to accept their message. The printing-press was located at Tavoy for some time, and a chapel was built in the town, not far from the grave of Boardman. The Karen Church in the town is weak, but many Churches exist in the forest and jungle, some miles away. Mr. Morrow is the faithful missionary to the Karens there, and his wife, an educated physician, is his efficient helper. The Tavoy Association numbers 23 Churches, 950 members, 11 ordained and 10 unordained preachers, and 13 schools.

The second war between Burma and Great Britain, 1852, was brief, but had an important influence on the missionary work. It resulted in the annexation of a large portion of Southern Burma to the British realm in India, which opened a wider field for preaching and relieved the converts from the fear of persecution by a heathen government; our mission in Burma, therefore, took a sudden expansion. New stations were commenced in Tonngoo, on the Sitang River, Henthada, and other places, and many triumphs crowned the labors of our brethren. Toungoo, one of the new stations, opened by Dr. Mason in 1853, was one of the most fruitful in converts. The zeal of Sail Quala, a native preacher, was awakened through a man from Toungoo, who had been converted three years previously. The second day after the beginning of the mission, a hundred Burmans called on Dr. Mason to inquire about the new religion, and in a few weeks found several disciples. Ill health compelled Dr. Mason to leave for the United States for a time; but the mission, left in charge of San Quala, seemed to be blessed with a new Pentecost. Active, faithful, wise and energetic, this

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

native preacher took a broad field, planned prudently, superintended efficiently, and commended himself to all by his self-denying labors. In the first year of the mission 741 were baptized. Within a year and nine months he had administered the ordinance to 1,860 converts and formed 28 churches, while hundreds of converts were still waiting to be baptized. In 1856 zayats were erected in forty villages, where the people had renounced idolatry, and ten native preachers in the district were supported by the Maulmain Missionary Society. In a single month of 1857 Mr. Whitaker baptized 233 converts; two Associations were organized, and various Karen tribes were brought under Christian influences. Dr. Mason died in 1874. Mr. Bunker, Mr. Eveleth, Dr. Cross and others, had in the meantime, joined the station. Dr. Mason had translated the whole Bible into Sgaii Karen, and later, Mr. Brayton translated it into Pwo Karen. Dr. Mason, being a man of scientific tendencies, contributed largely to the knowledge of natural history in the Burman empire. The mission in and about Toungoo numbers 102 native preachers, 110 Churches, and 3,869 members. From this point the mission to the Shans began, and the Bible has been translated into Shan by Dr. Gushing. The statistics of 1886 give 144 churches, 4,788 members, and 84 native preachers.

HENTHADA was opened as a mission station after the war of 1852. Mr. Thomas was the first missionary to the Karens of this mission, and Mr. Crawley to the Burmans. At first many of the natives, attracted by curiosity, thronged as visitors to the missionaries, who, after the Gospel was introduced, became zealous converts; for at the end of the first year the Karen department reported 8 churches and 150 members. At the end of ten years, the mission reported 751 Burman converts and five preachers. Mr. Thomas instructed a class of twenty or more native helpers every year, during the rains, and kept the charge of his field twelve or thirteen years, traveling in every part of his district, preaching and baptizing constantly, enjoying almost a perpetual revival. At length, broken in health, for a time he changed his field for that of Bassein, and Mr. Smith took the post at Henthada. In a short time Mr. Thomas was compelled to return to the United States, where he died on the day after his arrival. His widow returned to Henthada, where she efficiently continued the work which her husband had begun; their son, Williston, joined his mother in 1880, and is still toiling in a spirit worthy of his parents.

ARRACAN, on the western coast of Burma, became a mission station in 1835, and, at different times, thirteen missionaries and their wives labored there with much success. A chain of mountains, parallel with the coast, divided Burma Proper from the territory which had been ceded to Great Britain. In many instances, the converts on the Burman frontier, having embraced Christianity, crossed the mountains into English territory, and being baptized, returned, to live a Christian life amongst their fellow-countrymen. The work prospered and multitudes believed. The names of Abbott, Comstock, Stilson, Ingalls and others, are a memorial in this mission. All of them passed away early, and the Arracan Mission disappeared; but out of it grew the mission in Bassein, one of the fairest portions of the Christian heritage in Burma. It has become one of the great centers of evangelical labor amongst the Karens. In 1872, a Burman preacher, supported almost wholly by native contributions, visited 540 houses, conversed on religious themes with 1,397 persons, and distributed 600 or 700 tracts. As early as 1848, there were 36 teachers and more than 400 pupils in the schools of the Karen department. Day-schools existed in nearly every village, and the native Christians sustained the preaching of the Gospel in their own neighborhoods. The plan of self-support has been effectively developed, and native Christians have contributed much to send the Gospel to others. A memorial hall, serving the double purpose of a place of worship and for higher

The American Baptists

education, spacious and provided with every facility, was dedicated at Bassein in 1878, on the fiftieth anniversary of the baptism of the first Karen convert. This building was paid for mainly by the liberality of the native Christians. In 1886 there were 99 churches, 8,490 members, and 97 native preachers.

PROME has ever been a scene of missionary interest, on account of the visit paid to that city by Dr. Judson in 1830, although for twenty-four years after that visit no missionary returned there. But the work was again taken up by Messrs. Kincaid and Simons, and still later by Mr. E. O. Stevens, son of the veteran missionary in Rangoon, and it has yielded good fruit. Four Churches connected with the mission are self-supporting, and there are now 11 native preachers, 4 churches, and 241 members. Many other stations in Burma have missionaries and native preachers, churches and schools, and are fully organized for Christian work. Thongzai, an exclusively Burman station, is remarkable for the labor of Mrs. Ingalls and a female associate, who have stood firmly at their post for many years. She has won the confidence and affections of the converts and of the heathen, and is held in high esteem by travelers of all ranks; for the railroad, extending between Rangoon and Prome, passes directly through Thongzai. In 1877 Bhamo became a station of the Missionary Union, and since the absorption of Burma proper into British India, Mandalay, the capital, is also occupied by that body. All upper Burma is now included in the territory cultivated by the American Baptists. A recent enterprise has been entered upon in a station amongst the Karens at Chienginaï, in northern Siam.

ASSAM was opened as a mission in 1836 by Messrs. Nathan Brown and O. T. Cutter, who had been previously stationed in Burma. The first station of the mission was Sadiya, 400 miles north of Ava, and about 200 from Yunnan, on the borders of China. But about a dozen stations are now occupied, mostly on the south side of the Brahmaputra, and are accessible by British steamers. A printing-press was established by Mr. Cutter, and the translation of the New Testament into Assamese was begun by Dr. Brown, Jan. 1, 1838. Mr. Bronson undertook to open a mission amongst the Nagas, in their hills, but on account of the insalubrity of the climate he changed his residence to Nowgong, where he baptized the first Assamese convert, June 13, 1841. The Nowgong Orphan Institution was for several years a fruitful part of the mission work, for in it many were converted and trained for usefulness. The school was dispersed after twelve years, but more native helpers were brought out of this school than from any other source. Other stations were occupied in succession by new missionaries, Messrs. Ward, Whiting, Danforth and others, whose labors were crowned by abundant blessings. In 1851 the second edition of the New Testament was issued, and revivals of religion, with large additions to the Churches, followed. In 1857, at the time of the Indian mutiny, much apprehension was felt; but the storm passed, and not a hair of the head of any missionary was touched.

The GAROS were first visited in 1857, and that movement opened one of the brightest chapters in the history of the mission to Assam. A torn tract, swept out of a building which had been cleaned and prepared for a new tenant, was picked up by a Sepoy guard and read. It led to his conversion; he became an efficient preacher to his tribe, and in 1867, a Church was formed amongst them, numbering 40 members. The next year the number increased to 81, and in 1869 to 140; from these sprang 5 native churches, 8 native preachers, and a formal School. The mission has conveyed the Gospel to tribe after tribe in the hills and on the plains adjoining the Brahmaputra. Two Assamese native preachers and one Garo have visited the United States, and the latter, who had learned

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

English, spent a year in the Newton Theological Institution. The statistics of 1886 show, 30 churches, 1,889 members, and 27 native preachers, with 7 stations and 21 missionaries, male and female. The stations of the Assam Mission are divided into three Assam, three Naga, and one Garo, amongst which there are 72 schools and 1,229 pupils.

SIAM was the second mission undertaken by American Baptists amongst the heathen inhabitants of Asia. Rev. John Taylor Jones was the first missionary, he had labored about two years in Burma, and had become so proficient in that language as to preach to the natives in their own tongue. He reached Bangkok in March, 1833, and the first converts were baptized in December of that year. They were all Chinese, which race form the majority of the people of that city. Dr. Jones translated the New Testament into Siamese and made much progress in preparing a Dictionary of the language, a grammar and other works. Mrs. Jones prepared a Catechism of the Christian religion. From the mission-press in Bangkok, much Christian literature was scattered abroad. Dr. Dean joined the mission in 1834; and devoted himself to the Chinese department; left Siam in 1842, and returned to Bangkok in 1864. In August, 1835, he preached his first sermon to 34 natives, and in 1841, formed a class of Chinese preachers, which he continued till he left for Hong Kong. Mr. J. H. Chandler joined the mission in 1843. He was not a preacher, but possessed remarkable mechanical skill, and largely through his influence the king became one of the most progressive native rulers of Asia. In the palace is a working printing-press, and one or more steamboats belonging to the government ply in the river before Bangkok.

During the next ten years Messrs. Davenport, Goddard, Jencks and Ashmore, with their wives, joined the mission, and Miss Harriet H. Morse, the latter to labor in the Siamese department, the others in the Chinese. Dr. Jones died in 1851. A decree was issued tolerating Christian worship, and by authority of the king the ladies of the mission were invited to the palace daily to teach the court ladies English. After the death of Dr. Jones, the Siamese work was continued by Mr. S. J. Smith, who, with his wife, has remained until this date, to superintend a school, to prepare and distribute tracts and to teach the people the knowledge of the true God. Mr. Smith supports himself and his work by secular employment. Messrs. Lisle, Partridge and Chilcott and Miss Fielde have labored in the Chinese department. In the year 1874 there were large additions to the number of converts, two new Churches were formed and two native pastors ordained. Eleven were baptized at one station, seventeen at another, twenty-five at a third, and eighty-four at a fourth. In 1877 there were six churches, 418 members, and sixty-one were baptized during the year. Dr. Jones labored in Bangkok eighteen years, Dr. Dean more than twenty-five, Messrs. Davenport and Telford, nine years each; Dr. Ashmore and Miss Morse, seven years each; Miss Fielde six years, Mr. Partridge four, and Mr. Chilcott one. About thirty missionaries have been connected with this mission. Its latest statistics report five churches and one hundred members. Many of those who have been baptized, being but temporary residents of Siam, have returned to China and been numbered with the disciples of Christ there.

THE TELUGUS. This Indian mission has been amongst the most successful and renowned in modern times. The Telugu nation numbers about 18,000,000, residing mainly in India, west of the Bay of Bengal, and between Calcutta on the north and Madras on the south. The mission was commenced in 1836, by Messrs. Day and Van Husen. Its jubilee was celebrated with great joy at Nellore, in February, 1886. The 'Lone Star,' as it has been often called, has expanded into a constellation. For the first twenty years the work was discouraging and many proposed to abandon

The American Baptists

it, but a few pleaded for its continuance and prevailed. The first permanent station of the mission was Nellore. Rev. Mr. Jewett joined the mission in April, 1849, and preached his first sermon in Telugu in December, eight months after his arrival. At the close of 1852 he and his wife, with two or three native Christians, visited Ongole, and, before leaving the place, they ascended a slope of ground overlooking this village, since named 'Prayer-meeting Hill.' and while kneeling together there, prayed that a missionary might be sent to Ongole. In the meantime the work of preaching, teaching and tract distribution was continued, and a few converts were gathered as the first-fruits of these efforts. In 1858 several were added to the Church, and twelve years after the prayers on Prayer-meeting Hill, Rev. J. E. Clough formed the mission and planted his standard at Ongole. On the 1st of June, 1867, eight members formed a church at Ongole. Divine influences have been wonderfully shed abroad amongst this people. After the Week of Prayer; in the beginning of January, five days were spent in a tent-meeting devoted to reading the Scriptures, prayer and preaching; at the close twenty-eight asked for baptism. In 1868 when Mr. Timpany joined the mission, twenty-three were baptized in Xellore and sixty-eight in Ongole. More than eighty villages, in a circuit of forty miles around Ongole, had heard the word of life. Mr. McLanrin came to the help of the missionaries in 1870, when 1,000 villages had heard the Gospel. This year a Church was organized in Ramapatam, and the number of baptisms reported for the year was 915. The Theological Seminary for native preachers, was opened here in 1872, with eighteen students, a body that has increased to more than 200 members. Mr. Downie arrived in 1873, and Mr. Campbell in 1874. Then came a year of famine, a year of cholera, and still another of famine. During these years the government came to the help of the perishing people by employing them in digging canals for the development of the country. Mr. Clough took contracts for certain portions of this work, and paid good wages to the starving natives of his district, and while they labored for their bread, his native preachers laid before them the Gospel. Many asked for baptism, but he refused to baptize any while the famine lasted lest they should profess Christianity from wrong motives. When the three years of pestilence and famine were over, he offered baptism to all true believers. In one day 2,222 were immersed upon the profession of their faith. He detailed the process to the writer with great care, stating that there were six administrators; three of them immersing at a time, as the candidates were brought to them into the water, and when they became weary the three rested while the others proceeded with the baptisms. Everything, he said, was done with perfect deliberation, the Gospel formula was carefully pronounced over each candidate before his burial; that he stood by and superintended the administration, but baptized none himself, and that only about eight hours were passed in the great baptism. From June to September, 9,147 were immersed, and the numbers increased until 17,000 had been immersed on their profession of faith in Christ. The church register in Ongole alone contained, in 1881, more than 16,000 names. During the first half of the year 1881, 1,669 were baptized, and from June, 1878, to June, 1881, the total number reached 16,846. For years the native preachers had faithfully preached throughout the district, and the American missionaries were delighted to see them thus honored of God in their labors. The Ongole Church having become the largest in the world, the multitude was organized into fourteen Churches for convenience. The whole number of members reported in 1886 is 26,389, the church at Ongole still numbering 14,890. In the mission, at the same date, there were 287 stations, 40 missionaries, male and female, 160 native preachers, 46 churches, 292 schools, and 4,270 pupils.

CHINA. The Missionary Union has two missions in the empire of China, the Southern and the

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

Eastern. Mr. Shuck and Mr. Roberts founded the Southern mission, being followed by Dr. William Dean, who reached Hong Kong in 1842. Mr. Lord reached Ningpoo in June, 1847, and Mr. Goddard went from Bangkok to Ningpoo in 1849. There was a temporary station at Macao, where the first Chinese convert of the mission was baptized. A chapel was built in Victoria and another in Chekdiee. Thirty-three services were held every week in Chinese, and in 1844 nineteen were baptized. In 1848 Mr. Johnson joined the mission, and in that year 20,000 tracts were distributed; also, Dr. Dean's 'notes on the Gospel of Matthew and the Book of Genesis.' Mr. Ashmore joined the mission in 1858, and in 1861 the seat of the mission was transferred to Swatow. The Church there numbered thirty members in 1863, but suffered great persecution. A literary graduate, however, confessed Christ; two Chinese preachers were ordained in 1867 and became pastors of churches. Miss Fielde and Mr. Partridge were transferred to Swatow; the former prepared a synopsis of the Gospels in Chinese and a dictionary of the Swatow dialect. In 1876 forty-nine were baptized, and the next year 169, making the number of members 512. Mr. McKibben labored largely amongst the hill tribes, answering to the Karens in Burma; the statistics of 1886 give 36 out-stations, 1,433 members, 36 native preachers, 14 missionaries, 11 schools, and 175 pupils.

Inmoro, or the Eastern China mission, has its principal station at Ningpo. It has been occupied from 1843, when Dr. Maegowan opened a hospital. In eight months of the next year 2,139 cases were treated. A chapel was opened in 1846, and a congregation of from eighty to one hundred attended, some also being baptized. In 1853, Mr. Goddard, who had joined the mission at Ningpo, completed an independent version of the New Testament, pronounced by competent judges the best Chinese version that has been made. Mr. Knowlton joined the mission in 1855, and various outlying stations were established, so that, in 1859, nineteen were baptized, two of them literary-men, and an unusual number of females. Two women became Bible-readers, and the Church at Ningpo supported its own pastor. Five young Chinamen became candidates for the ministry, and in December, 1872, the first Baptist Chinese Association was formed there, numbering six Churches, twenty-three delegates being present, members of Churches 219, and native preachers fifteen. Dr. Barchet re-established the medical work in 1877, and Mr. Jenkins issued a Reference Testament. Sometimes sixty cases of disease were treated in a day, and many of the pupils were able to recite, word for word, the whole books of Genesis and Matthew. At this time, 1886, the Churches of the Eastern China mission number seven; members 246, native preachers thirteen, Bible-women four, schools six, pupils 184.

JAPAN. This mission was commenced by the appointment of Dr. Nathan Brown, once missionary to Assam, in May, 1872. He arrived on his field in February, 1873. Japan was just awakening from the slumber of centuries, and its persecuting edicts against Christianity were, about that time abandoned by imperial proclamation. Mr. Arthur and wife joined the mission in October, and, while studying the language, found numbers of young men who had forsaken the gods and were ready to listen to the Gospel. A Church of eight members was formed at Yokohama in 1873. Mr. Arthur stationed himself at Tokio, the capital, and several Buddhist priests offered him quarters in one of their temples. A Scripture Manual in Japanese was prepared by Dr. Brown, for the use of schools, and put in circulation. The first baptism in Tokio was in October, 1875. At Yokohama a daily Bible class was established and a Sabbath-school; a native preacher labored, and by 1876 the Church numbered twenty-two members, while at Tokio, the same year, the Church had thirty-six members. Mr. Arthur died in 1877. Within three years the mission printed more than 3,000,000

The American Baptists

pages of Scriptures and tracts, and the first Gospel ever printed in Japan was printed at the Baptist mission press. In 1878 twenty-eight converts were added to the two Churches, and Dr. Brown's translation of the New Testament was issued in 1879. Dr. Brown was one of the loveliest men ever known to the writer, and one of the best scholars. Before his death, in 1886, he translated the New Testament into the language of two heathen peoples: the Assamese and the Japanese. A Catechism of forty-eight pages, by Mr. Arthur, remains as a precious memorial of his literary labors for the Japanese. Rev. Thomas Poate joined the mission in December, 1879. He was formerly a teacher in the Imperial College of Japan. In a journey to the north he found the Japanese remarkably open to Christianity, and during 1880 baptized twenty-six and organized three Churches in that part of the empire. In 1886 there were five stations, four Churches, 409 members, fifteen native preachers and 215 pupils in schools.

AFRICA. The mission to the continent of Africa was commenced almost simultaneously with that in Burma, and several devoted missionaries sacrificed their lives in that inhospitable climate. The mission, begun in MOUROVIA, LIBERIA, was continued with indifferent success and under many discouragements, until 1856. The labors of Messrs. Lott Carey (colored), Skinner and others, were amongst Africans restored to their own country from America, and the Bassa tribe in the vicinity. Mr. Clarke, one of the missionaries, prepared a dictionary of the Bassa language, and nine Bassa young men were converted. One native came to the United States, was baptized here, learned the printer's trade, and was about to return to his own people when he died. So many of the missionaries died after a brief period on the field that the mission was suspended in 1856; in 1868, the work was renewed, and Robert Hill (colored) appointed a missionary; he never reached his field. In 1869-70, 153 were baptized, and the mission reported 218 converts; in 1871 two Churches were organized and a place of worship dedicated. Two years afterwards, 19 Bassas cast off idolatry and embraced Christ, but aside from several heroic Bible-readers, who were on the field in 1880, the work is in a languishing state, in the absence of trained missionaries.

THE CONGO MISSION, in Central Africa, was first sustained by Mr. and Mrs. Guinness, of London, and much money was expended, largely out of their own possessions, in buildings and the maintenance of a steam-boat to ply on the river Congo and its branches, with other provisions for prosecuting mission work. They proposed to turn over to the American Baptists all the mission property in the Congo country, including land, buildings, the steam-boat and the missionary force, on condition that the work be carried forward on the principles of the Missionary Union. In 1885 this proffer was accepted, and the work undertaken. On grounds of expediency, some of the stations were transferred to another society laboring near them, and arrangements were made to bring the work into line with the general methods of work pursued by the Union. In 1886 five stations were reported, thirteen male missionaries, of whom three are married, and two single women. One missionary and wife have been sent from the United States, and two colored missionaries will soon be added to the force. At present, this noble enterprise is in its infancy, and although several converts have been baptized, the fruits of the mission. have been largely the anticipation of prayerful hope until very recently. Intelligence is received that a powerful work of grace is in progress at Banza Manteka, where more than 1,000 converts have been baptized, two of the king's sons being amongst them. At Mukimbungu about 30 have been converted, and the work of God is spreading in various directions.

EUROPEAN MISSIONS. Efforts to establish missions in Europe have been put forth by

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

American Baptists. In France in 1832, in Germany and adjacent countries in 1834, in Greece 1836, in Sweden 1866, and in Spain 1870. Some of these efforts have met with but limited success, while others have been very largely blessed. The mission was commenced in FRANCE by Messrs. Wilmarth and Sheldon. Mr. Rostan, a native Frenchman, had previously made explorations, which awakened hope for the success of the undertaking. In May, 1835, a Baptist Church was organized in Paris, and later, Mr. Willard instructed a few young men in studies preparatory to the ministry. Messrs. Wilmarth and Willard returned to this country, and the work in Paris was left mainly in the hands of native ministers. From 1840 to 1872 the Church there struggled hard for existence. In the last of these years a costly chapel was built in the Rue de Lille, in which the Church still worships. There are also several small Churches in other parts of France, so that, as nearly as can be ascertained, there are 13 native Baptists laborers in France, male and female, with about 770 communicants.

GERMANY. Hase, the Church historian, pronounces the German Baptists 'after the American type of Christianity,' and Mr. Oncken, their apostle, demands notice here as, under God, their honored founder. He was born at Varel, in the Duchy of Oldenburg, Jan. 26th, 1800, and while young went to England, where he became a Christian. In 1823 he accepted an appointment from the British Continental Society as a missionary to Germany. He preached on the shores of the German Ocean, chiefly in Hamburg and Bremen, till 1828, when he took an agency for the Edinburgh Bible Society; being, meanwhile, a member of the English Independent Church at Hamburg, under the pastoral care of Mr. Matthews. In the winter of 1830-31, Captain Tubbs, master of the brig Mars, and a member of the Sansom Street Baptist Church, Philadelphia, found his vessel ice-bound at Hamburg, and while detained there made his home in the family of Mr. Oncken. During his stay, Tubbs and Oncken spent much of their time in examining the New Testament, and the captain explained to him the doctrines and practices of the American Baptist Churches. Oncken was convinced that these Churches were modeled after the Gospel pattern, and expressed his wish to be immersed on his faith in Christ. When Captain Tubbs returned to Philadelphia, he reported these things to Dr. Dagg, his pastor, and to Dr. Cone, of New York. In 1833 Prof. Barnas Sears, of the Theological Institution at Hamilton, went to Germany to prosecute certain studies, and while there fell in with Mr. Oncken and six others who had embraced the same views, and on April 2nd, 1834, immersed the seven in the River Elbe at Altona, near Hamburg, and on the 23d they were organized into a Baptist Church with Mr. Oncken for pastor. When this became known, there was no small stir in Hamburg. The Established Church, Lutheran, was in arms at once; and the old 'Anabaptist' skeleton was brought out from the cupboard promptly, the upper room where the little band worshiped was surrounded by a mob, its doors and windows broken, and Oncken was dragged before the magistrates and thrust into prison. This at once gave flame to the movement throughout all Germany; the clergy raged, the mob threatened, and the magistrate punished, but it all amounted to nothing. For a time, they were driven from place to place, and Oncken says that his citations to appear before the police averaged about one a week for a time, but 'the threats only gave me a greater impulse.' He was fined as well as imprisoned, his goods were seized, and he says: 'It happened that the Senator Hudtwalker, who, at that time, stood at the head of the police, was an esteemed Christian, who, although no Baptist, considered my religious activity as fraught with blessing...He was pressed hard to proceed against us, but he was not able to reconcile with his conscience the persecution of Christ in his members.' Mr. Oncken detailed to the writer, in his own

The American Baptists

house at Altona, some of the arguments by which he moved this chief of police. One was so novel that it must be repeated here. He said: 'Mr. Senator, the law of Hamburg provides that no lewd woman of the city can ply her wicked calling until she brings a certificate to the authorities, from the clergyman of her parish, stating that she was baptized in infancy, and is now a communicant in good standing in the State Church; then a license is given to her, to protect her from all harm in her wickedness. But if we persuade her to renounce her evil life and turn to Christ, and baptize her for the remission of her sins, as Peter taught at Pentecost, we are thrust into prison with the penitent woman for the crime of saving her!' This argument had weight with Hudtwalker. But says Oncken: 'His successor in office (who, however, afterwards became our friend, and has shown us much kindness), declared to me, at that time, that he would make every effort to exterminate us. When I reminded him that no religious movement could be suppressed by force, and said to him, "Mr. Senator, you will find that all your trouble and labor will be in vain," he answered: "Well, then, it will not be my fault, for as long as I can move my little finger I shall continue to move against you. If you wish to go to America, I will give you, together with your wife and children, a free passage; but here, such sectarianism will not be endured."'

This state of things continued for years, but the word of God prevailed, and the work of grace spread all through the German States; and from Hamburg it has spread to Prussia, Denmark, Austria, Poland, Hungary, Russia and Turkey. Within a little more than four years from its commencement, there were 4 churches and 120 members under Oncken's direction. In 1844 he had sent forth 17 preachers, organized 26 Churches, and their communicants numbered 1,500 members. The true prosperity of the mission, however, only began to be felt after the great Hamburg fire of 1848. At that date the Baptists had control of a large warehouse in the city, three stories high, where they received and distributed food and raiment amongst, and gave shelter to, the homeless poor. Here many were saved from death, and for the first time heard the Gospel, and the Government felt itself a debtor to those whom it had persecuted.

In May, 1853, Mr. Oncken visited the United States and remained for fifteen months. Out of 70 Churches in Germany, only 8 had regular chapels built for the worship of God, and the American Churches aided them in erecting a number, \$8,000 a year being promised to him for five years. During the last twenty-six years, the Hamburg Church has had additions yearly, the smallest number being 5, and the largest 121, making a total of 1,317, an average of nearly one every Sabbath for the entire period. The largest Church connected with the Mission in 1867 was at Memel, In Eastern Prussia, numbering 1,524.

Two missions were supported by the German Churches at this time, one in China and another in South Africa, and still later, one in the region of Mount Ararat, besides a number which they planted in the United States and South America. The Theological School at Hamburg, having a four-years' course of study, is a constant source of supply for the ministry, twenty students having graduated therefrom in 1886. The Churches are gathered into Associations, and the Associations into a Triennial Conference. The Churches within the territory of Russia, which have sprung chiefly from the German Churches whose preachers have traveled into Switzerland, Poland, Hungary, Lithuania and Siberia, have recently formed the 'Union of Baptist Churches in the Russian Empire.' Dissent from the Greek Church in Russia is relentlessly crushed out, yet in many places little bands of Baptists have sprung up numbering in all about 12,000 persons. Itinerant missionaries in many provinces, such as Esthonia, are successfully winning men to Christ. In St. Petersburg, Mr. Schiewe

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

has gathered crowds of people in his own house, until the authorities have forbidden their further assembling on the pretense of danger to health. Within two years he has baptized above four hundred converts there and elsewhere. But these men of God pay a great price for the privilege of saving their fellow Russians. One of them has been imprisoned more than forty times for preaching the Gospel. An old man of seventy years was put in chains and compelled to walk sixty English miles for this crime, the blood running from his ankles and wrists. In one town the preacher and all who listened to him were imprisoned, and few Baptist preachers in Russia have escaped the prison.

Mr. Schiewe says:

'I, also, have not been free from it, having been imprisoned seven times for the Gospel's sake, and was forbidden the country for the same reason. In the year 1869 I was imprisoned for the first time; during the year 1872 five times, and in the year 1877 I was taken away by the police from my brethren and from my wife and children, and, together with five other brethren, was conducted over the frontier by guards armed with revolvers and side-arms, and banished into exile.'

The amount contributed by the Missionary Union in 1885, in behalf of the German Mission, was only \$5,400, and no American missionary has ever been engaged in the work in Germany. The statistics of this mission, in 1886, give 162 Churches, 152 chapels, and 32,244 members. Thus, in love, is God avenging the blood of the old German Baptist martyrs.

SWEDES. As the German mission was an outgrowth of a Baptist Church in Philadelphia, through the captain of a sea-going vessel, so the Swedish mission was directly the outcome of the Mariners' Church in New York, through a common sailor. This Church for Seamen had been recognized as a regular Baptist Church by a Council of Churches, December 4th, 1843, and Rev. Ira. B. Steward became its pastor. About two years after, Mr. Isaac T. Smith, one of its members, found a Danish sailor at the Sailors' Home, and brought him to the service of this Church. The man became interested, and came again about a year after, walking with a crutch, for he had then lost a leg. After lying in the hospital in Charleston, S. C., he had debated on the choice of returning to his home in Denmark, or to New York, but decided on the latter course. After his baptism, his brethren procured for him an artificial leg, thus enabling him to walk easily, he soon manifested great zeal in missionary work. In 1848 he was licensed to preach, and soon the ladies of the Bethel Union sent him as their missionary to Denmark. There, meeting another sailor who had lost a leg, he constructed one for him like his own artificial limb, and his fame soon spread amongst the wounded and crippled of the navy. The king sent for him and offered to set him up in that business in Copenhagen, if he would cease preaching and furnish legs for the disabled of the royal navy. But F. L. Rymker, for this was his name, concluding that it was better for his brethren that they should enter into life maimed, determined to preach; which he continued to do in Denmark for seven or eight years, when he went to labor in the north of Norway. The result of about ten years' labor there was the formation of five or six churches, the ordination of two preachers, the employment of five unordained, and the conversion and baptism of between one hundred and fifty and two hundred Norwegians, scattered over a territory of two hundred miles in length. This was the condition of things there in 1868.

Right here we begin to trace the origin of the Swedish Mission to the same Church. Not long after Rymker had united with this body, Gustavus W. Schroeder, a young Swedish sailor who had just landed at the wharf in New York, came to the meeting on a Sabbath morning. He had been

The American Baptists

converted on his voyage and intended to unite with the Methodist Church, but another sailor invited him to attend the service with him that day at the Baptist Bethel. During the service Mr. Steward immersed two converted sailors on their faith in Christ. This was the first time that young Schroeder had seen the ordinance, and he was deeply affected, and said: 'his is the way that the Lord Jesus, who redeemed me with his blood, was baptized, and now, it would be ungrateful for me not to follow him.' This decided the matter; he, too, was immersed, and soon after sailed for Grottenburg, Sweden. There he fell in with Rev. Frederick O. Nelson, a Methodist missionary of the Seamen's Friend Society, who must here tell his own story. He says, that through the instrumentality of

'The dear brother Schroeder, the Lord has been pleased to awaken a spirit of inquiry in my mind on the subject of Baptism and the ordinances of God's house. The result of the inquiry has been that, after a long and sore conflict with myself, I have at last been obliged to submit to and receive the truth. I was baptized in July, 1847, by the Rev. Mr. Oncken, in Hamburg; and on the 9th of September, this year, my wife and four others were baptized by a Danish brother by the name of Foster, a missionary of the Baptists in England. Thus the Lord has been pleased to commence a Church on New Testament principles even here in Sweden, the spiritual Spain of the North...We expect great trials and suffering for our principles; and we have had thoughts of leaving the country, but our consciences would not suffer us, till we were driven out by the authorities...If we are punished according to an existing law, it is a question if we do not suffer death.' Again, under date of March 5th, 1848, Nelson writes:

'We have now twenty-eight Baptists! mind, twenty-eight Baptist believers in Sweden. Two years ago, as I and my wife were talking about Baptist principles, we said to one another; "Yes, it is right; if the Bible is true, the Baptist principles are the only Apostolic, the only true ones; but no one in Sweden will ever embrace them besides ourselves... Just as we were about in good earnest to prepare for emigration to America, some persons began to inquire, and to listen to our reasoning from the New Testament, for as yet we have had nothing but the Holy Scriptures by which to convince people. We are, however, not all in one place. In Gottenburg there are four brethren and two sisters. In another place, thirty-six English miles from town, there are three brethren and six sisters; about eighteen miles from there, are six brethren and seven sisters; making altogether twenty- eight.' Ten days later he wrote, that he had baptized another 'in the sea; 'but on the 24th of April he says: 'The truth has begun its course and is making disturbance in the enemy's camp. We are now thirty-five Baptists in Sweden,' and some of his brethren had been arrested because they refused to have their children christened. On July 4th, 1849, Nelson was brought before the Court of Consistory, in Gottenburg, on the charge of spreading 'religious errors,' when the presiding Bishop demanded: 'Do you, Nelson, acknowledge that you have been in such a place, at such a time, and there preached against our Evangelical Lutheran religion, and enticed people to join the errors of the Baptists; and that you, even there, baptized several persons? To this he replied: 'I have often, there and elsewhere, spoken the truth according to the word of God; but as to the charge that I have enticed any one to embrace errors, I could not assent, as I always proved every thing I said by the Bible, and directed the people to the Bible to search for themselves. I also acknowledge having baptized persons.'

At that time the punishment for forsaking the State religion was banishment, and for inducing others to leave it, a fine of two hundred thalers silver and banishment for life. In 1853 Nelson and his Church were banished, and they came to America. About this time, another Mr. Nelson was banished from Sweden for becoming a Roman Catholic, and the friends of religious liberty in England sought relief for the oppressed ones through Lord Palmerston, who, at the time, was Premier there. Dr. Steane, of London, opened a correspondence with a Committee in New York who sought to influence the Swedish government in the interests of religious freedom, through the American government. Dr. Gone and the writer were members of that Committee, and earnest appeals were made to the Swedish government, through Lord Palmerston and General Cass,

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

Secretary of State, at Washington, from 1857 to 1860. The correspondence was of a most interesting character, showing the British Minister and the American Secretary to be the firm friends of religious liberty. These letters were laid before the London and New York Committees, and their contents showed that his Majesty of Sweden was quite willing to sign a bill giving toleration to his subjects, but he was hedged in with difficulty. Indeed, he had introduced a measure in the Diet, in favor of enlarged religious liberty, but it was rejected. The case stood about this way: 1. The laws of Sweden recognized all its subjects as born religiously free until they took religious vows upon them to support the State religion. 2. Every parent was required to put his child under those vows within a month of its birth. 3. If these vows were ever cast off, the penalty was banishment. 4. This law could not be altered without the joint consent of the Houses of Peers, Commons and Bishops, three separate bodies, and the royal assent. 5. Under the appeals of the English and American governments, aided by the rising popular opinion of Sweden, a bill for larger religious freedom had twice passed the Peers and Commons, but the House of Bishops had defeated it before it reached the king, who was prepared to give it signature. In time, however, Nelson's sentence was revoked, and he returned to labor in Sweden. Shortly before Nelson's banishment a Mr. Forsell and a small company in Stockholm had seen the need of a holy life, the abandonment of infant baptism, and a Gospel order of things; and further north still, Rev. Andrew Wiberg, a clergyman of the State Church, had reached the conclusion that unregenerate men should not be admitted to the Lord's Table. While in that state of mind, he visited Germany in company with Mr. Forsell. At Hamburg they consulted Oncken, but Wiberg held fast to his infant baptism and returned to Stockholm. On leaving Hamburg, some brother presented him with 'Pengilly on Baptism,' and on full examination he adopted Baptist principles. Accordingly, he was immersed in the Baltic by Mr. Nelson at eleven o'clock on the night of July 23d, 1852, in the presence of many brethren, and sisters. In quest of health he came to New York, united with the Mariners' Church, was ordained by advice of a council March 3d, 1853, and in due time returned to Sweden, where his labors have been greatly blessed.

This interesting fact is connected with his return to his native land: At the Baptist anniversaries in Chicago, 1855, a letter was read dated from 'a cell in Stockholm Prison, January 25th, 1855,' and signed by a pastor, telling of the imprisonment of fifteen brethren and sisters, on bread and water diet, for taking communion outside of the State Church. The reply of the American Baptists was the appointment of Mr. Wiberg as a missionary of the Publication Society to Sweden. During his absence, fourteen pamphlets had been published against the Baptists, the court preacher had entered the house of Forsell with a policeman, and by force had sprinkled the forehead of a six-months' child. [Was he a Pedobaptist fanatic?] In another place two cows had been seized and sold for the fees of a priest, who had christened two children against the protest of their parents, and a Bishop had given the solemn decision that the Baptists might exist, but they must not increase. Still, one of our brethren had visited Norberg, and the owner of the iron works let his men stop work to listen, and afterwards came with his superintendent 120 miles to Stockholm to be immersed. Returning, he built a chapel, and Wiberg found 23 persons there ready for baptism. A converted Jew came to Stockholm for baptism in May, 1858, and returned to labor in the island of Gottland, and by the close of the next year there were six Churches, with 373 members on the island. A Baptist preacher was sent to Stockholm with a set of thieves, where he was imprisoned for preaching. He not only preached in prison, but, summoned from court to court, he traveled 2,400 miles to obey. Yet he was careful to hold 144 meetings and baptize 116 converts on the journey. One night he was put in a cell,

The American Baptists

where he preached all night through a wall to a prisoner in the next cell, and in the morning they bade each other good-by without having seen each other's face.

A young nobleman, Mr. Drake, a graduate of the State Church ministry, at the University of Upsala, was converted and baptized in 1855, when the people set him down for a lunatic. In 1880 this solitary convert met a Baptist Association in the same town, representing 38 churches and 3,416 members. Mr. Wiberg found 24 Baptists at Stockholm. Soon their place of worship could not contain the people. His work on baptism, an octavo volume of 320 pages, had been published at Upsala, he started a semi-monthly paper, called the 'Evangelist,' and, in 1861, he was obliged to visit England to collect money for a new church edifice. There he raised £1,100; then he came to the United States for the same purpose, and now in Stockholm there are three Baptist Churches. The house of worship here spoken of is large, seating 1,200 persons, built of light colored stone: it is well situated, very conveniently arranged, cost about \$25,000, and is paid for. This church is known as the 'Bethel Kappellet;' its communicants number about 2,400; they appeared to the writer to be of the middle and working classes. They sustain several stations in the outskirts of the city and are active in foreign mission work, helping to support a missionary in Spain and, perhaps, some in other countries. Also in Stockholm is the Theological Seminary, of which Rev. K. O. Broady, a former student of Madison University, is president. It has sent out at least 250 ministers, and now, in its beautiful now building, has from twenty-five to thirty students. Rev. J. A. Edgren, D.D., for some time principal of the Scandinavian Department of the Theological Seminary at Chicago, and Rev. Mr. Truve, formerly a student at Madison, who worked in this field with Messrs. Drake, Brady, Wiberg and others, created an evangelical literature for Sweden which is working wonders. The work has crossed the Baltic and entered Finland. Six or seven Churches have been formed in Norway; one of them in Tromsoe, north of the Arctic Circle, and the most northerly Baptist Church on the globe. Here our brethren find no more difficulty in immersing believers once, in January and February, than the Greek Church does in dipping babes three times; and, in 1874 they reported a Laplander amongst the converts. In 1866 the Swedish Mission was transferred from the Publication Society to the Missionary Union. The statistics for the present year, 1886, give this aggregate: 131 Churches, 28,766 members, 478 preachers, the number immersed in 1885, 3,217, and the appropriations from the missionary treasury in Boston for that year, \$6,750.

The Swedish Baptists are yet the victims of cruel laws. The government still holds the absurd theory that all Swedes are born in the National Church, and that they cannot be legally separated therefrom. Yet the trend of modern public opinion has compelled it to make some provision for dissent. Under the pretense of relief it made a Dissenter law in 1860, full of obnoxious restrictions, and in 1873 amended it, under the further pretense of removing them; but still it exacts from them conditions to which they cannot yield and retain their self-respect. They must apply to the King in order to be recognized by the State, laying their creed before him and certifying their intention to leave the State Church; if he grants them the right to exist as a Church, they must give notice to the civil authorities, that the pastor may be held responsible for their worship according to the creed; all change of pastors and the internal affairs of the Church must be reported as a matter of information to the civil authorities; no person can unite with a Baptist Church till he is eighteen years of age; no person can leave the State Church to unite with Baptists without notifying the priest of his parish two months before doing so; they shall have no schools for their children who are under fifteen years of age, for the teaching of religious truth, without special permission of the King in

Chapter 13 - Foreign Missions – Asia and Europe

individual cases, under a fine of from 5 to 500 rix dollars; a public officer who joins the Baptists shall be dismissed from office; a royal decree may revoke the freedom of worship at any time, under the pretense that it is absurd, and non-compliance with these provisions subjects the pastor or Church to heavy fines. By a comical construction of the law, the State holds them all as members of the State Church, unless they comply with these provisions. Our brethren ridicule their forced legal constructions, and leave the authorities to classify them as they please, but go not near the State Church, receive no support from it, and have no respect for its pretensions, but stand alone. They yield no promise to be governed by the Dissenter law; they consider Christ the King of their Churches, and the demands of the State and the King to manage or take cognizance of their internal Church affairs a usurpation. They claim that believers under eighteen years of age have the right from Christ to think for themselves, and they also claim the right to teach their own children under fifteen the Gospel of Christ in Sunday-school or any other school. For these and other reasons they say that if they placed themselves under the Dissenter law they would make a State Church of themselves, with the King at their head and the civil authority for their rulers. Thus, keeping a clear head and clean hands, it is a matter of indifference to them whether the law counts them in or out of the State Church. The result is that in Stockholm and other large towns, where the sentiment of the people is opposed to the enforcement of the law of 1873, its enforcement is not attempted. But, in more remote districts, fine and imprisonment are still frequent. If our brethren stand firmly, freedom to worship God must in time be their inheritance.

SPAIN. This mission grew out of the temporary residence in that kingdom of Professor W. J. Knapp, formerly of Madison University, afterwards of Yale College. Previous to 1869 he had established himself as an independent missionary in Madrid, and the work grew upon his hands until he was obliged to ask aid of the Missionary Union. In 1870 eighteen of his hearers asked to be baptized, and a Church of thirty-three members was formed in Madrid, another in Alicante, one in La Scala, and one in Valencia. At Linares forty-one were baptized, and several native preachers were raised up. But Mr. Knapp was obliged to return to the United States, political changes connected with the government occurred, and much of the work ceased. Mr. Eric Lund, an earnest Swedish minister, sustained for a time by the Baptist Churches in Sweden, was adopted as its missionary by the Missionary Union, and is its only laborer now in Spain. He resides in Barcelona, and gives much attention to the Swedish seamen who visit that port. A colporteur evangelist holds weekly meetings at Figueras, and a monthly service at La Scala; a monthly evangelical paper is also issued at Barcelona by Mr. Lund.

The American Baptists

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

American Baptists had been deeply interested in Foreign Missions from their establishment by the English Baptists in 1792; as is shown in their gifts to the mission at Serampore in 1806 and 1807. In those years \$6,000 were sent to aid Dr. Carey in his work, by American Christians, chiefly Baptists. From the organization of the Baptist General Convention for Foreign Missions, in 1814, to the year 1844, the Northern and Southern Baptists worked earnestly together. But at the latter date the question of domestic slavery not only entered largely into American politics, but into the Churches and religious societies of most American Christians. At that time it so divided the councils of American Baptists, that the North and South deemed it expedient to work in separate missionary organizations both at home and abroad. Hence, in 1845, a society was organized under the title of the 'Southern Baptist Convention,' and in 1846 the Northern Baptists re-organized their mission society, under the title of the 'Baptist Missionary Union.' The Southern Society was located at Richmond, Va., where it has continued its operations with great zeal and wisdom. J. B. Jeter, D.D., was elected President, which office he filled with great efficiency for the following twenty years, and Rev. James B. Taylor, Secretary, who continued to serve till His death, in 1871. The great work which the Southern Convention has accomplished well deserves the volume which Dr. Tupper has devoted to the narration of its sacrifices and successes. It has sustained missions in Brazil, Mexico, Africa, China and Italy, and does an inestimable amount of home mission work in the United States, for the Convention combines both Home and Foreign Mission labor. A review of its work in each of its fields will excite gratitude in all Christian hearts.

CHINA. When the Southern Convention was formed, Rev. J. L. Shuck and Rev. I. J. Roberts, missionaries, transferred themselves to its direction and support. Mr. Shuck and his wife had been the Baptist missionaries in Canton, from 1836, and had formed the first Baptist Church there. In 1842, when Hong Kong fell into the hands of the British, the missionaries left Canton for a time and sought protection here. Mr. Shuck had baptized his first converts in Macao, in 1837, but the Church at Canton was not formed till 1844; when he returned. The Spirit of God was poured out upon his work, and he found it needful to erect a place of worship. At that time he lost his noble wife, and finding it necessary to bring his children to the United States, he brought, also, one of the Chinese converts with him, and raised \$5,000 for a chapel, but it was thought that wisdom called for the establishment of a mission at Shanghai. He accordingly returned to China in 1847, and labored faithfully till 1851 at Shanghai, where he lost his second wife, and returning to the United States, closed his useful life in South Carolina, after laboring in California from 1854 to 1861.

In 1850 Messrs. Clopton, Percy, Johnson, Whilden, and Miss Baker, were added to the Canton Mission, and between the years 1854-60, Messrs. Gaillard, Graves and Schilling followed. A number of these soon fell on the field, were transferred to other stations, or were obliged to return in broken health, but in 1860, 40 baptisms and 58 Church members were reported. Mr. and Mrs. Williams and Miss Whilden went out in 1872 and did a good work, especially in schools amongst Chinese women. Mr. Simmons and wife reached Canton in 1871, and are still on the field, and Miss Stein joined them in 1879. B. H. Graves, D.D., has been in Canton since 1856, and for a generation has consecrated his life to his holy work with his faithful wife. She was a Miss Morris, of Baltimore, known to the writer almost from childhood as a Christian who counted no sacrifice too great for Jesus, and who has stood firmly at her husband's side since 1872. Dr. Graves has published a Life of Christ in Chinese, also a book on Scripture Geography, another on Homiletics, still another on

The American Baptists

our Lord's Parables, and a Hymn Book.

SHANGHAI. As already stated, this mission was founded in 1847, by Messrs. Yates, Shuck and Tobey, when a Church of ten members was formed, and two native preachers were licensed to preach. When Mr. Pearcy joined the mission, in 1848, 500 natives attended the services. In 1855, 18 public services a week were held, five day-schools were kept, a Chinese woman was immersed, and about 2,500 persons heard the Gospel weekly. Various other missionaries joined the mission, but after 1865 Dr. Yates and his wife were left alone. Dr. Yates has done a great work for China in the translation of the Scriptures into the Chinese colloquial, the speech of 30,000,000, and in the issue of Chinese tracts. This veteran has pushed his Bible translation to 1 Timothy, and continues on the field in full vigor. The Shantung Mission consisted of the Chefoo and the Tung-chow stations, which have been fully cultivated from 1860; the first by Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell and Mr. Crawford. In 1868 a native preacher baptized 20 converts. There are now in China 56 missionaries and native assistants, 654 Church members and 145 pupils in the schools.

AFRICA. In 1846 the Convention established a mission, in Liberia, and appointed John Day and A. L. Jones (colored) their missionaries; who, at different times have been followed by others. Stations were established in Liberia and Sierra Leone, against all sorts of difficulties and discouragements, largely arising in the opposition of the Africans themselves, who, in many cases, have driven out the missionaries, especially in the Beir country. Many of those sent have died on the field, while others have not only lived, despite the trials of the climate; but have risen to great usefulness and influence as teachers and preachers. John Day, the first pastor of the Church at Mourovia, established a high school there, in which not only the elementary branches were taught, but classical and theological instruction was given. He died in 1859, but not until he had planted a number of Churches, many Sunday-schools, and preached the Gospel, as he thought, to about 10,000 heathen. Rev. T. J. Bowen established the Yoruba Mission in 1850, and between 1853 and 1856 about a dozen missionaries went to his help. But after they had planted many Churches and schools, many of them fell victims to African disease, and others were driven out by wars and African persecution. Mr. Bowen labored with much zeal and success for a considerable time, but returned to the United States, and during the Civil War in the United States the Convention was compelled to discontinue the African Mission for want of means. But in 1875 it was reorganized by Messrs. David and Colley, who were welcomed by such of the native converts as had held fast their confidence in Christ. At present, Messrs. David and Eubank, with Mrs. Eubank, and four native laborers, are on the field at Lagos, where a new chapel has been erected and good promise for the future is held forth. There are stations also at Abbookuta and Ogbomoshaw, with several minor points; seven or eight missionaries, native and foreign, are laboring earnestly. In 1865, 18 converts were baptized. There are 125 Church members in the mission and 220 scholars in the schools.

BRAZILIAN MISSION. This work was begun in 1879, and has met with the most determined opposition on the ground, so that the missionaries have suffered much in their work of love and reaped light fruit. The missionaries have been Messrs. Quillan, Bagby and Bowen, and the stations Rio de Janeiro, Santa Barbara, Bahia and Macio. The brethren have published two works in Portuguese, 'The True Baptism,' and 'Who are the Baptists,' and have circulated many copies of Mr. Taylor's tract on the 'New Birth.' The field is very hard, but the Convention is full of perseverance and hope. The present Church membership is 168, of whom 23 were baptized in the mission year 1845-46.

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

MEXICAN MISSION. This mission was taken up with Rev. J. O. Westrup, in 1880, and had scarcely been adopted when that devoted servant of Christ was murdered by a band of Indians and Mexicans. But Mr. Powell is now on the field and about 12 missionaries and teachers are laboring with him in Mexico; at Saltillo, Patos and Parras, also in the Monclova and Rio Grande Districts, in which several stations there are at present about 270 Church members with 216 scholars in the schools.

THE ITALIAN MISSION. This has become one of the most interesting fields occupied by the Convention. Not only must Rome and Italy ever present a peculiar charm for Baptists, because of their immortal connection with Apostolic triumphs, but because during the Middle Ages there was always a little remnant left there who held fast to some of the Baptist principles of the primitive times. The archives of the Inquisition in Venice furnish proof that in a score of towns and villages of Northern Italy the 'Brothers' were found, although they were obliged to escape to Moravia. Then, from 1550, that court had its hands fall in the attempt to exterminate them. Gherlandi and Saga, especially, are of precious memory. Gherlandi's father had designed him for the priesthood, but the holy life and teaching of the 'Brothers' won him, and in 1559 he labored in Italy to bring men back to Apostolic truth. His capture, however, soon cut short his toils, and when thrust into prison his 'inquisitors pressed him to change his opinions.' 'They are not opinions,' he said, 'but the truth, for which I am ready to die.' Though they drowned him in the lagoon at night, nevertheless, say the 'Baptist Chronicles:' 'His death will be for the revelation of truth.' Saga was born in 1532 and studied at Padua, where, while sick, he was converted through the words of a godly artisan. Dr. Benrath says in 'Studien und Kritiken,' 1885, that when he became a Baptist, his relatives cast him off; and that when he was ready to conduct twenty disciples to Moravia, he was betrayed and taken to Venice, where, after a year's confinement, sentence of death was passed, and in 1565 he was drowned at night in the Sea of Venice.

Modern Baptists prize any land where such heroism has been displayed for the truth, and when the temporal power of the pope fell and Italian unity opened the gates of Rome to free missionary labor, the Southern Convention was not slow to send a man to that post. Dr. W. N. Cote, one of its missionaries on the Continent of Europe, formed a Church of eighteen members in Rome in 1871, but the little flock passed through grave troubles, and Mr. Cote's connection with the Convention ceased. In 1873 Rev. George B. Taylor, son of the first Secretary, James B. Taylor, was appointed to take charge of the mission. He made His way to Rome, a beautiful place of worship was built at a cost of \$30,000, and after laboring with the greatest devotion and wisdom, and with large success, ill- health compelled him to return to Virginia in 1885. Meanwhile the mission is conducted under the general direction of Rev. J. H. Eager, and is in a prosperous condition. The Italian Baptists are beset with peculiar difficulties from many sources, but they are pronounced Baptists, and stand resolutely by their principles. For mutual aid they have formed themselves into an 'Apostolical Baptist Union,' and support a journal known as 'Il Testimonio.' They are also developing the practice of self-support somewhat rapidly. They have stations at Rome, Tone Pellice, Pinerola, Milan, Venice, Bologna, Modena, Carpi, Bari, Barletta and the Island of Sardinia. Many of these interests are small, but they aggregate about 288 members. The Foreign Mission Stations of the Southern Baptist Convention number altogether, Stations, 27; Out-stations, 26; Male Missionaries, Foreign and native; 41; Female Missionaries, 33; Churches, 40; Communicants, 1,450; number added in 1885 – 86, 209.

The American Baptists

INDIAN MISSIONS. A great work has been done for the Christianization of many Indian tribes by the Southern Convention, chiefly the Cherokees, Creeks, Choctaws, Chickasaws and Seminoles. Rooted amongst the white missionaries to these 'aborigines, have been Messrs. Buckner, Moffat, Burns, Preston and Murrow, and of converted Indians themselves there have been Peter Folsom, Simon Hancock, Lewis and William Cass and John Jumper. Amongst the various tribes there are 5 Associations, embracing about 8,000 communicants, with many secular and Sunday-schools and meeting-houses.

THE HOME MISSION work of the Convention is done chiefly through the State Mission Board, and is known as the Domestic work. The Domestic Board first took its separate existence in 1845, with Rev. Russell Holman as Corresponding Secretary, who was followed in due time by Rev. Thomas F. Curtis, Rev. Joseph Walker, and again by Mr. Holman. His successors were Rev. M. T. Sumner and Dr. McIntosh; all of whom did a great work for the feeble Churches in almost every Southern city. and in every Southern State, especially in Texas, Florida, Arkansas and Georgia. Over \$1,100,000 have been expended on the field, and fully 40,000 persons have been baptized on their faith in Christ Jesus.

Missionary efforts FOR THE INDIANS OF NORTH AMERICA were commenced by the Baptist General Convention in 1817, and prosecuted by the Baptists of the North and South together until 1846. After that the Missionary Union prosecuted its Indian missionary work alone till 1865, when it transferred that department to the American Baptist Home Mission Society. The tribes in which this work was prosecuted during this period, were the Pottawatomies and Miamies, 1817; Cherokees, in North Carolina, 1818; Ottawas, 1822; Creeks, 1823; Oneidas and Tonawandas, including the Tuscaroras, 1824; Choctaws, 1826; Ojibwas, 1828; Shawnees, 1831; Otoes, 1833; Omahas, 1833; Delawares, including the Stockbridges, 1833; and Kickapoos, 1834. The missionaries employed, male and female, numbered upwards of 60, and the missions which yielded the largest fruit were those amongst the Cherokees, Choctaws, Creeks, Ojibwas, Delawares, and Shawnees. The whole number of converts baptized were about 2,000, of whom three quarters were of the Cherokee nation.

In 1826 seven young Pottawatomies were sent as students to Hamilton Theological Seminary for instruction, and two to Vermont as students of medicine. In 1833 a Cherokee native preacher was ordained, another in 1844; in 1850 two more, and in 1852, yet another. In 1835 there was a Choctaw native preacher, and in 1842, there were two others; a Creek Indian became a preacher in 1837, and a Tuscarora, chief was ordained pastor in his own tribe in 1838. The earliest stations amongst the Pottawatomies were called Carey and Thomas stations, in honor of the missionaries in India. Rev. Isaac McCoy was the founder of both these missions. In 1831 these Indians were removed farther westward by the government of the United States, became mixed with other tribes, and the work was suspended in 1844. In 1822 schools were formed among the Ottawas and a Church in 1832, with 24 members. They contributed a sum equal to thirty cents per member for missions in 1849; and in 1854 the work was transferred to the Indian Territory. The Cherokee station, in North Carolina, was begun by Rev. Evan Jones and Mr. Roberts in 1825, and in 1838, 156 natives were baptized in the space of ten months. After they were removed to the Indian Territory the work progressed, and in two years their Church numbered 600 members. Mr. Fry joined the station in 1842, and the members were estimated at 1,000. All the Cherokee Churches had meeting-houses, and their was also amongst them a printing-office and a female high school. A missionary periodical was established in 1844,

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

and the translation of the New Testament was completed in 1846. The tribe may well be considered a civilized and Christian nation. The mission amongst the Delawares began with two preaching places; their first missionary was Rev. J. G. Pratt. This mission was finally absorbed in that to the Shawnees. Mr. Bingham conducted the mission to the Ojibwas at Sault Ste. Mary, from 1828 to 1857; the tribe had dwindled away through death and emigration, and the work was given up. Rev. Moses Merrill labored amongst the Otoes from 1833-to 1840, when he died on the field after translating portions of Scripture into the Otoe language; after his death that mission was discontinued. Mr. Willard, formerly missionary to France, and others, remained amongst the Shawnees from 1831 to 1862. At an earlier date, there were missions amongst two or three tribes in Western New York, but the advancing tide of civilization swept them away. Schoolcraft estimates the number of Indians at the discovery of America within the present area of the United States at 1,000,000, but the Report of the United States Commissioner for 1882 gives their number as only 259,632. After the Revolutionary War the disjointed condition of the Baptist denomination unfitted it for general missionary work. It needed concert of action, and yet, nothing could force organization upon it so effectually as the pressure of missionary work. From the beginning our people felt the need of pressing the work of personal regeneration, and yet every form of jealousy for reserved rights repelled them from formal organization. Still, the Associations were impelled to co-operation, and helped the Churches to feel their way to concert of action. The Shaftesbury Association, which comprised Northeastern New York and Western Massachusetts, in 1802, sent out Caleb Blood, paying his traveling expenses through Central New York and over the Niagara River into Upper Canada. At that time the Associations' especially the Philadelphia, the Warren and the Shaftesbury, had largely imbibed the missionary spirit and were engaged in home evangelization. The first missionary organization in which American Baptists were active, outside of these, so far as is known, was the 'Boston Female Society for Missionary Purposes.' It was formed in 1800 with 14 members, part of whom were Congregationalists. For the first year it expended \$150 in New England. Several years after this, 1802, a few brethren in Boston, without the action of the Churches, formed the 'Massachusetts Domestic Missionary Society,' the object of which was 'to furnish occasional preaching, and to promote the knowledge of evangelic truth in the new settlements of these United States, or further, if circumstances should render it proper.' In the first year of its operations it sent Joseph Cornell through the northwestern part of the State of New York, and two other missionaries to Maine and New Hampshire, Cornell's journey occupied six months; he traveled 1,000 miles, and preached in 46 townships, reporting that in 41 of these the people had no religious instruction, and that in 13 no minister had ever preached. This Society existed thirty years and had missionaries in ten States, West as far as Illinois, and South as far as Mississippi. John Ide, Edward Davenport, Amos Chase, Nathanael Kendrick, John M. Peck and James E. Welch were amongst its missionaries. It afterward became the parent of the present Home Mission Society.

There had been scattered communities of Baptists in Missouri from the settlement of that country. Thomas Johnson, of Georgia, had visited it in 1799, while it was under foreign dominion and Roman Catholic control. A few families from the Carolinas, about 1796, made a settlement in St. Louis County. John dark, an Irish Methodist, became a Baptist, and probably was the first Baptist who ever preached west of the Mississippi. He gathered a Church in 1807. Before considering the next mission organization, it will be in chronological order here to notice that great movement of explorers and first settlers which planted Baptist Churches in Kentucky at so early a date. Most of

The American Baptists

its early inhabitants were from Virginia and the Carolinas, principally from Virginia; most of them were Baptists in their religion, and their early ministers brought the strong marks and earnest spirit of their ministry with them. The settlers of Kentucky were generally men of powerful frame and dauntless courage, backwoodsmen, splendidly adapted to the subjugation of this great empire of forests, and these ministers met exactly the wants of the people. For about a score of years they were exposed to the wrath of the savages, who abounded in this world of wilderness. The encroachments of the whites had driven them back from their sea-coast domains, and as these slipped out of their hands, as was natural, they became sullen and vengeful. White emigrants found their crops destroyed, their stock driven off, their buildings burnt, and their wily foe in ambush to slaughter them in the dark forests. Dr. Spencer gives an illustrative case. The Cook family, from which sprang Abraham Cook, a devout Baptist minister, had removed in 1780 to the forks of Elkhorn, when the father died, leaving his widow and a large family unprotected on this frontier. She struggled with poverty and danger till the year 1792, when her sons, Hosea and Jesse, married. One day a band of Indians fell upon these two sons, while they were shearing sheep, and murdered one of them. The other, mortally wounded, fled to the house, barred the door and fell dead. The two women must now fight the Indians to save themselves and their babes. They had one rifle, but no shot. Finding a musket-ball, however, in her desperation one of the women bit it in two with her teeth, and fired one half at an Indian through a crevice in her log-house, he sprang into the air and fell dead. The savages then tried to force the door, but failing, sprang to the roof to fire the house. As the flames began to kindle, one of the heroines climbed the loft and quenched the fire with water. The Indians fired the roof the second time, but the women, having no more water in the house, took eggs and quenched the fire with them. The Indians kindled the flames the third time, when, having neither eggs nor water left, the poor woman tore the jacket from her murdered husband, saturated with his blood, and smothered the flames with that. Thus baffled, the savages retired, leaving these young mothers clasping their babes to their bosoms, obliged themselves to bury their slaughtered husbands. Many of the early ministers suffered much from the Indians. It is supposed that Rev. John Gerrard was murdered by them.

The Severns Valley Baptist Church was the first, organized in Kentucky, about forty miles south of Louisville, at what is now Elizabethtown, though the church still bears its ancient name. On June 18, 1781, eighteen Baptists met in the wilderness, under a green sugar-tree, and there, directed by Rev. Joseph Barrett, from Virginia, formed themselves into a Baptist Church, choosing Rev. John Gerrard as their pastor. Cedar Creek was the second, founded July 4th, 1781, and Gilbert's Creek the third, constituted under the leadership of Lewis Craig. For several years these Churches, and others that were formed, met with no marks of signal prosperity; but, in 1785, they were visited by a blessed revival of religion, especially those in Upper Kentucky. In 1784 a Church was gathered in the Bear Grass region, about thirty miles from what is now Louisville. At that time several able ministers had settled in the new territory, and the young Churches were greatly prospered. In 1787 Rev. John Gano left his pastoral charge in New York and settled in Kentucky, greatly strengthening the hands of His brethren. This State has now become the fourth Baptist State in the Union in point of numbers, having 61 Associations, 896 ministers, 1,731 Churches, 183,688 members. Last year, 1885, 10,748 persons were immersed into the fellowship of those Churches. Our brethren there have always expected and received 'large things.' In the olden times Jeremiah Vardeman baptized 8,000, Gilbert Mason 4,000, James M. Coleman 4,000, and Daniel Buckner 2,500.

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

In returning to speak of organized missionary effort, it may be stated that in 1807 a number of brethren, within the limits of the Otsego Association, met on the 27th of August, at Pompey, Onondaga County, N. Y., and organized the Lake Missionary Society, for the 'promotion of the missionary enterprise in the destitute regions around.' Its first missionary was Rev. Salmon Morton, who was engaged at \$4 a week. Two years later the name of the society was changed to the 'Hamilton Missionary Society.' It was the day of small things, for, in 1815, the society was able to provide only for forty weeks' labor in the course of a year, and it was greatly encouraged to receive from the 'Hamilton Female Missionary Society' in 1812, 'twenty yards of fulled cloth,' to replenish its treasury.

Still, the missionary spirit possessed the hearts of the American Baptists. At the meeting of the Triennial Convention, held in Philadelphia, May 17th, 1817, the sphere of its operations was enlarged by authorizing the Board 'to appropriate a portion of the funds to domestic missionary purposes.' This action diverted attention for a time from the original purpose of the Convention, for during the three ensuing years only three additional missionaries were sent into foreign lauds. The Convention was feeling its way, in the absence of missionary experience, and its heart desired to take in the world. Luther Rice had influenced its action by his enlarged plans and holy aims. He possessed great ability, was of most commanding presence and an earnest speaker, and his recent conversion to Baptist principles had stirred the whole country. After his tour through the South and West, he reported a recommendation that a mission should be established in the West, not only on account of the importance of the region in itself, but it was 'indispensably necessary to satisfy the wishes and expectations of pious people in all parts of the United States,' and the Convention took his view of the case. Hence, it gave power to the Board to send missionaries into 'such parts of this country where the seed of the Word may be advantageously cast, and which mission societies on a small scale do not effectively reach.' The direct result of this vote was the appointment of John M. Peck and James E. Welch to this work and the appropriation of \$1,000 for their support. They went West, acting under this commission, where they established many Churches, amongst them the Church at St. Louis, in the year 1817. James McCoy and Humphrey Posey were sent out under similar commissions to the Indians.

In 1820 the Convention saw that it had attempted too much, and withdrew its support from Messrs. Peck and Welch. Mr. Welch returned East, and Mr. Peck was taken up and supported by the Massachusetts Society. For years he tried in vain to induce the Triennial Convention to resume its work in the West, and so from 1820 to 1833 home mission work was thrown back upon local organizations, Associations and State Conventions. In New York, the Convention was formed in 1821, in Massachusetts, 1824; and in others previous to 1832. After nine years' labor in the West, Mr. Peck returned to New England to arouse new interest in the work of western evangelization, and explained to the Massachusetts Society, in Dr. Baldwin's Church, in Boston, the necessities of this field. He also visited Br. Going, pastor of the Church in Worcester, Mass., and moved his bold but sound judgment and warm heart to examine the subject seriously. The two men corresponded constantly on the subject for five years, when Drs. Going and Belles resolved to visit and inspect the West for themselves. The result was, that the three men sketched a plan, 'to lend efficient aid with promptitude;' and on returning, Dr. Going convinced the Massachusetts Society that a General Home Mission Society should be formed. It was willing to turn over all its interests to a new society, and used its influence to secure its organization: the result was, that on April 27th, 1832 the

The American Baptists

American Baptist Home Mission Society was formed in New York city, with Hon. Heman Lincoln, of Massachusetts, for its President, Dr. Going for its Corresponding Secretary, and William Colgate for its Treasurer.

In Dr. Going's first report to the Executive Committee of the new society, he made an elaborate statement of Baptist strength in the United States, and the ratio of ministerial supply in various parts of the country. He estimated the whole number of communicants at 385,259, ministers 3,024, Churches 5,321, and Associations, 302. he reckoned the destitution in the Western States as 17 per cent greater than in the Eastern; and while the Churches of New York and New England were supplied with ministers seven eighths of the time, the Middle States were only supplied three eighths, and the Western one eighth. He further calculated that all the ministerial labor in the Valley of the Mississippi was only equal to that of 200 pastors in the East. The managers of the new society 'Resolved' with what they regarded as great boldness, that \$10,000 ought to be raised and expended during the first year, and felt very grateful when Mr. Colgate reported \$6,580.73, as the result of the year's work. But on this sum they had carried 89 missionaries, laboring in 19 States and Territories through that year. In the sixth year the receipts were \$17,238.18, missionaries 116, and 1,421 persons baptized. It is difficult to get at the separate statistics for all the preceding five years, as they were mixed up with the State Conventions, which held certain auxiliary relations to the society. In October, 1837, Dr. Going accepted the presidency of the Literary and Theological. Institute at Granville, Ohio, and in 1839, Rev. Benjamin M. Hill, of Troy, N. Y., was elected to fill his place as Home Mission Secretary. As Dr. Going has become so thoroughly historical amongst American Baptists, a fuller sketch of him will be desired.

Jonathan Going, D.D., was of Scotch descent, and was born at Reading, Vermont, March 7th, 1786. He graduated from Brown University in the class of 1809; and during his first year at college, April 6, 1806, he united with the First Baptist Church at Providence, under the care of Rev. Stephen Gano. He pursued his theological studies for a time after his graduation, with President Messer, and then became pastor of the Church at Cavendish, Conn., 1811-1815. In 1815 he became pastor of the Church at Worcester. Mass., and during the first year of His service organized the first Sunday-school in Worcester Co. At that time ardent spirits were in common use amongst Church members and ministers, but Mr. Going took high ground against this practice. It is said that a neighboring Church applied to the Doctor for aid, when he asked if that congregation could not support itself by economizing in the use of liquor? The reply was: 'I think not, sir, I buy mine now by the barrel, at the lowest wholesale rates.' The personal influence of Dr. Going made him a sort of Bishop in all the surrounding country. During his pastorate of 16 years at Worcester; 350 additions were made to his Church. Hon. Isaac Davis, for many years a member of his Church and a personal friend, said of him: If there was an ordination, a revival of religion, & difficulty in a Church, or a public meeting in aid of some benevolent object, within 30 or 40 miles, the services of our pastor were very likely to be called for. Every body saw that his heart was in the great cause, not only of benevolent action but of the common Christianity, and every body expected that he would respond cheerfully and effectively to all reasonable claims that were made upon him.' After taking charge of Granville College, his influence in Ohio became as extensive and healthful as in Massachusetts, but he was permitted to fill His place only till November 9, 1844, when he fell asleep in Jesus, lamented by all who knew him.

Much might be said of Dr. Hill's secretaryship in the Home Mission Society, which he filled for

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

22 years. He was a native of Newport, R.I., born April 5, 1793. He entered the Pennsylvania University to prepare for the medical profession, but was converted at the age of 19 and became a pastor at 25. He served two smaller Churches first, then spent 9 years as pastor of the First Church, New Haven, Conn., and 10 years as pastor of the First Church Troy, N. Y., before he accepted the place vacated by Dr. Going. During the period of his secretaryship the country and the Society were agitated by several very exciting and perplexing questions, but under his firm and judicious management, it derived no serious injury from any of them. He kept his head and heart upon the one aim of the Society, 'North America for Christ,' and he did much to bring it to the Saviour's feet. One of the serious practical difficulties which beset the Society in the prosecution of its western work was not readily overcome. In many sections a salaried ministry was denounced, and many otherwise sensible people looked upon the plan of missions as a speculation and the missionaries were set down as hirelings. In November, 1833, a Convention met in Cincinnati, where representative men from various portions of the South and West met representatives of the Home Mission Society, face to face, to exchange views on the subject. This meeting did much to dispel prejudice and ignorance. Still, for many years the narrow-minded folk in the West treated the honest, hard working missionaries much as they would be treated by fairly decent pagans. Only persistent work and high Christian character conquered the recognition of their gifts and self-sacrificing life.

The settlement of the interior in regard to intelligence, virtue and religion, as well as free government, had been a matter of great solicitude with the earlier statesmen of the country. Under the colonial date of July 2d, 1756, Benjamin Franklin wrote to George Whitefield: 'You mention your frequent wish that you were a chaplain in the American Army. I sometimes wish that you and I were jointly employed by the crown to settle a colony on the Ohio. I imagine that we could do it effectually, and without putting the nation to much expense; but, I fear, we shall never be called upon for such a service. What a glorious thing it would be to settle in that fine country a large, strong body of religious and industrious people! What a security to the other colonies, and advantage to Britain, by increasing her people, territory, strength and commerce! Might it not greatly facilitate the introduction of pure religion among the heathen, if we could by such a colony, show them a better sample of Christians than they commonly see in our Indian traders? – the most vicious and abandoned wretches of our nation! Life, like a dramatic piece, should not only be conducted with regularity, but, methinks, it should finish handsomely. Being now in the last act, I begin to cast about for something fit to end with. Or, if mine be more properly compared to an epigram, as some of its lines are but barely tolerable, I am very desirous of concluding with a bright point. In such an enterprise, I could spend the remainder of life with pleasure, and I firmly believe God would bless us with success, if we undertake it with a sincere regard to his honor, the service of our gracious king, and (which is the same thing) the public good.'

Although the wish of Franklin to enter the heart of the country with Whitefield, as missionaries, for 'the introduction of pure religion among the heathen,' and to found a colony to the 'honor' of God, it was reserved to others, as honorable and as noble, to compose an 'epigram' there, under a Republic of which neither of these great men dreamed when the philosopher expressed this wish. In a quiet way single missionaries there have done an almost superhuman work. Fourteen of the strongest Churches in Illinois and Michigan were planted by that pure-hearted man, Thomas Powell, as well as the Illinois River Association. Out of this body in turn have come the Ottawa, Rock River, East Illinois River and the McLean Associations, which were organized under his direction. Dr. Temple

The American Baptists

wrote his friend, Dr. Sommers, in 1833, concerning Chicago, then, a mere trading post: 'We have no servant of the Lord Jesus to proclaim the glad tidings of salvation...I write to beg that you will see Brother Going and ask that a young man of first-rate talent, whose whole heart is in the cause of Christ, may be sent to it immediately. I will myself become responsible for \$200 per annum for such a missionary.' Dr. Going found the young man in Rev. A. B. Freeman, who had just graduated from Hamilton, and justified what seemed hasty, by saying that 'Chicago promises to become a very important place on very many accounts, and it is deemed highly important that we have a footing there at an early date.' In October, 1833, the First Church in Chicago was organized in what is today one of the centers of power in our land.

Under the administration of Dr. Hill, the work of the Home Mission Society began to assume its fuller proportion of importance to American Baptists. In 1832 its principal field was the Mississippi Valley, extending from Galena to New Orleans, embracing about 4,000,000 people, but in twenty years from that time the vast stretch west of the great river was opened up to the Pacific Ocean. What, in 1832, stood upon the maps as the 'Great American Desert,' an immense empire of black waste, became Kansas, Oregon, Minnesota, as States; while Nebraska, Washington, Dakota, Nevada and Colorado were becoming rapidly colonized in 1852. At the close of Dr. Hill's service, the operations of the Society extended into Kansas and the Territory of Nebraska, 160 miles up the Missouri River from the Kansas line; up the Mississippi to its junction with the St. Croix, thence to the Falls of the St. Croix, and to the head of Lake Superior. The necessity had been forced upon the Society of doing something to assist infant Churches to secure houses of worships This was a new order of work, and at first, appropriations were made in the form of loans at a light interest of two per cent. Many of the Churches were paying 8 to 12 per cent., and the aim was to help them to help themselves, by making the interest as nearly nominal as might be, and when the principal was re-paid, to re-loan it to other Churches for similar use. Dr. Hill published a plea for the Church Edifice Fund, aiming to raise \$100,000 for this purpose. The plan was a wise one, but the movement had scarcely been inaugurated when the financial panic of 1857 fell upon the country, and the responses in money were light. In 1866, when the funds were used only in the form of loans and the gift system had ceased, the receipts ran up to \$72,005 13, of which \$30,000 was made a permanent fund. Rev. E. E. L. Taylor, D.D., of Brooklyn, N. Y., a man of large ability every way and a most successful pastor, was appointed to raise the permanent fund to \$500,000. He labored nobly in his work till 1874, when his Lord called him to his temple above. He had, however, secured \$130,000 for the fund.

Dr. Hill declined further service in 1862, and Dr. Jay S. Backus, one of the most vigorous minds and consecrated pastors in the denomination, was chosen as his successor. He served from 1862 to 1867 as the only Secretary, but in 1867 Rev. J. B. Simmons, D.D., of Philadelphia, was appointed an additional Corresponding Secretary, with special reference to the Freedmen's work, and in 1869 Dr. Taylor was added to his colleagues with special regard to the Church Edifice Fund. Dr. Simmons stood the peer of his two fellow-secretaries in wisdom and goodness. He was a graduate of Brown University and of Newton Theological Seminary, and had done delightful pastoral work in Indianapolis and Philadelphia. Thus equipped, the Society stood ready to follow the lead of these three men of God, and well did each of them stand in his lot. The times were extremely trying, for the country had just passed through its severe Civil War, slavery had ceased to exist, and an unexpected change of circumstances called for various modifications in the work of the Society. The

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

new secretaryship, filled by Dr. Simmons, sprang from these necessary changes. At the close of the war the Annual Meeting of the Society was held at St. Louis, May, 1865, when it resolved to prosecute missionary work amongst the Freedmen. Dr. Edward Lathrop and Mr. J. B. Hoyt were sent to visit the Southern Baptists to invite their co-operation in this work, and in 1867 a delegation was sent to the Southern Baptist Convention, at Baltimore, to further that object. That Convention reciprocated these brotherly interchanges, and appointed a similar delegation to meet the Home Mission Society, a few days later, at its annual meeting, in New York. Drs. Jeter and J. A. Broadus made addresses in which conciliation and brotherly affection abounded. Various methods of practical co-operation were suggested, but the Committee which reported on the subject could do little more than recommend that co-operation should be sought and had in all ways that should be found practicable.

In December, 1864, however, a company of Baptists had, on their personal responsibility, formed 'The National Theological Institute,' at Washington, to provide religious and educational instruction for the Freedmen. At the St. Louis meeting of the Home Mission Society in 1845, it was reported that \$4,978.69 had been received by its Treasurer for a Freedmen's Fund, and that the Society had already 68 missionaries laboring amongst them in twelve Southern States. The Board was instructed to continue this work. The Institute conferred with the Home Missionary Society as to the best method of conducting this work, for, in 1867, it had schools under its direction at Washington, Alexandria, Williamsburg and Lynchburg, with \$3,000 in books and clothing, and \$18,000 in money, for their support. The result of much conference was, a recommendation made by a committee, consisting of Messrs. Mason, Hague, T. D. Anderson, Fulton, Bishop, Peck and Armitage, to the Home Mission Board, to organize a special department for this work. This being done, Dr. Simmons was chosen Secretary by the Society, especially for this department. His work naturally divided itself into missionary and educational branches. All ordained missionaries, of whom there were about 30 each year, were instructed to give religious tuition to classes of colored ministers. Dr. Marston reported, that in two years 1,527 ministers and 696 deacons were present at classes which he held. Before Dr. Simmons's election, amongst others, Prof. H. J. Ripley, at Savannah, Ga.; Dr. Solomon Peck, at Beaufort, N. C.; Rev. H. L. Wayland, at Nashville, Tenn.; and Rev. D. W. Phillips, at Knoxville, Tenn.; were engaged in this important work, so that over 4,000 pupils were gathered into these schools. The Society held that the teacher for the common school was secondary to the education of the colored preacher. Teachers were impressed with the responsibility of winning souls to Christ, and those converted in the schools were sent forth to become teachers, pastors' wives, and missionaries to their own people. Fifteen institutions for the colored people have been established with an enrollment in 1885 of 2,955 pupils, 1,391 of them young men, 1,564 young women and 103 teachers. These institutions are all designed primarily for these who are to be preachers or teachers; two are for the separate instruction of women, and one is distinctively a Theological Institution. Industrial education is given in nearly all of them, and the demand for medical education, so closely connected with the moral and religious education of the race, is one that generous patrons are considering. Dr. Simmons continued in this work till 1874, and it is still prosecuted with vigor and success. Mrs. Benedict, of Pawtucket, R. I., widow of Deacon Stephen Benedict, gave \$30,000 for the establishment of the Benedict Institute, in Columbia, S. C. Deacon Holbrook Chamberlain, of Brooklyn, N. Y., gave fully \$150,000 for the Freedmen's work, most of it for the founding and support of the Leland University, at New Orleans, La., and others

The American Baptists

gave large sums for the same cause. After the Civil War the colored Baptists in the South constituted separate Churches and Associations of their own, though previous to that, as a rule, they had been members of the same Churches with the white Baptists. At its session, held at Charleston, 1875, the Southern Convention said:

'In the impoverished condition of the South, and with the need of strengthening the special work which the Southern Baptist Convention is committed to prosecute, there is no probability of an early endowment of schools under our charge for the better education of a colored ministry. The Convention has adopted the policy of sustaining students at the seminaries controlled by the American Baptist Home Mission Society. It is much to be desired that larger contributions for this purpose may be secured from both white and colored Baptists.'

The Georgia Baptist Convention said in the same year:

'The Institute for colored ministers, under the care and instruction of our esteemed brother, J. T. Robert, is doing a noble work for our colored population. We trust that many will avail themselves of the excellent course of instruction there, and that the school may prove an incalculable blessing in evangelizing and elevating the race.' In 1878 it added: 'We recommend our brethren to aid in sending pious and promising young men, who have the ministry in view, to this school, which consideration was urged in view of the fact, among other facts, that Romanists are making strenuous efforts to control our colored people, by giving them cheap or gratuitous instruction.' And in 1879 the same Convention resolved that: 'The institution deserves our sympathy and most cordial co-operation. It is doing a most important work, and is indispensable as an educator of this most needy class of our population.'

The Baptist Seminary and the Spelman Seminary, located at Atlanta, are doing a truly wonderful work. The latter was largely endowed by the philanthropist, John D. Rockefeller, and bears Mrs. Rockefeller's maiden name. It has 626 pupils, and its income for 1885 was \$7,133; Sidney Root, Esq., of Atlanta, has been unwearied in his zeal to build up both these useful institutions.

At the Annual Meeting, held in Washington, in 1874, the Society elected but one Corresponding Secretary to take charge of the mission and educational work, Dr. Nathan Bishop; with Dr. Taylor in charge of the Church Edifice Fund. But as Dr. Taylor died that year, Dr. Bishop was left alone. From 1876 to 1879 Dr. Cutting served as Corresponding Secretary, when he was succeeded by Rev. H. L. Morehouse, D.D., the present Secretary, whose very successful administration has brought up the Society to a position commensurate with the times, and to a position of strength worthy of its preceding history.

As Nathan Bishop, LL. D. was a layman, and did so much for the interests of the Baptist denomination generally, this chapter cannot be more fittingly closed than by a brief sketch of his life and labors. He was pre-eminently a scholar, a Christian gentleman, a philanthropist and a man of large religious affairs. He was born in Oneida County, N. Y., August 12th, 1808. His father was a Justice of the Peace and a farmer, and brought up his son to habits of thorough industry and economy. While yet a youth, Nathan was converted, under the labors of Rev. P. P. Brown, and united with the Baptist Church at Vernon. Early he displayed an uncommon love for knowledge with a highly consistent zeal for Christ, a rare executive ability and a mature self-possession. At eighteen, he entered the Academy at Hamilton, N. Y., and Brown University in the year 1832. There he became a model student, known by all as full of quiet energy, a Christian of deep convictions, delighting in hard work, manly, self-denying and benevolent, and graduated with high honor. In

Chapter 14 - Other Baptist Missions – Foreign and Home

1838 he was appointed Superintendent of Common Schools in Providence, where he re-organized the whole plan of popular education. In 1851 he filled the same office in Boston, and for six years devoted his great ability to elevating its common schools to a very high rank. He married and settled in New York in 1858, and here he identified himself with every line of public beneficence, to the time of his death, August 7th, 1880. He was a leader in the Christian Commission, the Board of State Commissions of Public Charities, the Sabbath Committee, the American Bible Society, the Evangelical Alliance; and, under the administration of General Grant, he served in the Board of the United States Indian Commissioners. No man contributed more invaluable time and toil to the development and upbuilding of Vassar College, or to the New York Orphan Asylum, and, in his denomination, every department of benevolent operation felt his influence. In the City Mission, the Social Union and the Home for the Aged, he put forth a molding and strengthening hand from their organization. But the greatest service, and that which must be ever associated with his honored name, was rendered in association with Baptist Missionary work, in both the Home and Foreign departments. Although never a wealthy man, he was a prodigy of liberality all his life, and when he died he left the most of his property for mission uses. For many years he gave his most precious time to the Home Mission Society, and for two years discharged the duties of its Corresponding Secretaryship without charge, besides increasing his contributions to the treasury. While he was Secretary, he and Mrs. Bishop made a centennial offering to the Society of \$30,000, besides large gifts to the Freedmen's fund. Once the Doctor said to Dr. Simmons: 'I have been blamed for giving so many thousand dollars for the benefit of colored men. But I expect to stand side by side with these men in the day of judgment. Their Lord is my Lord. They and I are brethren, and I am determined to be prepared for that meeting.' No man ever known to the writer was more completely devoted, body, soul and spirit, in labor for man and love for God than Dr. Bishop. He had as robust a body, as broad a mind and as warm a heart as ever fall to the lot of Christian humanity; and not a jot or tittle of either did he withhold from this holy service. Yet, when told that death was near and that he would soon be free from extreme pain and enter into rest, his only reply was the expression of a grateful soul that he should soon begin a life of activity.

The American Baptists

Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors

In the absence of the connectional principle in the life of Baptist Churches, their history and united efforts are at times largely included in the biography of particular individuals, who have left the impress of their minds and hearts upon their own times and on succeeding generations. Of none is this more true than of several individuals who have had much to do with those great movements that must now be mentioned. Few of our American fathers acted a more prominent part in the work of missions, whether on the home or foreign field, than the immortal THOMAS BALDWIN; and having already spoken of him at some length, it will be but needful here to glance at his Boston ministry and general character.

After serving the Church at Canaan, N.H., for seven years, he became the pastor of the Second Baptist Church, in Boston, in 1790, which responsible office he filled till His death, in 1825. His labors were most abundant, and his success in the conversion of men to Christ was very great. He was not a graduate of any college, but he fostered all educational projects; nor did he love controversy, but when he found it necessary to defend Baptist principles against the pen of the celebrated Dr. Worcester he did so with faithful vigor. Dr. Stillman and himself were fast friends and true yoke-fellows in every good work. As politicians, Stillman was a firm Federalist, and Baldwin as firm a Jeffersonian Democrat, and generally on Fast Day and Thanksgiving-day they preached on the points in dispute here, because, as patriots, they held them essential to the well-being of the Republic, especially, in the exciting conflicts of 1800-01: yet, there never was a moment of ill feeling between them. On these days, the Federalists of both their congregations went to hear Dr. Stillman and the Democrats went to Baldwin's place, but on other days they remained at home, like Christian gentlemen, and honored their pastors as men of that stamp. Dr. Baldwin filled many important stations with the greatest modesty and meekness, for with a powerful intellect he possessed his temper in unruffled serenity; all men seemed to honor him, as his spirit was the breath of love. Few painters could have thrown that peculiar charm into his countenance which is seen at a look, had it not first been in his character. The soul of patience, he was inspired with a stern love of justice, and commanded a large fund of playful humor and innocent wit. His manners were unaffected, simple and dignified, so that in him heart-kindness and rectitude blended in a rare degree, and his counsel carried weight by its vigorous discrimination. The Massachusetts Missionary Society, and after it the Missionary Union, were great debtors to His zeal and wisdom. As an independent thinker, without petty ends to gain or fitful gusts of passion to indulge, all trusted him safely.

Before he entered the ministry he served the State of New Hampshire as a legislator in its General Court; and after his removal to Boston he was frequently elected chaplain to the General Court of Massachusetts, he also served as a member of the Constitutional Convention of Massachusetts, in 1821, and took an active part in its discussions. For many years he was a Trustee and Fellow of Brown University, a Trustee of Waterville College from its organization, also of Columbian College. His first work as an author was 'Open Communion Examined,' published in 1789, at the request of the Woodstock (Vt.) Association. His second was a volume of about 250 pages, in reply to Dr. Samuel Worcester's attack on the Baptists. This work amply vindicated the sentiments of the Baptists, and did much at the time, by its vigor of intellect, its strength of logic and its Christ-like spirit, to arrest the unwelcome treatment which they met at the hands of their assailants. Dr. Baldwin was born at Bozrah, Conn., December 23d, 1753, and died at Waterville,

The American Baptists

Me., August 29th, 1825, having gone there to attend the commencement of the college.

REV. STEPHEN GANO, M.D., was another master in Israel, who had much to do with the shaping of his own times. He was born in New York, December 25th, 1762. In consequence of the disturbances of the Revolutionary War he was not able to attend the Rhode Island College, then under the care of his uncle, Dr. Manning, but he was put under the care of Dr. Stiles, of New Jersey, another uncle, to study medicine. At the age of nineteen he entered the army as a surgeon, where he remained for two years, and then settled at Tappan, N. Y. He says that when he left his mother for the army she buckled on his regimentals, which her own hands had made, saying: 'My son, may God preserve your life and patriotism. The one may fall a sacrifice in retaking and preserving the home of your childhood (New York was then in the hands of the British), but never let me hear that you have forfeited the birthright of a freeman.' His father had already gone to the war, and Stephen adds: 'Without a tear she saw me depart, bidding me trust in God and be valiant.' The next morning his regiment marched to Danbury, where he witnessed the burning of that town. He speaks of his after marches in the army, under Col. Lamb, as traced in their blood on the snow, and of shoes being sent to them which Gen. Lafayette had provided in France. After this, he served as surgeon in the new brig commanded by Decatur, of whom he says, 'a braver man never trod the deck of any vessel.' She was captured, for she ran on a reef of rocks, when: 'Finding escape impossible, we managed to cut away her leaders and nailed her flag to the mast, and long after we were captured our stars and stripes floated over her deck.' After their capture, Gano and thirty-four others were left upon Turk's Island without food, to perish. There he was taken so sick that he appeared to be dying. His companions, however, found some conchs on the shore and roasted them. They raised his fainting head from the sand-beach, and gave him a portion of the liquor, saying: 'Gano, take this and live, we will yet beat the British.' He revived, and after some days was taken to St. Francis. Upon landing there, he begged from door to door for a morsel of bread, till a woman gave him half a loaf, which he shared with his companions. After working hard to load a vessel with salt, he obtained passage on a brig for Philadelphia, but when four days out was re-captured and taken into New Providence. Here he was put on board a prison-ship, fastened in chains, and nearly died of hunger. After a time he was exchanged as a prisoner, but safely reached Philadelphia, and soon entered on the practice of medicine at Tappan, N. Y.

There he was converted and in 1786 was set apart to the Gospel ministry. In the sketch of himself which he wrote for his children he speaks of his early abhorrence of intoxicating drinks thus: 'When four years old, milk-punch was recommended in the small-pox, which I had most severely. My mother has informed me that, when she urged my taking it lest I should die, I replied to her, "Then I will die." This repugnance he carried through life. He also speaks of visiting his grandmother when he was thirteen and she was more than fourscore years of age. 'On first seeing me she bade me kneel beside her, and gently placing her aged hand on my youthful head she offered up a fervent petition for my salvation, when, after a short silence of prayerful abstraction, she said: "Stephen, the Lord designs thee for a minister of the everlasting Gospel. Be thou faithful unto death and I will give thee a crown of life.'" He also tells us that, while under conviction for sin, an elderly lady, a neighbor and intimate friend of his wife, seeing his distress of mind, thought that she would show him the way of salvation. She confessed, however, that she had been seeking her own salvation for forty years but had not then been saved. They bowed before the Lord together in prayer and agreed to pray for each other. A few days passed, and one night he found himself so happy in Christ

that he could not wait for the dawn of day, but urged his horse at full speed to the house of his aged friend, to tell her what the Lord had done for his soul. He rapped at the door and she, raising an upper window, asked: 'Doctor, is your wife ill?' 'O no,' he cried, 'I have found Jesus precious and have come to tell you.' She replied: 'I was only waiting for daylight to come and tell you that I am rejoicing in him, with joy unspeakable and full of glory.' That day he wrote the joyful news to his parents, saying: 'Tell it upon the house-tops that Stephen is among the redeemed.' His father, John Gano, replied: 'As I never expect to be nearer the house-top, in a suitable situation to make known the joyful news of my dear son's conversion, than the pulpit, I read his letter from thence on the last Sabbath.' Stephen's daughter says that after her father's death she was mentioning this letter to an aged minister, who said: 'When I was a thoughtless lad of sixteen I went to hear your grandfather preach and was present at the very time when your father's letter was read, and that, with the accompanying remarks, was one of the means of my conversion and had its weight in leading me into the ministry.'

The ordination of Stephen, in his father's church, at the age of twenty-three, put great honor upon the faith both of his mother and grandmother. When he was left on Turk's Island, news reached his mother that he was dead. This she did not believe, but said: 'When I gave my son to my country I gave him to God. After his departure, I felt an assurance that God had accepted the gift for his own service. I believe that he will yet be an able, faithful, successful, and, it may be, deeply-trying minister of the Gospel of Christ.' Her faith was prophetic. In 1792 he became pastor of the First Baptist Church at Providence, where he continued until his death, in 1828, having filled its pastorate for thirty-six years. His ministry was remarkably successful. When he became pastor his Church numbered but 165 members, but five new Churches sprang up, mostly from his own, and when he died the ancient Church itself numbered above 600 members. He stood pre-eminent amongst his brethren as a public speaker and a leader in all denominational affairs. His executive ability was large, his punctuality in dispatching business and his large forecast gave him great influence in all Baptist councils. For nineteen years in succession he acted as Moderator in the Warren Association. He constantly preached with an eye to the copious outpourings of the Holy Spirit, and he enjoyed many revivals of religion in his Church. With some hundreds of others, he baptized his six daughters, four of whom became the wives of Baptist ministers, amongst whom were the late Drs. Henry Jackson and David Benedict, the historian. Few men have left a more hallowed influence on the Baptists of America than Stephen Gano. His doctrines were of the purely orthodox pattern, especially in all that related to the person and work of Christ. At the close of a sermon on his Deity he says: 'The sentiment I have been presenting to you, and which I have feebly supported in this place and from this pulpit for more than thirty-five years, is now the only ground of my hope, and that which I wish to commend when the messenger of death shall summon my soul to an account before the only wise God and Saviour.'

REV. ALFRED BENNETT was born at Mansfield, Conn., in 1780, and lived to be honored for years and influence, being long known as 'Father Bennett.' He was a contemporary of Baldwin and Gano, and labored side by side with them for many years in promoting foreign missions. He was licensed to preach in 1806, by the Church at Homer, N. Y., and became its pastor in 1807. His early ministry there was so blessed of God that his Church sent out two new Churches in the vicinity, and great revivals followed his labors. Like most of the pastors of his day, he preached much abroad, especially in the region which now forms the central counties of New York, and he left a holy

The American Baptists

influence wherever he went. From 1832 to the close of his life, in 1861, he devoted his time to pleading the cause of foreign missions, and was one of the chief instruments in establishing that love of missionary enterprise which characterizes the Baptists of the State of New York. More than a generation has passed since he departed this life, yet his name is always pronounced with reverence. In person he was tall, of a dark complexion, thin and stooping. He had a fine head, with strong features, a winning address and an earnest spirit. He was attended by an atmosphere of firm devotion and close walk with God.

REV. DANIEL SHARP, D.D., was a native of Huddersfield, Yorkshire; born December 25th, 1783. His father was the pastor of a Baptist Church at Farsley, near Leeds. Early in life Daniel became a Christian, united with a Congregational Church, and was greatly prospered in secular business. He came to the United States in 1806, when he began to examine the difference between himself and the Baptists, and, as the result, united with the Fayette Street Church, New York, of which he soon became a very useful member. Then he believed himself called of God to the Christian ministry, and preached his first sermon in the outskirts of the city. In March, 1807, he began a course of theological studies with Dr. Staughton, of Philadelphia, and was ordained pastor of the First Church at Newark, N.J., in 1809, where he remained until 1812, when he became pastor of the Charles Street Church, Boston, Mass. Here his large capacities for usefulness developed in every sphere, especially in preaching the Gospel and in laying broad foundations for foreign mission work and the education of the ministry. When Baptist educational movements led to the formation of the Newton Institution, he was one of its foremost advocates, and for eighteen years presided over its Board of Trustees. He also became a Fellow in the Corporation of Brown University, and one of the Board of Overseers in Harvard. In Boston his public influence was general and healthful, for His talents, with the purity and beneficence of his life, commended him to all. His personal presence bespoke the man of mark wherever he went. The cast of his face was noble, albeit the compression of His mouth and the glint of his eye indicated sternness of demeanor and the power to slant a satire; indeed, his whole carriage said: 'I magnify mine office.' Yet, where his suspicion was not excited or his confidence challenged, he was as winsome as a child, and trusted men implicitly; but ever insisted in return on transparent simplicity and staunch honor in all their conduct. His conservatism always demanded the unity and peace of consistent integrity. In a sermon to his own people he says: 'One Diotrephes may destroy the peace of a Church. It is a melancholy fact that some men must be first or they will do nothing. They will rule or rage; and the misfortune is, they rage if they rule. May God preserve me from such good men.' Dr. Sharp was tall in stature and very erect, elegant, benignant and courtly in his manners, and his eloquent ministry held the respect of the whole community in Boston for one-and-forty years. He was emphatically a teacher and a father in Israel; at the same time, in all spheres of refined society, he was a rare specimen of the fine old English gentleman. He died in 1853.

SAMUEL F. SMITH, D.D. Few men are now living who have more beautifully adorned our ministry, or more earnestly aided our missions, than the modest and widely-known author of our national hymn, 'My Country! 'tis of Thee.' Dr. Smith was born in Boston, Mass., October 21st, 1808. He was fitted for college in the Latin School of that city, and was a Franklin Medal scholar. He graduated at Harvard in 1829, in the class with Oliver Wendell Holmes, Judge B. R. Curtis, Judge Bigelow, James Freeman Clarke, Professor Benjamin Pierce and other men of distinction. In Dr. Holmes's poem on 'The Boys' he sings of him thus:

Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors

'And there's a nice youngster of excellent pith;
Fate tried to conceal him by calling him Smith;
But he shouted, a song for the brave and the free
Just read on his medal, "My country, of thee!"'

He was a student in the Andover Theological Institute from 1829 to 1832, when he became the editor of the 'Baptist Missionary Magazine' for one year. In February, 1834, he was ordained pastor of the Baptist Church at Waterville, Maine, and was Professor of Modern Languages in the College there for eight years. From 1842 to 1854, twelve years and a half, he was pastor of the First Baptist Church at Newton, Mass. Then, for seven years, 1842 to 1849, he was editor of the 'Christian Review,' and for fifteen years editor and translator of the 'Missionary Union.' His soul-stirring national hymn, known to every statesman and school-child in the republic, was written at Andover, in 1832, and also his great missionary hymn, 'The Morning Light is Breaking.' He translated an entire volume of Brockhaus's 'Conversations Lexicon' from the German, which was incorporated into the 'Cyclopaedia Americana,' and, in association with the late Lowell Mason, wrote or translated from German music-books nearly every song in the 'Juvenile Lyre,' the first book of music and songs for children published in the United States, he has rendered great service to Churches and Sunday-schools as the compiler of 'Lyric Gems' and 'Rock of Ages,' as the editor of four volumes of juvenile literature, and also as the principal compiler of the 'Psalmist,' a hymn-book which the greater part of the Baptist denomination used for thirty years, and which contained about thirty of his own hymns. His busy pen also produced the 'Life of Rev. Joseph Grafton,' 'Missionary Sketches,' 'Rambles in Mission Fields,' the 'History of Newton, Mass.,' with endless contributions to periodical and review literature. Dr. Smith visited Europe in 1875-76, and again in 1880-82, extending his journey to Asia and visiting the Baptist missions in Burma, India and Ceylon, as well as the European missions in France, Germany, Denmark, Sweden, Austria, Turkey, Greece, Italy and Spain. He married the granddaughter of Dr. Hezekiah Smith, of great renown in Baptist life, and his son, Rev. Dr. D. A. W. Smith, has been a missionary in Burma since 1863, and is now President of the Karen Theological Seminary at Rangoon. No man amongst Baptists is better known or more beloved for his learning, usefulness and Christlike spirit, his brethren generally appreciating him as in regular lineal descent from 'Nathaniel,' an Israelite indeed in whom is no guile.'

REV. WILLIAM B. WILLIAMS, D.D. LL.D., was of general and denominational celebrity, he was born in New York, October 14th, 1804, and was the son of Rev. John Williams, at that time pastor of the Oliver Street Baptist Church. He entered Columbia College at the age of fourteen, and graduated in 1822, after which he studied law with Peter A. Jay, nephew of the former Chief Justice of the United States and one of the most eminent lawyers of his day. Mr. Williams was admitted to the bar in 1826 and became Mr. Jay's partner in business. His father died in 1825 and his mother in 1826. He so took to heart this double affliction that his sorrow impaired his health, and he spent the year 1827 in Europe. After his return he practiced law alone for a time; then conviction of duty led him into the Christian ministry, and in June, 1832, he commenced preaching in the Broadway Hall, to the congregation afterwards known as the Amity Street Church. This body came from the Oliver Street Church, and was constituted with 43 members December 17th, 1832. Dr. Francis Wayland preached his ordination sermon in the Oliver Street Meeting-house, Dr. Cone being then pastor of

The American Baptists

that Church. The old Church lovingly provided its former pastor's son with lots for a new Church edifice in Amity Street, which building was completed in the following year. At that time Mr. Williams's health was firm, his voice full and sound, and the house was constantly crowded by a refined congregation. His discourses abounded in vast wealth of thought, deep spirituality and rare literary beauty. After a few years his voice failed, and in consequence of its feebleness it was difficult to hear him, so that while his congregation retained its high character for intelligence it became small. Yet Dr. Williams reached that super-eminent distinction as a preacher which never decreased, but rather increased to the close of his life. His ideal standard of literary excellence was so high that he looked upon the best of his own productions with suspicion, and most reluctantly put them to the press.

Probably the first manuscript which he consented to print was a brief memoir of his father, written in 1825, and published anonymously in an Appendix to the Memoir of Dr. Stanford; by Dr. Sommers, in 1835. It covers but 23 pages, and is one of the simplest, sweetest and most perfect pieces of biography to be met with. Its style differs entirely from that of the doctor's later years, is less ornate and most sweetly tender, the tribute of a loving son to the memory of his loving father. It is as direct as a sunbeam, and does not contain a sentence to recall the movement of Addison or Steele, much less that of Foster or Hall. Neither the head nor heart of that man is to be envied who can, unmoved, read this lucid story of his holy father written with tears in every line. Dr. Williams's resources in literature, philosophy, history and theology appeared to be unlimited, and his memory was so capacious and exact that the researches of an industrious life came at command. Many thought, after the failure of his voice, that his great moulding influence on the young could best be felt in the chair of a College or Theological Seminary, and high positions of this order were frequently tendered to him; but he was never willing to leave his pastorate, and died as pastor of the Church of which he was ordained, having filled his office for more than 51 years. He was a close student, and his mental powers grew to the close of life. His library was selected with the greatest care, numbering about 20,000 volumes. His pen was never at rest. The notes which he made on His reading alone numbered eight volumes. His first known publication was an address delivered at Madison University, in 1843, on the 'Conservative Principle in our Literature.' It excited universal attention by its affluence of thought and expression, and was republished in England. This was followed by his 'Miscellanies,' in 1850, and in 1851 by two volumes, His 'Religious Progress' and his 'Lectures on the Lord's Prayer.' At a later date he published 'God's Rescues,' an exposition of Luke 15; his 'Lectures on Baptist History,' in 1876; and his last work, 'Heros and Characters in History.' His scattered discourses, introductions to the publications of others, his contributions to reviews, and other articles, are very numerous; besides, he has left a large number of manuscripts, amongst them several courses of lectures, ready for publication. All his writings are so thoroughly marked by a glowing diction and a profundity of thought that his image is left on every page. At times a play of humor or a stroke of sarcasm is indulged, indicating great power of invective had he chosen to use it freely but, best of all, he breathes that atmosphere of holiness which only comes of a close walk with God. Dr. Williams died in great peace in the bosom of his family April 1st, 1885, leaving a widow, the daughter of the late John Bowen, and two sons; all of whom are specially devoted to Christian toil in the Amity Street Church, to whose interests their father and husband gave his singularly valuable and honored life.

When our Churches were first awakened to the missionary appeal, Luther Rice, Dr. Staughton

Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors

and others took it into their heads that the Triennial Convention could unite a great institution of learning at Washington with Foreign Mission work, and so high education could go hand in hand with high evangelization. Hence, in May, 1817, the Convention resolved 'to institute a classical and theological seminary,' to train young men for the ministry. The first idea of Luther Rice was, that as the Burman missionaries must translate the Scriptures from the originals such an institution would give them the necessary training. Dr. Judson was a graduate of Brown University, and with Mr. Rice, had received his theological education at Andover, under the tuition of Moses Stuart. But soon the purpose enlarged its proportions under the enthusiasm of the measure, in the hands of its friends. They did not foresee that this enterprise must necessarily divert the body from the intention of its founders. Yet for a time great interest was elicited throughout the Middle and Southern States in this two-fold object, until it was discovered that the cause of education threatened to undermine interest in missions. The scheme was to obtain a charter which should provide that the President of the United States, or the heads of Departments, nominate a College Board for election by the Convention, and in due time the college would become such a grand concern as to bring much money into the treasury for various other missionary uses, while the Churches would support the missionaries. These fathers had not the remotest idea of uniting Caesar and Christ in the work of missions, but the scheme was looked upon as specially happy, for utilizing the influence of Caesar in the cause of Christ without being dictated to by him. This notion floated up and down our ranks from 1817 to 1824, and the vision of abundant young Baptist ministers and missionaries filled many eyes. They were to become students at Washington, to study oratory at the feet of the great Senators of those days, and many predicted that, as pulpit orators, they would eclipse the orators of Greece and Rome, and a new race of Baptist Ciceroes and Demostheneses were to arise who should do wonders.

The Seminary was formally opened in 1818, in Philadelphia, under the charge of Dr. William Staughton and Professor Ira Chase. At first the number of students was two, but it soon increased to twenty, and in April, 1821, the first class, numbering five, was graduated. The same year the institution was removed to Washington, where it became the theological department of the Columbian University, which had received a charter from Congress in 1821. As some leading minds in the country hoped that the college would become a great rational Baptist University, Luther Rice as zealously solicited funds on its behalf as for the support of missionaries in Burma. Dr. Staughton, the very soul of eloquence, left his pastorate in Philadelphia to take the presidency, other names as immortal were to sustain him as professors, and Professor Knowles became the editor of the *Columbian Star*, with the promise of making it the great Baptist paper of the Continent.

Of course, the whole expectation proved futile. It became evident, at the meeting of the Convention in 1820, that it had undertaken too much, and that the educational interest had detracted from the interest in the missionary cause. In the spring of 1826 the Triennial Convention met with the Oliver Street Church, in New York, and took the entire situation into grave consideration. A host of masters in Israel were present: Cone and Kendrick, Malcom and Maclay, Knowles and Galusha, Semple and Ryland, Staughton and Stow, Chonles and Mercer, Rice and Jeter, Wayland and Sommers, with many more. But strong lines of partisanship began to be drawn, and they were divided about the college. There were several vacancies in the Board of Trustees which the President of the United States, John Quincy Adams, had failed to fill by nominations, and so the hands of the Convention were tied as to the election of trustees. In this strait, Rev. Gustavus F. Davis, of

The American Baptists

Hartford, Conn., a vigorous young man of about thirty, who could travel day and night by stage, was sent off at full speed to Washington to get the President's nominations. The Convention plunged into discussion, and Mr. Rice was charged with bad management of the whole affair. The leading men of the denomination were drawn into the controversy on one side or the other. Luther Rice was as honest as the daylight, but he knew nothing of book-keeping, so that the missionary and college accounts were mixed up in a perfect tumble. He was the most disinterested of men, had scarcely allowed himself enough for his daily bread, but no straightforward accounting could be had; nor did it enter the minds of the Convention generally that the whole proceeding was an effort at concentration which was very questionable for Baptists to attempt, looked at from any practical point whatever.

Professor Knowles was one of the clearest-headed and most far-sighted men in that Convention, and soon saw that something was radically askew. Others came to his help, in the hope that this confused state of affairs might be straightened; but little could be done. At last, Mr. Rice also saw that, with all his self-sacrifice, he had made serious blunders of judgment, and with an assertion of honesty of purpose, which every one believed, he threw himself and all his golden visions upon the tender mercies of his brethren. After several had taken part in the debate, which lasted for a long time, Rev. Francis Wayland, then about thirty years of age, and a professor in Union College, took the floor. One who was present describes him then as of a 'large, bony frame, which had not acquired the breadth of muscle of after life, giving him a gaunt, stooping appearance. He was of a dark complexion, black eyes, with a sharp, steady radiance which darted from under the jutting cliffs of eyebrows that protruded a little beyond the facial line. He had a Websterian structure, was majestic rather than elegant, being strong in person and in will, and conscientious. His voice was not smoothly sonorous nor sustained in its volume of sound, but falling at times very low, with an occasional hesitancy of speech.' He accorded the highest honor to all concerned in the complicated affairs of the college and of the mission, and admitted that they had been indefatigable in their labors of love. But he exploded the idea that two such institutions could co-exist under one management, any more than that two ships could be managed by one crew when chained together in a tempestuous sea; one going down must take the other with it to the bottom. He showed that education in America and missions in Burma were so different in their nature that they must be treated separately; for, instead of the one helping the other, they were mutual hindrances, and he demanded that the union between the two be forever dissolved. His speech was so lucid and convincing that the dream vanished and the Convention ended the complication at once, with all its outcoming perplexities.

In 1827 the Faculty resigned, and for a time instruction was suspended. In after years, however, the institution received the benefactions of distinguished men.. Mr. Adams was one of its firm friends, and as a college standing upon its own merits it maintained an existence against great difficulties. The gifts of Hon. W. W. Corcoran, of Washington, were munificent, beginning as early as 1864; but it was not until 1873, under the presidency of Dr. Wellings, that Columbia College received the pledge of Mr. Corcoran, that if its friends would secure \$100,000 for its endowment he would contribute \$200,000 more for the same object. This condition was met, and now, in point of endowment, its existence is permanently assured. At this time Mr. Corcoran's donations have amounted to \$300,000, and although this philanthropist is an Episcopalian he made them with great heartiness, saying: 'I know that I am giving to Baptists, but I have confidence in them.' His beloved sister was the wife of Dr. S. P. Hill, pastor of the First Baptist Church, Baltimore, so that he well

Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors

understood their sentiments and appreciated their work.

Much has already been said of the establishment of Brown, Madison and other universities, and it would be especially interesting to trace the rise and progress of each Baptist College in America, but space will not permit. It is, however, most highly promising for the cause of Baptist education in the United States that at present we have 19 institutions for the colored and Indian races, 14 seminaries and high-schools for the co-education of male and female, 27 institutions for female education exclusively, and 6 theological seminaries for the education of our ministry, making in all, weak and strong, old and new, an aggregate of 125 institutions. In these the present statistics show, of male instructors, 556; of female instructors 440; of pupils, 16,426; of students for the ministry, 1,503; the moneyed value of libraries and apparatus, \$777,911; the value of grounds and buildings, \$7,713,713; the amount of endowments, \$7,236,270; the total income, \$1,165,786; the amount of gifts to all in 1885, \$330,303, and the number of books in their libraries, 412,120.

Dr. Sprague, in the historical introduction to the 'Annals of the American Baptist Pulpit,' states that 'the Baptists as a denomination have always attached little importance to human learning as a qualification for the ministry, in comparison with higher, though not miraculous, spiritual gifts, which they believe it the province of the Holy Spirit to impart; and some of them, it must be acknowledged, have gone to the extreme of looking upon high intellectual culture in a minister as rather a hindrance than a help to the success of his labors. But, if I mistake not, many of the sketches in this column will show that the Baptists have had less credit as the friends and patrons of learning than they have deserved.' All true Baptists are grateful to say that there has been a great change for the better since Dr. Sprague penned these words, and its stimulant has been drawn largely from the example of the olden times, as well as from the necessities of later days. It should not be forgotten that it was Thomas Hollis, a Baptist of London, in 1719, who founded two professorships and ten scholarships for 'poor students,' in Harvard College. The Philadelphia Association, in 1722, proposed that the Churches make inquiry for young men 'hopeful for the ministry and inclinable to learning,' and notified Abel Morgan thereof, that he might recommend them to Mr. Hollis for these scholarships. A Baptist Education Society was formed at Charleston, S. C., in 1775, by Rev. Oliver Hart, and in 1789 the Philadelphia Association gathered a fund 'for the education of young men preparing for the Gospel ministry;' the Warren Association did the same in 1793. The American Baptists had three classical schools in 1775, that at Hopewell, N. Y.; that at Wrentham, Mass.; and that at Bordentown, N.J. It was customary at that time for older pastors to instruct students for the ministry, especially in doctrinal and homiletic studies. For example, Dr. Sharp spent considerable time in study with Dr. Staughton; Dr. Bolles studied three years with Dr. Stillman, 'uniting study with observation and labors in the social meetings.' The nucleus of Waterville College was formed in the students whom Dr. Chaplin took with him there from Danvers, where they had studied with him.

The efforts that were made in Rhode Island and New York in behalf of general and theological education have already been traced. When the War of Independence closed, Rhode Island College had existed twelve years, and had graduated seven classes. Small sums had been contributed for its support, by numerous friends in England and America; but, in 1804, Nicholas Brown gave \$5,000 to establish a professorship of oratory and belles-lettres, and, in recognition of his timely gift, its name was changed to Brown University. He died in 1841, at which time he had given about \$100,000 to the institution. Its line of presidents and instructors has formed for it an illustrious

The American Baptists

history. Manning, Maxey, Messer, Wayland, Sears, Caswell and Robinson, have honored its presidency and made its influence world-wide. Francis Wayland, D.D., LL.D., one of the great educators of our country, has left a name and influence which must ever stimulate the American student, and call forth the thanksgiving of the denomination to which he was united. Judge Durfee pronounces him: 'A mind of extraordinary calibre, foremost in every good cause, educational, industrial, philanthropical or reformatory, and prompt to answer every call upon him for counsel or instruction in every crisis or exigency.'

FRANCIS WAYLAND was born in New York, March 11, 1796, and was the son of Francis Wayland, a Baptist minister, who preached in several cities on the Hudson and became pastor of the Church at Saratoga Springs in 1819. His son graduated at Union College at the age of seventeen, and commenced the study of medicine, but before his medical studies were completed he believed that the Spirit of God had called him to the Gospel ministry, and entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1816. At the end of a year, however, he became a tutor in Union College, where he remained for four years, when, in 1821, he was called to the pastorate of the First Church in Boston. Here he became known as a man of clear and positive convictions and great moral force. A sermon preached in 1823, on the Moral Dignity of the Missionary Enterprise, and another in 1825, on the Duties of an American Citizen, attracted almost universal attention from the weight of their thought and the charms of their expression. He returned to Union College in 1826, as professor; but in 1827 accepted the presidency of Brown University. At that time Brown was not in a very flourishing condition, either in its finances or reputation for discipline, but Dr. Wayland soon restored it to a better state, raised its instruction to a new and higher level, and by his stimulating and suggestive methods sought to make it fulfil the ends of a University abreast of any institution in the land. To him is due the inception of the idea that a liberal education should include more than drill in the classics and in mathematics, as modern life demanded more of the liberally educated man than an entry into the learned professions through the traditional curriculum. He thought a system of elective studies necessary, in which the tastes of the student should be consulted while intellectual discipline should be secured, and that the true conception of an American University demanded this. These views were slowly matured, for they were not fully elaborated and wrought into the life of the College until 1850. But the standard of scholarship was slowly raised, the endowment was increased, and he sent forth men with what was better even than scholarship – with the high character that can best be imparted by personal contact with a morally strong, resolute and sympathetic Christian manhood. Dr. Wayland's influence on his students was so familiar, dignified and paternal, and withal so thoroughly Christ-like, that he left his imprint upon each mind, and, whether they became Christians or not while passing through their college course, each one honored the president as a noble specimen of Christ's best disciples, and was convinced that his heart's wish was that all of them might even be better Christians than he esteemed himself to be.

Dr. Wayland, with all his solidity, was of a very mirthful character, and constantly kept his classroom and social surroundings alive with strokes of wit. But his greatest characteristic was his deep and glowing spirituality. Dr. Stockbridge, who supplied the pulpit of the First Church at Providence while Dr. Wayland's pastor was abroad, says of him that one day a leading Deacon in the city noticed an aged man bowed down in a place of worship and Dr. Wayland leaning over him in close conversation. He drew near, and found the venerable Judge P. overwhelmed with sorrow for sin. He was expressing his fear that, as one who had lived so many scores of years without God in the world,

there was no hope in his case. The Doctor was tenderly pointing him to the boundless mercy of God in Christ Jesus, and the eminent jurist found peace in believing on him. In 1853 Dr. Wayland said to Dr. Stockbridge: 'If you can secure the presence of the Holy Spirit in your ministrations, a battalion of soldiers would not be able to keep the people from crowding the sanctuary.' This great educator died August 19th, 1874, but is still preaching by his books in all parts of the civilized world. His published writings of note number seventy-two, the most prominent of which are his 'Moral Science,' 'Political Economy,' 'Intellectual Philosophy,' 'University Sermons,' 'Memoir of Dr. Judson,' 'Limitations to Human Responsibility,' and 'Principles and Practices of the Baptist Churches.'

REUBEN A. GUILD, LL.D., the present Librarian of Brown, has been longer associated with the University than any person now filling an important position in its service, for his labor runs through the terms of its last three presidents and well back into that of Dr. Wayland's, he having filled his office for thirty-eight years. Dr. Guild was born at West Dedham, Mass.; in 1832. From a child he evinced strong literary tastes, and prepared for college at Day's Academy, Wrentham, and at the Worcester High School, entering Brown University in 1843. He was a diligent and faithful student, and graduated in 1847 with the sixth honors of his class. In 1848 he succeeded Professor Jewett as Librarian, and has filled the position with marked success down to this time. Under his administration the library has increased from 17,000 to 63,000 bound volumes, and 20,000 unbound pamphlets; which collection is kept in a substantial and elegant fire-proof building; constructed after his own plan. No man is fit for a Librarian who will not take off his hat in the presence of a good book. Dr. Guild possesses this ability, together with his other great qualifications. The day after this new building was finished he began to remove the books into it from Manning Hall. Dr. Guild devoutly uncovered his head, took a splendid copy of Bagster's 'Polyglot Bible,' and accompanied by his corps of assistants, led by the late Rev. Prof. J. L. Diman, carried it alone and placed it as No. 1, in alcove 1, on shelf 1, pronouncing it: 'The Book of books, the embodiment of all true wisdom, the fountain-head of real culture, the corner-stone of a true library, the source of all true civilization and moral improvement.' There it stands today, the ripe sheaf of Jehovah, and all the other books must do it reverence if they wish the good-will of the Librarian. The library is a model in its arrangement and management, brought as nearly to perfection as such a collection of books can be. Dr. Guild is one of the best Baptist writers of the times; he is clear, terse, accurate. In 1858 he published the 'Librarian's Manual' and the 'Life of President Manning,' in 1864 the 'History of Brown University,' in 1867 the 'Life of Roger Williams,' and in 1885 the 'Life of Hezekiah Smith, D.D.,' and he has edited a number of books besides. At present he is preparing a complete edition of the 'Works of Roger Williams,' with a Memoir, which altogether will comprise two volumes, large 8vo, with copious indexes. In addition to his vast amount of literary work, Dr. Guild has long acted as a private tutor, for seven years he served as a member of the Common Council of Providence, and for fifteen years as a member of the Common School Committee of that city. He has visited and examined many of the libraries of Europe, and rendered great service to the cause of education in many capacities. Dr. Guild was baptized by the lute Dr. Stow, of Boston; he received his honorary degree of Doctor of Laws from Shurtleff College, he is as genial and thorough a Baptist as Rhode Island affords, and is an honor to his denomination. Justice demands that something be said here of another noble educator, who possesses many of the elements which marked Dr. Wayland, and on whom, in an important sense, his mantle has fallen.

The American Baptists

MARTIN B. ANDERSON, LL.D., ranks with the most successful educators in our country, he was born in Maine, 1815, and graduated with high honor from Waterville College in 1840, when he entered the Theological Seminary at Newton. In a year from that time he was chosen Professor of Latin, Greek and Mathematics, in Waterville, and in 1843 filled the chair of Rhetoric also in the same institution. He continued there as a broad, earnest and accomplished teacher, until 1850, when he became the proprietor and editor of the 'New York Recorder,' a weakly religious paper of large influence. In 1853 he accepted the presidency of Rochester University, where he has done his great life-work. His entire mastery of Mental and Moral Philosophy, Ancient History and Political Economy, not only opened to him a wide range of practical usefulness as an educator and a scientific explorer, in their correlated branches, but he has done most valuable work for the State as a publicist, especially in adjusting its public charities and educational plans. He has cheerfully placed his facile pen, his store of literary attainments, and his executive ability, under perpetual contribution to the public good. As an orator, a tutor, an essayist and a philanthropist he has served his fellow-men, and all his work bears the stamp of incisive originality. Few men have so constantly met American wants by articles of every sort, in journals, reviews, encyclopedias and reports on difficult questions, as President Anderson. Yet, few of these productions have been purely speculative. Always he keeps in view, and succeeds in commanding, that vigor of thought and directness of action which produce practical results in others, and especially on social and religious subjects. His whole being is organized on that economic plan which infuses himself into others, and stimulates the best impulses of all around him to emulate his examples and walk in his footsteps. In latter years, no man amongst American Baptists has done more to enlist its energies in our higher educational aims or has sacrificed so much to put them on a firm basis. God has blessed him with a mind and heart of the largest order, with a strong physical frame full of endurance, and with a vital ambition to bless men; nor has he spared himself at any point to secure this end. As the first President of Rochester University, his career has been wonderfully successful. He went to it in its weakness, and now its grounds and buildings are valued at \$379,189, and its endowment amounts to \$442,757, with a promising future; for he has enstamped its character with high attributes, and interwoven his influence with its coming history as effectively as with that which is past. His weight and worth, as a public benefactor who dares to bless others at great cost to himself, will stimulate coming generations through those who have sat at his feet as well as through his invigorating literary productions.

JOHN A. BROADUS, D.D. Born in Culpeper County, Va., January 24th, 1827. He is an alumnus of the University of Virginia, having taken his Master's Degree in 1850. He served as tutor of Latin and Greek in that institution in 1851-52, after which he passed eight years as pastor of the Baptist Church at Charlottesville. In 1854 he was elected professor of Homiletics and New Testament interpretation in the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, then located at Greenville, S. C., which high position he still fills in the same school; now located at Louisville, Ky. Dr. Broadus is quite as much wedded to the pulpit as to the class-room. While at Greenville he preached to several small Churches in that vicinity, as their pastor. He is a thorough scholar, a delightful preacher and a finished writer. So deliberate are his methods of work, whether in the study, the seminary, or the pulpit, that all forms of labor appear easy to him. Yet his nature is intense, his convictions lay hold of all his powers, and his entire being is thrown into whatever he does. His quiet manner carries the impression to cultured minds that it springs from the behest of high

Chapter 15 - Preachers – Educators – Authors

intellect, answering the command of a mellow spirituality, and so it gives double force to his teaching and preaching. The severe drill of his life speaks without the least pretension. His works on preaching are plain, clear and profound, laying bare that art of splendid pulpit work of which he is so fine an example himself. His 'Treatise on Homiletics,' now a text-book on both sides of the Atlantic, stands side by side with his 'Lectures on the History of Preaching,' and makes him a teacher of teachers. To his other attainments he has added the benefits of travel in Europe and Asia, and his letters demonstrate his keen sense of discrimination. In private life he is winsome and unostentatious to a proverb, full of unaffected kindness and playful amiability. Children and sages equally love to gather around him, that they may listen to his humor and pathos; and the more eager are they, because he never indulges these at the sacrifice of common sense or the solid simplicities of truth. Publicly and privately, out of the abundance of a true heart, he speaks in the freedom of truth unmixed with guile, or with the least tendency to that petty detraction which fatally blights many otherwise noble spirits in the Gospel ministry.

This chapter may be appropriately closed by a sketch of WILLIAM CATHCART, D.D. He has made the denomination his debtor by his patient investigations and literary contributions. His scholarly attainments and tireless industry have fitted him to do an order of literary work which no Baptist had done, in giving the world his 'Baptist Encyclopaedia.' Endowed with a thoroughly analytical mind, his studies have laid bare to him the radical extremes of Gospel interpretation used by the Roman Catholic and the Baptist. He has given the result in his 'Papal System' and 'Baptism of the Ages.' Having explored the philosophy of the Romish system fully in the one, he gives its direct opposite in the other. Dr. Cathcart was born in Londonderry, Ireland, November 8th, 1826, and was brought up a Presbyterian. Surrounded by the religious contests of his nation and times, Ireland forced its contrasts upon his attention from childhood. He was fitted for college by private classical tutors, but took his literary course in the University of Glasgow. On becoming a Christian, the difference between the Presbyterians and Baptists was forced on his attention when at the age of twenty, and his convictions led him to forsake the religion of his fathers. He was baptized on the confession of Christ, at Tubbermore, by Rev. R. H., son of Dr. Alexander Carson. His theological course was taken at Horton College, under the presidency of the late Dr. Ackworth. In 1850 he was ordained pastor of the Baptist Church at Barnsley, but was so uneasy under the English yoke of Church and State that in 1853 he left a prosperous pastorate to settle in America. The first pastoral charge which he took here was at Mystic, Conn., where he remained till 1857, when he became pastor of the Second Baptist Church, Philadelphia.

He remained in this Church for eight-and-twenty years; doing such an excess of work that at last a constitution of uncommon strength began to break under the load, and he was obliged to retire to prevent utter prostration. Not only did his congregation in Philadelphia double in size, but it became necessary to build a large and beautiful sanctuary in a new location to accommodate the increase. His people loved him almost to idolization, and gave him up with the utmost reluctance. In 1872 he published his 'Papal System;' in 1876, His 'Baptists and the American Revolution;' a monograph, on that subject, without a rival; in 1878, his 'Baptism of the Ages,' and his 'Encyclopaedia' in 1881. Having known Dr. Cathcart in intimate friendship for a full generation, his habits of study, his unflinching perseverance, and his uncompromising integrity, the writer is free to express the belief that no truer man lives in our Baptist brotherhood. As an eloquent preacher, a true friend, an honest man and a careful scholar, those who know him best regret the most his retirement in the prime of

The American Baptists

his manhood, as a serious loss in our effective ranks, he is but another example amongst us of the common sacrifice which our ministry makes to the strain of overwork.

It is a re-assuring consideration that these Christian leaders, in company with the great body of Baptist ministers in America, hold fast to the old Gospel faith. The Philadelphia Association was troubled at its New York session, held there October 5th and 7th, 1790, by a question from the Church at Stamford, asking whether or not it should fellowship those who held the 'new system of divinity.' The Association answered in the negative, denouncing 'these fine-spun theories' in detail. Then the body passed this minute: 'This Association lament they have occasion again to call the attention of that part of Zion we represent to another awful instance of departure from the faith once delivered unto the saints; Mr. Nicholas Cox, late a brother in the ministry, having espoused, and artfully as well as strenuously endeavored to propagate, the fatal notion of the universal restoration of bad men and devils from hell. As such, we caution our Churches, those of our sister Associations and Christian brethren of every denomination, to be aware of him.' Happily our ministry is too seriously engaged in saving men from 'the wrath to come' to give much attention at present to the restoration of lost men and demons from perdition. When they get to heaven they may find time to speculate as to what can be done for those 'in prison,' if God shall call them there to that order of thought. But while they are filling their present pastorates amongst the lost sons of Adam's race, their chief duty to their Master and to 'bad men' is to cry 'Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world!' As ministers of Christ, sent to save wicked men, 'pulling them out of the fire,' as Jude expresses himself, it is quite as absurd to spend their strength in this controversy as it would be for twin chicks in one shell to fight over the question whether the outside world is all yolk or all white. It is simply shameful that a man intrusted with the care of immortal souls should be obliged to say to his Master, of one of them, 'As thy servant was busy here and there, arguing that if he should be consigned to perdition he will finally be rescued, lo! he was gone I.'

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

Perhaps sufficient has been said already about the early efforts of the Baptists to provide facilities for general and theological education, but there is a disposition to linger and contemplate the great contrast presented between the firmly laid foundations and the present state of the structure. As early as 1813 a charter was obtained for the Maine Literary and Theological Institution, and in 1818 a school was opened at Waterville, under the charge of Jeremiah Chaplin, D.D., who for several years had been giving theological instruction to a few young men who had removed with him to Waterville from his pastorate at Danvers, Mass. In 1820 this school was incorporated as a college, with both a collegiate and a theological department, but when Newton Institution was opened, instruction in divinity was discontinued and the institution grew into what is now Colby University. The spread of Baptist principles in this country is nowhere more strongly seen than by our present educational statistics. The State of New York is a fair example. In 1817 there were only three educated Baptist ministers in that State, west of the Hudson. Thirteen men met at the house of Deacon Jonathan Olmstead, in Hamilton, September 24th, 1817, and contributed \$13 to the cause of theological education in founding what has now become Madison University, and the first class which graduated from the infant institution numbered but six members. Today, 1886, the property and endowments of the Baptist institutions of learning in New York are estimated at \$2,133,000. The Hamilton Literary and Theological Institution was opened on May 1st, 1820. Its first Professor was Rev. Daniel Hascall, and in the following fall, Elder Nathanael Kendrick, of Eaton, was employed to visit the school and lecture on moral philosophy and theology three times a week. The first regular class in Divinity was organized under In's instruction, in June, 1822. Two members of this class were Jonathan Wade and Eugenio Kincaid, both of whom went on missions to Burma.

Gradually, the length of the course of study was extended and its variety enlarged, until in 1839 the restriction to candidates for the ministry was widened, granting the privileges of the institution to 'students of good moral character not having the ministry in view.' This enlargement, however, was accompanied by the provisions that: 'No change should be made in the course of instruction to favor such students, that they should in no case exceed the number of those preparing for the ministry, and that in no other way should the privileges of the latter be abridged by reason of this arrangement.' The institution was supported by contributions from the Churches and by the help of the Education Society. By degrees which it is not necessary to trace here, it became the Madison University of today, having had a rare succession of Professors and graduates. Dr. Kendrick, who had been its head till 1836, was at that time formally elected its President, in which capacity he continued until 1848. Stephen W. Taylor, LL.D., became its second President in 1851, but died in 1856. Dr. Taylor was a layman of very high character. He graduated at Hamilton College, Clinton Co., N. Y., and had devoted his life to teaching. For two years he acted as principal of the academy connected with the University, but left in 1836, after which he founded the Lewisburg University, in Pennsylvania, and returned as President of Madison. Rev. George W. Eaton, D.D., LL.D., was the third President of this renowned institution. He was a graduate of Union College and had devoted his life to teaching, his first professorship being that of Ancient Languages, at Georgetown, Ky. He became Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy, at Hamilton, in 1833, was elected to the chair of Ecclesiastical and Civil History, in 1837; in 1850 he became Professor of Systematic Theology and President of Madison University, in 1856 Professor of Intellectual and Moral Philosophy, and in 1861 he was chosen President of Hamilton Seminary and Professor of

The American Baptists

Homiletics. He died August 3d, 1872, at the age of 68 years, having been connected with the Institution in one capacity or another for forty years, in prosperity and adversity, until its interests and history became a part of himself and the chief end of his existence. Dr. Eaton would have been a man of mark in any sphere of life. In body, intellect and soul, he possessed a uniform greatness, which, without exaggeration, entitle him to the appellation of a threefold giant. He knew nothing of cowardice, moral or otherwise, but met every issue which arose in the affairs of the denomination and the times, on the high and broad plane of Christian manliness. His first and last question on all subjects was, 'Is this right?' When that question was determined in his own mind his position was taken, whether he stood alone or with the multitude. His memory was what he would have called 'prodigious,' his eloquence massive, his hospitality warm, and his convictions of duty as deep as his nature. Withal, his sympathy with the weak, the wronged and the suffering, was extraordinary. He was as artless as a child, and his unsuspecting nature was often imposed upon, while he gave his strong arm to help every one. He was too impulsive for a thorough disciplinarian and too pure for any one to despise.

EBENEZER DODGE, D.D., LL.D., the fourth President of Madison University, is a native of Massachusetts, born at Salem, April 21, 1819. He is an alumnus of Brown University and studied theology at Newton. He served as pastor of the Baptist Church in New London, N. H., for seven years, with marked power, but was called from his pastorate to the chair of Christian Theology in 1853. In 1868 he was elected President of Madison University and in 1871 President of Hamilton Theological Seminary. He is a ripe scholar and a profound theologian. Under his administration the career of the University has been one unbroken progress; for it has enjoyed the greatest prosperity in its history in all its departments, so that it never occupied the commanding position which it does at this time. Dr. Dodge has contributed to the standards of Theology in his work on the 'Evidences of Christianity;' and his 'Theological Lectures,' now confined to the use of his students, exhibit the hand of a master in deep thought and ripe scholarship. He has many valuable manuscripts ready for the press, which, it is believed, will stand side by side with his present publications, and, as they are the results of his life-long experience, may even excel them in their advanced value.

The Newton Theological Institution has a most interesting history. At a large meeting of ministers and laymen held in Boston, May 25th, 1825, it was resolved that a Baptist Theological Institution in the vicinity of Boston was a necessity, and the Massachusetts Baptist Educational Society was requested to take steps in that direction. Its executive committee fixed upon Newton Center for a location, and selected Rev. Ira Chase to begin instruction. The foundations of the school were laid with great difficulty and in much faith and prayer. Students increased faster than the necessary provisions for their reception, and heavy debts were incurred. It was many years before its permanent endowment was secured with corresponding success. All connected with the undertaking made great sacrifices, and Dr. Chase gave twenty years of his valuable life to the enterprise with an unselfishness that has laid the Baptists of New England under a debt which they will never be able to discharge. The course of instruction was to cover three years, and to be specially adapted to college graduates familiar with the Latin and the Greek. Dr. Chase commenced his work in the autumn of 1825, and in the next year Prof. Henry J. Ripley was added. Prof. James D. Knowles came to their aid in 1834, Rev. Barnas Sears in 1836, and in 1838, upon the death of Prof. Knowles, Prof. Hackett left his chair in Brown University to take his place in the corps of tutors. Not far from 800 students have gone forth from its hallowed bosom to fill places of high trust,

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

and under its present faculty it is doing, if possible, better work than ever and promises a splendid future.

ALVAH HOVEY, D.D., LL.D., its President, is a native of Greene, Chenango Co., N. Y., and was born March 5th, 1820. He graduated from Dartmouth College in 1844, and spent three years at Newton as a theological student. After preaching for a year, in 1849 he first became a tutor in Hebrew, at Newton; and then in succession, Professor of Church History, Theology, and Christian Ethics, and President; so, that, for thirty-seven years he has consecrated all his energies to the training of young ministers in this renowned seminary. This long experience, governed by a sacred regard for divine truth and by a remarkably sound judgment in expounding its principles, has made his tuition far-reaching, and given to our Churches a fullness of doctrine and devotion which has been strong and abiding. Dr. Hovey is distinguished for his clear perception of Gospel doctrines, to which he cleaves simply because they are divinely true. First of all he is just, which renders his aims high and unselfish, besides making his counsels sensible and sound. His pen has been ever busy; he is the author of about a dozen volumes, amongst which are his 'Person and Work of Christ,' the 'Miracles,' his 'Higher Christian Life,' and his 'Memoirs of Dr. Backus,' all valuable productions. This veteran educator is beloved and trusted by the Churches everywhere, as far as he is known, and his present vigor promises to bless them for many years to come.

The third Theological Seminary founded by the American Baptists was that at Rochester, N. Y. About 1847 many friends of Madison University thought its usefulness would be greatly increased, by its removal from the village of Hamilton to a more populous center. After considerable controversy, and some litigation, the question of its removal was abandoned. The University of Rochester was founded in 1850, and in the following November a Theological Seminary was organized, distinct, however, in its property and government. From the first, its list of instructors has comprised the names of very eminent scholars. Its first two professors were Thomas J. Conant, D.D., and John S. Maginnis, D.D.; Ezekiel G. Robinson, D.D., LL.D., became its President in 1868, after most valuable service as professor from 1853. In 1872 he was elected President of Brown University, when Rev. Augustus H. Strong, D.D., was chosen to fill his position both as President and Professor of Biblical Theology at Rochester. This school has been liberally endowed and has given to the Churches a succession of pastors of the highest stamp for excellency in every respect. Its German Department was early enriched by the library of Neander, and its buildings have been provided by the munificence of J. B. Trevor, Esq., of New York, and John D. Rockefeller, Esq., of Cleveland. Hon. R. S. Burrows, of Albion; John M. Bruce, J. A. Bostwick and William Rockefeller, Esqs., of New York, have given large sums to replenish its library, and a host of other friends have carried its interests to a high state of prosperity by their Christian benefactions.

DR. STRONG, its President, was born at Rochester, August 3d, 1836, and graduated from Yale College in 1857. While a student at Yale he was brought to Christ, and united with the First Baptist Church in Rochester; but after his graduation he first entered the Theological Seminary in that city, and then completed his studies in the German universities. On his return from Europe, in 1861, he was ordained pastor of the Baptist Church at Haverhill, Mass., which he left in 1865 to become pastor of the First Church, Cleveland, OH., from whence he went to take his present place, after seven years of successful pastoral toil. Although Dr. Strong is the youngest of our theological presidents, the classes which come from under his hand evince his care in training and his wisdom in impressing them with that robust impress of Biblical theology which betokens their reverence for

The American Baptists

the heavenly vision. Endowed himself with insight into spiritual things, with keen faith and high sanctity, they catch his spirit, and their ministry evidences their love for that Lord whose they are and whom they serve. He is the author of numerous notable articles on theological subjects, but his most elaborate and weighty book is his 'Systematic Theology' recently published. It is a work of great research, indicating the strength and solidity, as well as the logical and analytical power, of the author's mind.

Having already spoken of the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, it is not necessary to treat of its interests here, further than to speak of its President, who is in all respects the peer of his presidential brethren.

JAMES P. BOYCE, D.D., LL.D., was born in Charleston, S. C. January 11th, 1827. In 1847 he graduated from Brown University, and, having been converted while in college, he was baptized in 1848 by the Rev. Dr. Richard Fuller. From 1848 to 1851 he studied theology at Princeton, N. J. He threw all his energies into his theological studies, and when he was examined for ordination to the ministry, Dr. Curtis, moderator of the examining council, asked him whether he intended to give his life to the preaching of the Gospel. He replied: 'Provided I don't become a professor of theology.' In 1851 he became pastor of the Church at Columbia, S. C., but took the chair of theology in Furman University in 1855. He accepted a professorship in the Theological Seminary at Greenville, S. C., however, in 1858. The seminary being located but temporarily there, in 1873 it was resolved to remove it to Louisville, its friends in Kentucky having offered \$300,000 for its permanent establishment there, provided that \$200,000 could be added from other sources. When financial embarrassment threatened the ruin of this great scheme, Dr. Boyce, who at that time was wealthy, borrowed large sums of money on his own responsibility, and threw his surprising financial talents into the enterprise. For about seven years it seemed as if the godly project must fail, and gloom, almost despair, settled upon the hopes of its friends. But Dr. Boyce by his patience and business skill re-inspired the energies of his brethren, and more than any other person led the movement to complete success. He is a refined and dignified gentleman, whose modest polish of manner, generous culture and varied accomplishments clothe him with a delightful influence in all spheres in which he moves, so that he is pre-eminently fitted to mold his pupils in the proprieties demanded by their calling. Clearly, it must be the fault of the pupil if he goes forth to his work without that refinement of manner, together with that mental and heart culture, which are demanded in the acceptable minister of our Lord Jesus.

The Baptist Union Theological Seminary at Morgan Park, Illinois, was organized in 1867. Up to about the year 1860 the West had been wholly dependent upon the East for theological education; but in 1859 a convention of delegates representing the West and Northwest gathered in Chicago to consult respecting the establishment of a new seminary in that part of our country. The difference of opinion as to location was so striking that general agreement was not then reached. At length a preliminary organization was effected, in 1860, under the lead of W. W. Everts, D.D., J. B. Oleott, and J. A. Smith, and in 1863 a corporation was formed and officers chosen; Hon. R. S. Thomas being President, Luther Stone, Secretary, and Edward Goodman, Treasurer. In 1865 the Legislature of Illinois granted it a charter. A temporary arrangement was made with Dr. Nathanael Culver to commence theological tuition, but a regular faculty was selected in 1866, and in the autumn of that year the work of instruction began in earnest. Since that time reliable endowments have been received, the faculty has been very effective, the seminary has been removed to Morgan Park, and

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

is in a high state of prosperity. It has already graduated about 500 students. Its beautiful property at Morgan Park, and an endowment of \$200,000, with a library of 25,000 volumes, promise much, with its able body of tutors, for the culture of the rising ministry in the West.

GEORGE W. NORTHRUP, D.D., LL.D., its President, was born in Jefferson County, K. Y., October 15th, 1826, and when but sixteen years of age became a member of the Baptist Church at Antwerp. His early educational advantages were slight, but from childhood he possessed that quenchless thirst for knowledge and culture that refuses to submit to any obstructions which assume to be insurmountable. He plodded on in the study of Latin, Greek and mathematics with such private aids only as he could command, until he was able to enter Williams College. In 1854 he graduated from that institution with the highest honors, and in 1857 finished a theological course at the Rochester Seminary. There, also, he served with distinguished ability as Professor of Church History for ten years. He accepted the chair of theology and the presidency in the seminary, which he has done so much to establish, in 1867, and in contending with the difficulties incident to the founding of a new institution he has displayed the qualities of a forceful leader and organizer. His wise methods and strength of will have braved all storms, and commanded that signal success which has given the West as strong and well-conducted a theological seminary as any in the East, in view of its youth. As a metaphysician, pulpit orator and theologian, Dr. Northrup is an honor to his denomination.

The youngest of the six theological schools is the Crozer Theological Seminary, located at Chester, in Pennsylvania, and organized in 1868. The late John P. Crozer, Esq., was deeply interested in ministerial education, and had largely aided therein through the Lewisburg University. After his death his family took up the work where he left it, to give it an enlarged and more permanent form. Led by his eldest son, Mr. Samuel A. Crozer, his other sons and daughters established this seminary as a devout monument to his name, and all generations will therefor call them blessed. The buildings and grounds are spacious, valued at \$150,000; the endowment amounts to about \$350,000, and the library and apparatus are ample for present use, although the library building is planned to contain about 50,000 volumes. William Bucknell, son-in-law to Mr. John P. Crozer, made a donation of about \$30,000 for the purchase of books, and a further sum of \$10,000 was presented from another source for the same purpose. Its average number of pupils is about fifty per year, its faculty is one of the best in the denomination, and it has sent about 300 men into the Christian ministry; many of whom are now filling places of great influence and responsibility.

HENRY G. WESTON, D.D., has been president of this institution from its foundation, and has contributed greatly to its up-building. He is a native of Lynn, Mass., and was born September 11th, 1820. He graduated at Brown University and Newton Theological Institution, and after sustaining himself for three years as a missionary in Illinois, became pastor of the Baptist Church in Peoria in 1846, where he was prospered for thirteen years. In 1859 he removed to New York city, to take charge of the Oliver Street Baptist Church, in which congregation he remained, first in Oliver Street, and then in Madison Avenue when it removed, until the year 1868, when he took the presidency of Crozer Seminary. His double aim was to give a complete theological training to the alumni of our colleges, who could study the Scriptures in the Greek and pursue the Hebrew; and also to take men who were somewhat advanced in life, but could not command a classical course; to aid them in the knowledge of the Scriptures and in theological studies, that they might be measurably qualified, at least, for their pastoral work. A peculiar order of ability was needed in the president who than well

The American Baptists

lay the foundations of such a school, not only must he be a true scholar, and a clear, sound and experienced theologian, broad in his views, simple in his habits, kind in his disposition, and devout in his piety; but quite as much he needed unflinching courage in his convictions. In a word, all the ripe qualities of manly experience were needed, with the forbearance and tenderness of a woman. Even then, the tact of a general was required, who knew the wants of the place and had the genius to meet them. Many men were scanned as to this fitness, but, with singular unanimity, Dr. Weston was hailed as the one man for the post. A ripe scholar and a pulpit master, it was believed that he could equally develop the immature and perfect the accomplished. The result has so far exceeded sanguine expectation, that all true Baptist hearts thank him for his work and praise his Master for the gift of the workman. For nearly a score of years he has been filling the pulpits of our land with men who are blessing it everywhere. The Baptist denomination, having possessed such a succession of men in the presidency of its seminaries, should be grateful indeed, for not one of them, from the establishment of the first school, has ever brought a stain upon its fair fame. And not only in view of the past, but in the necessities of the present, it is to be congratulated; happy are the Baptists of the United States in the possession of six such presidents of their theological schools.

American Baptists have lately paid much attention to female education, and have twenty-seven institutions devoted to this object. A Ladies' Institute was founded at Granville, Oh., in 1832, which was followed by the Judson Female Institute, at Marion, Ala., in 1839; by Baylor Female College, at Independence, Tex., in 1845; and by the Female Seminary at Georgetown, Ky., in 1846. Mary Sharp College was established, on a somewhat larger scale, at Winchester, Term., in 1851. But the largest and most thoroughly endowed Baptist institution for females is Vassar College, at Poughkeepsie, N. Y. It was founded by Matthew Vassar, in 1865, at a cost of \$700,000. He excluded sectarian teaching, but put it under Baptist control, forbidding that its training should ever be 'intrusted to the skeptical, the irreligious or the immoral.' Its endowment is \$430,000, and it exerts a great influence on the higher education of women. Its presidents have been John H. Raymond, LL.D.; S. L. Caldwell, D.D.; J. R. Kendrick, D.D.; and its present head, James M. Taylor, D.D., son of the late Dr. E. E. I. Taylor.

The growth of a distinctively DENOMINATIONAL LITERATURE in America has been closely kindred to the growth of the denomination and of its schools for education. From the antecedents of Baptist European life, under all its persecutions and disabilities, it was scarcely to be expected that Baptists would take any very prominent part in literature here. Still, it is one of the marvels of English literary history that the two men of the seventeenth century whom Macaulay pronounces 'creative minds' were decided Baptists in their religious convictions. He writes: 'We are not afraid to say that though there were many clever men in England during the latter part of the seventeenth century, there were only two great creative minds. One of these produced "Paradise Lost," and the other "Pilgrim's Progress."' Milton spent his strength in his two most extensive prose works in proving that those principles which distinguish the Baptists are drawn from the Scriptures; while Bunyan was a Baptist preacher, imprisoned for preaching at Baptist conventicles. As might have been expected, the writings of Baptists, both in the Old and New World, took a decidedly controversial tone. Roger Williams possessed high literary art, viewed in the ponderous style of his day, and advocated principles which are now universally conceded in the United States. His success in obtaining the charter, and the friendly admonition from England to the authorities of Massachusetts that they should be less severe with him, are justly attributed to the favorable

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

impressions as to his purposes and spirit created in England by his writings, especially those in regard to the Indians. The occasion for the composition of the important works by which he is best known was furnished by the principle which he maintained against Mr. Cotton. Five volumes, of which the 'Bloody Tenet' is the most noted, were published in London between the years 1644 and 1652; after the death of Cotton, Williams ceased to write upon these subjects. But the battle which he fought has long since been decided. Despite the grudging reluctance of those who hate his memory for his religious principles, and the tardy acknowledgment of his great power by those who hold those principles themselves yet accuse him of inconsistency in their maintenance, the fact is clear that the tenets for which he contended so manfully against Cotton have incorporated themselves into all American institutions. Clarke, the founder of Newport, published a small volume on the persecutions in New England, but, so far as is known, the first Baptist theological work printed in America was a Catechism by John Watts, of Pennepec Church, in 1700. The next bears the following title, with an address to the reader, dated 'Providence, the 17th of February, 1718-19'

'REPLY to the Most Principal Arguments contained in a Book, Entitled "The Baptism of the Holy Spirit without Elementary Water, Demonstratively proved to be the true Baptism of Christ." Signed, William Wilkinson. In which REPLY his arguments are fairly Refuted; and both WATER BAPTISM and the LORD'S SUPPER plainly proved to be the commands of JESUS CHRIST, and to continue in force until His Second Personal Coming. By Joseph Jenks. Printed in the year 1719.' Valentine Wightman published a volume on Baptism in 1728, which was the outcome of a debate on that subject. In 1730, a 'Concordance to the Bible' in the Welsh language was published by Rev. Abel Morgan, which was largely used in the vicinity of Philadelphia. The historical discourse of John Callender, pastor of the Church at Newport, delivered in 1738, a hundred years after the founding of that city, has become a classic authority upon Providence and Rhode Island matters. Probably the first sermon published by a Southern Baptist was Isaac Chanler's, with the title: 'The Doctrines of Glorious Grace enforced, defended, and practically improved.' Boston, 1744. Having already spoken of the writings of Abel Morgan and Samuel Stillman, it is not necessary to mention them here. The history of 'New England Baptists,' by Dr. Backus, has become a standard, and is thoroughly reliable in its general treatment of facts. Its author himself had been actively engaged in the advancement of religious liberty, and especially in awakening a public sentiment to be expressed in legislation against the privileges and immunities accorded to the State Church. Since its first publication it has passed through a number of revisions and in its present form it is indispensable to a full and true history of New England. The works of Backus and Morgan Edwards were used largely by David Benedict, who published the first edition of his 'History of the Baptists' in 1812, a work which he enlarged in 1848 to embrace a sketch of the Baptists not only in every State of the Union but in all parts of the world. This book has passed through many editions, and remains a noble monument to the untiring toil and patience of its author.

During the first half of our national existence the books written by Baptists were, for the most part, intended to instruct Church members in the doctrines and duties of Christianity. The authors and titles of a few of them may be mentioned. Dr. Samuel Jones wrote a 'Treatise of Discipline;' Dr. William Rogers published a work on 'Justification;' Dr. Jeece Mercer, on 'Various Christian Duties,' and on the 'Unity and Interdependence of the Churches.' President Maxcy wrote largely on the Atonement, one production in which the 'governmental' theory of the Atonement is treated of. Dr. Baldwin's discourse on the 'Deity of Christ,' published in 1812, during the Unitarian Controversy, passed through many editions, as did, also, Dr. Judson's Sermon preached in Calcutta, in 1812, and republished in America in 1817, in which he defended his course in becoming a Baptist. Numerous tracts, sermons and pamphlets, have been published on Baptism and Communion, and, perhaps,

The American Baptists

none of them have been more widely circulated or useful than these of the late Rev. Stephen Remington. We greatly need a work on Baptist Bibliography, and another on Baptist hymnology.

So far as is now known, the first Baptist periodical published in America was the 'Analytical Repository,' in Savannah, Ga., by Rev. Henry Holcombe, their pastor of the Church there. Its first issue was for the months of May and June, 1802, and its publication is said to have continued for two years, though the second volume is not known to be extant. The first volume consists of six numbers, the sixth being for March and April, 1803. It was a 12mo, each number containing 48 pages. Its historic value lies chiefly in its account of the general proceedings which led to the organization of the Georgia Baptist State Convention; in its detail of the first efforts toward mitigating the hardship of the Penal Code, petty larceny being at that time a capital crime; in an account of the Savannah Female Orphan Asylum, which was established by Dr. Holcombe, and still exists; in a narrative concerning the founding of the Baptist Church in Savannah, and in a sketch of the colored Baptists in that city, also of several Churches in its vicinity. On the 20th of May, 1802, John Rice was executed in Savannah for stealing a gun, and on the day of his execution Dr. Holcombe took his children to his own house to cherish and comfort them; he then prepared a memorial to the Legislature of Georgia, and procured a milder and more enlightened system of punishment.

Nothing is more honorable to Dr. Henry Holcombe Tucker, the grandson of Dr. Holcombe, and to the Georgia Baptists, than their protest against all legal disregard of marital relations amongst slaves. At the meeting of the Georgia Association, held at Pine Grove, October 8th, 1864, Dr. Tucker offered the following resolution, which was unanimously adopted first by that body and afterward by various Associations in the State:

'Resolved, That it is the firm belief and conviction of this body that the institution of marriage was ordained by Almighty God for the benefit of the whole human race, without regard to color; that it ought to be maintained in its original purity among all classes of people, in all countries and in all ages, till the end of time; and that, consequently, the law of Georgia, in its failure to recognize and protect this relationship between our slaves, is essentially defective and ought to be amended.'

The interest awakened in foreign missions in 1814 naturally found expression in the establishment of a periodical to maintain and foster their interests by spreading information and appeals. The first missionary periodical published by the American Baptists was known as the 'Massachusetts Baptist Missionary Magazine,' issued by the Massachusetts Missionary Society in September, 1803, a year after the organization of the society. It was edited by Dr. Baldwin, first as a semi-annual of thirty-two pages, filled with letters and reports from missionaries. In 1817 its numbers were issued once in two months, and in 1825 it was changed to a monthly, and has since been conducted in the interests of Foreign Missions. 'The Macedonian' was started in 1842 for the diffusion of Foreign Mission news. In 1849 the 'Home Mission Record' was started to promote Home Missions, items relating to the subject having before appeared in various religious papers. Its name was changed to the 'Home Evangelist' in 1863. and in 1867, by arrangement with the Missionary Union, it appeared under the title, 'The Macedonian and Record,' the first leaf containing home and the second foreign missionary intelligence; but, in 1878, the 'Baptist Home Mission Monthly' was commenced, a quarto of sixteen pages which has since been enlarged to twenty-four, and it now reports the work of the Woman's Home Mission Societies. The following newspapers

are mentioned after the dates of their establishment:

The oldest Baptist weekly in America is 'The Watchman,' of Boston, established in 1819, with the title, the 'Christian Watchman,' and edited by Deacon James Loring. The question of slavery becoming a subject of warm discussion, the 'Christian Reflector' was begun at Worcester, Mass., edited by Rev. Cyrus P. Grosvenor. This paper was removed to Boston in 1844, under the editorship of Rev. H. A. Graves, where it obtained a large circulation; but, Mr. Graves's health failing, Rev. J. W. Olmstead became its editor, March, 1846, and in 1848 the two papers were united, under the name, 'The Watchman and Reflector,' Dr. Olmstead remaining as editor. The 'Christian Era' was commenced in Lowell in 1852, but was removed to Boston after several years, and conducted by Dr. Amos Webster, and was merged into 'The Watchman and Reflector' in 1875. when the name of the united papers became 'The Watchman.' Dr. Olmstead resided in New York for a short time, but returned as editor-in-chief of 'The Watchman' in 1882, and now ranks as the senior Baptist editor in the country, having conducted this paper, with a brief interval, for more than forty years. The influence of this journal is very healthful and deservedly wide-spread in New England.

The Connecticut Baptist Missionary Society started the 'Christian Secretary' in 1822, with Elisha Cushman as editor. A succession of editors conducted it until 1858, when Elisha Cushman, Jr., assumed charge, continuing it till his death in 1876. Then S. D. Phelps, D.D., who had filled the pastorate of the First Baptist Church at New Haven, under the shadow of Yale College, for thirty years, became its editor, and bus done a most forceful work in making it an indispensable exponent of the principles and progress of the Connecticut Baptists. The 'Christian Index,' now published at Atlanta, Ga., had its origin in the 'Columbian Star,' a weekly folio sheet, originated at Washington, D. C., about the year 1822, by Luther Rice, assisted by Dr. Staughton and O. B. Brown; it was devoted principally to the advocacy of foreign missions and education through the Columbian College. It appears to have been first edited by John S. Meehan, assisted by the gentlemen already named, Mr. Brown editing in the same office a monthly called the 'Latter-Day Luminary.' Afterwards, the celebrated Professor J. D. Knowles, then a student in Washington, became its editor, and was succeeded by Baron Stow, then a student also. About the years 1826-28 it was removed to Philadelphia, put under the management of Dr. W. T. Brantly, and issued as a quarto, under the name of 'The Columbian Star and Christian Index.' Late in 1832 or early in 1833 it became the property of Jesse Mercer, who removed it to Georgia and edited it till 1840, when he presented it to the Baptist Convention of that State. William Stokes, who had assisted him, became editor-in-chief and remained in the chair till 1843, when he was followed by Dr. J. S. Baker till 1849. He had several successors, and Rev. Joseph Walker took charge in 1857. Under his careful toil it rose from about 1,000 paying subscribers to nearly 6,000, and yielded \$1,000 annually above its expenses. In 1801 it was sold to Rev. S. Boykin, and Dr. Shaver conducted it from 1867 to 1874. Then Rev. Dr. E. Butler became its editor, serving until 1878, when Dr. Tucker; its present learned chief, took the editorial chair. As a Baptist organ, it has always been unflinching in its maintenance of Baptist doctrine and practice. It retains the flavor imparted to it by Knowles, Brantly and Mercer, and is conducted with as much ability as it has commanded at any time in its hoary history of four-and-sixty years.

The 'Religious Herald,' of Richmond, Va., was established by William Sands, a layman and an expert printer, in 1828. Like most other things that become of any account, it began its life in the day of small things. Mr. Sands lived in Baltimore, and, on the suggestion of William Crane, went

The American Baptists

to Richmond to establish a Baptist paper, aided by money furnished by Mr. Crane. For several years Mr. Sands was printer and financial manager, with Rev. Henry Keeling for editor, but the struggle to establish the Journal was severe. Dr. Shaver put his strong hand to the enterprise in 1857, and the paper soon took that high position amongst religious periodicals which it has sustained ever since. William Sands died in 1868, lamented as a most devout Christian, possessed of the soundest judgment, and beloved by all who knew him for his amiable disposition. The establishment of Sands and Shaver was consumed by fire in 1865, and they sold the 'good will' of the paper to Messrs. Jeter and Dickinson. Dr. Jeter devoted fourteen of the ripest years of his life to its up-building, and not in vain. He has left a hallowed influence about its very name, and, under its present energetic management, its weekly blessings help to make bright homes for thousands of Christian families, North and South.

'Zion's Advocate,' published at Portland, Me., was begun in 1828 with Rev. Adam Wilson as editor, who held this relation to it until 1848, with a short interval. Afterwards it was edited by various men of large capacity, amongst whom were Dr. W. H. Shailer. In 1873 the paper was purchased by Rev. Henry S. Burrage, its present editor, under whose direction its reputation and influence have been greatly enlarged. It has also been changed by him to its present enlarged size, and kept abreast of the demands of the times, not only in the advocacy of our denominational principles and practices, but in awakening new enthusiasm in the cause of education amongst our Churches in Maine. The sound judgment and careful scholarship with which it is conducted render it worthy of its high place in our periodical press.

The 'Journal And Messenger,' published at Cincinnati, Oh., originated in the 'Baptist Weekly Journal' of the Mississippi Valley, in 1831. In 1834 the 'Cross,' a Baptist paper of Kentucky, was united with it, and seven years later it was removed to Columbus, Oh., with Messrs. Cole, Randall and Batchelor as editors. The 'Christian Messenger' was united with it in 1850, under the name of the 'Journal and Messenger.' It then changed owners and editors several times, until it was purchased, in 1876, by G. W. Lasher, D.D., by whom it has been edited since in a vigorous manner; its circulation has become large, and it well cultivates its important field.

'The Western Recorder.' Various attempts were made to establish a Baptist paper in Kentucky, but failed until the 'Baptist Banner' originated at Shelbyville in 1835. At that time it was a fortnightly; but in 1835 Rev. John N. Waller became its editor; when it was removed to Louisville and issued as a weekly. Soon it was united with the 'Baptist,' which was published at Nashville, Tenn., and with the 'Western Pioneer,' of Illinois, becoming the 'Baptist Banner and Western Pioneer.' In 1841 Mr. Waller ceased to be its editor, and was succeeded by Rev. W. C. Buck; but in 1850 Mr. Waller returned to the paper, aided by Rev. S. II. Ford, and in 1851 its name was changed to the 'Western Recorder.' Dr. Waller died in 1854, and Mr. Ford became its sole editor and proprietor; but, after a time, it passed into other hands until 1858. During a part of the civil war its issue was suspended, but it was resumed in 1863, when it was owned and edited by various persons till about 1872; then A. C. Caperton, D.D., became its solo owner and editor. It had never fully paid its way until that time, but he changed its form from a quarto to an octavo, and enlarged its size about one third, he also employed paid contributors and a field editor, and it steadily grew in power, popularity and financial value, until it is now regarded as one of the leading journals of the South.

'The Tennessee Baptist' was established under the name 'The Baptist,' at Nashville, Tenn., in the year 1835; two or three years after that it was consolidated with the 'Western Baptist and Pioneer,'

and was edited by the late Dr. Howell and others; but its circulation barely crept up to 1,000 copies until, in 1846, it fell into the hands of Dr. J. R. Graves, its present editor. It then assumed its present name, and, under his persevering and energetic management, its circulation increased rapidly and became very large. During the civil war its publication was suspended. At its close the paper was removed to Memphis, the word 'Tennessee' dropped from its name, and its circulation, as a quarto of sixteen pages, has again reached a high figure. Dr. Graves is endowed with marked qualifications for an editor. As a writer and speaker he is remarkably direct and copious, like all men in downright earnest, infusing his spirit and principles into the minds of his constant readers and hearers. Restless and aggressive, his pen is ever busy, not only as an editor, leaving his own stamp upon his paper, but as an author his works teem from the press perpetually in the form of books and pamphlets. His life has been devoted with quenchless zeal to the cause of higher education, and the literature of the Southern Baptist Sunday-School Union and Publication Society has been built up chiefly under his untiring labors. In the South and South-west the 'Baptist' is an indisputable power in the advocacy of the most pronounced Baptist principles and practices. After the war its publishing-house was burned, and its assets, to the amount of \$100,000, destroyed, yet, without a dollar to begin with, Dr. Graves re-established his paper at Memphis. He has been its vigorous editor in an unbroken connection for forty years, and stands at his post, at nearly three-score-and-ten, the unfaltering advocate of the old landmarks of Baptist life, decided and distinct in all its denominational trends and interests.

'The Examiner,' a New York Baptist weekly, has probably the largest circulation of any Baptist paper in the world, and has a most interesting history. The 'Baptist Advocate' was commenced in 1839, by the late William H. Wyckoff, LL.D., who remained its editor till 1845, when it changed ownership and name, being called the 'New York Recorder.' In 1850 Dr. M. B. Anderson became its owner and editor, and remained so till 1853. It was consolidated in 1855 with the 'Baptist Register,' a weekly then published at Utica, N. Y. As far back as 1808, Daniel Hascall, John Lawton and John Peck commenced the 'Western Baptist Magazine' in Central New York, as an organ of the Hamilton Missionary Society; this again was merged into the 'Baptist Register,' and, in 1855, Alexander M. Beebee, LL.D., a gentleman of genuine ability, high literary taste and the soundest of judgment, became its editor. Under his wisdom and management it soon attained a large circulation and influence, and he remained editor almost to the time of his death, in 1856. Only in the previous year the 'Register' had been combined with the 'Recorder,' with the further change of name to the 'Examiner,' under the editorship of Edward Bright, D.D., who had for some years been the Corresponding Secretary of the Missionary Union, and for a longer period one of the publishers of the 'Baptist Register.' In 1850 the 'New York Chronicle' was commenced by Messrs. O. B. Judd and Hon. William B. Maclay. It soon attained a wide influence. In 1857 it passed into the hands of Pharcellus Church, D.D., who continued its editor till 1865, when it was united with the 'Examiner' under the name of the 'Examiner and Chronicle'; but recently the older title has been resumed, and it is now known simply as 'The Examiner.' Dr. Bright has edited it for more than a generation with very marked ability and success, and has made it one of the most influential religious organs in our country.

'The Baptist Weekly,' published in New York, was formerly the organ of the Free Mission Society, which was organized in 1840. It was first known as the 'American Baptist,' and was edited by Rev. Warham Walker. The 'Christian Contributor' and the 'Western Christian' were merged into

The American Baptists

this paper, which was located at Utica until 1857, and after its removal to New York it was edited by the late Dr. Nathan Brown, missionary first to Assam and then to Japan. Dr. A. S. Patton became its owner and editor in 1872, and still manages all its interests. From that time until recently Dr. Middleditch acted as associate editor, but has now retired to found a new journal, a monthly, known as the 'Gospel Age.' The 'Weekly' has a large circulation, and is characterized for its kind spirit and firm maintenance of all that concerns the advancement of true Baptist interests in the world.

'The Michigan Christian Herald,' of Detroit, was established by the Baptist Convention of Michigan, in 1842. At first it was a monthly, then a semi-monthly, but in 1845 it became a weekly. Some years after, the Convention sold it to Rev. Marvin Ahen, when it was edited by Rev. Miles Sanford and others till 1861. Then it fell under the editorial direction of Dr. Olney, who more than maintained its high literary character; but seeing that it was published at a financial loss, it was sold to the proprietors of the 'Christian Times and Witness,' of Illinois, in 1867. The Michigan Baptists, however, so felt the need of a State paper that the present proprietor of the 'Christian Herald,' Rev. L. H. Trowbridge, began its publication in 1870, in the interests of educational work, chiefly through Kalamazoo College. So healthy was its influence that the State Convention adopted it as its official organ, and it has become indispensable to the support of denominational enterprise in the State. It is conducted with great care and ability, and circulates largely amongst the 30,000 Baptists of Michigan.

'The Standard,' of Chicago, Ill., dates from August 31, 1853. It was started as a new paper by a committee of the Fox River Baptist Association, of which Rev. J. C. Burroughs was chairman, under the name of 'The Christian Times,' and was the successor of the 'Watchman of the Prairies.' The following November, Rev. Leroy Church and Rev. Justin A. Smith assumed the control of the paper, and about three years later Edward Goodman, who had been connected with it from its inception, became one of the proprietors. In January, 1875, Dr. J. S. Dickerson purchased the interest of Rev. Leroy Church. When Dr. Dickerson died, in 1876, Mrs. Dickerson, with her son, J. Spencer Dickerson, continued His interest in the paper. The circulation of the 'Standard' is large and its character very high; the rank which it sustains being all the testimonial needed by its managers to their enterprise and the manly maintenance of their religious convictions.

'The National Baptist.' Toward the close of 1864 our Churches in Philadelphia and its vicinity felt the need of a well-sustained paper to sustain denominational interests, especially in Pennsylvania and New Jersey. The sum of \$17,000 was presented to the Baptist Publication Society for that purpose, and the first number was issued January 1st, 1865, under the editorial supervision of George W. Anderson, D.D. For three years Dr. Kendall Brooks acted as editor, but, becoming President of Kalamazoo College, Dr. Moss served as its editor until chosen professor in Crozer Theological Seminary. Dr. H. L. Wayland, the present editor, took charge of the paper in 1872, and in 1883 it became his property. Its editorial department has always been in able hands, and as a weekly paper it has become a power in the denomination, its present circulation being greatly in excess of that at any previous period in its history. Dr. Wayland leaves the marks of a clear and powerful mind upon its columns, and conducts it in that spirit of open fairness which challenges the admiration of his brethren, who uniformly rejoice in his editorial success.

The 'Christian Review,' a quarterly, was commenced in 1836, with Prof. Knowles as its first editor, but his sudden death in that year transferred his position to Dr. Barnas Sears, who brought it to the close of vol. vi. Dr. S. F. Smith then edited it to the close of vol. xiii, and Rev. E. G. Sears

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

edited vol. xiv. Drs. Cutting, Turnbull, Murdock, Woolsey, Franklin Wilson, G. B. Taylor and E. G. Robinson, carried it to the end of vol. xxviii, in 1863, at which time its publication terminated. In 1867 the Baptist Publication Society began the issue of the 'Baptist Quarterly,' with Dr. L. E. Smith as editor-in-chief, and Drs. Hovey, Robinson, Arnold and Gregory as associates. At the end of vol. ii, Dr. Weston took the editorial chair, and eight volumes were issued, when its publication was discontinued. Dr. Barnes, of Cincinnati, began the publication of the 'Baptist Review.' a quarterly, in 1878, but sold it in 1885, when its name was changed to the 'Baptist Quarterly,' and it is now under the editorial control of Dr. McArthur and Henry C. Vedder, Esq., New York. Many of the successive editors named performed their duties with remarkable ability, and won for the 'Review' a recognition in the religious literature of the land. The contributors, also, were amongst the best scholars and thinkers of America, but our Churches had not readied an appreciation of its learned discussions and withheld their support. The present editors of the 'Quarterly' have somewhat popularized the character of the articles, and it bids fair to maintain its existence. The number of educated and scholarly persons in our Churches is constantly increasing, and the best thought of the tiniest minds in them is likely to receive generous encouragement in such a desirable enterprise.

Besides the literary works which have been so abundantly mentioned in this work, in association with the many eminent Baptists treated of therein, it may be well to mention a few others which have done honor to their authors. Amongst an immense list we have Prof. Ripley on the Gospels, the Acts and the Epistle to the Hebrews; Dr. Malcom's 'Dictionary of Names, Objects and Terms found in the Holy Scriptures;' 'Christ in History;' by Dr. Turnbull; the 'Creative Week,' the 'Epiphanies of the Risen Lord,' and the 'Mountain Instruction,' by Dr. Boardman. On Baptism, we have the 'Act of Baptism,' by Dr. Burrage; 'The Mould of Doctrine;' by Dr. Jesse B. Thomas; 'Baptism in the Christian System,' by Dr. Tucker; and the great work of Dr. Conant, on Baptizein. On missions we have Dr. Gammell's 'History,' Dr. Edward Judson's life of his father, and the 'Story of Baptist Mission?,' by Rev. O. W. Hervey. The Baptist press abounds in biographies of the great and the good, and in general literature. Several volumes have come from the pen of Dr. Mathews; Abraham Mills has given us his great work on 'English Literature and Literary Men;' Mr. Hill and Mr. Bancroft have given us valuable works on rhetoric. Drs. Kendrick, J. L. Lincoln, Albert Harkness and J. E. Boise, have published editions of the Latin and Greek classics, which have been extensively used in schools and colleges. Dr. J. R. Loomis is the author of a series of Text books on Geology, Anatomy, and Physiology; and Dr. Edward Olney, of a complete series of mathematical text-books. In language, Dr. Hackett has translated Winer's 'Chaldee Grammar,' and Dr. Conant's edition of 'Gesenius's. Hebrew Grammar 'is the standard authority in the schools of America and Europe. This list might be doubled in length as an exhibition of literary activity of which we may be proud when we take into account that all these authors have been toilers either in the professor's chair or the pulpit, so that the ordinary duties of life were laborious if not exhausting; yet, out of their sound discipline, clear insight and good taste, they have been able to enrich almost every department of learning.

Besides this, an immense popular and cheap literature has been created on special denominational topics, in the shape of tracts, pamphlets and small books, by the American Baptist Publication Society. Twenty-five Baptists met in Washington, D. C., on the 20th of February, 1824, to consider the need of a tract society for the American Baptists. Rev. Noah Davis proposed that such a society should be formed, which idea was zealously favored by Messrs. Knowles, Staughton

The American Baptists

and Rice, and the body was organized at once. Its receipts for the first year were but \$373 80, with which it issued 696,000 pages of tracts. Two years later its headquarters were removed to Philadelphia, where it began to issue bound volumes. In 1840 it commenced to employ colporteurs to circulate its publications and to perform itinerant missionary work in destitute regions, and the name of the society was changed in 1845 to its present form. It undertook Sunday-school missionary work: in 1867, so that besides serving as a publishing house it preaches the Gospel from house to house by colporteurs, supplies families by gift or sale with Bibles and Baptist literature, and fosters the formation and aid of Sunday-schools. By a law of its own, a Sunday-school planted in a destitute region soon gives the nucleus of a Church, and a new literature adapted to youth, having this aim in view, has made its appearance. The 'Young Reaper,' commenced in 1856, reported a circulation for 1881-85 of 2,616,304 copies, and of the 'Bible Lesson Monthly,' in weekly parts, 5,448,000 copies. Within four years 900,000 copies of a popular Sunday-school song book were sold in the schools. A fair conception of the influence of the Society on the interest of Sunday-schools may be obtained, when it is stated, that in the current year for the Society's operations for 1884-85, 5,284,000 copies of Bible Lessons and 1,046,000 Advanced Quarterlies were sold, devoted to the exposition of the Bible Lesson for the Sabbath. These, besides an endless number of bound volumes, for library and gift-books in the schools, present some idea of this new literature created by the American Baptists within a score of years.

The many notable things which have been spoken of in the rapid growth of the Denomination might be supplemented by many others, but only two can be named: the endowment of our Churches with marvelous love for the salvation of men, and their zeal in promoting general revivals of religion; together with the new feeling of appreciation toward them by their brethren of other Christian denominations. In the South and Southwest there were many in the early part of this century who were too creed-bound, in all that related to the divine purposes and decrees, to labor for the outpouring of the Holy Spirit in the conversion of multitudes of sinners. Indeed, in North Carolina, some of the early Baptists were actually infected with the superstition of Baptismal Regeneration. When they were first visited by Gano, Miller and Vanhorn, they confessed to those men that they had been immersed without faith, believing that this would save them; and some of their pastors confessed that they themselves were not converted, but were so anxious to baptize others that Burkitt and Read say, in the 'History of the Kehukee Association,' that they often baptized their candidates by fire-light in the night, lest they should change their minds before morning. This state of things gave rise to that Antinomianism which blighted many of the Southern Churches for a time, till the more intelligent and evangelical shook off this 'bondage, and began to use the truths and measures set forth by Whitefield with such blessed results that they reaped rich harvests for Christ, especially in Virginia, Georgia and Kentucky; the North soon caught the same spirit.

About 1830 a general awakening was seen in our Churches, and what were called 'two days' meetings' began to be held, to pray and labor for the conversion of sinners. These were so marked in their effects that the time was prolonged to four-days, and last of all to 'protracted meetings,' without regard to length of time. Then the system of modern evangelical labor was introduced, as some pastors left their pastorates to go from Church to Church, helping other pastors. Amongst the first of these was the Rev. Jacob Knapp, who resigned his pastoral duties at Watertown, N. Y, and devoted himself to that form of labor for more than forty years. His educational advantages had been

light, but his mind was strong and His doctrines sound, enforced by an uncommon knowledge of Scripture. His statements of truth were devoid of all attempt at rhetorical finish, but he was unusually fervent and fluent. His mind was marked by strong logical tendencies and his sermons were full of homely illustrations, apt passages from the Bible, and close knowledge of human nature. In person he was short, squarely and stoutly built, his voice was deeply sepulchral and his manner self-possessed; he was full of expedient and his will was indomitable. Crowds followed him, whole communities were moved by his labors and great numbers were added to the Churches. Dr. Reuben Jeffery edited his sermons and Autobiography, which were published in 1868, and gave a lively picture of his style and labors. Mr. Knapp says that he kept an account of the number converted under his ministry for the first twenty years' work as an evangelist, but gave up the attempt after the count reached 100,000. Of course, he met with much opposition, and often he was charged with a love of money; but he says that, aside from His traveling expenses, he received from the Churches only about 500 per annum. The writer heard him preach many times, and judged him, as he is apt to judge men, more by his prayers than his sermons, for he was a man of much prayer. His appearance in the pulpit was very striking, His face pale, his skin dark, his mouth wide, with a singular cast in one eye bordering on a squint; he was full of native wit, almost gestureless, and vehement in denunciation, yet so cool in his deliberation that with the greatest ease he gave every trying circumstance its appropriate but unexpected turn.

Other evangelists soon entered the field, many of them meeting with good success. Amongst these may be mentioned T. J. Fisher, of Kentucky, with Messrs. Raymond, Swan, Earle, DeWitt and Gravis. Many of our pastors have been noted for the culture of revival influences in their Churches. Borne of them through a long course of years; as in the case of the late Lyman Wright, and of the two honored men who have held the same pastorates with great power for more than forty years: Dr. George C. Baldwin, of Troy, N. Y., and Dr. Daniel J. Corey, of Utica, N. Y. These are mentioned simply as examples of many others in our ministry. And it has been specially delightful in latter years to find numbers of the Presidents and Professors in our colleges and universities laboring with great energy for the salvation as well as for the education of their students, some of them reaping a large harvest. So that, taking the denomination as a whole, during the present century there has been an increase of zeal wisely used in this direction. The natural tendency of things in the olden times of harsh and hard controversy on infant baptism, when our fathers were obliged to struggle all the time for the right to be, was, to look with comparative indifference, if not suspicion, on the conversion of youth in very tender age. Happily, that unreasonable and unlovely state of things is passing away, and our Churches are learning the holy art of winning very young children to Jesus, as soon as they can understand his claims upon them and are able to love and serve him. Inasmuch as we reject the fraud of practicing upon them a rite which leaves them no choice in casting their own religious life, we are under double obligation to teach, and draw, and watch, and influence them to the service of our precious Master. We have come to look upon the neglect of these duties as sheer and downright wickedness, and instead of leaving our children to run wild until their hearts are all gnarled and scarified, like a knotted oak-tree, we are bringing our little ones to Jesus, that he may lay his hands on them and bless them.

The better understanding which has arisen between Baptists and other Christians is a matter for gratitude, and especially because our Churches have in no wise compromised their honor or consistency to secure this result. The candor and grasp of German scholarship and the independence

The American Baptists

of English High Churchmen has had much to do with this change. In the German and English controversies on baptism, especially in the Tractarian movement of the latter, the concession has been made without reluctance that the classical and ecclesiastical literature of the New Testament period and the early Christian centuries sustain the Baptist position. Then, in purification of the change which early took place in the ordinances, instead of forcing all sorts of unnatural interpretations upon the facts and teachings of the Bible, the open avowal is very commonly made, that the Church had the right to change Christ's ordinances as convenience required. A noted example in point is that of the late Dean of Westminster, who, when visiting America in 1878, replied to an address of welcome from the Baptist ministers of New York and Brooklyn on November 4th; thus:

'You have alluded to me in your address as an ecclesiastical historian, and have referred to the undoubted antiquity of your principal ceremony – that of immersion. I feel that here, also, we ought to be grateful to you for having, almost alone in the Western Church, preserved intact this singular and interesting relic of primitive and Apostolic times, which we, you will forgive me for saying so – which we, at least in our practice, have wisely discarded. For wise reasons the Primitive Baptism was set aside. The spirit which lives and moves in human society can override even the most sacred ordinances.'

Here, a manly honesty meets an issue of stubborn facts not with a flat and false denial of its existence, but with the real reason for setting aside a Divine institution. The frankness of this statement is characteristic of the man; he boldly tells us that these who have ceased to immerse have 'discarded' the practice of 'Apostolic times,' and thinks that they have done so 'wisely,' without any authority from the Lord of the Apostles for rejecting one of his 'singular and interesting' institutions. The Dean had an affection for modern methods of religious substitution in things which he regarded as of secondary consequence, and he could not see how a man's conscience and convictions of duty should bind him to what the Dean could not understand as important. Hence, while he acknowledged that he 'ought to be grateful' to the Baptists, for having cleaved to the Apostolic practice 'almost alone' in Western Christendom, it was hard for him to see exactly why they should not 'discard' it as well as others did. Great as was his tolerance in thought, when he looked at any religious point even through his affections he betrayed a tinge of intolerance. His most courteous allowance in such cases was mingled with a touch of scorn for what he could not fully comprehend; therefore, brave as he held the Baptists to be for unswerving fidelity to the Bible form of baptism, he saw no need for this constancy, but candidly said, 'We have altered all that long ago,' without the slightest attempt at popular equivocation.

Possibly no Baptist writer of our times awakened less asperity in Pedobaptist minds than the late Dr. William E. Williams, yet on this very point no man more completely covers the right interpretation of true Baptist conviction. He says:

'We read in the ordinance as the Sovereign bequeathed it, in the yielding waters that bury and then restore the loyal disciple, the cenotaph of our great Leader, the persistent tomb perpetually erected by which he would have his death set forth to the end of the world, and his exulting triumph over death, and His jubilant entrance into Paradise as well. And if it would be thought temerity for a follower of Michael Angelo or of Christopher Wren to pull down the tomb of either of these great architects on the plea of substituting a better, is it less temerity to innovate on the design in the gate of His own Church, reared by The Great Architect? Bury us into the tomb he occupied. Plant us into the new emerging life that he there displayed, nor think it shame to stand loyally by the ways that he has opened, and that none in all the world may better.'

Chapter 16 - Theological Seminaries – Literature – Revivals

He deprecates all change from Christ's appointment either in the subject or act of baptism as:

'A most dangerous assumption of power in the Church, and also a most rash ascription of intrinsic and magical efficacy to the outer emblem. The Churches early, but most unrighteously, learned to annex not only the remission of sins to the ordinance, but the regeneration itself – to attach pardon from Christ and new life from the Holy Ghost as sequents to an external rite. Priestly hands and Church laver's were thus employed, by an assumption that not one page of Scripture warrants, to usurp the prerogatives of God the adopting Father and Christ the mediating Brother, and the Paraclete, the renewing and illumining Teacher.' Lees. *Bap. Hist.* pp. 82,83.

In like manner, as men return to the simplicity of the Lord's Supper, in the spirit of the New Testament, for the purely memorial purpose of setting forth Christ's death, they come better to understand why Baptists reject the Romish interpretation that it is a test of love between Christian men, or a bond of spiritual fellowship in any Bible sense whatever. The more other Christians come to respect them for their protest against its abuse, and to recognize them as extending brotherly love, and with it acts of Christian brotherhood in the substantial deeds of benevolence, in the mutual burden-bearing of everyday life, and in that unity of the Holy Spirit by which birth from above is attested, rather than in the act of breaking bread, where the pure disciple and the hypocrite, the precious and the vile, have in all ages eaten the Supper together, and still sit at the same table in all Christian Denominations; the more they challenge universal respect, as the interpreters of the one Gospel baptism.

The American Baptists

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

Early in the Nineteenth Century, local Bible Societies sprang up in various American towns and cities. So far as is known, the first of these was formed in Philadelphia, in December, 1808, primarily under the wisdom and zeal of Dr. Staughton, who was its first recording secretary and wrote its appeals for aid. In February, 1809, a similar society was organized in New York, called the 'Young Men's Bible Society,' and on this wise. William Colgate, a young Englishman, sacredly cherished a Bible which had been presented to him by his father, which was kept in his pew in the First Baptist meeting-house; but it was stolen, and thinking that Bibles must be very scarce or they would not be taken by theft, he conversed with others, and they resolved to form a society to meet the want. This society comprehended the purpose of translation as well as of circulation, and incorporated the following into its Constitution as its defining article:

'The object of this Society is to distribute the Bible only – and that without notes – amongst such persons as may not be able to purchase it; and also, as far as may be practicable, to translate or assist in causing it to be translated into other languages.'

Soon other societies were formed in different places, and the universal want of a General Society began to be felt. At length, May 11, 1816, thirty-five local societies in different parts of the country sent delegates to a Bible Convention which assembled in New York, and organized the American Bible Society for 'The dissemination of the Scriptures in the received versions where they exist, and in the most faithful where they may be required.' Most of the local societies either disbanded or were made auxilliary to the General Society. The Baptists became at once its earnest and liberal supporters. As early as 1830 it made an appropriation of \$1,200 for Judson's 'Burman Bible,' through the Baptist Triennial Convention, with the full knowledge that he had translated the family of words relating to baptism by words which meant immerse and immersion, and down to 1835 the Society had appropriated \$18,500 for the same purpose. The Triennial Convention had instructed its missionaries in April, 1833, thus:

'Resolved, That the Board feel it to be their duty to adopt all prudent measures to give to the heathen the pure word of God in their own languages, and to furnish their missionaries with all the means in their power to make their translation as exact a representation of the mind of the Holy Spirit as may be possible. Resolved, That all the missionaries of the Board who are, or who shall be, engaged in translating the Scriptures, be instructed to endeavor, by earnest prayer and diligent study, to ascertain the precise meaning of the original text, to express that meaning as exactly as the nature of the languages into which they shall translate the Bible will permit, and to transfer no words which are capable of being literally translated.'

In 1835 Mr. Pearce asked the Society to aid in printing the 'Bengali New Testament,' which was translated upon the same principle as Judson's Bible. The committee which considered the application reported as follows: 'That the committee do not deem it expedient to recommend an appropriation, until the Board settle a principle in relation to the Greek word *baptiso*.' Then the whole subject was referred to a committee of seven, who, November 19, 1835, presented the following reports:

'The Committee to whom was recommitted the determining of a principle upon which the American Bible Society will aid in printing and distributing the Bible in foreign languages, beg leave to report,

The American Baptists

'That they are of the opinion that it is expedient to withdraw their former report on the particular case, and to present the following one on the general principle:

'By the Constitution of the American Bible Society, its Managers are, in the circulation of the Holy Scriptures, restricted to such copies as are without note or comment, and in the English language, to the version in common use. The design of these restrictions clearly seems to have been to simplify and mark out the duties of the Society; so that all the religious denominations of which it is composed might harmoniously unite in performing those duties.

'As the Managers are now called to aid extensively in circulating the Sacred Scriptures in languages other than the English, they deem it their duty, in conformity with the obvious spirit of their compact, to adopt the following resolution as the rule of their conduct in making appropriations for the circulation of the Scriptures in all foreign tongues:

'Resolved 1. That in appropriating money for the translating, printing or distributing of the Sacred Scriptures in Foreign languages, the Managers feel at liberty to encourage only such versions as conform in the principle of their translation to the common English version, at least so far as that all the religious denominations represented in this Society, can consistently use and circulate said versions in their several schools and communities.

'Resolved, 2. That a copy of the above preamble and resolution be sent to each of the Missionary Boards accustomed to receive pecuniary grants from the Society, with a request that the same may be transmitted to their respective mission stations, where the Scriptures are in process of translation, and also that the several Mission Boards be informed that their application for aid must be accompanied with a declaration that the versions which they propose to circulate are executed in accordance with the above resolution.

'THOMAS MACAULEY; Chairman, WM. H. VANVLECK, JAMES MILNOR, FRANCES HALL, THOMAS DEWITT, THOMAS COCK.' COUNTER REPORT.

'The subscriber, as a member of the Committee to whom was referred the application of Messrs. Pearce and Yates, for aid in the circulation of the Bengali New Testament, begs leave to submit the following considerations:

'1. The Baptist Board of Foreign Missions have not been under the impression that the American Bible Society was organized upon the central principle that *baptizo* and its cognates were never to be translated, but always transferred, in all versions of the Scriptures patronized by them. Had this principle been candidly stated and uniformly acted upon by the Society in the appropriation of its funds for foreign distribution, the Baptists never could have been guilty of the folly or duplicity of soliciting aid for translations made by their missionaries.

'2. As there is now a large balance in the treasury of the American Bible Society, as many liberal bequests and donations have been made by Baptists, and as these were made in the full confidence that the Society could constitutionally assist their own denomination, as well as the other evangelical denominations comprising the Institution, in giving the Bible to the heathen world, therefore,

'Resolved, That \$ – be appropriated and paid to the Baptist General Convention of the United States for Foreign Missions, to aid them in the work of supplying the perishing millions of the East with the Sacred Scriptures. SPENCER H. CONE.'

It must stand to the everlasting honor of the Triennial Convention that they regarded the Author of the Bible as the only being to be consulted in this matter. They disallowed any voice to the translator in making his translation, but virtually said to him: 'The parchment which you hold in your hand is God's word, all that you have to do is to re-utter the Divine voice. The right of Jehovah to a hearing as he will is the only consideration in this case. You are to inquire of him by earnest

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

prayer, you are to use the most diligent study to ascertain the precise meaning of the original text, then you are to make your translation as exact a representation of the mind of the Holy Spirit as may be possible, so far as the nature of the language into which you translate will permit.' In contrast with this, the Bible Society said: "You are to take the common English version and conform your version to the principle on which it was made, so that all denominations" represented in this Society can use it in their schools and communities." A version, and that quite imperfect, was to be made the standard by which all versions should be made, and the voice of all the denominations in the Society was to be consulted instead of the mind of the Holy Spirit. Such an untenable position settled the question of further co-operation with the Society in the making and circulation of foreign versions, for a more dangerous position could not be taken. Up to that time, including a large legacy which John F. Marsh had made, the Baptists had contributed to the treasury of the Bible Society at least \$170,000, and had received for their missionary versions less than \$30,000.

On May 12, 1836, the Bible Society approved the attitude of its Board, and \$5,000 was voted for the versions made by the Baptist missionaries to be used on the new principle which had been adopted. The Baptist members of the Board presented a clear, calm and dignified Protest, but were not allowed even to read it to the Board. Amongst many other grave considerations they submitted these: 'The Baptists cannot, consistently with their religious principles, in any case where they are permitted to choose, consent to use or circulate any version in which any important portion of divine truth is concealed or obscured, either by non-translation or by ambiguity of expression...This resolution exposes the Society, almost unavoidably, to the charge or suspicion of sectarian motives. For, without pretending, in the least, to impeach the accuracy of the versions against which it is directed, the principal reason offered by its advocates when urging its adoption was, "That Pedobaptists might have an opportunity of prosecuting their missionary operations without let or hinderance, where the translations of the Baptists are in circulation." And surely, a version that purposely withholds the truth, either by non-translation or by ambiguity of expression, for the sake of accommodating Pedobaptists, is as really sectarian as one that adds to the truth from the same motive...The imperfection and injustice of the resolution are strikingly manifested in the continued circulation of Roman Catholic versions, which are neither conformed in the principle of their translation to the common English version, nor can they be consistently used by the different denominations represented in the American Bible Society. They are characterized by the numerous absurd and heretical dogmas of the Catholic sect, and yet the rule in question cordially approves of their extensive distribution, while the translations of pious, faithful and learned Baptist ministers are rejected.'

The Board of the Triennial Convention met at Hartford, Conn., on the 7th of April, 1836, and at once 'respectfully informed' the Board of the American Bible Society that they could not 'consistently and conscientiously comply with the conditions' on which their appropriation was made, and that they could not, 'therefore, accept the sum appropriated.' Here, then, the sharp issue was drawn between the question of denominational 'use' and 'the mind of the Holy Spirit,' in the holy work of Bible translation. Not only was the Baptist position sustained, but the manly and Christian stand taken by its representatives in the Board was approved by our Churches, and an almost unanimous determination was readied to support the faithful versions made by our missionaries. Action was taken in Churches, associations and conventions, and an almost universal demand was made for a new Bible Society. Powerful pens were also wielded outside the Baptist body to defend

The American Baptists

their course, amongst them that of the late Joshua Leavitt, a distinguished Congregationalist, who said:

'The Baptist Board had instructed their missionaries on the subject, "to make their translations as exact a representation of the mind of the Holy Spirit as may be possible;" and "to transfer no words which are capable of being literally translated." This instruction was a transcript of the principle which underlies the Baptist Churches, to wit, in settled and conscientious belief that the word *baptizo* means "immerse" and nothing else. It was plainly impossible that Baptist missionaries should honestly translate in any other way. Then the debate turned, in effect, upon the question whether the Bible Society should recognize such men as Judson and his associates as trustworthy translators of the word of God for a people who had been taught the Gospel by them, and for whose use there was, and could be, no other version...The effect of the resolution was to make the Bible Society, in its actual administration, a Pedobaptist or sectarian institution. It was a virtual exclusion of the Baptists from their past rights as the equal associates of their brethren by the solemn compact of the constitution. It left them no alternative but to withdraw, and take measures of their own to supply the millions of Burma with the Scriptures in the only version which could be had, and the only one which they would receive. It was a public exemplification of bad faith in adherence to the constitution of a religious benevolent society. That it attracted so little public attention at the time must be attributed to the general absorption of the public mind with other pursuits and questions and, more than all, to the fact that it was a minority which suffered injustice, while a large majority were more gratified than otherwise at their discomfiture. But the greatest injury was done to the cause of Christian union and to the unity of the Protestant hosts in the conflict with Rome. And this evil is now just about to develop itself in its full extent. The Bible Society, in its original construction, and by its natural and proper influence, ought to be able to present itself before all the world as the representative and exponent of the Protestantism of this nation, instead of which it is only the instrument of sectarian exclusiveness and injustice. One of the largest, most zealous and evangelical and highly progressive Protestant bodies is cut off and set aside, and the Society stands before the world as a one-sided thing, and capable of persistent injustice in favor of a denominational dogma.

'This publication is made under the influence of a strong belief of the imperative necessity which now presses upon us to RIGHT THIS WRONG, that we may be prepared for the grand enterprise, the earnest efforts, the glorious results for the kingdom of Christ, which are just opening before us. We must close up our ranks, we must reunite all hearts and all liands, in the only way possible, by falling back upon the original constitution of the Society, in letter and spirit, BY THE SIMPLE REPEAL OF THE RESOLUTION.'

Many Baptists from various parts of the country attended the annual meeting of the Bible Society in New York, on the 12th of May, 1836, and when it deliberately adopted the policy of the board as its own permanent plan, about 120 of these held a meeting for deliberation on the 13th, in the Oliver Street Baptist meeting-house, with Dr. Nathaniel Kendrick in the chair. The Baptist Board of Foreign Missions, which met at Hartford, April 27th, had anticipated the possible result, and resolved that in this event it would 'be the duty of the Baptist denomination in the United States to form a distinct organization for Bible translation and distribution in foreign tongues,' and had resolved on the need of a Convention of Churches, at Philadelphia, in April, 1837, 'to adopt such measures as circumstances, in the providence of God may require.' But the meeting in Oliver Street thought it wise to form a new Bible Society at once, and on that day organized the American and Foreign Bible Society provisionally, subject to the decision of the Convention to be held in Philadelphia. This society was formed 'to promote a wider circulation of the Holy Scriptures, in the most faithful versions that can be procured.' In three months it sent \$13,000 for the circulation of Asiatic Scriptures, and moved forward with great enthusiasm.

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

After a year's deliberation the great Bible Convention met in the meetinghouse of the First Baptist Church, Philadelphia, April 26th, 1837. It consisted of 390 members, sent from Churches, Associations, State Conventions, Education Societies and other bodies, in twenty-three States and in the District of Columbia. Rev. Charles Gr. Sommers, Lucius Bolles and Jonathan Going, the committee on 'credentials.' reported that 'in nearly all the letters and minutes where particular instructions are given to the delegates, your committee find a very decided sentiment in favor of a distinct and unfettered organization for Bible translation and distribution.' The official record says that the business of the Convention was 'to consider and decide upon the duty of the denomination, in existing circumstances, respecting the translation and distribution of the sacred Scriptures. Eufas Babcock, of Pennsylvania, was chosen president of the body; with Abiel Sherwood, of Georgia, and Baron Stow, of Massachusetts, as secretaries. Amongst its members there were present: From Maine, John S. Maginnis; New Hampshire, E. E. Cummings; Vermont, Elijah Hutchinson; Massachusetts, George B. Ide, Heman Lincoln, Daniel Sharp, Wm. Hague and James D. Knowles; and from Rhode Island, Francis Wayland, David Benedict and John Blain. Connecticut sent James L. Hodge, Rollin H. Neale, Irah Chase and Lucius Bolles. From New York we have diaries G. Sommers, Wm. Colgate, Edward Kingsford, Alexander M. Beebee, Daniel Haskall, Nathaniel Kendrick, John Peck, Wm. H. Williams, Wm. Parkinson, Duncan Dunbar, Spencer H. Cone, John Dowling and B. T. Welch. New Jersey was represented by Samuel Aaron, Thomas Swaim, Daniel Dodge, Peter P. Bunyon, Simon J. Drake, M. J. Rhees and Charles J. Hopkins. Pennsylvania sent Horatio G. Jones, Joseph Taylor, Win. T. Brantly, J. H. Kennard, J. M. Linnard, Wm. Shadrach, A. D. Gillette and Rufus Babcock. Then from Maryland we find Wm. Crane and Stephen P. Hill; and from Virginia, Thomas Hume, J. B. Taylor, J. B. Jeter and Thomas D. Toy. These were there, with others of equal weight of character and name.

When such momentous issues were pending, our fathers found themselves differing widely in opinion. Some thought a new Bible Society indispensable; others deprecated such a step; some wished to confine the work of the new society to foreign versions; others thought not only that its work should be unrestricted as to field, but that consistency and fidelity to God required it to apply to the English and all other versions the principle which was to be applied to versions in heathen lands, thus making it faithful to God's truth for all lands. The discussion ran through three days, and was participated in by the ablest minds of the denomination, being specially keen, searching and thorough. Professor Knowles says:

'Much feeling was occasionally exhibited, and some undesirable remarks were made. But, with little exception, an excellent spirit reigned throughout the meeting. It was, we believe, the largest and most intelligent assembly of Baptist ministers and laymen that has ever been held. There was a display of talent, eloquence and piety which, we venture to say, no other ecclesiastical body in our country could surpass. Our own estimate of the ability and sound principles of our brethren was greatly elevated. We saw, too, increased evidence that our Churches were firmly united. While there was an independence of opinion which was worthy of Christians and freemen, there was a kind spirit of conciliation. Each man who spoke declared his views with entire frankness; but when the question was taken, the vast body of delegates voted almost in solid column. They all, we believe, with a few exceptions, are satisfied with the results of the meeting as far as regards the present position of the society. The question respecting the range of its operations remains to be decided. We hope that it will be discussed in a calm and fraternal spirit. Let each man be willing to hear his brother's opinion, and to yield his own wishes to those of the majority. We see no reason why any one should be pertinacious. If it should be determined to give to the society an unrestricted range, no man will be obliged

The American Baptists

to sustain it unless he choose. He who may still prefer to send his money to the American Bible Society can do so. Let us maintain peace among ourselves. Our own union is of more importance than any particular measures which we could adopt, no benefits which would ensue from the operations of any society would compensate for the loss of harmony in our Churches.' So far the words of Prof. Knowles.

[Note: We see in the final sentence of Prof. Knowles' statement the error which is so common to denominational leaders. Denominational unity is exalted above practically all other factors. While we do not despise harmony among true believers and sound churches, the fact remains that the apostles left no example for the establishment of denominations and organized ecclesiastical associations. These, therefore, are built upon the foundation of man-made tradition and pragmatism rather than upon Scriptural authority. It is upon precisely this basis that our Baptist forefathers condemned the Protestants for their unscriptural practices of infant baptism, etc. In their turn, though, they were willing to depart from the apostolic pattern in the matter of establishing ecclesiastical unions. It is important to note that even in those days there were Baptist churches which did not participate in the denominational structures. Armitage, Benedict, and other historians mention these in passing, but they do not focus on them for the simple fact that they were themselves committed to the denominational machine. D.W. Cloud]

The final decisions of this great Convention are found in the following resolutions, which it adopted 'almost in solid column;' namely:

'1. Resolved, That under existing circumstances it is the indispensable duty of the Baptist denomination in the United States to organize a distinct society for the purpose of aiding in the translation, printing and circulation of the sacred Scriptures.

'2. Resolved, That this organization be known by the name of the American and Foreign Bible Society.

'3. Resolved, That the society confine its efforts during the ensuing year to the circulation of the Word of God in foreign tongues.

'4. Resolved, That the Baptist denomination in the United States be affectionately requested to send to the Society, at its annual meeting during the last week 'in April, 1838, their views as to the duty of the Society to engage in the work of home distribution.

'5. Resolved. That a committee of one from each State and district represented in this convention be appointed to draft a constitution and nominate a board of officers for the ensuing year.'

A constitution was then adopted and officers chosen by the Convention itself. It elected Spencer H. Cone for President. Charles G. Sommers for Corresponding Secretary, William Colgate for Treasurer and John West for Recording Secretary; together with thirty-six managers, who, according to the eighth article of the constitution, were 'brethren in good standing in Baptist Churches.'

The convention also instructed its officers to issue a circular to the Baptist Churches throughout the United States, commending its work to their co-operation and confidence, and especially soliciting them to send to the new Society an expression of their wishes as to its duty in the matter of home circulation. This request was very generally complied with, and so earnest was the wish to make it a 'society for the world,' that at its annual meeting in 1838 its constitution was so amended as to read: 'It shall be the object of this Society to aid in the wider circulation of the Holy Scriptures in all lands.' Thus the Baptists took the high and holy ground that they were called to conserve

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

faithfulness to God in translating the Bible, and that if they failed to do this on principle, they would fail to honor him altogether in this matter; because the Society which they had founded was the only Bible organization then established which had no fellowship with compromises in Bible translation.

From the first, many in the new Society, led by Dr. Gove, desired to proceed at once to a revision of the English Scriptures, under the guidance of the principles applied to the Asiatic versions made by the Baptist missionaries. But in deference to the opposition of some who approved of the Society in all other respects, at its annual meeting in 1838 it 'Resolved, That in the distribution of the Scriptures in the English language, they will use the commonly received version until otherwise directed by the Society.' Whatever difference of opinion existed amongst the founders of that Society about the immediate expediency of applying the principle of its constitution to the English version, its ultimate application became but a question of time, and this action was postponed for fourteen years. Meanwhile, this measure was pressed in various directions, in addresses at its anniversaries, in essays published by various persons, and in the Society's correspondence. In 1842 Rev. Messrs. David Bernard and Samuel Aaron issued a very able treatise on the need of 'Revising and Amending King James' Version of the Holy Scriptures.' They also procured and published in that year, through the publishing house of J. B. Lippincott, of Philadelphia, a revised version of the Old and New Testaments, 'carefully revised and amended by several Biblical scholars.' This they say they did 'in accordance with the advice of many distinguished brethren, the services of a number of professors, some of whom rank among the first in our country for their knowledge of the original languages and Biblical interpretation and criticism, have been secured to prepare this work.' Amongst these were the late Prof. Whiting, Prof. A. C. Kendrick and other leading scholars who still live and have labored on other revisions.

The American and Foreign Bible Society held its annual meeting in New York May 11th, 1849, and, on the motion of Hon. Isaac Davis, of Massachusetts, after considerable discussion, it was 'Resolved, That the restriction laid by the Society upon the Board of Managers in 1838, to use only the commonly received version in the distribution of the Scriptures in the English language, be removed.' This restriction being removed, the new board referred the question of revision to a committee of five. After long consideration that committee presented three reports: one with three signatures and two minority reports. The third, from the pen of Warren Carter, Esq., was long and labored as an argument against altering the common version at all. In January, 1850, the majority report was unanimously adopted in these words:

'Resolved, That, in the opinion of this board, the sacred Scriptures of the Old and New Testament ought to be faithfully and accurately translated into every living language.'

'Resolved, That wherever, in versions now in use, known and obvious errors exist, and wherever the meaning of the original is concealed or obscured, suitable measures ought to be prosecuted to correct those versions, so as to render the truth clear and intelligible to the ordinary reader.'

'Resolved, That, in regard to the expediency of this board undertaking the correction of the English version, a decided difference of opinion exists, and, therefore, that it be judged most prudent to await the instructions of the Society.'

On the publication of these resolutions the greatest excitement spread through the denomination. Most of its journals were flooded with communications, pro and con, sermons were preached in a number of pulpits denouncing the movement, and public meetings were held in several cities to the

The American Baptists

same end, notable amongst them one at the Oliver Street Church, in New York, April 4th, 1850. This feeling was greatly increased by the two following facts: Mr. Carter, an intelligent layman, but neither a scholar nor an able thinker, having submitted a learned and elaborate paper as his minority report, which occupied an hour in the reading, and believing that it was inspired by an astute author in New York who had opposed the Society from the first, and was then a member of the Board of the American Bible Society, Dr. Cone and William H. Wyckoff, President and Secretary of the American and Foreign Bible Society, published a pamphlet over their names in defense of the action of the board, under the title, 'The Bible Translated.' The second fact arose from the demand of Mr. Carter that those in favor of a revision of the English Scriptures should issue, in the form of a small edition of the New Testament, a specimen of the character of the emendations which they desired, in regard to obsolete words, to words and phrases that failed to express the meaning of the original Greek, or the addition of words by the translators, errors in grammar, profane expressions and sectarian renderings. Deacon William Colgate, the Treasurer, said that he approved of this suggestion, and that if Brethren Cone and Wyckoff would procure and issue such an edition as a personal enterprise, he, as a friend of revision, would personally pay the cost of the plates and printing. This was done, and in their preface they stated that by the aid of 'eminent scholars,' who had 'kindly co-operated and given their hearty approval to the proposed corrections,' they submitted their work, not for acceptance by the Society, but as a specimen of some changes which might be properly made, and that the plates would be presented to the Society if they were desired. This was sufficient to fan the fire to a huge flame; much stormy and uncalled for severity was invoked, and a large attendance was called for at the annual meeting to 'rebuke this metropolitan power' and crush the movement forever.

Men of the highest ability took sides and published their views, some demanding revision at once, others admitting its necessity but hesitating as to what might be the proper method to procure it, and still others full of fiery denunciation of Cone, Wyckoff and Colgate, and their sympathizers; as if they were guilty of the basest crime for desiring as good a version for the English speaking people as the Baptists were giving to the East Indians. Many others also talked as much at random as if they feared that the book which they hinted had come down from heaven in about its present shape, printed and bound, was now to be taken from them by force. From the abundant material before the writer a large volume might be submitted of the sayings and doings of many persons, of whom some are still living, and some have gone to their account with God; but as no good end can be secured at present by their reproduction they are passed in silence. It is much more grateful to refer to those more calm and thoughtful minds who stood unmoved in the storm, and, although they did not at that time see their way clear to aid the work of revision, yet spoke in a manner worthy of themselves as men of God in handling a great and grave subject, worthy of the Master whom they served, showing their consistency as defenders of our missionary versions. Pre-eminent amongst these was the late Dr. Hackett, who thus expressed himself May 2d, 1850:

'It is admitted that the received English version of the Scriptures is susceptible of improvement. During the more than 200 years which have passed since it was made, our means for the explanation, both of the text and the subjects of the Bible, have been greatly increased. The original languages in which it was written have continued to occupy the attention of scholars, and are now more perfectly understood. Much light has been thrown upon the meaning of words. Many of them are seen to have been incorrectly defined, and many more to have been rendered with less precision than is now attainable. The various collateral branches of

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

knowledge have been advanced to a more perfect state. History, geography, antiquities, the monuments and customs of the countries where the sacred writers lived, and where the scenes which they describe took place, have been investigated with untiring zeal, and have yielded, at length, results which afford advantages to the translator of the Scriptures at the present day, which no preceding age has enjoyed. It is eminently desirable that we then have in our language a translation of the Bible conformed to the present state of critical learning.'

The Society met for its thirteenth anniversary in New York on the morning of May 22d, 1850. The crowd of life members, life directors and other delegates was very large, and the excitement rose as high as it well could. From the first it was manifest that calm, deliberate discussion and conference were not to be had, but that measures adverse to all revision were to be carried with a high hand. It had been customary to elect officers and managers before the public services; but, before this could be done Rev. Isaac Westcott moved: 'That this Society, in the issues of circulation of the English Scriptures, be restricted to the commonly received version, without note or comment;' and further moved that, as probably all minds were made up on the question, the vote than be taken without debate. Determined resistance to this summary process secured the postponement of the question to the afternoon, and other business was attended to. At that session each speaker was confined to fifteen minutes. Then in the heat of the Society it so far forgot the object of its organization as to vote down by an overwhelming majority the very principle on which it was organized. In the hope that, if revision could not be entertained, at least a great principle might be conserved as a general basis of agreement thereafter, the revisionists, on consultation, submitted the following: 'Resolved, That it is the duty of the Society to circulate the sacred Scriptures in the most faithful versions that can be procured.' When the Society had rejected this, and thus stultified itself, and denied not only its paternity but its right to exist by rejecting that fundamental principle, it was seen at a glance that all hope of its unity was gone. Yet, as a last hope that it might be saved, the following conciliatory resolution was submitted, but was not even entertained, namely:

'Whereas, Numerous criticisms of the learned of all denominations of Christians demonstrate the susceptibility of many improvements in the commonly received version of the English Scriptures; and whereas, it is deemed inexpedient for one denomination of Christians alone to attempt these improvements, provided the cooperation of others can be secured; therefore

'Resolved, That a committee of – pious, faithful, and learned men, in the United States of America or elsewhere, be appointed for the purpose of opening a correspondence with the Christian and learned world, on all points necessarily involved in the question of revising the English Scriptures; that said committee be requested to present to the Society at the next annual meeting a report of their investigations and correspondence, with a statement of their views as to what revision of the English Scriptures it would be proper to make, if any; that until such report and statement shall have been acted upon by the Society the Board of Managers shall be restricted in their English issues to the commonly received version; and that all necessary expenses attendant upon this correspondence and investigation be paid by the Society.'

On the 23d, the following, offered by Rev. Dr. Turnbull, of Connecticut, was adopted: 'Resolved, That it is not the province and duty of the American and Foreign Bible Society to attempt, on their own part, or procure from others, a revision of the commonly received English version of the Scriptures.'

This action was followed by the election of the officers and the board by ballot, when Dr. Cone was re-elected President; but the Secretary, William H. Wyckoff, and the venerable Deacon Colgate,

The American Baptists

were proscribed, together with ten of the old managers, all known revisionists, no person then present can wish to witness another such scene in a Baptist body to the close of life. Dr. Cone, at that time in his sixty-sixth year, rose like a patriarch, his hair as white as snow. As soon as the seething multitude in the Mulberry Street Tabernacle could be stilled, he said, with a stifled and almost clicked utterance: 'Brethren, I believe my work in this Society is done. Allow me to tender you my resignation. I did not withdraw my name in advance, because of the seeming egotism of such a step. I thank you, my brethren, for the kindly manner in which you have been pleased to tender me once more the office of President of your Society. But I cannot serve you longer. I am crushed.'

The Society at first refused to receive his resignation, but, remaining firm in his purpose, it was accepted. When Messrs. Cone, Colgate and Wyckoff rose to leave the house in company, Dr. Cone invited Dr. Sommers, the first Vice-President, to the 'chair, remarking that God had a work for him to do which he was not permitted to do in that Society; and bowing, like a prince in Israel uncrowned for his fidelity, he said, amid the sobbing of the audience: I bid you, my brethren, an affectionate farewell as President of a Society that I have loved, which has cost me money, with much labor, prayer and tears. I hope that God will direct your future course in mercy; that we may do as much good as such creatures as we are able to accomplish. May the Lord Jesus bless you all.' Dr. Bartholomew T. Welch was chosen President, and Dr. Cutting Secretary of the American and Foreign Bible Society; then the body adjourned.

Spencer H. Cone, D.D., was, by nature, a man of mark, and would have been a leader in any sphere of life. He was born at Princeton, N J., April 13, 1785. His father and mother were members of the Hopewell Baptist Church. His father was high-spirited and fearless, noted for his gentlemanly and finished manners. He was an unflinching Whig, and fought with great bravery in the Revolution. Mrs. Cone was the daughter of Col. Joab Houghton. She possessed a vigorous intellect, great personal beauty, and an indomitable moral courage. Late in life, Dr. Cone loved to speak of the earnest and enlightened piety of his parents. When about fifty years of age he said in a sermon: 'My mother was baptized when I was a few months old, and soon after her baptism, as I was sleeping on her lap, she was much drawn out in prayer for her babe and supposed she received an answer, with the assurance that the child should live to preach the Gospel of Christ. The assurance never left her; and it induced her to make the most persevering efforts to send me to Princeton – a course, at first, much against my father's will. This she told me after my conversion; it had been a comfort to her in the darkest hour of domestic trial; for she had never doubted that her hope would be sooner or later fulfilled.' At the age of twelve he entered Princeton College as a Freshman, but at fourteen he was obliged to leave, when in his Sophomore year, in consequence of the mental derangement of his father and the reduction of the family to a penniless condition; they went through a hard struggle for many years. Yet the lad of fourteen took upon him the support of his father and mother, four sisters and a younger brother, and never lost heart or hope. He spent seven years as a teacher, first in the Bordentown Academy, having charge of the Latin and Greek department, and then he became assistant in the Philadelphia Academy under Dr. Abercrombie.

Prompted largely by the desire to support his mother and sisters more liberally, he next devoted seven years to theatrical life. He says: 'In a moment of desperation I adopted the profession of an actor. It was inimical to the wishes of my mother, and in direct, opposition to my own feelings and principles. But it was the only way by which I had a hope of extricating myself from my pecuniary embarrassments.' he played chiefly in Philadelphia, Baltimore and Alexandria, and succeeded much

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

better than he expected, but at times had serious misgivings about the morality of his associations and was greatly troubled about his personal salvation. In 1813 he left the stage, to take charge of the books of the 'Baltimore American.' A year later, he became one of the proprietors and conductors of the 'Baltimore Whig,' a paper devoted to the politics of Jefferson and Madison. At that moment the country had come to war with England, and he went to the field as captain of the Baltimore Artillery Company, under William Pinckney. He stood bravely at his post during the battles at Northpoint, Bladensburg and Baltimore, when shells tore up the earth at his feet and mangled his men at his side. During the war he married, intending to spend his time in secular life, but neglected the house of God. One day his eye dropped upon an advertisement of a sale of books, which he attended, and he bought the works of John Newton. On reading the 'Life of Newton,' his mind was deeply affected; he passed through agony of soul on account of his sins, which, for a time, disqualified him for business. His young wife thought him deranged, and having sought relief in various ways, at last he flew to the Bible for direction. He says:

'One evening after the family had all retired, I went up into a vacant garret and walked backwards and forwards in great agony of mind. I kneeled down, the instance of Hezekiah occurred to me, like him I turned my face to the wall and cried for mercy. An answer seemed to be vouchsafed in an impression that just as many years as I had passed in rebellion against God, so many years I must now endure, before deliverance could be granted. I clasped my hands and cried out, "Yes, dear Lord, a thousand years of such anguish as I now feel, if I may only be saved at last."...I felt that as a sinner I was condemned and justly exposed to immediate and everlasting destruction. I saw distinctly that in Christ alone I must be saved, if saved at all; and the view I had at that moment of Christ's method of saving sinners, I do still most heartily entertain after thirty years' experience of his love.'

Not long after this he began to preach in Washington, and so amazing was his popularity that in 1815-16 he was elected Chaplain to Congress. For a time he was pastor at Alexandria, Va., when he became assistant pastor in Oliver Street, New York, where he rose to the highest distinction as a preacher. The death of its minister, Rev. John Williams, left him sole pastor of that Church for about eighteen years, when he accepted the pastorate of the First Baptist Church, New York. For about forty years he was a leader in Home and Foreign mission work, and in the great modern movement for a purely translated Bible. In establishing our missions, many pleaded for the living teacher and cared little for the faithfully translated Bible, but he sympathized with Mr. Thomas, who, in a moment of heart-sorrow, exclaimed: 'If I had 100,000 I would give it all for a Bengali Bible.' he did much for the cause of education, but never took much interest in the scheme which associated Columbia College with the missionary field. In a letter to Dr. Bolles dated December 27, 1830, he wrote:

'The value of education I certainly appreciate, and think a preacher of the Gospel cannot know too much, although it sometimes unhappily occurs, to use the language of L. Richmond, that Christ is crucified in the pulpit between the classics and mathematics. Those missionaries destined, like Judson, to translate the word of God should be ripe scholars before this branch of their work is performed; but I am still of opinion that the learning of Dr. Gill himself would have aided him but little had he been a missionary to our American Indians.'

He was elected President of the Triennial Convention in 1832, and continued to fill that chair till 1841, when he declined a re-election. He had much to do with adjusting the working plans, first

The American Baptists

of the Triennial Convention and then of the Missionary Union. When the disruption took place between the Southern and Northern Baptists, in 1845, no one contributed more to overcome the friction and difficulties which were engendered by the new state of things and in forming the new constitution. Dr. Stow says:

'Concessions were made on all sides; but it was plain to all that the greatest was made by Mr. Cone. The next day the constitution was reported as the unanimous product of the committee. Mr. Cone made the requisite explanations, and defended every article and every provision as earnestly as if the entire instrument had been his own favorite offspring. The committee, knowing his preference for something different, were filled with admiration at the Christian magnanimity which he there exhibited. I believe he never altered his opinion that something else would have been better, but I never knew of his uttering a syllable to the disparagement of the constitution to whose unanimous adoption he contributed more largely than any other man.'

As a moderator, as an orator, as a Christian gentleman, he was of the highest order; he knew nothing of personal bitterness; he read human nature at a glance, and was one of the noblest and best abused men of his day. Like his brethren, he believed that the word 'baptize' in the Bible meant to immerse and that it was his duty to God so to preach it; but, unlike them, he believed that if it was his duty so to preach it, it was as clearly his duty so to print it; and therefor many accounted him a sinner above all who dwelt in Jerusalem. Of course, as is usual in all similar cases of detraction heaven has hallowed his memory, for his life was moved by the very highest and purest motives.

On the 27th of May, 1850, twenty-four revisionists met in the parlor of Deacon Colgate's house, No. 128 Chambers Street, to take into consideration what present duty demanded at their hands. They were: Spencer H. Cone, Stephen Remington, Herman J. Eddy, Thomas Armitage, Wm. S. Clapp, Orrin B. Judd, Henry P. See, A. C. Wheat, Wm. Colgate, John B. Wells, Wm. D. Murphy, Jas. H. Townsend, Sylvester Pier, Jas. B. Colgate, Alex. McDonald, Geo. W. Abbe, Jas. Farquharson, and E. S. Whitney, of New York city; John Richardson, of Maine; Samuel R. Kelly and Wm. H. Wykcoff, of Brooklyn; E. Gilbert, Lewis Bedell and James Edmunds, from the interior of New York. Dr. Cone presided, E. S. Whitney served as secretary, and Deacon Colgate led in prayer. For a time this company bowed before God in silence, then this man of God poured out one of the most tender and earnest petitions before the throne of grace that can well be conceived. T. Armitage offered the following, which, after full discussion, were adopted: 'Whereas, The word and will of God, as conveyed in the inspired originals of the Old and New Testaments, are the only infallible standards of faith and practice, and therefore it is of unspeakable importance that the sacred Scriptures should be faithfully and accurately translated into every living language; and,

'Whereas, A Bible Society is bound by imperative duty to employ all the means in its power to insure that the books which it circulates as the revealed will of God to man, should be as free from error and obscurity as possible; and,

'Whereas, There is not now any general Bible Society in the country which has not more or less restricted itself by its own enactments from the discharge of this duty; therefore,

'Resolved. That it is our duty to form a voluntary association for the purpose of procuring and circulating the most faithful version of the sacred Scriptures in all languages.

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

'Resolved. That in such an association we will welcome all persons to co-operate with us, who embrace the principles upon which we propose to organize, without regard to their denominational principles in other respects.'

On the 10th of June, 1850, a very large meeting was held at the Baptist Tabernacle in Mulberry Street, New York, at which the American Bible Union was organized, under a constitution which was then adopted, and an address explaining its purposes was given to the public. Dr. Cone was elected President of the Union, Wm. H. Wyckoff, Corresponding Secretary; Deacon Colgate, Treasurer; E. S. Whitney, Recording Secretary, and Sylvester Pier, Auditor, together with a board of twenty-four managers.

The second article of the constitution defined the object of the Union thus:

'Its object shall be to procure and circulate the most faithful versions of the sacred Scriptures in all languages throughout the world.'

The address gave the broad aims of the Society more fully, and, among other things, said: 'The more accurately a version is brought to the true standard, the more accurately will it express the mind and will of God. And this is the real foundation of the sacredness of the Bible. Any regard for it founded upon the defects or faults of translation is superstition. In the consideration of this subject some have endeavored to poise the whole question of revision upon the retention or displacement of the word "baptize." But this does great injustice to our views and aims. For although we insist upon the observance of a uniform principle in the full and faithful translation of God's Word, so as to express in plain English, without ambiguity or vagueness, the exact meaning of *baptize*, as well as of all other words relating to the Christian ordinances, yet this is but one of numerous errors, which, in our estimation, demand correction. And such are our views and principles in the prosecution of this work that, if there were no such word as "baptizo" or baptize in the Scriptures, the necessity of revising our English version would appear to us no less real and imperative.'

While many men of learning and nerve espoused the movement, a storm of opposition was raised against it from one end of the land to the other. It expressed itself chiefly in harsh words, ridicule, denunciation, appeals to ignorance, prejudice and ill temper, with now and then an attempt at scholarly refutation in a spirit much more worthy of the subject itself and the respective writers. Every consideration was presented on the subject but the main thought: that the Author of the inspired originals had the infinite right to a hearing, and that man was in duty bound to listen to his utterances, all human preference or expediency to the contrary notwithstanding. After considerable correspondence with scholars in this country and in Europe, the following general rules for the direction of translators and revisers were adopted, and many scholars on both sides of the Atlantic commenced their work on a preliminary revision of the New Testament.

Dr. Conant proceeded with the revision of the English Old Testament, aided in the Hebrew text by Dr. Rodiger, of Halle, Germany. The following were the general rules of the Union

'1. The exact meaning of the inspired text, as that text expressed it to those who understood the original Scriptures at the time they were first written, must be translated by corresponding words and phrases, so far as they can be found in the vernacular tongue of these for whom the version is designed, with the least possible obscurity or indefiniteness.

The American Baptists

'2. Whenever there is a version in common use it shall be made the basis of revision, and all unnecessary interference with the established phraseology shall be avoided, and only such alteration shall be made as the exact meaning of the inspired text and the existing state of the language may require.

'3. Translations or revisions of the New Testament shall be made from the received Greek text, critically edited, with known errors corrected.'

The following were the 'Special Instructions to the – Revisers of the English New Testament:'

'1. The common English version must be the basis of the revision; the Greek text, Bagster & Son's octavo edition of 1851.

'2. Whenever an alteration from that version is made on any authority additional to that of the reviser, such authority must be cited in the manuscript, either on the same page or in an appendix.

'3. Every Greek word or phrase, in the translation of which the phraseology of the common version is changed, must be carefully examined in every other place in which it occurs in the New Testament, and the views of the reviser given as to its proper translation in each place.

'4. As soon as the revision of any one book of the New Testament is finished, it shall be sent to the Secretary of the Bible Union, or such other person as shall be designated by the Committee on Versions, in order that copies may be taken and furnished to the revisers of the other books, to be returned with their suggestions to the reviser or revisers of that book. After being re-revised, with the aid of these suggestions, a carefully prepared copy shall be forwarded to the Secretary.'

Amongst the scholars who worked on the preliminary revision in Europe were Revs. Wm. Peechey, A.M.; Jos. Angus, M.A., M.R.A.S.; T. J. Gray, D.D., Ph.D.; T. Boys, A.M.; A. S. Thelwall, M.A.; Francis Clowes, M.A.; F. W. Gotch, A.M., and Jas. Patterson, D.D. Amongst the American revisers were Drs. J. L. Dagg, John Lilhe, O. B. Judd, Philip Schaff, Joseph Muenscher, John Forsyth, W. P. Strickland and James Shannon; Profs. E. S. Gallup, E. Adkins, M. K. Pendleton, N. H. Whiting, with Messrs. Alexander Campbell, Edward Maturin, Esq., E. Lord and S. E. Shepard. The final revision of the New Testament was committed to Drs. Conant, Hackett, Schaff and Kendrick, and was published 1865. The revisers held ecclesiastical connections in the Church of England, Old School Presbyterians, Disciples, Associate Reformed Presbyterians, Seventh-Day Baptists, American Protestant Episcopalians, Regular Baptists and German Reformed Church. Of the Old Testament books; the Union published Genesis, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, Job, Psalms and Proverbs, 1 and 2 Samuel, 1 and 2 Kings, 1 and 2 Chronicles, remaining in manuscript, with a portion of Isaiah. It also prepared an Italian and Spanish New Testament, the latter being prepared by Don Juan De Calderon, of the Spanish Academy. Also a New Testament in the Chinese written character, and another in the colloquial for Ningpo; one in the Siamese, and another in the Squa Karen, besides sending a large amount of money for versions amongst the heathen, through the missionaries and missionary societies. It is estimated that about 750,000 copies of the newly translated or revised versions of the Scriptures, mostly of the New Testament, were circulated by the Union. Its tracts, pamphlets, addresses, reports and revisions so completely revolutionized public opinion on the subject of revision that a new literature was created on the subject, both in England and America, and a general demand for revision culminated in action on that subject by the Convocation of Canterbury in 1870.

As early as 1856 great alarm was awakened at the prospect that the American Bible Union would

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

translate the Greek word 'baptize' into English, instead of transferring it, and the 'London Times' of that year remarked that there were already 'several distinct movements in favor of a revision of the authorized version' of 1611. The 'Edinburgh Review' and many similar periodicals took strong ground for its revision, and in 1858, Dr. Trench, then Dean of Westminster, issued an elaborate treatise showing the imperfect state of the commonly received version, and the urgent need of its revision, in which he said: 'Indications of the interest which it is awakening reach us from every side. America is sending us the installments – it must be owned not very encouraging ones – of a new version as fast as she can...I am persuaded that a revision ought to come. I am convinced that it will come. The wish for a revision has for a considerable time been working among dissenters here; by the voice of one of these it has lately made itself known in Parliament, and by the mouth of a Regius Professor in Convocation.' The revision of the Bible Union was a sore thorn in his side; and in submitting a plan of revision in the last chapter, in which he proposed to invite the Biblical scholars of 'the land to assist with their suggestions here, even though they might not belong to the church,' of course they would be asked as scholars, not as dissenters, he adds: 'Setting aside, then, the so-called Baptists, who, of course, could not be invited, seeing that they demand not 'a translation of the Scripture but an interpretation, and that in their own sense.' Some Baptist writer had denied in the 'Freeman' of November 17, 1858, that the Baptists desired to disturb the word 'baptize' in the English version, but the Dean was so alarmed about their putting an 'interpretation' into the text instead of a transfer, that he said in a second edition, in 1859 (page 210): 'I find it hard to reconcile this with the fact that in their revision (Bible Union) *baptizo* is always changed into immerse, and *baptism* into immersion.' The pressure of public sentiment, however, compelled him to call for revision, for he said: 'However we may be disposed to let the subject alone, it will not let us alone. It has been too effectually stirred ever again to go to sleep; and the difficulties, be they few or many, will have one day to be encountered. The time will come when the inconveniences of remaining where we are will be so manifestly greater than the inconveniences of action, that this last will become inevitable.'

The whole subject came up before the Convocation of the Province of Canterbury in February, 1870, when one of the most memorable discussions took place that ever agitated the Church of England, in which those who conceded the desirableness of revision took ground; and amongst them the Bishop of Lincoln, that the American movement necessitated the need of prompt action on the part of the Church of England. In May of the same year the Convocation resolved:

'That it is desirable that Convocation should nominate a body of its own members to undertake the work of revision, who shall be at liberty to invite the co-operation of any eminent for scholarship, to whatever nation or religious body they may belong.'

The chief rules on which the revision was to be made were the first and fifth, namely: '1. To introduce as few alterations as possible into the text of the authorized version consistently with faithfulness. 5. To make or retain no change in the text on the second final revision by each company, except two thirds of these present approve of the same, but on the first revision to decide by simple majorities.'

The revisers commenced their work in June, 1870, and submitted the New Testament complete May 17th, 1881, the work being done chiefly by seventeen Episcopalians, two of the Scotch Church, two dissenting Presbyterians, one Unitarian, one Independent and one Baptist. A board of American

The American Baptists

scholars had co-operated, and submitted 'a list of readings and renderings' which they preferred to those finally adopted by their English brethren; a list comprising fourteen separate classes of passages, running through the entire New Testament, besides several hundred separate words and phrases. The Bible Union's New Testament was published nearly six years before the Canterbury revision was begun, and nearly seventeen years before it was given to the world.

Although Dr. Trench had pronounced the 'installments' of the American Bible Union's New Testament 'not very encouraging,' yet the greatest care was had to supply the English translators with that version. During the ten and a half years consumed in their work, they met in the Jerusalem Chamber at Westminster each month for ten months of every year, each meeting lasting four days, each day from eleven o'clock to six; and the Bible Union's New Testament lay on their table all that time, being most carefully consulted before changes from the common version were agreed upon. One of the best scholars in the corps of English revisers said to the writer: 'We never make an important change without consulting the Union's version. Its changes are more numerous than ours, but four out of five changes are in exact harmony with it, and I am mortified to say that the pride of English scholarship will not allow us to give due credit to that superior version for its aid.' This was before the Canterbury version was completed, but when it was finished it was found that the changes in sense from the common version were more numerous than those of the Union's version, and that the renderings in that version are verbatim in hundreds of cases with those of the Union's version. In the March 'Contemporary Review,' 1882, Canon Farrar cites twenty-four cases in which the Canterbury version renders the 'aorist' Greek tense more accurately and in purer English than does the common version. He happily denominates all these cases 'baptismal aorists,' because they refer to the initiatory Christian rite in its relations to Christ's burial and resurrection. Yet, seventeen years before the Canterbury revisers finished their work, the Bible Union's version contained nineteen of these renderings as they are found in the Canterbury version, without the variation of a letter, while three others vary but slightly, and in the last case, which reads in the common version 'have obeyed,' and in the Canterbury 'became obedient,' it is rendered more tersely, in the Union's version, simply 'obeyed.'

Much as Dr. Trench was disquieted about the word 'immerse' being 'an interpretation' and 'not a translation of *baptizo*, he was not content to let the word 'baptize' rest quietly and undisturbed in the English version, when compelled to act on honest scholarship, but inserted the preposition 'in' as a marginal 'interpretation' of its bearings, baptized 'in water.' Dr. Eadie, one of his fellow-revisers, who died in 1876, six years after the commencement of his work, complained bitterly of the American translation, which he was perpetually consulting in the Jerusalem Chamber. He also published two volumes on the 'Need of Revising the English New Testament,' and says (ii, p. 360): 'The Baptist translation of the American Bible Union is more than faithful to anti-Paedobaptist opinions. It professedly makes the Bible the book of a sect,' because it supplanted the word *baptize* by the word *immerse*. Yet, Dr. Scott, still another of the revisers, so well known in connection with 'Liddell and Scott's Lexicon,' worked side by side with both of them, and said in that lexicon that 'baptiso' meant 'to dip under water,' and Dean Stanley, still a third reviser, and the compeer of both, said: 'On philological grounds it is quite correct to translate John the Baptist by John the Immerser;' while the board of seventeen American revisers, representing the various religious bodies, united in recommending that the preposition 'in water' be introduced into the text, instead of 'with.'

[Note: The information Armitage gives on this debate is very important, but he fails to give the

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

whole picture of the battle over the Bible in the 19th century. The debate over whether to translate or to transliterate the Greek word "baptizo" in the English Bible was an interesting sideline of that battle, but it was only one small part of the overall struggle. He fails to discuss the serious textual side of the issue. The English Revision of 1881 did not merely make a few changes and corrections to the Authorized Version to update the language and correct any obvious mistakes, it replaced the Received Greek New Testament with the Westcott-Hort New Testament founded upon the Griesbach-type principles of rationalistic modern textual criticism. The American Bible Union version also incorporated innovations from the critical Greek text. A more detailed history of these events is found in the following book: *For Love of the Bible: The Defense of the King James Bible and the Received Text from 1800 to Present* by D.W. Cloud, Way of Life Literature, 1701 Harns Rd., Oak Harbor, WA 98277.]

After the separation between the American and Foreign Bible Society and the American Bible Union, the former continued to do a great and good work in Bible circulation and in aiding the translation of missionary versions. Dr. Welsh continued to act as its president for many years. For holy boldness, thrilling originality, artless simplicity and seraphic fervor, he was one of the marvelous preachers of his day, so that it was a heavenly inspiration to listen to his words. Both these societies continued their operations till 1883, with greatly diminished receipts, from various causes, and the Bible Union was much embarrassed by debt, when it was believed that the time had come for the Baptists of America to heal their divisions on the Bible question, to reunite their efforts in Bible work, and to leave each man in the denomination at liberty to use what English version he chose. With this end in view, the largest Bible Convention that had ever met amongst Baptists convened at Saratoga on May 22, 1883, and, after two days' discussion and careful conference, it was unanimously resolved:

'That in the translation of foreign versions the precise meaning of the original text should be given, and that whatever organization should be chosen as the most desirable for the prosecution of home Bible work, the commonly received version, the Anglo-American, with the corrections of the American revisers incorporated in the text, and the revisions of the American Bible Union, should be circulated.'

It also resolved:

'That in the judgment of this Convention the Bible work of Baptists should be done by our two existing Societies; the foreign work by the American Baptist Missionary Union, and the home work by the American Baptist Publication Society.'

Although the American Bible Union had always disclaimed that it was a Baptist Society, yet, a large majority of its life members and directors being Baptists, in harmony with the expressed wish of the denomination to do the Bible work of Baptists through the Missionary Union and the Publication Society, the Bible Union disposed of all its book- stock and plates to the Publication Society, on condition that its versions should be published according to demand. The American and Foreign Bible Society did the same, and now, in the English tongue, the Publication Society is circulating, according to demand, the issues of the Bible Union, the commonly received version and the Canterbury revision, with the emendations recommended by the American corps of scholars incorporated into the text; and so it has come to pass that the denomination which refused to touch English revision in 1850 came, in less than a quarter of a century, to put its imprint upon two, to

The American Baptists

pronounce them fit for use amongst Baptists, and to circulate them cheerfully.

Next to Dr. Cone, the three men who did more to promote the revision of the English Bible than any others, were Drs. Archibald Maclay, William H. Wyckoff, and Deacon William Colgate.

Archibald Maclay, D.D., was born in Scotland in 1778, and in early life became a Congregational pastor there; but after his emigration to New York and a most useful pastorate there amongst that body he became a Baptist, moved by the highest sense of duty to Christ. For thirty-two years he was the faithful pastor of the Mulberry Street Church, and left His pastorate at the earnest solicitation of the American and Foreign Bible Society to become its General Agent. In this work his labors were more abundant than they had ever been, for he pleaded for a pure Bible everywhere, by address and pen, with great power and access. In Great Britain and in all parts of the United States and Canada he was known and beloved as a sound divine and a fervent friend of the uncorrupted word of God. At the age of eighty-two years, on the 22d of May, 1860, he fell asleep, venerated by all who knew him for his learning, zeal and purity. William H. Wyckoff, LL.D., was endowed with great intellectual powers, and graduated at Union College in 1828. His early life was spent as a classical tutor, when he first became the founder and editor of the 'Baptist Advocate;' then, in turn, the Corresponding Secretary of the American and Foreign Bible Society and the American Bible Union. He served the latter until his death, at the age of three score and ten, in November, 1877, and his Secretaryship over these two bodies covered forty and two consecutive years. Deacon William Colgate was one of the most consecrate and noble-laymen in the Church of Christ, to whose memory such an able volume even as that of Dr. Everts, recounting the events of his life, can do but scant justice. He was born in Kent, England, in 1783, came to this country and established a large business in New York, which by his thrift and skill endowed him with abundant means for doing good. His elevated character and Christ-like spirit led him to the noblest acts of benevolence in the building up of Christian Churches, schools for the education of young ministers, the missionary enterprise and the relief of the poor. A pure Bible was as dear to him as his life, and few men have done more to give it to the world. He was the treasurer for numbers of benevolent societies, and one of the most liberal supporters of them all. He closed his useful and beautiful life on the 25th of March, 1857, at the age of seventy-four years.

This chapter can scarcely be closed more appropriately than by a brief notice of four devoted Baptists, translators of the sacred Scriptures, in whose work and worth the denomination may feel an honest pride.

The veteran translator, Thomas J. Conant, D.D., was born at Brandon, Vt., in 1802. He graduated at Middleburg College in 1823, after which he spent two years, as resident graduate, in the daily reading of Greek authors with the Greek professor and in the study of the Hebrew under Mr. Turner, tutor in the ancient languages. In 1825 he became the Greek and Latin tutor in Columbian College, where he remained two years, when he took the professorship of Greek and Latin in the College at Waterville, where he continued six years. He then retired, devoting two years to the study of the Arabic, Syriac and Chaldee languages, availing himself of the aids rendered by Harvard, Newton and Andover. After this he accepted the professorship of Hebrew in Madison University, and that of Biblical Literature and Exegesis in the Theological Seminary connected therewith, in 1835. He continued these labors for fifteen years with large success and honor. In 1841-42 he spent eighteen months in Germany, chiefly in Berlin, in the study of the Arabic, Ethiopic and Sanscrit. From 1850 to 1857 he was the professor of Hebrew, Biblical Literature and Exegesis in the Rochester

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

Theological Seminary, and stood in the front rank of American Hebraists with Drs. Turner and Stuart. Since 1857 Dr. Conant has devoted himself almost exclusively to the great work of his life, the translation and revision of the common English version of the Scriptures. He became thoroughly convinced as far back as the year 1827, on a critical comparison of that version with the earlier ones on which it was based, that it should be thoroughly revised, since which time he has made all his studies subsidiary to that end. Yet, amongst his earliest works, he gave to our country his translation of Gesenius' 'Hebrew Grammar,' with grammatical exercises and a chrestomathy by the translator; but his revision of the Bible, done for the American Bible Union, is the invaluable work of his life. This comprises the entire New Testament with the following books of the Old, namely: Genesis, Joshua, Judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, 1 and 2 Kings, Job, Psalms, Proverbs and a portion of Isaiah. Many of these are accompanied with invaluable critical and philological notes, and are published with the Hebrew and English text in parallel columns. His work known as 'Baptizein,' which is a monograph of that term, philologically and historically investigated, and which demonstrates its uniform sense to be immerse, must remain a monument to this distinguished Oriental scholar, while men are interested in its bearing on the exposition of Divine truth. Like all other truly great men, Dr. Conant is very unassuming and affable, and as much athirst as ever for new research. He keeps his investigations fully up with the advance of the age, and hails every new manifestation of truth from the old sources with the zest of a thirsty traveler drinking from an undefiled spring. In his mellowness of age, scholarship and honor, he awaits the call of his Lord with that healthy and cheerful hope expressed in his own sweet translation of Job 5:26: 'Thou shalt come to the grave in hoary age, as a sheaf is gathered in its season.'

Howard Osgood, D.D., was born in the parish of Plaquemines, La., January, 1831. He pursued his academical studies at the Episcopal Institute, Flushing, N. Y., and subsequently entered Harvard College, where he graduated with honors in 1850, being marked for accurate scholarship, a maturity of thought and a sobriety of judgment. Subsequently, he became much interested in the study of the Hebrew and cognate languages under the instruction of Jewish scholars, which studies he also pursued in Germany for about three years. On his return to America, he became dissatisfied with the teachings of the Episcopal Church, to which he was then united, as to the Christian ordinances, and in 1856 he was baptized on a confession of Christ into the fellowship of the Oliver Street Baptist Church, New York, by Dr. E. L. Magoon. He was ordained the same year as pastor of the Baptist Church at Flushing, N. Y., which he served from 1856 to 1858, when he became pastor of the North Church, New York city, which he served from 1860 to 1865. He was elected professor of Hebrew Literature in Crozer Theological Seminary in 1868, where he remained until 1874, when he took the same chair in the Rochester Theological Seminary, which he still fills. He was appointed one of the revisers of the Old Testament (American Committee) and was abundant in his labors, his sagacity and scholarship being highly appreciated by his distinguished colleagues. He has written much on Oriental subjects, chiefly for the various Reviews; he is also the author of 'Jesus Christ and the Newer School of Criticism,' 1883; and of the 'Pre-historic Commerce of Israel,' 1885. He translated Pierrot's 'Dogma of the Resurrection among the Ancient Egyptians,' 1885.

Horatio B. Hackett, D.D., LL.D. He was a native of Salisbury, Mass., born December 27, 1808. He became a pupil first in the Amesbury and then in the Phillips Academy. After graduating from Amherst College, he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover, his school years extending from 1821 to 1834. In 1834 he became the classical tutor in Mount Hope College, Baltimore. He was a

The American Baptists

Congregationalist at that time and had preached to a Church in Calais, Me.; but in 1835, after thorough investigation and on deep conviction, he became a Baptist and united with the First Church, Baltimore. The same year he was chosen professor of Latin in Brown University, and in 1838 professor of Hebrew, also. Leaving Brown in 1839, he took the professorship of Biblical Literature and Interpretation in the Newton Theological Institution. He spent 1841-42 at Halle and Berlin, pursuing linguistic and Biblical studies, attending the lectures of Tholuck, Gesenius, Neander and Hengstenberg. His labors were continued at Newton for twenty- nine years, but in 1852 he traveled in Egypt and Palestine, studying the antiquities of those countries, after which he published his 'Illustrations of Scriptures.' In 1858 he had become greatly interested in the revision of the English Scriptures and he accepted an appointment as reviser from the American Bible Union with such enthusiasm that he spent some time in Greece, mingling especially with the people of Athens, for the purpose of catching the grace and rhythm of the modern Greek, which he thought a helpful interpreter of the ancient language. He went out under the auspices of the Union, and shortly after his return published an enlarged edition of his 'Commentary on the Acts.' After mature consideration he resigned his professorship at Newton, in 1867, to devote all his time to the revision of the English Bible. He unbosomed himself on this subject, in his immortal address delivered before the Bible Union, in New York, August 6th, 1859, when it was charged by the ignorant or designing that the Union and its work were 'sectarian.' He nobly said:

'I agree with the sentiments of one of the Christian denominations; and if I have any sentiments at all, how, I beg to ask, could I entertain the sentiments of all the different denominations at the same time? But am I, therefore, necessarily sectarian because I thus differ from others, any more than they are sectarian because they differ from me? Or am I sectarian at all, in any sense, to disqualify me for the performance of this work, so far forth merely as my religious views are concerned? To what, I pray, does this charge of sectarianism reduce itself? Is not a man who undertakes this labor to have any religious convictions? Would you entrust it to those who have no fixed religious belief? Is it not evident that nothing can ever be done here unless it be done by those who have some definite religious opinions? If, then, you would not employ men utterly destitute of religious convictions to perform so religious and Christian a work, and if believing men cannot be expected to believe any thing where opinions clash, what remains? The translator must sympathize with some one religious body rather than another; and if that body is the Episcopalian or Congregationalist or Methodist, I would not say that a translation from a member of these sects was necessarily any more sectarian than if it was from the hand of a Baptist; and, vice versa, I see not with what propriety some persons are pleased to stigmatize the publications of this Society as necessarily sectarian, if they come from Baptists, and not from our Episcopalian or Congregationalist brethren...A given rendering of a passage which favors one creed more than another is not on that account merely a sectarian rendering; it is the adoption of a rendering against the evidence, or without sufficient evidence, which makes the rendering sectarian. If you complain of a rendering as sectarian, refute it; show that the reasons alleged for it are futile or insufficient, and that the evidence of philology demands a different one, and that the man, therefore, is blinded to the light by partiality or prejudice. When a case like that is made out, you may fix there the brand of sectarianism; but not otherwise...I should esteem it as disloyal and reprehensible in myself, as in any other person, to twist or force in the slightest degree any passage, or word of a passage, in the Bible, for the purpose of upholding my own individual sentiments; or those of any party It is an act of simple justice to say, that the managers of this Society have left me as free in this respect as the air we breathe. They have imposed upon me no condition or restraint whatever. They have merely said to me: "Study God's Word with painstaking and care; endeavor to ascertain, as accountable not unto men but to the Supreme Judge of all, what that Word means, and then what the Bible is found to mean, that let the Bible say."

Dr. Hackett translated the Epistle to Philemon, the Book of Ruth, and spent a number of years

Chapter 17 - Bible Translation and Bible Societies

upon the final revision of the New Testament, especially upon the Acts of the Apostles. He was the editor-in-chief of the American edition of Smith's 'Dictionary of the Bible,' and so well was his work done that Canon Westcott discarded the English edition for his. Dr. Hackett filled the chair of Biblical Literature and New Testament Exegesis in Rochester Theological Seminary from 1870 to his death in 1875. Only once in an age is such a man granted to the world. With the tenderness of a woman, the artlessness of a babe and the learning of a sage he blended the most modest humility, and yet his speech was wrapt in fire. The writer once consulted him officially, asking him to assist Dr. Conant on the Old Testament. On opening the subject, he began to bewail that other work had compelled him to lay aside his Hebrew studies for a time, and he said: 'I am really becoming rusty in the Hebrew, and should shrink to work side by side with the doctor on the Old Testament.' But in a moment the thought of returning to this delightful field of toil seized him, and he burst into an astonishing eulogy of that ancient tongue, as if glowing under the rhapsodies of prophetic warmth. He had struck a theme which aroused his unambitious spirit, his eye flashed, his speech became vivid, delicate, eloquent. Then, at once, with a nervous timidity, he checked himself and said, with the strange pleasantry of confidence and distrust: 'However, if it is for the best, I will try to assist the doctor, though not worthy to unloose his Hebrew sandal. Still, I must honestly say that, for all that, I really believe I could hold my own with him in the Greek.'

Asahel C. Kendrick, D.D., LL.D., was born at Pouitney, Vt., December, 1809, and when very young became a pupil of his uncle, Dr. Kendrick, at Hamilton, K. Y. He graduated from the Hamilton College, at Clinton, N. Y., in 1831, and served with high distinction as Professor of the Greek language and literature in Madison University from 1831 to 1850, when he accepted the Greek professorship in the Rochester University, where he still remains. He passed the years 1852-54 in Europe, visiting the German Universities, spending also a considerable time at Athens in the study of modern Greek. From early life he has been deeply interested in the translation and revision of the English Bible, contributing most valuable aid in that work, both for the Bible Union and as a member of the American Committee in the Canterbury revision. He is the author of several philological works, amongst them an 'Introduction to the Greek Language,' which work reached a second edition in 1855. He is also the translator and editor of Olshausen's 'Commentary of the New Testament,' and of Lange's 'Biblical Commentary on the Epistle to the Hebrews.' As a biographer and poet he excels, as is seen in his attractive 'Memoir of Emily C. Judson,' and his volume of poems called 'Echoes.' Dr. Kendrick has no superior in Greek scholarship in this country, and although he never was a pastor, he has few equals as an exegete in the New Testament.

The Bible Revision Association, which was organized at Memphis, Tenn., in 1852, rendered great aid in the revision of the English Scriptures. It co-operated with the American Bible Union in that work, and confined its field of operation to the Southern States, and was located at Louisville, Ky. Many of the ablest men in those States were enrolled in its membership, and the distinguished John L. Waller was its first President, filling the office till his death in 1854. As an author, a debater, and an orator he had few equals and no superior in the Kentucky ministry. Drs. S. W. Lynd, D. It. Campbell, W. Gary Crane, John L. Dagg, Samuel Baker, J. It. Graves, and N. M. Crawford were all earnest and eloquent advocates of a faithful Bible. They have nearly all gone to their eternal rest, but their principles were divine and their works follow them. James Edmonds, Esq., was the first Corresponding Secretary of the Revision Association, and one of its ablest advocates.

After the test of half a century, Baptists are more firmly persuaded than ever that their stand

The American Baptists

taken on the principle of Bible translation is thoroughly sound. Then, much of the old nonsense as to the application of this principle to the English Bible has happily passed away, and those who believe in the home use of immersionist versions are no longer counted as holding rather close relationship with him of reputed hoofs and horns. The random talk of some Baptists thirty years ago left the impression that they would rather die in valiant martyr-hood than give transfer versions to our Churches in Asia, and at the same time, that they would endure martyrdom twice over rather than give any other sort of versions to our American Churches! Others could not so entirely crucify their selfishness as to demand renderings from their missionaries in heathen languages, the like of which they would spurn with contempt if they were put into their own mother-tongue. On this point, singularly, there is some difference yet, but on the character of foreign versions there is now but one view. They are sustained with the united Baptist hand and heart, and are likely to be, until all who reverence the inspired originals come to consider the versions of Judson and Carey as properly stamped with the catholicity of those originals; a claim which will entitle them to the first place in the univocal versions of the entire earth.

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

In tracing the progress of Baptist principles through the provinces which now form the Dominion of Canada, we may begin with NOVA SCOTIA, which came under the British flag in 1713. English settlers, mostly Episcopalians, founded Halifax about 1749; Lunenburg was settled, principally by French and Germans, in 1753; and in 1759, after the expulsion of the Acadians, the influx from the New England colonies began. In a quarter of a century after that, Horton, Cornwallis, Yarmouth, Truro, Granville, Annapolis, Pictou and many other towns were settled by New Englanders. Many Lutherans settled in Lunenburg, and many Presbyterians from Scotland and the North of Ireland in Londonderry, Truro and Pictou, while the great body of emigrants from the American colonies were Congregationalists. The first House of Assembly, 1758, passed an act which made the Church of England the Established Church, but granting liberty of conscience to all other denominations, Roman Catholics excepted; marriage, however, could be celebrated only by the ministers of the Established Church. Many years and struggles were passed before this distinction was wiped from the statute- book.

Shubael Dimock, of Mansfield, Conn., had become a 'Separatist,' and held religious meetings apart from the Standing Order, for which he was whipped and thrown into prison; his son Daniel had renounced infant baptism. They settled in Newport, N. S., in 1760, where Daniel was immersed by Mr. Sutton in 1763, and he immersed his own father some years later. Several other converts to Baptist views resided in Newport, but they did not organize a Baptist Church there at that time. Rev. John Sutton was from New Jersey, and soon returned thither. In 1761 Rev. Ebenezer Moulton, of South Brimfield, Mass., settled in Yarmouth with other emigrants. After preaching there for two years, he visited Horton and labored in that vicinity, but seems to have formed no Church. These are the first Baptists of whom we have any records in Nova Scotia. So far as can be ascertained, the first Baptist Church in British America was planted in New Brunswick in 1763, and was an offshoot of the Second Church in Swansea, Mass., and of two or three neighboring Churches. A company of thirteen Baptists formed themselves into a Church, with Nathan Mason as their pastor, and, leaving Swansea, settled in what is now Sackville, where they continued to reside for nearly eight years, during which time their Church increased to about sixty members. But, owing to some dissatisfaction with their new location, the pastor and the original founders of the Church returned to Massachusetts in 1771, and, so far as appears, the Church at Sackville was scattered. Some think that Mr. Moulton formed a Church at Horton, but Dr. Cramp says: 'There was no Baptist Church till after the appearance of Henry Alline... While Mr. Button remained here he preached and baptized; the Dimocks and Mr. Moulton did the same, but separate action as Baptists was deferred till a more favorable conjunction of circumstances.' The Congregationalists had established Churches in various places, and the Baptists seem to have united with these, for, about the year 1776, there were two or three Churches in Nova Scotia made up of Baptists and Congregationalists, while a number of unorganized Baptists were found in various localities.

At this juncture Henry Alline, a 'New Light' preacher of extraordinary power, appeared in the province and left a lasting impression upon its religious institutions. He was born at Newport, R.I., in 1748, and removed to Falmouth, N. S., in 1760. He was converted when twenty-seven years of age, and after some unsuccessful attempts at securing an education he began to preach. He was very successful, traveling from place to place for nearly eight years, until New Brunswick and Nova Scotia were astir with religious revivals, the souls of the people being thrilled by his homely but

The American Baptists

pungent eloquence. He was a Congregationalist, but held the questions of Church order and ordinances as secondary matters. He seldom administered baptism, yet was willing that his converts should be immersed, if they chose, after thorough conversion. In fervency, power and doctrine he seems to have been of the Whitefield stamp. At the age of thirty-six years he died in Northampton, 1784. The ministry of this New Light apostle affected the progress of Baptist doctrines in two diverse ways. It infused a new and spiritual life into the languishing Churches, and his lax views on Church order and discipline told powerfully against all rigid and tyrannical organization. His converts were generally formed into Congregational Churches, some being baptized and others not, until in due time numbers of them appear to have seen the need of greater conformity to Gospel faith and practice, and at first resolved themselves into Baptist Churches, naturally enough of the open-union order. Most of the Canadian Churches practiced open communion till the commencement of this century, and many of them till a later period. Some of the strongest Churches of New Brunswick and Nova Scotia came out of this Alline movement, all of them observing strict communion today. The Horton Church was one of these. It seems to have oscillated for a few years, but in 1809 it took the full Baptist ground. In this respect the Cornwallis, Chester, Argyle, First Halifax and other Churches differ little from the Horton Church, having gradually made their way to their present stand.

The first Association of Baptist Churches in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick was projected in 1797 and was fully organized in 1800, at Granville, Annapolis County. In the main its work differed slightly from that of present associations.

It threw strong guards around the fundamental independence of the individual Church, stating that it 'pretends to no other powers than those of an advisory council, utterly disclaiming all superiority, jurisdiction, coercion, right or infallibility.' For more than a quarter of a century, however, it examined and ordained candidates for the ministry. But, gradually, its leading minds became convinced that the New Testament rested the power of ordination in the independent and self-governing Church. 'Father Manning' stated the principle quaintly in an address to the Association thus: 'I have observed that representative bodies, the world over, are very much inclined to take to themselves horns, and to so use them as to destroy the liberties of the people. An Association, therefore, must not put on horns.' After 1827 the Association ceased to ordain pastors, missionaries and evangelists, leaving that matter where it belongs, in the hands of the individual churches. The question of communion was also much debated, and in 1809 the Association resolved that in the future no open-union Church should belong to that body. Four Churches withdrew on this account, and from that time restricted communion has been the rule.

In 1821 the Association, for convenience, divided into the Nova Scotia and New Brunswick Associations, one for each province, and in 1850 the Nova Scotia portion subdivided into the Eastern, Central and Western Associations, as at this time. The New Brunswick Association also divided into the Eastern and Western in 1847, but in 1868 there was yet another new departure. Up to this time the Prince Edward Island Churches had been in the Eastern Nova Scotia Association, but they now organized one of their own, with thirteen Churches. The Southern Baptist Association of New Brunswick was formed in 1850, and in 1885 these seven Associations, from these small beginnings, numbered 352 Churches; with 40,984 members.

Some of the fathers who laid these broad foundations were most remarkable men. As pioneers they were marked by breadth of view, singleness and steadfastness of purpose and a Christ-like self-

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

denial. The names of Thomas H. Chipman, Theodore and Harris Harding, Edward and James Manning and Joseph Dimock will ever be worthy of the highest honor. These and many more were all of one spirit and endowed with a great diversity of gifts, but, by universal consent, probably Edward Manning would rank amongst the first. He was converted under the preaching of Henry Alline, and in coming to the light passed through a 'horror of great darkness.' He traveled through these provinces in evangelistic labors, often on snow shoes in the depth of winter, to preach Jesus and the resurrection. His first pastorate, 1795, was over the mixed Church in Cornwallis, and for three years after his ordination he was greatly agitated on the subject of baptism, but at last he went to Annapolis and was immersed by T. H. Chipman. Soon after he renounced open communion, and with seven members of his Church separated from the main body. He continued in his pastorate till his death in 1851, and amongst his last words were these: 'Oh! the infinite greatness and grandeur of God.' He was imbued with deep piety and fervency of spirit; he was a champion of religious liberty, and possibly surpassed all his brethren in profundity and logical power. As a 'dissenting' preacher, he met with stern opposition and persecution from those of the Established Church, meeting the harsher intolerance of New Brunswick with the firmness of a man born to rule his own spirit.

Theodore Seth Harding was another Gospel warrior of these days. His first religious impressions were received under the ministry of Mr. Alline, when at the age of eight, but he was converted under the powerful preaching of Rev. Freeborn Garretson, a Methodist missionary from the United States, who was sent to Nova Scotia in 1787. Mr. Harding was ordained as pastor of the Horton Baptist Church in 1796, and remained its pastor until his death, in 1855. But like Manning and others, he extended his labors in every direction, even to the United States. In intellect he was not the peer of Manning, but far surpassed him in fluency and other elements of oratorical power, so that as a preacher he had few equals anywhere.

Joseph Dimock was the son of Daniel, who baptized his father when he fled for refuge from Connecticut. Joseph was ordained as pastor at Chester, in 1793, and although he made long missionary tours in all directions, he remained its pastor till his death, in 1847. He met with great opposition in his work. At Lunenburg infuriated mobs, maddened with liquor, determined to inflict personal violence upon him, but his firmness awed them and his gentleness disarmed their wrath. These are selected as types out of a large body of powerful and self-denying men, who have left the marvelous record of their work in these provinces.

The Baptist press of Canada had its inception in the Nova Scotia Association, in 1825, which voted to 'Request the Baptist Association of New Brunswick to unite with us in the publication of a Religious Periodical Magazine.' From this action sprang the 'Baptist Missionary Magazine,' of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, in 1827. It was a quarterly, published at St. John, N. B., and edited by Rev. Charles Tupper, and was continued until January, 1837, when it gave place to the 'Christian Messenger,' a weekly, published at Halifax, N. S. From that time it has rendered noble service to all our denominational interests, and still exists in combination with the 'Christian Visitor,' at St. John, N. B. The 'Christian Visitor' was established in 1848, and was conducted by Rev. E. D. Very, who was drowned in the Bay of Minas, in 1852, when returning from a geological excursion, in company with Professor Chipman and four students of Acadia College, all of whom perished. For a time the paper was conducted by Messrs. Samuel Robinson and I. E. Bill. After a time, Rev. Dr. Bill assumed full charge as proprietor and editor, and conducted this journal with marked ability, but in 1885 the

The American Baptists

two papers were purchased by a company, and united under the editorship of Rev. Calvin Goodspeed as the 'Messenger and Visitor,' published at St. John, N. B.

The first regular Missionary Society of the Nova Scotia Baptists began in 1815, when the Association, meeting at Cornwallis, 'Voted, that the Association is considered a Missionary Society, and with them is left the whole management of the mission business.' A contribution of \$118,60 was made at this session for sending a missionary eastward of Halifax. From time to time the Association sent out missionaries, and in 1820 the first Home Mission Board was appointed in New Brunswick. 'Mite Societies' were formed in the Churches which were of great utility. The Female Mite Society of the Germain Street Church, in St. John, contributed \$60, that year, a degree of liberality which, if attained by all the Churches at this time, would fill the mission treasury to repletion. The first Nova Scotia 'Society for the maintenance of Foreign Missions' was formed at the Chester meeting of the Association, 1838, and a Foreign Mission Board was appointed soon after in New Brunswick. Burma was chosen as the field of labor, and the first missionary sent out was Rev. R. E. Burpee, in 1845; he died in 1850. After his death the Provincial Board sent money annually to support native preachers, under the care of Rev. A. R. R. Crawley, of Henthada. Dr. Tupper was for many years the Secretary of the Foreign Board. His life was a wonderful triumph of energy and industry. His schooling was limited to ten weeks after he was ten years of age, and yet by dint of self-education he became proficient in many languages: Hebrew, Greek, Latin, French, English, German, Italian, Syriac and one or two others, and it is said that he read the New Testament in the first three of these at least one hundred times. At the Jubilee of his ordination Dr. Tupper stated, that as a minister he had traveled in fifty years 146,000 miles, principally on horseback, had preached 6,750 sermons, attended and generally taken part in 3,430 other meetings, had made 11,520 family visits, married 238 couples, had conducted 542 funerals, and baptized 522 converts. Surely, if works save men, Brother Tupper's chance should be better than that of some Canadian brethren, however it may be with those of the United States. Dr. S. T. Rand's name forms an important leaf in the Indian missionary history of the Maritime Provinces, especially amongst the Micmacs. He has pursued this work during the greater part of his life, with indomitable perseverance and chiefly at his own charges.

Our brethren have also done an immense work in these Provinces by their educational institutions. Their fathers, generally, knew nothing of the learning of the schools, yet their interest in laying the foundations of these schools was unique rather than remarkable. They early saw that if the denomination was to do its Master's work in the most efficient manner, they must make early provision for the Christian education of the Churches, especially for an educated ministry. The venerable 'Father Munro' gave this terse expression to their common conviction: 'The man who successfully succeeds me in the pastoral office must stand on my shoulders.' It is probable that the first suggestion of a Baptist institution of learning for these Provinces was made by Edward Manning, and when the subject came up for discussion he pondered every point, and corresponded largely with the brethren in the United States on the matter. The way was dark, the Baptists were a feeble folk to undertake such a work, yet a series of events occurred between 1820-50 which facilitated the project. The founding of the Granville Street Church at Halifax by a number of members seceding from the Church of England gave force to the movement. The Crawley family and others amongst them were educated, and were ready to give their influence in this direction. The remarkable revival of 1828 brought a number of educated men into the Baptist Churches and

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

ministry, who became active workers in the cause of education – such men as John Pryor, E. A. Crawley, William Chipman, Ingraham E. Bill and others. The Granville Street Church was admitted into the Association in 1828, at its meeting in Horton, at which time the Prospectus of the Nova Scotia Baptist Education Society was drawn up and submitted by the Halifax messengers of the Church there. The Society aimed to establish a seminary of learning, and to aid indigent young men in studying for the ministry. Their action will appear sufficiently courageous when it is taken into the account that twenty-nine little Churches, numbering in all 1,772 members, formed their entire strength. The first result was the establishment of the Academy at Horton, with Rev. William Pryor as Principal. This school has continued ever since, and is perpetually fitting men for College life and all the various fields of usefulness.

The Baptists of New Brunswick numbered but about 2,000 in 1834, when they followed the example of their Nova Scotia brethren and opened a 'Seminary' in Fredericton. In 1842 the Rev. Charles Spurden, of Hereford, England, was appointed principal, which position he held for twenty-five years. Dr. Spurden was greatly endeared to his students and his brethren generally by his literary attainments and lovable qualities of character; he died in 1876, after a short pastorate in the Fredericton Church. The Seminary did good service under other principals, but it was closed after many years of financial struggle, and within a few years another has been opened at St. John, under more favorable conditions; from its opening it has had a female department. A female seminary was opened in 1861, in connection with the Horton (Wolfville) School, and is still in vigorous operation. The intolerance of the dominant Church had much to do with the founding of denominational schools and colleges. Early in the history of Nova Scotia, King's College was founded at Windsor, under the aegis of the English Church, which admitted no student except on subscription of the Thirty-nine Articles. Dalhousie College was founded in 1820, with public funds, ostensibly as a non-sectarian University for the Province. But when it was opened the classical chair was refused to Rev. E. A. Crawley, for the sole reason, as Dr. Bill states: 'That these in charge felt bound, as they said, to connect the college exclusively with the Kirk of Scotland.' Thus mocked, the friends of Baptist education found it time to bestir themselves, and the result was a determination to found a college of their own, hence the origin of Acadia College. In addition to the great burden of raising the necessary funds by so feeble a folk, their task was increased by the difficulty of obtaining the requisite charter. Their foes raised a popular cry against the multiplication of feeble colleges, until the spirit of the Baptists was thoroughly aroused, when they resolved to maintain their right to possess such an institution if they paid for it with their own money. The Committee of their Educational Society went to Halifax in a body, and Mr. Crawley eloquently pleaded the justice of their cause at the bar of the House, which refused the charter by a majority of one. The seat of war was then transferred to public platforms and the newspapers, with such effect, that in 1840 the House was flooded with petitions for the charter. After a determined and bitter contest the Assembly granted it by a majority of twelve, the champion of the Baptists being Hon. J. W. Johnstone, a member of the Upper House; it also passed the Legislative Council.

The second struggle arose on a more questionable point. Large appropriations were made by the Legislature in aid of King's and Dalhousie Colleges, and the Baptists thought it but common justice that they should share in the public fund set apart for higher education; some few of them, however, holding that this position compromised the principle of voluntary support. This demand re-opened the whole question of college policy for the Province, the leading liberal politicians favoring the plan

The American Baptists

of one central university. The Baptists boldly entered the political arena, made Hon. J. W. Johnstone their candidate, elected him to the Legislature by an overwhelming majority and pressed their claim successfully. He was a gentleman of the highest character, of fine culture and splendid abilities. Afterwards, for many years, he was Attorney General and Premier of the Province; he also filled the chair of Chief Justice with distinction, and declined the governorship of the Province shortly before his death. In 1863 an unsuccessful attempt was made to rehabilitate Dalhousie as the Provincial University. Failing in that, a larger scheme was proposed, under which denominational colleges should each receive an annual grant for a term of years, on condition that they surrendered or held in reserve their powers to grant degrees. These powers were to be transferred to a Provincial University to be established at Halifax. This was not to be a teaching institution, but simply an examining body empowered to confer degrees and to prescribe the curricula for all the affiliated colleges. After an animated debate at the Baptist Convention, held at Sackville, 1876, the proposition to affiliate Acadia College with the Halifax University was negated by a large majority.

This college has had a perpetual struggle with financial difficulties consequent on its small and by no means wealthy constituency, but it has made constant progress, and its influence on the ministry and Churches is seen everywhere in their liberal culture, their intellectual and spiritual development. The first effort to raise an endowment was made in 1852, and by various other efforts the amount has been increased to about \$100,000. In 1849 it was adopted as the College of the Baptists in the three Maritime Provinces. Many of its students have attained considerable distinction, and hold responsible positions in the Dominion and the United States. Dr. Crawley, who did so much to establish it and was its first president, felt compelled to resign that office in 1856, to attend to certain private business affairs which, for the time being, demanded his entire attention. But after their arrangement, in 1865, he returned to his work as an educator, accepting the chair of Classics, and for a time he also served as Principal in the Theological Department. He still retains his connection with the Institution as Professor Emeritus. Acadia College was never in a more prosperous condition than at present.

The venerable J. M. Cramp, D.D., whose name will ever be associated with the College as its second President, was the son of Rev. Thomas Cramp, a Baptist minister in the Isle of Thanet, was born in 1796, baptized in 1812, and was educated at Stepney College. He was ordained in 1818 as pastor of the Bean Street Baptist Church, Southwark, London. Subsequently, for fourteen years, he assisted his father in the pastorate of St. Peter's Church, in his native town. In 1840 he became pastor of the Church at Hastings, Sussex. Four years later he was sent by the Committee of the Canada Baptist Missionary Society to take charge of the Montreal Baptist College; and in 1857 he became President and Professor of Moral Philosophy in Acadia College. He continued in active service till the infirmities of age compelled him to retire, in 1869, when he was made Professor Emeritus; his death occurred a few years later. Dr. Cramp's attainments were extensive; he was a good Hebrew scholar, a sound theologian, and thoroughly versed in Ecclesiastical History, as is seen in his 'Baptist History.' He was a true friend of a pure Bible, always insisting on fidelity to God in the translation of his Word. His character was sweet and unselfish, his aims were high, and his life stainless and full of affability. As a writer he is well known by his 'Text Book of Popery,' which is regarded as authoritative, also by his 'Paul and Christ,' and numerous other publications.

Rev. A. W. Sawyer, D.D., the present President of Acadia College, is a native of Vermont, and

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

a graduate of Dartmouth College, of the class of 1847. He completed his theological course at Newton, and was ordained in 1853. He was appointed to the chair of Classics in Acadia in 1855, which chair he resigned in 1860. He then served as pastor of the Church at Saratoga Springs, N. Y., and as Principal of the New London Academy, N. H., but in 1869 he accepted the Presidency of Acadia, with the chair of Intellectual and Moral Philosophy. While Dr. Sawyer is very unassuming and quiet, he is one of the foremost educators in the Dominion. He is accurate and extensive in his scholarship, keen in his perception, close and logical in his habit of thought. In the class-room he has few equals in throwing the student back upon his own resources and compelling him to make his best intellectual efforts. The efficient staff of tutors, with himself, are making the Institution a blessing to the Denomination, as one of the agencies which are doing so much to make the Baptists more and more powerful in the Maritime Provinces.

THE PROVINCE OF QUEBEC, formerly Lower Canada, is another interesting field of Baptist labor. The first Baptist Church in this Province, of which we find any record, was formed in 1794 at Caldwell's Manor, not far from the Vermont border. For many years this neighborhood had been occupied by Loyalist Refugees, mostly from Connecticut. Rev. John Hubbard and Ariel Kendrick, missionaries of the Woodstock (Vt.) Baptist Association, visited and preached in this settlement; their labors were greatly blessed; Rev. Elisha Andrews, of Fairfax, baptized about thirty converts and formed them into a Church. Two years later some of its members removed to a new township called Eaton, south of the St. Lawrence, in the district of Three Rivers, and were organized into a Church. Several others were formed in this part of Lower Canada under the labors of the Massachusetts Baptist Missionary Society. Benedict speaks of three of these as members of the Fairfield Association in 1812, namely, these of St. Armand, Stanbridge and Dunham. A somewhat similar movement took place in Upper Canada, now Ontario, in 1794. Reuben Crandall, then a licentiate, settled at Hollowell, in what is now the County of Prince Edward, on the northern shore of Lake Ontario, and in the following year he organized a Church. Another licentiate, T. Finch, organized a Church in Thurlow, now Haldimand, about 1804, which seems to have been known as the Charlotteville Church, and in a comparatively few years eight Churches were set off from this body. Other laborers established Churches about the same time in Cramahe, Rawdon, and neighboring places.

About 1803 the first Association in this district was formed, called the Thurlow, but afterwards the Haldimand Association, and this was a center of Baptist influence until this region of Canada became dotted with Baptist Churches gathered into several Associations.

Thus it is seen that the pioneer Churches of Quebec and Ontario, as well as those of the Maritime Provinces, were planted by missionaries from the United States, excepting the elder Churches embraced in what is now the Ottawa Association. The members who first composed its Churches, with their pastors, were largely emigrants from Scotland. The eldest of these, Breadalbane, was organized in 1817 with thirteen members, all Scotch, their first elders being Duncan Campbell and Donald McLaurin. Next in order was the Clarence Church, 1817, formed of seven members. John Edwards, who was instrumental in its formation, was converted in Edinburgh under the ministry of the Haldanes. Other Churches in the valley of the Ottawa, as Dalesville and Osgoode, have a similar origin and history.

The first Baptist Church of Montreal was not organized till 1830, but it naturally took a leading part in originating and shaping the missionary and educational work in this part of Canada. Rev.

The American Baptists

John Gilmour, of Aberdeen, was its first pastor, a zealous leader in denominational work for many years.

These and most of the other Churches in the eastern part of Canada, during the first quarter of the present century, practiced open communion, a subject which for many years kept them in grievous friction with those of the western part. The eastern Churches held with right good Scotch grip all the orthodox doctrines, as well as to the immersion of believers on their trust in Christ. But they regarded the edification of the brethren and the observance of the Supper as the chief ends of the Gospel Church, losing sight of its aggressive character. They believed that evangelists should be supported while preaching, but gave no remuneration to the elders of their own Churches. They made the plurality of elders, the weekly celebration of the Supper, the liberty of the unordained to administer ordinances, and exhortations on the Lord's day, binding as duties on the whole brotherhood. Unanimity was required in all their decisions, and if a minority dissented the majority took their reasons for dissent into consideration. If these were found valid the majority altered their decision; if not, they exhorted the minority to repentance, but if they repented not they were excommunicated. They held that the exercise of discipline on the Lord's day was a part of divine worship, and they never neglected the duty of purging out the 'old leaven,' but rather enjoyed the exercise. Down to 1834, including the Montreal and Breadalbane Churches, they numbered but four Churches and three ministers.

In the years 1834-35 a memorable revival of religion gave new life to the Baptist cause in Eastern Canada. It began in Montreal and extended through the Churches of the valley, the immediate result being that the Churches came nearer to each other, and formed the Ottawa Association. A second revival, under the labors of Messrs. McPhail, Fyfe, and other ardent young missionaries, was enjoyed three or four years later. Its center was in Osgoode and vicinity, and it gave a fresh impulse to the spread of Baptist principles. The growth of the denomination in the West was more rapid. The fertile regions bordering on the Upper St. Lawrence and lakes Ontario and Erie invited a large influx of population. The Haldimand Association included the Churches in the London district, but the Upper Canada Association, which held its first meeting in 1819, embraced the neighborhood which includes Toronto and Brantford. In 1839 there were five Regular and one 'Irregular,' or open communion, Baptist Association, their statistics being: Churches, 172; members, 3,722. Nine or ten Churches, with a membership of about 560, were not connected with any association, making in all about 4,282 members. The following statistics for 1885 indicate the growth of the denomination in the entire Dominion – Quebec, Ontario, Manitoba and Northwest Territory: Churches, 370; members, 28,987. New Brunswick, Nova Scotia and Prince Edward's Island: Churches, 352; members, 40,989. The total for British America being: Of Churches, 122; and of members, 69,971.

At the first meeting of the Ottawa Association, in 1836, it resolved unanimously to send a deputation to Great Britain to solicit aid in the proclamation of the Gospel in Canada, and to establish an academy for the training of young men for the ministry. The academy was commenced in that year, Rev. Newton Bosworth taking charge of the instruction. Rev. John Gilmour visited England and Scotland as the agent of the Association, and received collections there of about \$5,000 for erecting a proper building, and a society was formed in London known as the Baptist Canadian Missionary Society. On Mr. Gilmour's return a similar society was formed in Canada, having for its aim the support of home missionaries and the promotion of theological education. It

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

accomplished an excellent work. The 'Canada Baptist Magazine and Missionary Register' was published as a monthly for two or three years under its supervision; but it was discontinued about the year 1842, when a weekly paper appeared known as the 'Montreal Register.'

A root of bitterness in the communion question sprang up, which finally led to the extinction of the Missionary Society in Canada, and this controversy between the Eastern and Western Baptists became more pronounced year by year. The Society disclaimed that it was an open communion body, and avowed that the Churches which it assisted were mainly strict communion bodies. Distrust abounded, and about the year 1854 the Western Canada Baptist Home Missionary Society was formed, under the auspices of the Strict Communionists, and the Montreal Society soon died. In 1843 the Canada Baptist Union had been formed, somewhat after the model of the English Union, its general objects being to promote the unity and prosperity of the denomination, 'especially to watch over our religious rights and privileges; to secure their permanence and promote their extension.' Ample scope was afforded for the exercise of its vigilance and wisdom. At that time the great doctrines of religious equality and freedom of conscience were not well understood in Canada, so that it fell to the lot of the Baptists to bring them and their defense to the front. They had to meet the Clergy Reserves Question, the outgrowth of a provision in the Constitutional Act of 1791, whereby an allotment equal in value to one seventh of all grants of public lands in Upper Canada was to be set apart for the support of a 'Protestant clergy.' These reserves soon became valuable, while the ambiguity of the phrase 'Protestant clergy' made it a subject of contention amongst the Protestant denominations for many years. Some claimed that the word Protestant was merely the antithesis of 'Catholic,' and so, that the reserves were for the benefit of all sects which abjured the tenets of the Roman Catholics. Others maintained as stoutly that the word 'clergy' designated only the ministers of the Church of England, and it had never been applied in any British statute to any ministers but these of that Church and of Rome. The Baptists, true to their principles, refused to apply for any portion of these funds, but insisted on their secularization and use for legitimate State purposes. Messrs. Davies, Cramp, Gilmour, Girdwood and Fyfe, their leaders, denied the right of the State to vote lands or money to any Church, and demanded religious equality before the law, leaving all denominations to support themselves.

The same principles were involved and the same ground was taken in regard to university endowment. In 1797 the English Government had authorized the Legislative Council and House of Assembly in Upper Canada to set apart the land of ten townships, equal to half a million of acres, as a foundation for four Grammar-Schools and a University. At this period the Executive, the Legislature and the Councils were, almost without exception, members of the dominant Church, and cast their influence so solidly for the Episcopal High Church party that it became known as the 'Family Compact.' Arch-deacon, afterwards Bishop Strachan, a crafty, resolute and not over-scrupulous politician, was at their head. Backed by powerful friends and using many machinations he secured from the Imperial Parliament the fund for the establishment of an Episcopal University and the postponement of the erection of the Grammar Schools. The Executive Government was also to be created a permanent, commission, with power to dispose of the lands and manage the revenues, and so to remove them beyond the reach of popular control. This high-handed attempt to saddle an Established Church and an exclusively Episcopal University upon the infant province was resisted by the Baptists at every step. They petitioned the Government and remonstrated strenuously, and after much other action their Union, in 1845, gave the following as their voice on the subject:

The American Baptists

'That in our estimation the most just, and ultimately the most satisfactory settlement of the so-called University Question, would be founded on the following general principles: To confine the funds of the University exclusively to the Faculties of Arts, Sciences, Law and Medicine, giving no support whatever to Theological Professors of any denomination, but leaving each sect to support out of its own resources its teachers in divinity.'

This was followed in 1853 with an utterance through their Missionary Society, in words declaring:

'In the most emphatic and decided manner its determination never to rest satisfied until the Clergy Reserves are secularized by the Government,' and the 'fixed resolution of the Churches throughout the entire Province of Canada, to resist by every lawful and available means any and every attempt which may be made by the Government, or otherwise, to induce the Baptist denomination, in particular, and the other religious denominations in Canada, to accept of any partition of the Clergy Reserves Fund, for any purpose whatever.'

Partition had been pressed in some quarters as a basis of settlement, but, true to their ancient faith, the Baptists would have none of it; they finally triumphed, and as the result Canada now enjoys the same religious liberty that is secured to all in the United States.

In regard to Baptist periodicals in Canada West, it may be well to say, that after one or two futile attempts, the 'Christian Messenger' began its publication at Brantford, in 1853, but in 1859 it was removed to Toronto, and its name was afterwards changed to the 'Canadian Baptist,' which is still published as the leading organ of Baptist opinion. A few years since, it was purchased by a company of which the Hon. William McMaster is the principal stockholder. The constitution of the company makes the various denominational Societies the joint beneficiaries of the net profits of the paper. But with his characteristic liberality, Mr. McMaster announced in October, 1886, his readiness to hand over the paid-up stock held by him, amounting to \$40,000, to those Societies, which are now quite numerous.

During the last thirty-four years, the Baptist Home Mission Society of Ontario, has planted seventy self-sustaining Churches, and more than seven thousand converts have been baptized on its field, west of the city of Kingston. During the last year it helped to support sixty-two feeble Churches and maintained preaching at sixty out-stations. The Baptists of that vicinity have expended about \$130,000 in home mission work. The field occupied by the Eastern Society lies amongst a population two thirds of whom speak French and are Roman Catholics. The French-speaking people are crowding the English-speaking people out, and many of our Churches are depleted, yet in 1885 one hundred and thirteen converts were baptized on the field. Steps are already taken for the union of the Eastern and Western Conventions.

During the first seven years of the Foreign Mission Society of Ontario and Quebec it was auxiliary to the American Baptist Missionary Union; but in 1873 it undertook an independent mission to the Telugus. Six missionaries with their wives, and two unmarried female missionaries, have been sent to that field. During twelve years the Society has expended more than \$100,000 in foreign work, and within the last two years Rev. A. V. Timpany and Rev. G. F. Currie have died at their posts as missionaries. The Foreign Mission Society of the Maritime Provinces sustains about the same number of laborers. and both of them employ several native preachers also. The 'elect' ladies in all the provinces are rendering efficient aid by auxiliary societies and a monthly paper, the 'Missionary Link,' which does good service in the same cause.

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

The Grand Ligne Mission, in the Province of Quebec, has been in operation for half a century, and has been the means of bringing about 5,000 persons to the knowledge of the truth, who are now scattered over Canada, the New England States and the far West. About 3,000 of these passed several years in the schools of the mission, and are spreading abroad the light which they received there. T. S. Shenston, Esq., of Brantford, Treasurer of the Foreign Missionary Society of Ontario and Quebec, is one of the noblest laymen in Canada. During the most critical years of its history he was Treasurer of its Board and has always been amongst its most liberal supporters. He was born in London, England, in 1822, and came to Canada when but nine years of age. Endowed with superior native ability, controlled by unflinching integrity and industry, he has risen to great usefulness and honor. He commenced life as a farmer, but at the age of twenty-seven was made a magistrate in Oxford County, where he resided. There were seventy-five magistrates in that county, and the returns of convictions show that he did more magisterial business than all of them put together. In 1851 he published a 'County Warden and Municipal Officer's Assistant,' and in 1852 an 'Oxford Gazetteer.' He set up type and printed with his own hands a work on 'Baptism,' in 1864, and for many years he has held the office of Register of Brant County. In conjunction with another generous soul, for years he sustained an Orphan House for twenty-two girls in Brantford. He is senior deacon of the "First Baptist Church in that city, and has been the Superintendent of its Sabbath-school for the better part of twenty-five years. In addition to the books here named he has published several others, amongst them, 'The Sinner and his Saviour' (256 pages), and an ingenious 'Perpetual Calendar,' reliable for some hundreds of years. All this is the work of what is called a 'self-made' man.

A brief sketch of Baptist Educational work will be acceptable. In 1838 the Committee of the London Society sent out Dr. Benjamin Davies to take charge of the Theological Institution at Montreal, known as the 'Canada Baptist College.' As the number of students increased a comfortable stone building was purchased, where the work was done with tolerable efficiency until 1843, when Dr. Davies returned to London to act as a Professor in Regent's Park College. Rev. Robert A. Fyfe had charge of the Montreal Institution in 1843-44, and was succeeded by the Rev. J. M. Cramp; but in an evil hour a costly edifice was built, and its debts were so heavy that in 1849 it succumbed; the library and property were sold and it was discontinued. While it was in operation it did an excellent work; and many of its students of high character are a blessing to the Churches still; its managers and supporters were liberal and large hearted and its tutors were able men. But its location was 400 miles east of the principal center of Canadian Baptist population, its sympathies and methods were not sufficiently American, it was thought to cherish open communion sentiments, and at that time there was little love amongst the Baptists of Canada West for an educated ministry; all of which causes contributed to its downfall. Since this unhappy failure no further attempt has been made to establish a Baptist institution of learning in Lower Canada.

Several abortive attempts were put forth in this direction in the West, the most ambitious of which was in connection with the 'Maclay College,' projected in 1852. Dr. Maclay, an indefatigable friend of education, was induced to make the attempt to raise £10,000 for the establishment of a Theological Institution, more than half of which sum was subscribed. Dr. Maclay was chosen President, but declined to serve; the managers and subscribers failed to agree amongst themselves as to a successor, and in other things, and the scheme fell to the ground. Dr. Fyfe devised a practicable plan for a Canadian Baptist College, in 1856, which, after much arduous labor and

The American Baptists

anxious care has been crowned with success. Rev. Robert A. Fyfe, D.D., was born in Lower Canada, in 1816, was baptized in 1835, and almost immediately after left for Madison University to prepare for the ministry. Want of means and ill health compelled him to return home within a year, but he continued his studies first at Montreal and then at the 'Manual Labor High School,' Worcester, Mass. He entered Newton Theological Seminary in 1839 and graduated thence in 1842. After several years of successful pastoral labor in other places, he became pastor of the Bond Street Church, Toronto. He submitted to the denomination his scheme for a school with a literary and theological department, providing for the admission of both sexes in the literary department, which project was indorsed, but with much misgiving. Woodstock was chosen as its site, and after three or four years of hard struggle a substantial building was erected there. In 1860 Dr. Fyfe was constrained to resign his pastorate and accept the principalship, from which time until his death, in 1878, he devoted all his powers to its interests. The first edifice was destroyed by fire just as the Institution was opening its doors to students, and years of self-denying effort were buried in heaps of ashes and blackened bricks, with a debt of \$6,000 on the smoking embers. With characteristic courage he immediately began to rebuild, and in the face of difficulty, discouragement and gloom, two better buildings were erected, one for the exclusive use of the ladies' department. His death removed a prince from our Canadian Israel. In the Theological Department, for some years before his death, Rev. John Crawford, D.D., and Rev. John Torrance had been associated with him, and after his death the work of the Institute was conducted under two heads for a time. Professor Torrance was Principal of the Theological, and Professor J. E. Wells was Principal of the Literary Department.

The policy of the Canadian Baptists in educational work was greatly changed by the munificence of the Hon. William McMaster. Before Dr. Fyfe's death the opinion had begun to obtain that Toronto was the proper place for the Theological College, but the dread of creating division in the interests of Woodstock, and the apparent impossibility of raising money to erect a college worthy of the denomination in that growing city, made all shrink from the attempt. At that point, what had seemed utterly impossible was made practicable by Senator McMaster's liberality. This great philanthropist was born in the county of Tyrone, Ireland, in 1811. He received a good English education in a private school, and in 1833 came to Canada, at the age of twenty-two years. He soon entered upon a most successful and honorable mercantile career, in the wholesale dry-goods business, having first been a clerk and then a partner of Robert Cathcart. When Montreal was the great distributing center for Western Canada, he was one of the few whose commercial enterprise and ability transferred a share of the wholesale trade from that city to Toronto. Having established his firm there and associated two of His nephews with himself his business became immense, until he retired from active partnership to follow financial transactions, for which his foresight and sound judgment amply fitted him, so that he became one of the leading capitalists of the province. He has always been a Liberal in his politics, and in 1856 he was with much reluctance induced to accept a nomination as a candidate for the Legislative Council of Canada. He was elected by a large majority, and at the Confederation was appointed to the Senate of the Dominion.

Mr. McMaster has always taken a marked interest in the educational interests of Canada. In 1865 he was appointed a member of the Council of Public Instruction, and, in 1873, he was made a Senator of the Provincial University by Government appointment. All the educational enterprises of the Baptists have been aided largely by his wisdom and purse, being one of the largest subscribers to the Woodstock Institute; and at the Missionary Convention of Ontario, held at St. Catharine's in

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

1879, it was resolved that, in view of certain proposals made by him, the Theological Department of the Institute at Woodstock should be removed to Toronto. At once he purchased from the University of Toronto a plot of ground 250 feet square, and immediately erected thereon one of the most beautiful and complete college buildings in the country. He vested this property in a Board of Trustees in 1880, to be held in trust for the Baptist denomination. At the first meeting of this Board Rev. J. H. Castle, D.D., was elected President of the College; Rev. John Torrance, A.M. Professor of New Testament Exegesis and Apologetics, and at a subsequent meeting Professor A. H. Newman, D.D., LL.D., of Rochester Seminary, was chosen for the Chair of Church History and Old Testament Exegesis.

A brief notice of several of our brethren who have done such splendid work in Canada must close this sketch of Baptists there.

Dr. Castle was born at Milestown, Penn., in 1830, was baptized in 1846, graduated from the Lewisburg University in 1851, and received his Doctor's degree from the same institution in 1866. He was settled as pastor at Pottsville; Pa., for two years and a half, when he accepted the charge of the First Baptist Church in West Philadelphia, where he remained for fourteen years. In 1873 he became pastor of the Bond Street Church, Toronto, when the beautiful structure known as the Jarvis Street Meeting-house was erected for his congregation, Mr. McMaster contributing about \$60,000 to the building fund. He declined the Principalship of Woodstock, and when its Theological Department was removed to Toronto all eyes turned to him as eminently fitted to become its President. This position he has filled, and the chair of Systematic Theology and Pastoral Theology, with great success. Professor Torrance, who first became Principal of the Woodstock Institution, had previously been a student there and a graduate of the Toronto University, but he died before he could engage in the work of the new College. The report of the Trustees speaks of him as an accurate scholar; 'His force and clearness as a thinker, the soundness of his views as a theologian, his aptness as a teacher, his reputation in the denomination, and his unflinching Christian integrity gave every reason to hope for him a long career of the highest usefulness.'

Dr. Newman is a native of Edgefield County, S. C., and was born in 1852. He graduated from Mercer University, Georgia, in 1871, and from Rochester Theological Seminary in 1875. He spent a year 1875-76 in the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, where, as resident graduate, he devoted himself to the study of Hebrew, Chaldee, Syriac, Arabic and Patristic Greek. From 1877 to 1880 he was acting as Professor of Church History at Rochester, and in 1880-81 was Pettingill Professor in the same institution. He translated and edited Immer's 'Hermeneutics of the New Testament,' published at Andover in 1877, and is the author of many review articles, evidencing extensive research and critical acumen. He is justly regarded also as an authority in ecclesiastical history, especially in its relation to the principles and polity of the Baptists. If his valuable life is spared, Baptist literature will be greatly enriched by His fruitful pen. At present the Doctor is editing the 'Anti-Manichaeon Treatises of St. Augustin,' with a revised translation, notes and an introduction on the Manichaeon Heresy.

Malcolm MacVicar, Ph.D., LL.D., fills the vacancy left by the death of Professor Torrance. He was Principal of the State Normal School at Ypsilanti, Mich., and his career as an educator has been successful and distinguished. He was born in Scotland in 1829, but in 1835 came to Chatham, in Ontario. He entered Knox College, Toronto, in 1850, with Donald, his brother, now Principal of the Presbyterian College in Montreal. While a student Malcolm's doctrinal views changed, he became

The American Baptists

a Baptist, and was ordained to the Baptist ministry in 1856. He graduated from Rochester University in 1859, from which time to 1863 he served as Professor of Mathematics, and from that date to 1867 as Principal of Brockport Collegiate Institute, N.Y. From 1868 he was Superintendent of Public Schools in Leavenworth, Kan., then Principal of the Normal School in Potsdam, N. Y., before he went to the Normal School in Michigan. Dr. MacVicar is the author of several valuable textbooks in arithmetic and geography. He excels as a mathematician and metaphysician, and has made a special study of the relations of science to religion. He is critical, original and enthusiastic.

Rev. W. N. Clarke, D.D., was for many years pastor of the Churches at Newton Center, Mass., and at Montreal, but took the chair of New Testament Exegesis at Toronto in 1884. He brought broad views and a loving spirit to his work, and having published a most valuable commentary on one of the Gospels, he possesses special fitness for this high position. His compeer, Rev. D. M. Welton, D.D., Ph.D., an advanced scholar in the Oriental languages, fills the chair of Old Testament Exegesis. Dr. Welton is a graduate of Acadia, also of a celebrated German University, and was for some years the Principal of the Theological Department in Acadia College.

Theodore H. Rand, M.A., D.C.L., was appointed to a chair in Toronto College in 1885 86. He is a graduate of Acadia, and was in succession the Superintendent of Education in Nova Scotia and in New Brunswick, in both of which provinces he inaugurated and kept in operation for a number of years the noble system of free schools which they now possess. He filled a chair also in Acadia before he removed to Toronto. The entire cost of sustaining all these professorships, in addition to the large sum expended in building 'McMaster Hall' and in endowing the President's chair, was cheerfully assumed by Mr. McMaster.

Rev. Wolverton, B.A., was appointed Principal at Woodstock after the resignation of Mr. Torrance. He had previously obtained and collected pledges for its endowment to the amount of \$40,000, with the intention of raising the amount to \$100,000. For some time Senator McMaster had purposed to thoroughly equip an Arts College in connection with the University of Toronto, but has now determined to devote this handsome endowment to the Woodstock foundation. In view of this great work, Dr. Rand has been induced to accept the Principalship of Woodstock, while Professor Wolverton will devote all his time to its financial management. Mr. McMaster stipulated that \$56,000 should be raised by the denomination for new buildings and other improvements, of which sum \$50,000 has been raised, and a new impulse has been given to Baptist educational enterprises all through Canada. University powers will be sought for Woodstock College, and the corner-stone of the splendid new college building was laid at Woodstock, October 22, 1886, by Mrs. Wm. McMaster, when addresses were delivered by Dr. Band and Dr. McArthur, of New York.

The progress and development of the Baptists in Canada for the last quarter of a century have been wonderful, and they bid fair to make greater advancement still for the coming generation. Without referring to particular pages, it may suffice to say that the above facts have been collected chiefly from 'Cramp's History,' 'Benedict's History,' 'Bill's Fifty Years in the Maritime Provinces,' minutes of Associations, Missionary Reports, Memorials of Acadia College and the Canadian Year-Books.

AUSTRALASIA proper comprises New South Wales, Victoria, South and North Australia, Queensland and West Australia, covering about 3,000,000 square miles. Captain Cook discovered New South Wales in 1770, and slowly British subjects have settled the greater part of the continent, while the aboriginals have largely decreased. Rev. John Saunders may be regarded as the founder

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

of Baptists in Australia. At the age of seventeen he became a member of a Baptist Church at Camberwell, in London, and renounced every opportunity to take a seat in Parliament, preferring labor for Christ. After establishing two Churches in London, his heart was set on planting a Christian colony in that stronghold of idolatry and other wickedness, Botany Bay. On reaching Sidney, in 1834, he commenced to preach in the most fervid and powerful manner in the Court-house, where crowds flocked to hear him. He soon formed the Bathurst Street Church and remained its pastor till 1848, when his health broke. He then retired from the pastorate and died in 1859. The loss of so vigorous a leader dampened the courage of his Church, but it revived under the new leadership of Rev. James Voller, whose labors were greatly blessed, and an Association was formed, so that now the Baptist force is most earnest and vigorous in New South Wales. The number of Churches is 22, the number of members, 1,196.

VICTORIA. The Baptist cause was planted there by Rev. William Ham, in 1845, when the first Church was formed. This pioneer labored under the greatest difficulties, but a church edifice was built in Collins Street, Melbourne, in which he labored for some years. Little progress was made, however, until 1856, when the Rev. James Taylor, of Glasgow, took the pastoral oversight. His scriptural and logical preaching, accompanied by a peculiar unction from above, soon drew large audiences, so that the congregation removed to the Grand Opera House, which seated 2,000 people, and yet was too small for the throng. Soon, a large and beautiful church edifice was built, which is now the rallying point for the annual gatherings of our Churches in the colony. Mr. Taylor is still preaching to an earnest Church at Richmond, a suburb of Melbourne. Two sons of Mr. Ham are amongst the most liberal supporters of the denomination in the colony; the eldest acted as chairman of the Victorian Baptist Association at its session a year ago. A second Church was organized in Melbourne, which was under the pastoral care of Rev. W. P. Scott till his death, in 1856; and when the great gold discovery demoralized the community, the Missionary Society in England, at the earnest request of the Church for a suitable pastor, sent the Rev. Isaac New to fill the vacancy. At that time, Melbourne was shaping itself into a magnificent city, with many social refinements and educational institutions; and the pulpits of all denominations were being filled with preachers of a high order. Mr. New's finished thought and fresh delivery attracted great congregations, and in 1859 the elegant chapel in Albert Street was erected for this Church. But in ten years, failing health compelled this great preacher to retire from his work, and in 1886 he fell asleep in Christ. There are 100 preaching places in Victoria and about 15,000 persons who enjoy the services of their ministers, the membership of the Churches being nearly 6,000, and the number of Sunday-school scholars about 9,000. Our Churches there are in a flourishing condition and number 39, with a membership of 4,235. Rev. S. Chapman, the present pastor of Collins Street, is a most successful minister, who has set his heart on raising \$250,000 for home mission purposes with every indication of success. He proposes to establish an inter-Colonial College, to form a building fund for opening new fields and to aid struggling Churches in town and country.

SOUTH AUSTRALIA. Before Mr. Scott settled in Melbourne, he spent two years as pastor in this colony. The twenty-fifth anniversary of the Hinders Street Church, Adelaide, was held in September, 1886, at which it was reported that since its organization 1,581 members had been added to that Church, and its average fiscal income had been \$10,000 per annum. Dr. Silas Mead has rendered great service to the denomination during a quarter of a century, but the Baptists are not strong in the colony. The denomination has lacked compact organization, many of its members

The American Baptists

preferring isolation to combined activity. For the present, many of the other denominations are in advance of the Baptists, because they have accepted State aid and the appropriations of large plots of land for ecclesiastical purposes, which offers Baptists have declined on principle. The number of Churches is 52, the membership of the Associated Baptist Churches in South Australia is 5,190, Sabbath-school scholars 5,191.

QUEENSLAND. There were no Baptists in this colony in the old convict days, when the incorrigible from Port Jackson, New South Wales, were sent to Moreton Bay. But immediately upon the settlement of free persons a Church was established. Mr. Stewart preached for some time in the Court-house, he being followed by Rev. B. G. Wilson, in 1856, when a substantial chapel was built in Wharf Street, but a much larger and more beautiful building is now in course of erection. The Churches number 13, and have all sprung from this one Church, the Baptist Church membership of the colony being 1,355, with Sunday-school scholars under their care to the number of about 2,000.

NEW ZEALAND. The principal Churches of this colony are at Dunedin, the capital in the South Island, and Auckland, the principal city of the North Island. The present pastor of the Church at Auckland is Rev. Thomas Spurgeon, son of the London divine. A Tabernacle, seating 1,500 people, has been opened, which is too small for the multitude who throng to hear him. This Church was organized by Rev. J. Thornton, and a few miles southeast of Auckland, Rev. Josiah Hinton, a son of the late John Howard Hinton, of London, is laboring earnestly. Flourishing young Churches are found, also, at Wellington, the capital, at Christ Church, Nelson and other places. About 50,000 only of the Maoris, the aborigines, are left, and the Baptists are doing something to bring them to Christ. Fronde says that gunpowder, rum and tobacco have ruined this once noble race, which is so fast melting away before civilization. In the two Islands we have 23 Churches, and 2,398 members.

TASMANIA. Rev. H. Bowling left Colchester, England, for this field in 1831; it was then known as Van Diemen's Land. He commenced at once to proclaim the Gospel, and for thirty-five years continued to preach in this beautiful Island. But the struggle was hard as well as long, for at present there are but 8 Churches with 404 communicants in the colony, and 625 scholars in the Sunday-schools. William Gibson, Esq., and his son, have recently built and presented to the denomination four beautiful church edifices, one at Launceston, with a seating capacity of 1,500, the others are at Perth, Coleraine and Longford.

Although there are no Baptists in Western Australia, the progress made in the other colonies within the last ten years presents an encouraging feature in the ecclesiastical life of Australasia. Everywhere, heroic effort is made and new plans are projected for more thorough work. Men of large ability and experience are prosecuting these plans. James Martin, who was pastor of the Collins Street Church, Melbourne, for seven years, did much for our Churches, both as a preacher and writer; his name, with these of William Poole, David Rees, George Slade, Henry Langdon and Alexander Shain, has done much to stimulate the consecration of Baptists there, and others of equally heroic devotion are ready to enter into their labors full of work and full of hope. The denominational papers in Australasia, are 'The Banner of Truth,' in New South Wales; 'The Freeman,' in Queensland; and in South Australia, 'Truth and Progress.'

And now, having traced the stream of truth in its flow from Bethlehem to this newest discovered end of the earth, which, though the largest Island in the world, may not improperly be called a continent, and has, because of its vast extent, been called the 'fifth quarter of the world,' we see how nearly primitive Christianity belts the globe in its new embrace of 'Southern Asia.' This history

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

shows the extreme jealousy of the Baptists for the honor of Scripture as the revelation of Christ's will. For this they have endured all their sufferings, each pain evincing their love to him and their zeal to maintain his will according to the Scriptures. It appears to be as true of error as it is of the truth itself, that a little leaven 'leavens the whole lump,' when once it comes into juxtaposition with the genuine meal and the fermenting process takes up one single particle. Every individual error which has crept into the Churches since the times of the Apostles is directly traceable to a perversion of Scripture, and generally corruption of doctrine has come by the misinterpretation of Scripture. In most cases the rise of divergence from the Bible sense can be traced not only to a change of manner, however slight, but also to that change at a given point of time, and from these they have run to the very opposite of Christ's teaching and example. A marked illustration of this is found in both the Christian ordinances. Take, for example, the Supper. Our Lord instituted it in the evening and after he and his disciples had eaten the roasted paschal lamb with bread and herbs. But as if for sheer contradiction of Christ, in the days of Cyprian and Augustine, the Churches came to the notion that the Supper should be forbidden in the evening and taken in the morning while fasting. The pretense was, that reverence for Christ would not allow its elements to mingle with common food. So perfectly fanatical did men become in this perversion, that Walafrid Strabo said: 'The Church has enjoined on us to act in the teeth of Christ's example and we must obey the Church.' He was the Abbot of Reichenau, A. D. 842, no mean authority; and a prolific writer, whose works, says Reuss, 'for several centuries formed the principal source and the highest authority of biblical science in the Latin Church, and were used down to the seventeenth century.' Dr. Hebbert says of him: 'He turns the argument round, and puts it that those who think our Lord's example ought to be followed are calumniating the Church in assuming that the Church would or could give a wrong order in such a thing!'

So, the bulwark of infant baptism has been found in the words of Jesus: 'Suffer little children to come unto me and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of heaven,' despite the fact that one Apostle says, that he 'blessed them' and 'prayed for them,' but so far from saying that he baptized them, another is careful to say, that 'Jesus baptized not.' Exactly in the same way infallible headship is attributed to the Pope, from a false interpretation of the words: 'Thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church.' The power of priestly absolution is claimed on a perversion of the words: 'Whosoever sins ye remit they are remitted to them.' By the same forced construction, auricular confession is extorted from the passage 'Confess your faults one to another;' extreme unction, from a false use of the passage: 'Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the Church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil,...and the Lord shall raise him up;' but this office is not done till the man is dying. Purgatory is drawn from the abused passage which speaks of Christ preaching to 'the spirits in prison;' the right of private judgment is denied because Peter said: 'No prophecy of Scripture is of private interpretation;' and the worship of Mary is enforced because it is written: 'Blessed art thou among women.' The tortures of the Inquisition are justified because Paul said that he delivered Hymeneus and Alexander 'over to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme,' and the burning of heretics, by the words of the same Apostle when he instructed the Corinthians to deliver the fornicator to 'Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.' The truth can only be conserved by holding it in righteousness, without wresting it from its natural testimony and obliging it to do duty in enforcing the traditions of men. For this reason Baptists must ever keep the doctrines of Jesus and his ordinances, and the order of

The American Baptists

his Church, as they were delivered unto them, being faithful unto the death. This narrative makes it clear that the principles of New Testament Christianity have never been wholly eradicated from the consciousness of some Christians in history. When perversions and abuses have multiplied, and the most godly men have feared that a pure and spiritual Christianity was about to perish from the earth, God has not left himself without witnesses, who have appealed to the authority of his word against the corruptions of their age. Their testimony has been as enlivening as a gust of fresh air, fanning the latent spark of religious life into a blaze. When the purest organic communities have been interrupted and broken, the truth has never compromised itself any more than its Author has compromised himself. With more or less distinctness, individual believers have ever maintained the teachings of Christ. Their spirits have been emancipated from mere ecclesiastical authority, as they have sought with honest hearts to learn and to do the will of God revealed in the Bible. In doing this they have been the worthy successors of the Bible Baptists.

These historical facts should give new hope to the Gospel Churches of our own times. Many who claim to be actuated by the scientific spirit and methods of our day, have proclaimed open hostility to all forms of assumed privilege and prescription. No institution, however venerable, can hold its own against this combination, unless it can show a valid reason for its existence. Many signs show that this attack will not cease until social order and possibly civil government have been fundamentally reconstructed. The Churches of Christ must also meet this assault. More and more their doctrines and observances must be called in question, and in so far as they are justified by an appeal to ancient traditions and usages, to old organizations and their authority, the advance of the modern spirit will prevail against them. Only those Churches which stand firmly upon the New Testament, holding no faith or practice but what it enjoins, will stand in a position that cannot be successfully assailed until their great Divine Charter is demonstrated to be of human origin. When the New Testament, which has survived in immortal youth and strength, despite all destructive forces, has been torn into shreds, then those Churches will wane, but not till then. Baptists have taken this impregnable position, and so long as they hold it, sophistry and contempt, either from Christians or skeptics, can storm their fortress no sooner than a handful of snow-flakes can storm Gibraltar. Such attacks will simply make manifest the strength and simplicity of the faith once delivered to the saints. They must fail when the word of God fails, but not till then; for God will honor them so long as they honor his word.

The author's work is now done; and he here expresses devout gratitude to the Father of mercies for the health given him to finish his labor of love for the truth's sake. This work is now laid at his Master's feet as a tribute to the truth, for the edification of all who love the truth as Jesus revealed it in its fullness. It is tendered for the examination of all loving and candid Christians, regardless of name, with the fervent desire that it may be approved by the great Shepherd of the one flock, as an honest and faithful presentation of that truth which he promised should make his people free indeed. The writer's profound respect for other Christian denominations has not allowed him to utter a disrespectful word of them, however widely his views and theirs may differ on subjects which we hold to be very important. They are no more to blame either for the mistakes or faults of their forefathers, than Baptists are for the blunders or defects of their forefathers. When the countless millions of Christ's disciples meet our common Lord above, he will lovingly tell us which of us were right and which were wrong. If he shall say, 'My Baptist followers were mistaken in this or in that,' it will be their privilege to thank him for saving them despite these failures. And if he shall say, 'My

Chapter 18 - Baptists in British America and Australia

Pedobaptist followers were mistaken in this or in that,' the most ill-natured reply that any true Baptist can make will be: 'Dear brethren, we always told you so.' Then, for our eternal salvation, we shall all heartily sing together, 'Unto him who hath loved us and redeemed us unto God, unto him be glory for ever and ever. Amen.'